

A decorative border in a medium blue color, featuring intricate floral and scrollwork patterns that frame the central text.

# **Ch 1-279 Pure Love x Insult Complex**

# Ch 162-279 Pure Love x Insult Complex

---

EPUB/PDF generated by [lnwnepubs.com/](http://lnwnepubs.com/)

---

Translated by [Machine Sliced Bread](#)

## Table of Contents

1.	<a href="#">162. Bad City</a>
2.	<a href="#">163. The fight of Kudou family</a>
3.	<a href="#">164. Misuzu's decision</a>
4.	<a href="#">165. Yaa! Yaa! Yaa!</a>
5.	<a href="#">166. Pile!</a>
6.	<a href="#">167. Battle</a>
7.	<a href="#">168. Zapping News</a>
8.	<a href="#">169. Father and Daughter</a>
9.	<a href="#">EPUB/PDF generated by lnwnepubs.com/</a>
10.	<a href="#">Translated by Machine Sliced Bread</a>
11.	<a href="#">170. Shuraba and Daily Life</a>
12.	<a href="#">171. Full Body Blow</a>
13.	<a href="#">172. Ripple of events</a>
14.	<a href="#">173. Intermission</a>
15.	<a href="#">174. Katsuko-sensei's sex classroom</a>
16.	<a href="#">175. Naked Question and Answer</a>
17.	<a href="#">176. Women at Night</a>
18.	<a href="#">177. Nei's past (Part 1)</a>
19.	<a href="#">178. Nei's past (Part 2)</a>
20.	<a href="#">179. Nei's past (Part 3)</a>
21.	<a href="#">180. Chinatown (Part 1)</a>
22.	<a href="#">181. Chinatown (Part 2)</a>
23.	<a href="#">182. Thorn of Death</a>

24. [183. In the silent Night...](#)
25. [184. The role in the Family](#)
26. [185. Night Stroll](#)
27. [186. Yukino and I](#)
28. [187. Then, the morning Comes...](#)
29. [188. Yoshida-kun's Power](#)
30. [189. Coming out of relationship](#)
31. [190. Taste of a Kiss](#)
32. [191. Rape Play](#)
33. [192. Thirsty Throat](#)
34. [193. The two faces of Heart](#)
35. [194. Like hell that's a Relative!?](#)
36. [195. 『Plan』in progress](#)
37. [EPUB/PDF generated by Inwnepubs.com/](#)
38. [Translated by Machine Sliced Bread](#)
39. [196. Endou and Yukino's morning...](#)
40. [197. What am I to You?](#)
41. [198. Step 1](#)
42. [199. The class people](#)
43. [200. Endou-kun's judgement](#)
44. [201. Bullying...is not cool](#)
45. [202. Step 2](#)
46. [203. Step 3](#)
47. [204. Step 4](#)
48. [205. Shameful Parade](#)
49. [206. Then, Shirasaka Yukino's an untouchable now...](#)
50. [207. Aftermath](#)
51. [208. Fated ties](#)
52. [209. Junk Sex](#)
53. [210. To the next stage](#)
54. [211. After school battle x field](#)
55. [212. The sixth placer in Ohio](#)
56. [213. Oyako Daka](#)
57. [214. Beyond the Gate](#)

58. [215. In the theater](#)
59. [216. Match with the elder sister](#)
60. [217. In the box](#)
61. [218. What is Sex?](#)
62. [219. I love you so much!](#)
63. [EPUB/PDF generated by Inwnepubs.com/](#)
64. [Translated by Machine Sliced Bread](#)
65. [220. Kouzuki Shigetaka's boredom](#)
66. [221. White Viola](#)
67. [222. Enemy and Enemy again](#)
68. [223. M](#)
69. [224. Kudou Michi](#)
70. [225. Please punish me](#)
71. [226. The blue ribbon for the girl who stick out her ass](#)
72. [227. Practice hugging](#)
73. [228. Beat to death Swordswoman](#)
74. [229. Super Flat](#)
75. [230. Nagisa's associates etc.](#)
76. [231. Value of clothes](#)
77. [232. Yukino's heart](#)
78. [233. Opening](#)
79. [234. ...Who?](#)
80. [235. Standing Ovation](#)
81. [236. Naked heart](#)
82. [EPUB/PDF generated by Inwnepubs.com/](#)
83. [Translated by Machine Sliced Bread](#)
84. [237. Curtain fall](#)
85. [238. Two bad Friends](#)
86. [239. Inside the dressing Room](#)
87. [240. Pre-departure inspection](#)
88. [241. The three together...!](#)
89. [242. Fight Banbarubie 3](#)
90. [243. In the hotel lobby.](#)
91. [244. Futile effort](#)

92. [245. Psychological Game / Bluff vs Bluff](#)
93. [246. The oath of love](#)
94. [247. Successor Declaration!](#)
95. [248. Kouzuki Shigetaka's other side](#)
96. [249. Sex study meeting for Ruriko-san 1](#)
97. [250. Sex Study meeting for Ruriko-san 2](#)
98. [251. Sex Study meeting for Ruriko-san 3](#)
99. [252. Family portrait](#)
00. [253. Show → Skill](#)
01. [254. Ruriko opens up her heart](#)
02. [255. Ruriko opens up her body.](#)
03. [256. Yoshiko's secret](#)
04. [257. You did it, Reika-chan! The family's increasing!](#)
05. [258. The talent of love](#)
06. [259. 『Family』gathering .](#)
07. [260. 『Family』time 1 \(The combat team\)](#)
08. [261.『Family』 Time 2 \(Buffet party\)](#)
09. [262.『Family』time 3 \(Kouzuki Shigetaka\)](#)
10. [263. 『Family』time 4 \(Megumi and Misuzu\)](#)
11. [264. The private students.](#)
12. [265. Prince faction](#)
13. [266. Laughing 『Women』](#)
14. [267. Fool ship](#)
15. [268. Vassal's manners](#)
16. [269. Jii-chan's grading](#)
17. [270. The media industry](#)
18. [271. Complex \(part 1\)](#)
19. [272. Complex \(Part 2\)](#)
20. [EPUB/PDF generated by Inwnepubs.com/](#)
21. [Translated by Machine Sliced Bread](#)
22. [273. Second Negotiation — 1](#)
23. [274. Second negotiation — 2](#)
24. [275. Second Negotiation — 3](#)
25. [276. Battle Start!!](#)

- 26. [277. Next move](#)
- 27. [278. Weigh Don!](#)
- 28. [279. I wonder why](#)
- 29. [EPUB/PDF generated by Inwnepubs.com/](#)
- 30. [Translated by Machine Sliced Bread](#)

## 162. Bad City

---

「...It's the same front-news on every newspaper company isn't it?」

Misuzu's looking it up on her phone.

「Shirasaka house's newspaper?」

When I ask...

「The same...Ah, this is the only one with 『Major Advertising Manager arrested for raping a girl and child pornography?』 『?』they turned it to a question...

What the hell's that?

「The news of Shirasaka's arrest was made to be distributed to the major news companies. Then, it will be on the top of the news wherever you look at... Shirasaka-san's newspaper company isn't the only one giving out news. The question will be their only resistance」

Minaho-neesan explains.

「There will be a news show game on the next 5 o'clock news and the 9-10 o'clock news. In addition to that, it will be a variety show tomorrow...」

Minaho-neesan's looking ahead.

「Shirasaka house will desperately try to extinguish the fire...they can't try to make the indecent small...nor they can't hide it behind other news...a boring sudden exposure of a politician's scandal will do it I think」

...I see

「That's why...we have to oppose them by letting out small amounts of information」

...Advanced...information warfare it is?

「The local lawyer hired by Shirasaka head family is about to start moving in Australia already」

...Eh?

「In this case...they can just make the middle school girl who's supposed to be raped by Shirasaka Sousuke withdraw the appeal. Make them say『it's a mistake』 Paying up with money then just announce that it was a 『false alarm』 in Japan, it won't hurt Shirasaka family」

...I-I see

「Even if you report it so much...Shirasaka Sousuke's position will be dangerous however. Well, he'll be fired from the company. But still...if they take time to settle it, Shirasaka house can avoid the spread of the fire...I think they will do that」

...She knows that far.

「Therefore...I recorded that under the table negotiations with a hidden camera. The lawyer hired by Shirasaka family suppressing the movement of the victim's parents by presenting a large amount of money... That video will be on 5 o'clock news, if late, I want it to be reported by 9 o'clock...」

...Then

...Shirasaka family trying to cover up for Shirasaka Sousuke will become obvious...

The criticism of the public will move from Shirasaka Sousuke to the whole Shirasaka family...

As expected of Minaho-neesan.

「Hey...just what's going on? It's a lie isn't it? Everyone's just fooling me right?...Isn't that right?!」

Yukino who can't swallow the situation begins to yell.

「Sadly...this isn't a lie. It's all true. Your father will become an international criminal...for serial rape though」

Minaho-neesan laughs.



「I think it's okay to leave Australia to our agent over there though...」

That's right.

Margo-san's mentor is on Australia.

Her name is...

Kyouko Dothnomechey-san, was it?

「Margo's the only one who can move here right now. We should go back soon. Katsuko and I have to join the internet interactions...」

...I see

The two who can do the stuff on the internet is driving, it's bad.

We have to hurry back to school and support Margo-san.

「Either way...this was the only time we could've gone to Shirasaka house. We took out all the materials that can be related to 『Kuromori』...」

「But...what if it's hidden to another location...?」

I posed the question I thought of.

Would a person like Shirasaka hide all his materials at home?

Also...the amount of memory and discs is small considering that he's involved with 『Kuromori』for almost 20 years.

Shirasaka has the hobby of recording his rape...

Also...there's no old video tapes?

「It is as Yoshida-kun imagines?...Even Shirasaka isn't that abysmal stupid...he won't put dangerous materials at home. He has his wife there...he also has his two daughters. Also, maids do come to that house you know? It would be a problem if she takes out a disc by mistake while cleaning up」

...I see

「Shirasaka has a separate house in Tokyo. A house secret even to his wife. It's not an apartment but a whole house rented as whole. That's Shirasaka's personal sex room」

...Sex room

「That person's profession is an advertising agency manager isn't it? Shirasaka Sousuke himself loves to rape amateur women who doesn't know anything but...his profession is holding various enterprise for young girls who are idol in

the making. Of course, Shirasaka himself. 『Kuromori』is a dessert stomach... since he's doing that kind of thing, he rented a place at the center of the city」

The talents...

Were mediated using pillow business.

「The idols that won't sell much would be brought to『Kuromori』to be turned to a prostitute. They're bad goods so I refused them but it seems that the perverted section of Shirasaka used them...」

...Haa

「Then...all of Shirasaka's dangerous videos from 『Kuromori』are all in that house?」

「Yes...It should be kept in that house. Perhaps...on the basement」

「Then...we have to do something about it」

Either way...the investigation will enter that hideout.

Then...if Shirasaka Sousuke's relation to『Kuromori』gets exposed...

It'll be troublesome...

「The original plan was to have Margo and Nei search in parallel while we were searching that house. Nei wants to set it on fire after all...」

Nei-san has a habit of arson...

「But...since Cesario Viola has come, Nei can't come out. Margo has to guard Nei too...」

Someone has to go to that house.

「...I'm going then」

I said.

「Yoshida-kun, that's very helpful if you say that but...it's impossible to do it alone」

「M-Mana will go too!」

Mana shouts...

「That's not better...Mana-san will just be a drag」

Misuzu looks at Kudou-chan

「Michi...go」

「...Misuzu-sama?」

「Michi has received guidance from father about destruction work, right?」

When Misuzu asks, Kudou-chan...

「But...I'm Misuzu-sama's guard. I must not leave your side」

Misuzu smiles at Kudou-chan.

「Misuzu will be going to her dance practice...tomorrow will be the presentation so I can't be late...」

Misuzu's lesson will be done on the rehearsal building of the headmaster...

「The rehearsal with headmaster should be safer than always. After all, guards from all houses will gather...

I see...it'll be ladies from famous houses coming to the rehearsal room of the headmaster.

Each of them will be bringing a guard.

There's nothing safer than that.

「But...Misuzu-sama's the only one with no guard」

「My...Ruriko-san will be on the practice too so Michi's Onee-san, Haruka-san should be there too. I think that Haruka-san will watch over everyone in Kouzuki house as a guard. In the first place...Misuzu normally doesn't have a guard」

「...But」

Kudou-chan seems dissatisfied

Kudou-chan has a lot of problems with her sister, Haruka-san I guess.

Her sister denied the Kudou style and enrolled in Karate.

As the Japan's top on high school Karate...she's a famous person in media.

Compared to her sister...

As Misuzu's guard, she's probably looking forward to go out to a public location like the rehearsal hall.

「We can just officially debut Michi's guard post on tomorrow's presentation...okay?」

「...But」

「Michi...you do know how important Danna-sama is to Misuzu, don't you...?」

Kudou-chan...

「Well...I do know, but...」

Kudou-chan...seems to be not convinced however.

「Anyway...I will send Misuzu first. I'm heading to the rehearsal hall of Konpeki school」

Minaho-neesan said.

...The few hours from here are the most dangerous.

Misuzu should be sent out earlier...

「It was earlier than yesterday...is it okay to reach the rehearsal ahead of time?」

I ask Misuzu.

「It's okay. I think that there are girls who have begun voluntary practice for tomorrow's presentation... There's a room for self-practice in the rehearsal hall of the headmaster. The students of the headmaster can use that anytime...」

That's great but...

I feel sorry to have her arrive early and wait for others in loneliness.

「Misuzu will also practice alone until the beginning of the lesson...tomorrow is the most important day as it'll be Danna-sama's first time to see Misuzu dance...」

Misuzu laughs.

「It's not just Danna-sama...I will do my whole best for my 『little sister』like Mana-san and Megumi-san and 『elder sisters』」

Right...Everyone will be going tomorrow.

At the venue of Misuzu's presentation...

Kouzuki『Kakka』...plans to talk with the people of Shirasaka house...

Misuzu doesn't know it...

「...We're almost there」

Minaho-neesan said.

...Un.

I'm sure this was the same scenery as when I sent Misuzu yesterday.

We're about to arrive at the rehearsal hall...

...Then

「...Someone's following」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...Eh?!」

When I turned around...

...Vespa?

There's a man in black suit is riding over the Vespa...

Red shirt and black tie.

Wearing sunglasses to his eyes...it's a very sturdy man.

...Wait

Why is he not wearing a helmet?

The man's wearing a soft-cap that has the same color as his suit...?!

「...Father?!」

Kudou-chan mutters.

Then...it's him?

The successor of Kudou ancient Martial arts

「It's father...Kudou Yuusaku」

...Haa

「Why is Kudou-chan's father not wearing a helmet?」

I ask for the time being.

「Father hates helmet because it crushes the hairstyle he decided with much effort」

「No...but he's wearing a hat」

「Wearing a hat is my father's hairstyle...」

Hairstyle?

「He's using the hat as the aim...so if there's no hat, his fist won't hit the enemy...」

No...That's just a setting of a certain anime character.  
Even I know that.

「But...if he doesn't wear a helmet, won't he be caught by the police?」

Mana asks Kudou-chan.

「That is...father usually moves with a minivan loaded with that Vespa. He left the car on the nearby street then rode the Vespa to look cool in front of us...!」

He's just showing off?

「Yes...father has a strong commitment to his style...」

...Style

True, I can tell that he's particular about his style.

Is that cool?

If it's Harley then I get it but...

It's a scooter.

His shirt is red.

「Misuzu's phone has the GPS function so Kudou-san was able to identify our car」

Then...he went ahead.

He switched to Vespa then appear from behind...

「Perhaps...that person has received instructions from Kouzuki-sama. We're about to arrive...well be parking Minaho-neesan says then parked the car in front of the building before the rehearsal venue of the Konpeki style.

Katsuko-nee's car behind us also stops.

...Then

The black suited man wearing a Vespa approached our car.

He gets down the Vespa and goes towards us.

Misuzu opens the window.

「...Kudou-sama, how have you been?」

Misuzu talks to the man in black suit with a face of no problems.

The guy in suit approaching is huge.

He's beyond 180cm.

His whole figure is solid.

His fingers look sturdy too...like a martial artist.

Only his looks is strange.

「...No no no, Misuzu-ojousan. I was told by Kouzuki-san...if weird people approached Ojou-sama, kick them for a bit...that's his orders...」

Then...he glared at me.

I can't see his eyes because of his dark colored sunglasses.

But still, I know that he's turning his eyes to me.

「Yaa, yaa, yaa...Ojousan of the underground...and her buddies...Hello. I'm Michi-kun's papa...!」

...Michi-kun?

「...Father, next time you call me that in public, expect me to come and kill you...!」

Kudou-chan glares at her father.

「Hou, hou, hou...Michi-kun will kill me...hohou. Un. I see. How...?」

Kudou Yuusaku provokes his daughter...

「...Michi-kun. It isn't embarrassing to let the world know that you're getting along with your Papa...Michi-kun and Papa actually having an achichi relationship...!」

...What what?

...What's Achichi?

「It seems that I have to close your mouth directly...

Kudou-chan steps off the car.

Yukino felt relieved but...Mana presses her stun gun and she can't escape.  
The door closes.

「Ah, Ah, ah, what...Michi-kun? You want to gonyogonyo with Papa in front of everyone...?」

「Father's the only one doing that!」

Kudou-chan took out her victory hammer then starts swinging it out...

「Hey hey heey...Are you sure, Michi-kun? Don't forget that I have the Kudou style secret attack 『Gold Finger 2001』...!」

Mr. Kudou Yuusaku faces his daughter with a strange stance.

「Father...you should know the horror of my 『Shining Finger 2012/Spring』...!」

『Gold Finger 2001』and『Shining Finger 2012/spring』...

...What's skills are those?

Not that I want to know it though...

「Hmm, I see I see... Michi-kun, you want to play with Papa that much...I see, I get it...」

Mr. Yuusaku's hand disappear to the hem of his suit.

Is he going to take out a weapon?...

...At that moment.

Kudou-chan's father shouted...

「Father...I proposed that I want to have 『sex』with a man today!」

Kudou father stopped moving.

「...What the hell!!!!」

...Byui!!!

The steel ball cuts the sky!!!

...Pagon!!

Kudou-chan's victory hammer is a hard rubber fake steel ball...

It hits the head of his father!!!!!!

Kudou father was blown away then fell backwards.

「...I have proposed that I want to 『copulate』...!」

Once again...Kudou-chan swings her steel ball...

Kudou father stood up though unsteadily.

「Father...Should I 『copulate』with that person?!!!!」

Once again...Shoot!

The steel ball hits the head of her father!!!

Kudou father blows away.



「...Wait...wait a moment...wait I tell you...Michi-kun! Waiiiiiit...!」

Kudou father ignores his daughter and looks at me.

「Who made my cute Michi-kun say such vulgar things!!...Sensei won't be angry so confess it faster... Who is it...?!」

Isn't he angry already?

「Err...It's me」

Can't be helped, I raise my hand.

I'm the only guy here...

Nothing changes even if I hide it.

...Also.

I actually told Kudou-chan...I'm responsible for it.

「O—O—Oh, you, come here. Get out and come here...!」

At the moment Kudou father told me...

The third steel ball hits Kudou father's head...!

「You're letting go of your eyes when you're fighting with me! Father, are you hesitating?!」

Kudou-chan shouts.

「...Stop!!! Michi-kun, stop!!! Let's cancel the battle...Papa is having an important talk about Michi-kun right now!」

Hearing her father...Kudou-chan stops turning her hammer.

「...Just get out you bastard!」

Kudou father shouts at me.

「...Father, are you going to imitate Inoki at such times?」

Kudou-chan mutters.

「...Danna-sama」

Misuzu speaks to me.

「Kudou-sama's a pro...as you can see, he just calmly took Michi's attack three times」

...Yeah

...He's a monster

「Therefore...Danna-sama, just beat him up without minding it!」

...Misuzu?

...Beat him seriously?

「That way, he'll understand the true value of Danna-sama」

Misuzu touches my sleeve.

That's where I'm hiding my 『beat up stick』

I'm going to hit Kudou father...

...with this?

「Hey...What are you doing? Hurry up and get down!」

Kudou father is calling me while doing some strange footwork.

「...It's Ali shuffle this time?」

Is what Kudou-chan says but.

I don't get what it means.

「...I'm going」

「...Take care」

I stepped out of the car with Misuzu's voice in the back.

「Hello...I'm Yoshida」

I bow to Kudou-san's father.

「Ou...Hm?...Then...what's with that? Ah...You...my daughter...want to do that?」

...I

Let's just go honestly.

「Yes...I want to have sex with Kudou-chan. I even told Kudou-chan clearly!」

Kudou father's complexion changes.

「Ah—ah —ah, I see...I see. Then...Michi-kun. Just what does Michi-kun think of this boy?」

Kudou-chan...

「...I still don't know」

「You don't know...Hmmmmmmmm, of course you don't...Michi-kun's still a middle school girl. Nyan nyan is too early for middle school students...nyan nyan is...!」

...Nyan nyan?

...What's nyan nyan?

「No...I'm already an adult...if I'm going to have sex...then I think it's better to leave it to Yoshida-sama」

...Kudou-chan?

「Nnnn?! Michi-kun...what are you saying? Papa didn't hear it well?」

「Yes...Yoshida-sama has already seen my genitalia...he even saw my hymen」

Kudou father's face color's slowly turning dangerous.

「Hmm, hey boy...you even saw Michi-kun's hymeeen?!」

...I

「Yes...I did」

「Is that so?...You! I haven't seen it yet!!!!」

「Isn't that obvious?...It's not something I will show father!」

「You can't on Papa but why did you show it to him! Hey, Michi-kun!!!!」

Kudou-chan's face blushed...

「Therefore...Yoshida-sama is special for me...!」

Then said.

「I've already showed my peeing figure to Yoshida-sama...」

Kudou father lost his temper...!

「You...you saw Michi-kun pee!? You saw it?! Aaaah!?」

「...I-I did」

「Surely...you didn't drink it did you!?」

「...well, I didn't」

「If things go well...you intended to drink it?」

「...I don't have such hobby」

「Then, what's your hobby!!! You brat!!!」

Kudou father tries to attack me...!

At that moment...

The steel ball hits Kudou father's head for the fourth time...!!!

「Hegeeeee...!」

Kudou father was blown away.

「Father...you're showing too much gaps to me...!」

---

---

## 163. The fight of Kudou family

---

「...Michi-kun, just take a break for a moment...」

Kudou papa tells his daughter while swaying.

「...Papa just has an important talk with this boy」

Then...he turned to me.「」

「...Then...err, what's your name again...?!」

Kudou Papa once again shows a nihilist dandy face then spoke to me...

「I'm asking you what's your name...Ah,han?」

Un...So he's speaking with that kind of feel.

He even used 「Ah,ahn?」something English-like

「...Yoshida」

When I reintroduced myself...

Kudou Papa's face looks like he's been struck by a lightning...

「Y-Yoshida...you say?!!!」

Then he removed his sunglasses.

He glares at me strongly...!

There's beads of sweat coming out of his forehead...

「...You, N-No way...you're really...Yoshida-...!!!」

He's looking at me with a serious face.

「...Yes, that's right」

Kudou papa then puts his hand on his breast pocket...

「...Maybe you have a grandfather that I was indebt in...sorry but could you take a look at this guy?」

Saying that...he took out something wrapped in purple cloth.

「...I feel sorry taking up your time」

Then...Kudou papa approaches me.

Then he presents the cloth wrapper in his hand to me...!

Kudou papa takes another step ahead.

...Fasa!!!

Suddenly, Kudou papa's hand opens up and flies towards my face...!

...But

I ignore the wrapper hurled in my face...!

I pull my 『Beat up stick』...then take a step forward!!!

Then, without hesitation...

I beat up Kudou papa's head with all my might!!!!

...Gako!!!

Hitting right in the center...the impact responded!!!!

「...Ouuuuuuuucccchhh!!!」

When I take away the wrapper that flew to my face...!

Kudou papa's rolling on the ground holding his head...!

「Amazing...he easily broke father's secret technique『Never say Never again』」

Kudou-chan mutters...

「...Do you know it Michi?」

Misuzu asks Kudou-chan...

No, of course she knows.

This person is Kudou-chan's father...and they're the only two practicing Kudou style ancient martial arts in the world.

「Yes...Misuzu-sama. The secret technique 『Never say Never again 』...is speaking skillfully as you approach the enemy...pretending to show...something wrapped in cloth, then throwing that to the opponent's face...it's a secret technique of Kudou style that deprives the opponent's sight like an octopus...!!」

...Secret technique what?

「An inexperienced one like me cannot comprehend such a phantom skill. I don't have a diverse acting skill like my father...!」

True...Kudou-chan's better off smiling than acting.  
Or rather...Kudou papa's acting is doubtful as well.  
Somehow, he's having an abnormally sweltering face...

「...You see, I often find cases where they notice my intention halfway... actually」

Kudou papa rises while rubbing his head.

「But you see...at those times, they concentrate on avoiding the wrapper that flew to their face so they instinctively back off. Then...I use that chance...well, it's that kind of strategy...!」

Kudou papa approaches me again.

「And yet...Why are you taking a step forward?」

...I

「If I don't step forward, I won't be able to hit you」

Yeah...I thought that the chance won't arrive.

「Or rather...Why are you beating people up calmly. Take a look at what you have...it's a blunt weapon. A blunt weapon. It's a surprisingly blunt weapon! It's a blunt weapon that hits bluntly! Look, Ojii-san has his head is swelling...it was okay that it was just a swell but if you do it badly...I would die from that. I'll die, seriously die. Un, he'll die...can't you imagine that? This isn't a negligence resulting to death...it's a legitimate murder...does your heart not feel pain... Ahn?!」

...Err

...What should I say?

「...With that said, I would like you to see this for a moment」

Kudou papa once again took out a wrapping cloth from his chest pocket.  
...When he took it out  
I hit him with all my might...

...Bago!!!!

Kudou papa was blown away

「...Amazing! He completely brushed aside father's 『Never say Never again's』 secondary attack...!」

No...Kudou-chan.

That's amazing?

Rather...your father's amazing for taking out another wrapper smoothly.

「...Nnnnnnnnn!...Ojii-san's head feels something right now...!」

But still...Kudou papa stands up...

「...He hit him twice...even though I have never hit my father...!」

No...even if you tell me that.

「...Aaaah...Yoshida-kun was it...Just what are you?」

Kudou papa asks me.

「Normally...after I speak that much, your heart would feel that I won't hit him with all my might for the next time...are you a demon? Or are you a human without imagination...? Do you not understand the meaning of our actions... Aaah? If you hit me that much...I'll die you know! I'll die! Do you intend to kill me?...Aaan?!!!!」

...Err

「Uhm...I heard that Kudou-san will be fine even if I hit him with all my power」

I answered honestly...

「Whaaaaat...Who said that?!」

...Hmm

「...Misuzu」

Or rather...this person.

He was hit by Kudou-chan's hammer four times...

Then I hit him with my 『beat up stick』two times...

Isn't he fine?...



Amazing...

「...Misuzu Ojousama?!」

Kudou papa looks at Misuzu inside the car.

「Yes...I definitely said that. Kudou-san is a very tough person so confront him with all your strength, I said」

Misuzu opens the window then tells Kudou papa...

「...Ahahahahaahah...yesyesyes...I get it, I see.」 Misuzu-ojousama has said that so it can't be helped...like hell, did you think I will say that you bastard!!!!」

Kudou papa glares at me with strong eyes...!

「Hey...bastard...aaan...who are you again?」

「...Yoshida」

Oh right, Yoshidaaaaaa!! Let me tell you something!!!」

What...?

「You were told by Misuzu-ojousama to『Even if you hit uncle Kudou with all your might, he's cool so he'll be fine!』... she did say that...well, even if she say that...that's another case but...however, just because she told you, you shouldn't hit me in the head. Don't you think you'll understand if you think for it even for a moment?!!! Or could it be that you will kill yourself if Misuzu-Ojousan tells you to die?! Aah...!!!」

...Err

「Uhm. I will kill myself if Misuzu tells me to die though...」

What is this person saying?

「...Whaaaaaaaaaaaaat?!!!」

Kudou papa shouts.

「...Danna-sama!」

Misuzu's face turned red...

「M-Me too...!」

Eh...Kudou-chan?

「If Misuzu-sama tells me to『die』...I will commit suicide anytime anywhere...!!!!」

What are you declaring?

Thenshe looks at me with passionate eyes.

「...We're allies」

...Ha?

「Yoshida-sama...you are my ally from the bottom of my heart...!」

...Errr

...Uhm

I will kill myself if Misuzu tells me but...

I will die for Megu, Katsuko-nee, or Nagisa too...

Even for Mana...

Minaho-neesan's orders are absolute so I'll myself if she tells me...

Margo-san...she's thinking about something if she'll tell me that so I have no choice but to die.

If it's Nei-san...yeah, I will. I'll gladly kill myself.

If it was Yukino...I won't.

Or rather...Yukino have told me to 『die』multiple times...

But still, I haven't killed myself.

「Michi...are you really going to do everything Misuzu says?」

Misuzu asks from inside the car.

「...Yes, Misuzu-sama!!!」

Kudou-chan shouts at Misuzu.

Somehow, it feels like a puppy waving her tail.

「Then...I'll order you, Michi...!」

「Yes...please order me」

「Offer your virginity to Danna-sama...and swear to never embrace a man other than Danna-sama for the rest of your life...!」

「...Other men?」

Misuzu smiles...

「If it's a woman...Misuzu will be taking care of you. Forever!!!」

「...Misuzu-samaaaa!!!」

「...Imagine it. Michi guarding me and my baby with Danna-sama...

「...Misuzu-sama's child!」

「That's right...But, you don't necessarily need to be a guard...I want you to be a nanny」

「...Nanny」

Kudou-chan looks at her own flat chest...

「...But, Misuzu-sama. I don't have enough breasts to satisfy Misuzu-sama's child

「That's okay...if Danna-sama massages and sucks it from now on...It'll grow soon enough」

「However...I don't have the milk to nurse the child」

「Then...Danna-sama will get Michi pregnant!」

...eh?

「Misuzu's child and Michi's child will grow up like siblings from Michi's breasts...don't you think it's wonderful?」

「...It's wonderfuuul!」

Kudou-chan's face looks excited.

Kudou-chan... came back from the world of delusion...!

Kudou-chan, you can still make it!!!

「I! I will offer my body to Yoshida-sama! No, please let me offer my body!!!」

...Too late!

「...I-I won't let this! I will never let this happen! Michi-kun...Papa will never let this happen...Kii!!!」

What's with the 「Kii!!」on the end?

「Michi-kun...didn't you say when you were a child...『I will be Papa's bride when I grow up』... Where did your decision when you were three years old go?! You should carry out your original intention!!!」

「...I didn't say anything like that」

「You did...when Michi-kun was three, inside the bath with Papa...!」

「...I didn't. I have not taken a bath with father」

「...We did! until you were four...!」

「...We didn't」

「WE DID...Papa has already seen Michi-kun's 『This kind of look』and 『That kind of look』...I've seen everything...because I'm your papa...!」

Kudou-chan threw a missile punch to Kudou papa's head...!!!

「...Gueeeeeeeeeee!!!」

Kudou papa was blown away and fell down.

「...Forget it. Please forget it. For example, a daughter taking a bath with the father until she aged ten, that is not me and will never be me! It's a dream! A delusion! That girl didn't exist since the start! It's all father's delusion!...Please believe me, Misuzu-sama!」

Misuzu smiles.

「Michi...let's take a bath together next time」

「...Misuzu-sama!」

「Danna-sama will be joining up too but you don't mind do you?」

「Yes...Yoshida-sama is a friend!」

...Err

...What should I do?

「...I won't allow this, I won't allow this! I won't allow this! As long as Papa has his eyes black, I won't...Buhee!!」

Kudou-chan's victory hammer hits him again...!

「Then...I will make father's black eyes turn to white with my hands!!!」

Kudou-chan waves the steel ball.

「...Michi-kun. Can you make it at least blue or gray...? Papa uses colored contact lenses for disguise though...」

Kudou papa takes a mysterious pose while saying that...

The father and daughter confronts each other again...

...Then

「...You two should stop already!!!」

A woman's voice stopped the,  
Looking at it...a tall woman in white suit appears from the rehearsal building of Konpeki school.

「...M-Mama-uesama!」

Kudou-chan's stops spinning the chain.

「Didn't I always tell you to call me 『Mother』in public? What's with『Mama-uesama』...really, Michi's always copying all the strange places of her father」

That person is Kudou-chan's mother?

「I was told that there's 『a funny theatrical performance on the road』so I just thought it were you people so I came here and I was right!」

Kudou mama looks angry...  
When she looked around...  
The first class neighborhood that doesn't look like busy...  
Has around 30 people gathering because of curiosity before we noticed.  
Looking up at the building...  
Oh, there are girls on Yukata looking down here...  
...awawawawa

「...E-Etsuko...Why are you here?」

Kudou papa is completely surprised by the sudden appearance of his wife...

「Isn't that obvious...it's to guard Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama」

Kudou papa.

「No...I received orders from Kouzuki-sama...」

「You're specialized in meddling so you can't be a proper guard you know?!  
That's why I received orders to follow you up」

...as expected.  
It's impossible for him to be a guard because he's so showy.  
He's just attracting people's eyes and make it easier for the enemy to come near...

「Seriously...Kudou family was able to take the job of guarding for Kouzuki-sama thanks to me and Haruka! Could you stop being a drag? Michi too...stop the worthless games of practicing Kudou ancient martial arts and learn Karate like Haruka. That's useless for actual combat...!」

「I take back the words at you...mama-uesama」

「Don't talk back to your mother!」

The mother scolds Kudou-chan...  
Kudou-chan fell silent.

「No...That, Etsuko...you see...Michi-kun's suddenly making up with a man... then she said that she'll do nyan-nyan with that man...Aaan...!」

Kudou papa...What's 『Nyan-nyan』...

「My...isn't that great? Michi finally has awaken to normal romance. Lesbian is just unproductive. Turn towards boys even further...!」

Kudou-chan...her mother knows she's a lesbian.

「Then, should mother take you to a concert next time? Mother is actually into the male rock band named 『Destiny』 Shin-chan, the guitarist there is cute!」

...That's, Mana's  
No...the same hobby as Maika.  
...Mother

「But...Michi-kun's just 15 years old! It's too early for her to nyan nyan with a man! It's too early! Nin-nin!」

The excited husband looks in the eyes of his wife.

「...Just how old I was when you first pushed me down on the bed?」  
「Err...I think it was 15 years old」  
「How old were you back then?」  
「...I forgot it」  
「...I'm going to punch you」

Kudou papa answers.

「...I think it was 13 years old, yes」

Eh...Kudou-chan's father...

...is much younger than the mother...?

「It's often said that high school men are swept by their sexual desire...!」

「That's that...and this is this...!」

「...What's that?」

「Because...I'm seriously worried about Michi-kun from the bottom of my heart!」

Kudou papa holds to his wife.

「Women have their virginity broken sooner or later...be an adult, you too!」

「No, I won't accept that! If it's going to be broken by another man, then...!!!」

At that moment...Kudou mama's roundhouse kick hits Kudou papa's head magnificently.

「T-That's Kudou style reverse propeller kick...you, since when did you...!」

「That's just a karate round kick! Don't name my moves by yourself, it's about time you stop that!!!」

The wife yells.

「In the first place...you always just stick to Michi...try to communicate with the elder sister too!」

「Because...Haruka」

Kudou papa becomes timid.

「He's always looking at me like a garbage...also, she has grown bigger...」

「...What?」

「Even though when you were 15, you were much cuter and smaller than me...!」

「...I'll kill you if you say anything further than that」

「I love little girls!!」

「...You lolicon!!!」

Once again...Kudou mama's kick hits Kudou papa...!

...But

Kudou papa holds the leg with one hand...!

「I caught it! Michi!」

「...Yes, father!!!!」

Kudou-chan seems to have thrown something at the onlookers!!  
The onlookers flinched!  
But, it's too late...!  
The capsule thrown away hits an onlooker's head then broke!!!  
Paaaaaa!...red dusts scatters in the area.

「Geho...geho...!!」

The onlooker coughs violently...!

「Did you see the power of genuine chili...secret technique『Red rain in Berlin』!!!!」

Surely...the dust entered the eyes of the onlooker, he's shedding tears violently.

He's spilling tears red from the powdered chili...  
...『Berlin's』the only one I don't get the meaning

「Oops...you too!」

Kudou papa sets his eyes on another onlooker then rushes to him...  
That man tries to escape but...  
He won't make it anymore...

「...Lightning Kudou Kick!!!」

Kudou papa's jumping kick hits the back of the man!  
The man stumbles on the floor...!

「&...Devil Chopp!!!」

Then he strikes the man's nape with his hand!!  
The man faints down!

「...Here I come!」

Meanwhile...Kudou-chan rushes to the man who received the chili powder.  
She grabbed the head of the man who's violently coughing...

「...World...Shaking!!!」

She kneed him to the face!!!  
That man...nosebleeds then fell down.



「...Fuu, I kicked another dull one again!」

Kudou-chan's line is perfect.

...Err

...W-What's this?

「...Which one is Yuzuki-san?」

Kudou papa goes towards our car.

「...Me」

Minaho-neesan got off the car and replied.

「Kouzuki-sama's message...『Cesario Viola took four men and got off the Central airport the day before yesterday』」

...Four men?

Furthermore...they came from a local airport making it hard to be discovered.

「These are the two of them. They must've come as scouts...they were waiting for us to let down our guard then approach us」

...Wait?

It's true that the man Michi attacked is hiding under a hat and a coat, but...

He looks like a foreigner now that I look closely.

I can see Kudou-san like a real Japanese but...is this a disguise?

「We were told to cooperate with you people and try to eliminate that Cesario and the American criminals...」

That's...Kouzuki『Kakka's』orders

Kudou-san's not a guard but a dispatch to repel Cesario Viola...?

Could it be that Kudou-chan too???!

「Well...Anyway, with these two taken care off...there's three remaining」

Saying that, Kudou papa smiles...but, Kudou-chan

「...Papa...this one's wrong」

...Ha?

「The one I knocked down definitely is the person on the surveillance image from the airport...but, the one father has beaten up is...」

「...No way, is it a substitution?」

The father screams and sharpens his eyes...Kudou-chan 「I think it's a mistaken identity...!」

He just kicked and chopped an unrelated person...  
And even made him faint...!???

---

---

## 164. Misuzu's decision

---

「...W-W-W-What should we do...Michi-kun?」

Kudou papa who kicked and chopped to faint an unrelated person looks at his daughter's face...

「Papa...You look like you'll be in care of the police for a long time. Should I deliver you a chocolate cake as provision?...Hahahaha」

Err...what should we do with this?

「...That guy is under me. That's why you don't need to worry」

Then...a man with a good physique comes out from the rehearsal building. A mature guy with sunglasses, gray suit, and short hair... No matter how you look at it...you can see him as someone related to body guard work.

「...Yamaoka-buchou?!」

Kudou mama turns around in surprise...  
The man takes off his sunglasses then talks to Minaho-neesan.

「Kouzuki Security Service, head of the overall security department, Yamaoka Tetsuo...!」

This person is a member of Kouzuki?

「Our guard has been disrespectful...!」

Kudou papa rebels against those words.

「Who's a member of your department?! We're in a different section from your people...!」

Aah...Kudou papa is on the 『Guard section』

This person is on the 『Security Section』...

「You...Haruka and I belong to the security department though」

Is what Kudou mama says.

「...Father, this is my first duty...but I belong to the 『security section』」

Kudou-chan too...

「Rather than that...isn't it just you and your assistant working on the 『guard section』of our security service...?」

Kudou mama's words stabs Kudou Papa.

「Well...we're a special duty team! A mobile unit! We're a black secret weapon! A super weapon R-1 issue!」

Halfway...he became incomprehensible.

「Anyway...the one you knocked down is one of my men who disguised to approach the target. He's just a newcomer who just joined this year」

Approach the target...

「Kudou...did you misidentify the target?」

Yamaoka-buchou asks Kudou papa.

「That's...I just checked it on the way...the target is wearing a red hat...」

I see, the collapsed man is wearing a red baseball cap.

「...Perhaps hiding a knife or a pistol...silent until the very limit then he'll pull his hat. Then, he ran when Kudou took action...!」

His own hat...forcibly?

「As expected...is it Nimpou 『Substitution art』」

No...you see

...Kudou-san.

「...You attacked him without making a final check...!」

The chief looks at Kudou papa with intense eyes.

...That's the case.

「...I-I'm sorry. I'll take responsibility for what my hands and feet did!」

Kudou papa said irresponsibly.

Anyway...it seems that he's relieved because the person he stunned is a member so he won't be caught by the police...

「...Kuromori-san」

Yamaoka-buchou then calls Minaho-neesan...

In other words...he's talking to the top of 『Kuromori』

As the guard of Kouzuki house...

Of course he knows 『Kuromori Minaho』and 『Kuromori』who Kouzuki 『Kakka』 has his eyes on...

「...Kouzuki-sama is worried about the American Criminal named Cesario Viola on his visit on Japan. Us security people...have begun exterminating them on our decision...!」

「...I feel sorry for troubling you. We have no means to repulse Mr. Viola.

Yamaoka-sama and others can act as they want...!」

「Yes...we will be capturing the target our way...and get rid of them. However, I think it's necessary to share information...」

「...Got it. We will deliver the documents later.」

Minaho-neesan and Yamaoka-buchou are making a professional exchange...  
Yamoka-buchou turns to Kudou mama.

「...Chief Kudou. I will leave Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama's security to you. Your group will be a 16 member guard for 24 hours a day. You must never cause trouble to the persons in charge of other houses...okay?」

「Roger...Buchou」

Kudou mama salutes.

「And...Kudou. You're transferred to Kuromori-san」

...Eh?!

「Kuromori-san...that side seems to be lacking in male help so Kouzuki-sama has given me instructions to send some assistance... He's like this but he might be useful for something...we don't mind if you give back a corpse, please work him hard...!」

Kudou papa...is joining us?!

「Hey, wait a moment!!! I'm not your subordinate!」

Kudou papa shouts.

「However...you're under Kouzuki-sama, right? This is Kouzuki-sama's orders. You will be transferred...!」

「O-Order?!」

Kudou papa's face changed...

「If it's an order then it can't be helped...!」

Kudou papa looks happy for some reason.

「Well...we don't have other available hands. ...When I saw the file, Cesario Viola is an extraordinary criminal belonging to the worst class. Kouzuki Security Service is already on the highest alert status. We're already dispatching twice as many guards than usual. Even if you look through our company, you're the only free among the 『Guard section』...!」

Kudou papa feels down.

「Either way...I'm a body guard in charge of no one!」

I guess so...even if this one is guarding someone...  
I think there's a lot of clients who won't want to walk together...

「...Ojou-chan, what would you do?」

Yamaoka-buchou...talks to Kudou-chan.

「Would you guard Misuzu-sama along with your mother and sister...or would you go with your cheerful father and Kuromori-san...?」

Kudou-chan looks at Misuzu.  
Misuzu nodded from inside the car.

「I will be going with father and Kuromori-sama」

Kudou papa rejoices.

「Michi-kun...I knew that you'll choose Papa...!!!」

Kudou-chan...

「...No. I am to help Yoshida-sama」

...Me?

「W-Why him...Michi-kuuun!!!」

「...He's a friend」

Once again, Kudou-chan looks at Misuzu.

Misuzu smiled at Kudou-chan.

Kudou-chan blushed from that smile.

「...Now, let's go, Misuzu-sama」

Kudou mama tells Misuzu.

「...Yoshi-kun」

When I turn around...Megu came down from Katsuko-nee's car.

「This is Misuzu's place so escort her...!」

Earlier...in the school ground, Misuzu has been taking care and gives priority to Megu who's beside me.

That's why...this is Misuzu's turn.

「...Got it」

I head towards Misuzu's side.

Kudou mama's about to open the car door...

「Sorry...I'll do it」

I open the door for Misuzu.

「...Danna-sama」

Misuzu presents her hand to me with a smile.

I hold that small hand...

Misuzu got off the car holding my hand gracefully.

...A princess.

...of mine

「...Please hold my hand until the entrance」

Misuzu tells me bashfully

「Got it...Misuzu」

I say that...

「I will accompany you. Until the entrance...!」

Kudou-chan said.

「...Please, Michi」

Holding hands...we walk together towards the entrance of the building  
Kudou-chan's right behind us.

Slightly apart, Kudou mama follows us while watching the surroundings.

「...Danna-sama, please look at the second floor of the building」

Looking as Misuzu told me...I see two people through the glass.  
One of them is black haired girl in Japanese clothes. A beauty very much like  
Misuzu.

「...That one is Ruriko-san」

Misuzu's younger cousin...  
The heir daughter of Kouzuki house...

「...That one」

「...I know」

I interrupt Misuzu.  
The other one is a sporty tall girl with a bob-cut hair.  
I've seen her on TV multiple times.  
The number 1 high school Karate student...Kudou Haruka.

「...She's Kudou-chan's sister, right?」

A beautiful karate practitioner...she's definitely beautiful.  
No...her figure's wonderful before anything else.  
A healthy trained body without a single waste.

「Margo-san has said this before」

I tell Misuzu.

「The guards should look like people who guard...When I saw that guard chief  
and Kudou-chan's sister, I understood what it meant...!」



True, if there's a person who looks strong in appearance...  
The chances of bad guys making a move on them will decrease...

「...Is my father not suitable for being a guard?」

Kudou-chan said sadly.

「Un...as the front guard. But, Kudou style is aiming at the gap by doing something unexpected? Kudou style should just think of how to use Kudou style...?!」

I ask Kudou-chan.

「...Yoshida-sama?」

「I'm just a decoy for 『Kuromori』 Nei-san and I makes an opportunity and Margo-san destroys them. Margo-san is the only one who has the fighting capacity in 『Kuromori』so we have no other choice but to use that tactic...if the manpower is lacking, you must compensate with wisdom. I think Margo-san's fighting style is like Kudou style...!

「...In what way?」

Kudou-chan asks...

「Margo-san never shows herself fighting an opponent with all her strength. I think she's afraid to show her power to the enemy... If the enemy knows your power then you can easily make up countermeasures. ...Kudou style is the same isn't it? Kudou-chan's father looks like he's joking around but actually...he's not letting the enemy see the actual power of Kudou style...!」

Kudou-chan nods.

「It is as you say...『Hide your strength. It blooms because it's hidden』is the way of Kudou style...! Who would've thought that Yoshida-sama will understand...!」

Kudou-chan nods seriously.

「That's not true...Michi, you're just being fooled by that guy」

Kudou mama told her daughter.

「That guy...has always been playing around since he was child. He's always like that. There's no way he's doing such deep thought on that...!」

「Father...has always been 『Kudou style』...!」

Denying her mother's words...Kudou-chan resists.

「...Mama-uesama」

Kudou-chan speaks to her mother again.

「What is it Michi?」

Kudou-chan looks at my face...

「I think I want to bind my fate with this person」

Kudou mama stares at me.

「...Are you sure with this guy?」

「...Yes. I would like to devote my purity to this person」

She tells Kudou mama.

「Use contraceptives」

「Yes...I've decided not to give birth until I'm an adult...!」

「I'm telling the guy!」

...I

「Yes...I'll be careful」

I bow to Kudou mama.

「Michi...just because you'll experience sex, don't go at random men. You must not have sex to people you don't trust...okay?」

Kudou-chan...

「I don't intend to do it with other than Yoshida-sama...」

「...Then that's okay」

Eh...that's okay?

Is this how should a mother approve...?!

「Please be at ease...Etsuko-sama If any problems arise, Misuzu will be taking responsibility for everything...!」

Misuzu smiled gently then told Kudou mama.

「Misuzu wants to have Michi work as an aide throughout her life. Do you mind...Etsuko-sama?」

Kudou mama...

「That's...I'm really sorry for making you take care this inferior daughter of mine...Misuzu-sama...!」

I know that Kudou-chan's face turned gloomy from her mother's words.

「...Kudou-chan isn't an inferior! She's a very amazing girl!」

I spoke out instinctively.

「...Yoshida-sama?!」

Kudou-chan's surprised.

「Misuzu thinks the same...she just doesn't know how to use her power yet. Michi will change a lot after three years. Misuzu believes that she's much more talented than her sister, Haruka...!」

「But...I'm not as strong as my sister...not as beautiful either...!」

Kudou-chan looks down.

「That's not true...if you fought seriously, Kudou-chan's much stronger」

I look up at the second floor.

Haruka-san is looking down at us.

She looks like laughing like making a fool out of us...

「Also...Kudou-chan's much more beautiful」

「...Eh?」

Kudou-chan and my eyes met each other.

「That's right...in three years, Michi will have the beauty and strength nobody can oppose. Misuzu will refine Michi...Michi has that quality!」

Misuzu smiles at Kudou-chan.

「Yup...I like you!」

Kudou mama says.

「Michi...has always been a papa's girl since she was a child...she's timid on

other places. I think a man like you would be perfect for her! Misuzu-sama, make this boy Michi's darling!」

Kudou mama doesn't know our relationship...  
I'm escorting Misuzu but...she just thinks it's my job.  
Just an hospitality 『Kuromori』has prepared for Misuzu...  
She doesn't think of me as anything but a member of 『Kuromori』...  
Above all...Misuzu has never called me 『Danna-sama』in front of Kudou mama...  
Misuzu always act by reading ahead...

「Rather than Michi...Etsuko-sama should think more about herself first...」

Kudou mama's complexion changes when Misuzu said that...

「Etsuko-sama...you're in an immoral relationship with Yamaoka-buchou, weren't you?...!」

...Eeeeeeeeh?!

That buchou with good body build.

「...Misuzu-sama, how?」

「I also know it...Mama-uesama」

...Kudou-chan?!

「I think father's the only one who doesn't know. Father trusts mother from the bottom of his heart...he does love you after all...!」

「Love?...That person...!」

「I...despise you...!」

Kudou-chan looks at her mother.

「If I don't...I won't call my own mother 『Mama-uesama』...!」

W-What...an incomprehensible protest.  
Kudou-chan, it's two warped.

「Sorry...Michi. I will settle this matter soon...」

...That said?

「Yamaoka-buchou...has already decided to divorce. That's why I will divorce too」

...That's?

Breaking up with Kudou papa...

「I intend to remarry Yamaoka-san this autumn...Haruka has said that she'll stay with me...Michi prefers to be with that guy, don't you...?!」

Hearing those words...I opposed...!

「We will be taking Kudou-chan!」

This girl is our ally.

「You'll be taking her?...That means you're pulling her to 『Kuromori』?」

Kudou mama misunderstand what I said.

「Wrong, Etsuko-sama...she's Misuzu's guard, she'll stay with Misuzu 24 hours a day」

「But...this guy's working for 『Kuromori』isn't he...?!」

...Err

...What should we do?

...Then

Misuzu speaks up.

「The current representative of 『Kuromori』will be retiring soon. Afterwards... Misuzu intends to manage the whole 『Kuromori』...!」

...Misuzu?

You...could it be?

「Yes...I will convince grandfather. I will be the next leader of 『Kuromori』...!」

...That's right.

Minaho-neesan intends to completely dismantle 『Kuromori』but...

Kouzuki『Kakka』opposed to that...

Back when 『Kuromori』brothel is functioning...Kouzuki-san has been supporting them but...

Once we go out of business...we can't borrow power anymore...

Rather...we will be watched over as we know too much on the faces behind the big shots in the political and business world.

They are seeking Shirasaka Sousuke's death from the concern of leakage of

customer list this time...

They will be much more cautious in the future so there won't be any information leak again.

They will never allow us to easily say 『We'll close our business』

If dealt badly, it's possible that all members of 『Kuromori』 will be erased by Kouzuki『Kakka』...

To avoid that danger...

We need to continue our 『Kuromori』operations for a while...

But...Minaho-neesan doesn't want to be involved with prostitution anymore.

...Then.

Someone else has to take over the operations of 『Kuromori』...

Also...Kouzuki『Kakka』will look for a person he can trust...

The candidates are limited.

「『Kuromori』...will be managed by Misuzu...!」

Misuzu has already made a decision...

「Of course, Michi won't be sold to guests. Michi will be serving as my guard... there's no problem if that's the case, isn't it...?!」

Misuzu looks at Kudou mama.

「If that's the case... Misuzu-sama, will also be absorbed only on 『Kuromori』 works... No...with Michi's skill she might be a suitable guard in the brothel...」

Kudou mama doesn't seem to want to accept Kudou-chan's Kudou style until the end...

Misuzu whispers to me who's preoccupied by the state of the mother and child.

「Please take a look at those two」

Misuzu ignores Kudou mama's words and looks up at the two people on the second floor.

A tall beautiful karate girl...Kudou Haruka.

A black haired beauty on the back...Kouzuki Ruriko.

The girl that looks like Misuzu has a cold eye.

She's looking at us expressionlessly.

「...Fufu, Danna-sama」

Misuzu whispers to my ear in a way Kudou mama won't hear.

「...I will defeat those two. If that happens, Kouzuki house will be Misuzu's...!」

...Misuzu.

...She talks about her ambition of becoming the suitable grand daughter for Kouzuki『Kakka』

「Misuzu was a weak girl that's not confident about herself before she met Danna-sama」

Misuzu's eyes shine suspiciously...

「It's different now...Misuzu will do anything to make Danna-sama happy. I will obtain everything...!」

We finally arrived at the entrance of the building.

「Here will do...」

Misuzu tells me while smiling...

I can feel Ruriko-san and other's glance from the back...

She's talking to me...showing it off...

「Thank you for the fill today」

Misuzu presses her abdomen...

What's there is...

My fresh semen clogged up inside Misuzu's womb.

「Please look forward to tomorrow's presentation...Misuzu will dance with all her best...!」

「Yeah...do your best」

「...Yes!」

I want to kiss her but...

I can't do that with Ruriko-san watching.

There are other ladies who are coming to practice watching over here too...

「I will take today's share all for tomorrow」

Reading my mind...Misuzu has spoken.

「...I'll return it threefold」

「Misuzu is okay even with tenfold...~!」

Then...we separate our hands.

「Michi...I'll leave the rest to you...!」

Hearing those words...

She's giving the order of 『Give me assistance』...

「...Certainly, Misuzu-sama」

Kudou-chan bows her head

「Then, Etsuko-sama...let's go」

Misuzu...enters the building with Kudou mama...

---

---



## 165. Yaa! Yaa! Yaa!

---

Now then...I go back to the car in a hurry after seeing Misuzu off.  
Before I noticed, there are around 20 guards in uniforms mobilized to send away the curious onlookers around the building.  
These people in their uniforms must be people from Kouzuki security service.  
The employees are carrying the man working under Cesario Viola beaten by Kudou-chan and the one knocked out by Kudou papa by mistake to a big van with a badge of the company.  
Worried about Yukino, I look at the back of Minaho-neesan's car.  
The half-naked Yukino under the blanket...she's lip for some reason...?

「Mana...what's wrong with Yukino?」

When I ask, Mana laughs...

「She seems to be making a noise so Mana knocked her out!」

The stun gun in Mana's hand sparks...!  
Mana...is merciless to Yukino as ever...

「...Katsuko, drive this car...I'll drive that car」

Minaho-neesan calls Katsuko-nee.

「Megumi...come to this car. Monitor Yukino-san with Mana-san!」  
「Yes...Minaho-san」

Megu sits on Yukino's side to sandwich her on the back seat of the car.

「Yoshida-kun and Kudou-san will be moving along with my car...Kudou-san's father will be coming here...!」  
「No...I have my Vespa」

Minaho-neesan glares at Kudou papa.

「We have something to talk about」

The people inside the two cars have shuffled...

The first car has Katsuko-nee driving, Mana, Megu, Yukino.

The second car has Minaho-neesan driving, Kudou-chan, Kudou papa, and me.

Minaho-neesan speaks at the same time we board the car.

「...Kudou-san. For the time being, could you talk about what you know about the situation of Kouzuki Security service...?!」

Minaho-neesan said while turning on something on the car's dashboard.

Perhaps it's a microphone.

The conversation inside this car will be listened to by Katsuko-nee on the other car and Margo-san who's protecting Nei-san at school.

「Un...you see」

Before Kudou papa begins to speak, Minaho-neesan interrupts.

「Not you...I'm asking Kudou-san」

...I'm also a Kudou though. Or rather, I'm the patriarch of Kudou family!」

Patriarch...your family's almost broken already though...

「I'm saying that I'm not asking you...」

Minaho-neesan glares at Kudou-papa then he shrinks.

「...Michi-kun, explain to everyone」

「Yes...father」

Kudou-chan begins her explanation...

「Kouzuki security service's investigation has stated that...the American criminal Cesario Viola and his allies seems to have landed to Central Centair airport via china the day before yesterday」

Un...I heard that from the head chief earlier.

「The five of them used false passports. The names are 『Paul McCartney』, 『John Lennon』, 『George Harrison』『Stuart\_Sutcliffe』、『Pete\_Best』」

...False names?

「Among these, the person named 『George Harrison』is very similar to

Lorenzaccio Bandini who's regarded as one of Cesario Viola's right hand, so it's concluded that these five people are Cesario Viola's party...」

They only know one?

「...Cesario Viola and his allies have a hobby of disguising so...even FBI doesn't have a precise photo of them. Lorenzaccio is the only connection to Viola outside the organization...and he's the only one who's face is known」

Minaho-neesan explains.

「Yes...the surveillance images taken from the airport this time are valuable materials to know their faces...」

「...No, it's possible that Mr. Viola wasn't among them」

...Minaho-neesan.

「Focusing the attention on the five people at Centrair airport, he might've come to Japan separately.」

「...Why do you think so?」

Minaho-neesan answers Kudou-chan's question.

「You'll understand it from the fake names...Mr. Viola is a person who likes to make fool of others」

...Fake names

「Kudou-chan...can you say it once again?」

Hearing my request...

「Yes...『Paul McCartney』、『John Lennon』、『George Harrison』、『Stuart Sutcliffe』、『Pete Best』」

I don't get it at all.

「...and who's the guy Kudou-san knocked out earlier?」

「The last, 『Pete Best』」

「...As expected」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「Uhm...Minaho-neesan, explain it in a way I understand」

「Yeah...I also ask that!」

Kudou papa and I ask Minaho-neesan.

「...Beatles」

...Eh?

「Mr. Viola used the Beatle's members name as fake names. They're making a fool of us in a way we would understand」

Even if you say that...

I'm not that detailed about Beatles.

「I see! I get it! Paul and George...but who's Stuart and Pete...?」

Kudou papa...you don't get it do you?

「The initial members of Beatles went to Hamburg for their play」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「Sutcliffe and Pete Best are members who couldn't make it to the major debut as Beatles」

...There's that kind of person?

「Sutcliffe left early. But, Beatles is a five man band...Pete Best didn't suit the other members and was dismissed」

...In short.

「The man who has a fake name 『Pete』that was knocked down by Kudou-san...he's only the smallest member among Viola's allies」

Is this the 『He's the weakest among the four Devas』or『He's a disgrace to us』on manga?

「Perhaps...there won't be any great information even if you interrogate that man」

...A shame.

「...Uhm. What's the fake name of the person Kudou-san...the father...knocked out?」

「The one father let go is...『Paul McCartney』」

Kudou papa tells us.

「...Don't say 『Let go』that much I feel like losing my position」

「Father has no position since the beginning」

「Guh...It hurts the most when Michi-kun says that」

Papa gets depressed.

「Perhaps...『Paul』and 『John』are two-cup signs of Viola's execution force...  
Romeo Montague and Guiliano Genca. 『Sutcliffe』is something I don't know  
but...if he came to Japan with Viola, he would be 『Sutcliffe』but...I'm not  
certain」

Minaho-nesan mutters.

「I got it!...We should just look for a foreigner who arrived at Japan with a  
name of 『Ringo』? Aren't I intelligent?!」

Kudou papa shouts.

「Father...even if there's that person...I surely think that it's not Viola  
himself...!」

「Eh, why?! Michi-kun...Look, 『Paul』『John』『George』Won't the end be  
『Ringo』?!」

「Do you think Cesario Viola would purposely do something that obvious...?」

Kudou papa was silenced by just one line.

「Even if it's a trap, I think that we can puzzle over it even for a bit...Only  
father would be fooled by something that straight...!」

「Papa is a straightforward and innocent man...That's what Mama liked about  
me that's why we married...!」

...Err

...Your wife is cheating though

Instead of cheating...they're planning to divorce and remarry so they're already  
serious.

「Minaho-neesan...what are we going to do from now on?」

The plan is to go to Shirasaka Sousuke's second house to burn it though.

「...We'll go back for the time being. Mr. Viola's fighting group is moving, it's  
dangerous to bring Megumi and Mana-san. Anyway, let's bring those girls to a

safe place...then we'll have to reorganize the members and resume action」

...Un

I think so too

「But...the possibility of the media smelling out Shirasaka's second house...」

That's what I'm worried about.

The first report has already been distributed to the media.

Maybe...the press is already gathering at Shirasaka house we went just a while ago.

In that case...even the other house.

「That's what I'm worried about too」

Minaho-neesan's expression was dark...

「I think that perhaps there are a lot of people even in mass media that knows Shirasaka's other house. Shirasaka has been crazy calling out entertainers there...」

It would be bad if we don't hurry as expected.

But...if this continues.

We will be attacked by Mr. Viola's men.

「Nevertheless...the girl's safety is the top priority. Anyway, let's go back」

Minaho-neesan decided...

「Got it...I think Minaho-neesan's judgement is correct」

Minaho-neesan looks at Kudou papa

「By the way...」

「W-What...?!」

「Is that...chief Yamaoka a trustworthy person?」

Minaho-neesan's question...

「Isn't he trustworthy?」Kudou papa says.

「Can't be trusted」...Kudou-chan.

They answer at the same time.

「Why...can't you trust him?」

「I ask you the same...Why do you trust him?」

「Well...he's the chief you know?! That alone will make you feel you can rely on him!」

「That alone won't make him trustworthy」

Kudou-chan answered flatly...

「...I believe Kudou-san's words. It's better if we don't show the cards to Yamaoka-buchou」

「Yes...I think that's better」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「Yoshida-kun, what do you think?」

...I

「I agree with Kudou-chan's opinion. That Yamaoka seems to be reliable but...I feel I can't trust that person」

...Un

My intuition says so.

「...There are those guys who feel like that at school. The student council president...or the club president of the athletic club. They are the people standing with charisma...but they're people that only has charisma」

「...Only has charisma?」

Kudou-chan looks at me.

「They look serious, they speak decently, they have the skills...they're charismatic. And yet...if something big happens in their post...they can't deal with the responsibility and they will be the one to escape first」

...There's quite a lot of them.

Those kind of people.

「It's not that they don't have the disposition but...they simply don't want to get in trouble, they will throw all the decision to other guys. But still, they are charismatic so even if they abandon the responsibility they will accuse someone else and rise to another position again...」

Yeah...like Liu Bei Gentoku

「Really...your eyes are accurate」

Minaho-neesan smiles at me...

「That observation power and insight will be a strong weapon if polished」

...Weapon?

I just said what I thought though...

「...That's surprising」

Kudou-chan looks at me...

「I thought that Yoshida-sama just absentmindedly listen to Misuzu-sama's words and just nod」

「Won't I just be a fool with that?」

「Because...Yoshida-sama has always been answering Misuzu-sama's wishes all this time. I have never seen you refuse even once...」

「Well...I'll do it as long as I can. But, I won't do anything Misuzu wishes...I also scold Misuzu」

「...Yoshida-sama had?」

「Yeah...Misuzu is already my 『family』」

I feel surprised when I said it.

...That's right.

Misuzu's my 『family』

「We're『family』...I'll do as told unless I cannot do it. But...it's not just for Misuzu. Megu, Mana...Minaho-neesan are my 『family』 Just like Misuzu...if they tell me something, I'll do it...」

I won't have any hesitation.

「I am a member of 『Kuromori』but...I'm a member of the 『family』Minaho-neesan leads. I think so...」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「Right...I'm offering Yoshida-kun a residence and meals but...I'm not paying him salary. I'm giving him 『pocket money』for helping out with my work but...there's no labor contract between me and him. I'm not an employer or a boss...to tell the truth, I thought of putting you in protection along with Megumi and



Mana-san but we're short in hands now...so I had Yoshida-kun help out...」

Un...I don't have any contract with Minaho-neesan right now.  
In her revenge...even the fight with Mr. Viola...  
I'm just doing it selfishly...

「...For Yoshida-sama, Misuzu-sama and the members of 『Kuromori』are  
『family』...!」

Kudou-chan mutters.  
...I

If possible...I'd like to welcome her to the 『family』  
Hearing her conversation with her mother earlier...  
I know that this girl's heart is hurt.

This girl has a family but...that's not functioning well now.

「Now then...it's about time we move. Kudou-san, please get off the car」  
Minaho-neesan looks at Kudou papa.

「I'm just talking to the father...!」  
Kudou papa...

「Yeah, got it...I have my Vespa. You want to be followed by the Vespa?」  
Minaho-neesan...

「Unfortunately...my hideout forbids men.」 Kudou-san can't come in...」  
Kudou papa got startled.

「Eh...What about this guy? Isn't he a guy? He has balls with him doesn't he?」  
He points at me...

Yes...I have my balls attached to me.

「Yoshida-kun is our 『family』...were you listening to us earlier?」  
Minaho-neesan sneers at Kudou papa.

「...Father, get off」  
Even his daughter is being harsh to him.

「...Okay, okay, fine! I'm going to follow after you guys then!」

Kudou papa took out his phone.

「...Hello! Noma, bring the 『Titan Boy』here right now」

It must be hiding somewhere near.

A white van approaches us then stopped.

A pair of young man and woman comes down from the driver seat.

One is a thin lady wearing glasses.

The other is a plump man.

「Yup...it's this!」

Kudou papa gets off the car and goes to the other van.

The body of the van has a 『Kudou Detective office』written on it

T-This is standing out too much.

「Those two are father's assistant」

...Assistant?

「Yes...Noma-san and Tanii-san. Father only has those two under him...」

Of course...even his daughter, Kudou-chan isn't under him...

「Tony, get my Vespa on 『Titan Boy』!」

Kuodu papa orders his subordinate.

「...It's not Tony, it's Tanii」

The plump guy shouts.

「That's just the same...TonyTanii!」

「Tanii Kentarou! It's not Tony!」

「You're already Tony from the day you became my subordinate!」

Kudou papa hits his subordinate...

「Also...Noma」

「Noma! Noma Mikako!」

「You're 『Noma Jean』! That's your code name!」

...What?

...Codename?

「Then...I will also make a codename for Kudou-san!」

Noma-san screams in anger...!

「No you see...I was waiting for that independence, my team...!」

Kudou papa smiles happily

Noma-san screams while pointing to Kudou papa!

「...『Arawashi Shidanchou』!」

Kudou papa twitched!

「From now on...you're『Arawashi Shidanchou』」

Hearing that...Kudou papa

「Noma-kun...That...can it be not 『Arawashi Shidanchou』?」

「That's right, Noma-san...I like 『Ankoku Daishougun』better」

The plump Tony says so.

「No...both of them are rejected」

Kudou papa feels down.

「By the way...isn't 『Ankoku Daishougun』a New Year's special after the final episode...?」

「...Of course!」

...I don't get what they're talking about.

「I propose 『Pachinko Daimyou』...!」

Kudou papa loses his temper!

「Isn't all of it a 『evil monster』!」

「Eh...Kudou-san, you were the type that wants to be a hero?」

Kudou papa gets depressed from that one blow...

「...Just shove the Vespa inside the 『Titan Boy』already Then, we'll be following that car」

「Roger...Boss!」

Noma-san and Tony-kun salutes to Kudou papa.

「By the way...why is the van's name 『Titan boy』?」

Noma-san asks Kudou papa.

「...You don't have to mind that!」

Kudou papa answered strongly.

---

---

## 166. Pile!

---

Our car runs through the town at a violent speed.

「...We don't have time. We have to take Megumi and Mana to the school then we'll be heading to the other house of Shirasaka」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Eh...Minaho-neesan too?」

Minaho-neesan's the brain of 『Kuromori』  
I don't think she should go to dangerous locations...

「It can't be helped. Margo can't leave Nei's side because she has to counterattack... Katsuko will manage the work on the internet」

「But...Minaho-neesan, if something happens to you」

Minaho-neesan smiles from the driver seat.

「It's okay...I have plans organized for various situations. Even if I'm not there, Margo and Katsuko will execute it perfectly」

「...That's not true」

I said.

「We need Minaho-neesan...!」

The smile in Minaho-neesan's face disappears.

「...Thank you, Yoshida-kun」

Then...said

「To tell you the truth...we have something to steal from Shirasaka's other house. That is an important trump card for us right now. It's impossible to distinguish if I won't go...」

So that's the idea...

「Got it...I'll protect Minaho-neesan」

Kudou-chan looks at me.

「Then...I will be protecting Yoshida-sama」

...Kudou-chan

「That is Misuzu-sama's orders...」

She looks inside her bag.

I wonder if she's checking her accessories.

She's going to take some surprising weapon again.

「Kudou-san...I've got a question」

Minaho-neesan looks at Kudou-chan.

「Yes...What is it?」

「What kind of department does your father belong to among the Kouzuki security service? He did say that he doesn't belong to the security department...」

Kudou-chan answers.

「He belongs to the president's office from the organizational chart. Actually... They're a mobile unit directly under Kouzuki-sama...or rather, they're thought as Kouzuki-sama's plaything」

...Plaything?

「Father receives direct orders from Kouzuki-sama. The contents of the orders aren't told to anyone in the company at all. Therefore...if you look from outside perspective, you can only think that father is just playing around」

Well...with his looks and behavior.

Nobody would think that he's being serious.

「...How much is the salary?」

「The budget of the department is obtained directly from Kouzuki-sama. That car isn't registered as an equipment of Kouzuki security service, it's not audited by the company either. It belongs to father's company on documents」

Kudou-chan says while looking at the 『Kudou detective agency』van behaving

us.

「...Your father's company?」

I ask.

「That 『Kudou detective agency』 It's a different company that has nothing to do with Kouzuki security service. Officially, 『Kudou detective agency』and the 『Guard division』is a business tie up and it's displayed that father is sent there」  
「...That said」

「Yes...father's not a regular member of Kouzuki security service. He receives an annual salary from Kouzuki-sama every year」

...Annual salary

「It seems it's fun to make renew the contract every year...it seems that it goes up or down depending on the year's achievement」

Haa...it's like a pro baseball player.

「Noma-san and Tony-san who's under father are full time security service employees. Father's the only one who's not a full time employee」

Kudou-chan looks lonely...

「Actually...father doesn't have the quality to be a regular employee of Kouzuki security services...」

「...Why?」

「You won't even be accepted at the entrance if you do not have a judo, kendo, or a designated karate school certificate... And you have to be on the 3rd dan according to the regulations」

「...Is Kudou style martial arts no good?」

「Yes...Judo and kendo have a clear certification criterias. For Karate as well, you'll be accepted if the school recognizes you. However...Kudou style only has me and my father」

...They have no way of authorizing it.

「Mama-uesama has been doing Karate since the past...she has joined the Kouzuki security service as a full-time employee. Also, Onii-sama and Ane are both recommended with Karate...」

...I see

「My father can be employed if he just learns Judo or Karate and reach the 3rd dan but...He said『I only do Kudou style』and refused to learn other martial arts」  
「The mother is a full-time and the father isn't...As expected, that creates a discord between couples...?」

I imagined it that way.

「No...I think they are a very harmonious couple couple when I was young. Their atmosphere turned strange on the past several years」

Kudou-chan looks behind the van.

Kudou papa sitting on the passenger seat is happily shouting at Tony-san on the driver's seat...

「I think the big part has been when Mama-uesama has been promoted to 『Chief』 Mama-uesama seems to have good reputation with the company...she has been promoted and her salary and bonuses increased. Kouzuki security service is warm with her welfare...and father on the other side is different」

...So that's how it is

「Father's side's annual salary just goes up and down every year, it doesn't increase. Even so, father is committed to 『Kudou style』...so the money is just assigned to clothes and equipment...!」

The wife's salary increases every year, succeeding her career...she's getting recognized steadily.

And yet her husband is working secretly under Kouzuki『Kakka's』orders so nobody knows what kind of activity he's doing. If you look from outside perspective, you can only think of him as playing around. Furthermore, he's not a full time employee and he's not getting promoted...his salary doesn't increase either.

...Un

I understand the reason why the wife is cheating...

「Also...I think it is a big part that Onee-sama and I were selected as guards of Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama」

That's right...because they're guards.



Kudou-chan is also going to the same Ojou-sama school as Misuzu...

「Ane is doing Karate so she'll be appointed as a full time employee of the security service. And if Ruriko-sama becomes the successor of Kouzuki family...ane will become the security chief. Her promotion is certain...therefore」

Kudou-chan looks at me.

「...I think that's why Yamaoka-buchou approached Mama-uesama」

...Is that how it is?

Becoming a father in law of a the girl who will undoubtedly be successful, is his ulterior motive 「Who knows...we don't know」

...Minaho-neesan intervenes from the side.

「You see...women's peak of lust comes in mid thirties」

...peak of lust?

「Therefore...their decline of lust and physical aging comes at almost the same time. It's around 40s...」

「What's does it have to do with it?!」

Kudou-chan glares at Minaho-neesan

「While you're young...i think people like Kudou-san's father has the charm. He's fun to look at and he's free」

...I see

「But...when you reach over forty years old, you have to think about you and your child's future...they get disillusioned. Kudou-san's father will stay like that until he die...」

「Yes...father will carry out 『Kudou style』until death」

「Your mother doesn't want that. As expected, she'll prioritize her own live and learn both Judo and Karate to become a full time employee」

「But...the 『Guard Division』is directly under Kouzuki-sama...he has a higher position than Yamaoka-buchou」

Minaho-neesan laughs...

「The『visible position』is much more stronger than the『Substantial』The

regular employee's security officer receives much more favorable treatment than a somewhat unknown non-regular employee who's dispatched to a detective office」

I don't get the society

「When you grow older...it's inevitable that your criteria value changes from when you were young. Thinking about insurance and pension...you'd want to marry a regular employee...」

I think about myself

「When they grow older, Misuzu, Megu and Mana will abandon me...」

No...it won't be that long...

There's a lot of men better than me...I think it's normal to abandon someone like me

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「That might be the case...but, don't worry. Not everyone will go away」

...Eh?

「At worst...at least one person won't leave you. Yoshida-kun, you'll never be alone for the rest of your life」

...Is that so?

...Really?



Before long...the car arrives at school.

Katsuko-nee's car goes from the main entrance...

Katsuko-nee's an official of the school...Megu's wearing a school uniform so it's okay to enter the school grounds.

Yukino is limped out...Mana's hiding behind the seat.

The present time is 3:36PM

Megu's looking towards us worriedly...

Mana's hands stretches out from the back seat and is waving towards me.

Katsuko-nee's car disappear inside immediately after.

「...Won't it be bad if we were followed? We even enter the school from the

main gate」

When I say that...Minaho-neesan

「We're already prepared for it. The school is our final line of defense. Rather, it's much scarier if they identify the secret passage now. That's why we're going in from the main gate...!

...I see

We go through the principal's office to the monitoring room...

We don't want to let them know the existence of the back passage leading to the staff parking lot.

We carry Yukino while she's covered with blanket...I don't know if we're going to carry her to a cardboard box however...

「Now...let's head to Shirasaka's other house」

Minaho-neesan steered the handle.

The 『Kudou Detective agency』 follows behind

...4:26 PM

We arrived at Shirasaka's other house somehow.

「...What the hell?」

It was a mansion enclosed by a high wall.

To be honest...it's bigger than Yukino's house.

「Now then...what should we do?」

Minaho-neesan mutters from the driver seat.

「I'd like to get in as soon as possible...take all what we need and set it on fire...!」

「...What is the problem?」

When I ask...

Minaho-neesan points at the metal wire running over the fence.

「That's perhaps connected to a security company. If something wrong happens, they will be sent out immediately」

Oh...if you touch that line, the system will report immediately.

「At this point, the entrance is much harder. I think the surveillance camera is also seen directly from the security company...」

...Un

If we break through that security system and come inside...

That's heavy for us.

If Margo-san is here, she'll know some good method.

「...Please leave this to us」

Kudou-chan speaks out

「『Kudou style』is used at this cases」



Instructed by Kudou-chan...we stopped the car beside the wall with only a few pedestrian.

The other side of the wall is the house.

I guess it's behind the house.

There's a few windows on this side.

「...Father!」

Kudou-chan gets off the car and stops the 『Kudou detective agency』van 「...Hmmmmmm! What is it, Michi-kun?!」

Kudou papa opens the van's window and talks to his daughter.

「We will be sneaking to the mansion without touching the security system We'll be stealing an object of interest then set fire in the mansion...!」

「...Hmmm, I see」

「Father...do something. It's urgent...!」

...Kudou-chan

...Do something, you say

「Okay, got it...Hey, Noma!」

Kudou papa turns to the back of the van.

「...Noma here!」

Noma-san answers immediately

「『Strategy 505』!」

「Err...Boss, again?!」

Noma-san complains.

「Stop complaining...Tony, get the camera and the 『Seventh Scripture』...!」

「...It's Tanii!」

「Shut up, do it faster!」

After the slapstick...they begin preparing

「What do you intend to do?...If you make so much noise, you'll gather people」

When I tell Kudou-chan that...

「We don't mind even if they gather...rather, we want to do it in public」

...Why?

「If we do it publicly...people who saw us won't think that we're 『thieves』or 『arsonists』...!」

That's something bold once again...

「Here, here, here!」

Noma-san removes the huge 『Kudou detective agency』written on the van  
Just like Margo-san's white car...it was pasted magnetically  
They changed it to...

...『Kudou Production: Television Production Department』

They took out traffic cones and barricades out from the van.  
Tanii-san then covered a part of the wall.  
It feels like they're starting a construction...  
Then...

Kudou papa really took out a huge steel machine for construction.

「...What's that?」

When I ask Kudou-chan...

「A concrete breaker『The seventh scripture』...!」

Concrete Breaker?

「It's actually a concrete crusher used by construction work of demolishing the house...」

「Eh...then, how do they intend to use it...?」

Kudou-chan looks at my face and answered.

「Isn't that obvious? It is as you see」

...As I see?

「We're going to break the wall. There's no sensors on the walls after all」

Open a hole in the wall...?

「It's okay to open a hole where a person can pass through, right?」

True, she's right, but...

「Won't that be loud?」

I feel like it's going to make some terrible sound.

「It's originally used for construction work so I think it's quite noisy」

Kudou-chan answered lightheartedly.

「Then...won't everyone around gather?」

「It's okay...that's what 『Strategy 505』is for」

...Err

「Let's leave this to them, Yoshida-kun」

Minaho-neesan said seriously.

「...They're professionals under Kouzuki『Kakka』for a long time...you should trust them」

...Then

Tanii-san brings out a business video camera from the car.

Noma-san attaches a 『\*\*\*Television』armband

She puts a waist bag on her hips for some reason...Oh, there's a black packing tape.

She now looks a pro AD from her original plain look.

Holding a traffic light baton...Noma-san stands outside the traffic cone.  
Tony-san turns the camera to Kudou papa.

「...Well then, here we go!」

Kudou papa...turns on the concrete crusher wearing a flashy outfit ...Burn,  
zubababababab, barunbarunbarun!!!!

The concrete breaker 『Seventh Scripture』has an iron pile moving up and  
down making a loud sound.

「...Impact!!!!」

Kudou papa then bumped the tip to the wall of the mansion!!!

...Gagagagagagaga!!!! Baon, baon baon!  
...Dougagagagagagagaga!!!

The concrete wall is breaking!!

「...Hey, what are you doing!」

An old lady from the neighborhood comes to see the source of the noise.

「Sorry...it's a television recording!」

Noma-san answered without motivation

「Television...what program?」

The old lady looks suspicious but Noma-san doesn't mind.  
Tony-san calmly records Kudou papa destroying the walls.

「It's a comedy variety!」

「...Variety?」

「It's a late-night program named『A huge surprise』!」

「...I don't know that」

「...It's on BS」

「With that said, that person destroying the wall is a talent?」

「Yes, he's a comedian」

「...You don't look like he sell well」

「I think so too!」

「Is there any popular person coming?」

「No one else will come to this location!」

The old lady got convinced somehow

「Finish this as soon as possible」

「Yes, we will withdraw immediately after we take the scene where he makes a hole in the wall」

「Then fine...do it faster」

「Thank you for your cooperation!」

The old lady returns to her house.

Meanwhile...there's a hole in the wall now.

It has enough size for people to enter.

「Okay...Let's get in while we have time!」

When I tell Minaho-neesan...

「Wait wait wait wait...it's still too early, you fail if you rush you know!」

Kudou papa stops me for some reason

「...You see, we're going to set fire in this mansion later won't we?」

This time, he's speaking lightly...

「Yes...that's the plan」

「Small fire...partial destruction...total burn down...which will it be?」

Kudou papa looks at Minaho-neesan

「...total burn down」

Kudou papa laughs.

「Then, it won't matter if we put a hole in the wall...!」

Once again...he turns on the concrete breaker

「It's faster to open a hole in a good place than...! 」

Kudou papa enters the wall while holding the concrete breaker...

Next...he points the iron pile on the wall of the mansion...

「...Lock picking the door while checking for the security firm sensors!!!!!」

...L-Lock pick?



「...Impact!!!!」

...Bagagagagaga!!!

The wall fragments gets smashed!!!

...Dobababa, nugagagaga, gagagagagaga!!!

A hole opened the wall in the mansion in a blink of an eye.

「...How about that?!」

Kudou papa shows off.

...But

The hole from the wall of the mansion to the outside road...

It continues straight...

It's making a surreal situation...

「...That saves time Yoshida-kun, let's go」

Minaho-neesan thanked Kudou papa.

「...I will accompany as well」

Kudou-chan gets inside the hole in the wall as well.

「...I'm going too. Tony and Noma, watch over the hole!」

Kudou papa tells his subordinates...

「Eh? Like this?」

Un...I think it's quite ridiculous

「Just use 『Strategy 505』...and fool them!」

「...Roger, boss」

「Tony-kun, want to drink canned coffee?」

「...It's Tanii, Noma-san」

「...Noma!」

The two people invades the mansion.

「...It's dangerous if those two aren't together」

Kudou papa mutters...

「If ever we received an attack from the 『Enemy』...only one was knocked

down by a swift attack If it's the two of them...if one gets attacked, the other can sound the alarm」

Kudou papa thinks of the possibility of being attacked.

「Michi-kun, watch ahead...I'll be looking behind」

「Roger...father!!」

We're wrapped with a feeling of cold tension...

---

---

## 167. Battle

---

We enter the mansion through the large hole Kudou papa made...

That was the bathroom.

The skylight pierces from the outside...

It's not yet time to get dark.

「...Hm?」

I looked around the surroundings.

Shirasaka uses this mansion for his customer's entertainment sex.

The bathroom is luxurious and spacious.

Only the wall with a hole has tiles and all the other side of the walls have large windows.

...That bothers me.

...Isn't this too much for a coincidence?

If you use a concrete crusher to open a hole in the window...won't the window frame be distorted and the glass break?

That's some intense vibration...

If this window glass had crime prevention sensors, it would be bad.

Is that why they drilled on a windowless wall...?

...No, in the first place...

Why did Kudou papa chose this point in the mansion?!

...Was it by chance? A coincidence?

I think not...

「...Kudou-chan

I call the girl looking around in the dressing room...

「What is it/」

Kudou-chan turns to me...

「...Does your father always have the concrete breaker in his car?」

Did they brought the construction machine as plan to invade the mansion from the start?

...Kudou-chan.「」

「...『The seventh scripture』?」

「...To be honest, I don't care about it's name」

Kudou papa turns to me.

「Yeah, I always bring it. The Concrete breaker, asphalt cutter, and rammer」

「...Rammer?」

I ask back.

「It's a machine to level the asphalt pavement. Due to the convenience of the place, it's okay for me to dig a hole...that said, I can't go back leaving that alone. We have to close up the opened hole properly」

...He's saying something plausible but.

「...Asphalt can't be made unless it's in high temperature isn't it?」

I've seen highway construction.

The dump truck drops the hot looking asphalt.

「There's also asphalt that doesn't need to be warmed up...」

Kudou papa says that but...

Somehow...it's suspicious.

There's no way they'll stuff that much construction machines on that van.

I know Margo-san's van so I can imagine how much luggage can be put in a single van.

If you put a couple of heavy construction machines and loaded other things... the car's movement will get worse.

Kudou papa's statement of carrying it always...is a lie 「...Hey you. You want to say something? If you want to say something then say it...ah!」

Kudou papa speaks as if threatening me but...

「...Could it be that the hole opened from the outside is a blind spot from the surveillance cameras of this mansion?」

Kudou papa's facial expression didn't change...

「...Of course」

Instead, Kudou-chan answers...

...As expected.

Kudou-chan and Kudou papa knows that we're coming to this mansion...

It's all investigated in advance...

「...You don't look like as idiot as you look」

Kudou papa tell me.

「...I've expected that this mansion will be a target of 『Kuromori』 I have investigated the guard system of the mansion...and the layout of the building」

...I see

If you're someone from the underground...you'll know that this is Shirasaka's other house.

Shirasaka brought some performers here and held a suspicious party...

He knew that we're grabbing materials like photos relating to 『Kuromori』inside this mansion...

...Therefore

.....No, that's wrong.

When did Kudou papa appear before us...?!

After coming out of Yukino's house, on our way to Misuzu's rehearsal building.

...Could it be?

When we're in Yukino's house...Kudou papa is already watching over us...?

If that's the case...everything has been investigated in advance in case of Yukino's house.

Kouzuki『Kakka's』orders...

Kudou papa has already investigated the locations 『Kuromori』might aim at...

...In short.

This person's silly look is all fake!

「Could it be that you let one of Mr. Viola's subordinate escape on purpose?」

When I ask him...Minaho-neesan speaks.

「...Yoshida-kun. Those things you already 『Understand』shouldn't be asked

anymore」

...Minaho-neesan has already noticed it long ago?

「Letting one escape on purpose...Kudou-san's acquaintance is following it now」

...So that's how it is!

「Kudou-san is also holding back the people on Kouzuki security service」

...Eh?

「For that reason, Michi-san took down the bottom-most underling on purpose. That person won't give that much information...it might even be left behind by Mr. Viola to convey false information to lay a trap. But, Yamaoka-san from the security department will be desperately interrogating that man」

「...We'll buy time with that. To be honest, I'd like them to concentrate only on guarding the ladies... It's troublesome if they do badly and get in a fight with Cesario something...

Kudou papa said with a laugh.

「Also...the man I hit with my Devil Chop is a pretext. That guy laughed when we passed each other in the Kouzuki security service building. He laughed at my outfit...even though he's a newbie. That's why I thought I'll payback on this opportunity...!」

This person's dress and speech...are all making me dizzy.  
Kudou papa has elaborately planned everything and act by it.

「Kudou-san...you were told by Kouzuki-sama to support me right?」

Minaho-neesan speaks to Kudou papa with suspicious eyes.

「Yeah...That's definitely the case. I'll do anything you say as long as I can do it」

Hearing Kudou papa, Minaho-neesan...

「Then...I'll accept your offer. Kudou-san...I would like you to clean up the troubles ahead first though...」

Kudou papa...

「...What a coincidence, that's what I was thinking as well」

...Then

「Hey, get out!!!!」

Silhouette appears from the dressing room when Kudou papa shouts.  
There's man in black suit...one, two three

「...Michi-kun, there's three enemies」

「Yes...there's more than three isn't it?」

Kudou papa smiles at his daughter's reply.

「...You know it well, Michi-kun」

「...It's the result of father's education」

Kudou papa steps ahead.

Kudou-chan goes before Minaho-neesan and I.

「...Cesario Viola's underlings?」

「No...I think they're related to Shirasaka house」

...Shirasaka house?

「Even Shirasaka house, the head family's Moritsugu-san at least...have specialized subordinates working on the back. Isn't that right guys?」

The men in black suit doesn't answer.

「Great...they're shy. I like that. I'm a talkative person so I'm always welcome to people listening to me...!」

Saying that...Kudou papa takes a stance.

「Michi-kun. Their target is Kuromori-san...guard her」

「Roger...father!」

Kudou-chan extends her stun baton!

The steel balls can't be used indoors as expected.

「...Haa!」

Suddenly, the three men in black suit attacks Kudou papa at the same time...!  
The movement of the three people is perfectly coordinated.

Kudou papa dodges the first's punch and the second's kick...

The third's fist...is going to Kudou papa's face...?!

...Eeeh?

At the moment I thought he'll be beaten...Kudou papa slips through the opponent's attack with great speed!!!

In exchange, Kudou papa's knee kick hits the man's belly!!!

「...Sorry. It's called 『Flying Kick』...your skill is called 『Shunpo』isn't it?」

「...There's no skill like that」

The man kneed falls down!

「Kudou-chan, you have a spare laser pointer right?」

I just thought that she definitely has another

This father daughter combo is always prepared.

「...The crimson flasher?」

「Who cares about the name...let me borrow it」

I borrow the laser pointer from Kudou-chan.

With Kudou papa and Kudou-chan's position...I know what to expect from the two.

Then...I'll do support as well.

「...Vacuum tornado whirlwind leg!!」

Kudou papa releases a normal backward kick...!

「...Uwa!」

At the moment it's about to hit the man's neck...!

There's three more men jumping from the hole we entered!

...That's right.

Kudou-chan has always been wary of those guys...!

They know that the enemy will be attacking in two groups since the start 「...Kiee!!」

Kudou-chan hammers her electric baton to the man wielding a black club!

...Bajijijii!



The sparks and smoke makes an unpleasant smell.

「...Michi-kun, the enemy might be wearing body armor. Try to aim at the exposed skin...the neck or something Kudou papa advices his daughter while fighting the man in black suit.

「...I'll try it!」

「If you get it then that's great!」

At that moment...the man who entered the hole last takes out a pistol.

「...Don't move you bastards!」

...I thought that this kind of development will happen.

...I

Points the red light from the laser pointer to the man's eye...!

「...Uu!!」

At the moment the man flinched...

Kudou-chan throws something at the man...!

The capsule breaks at the man's face and red powder scatters!

「...Guaaaaaaaaa!!」

The man's eyes suffer from the red hot chili pepper in her eyes and drops his pistol!

Holding down his face, he goes down to his knees...!

「...Certain kill!」

Kudou-chan runs like a wind towards that guy!

「...Knee impulse kick!!!」

Kudou-chan uses the man's knee as the stepping stone...!

Then throws her knee to the opponent's face...!

「...Kuhaaa!!」

The man fell down.

Wait...Kudou-chan.

That's not 『Knee Impulse Kick』...

That's 『Shining Wizard』...!

「...How dare you!」

The last man rushes after Kudou-chan.

Kudou-chan...!

「You're debesodaaa!!!」

「...Haa?」

The man opened his mouth in surprise.

...In his mouth

Kudou-chan's thrown capsule flies in!

「...Winning the rainbow!!!!」

Kudou-chan blows an uppercut to the chin of the surprised man!

...Bomu!

Something explodes in the mouth of the man!!!

「Did you see it?...That's certain death, iron star lightning blazing wave!!!」

Black smoke comes out of the man's mouth...then he collapsed...

「...Scorpion Crash!!」

Meanwhile...Kudou papa knocked down the last man.

「This looks fine now...」

Kudou papa turns towards us

「...How do you know?」

I ask just in case.

「This is a six man team. There's nobody else now」

...They even investigated that far.

...But.

「...It might be that there are other spare people here?」

...Kudou papa.

「These guys only trust their allies. They're that kind of team」

「But...Shirasaka Moritsugu might've sent some support personnel...」

Just like us with Kudou papa.

「It's okay...I've confirmed it last night. They're a six man team...they don't have any support...」

They're really thorough.

「But...they should've contacted the other teams when we arrived at this mansion. We only have a 15 minute time limit in this mansion...」

Kudou papa looks at us.

「I'll do the arson on this mansion...should I make it flashy?」

Minaho-neesan...

「Please make it as flashy as possible...」

「Roger...please come back here after fifteen minutes. Complete your objectives by that time...okay?」

「...Please」

「You boy and Michi-kun will go with Kuromori-san!」



Minaho-neesan runs in the corridor.

Kudou-chan and I chase after her.

「...Here」

Minaho-neesan arrived in a certain room without being at loss.

「...Minaho-neesan, have you come to this mansion?」

When I ask her...

「...Around 15 years ago...I've come here multiple times」

...Is that so?

Minaho-neesan is one of the prostitutes raped by Shirasaka.

As a prostitute, she's brought to this mansion...

And have participated in the suspicious parties multiple times.

「...Sorry」

I apologize to Minaho-neesan.

...Neesan.

「...It's okay. Yoshida-kun」

This room is locked

「Leave this to me!」

Kudou-chan takes out a small tool from her skirt.

「I will be doing Kudou style lock picking from now on...!」

...That's also ancient martial arts?

「It's an old type key...this will open easily」

Kudou-chan inserts the tip of the tool to the keyhole.

「...Secret technique, Kudou style thumb turn!」

...The lock opened.

Kudou style ancient martial arts...is amazing

「...This is it, no doubt」

What's inside is Shirasaka's private room.

A fireplace...a luxurious western room.

The wall has the files, old video tapes, and discs lined up...

「This is all of the records of Shirasaka raping women」

That's a lot.

Each file and tapes have women's name written in it.

There number of women have suffered damage from Shirasaka Sousuke...

The video tapes alone won't be less than 200 or 300...

「...That's an amazing number」

I mutter instinctively

「Right...Shirasaka Sousuke seems to have this hobby before being an operator of 『Kuromori』...what's here isn't just 『Kuromori』but also Shirasaka's personal rape record collection...」

...I see

It's not just 『Kuromori』

...But

「Minaho-neesan...we're going to burn all of this?」

I ask Minaho-neesan.

「...There's a lot of people who suffered being raped by Shirasaka, unable to tell anyone. If they have these evidence...they can accuse Shirasaka of all of his crimes...」

Hearing my words...Minaho-neesan shakes her head sadly...

「Everyone don't want that. Even if all of Shirasaka's evil deeds become clear in the court...our hearts won't clear up」

As one of the women raped by Shirasaka...Minaho-neesan speaks 『us』...  
...I see

Even if he gets caught by the police and gets punished...

The scars in the hearts of the raped women won't heal...

Rather...if the evidence remains...

The old wound that started healing will open up again.

「It's better to burn these videos as much as possible. We should completely erase it...」

Minaho-neesan's eyes are dark.

「...Shirasaka Sousuke will be publicly ruined. I would like everyone to see Shirasaka's dying figure... Then...the women who were recorded here will have their hearts lifted up somehow... That's all I can do for them...」

Therefore...using the TV and mass media...

Shirasaka Sousuke's being publicly killed.

He's receiving social punishment...

Everyone in the world will know it from the news.

If we can save the hearts of the victims even for a bit...

「...Let's put it in the fireplace」

Kudou-chan said.

「Then...we'll burn the video tapes and photos, and discs one after another. It's possible that some will remain if we just set it on fire normally」

「Yeah...let's do it immediately」

Kudou-chan sets fire with a lighter and a paper around here.  
Then...towards the fireplace.  
I put in photos that are easy to burn.

「...I'll help out too」

When the fire grows stronger...the video tapes too.  
The melting plastic smells unpleasant but...I can't say that.  
We throw in stuff steadily...  
Meanwhile...

Minaho-neesan searches in the discs

「Un...we'll be carrying this from here」

Minaho-neesan sorts it out

「...What are those?」

I ask Minaho-neesan.

「...These are photos in the political, business, and media participating Shirasaka's party in this mansion. Since it's Shirasaka, I thought that he'll definitely take hidden photos...!」

...That's?

「That's right...the customer list of 『Kuromori』has gotten that big...so you do get it. With this...Shirasaka's customers will be erased socially...」

Minaho-neesan...  
Wants to take revenge not only on Shirasaka Sousuke.  
Everything around Shirasaka Sousuke...  
And all of the people that became like Shirasaka...  
She wants to take on the revenge.

「I'll also take this」

Minaho-neesan selects several discs more

「What are those?」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「This are videos of Shirasaka Sousuke having sex with talents...!」

...Eh?

「It's okay...I've taken the permission from the talent herself. Another was convinced for 30 million」

...How many people are there?

「...They're talents who don't sell much as they're in their 20s and 30s. But... they were in teens...high school student in these records. They're idols who sold well at their time so if you hear their name, everyone will get it and say 『Oh, her』...」

...C-Could it be

This record...Minaho-neesan...

「They're net's top news at 3o'clock and they'll be grandly taken up on the 5 o'clock news but...it's still weak. The serial rape case in Australia was done by an advertising agency director after all...」

Minaho-neesan grins...

「...You see, people aren't so concerned about the misfortune of people they don't know. In exchange...if they know someone's name from the television, they'll get interested...!」

Minaho-neesan brought together the discs she sorted out...

「...We'll be uploading these videos on the net at the time the 5 o'clock news ends. The Australian rape suspect...is heard having a video having sex with a former idol...don't you think everyone will take the bait?」

...True

「Furthermore...although it's a record from five or ten years ago...it's a high school idol real sex video...! An employee of the advertising agency, belonging to a family of a major newspaper company...and a high school idol...!」

...The internet is making a fuss.

「On top of that, the rumors will expand. 『No, the man didn't rape just idols』 『Shirasaka Sousuke seems to be raping popular idols even now』 『That's

suspicious『Is that idol raped too?...!』

...Shirasaka Sousuke

...He'll be turned to an enemy of all Japanese men!!!!

---

---



## 168. Zapping News

---

We go back to the bathroom we came from...  
Kudou papa is already there.  
The men in black suit knocked down are gagged...and carried outside.

「...Hey, help me out」

He glared at me...

「What are we going to do to these guys?」

When I ask him...

「No way we would burn them to death...as a matter of fact, we'll have them turned to 『arsonists』...」

...Arsonists?

「...Shirasaka house went to Shirasaka Sousuke's other house to destroy the evidence...Kuromori-san wants that kind of scenario, don't you?」

Kudou papa said while looking at Minaho-neesan.

「...It is as you say.」

「...right. That's why help me out. Boy!」

Minaho-neesan nodded...

I help out carrying the remaining men along with Kudou-chan.  
We arranged the men outside the huge hole.  
The perimeter is surrounded by traffic cones.

「Then...we'll just leave these guys here」

Kudou papa puts a big card on the men...  
What's written on the cards...

...『These are the arsonists -Z』

「...What's Z?」

When I asked him...

「...Japan's best man」

「...What?」

「...It's okay if you don't know. Stay quiet about it」

...Err

「Whatever father does has a meaning...there's nothing we should worry about」

Kudou-chan said

...Well fine.

...I won't understand it even if he explains it either way.

「...Kuromori-san. Have you accomplished your objective?」

Coming out to the road without pedestrians...Kudou papa asks Minaho-neesan.

「Thanks to you...I've taken what we need」

Minaho-neesan looks at the discs she brought.

「I'll leave you to burn everything afterwards」

Kudou papa smiles.

「...Roger」

Then...the two subordinates guarding outside...

「Tony, get in the car...Noma, stay here and clean up」

「Eh...I'm drawing the short end of the stick again?」

Noma-san complains.

「Don't complain...having a woman discovering first makes a strong impression!」

Kudou papa shouts.

「...Roger, boss」

Noma-san reluctantly accepts the order.

「Kudou-san...I feel sorry to ask but...」

Minaho-neesan speaks to Kudou papa with cold eyes.

「Can you please drive our car...?」

Once again...her eyes goes to the disc.

「I've got something to do. I'd like not to spend time」

Kudou papa grins.

「...Roger. Tony, you drive the Titan boy...okay?

「...Okay boss!」

We get in the car...

Kudou papa on the driver seat...

Minaho-neesan on the passenger seat...she opens her laptop immediately.

She must be sending the data contained in the disc to Katsuko-neesan in the school's monitoring room.

...The time...it's 5 o'clock soon.

Kudou-chan and I are on the rear seat.

「...Let's go!」

Kudou papa' advanced the car around 20 meters.

The van with 『Kudou detective agency』written on it is following...

Noma-san...she's crouching close to the wall with her ears blocked.

「...Now then」

Kudou papa took out the remote switch from his pocket.

「...Bites the dust!」

...Boooooooooom!!!

The upper floor of Shirasaka's alternate residence...exploded at that moment!!!

「...Next, fire!」

Kudou papa presses the second switch...

The lower floor is set on fire like a gas stove exploding.

「Yeah...I'll leave the rest to Noma, let's go run away!!!」

The car suddenly starts!!!



「...What? That's easy」

Kudou papa says while driving.

「I've turned off the fire alarm and gas sensor in the mansion. Then...I opened the gas valve on each room on the upper floor...!」

...The rooms are filled with gas?

「The current building's temperature is controlled by an air conditioner... basically, the room is made to be sealed up. On top of that...there were many rooms that were soundproof for their intended purpose. If you open the gas valve for at least fifteen minutes...It'll pent up in the room」

「Then...you started the ignition with the remote control?」

When I ask...Kudou papa...

「.....DA BOMB ! 」

...What?

「Kuromori-san said that she prefer it to be flashy, didn't she?」

...True.

The gas explosion is flashy.

「However...if it's just explosion, there's the fear that the fire will disappear after the blast. That's why I set another fire device to set off fire normally on the lower floor」

「That's why it has two stages?」

「.....EXACTLY ! 」

Iguzakutori he said...

That means 『It is as you say』isn't it?...

「Katsuko's contacting the media right away. 『Shirasaka house has set Shirasaka Sousuke's sex party venue to remove evidence』...」

Minaho-neesan said while looking at the screen.  
They must be communicating by email.

「...It's about time.」

Minaho-neesan takes out a pocket television from the car's dashboard  
...She turned it on.

The five o'clock news is just starting.

「...It seems that the television stations affiliated with Shirasaka's newspaper company has been removed it from the top news」

But...the news on other stations...

All of them are reporting the news about 『A Japanese arrested as suspect for serial rape cases in Australia』

The man named Shirasaka Sousuke...including his detailed career...

Of course...about Shirasaka Sousuke being a member of a family owning a big newspaper company.

『...We've got a scoop for our program!』

The announcer speaks in front of the camera of the news program of a television station that's antagonizing the Shirasaka family the most.

『We found some people related to the suspect Shirasaka putting pressure to the family of the victim Australian girl to make them withdraw the damage report to the police』

The female announcer next to him continues.

『The victim's family has taken hidden video about the said negotiation...』

Then a rough video was shown.

In an Australian home...the the parents of that house are talking to the men in suit in English.

Subtitles are displayed below.

『...If you follow our instructions, we'll send you the money』

『...Won't the lady shame herself when it comes to the court?』

「This kind of things should be monopolized by only one television station...」

Returning to her laptop work once again...Minaho-neesan speaks.

「...Since the other television stations and news organizations will feel frustrated, they will work harder to get scoops. If you share information equally...it'll destroy the motivation of the journalists on site...」

...I see.

Minaho-neesan has the full control over the press.

「At this kind of time...what do you think will be the move of Shirasaka head family?」

Minaho-neesan sends me a glance.

「Err...I don't know...!」

I answered.

This feels like a lesson.

「...They purposely reveal big politician or famous celebrities' scandals. Then, they'll try to erase the news about Shirasaka Sousuke...」

...No way

Minaho-neesan's hand changes the TV channel to Shirasaka house's channel.  
...What's there.

『...Shiina-san, what is the truth?!』

『...Are you admitting that you're two-timing?』

...Err

The subtitle on the screen says...

『Actor Shigeru Shiina...is a two timer?! Who does he really like??!』

...What the hell?

『...Who do you love, Nanami-san or Hinata-san』

『...Please answer!』

『...I'm sorry for causing trouble for everyone...!』

Is that their top news at five o'clock?

Shouldn't that be on the entertainment corner later?

「With them idling this much...they're troubled by the speed of information coming from our side」

Minaho-neesan...analyzes then laughs.

「Politician graft...a bribery scandal of a big company...if it's not a news that won't be a big social problem, Shirasaka Sousuke's news won't be blown off」  
「...Why are they revealing such an unknown actor's scandal like this?」

To my question...Minaho-neesan.

「...In the mass media...there are a lot of people calling themselves『Ally of justice』 People that think that they are the『right』」

...Hmm

「Do you think these kind of people would cooperate when the top of the news company orders them to hush the criminal case news report? They're being ordered to not report about the crime the relative of the company owner...but rather, there will be a lot of them who'll rebel」

...Therefore

It's not the big-name politician or a famous artist's scandal they desire...  
They don't care about an actor's trivial news...

「Also...people in the press are living surrounded by a lot of ties. There's no way they would throw the pipe away with big politicians and famous celebrities for this worthless thing. Once they make a mistake, their life as a press will end」

...True

To reduce the scandal news of the relative...you have to uncover the scandals of politicians or celebrities whom you're normally intimate with.

...You'll lose credibility.

「Whatever happen, those who will try to save the face of Shirasaka family... are only people from Shirasaka family. The people in the company aren't that loyal to Shirasaka family. Shirasaka family is a house that rise after the war after all...」

Minaho-neesan laughs happily...

「And...we'll be taking our next steps too」

Minaho-neesan changes the channel.

In the other station...

They're immediately reporting the news of the explosion and fire incident on Shirasaka's other house...!

『...We're at the scene! The house is burning really hot!』

The video from the helicopter...

I can see the mansion we were from a while ago sending black smoke up.

『Eh, this just came in...the owner of this house is said to be the man working for the advertising agency which is the suspect for the serial rape in Australia from the earlier report. It seems that they have destroyed the evidence before the police could start the investigation...!』

The news about Shirasaka Sousuke is repeatedly covered on the same news time period.

「That mansion has Shirasaka Sousuke holding sex parties...if the journalist is related to public entertainment, they will all know. Up until now, they were affraid of Shirasaka's advertising agency and the head family so nobody reported it. But...as long as Shirasaka has been reported as a criminal...!」

...Everyone's closed mouths will open.

Shirasaka's wrongdoing will be told to the people all at once.

Minaho-neesan changes the channel again.

It's also reported cases in Australia.

『...Seriously, he's an unforgivable criminal. A Japanese having serial rape cases overseas...he's a shame to the country. An enemy of Japan』

A well known commentator is getting angry at Shirasaka.

『This man named Shirasaka Sousuke is a director of a major advertising agency...he had some bad reputations in the past...』

『About that matter, I would like to ask Maruyama-san from the entertainment desk...Maruyama-san』

『No you see...I thought that this would happen someday...!』

『Is...what she said』

『You see, this man named Shirasaka Sousuke...is a relative of the boss of a certain newspaper company...he had a very bad rumors from the entertainment world since long ago...!』



『...Rumors?』

『Err...could you show the image of the fire site just now?』

『Yes...here』

『Shirasaka used this building...gathering young entertainers and female entertainer candidates, then hold a suspicious party...That's what I know from a long time ago』

『Then...is it possible that this suspect have caused rape cases here in Japan as well...?』

『I think so too...he looks like a man who can't endure it while traveling in Australia. Won't you imagine that there are similar cases in Japan...?』

『So that's why the suspect's owned house is burning right now?』

『I've heard that there are a lot involved in organized crime groups participate in Shirasaka's party...you can only think of this as destruction of evidence in this timing』

The reporter said with a serious look.

「I hate this entertainer but...I'll give him a bonus. 30 million...no, 40 million yen」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Did you make arrangements with this reporter in advance too?」

「...No way. I've mailed each entertainment reporter at stage this afternoon.

『When a member of Shirasaka clan who's the major newspaper company raises a scandal, I want you to beat them thoroughly. I'll pay for the troubles』」

「But...that's an unknown mail, isn't it?」

「But still...if the arrest of Shirasaka Sousuke actually turns to news and the press makes it a big deal...you know it'll gain momentum don't you? Those kind of people knows the atmosphere of the place」

And...they're labelling Shirasaka the 『bad guy』even more...

「Rather...by having anonymous emails coming in first, you know that this incident isn't an accident but someone's plan. Therefore, they'll take on the momentum」

...Minaho-neesan looks at my face.

「Next will be the 9 o'clock news」

...That's?

「This isn't the end...tonight, until 11 o'clock news, we'll give out little pieces of information about Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoing... The people of Japan will pay attention to Shirasaka Sousuke...and hate him from the bottom of their hearts...!」



The mobile TV news continues.

One one television station is the entertainment reporter talking about the sex parties at Shirasaka Sousuke's other house...

The other stations lifted the ban on that news.

Various entertainment reporters cover the hearsay and speculations, and talk about Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoings...

『...I've heard that an actress appearing in a commercial who's taken care by the suspect was assaulted by him on the Cebu Island』

『...It seems that the entertainment office have regular talent in the making offered to the party』

『...It seems that there's already college rape cases...the rumors of forcibly rubbing Shirasaka clan's power...』

Each of the stations are jumbled...they're reporting that Shirasaka Sousuke is a 『Villain without help』

Only the television station of Shirasaka family...

Is for some reason talking about the 『Sweets report forming a line』...

『...We're in the building owned by Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke that's burning down』

Finally...the relay car seems to have arrived at the location.

『...Here's a statement from the witness of the incident』

Then...she appears on the screen.

...Noma-san.

『Err, I...was just walking down the road, then there was suddenly a boom! I was surprised!!』

For some reason...Noma-san is talking in a cute child tone...

『Then...the house suddenly flares up, then five, no, I think six men came out of that hole over there』

『...Did these people say something?』

『Yes...they said that they did well...and that they have perfectly destroyed the evidence』

『...Then, where are those people?』

『Then...suddenly, a man in red clothes appeared...wait! He shouted...then he beat up the men in black』

『...A-A man in red clothes?』

『Yes...it's a man wearing a red patch all over his body and a Z stamped on the forehead of the red helmet』

『Then that red person knocked down the arsonists?』

『Then, he settled the case. Yoyoyoi, yoyoi, yoyoyoi, yoi! It all ends well!...he said, then he left riding a horse!』

『...Horse?』

『Yes...a horse...!』

『.....。』

『He's playing a guitar while riding the horse...then he left!』

『.....。』

『Is there anything strange with what I said?』

『Err...you seem to be confused from the shock of the explosion. From the site, it's confirmed that five or six men in black clothes were taken to the police. Perhaps, those are the culprit of the arson case but...we don't know the details yet. Back to studio』

The video goes back to studio.

「Hmm, Noma-kun, not bad. I'd like her to play dumb a bit more though. Don't say a man in red appeared but three people wearing red blue pink tights appearing with a huge Tomohawk...」

Kudou papa...comments.

「...Why are you always fooling around?」

I asked for better or for worse.

「Fooling around?...Who?」

「...Kudou-san」

Kudou papa looks at me through the rear mirror.

「...It's better to be fooling around. That one goes well」

Kudou papa said while laughing.

「But...aren't you actually a serious person? Kudou style seems to be actually strong...!」

「...It's been strong since the start. Kudou style ancient martial arts」

Kudou-chan says from the side.

「Then why does all of it look like a prank? Aren't you just showing it to be weak on purpose...?!」

Hearing what I say...Kudou papa.

「Boy...we're not athletes!」

...Eh?

「Advertising it like『I'm strong』『Kudou style is the best』...is what you want?!」

...Well

「It's better to make them think 『He's weak』『He's just a careless one』in our kind of business」

...I see

...So that's why!

「Long ago...really long ago. Back when I was a young boy, when I really thought about entering the world of 『Kudou style』...!」

Kudou papa speaks casually while driving.

「I've met across an old man. When I show him the Kudou style techniques, I was praised saying 『This is amazing, you'll have a big future』...Then he said『How about you help with my work?』」

Kudou papa keeps looking forward.

「Then...I went downhill, got involved with job related to Yakuza...my role was

decided to be abandoned from the beginning. It was too late when I noticed it... I've beaten up a lot of Yakuza then got taken by the police. Of course, the old man from the beginning didn't come to help me. I was assumed to be a foolish boy who picked a fight with Yakuza without support...」

Kudou chan listens to her father's story seriously.  
It seems to be his first time hearing this story.

「Anyway, I was released from the police as I was still a Minor...Etsuko came as my guarantor. She's two years older than me so she's already over 20 years old. Then... Etsuko told me」

「...What did Mama-uesama say?」

「She said...『Are you an idiot? Believing such an old man』... Etsuko was there when I displayed my skills to that old man too. 『Didn't you know that he's not that trustworthy the first time you saw his face?』...can't endure that」

Kudou papa sighed.

「That's right...when I first saw him, I certainly thought『He's so fishy, I can't trust him』 I should've felt that but when he said ...『This is amazing, you'll have a big future』...my eyes got dazzled. It's my first time being praised for my skills. I felt happy from those words...that I got blind thinking...『This person accepted me, he's absolutely a good person』 I was a fool. I was seriously a brat back then...」

Kudou-chan listens to her father.

「Since then...I felt indebt to Etsuko. She's amazing. Her blood doesn't rise to her head immediately like me...she's always looking at things calmly」

That wife is cheating right now though.  
That person's betraying you.

「Well...afterwards, there were a lot of stupid things happened...and I encountered pain multiple times...Etsuko helps me each time... In the end, I got to know Kouzuki-san...and I'm being indebt to Kouzuki-san for 26 years. Kouzuki-san is amazing. I never knew a man as bad as him. But...to be honest. Kouzuki-san doesn't hide that he's a bad guy. That's what's really amazing...!」

That's Misuzu's grandfather.

「The genuine rascals on the world are thinking that 『I'm the good guy』even though he's bad at nature. Intending to do something good while entrapping other people calmly」

...Yeah

...I feel like I know that.

「Kouzuki-san is different. That person knows that he's the bad guy. And, he never hides that. He's a fair person. I'm no match against that old man. That's what I really think...」

Kudou papa said.

「Therefore...I've gotten involved with that old man so I can be fair」

...Fair

「You see...when I make a mistake, I think I should bear the responsibility. That's why I'll never become Kouzuki old man's subordinate. Therefore I'd rather die than be a regular employee...!」

「Uhm...what about the annual salary」

「That's a lie...in reality, I'm contracted with Kouzuki-san for each individual case. 『Kudou Detective Agency』and Kouzuki-san's one on one contract」

...That's his pride.

「I do get that but...even so, why are you always fooling around?」

「Well...you, there's no other ways. Kouzuki security service people, including Kouzuki old man aren't all my friends. They can be my enemy anytime. Would you show your hands to your enemy?!」

「...I won't」

「Right?...Rather, it saves me that they misunderstand me. In various ways...」

Well...I get that but

「But...it's a bit overkill」

Kudou papa sends me a glance

「Boy...how many do you think are in the 『Guard Department』that's under me?...」

Err...

「...Tony-san and Noma-san...No, there are others too」

The guy who's chasing Viola's subordinate that escaped the rehearsal building  
Besides, the prior investigations that happened...I don't think it's done by just  
three people 「That's right...There's another phantom man in the 『guard  
department』」

Kudou papa said while putting on airs.

「...There's more than one, aren't there?」

I answered.

I saw Kudou-chan communicating with that person a while ago.

「...You know it, boy」

Kudou papa said happily.

「I'm also playing the role of connecting the troops of the underground  
『Kouzuki security service.』 The members underground never shows their faces  
to those on the surface. I'm the only point of contact. Therefore...I go in and out  
of the security service HQ」

...I see.

「But...that said, I can't be thought of an ally of the surface security service. I  
have to be the irregular...『troublemaker』for them. Else, they'll misunderstand  
my permutation in human relations in the security service and they'll order me  
around...」

Then...that's why he's fooling around on purpose...

「Of course...I have no choice but to be underestimated by those guys if I do  
that. But...if a bastard underestimates me too much, I'll definitely kick his ass.  
Just like the newbie I knocked out with my devil chop...」

Was that a punishment?

「But, that said...do you have to show that you're always fooling around even  
in front of your wife, son and first daughter?」

Even after coming back home when the work ends...

「It can't be helped...you have to continue this for 24 hours, that's what it

means from the start. Can you even show a serious face only in front of your family?...Also, they're regular employees of Kouzuki security service...」

Kudou papa laughs casually.

「...It can't be helped. I can't recommend my way of living to them」

Then...he speaks to Kudou-chan.

「Even Michi-kun, you can abandon this Papa of yours and live on a stable life there and be happy」

...Kudou-chan

「No...I'm a practitioner of 『Kudou style』」

「...Michi-kun?」

「I respect father's way of living.」

Hearing his daughter's words...Kudou papa.

「Kuuuu...you're making me cry. Michi-kun. Hey, boy!」

「...Ah, Yes?」

Why me?

「That's why...I leave Michi-kun to you」

「...What?」

「You're aiming for Michi-kun's virginity aren't you?」

...I

「Michi-kun...Are you sure with this guy?」

「Yes...father」

...Kudou-chan?!

「Then...it can't be helped...!」

---

---



## 169. Father and Daughter

---

「Father...Why are you talking about that now?」

Kudou-chan asks her father.

「Well you see...Michi-kun, you reached the 『Age to know the colors』」

The father answers while driving.

「Your age is about to reach the time where you separate from me...」

A serious face.

「...Father」

Kudou-chan mutters.

「I...during lunch time, 『Kuromori's』Margo-sama has told me that my idea of fighting is no good...」

Oh...after lunch...

The fake right wing's fight?...

「That's when I realized that my fighting style is supported by father...」

That time, Margo-san pointed out that Kudou-chan wasn't watching at the whole battle space.

I see...Kudou-chan usually fights alongside with her father...

It's Kudou papa's responsibility to see the entire battlefield...Kudou-chan can just freely fight as she want while supporting her father.

「...I know. I was watching over」

...As expected

He's already with us at that time.

「I didn't understand how much father helps me in my fights until it was

pointed out...!」

「Yeah...but you already get it don't you?」

「...Yes」

「In the fight at the bathroom a while ago...Michi-kun's position was good. In preparation for the assault of the separate unit, you were able to support me all the time but still stick to a perfect position to protect Kuromori-san. That's a passing grade...!」

「...Thank you very much」

The father and daughter continue their talk.

「Therefore...Michi-kun, it's about time you graduate from me」

「...That's, father!」

Kudou-chan's surprised.

「My 『Kudou style ancient martial arts』...is something I arranged according to my way of living to the end. Michi-kun, shouldn't Michi-kun think about her own 『Kudou style』?」

The father tells his daughter.

「...My own?」

「Yeah...Michi-kun and I are different people. Our birth time is different, and the environment we grew up is different. And above all of it...Michi-kun is a woman. We're different humans so we think differently. Our way of living should be different」

Kudou-chan listens to her father seriously.

「Then...Michi-kun need to have a different 『Kudou style martial arts』from me. The actions humans do represent all of their inside. Try looking...I'm wearing a silly dress and Michi-kun's wearing a uniform of a prestigious girl's school. My clothes are sloppy and Michi-kun's are firm. Even your hair is combed beautifully and smooth. Michi-kun and I are different in essential sense...!」

...The father and daughter are different.

...They have to separate beyond the difference.

「I thought of you as a kid until now so I'm okay with you imitating me. But... Michi-kun's already an adult. You have to search your way and live it」

「...My road?」

「That's right...Just like how I chose Kouzuki old man as my master...Michi-kun chose her own lord, right?」

Kudou-chan...looks down and answers.

「Yes...I think Misuzu-sama will be my lifetime master...!」

Kudou papa laughs.

「Then...we might become enemies someday you know...?」

Kudou-chan...

「Yes...father」

Kouzuki『Kakka』...and Misuzu might confront...?

The two of them are already thinking of that possibility?!

「Father...please stop calling me 『Michi-kun』already」

Kudou-chan tells her father.

「I won't be father's 『Disciple』anymore...!」

「Then...you should stop calling me 『father』too」

The father...smiles lonely.

...But.

「No...father is father. No matter what happens...father is my father...!」

Kudou-chan replies.

「Kukuku...you're really serious. You're like Etsuko in that regard」

Kudou papa talks about his wife's name...

「...Father, Mama-uesama...!」

「...Oops, that's not something you have to say, Michi!」

The father interrupts his daughter's words...

「...Do you know?」

Kudou papa doesn't answer.

After a short pause...he speak up.

「Papa's last advice...Michi, look for your own 『family』...!」

...Family

「『Lover』is fun...but, they won't last long. 『Love』will definitely end. No matter how cute your feelings are, it'll get old, worse, and rot someday」

『Love』...will end.

「But...『Family』won't end. No matter how much time has passed...the『dead』 family is『family』 In exchange, you can't escape...once you become a『family』, that bond will be forever. You can't just quit from being a 『family』」

『Family』...doesn't stop.

「...I had a relationship with Etsuko since elementary school. We did various bad plays together...from bad friends, became lovers, then got married. I thought that she's my 『family』but it seems that I'm different for her... Therefore, if the 『love』ends...I'm just a fired employee. You can't do anything about that...」

『Love』and 『family』...

「But...but still, she's『family』for me. I will take care of her for the rest of my life...even if she separates from me」

「...Father」

Kudou-chan mutters.

「...I'll settle it with that Yamaoka bastard without fail. He made fun of my 『Kudou style』 But, I'll kick the asses of those who underestimate me! That's the way I lived...!」

I speak up.

「...Kudou-chan, be my family...!」

...Kudou-chan's surprised.

「...Yoshida-sama?!」

「I...Misuzu, Megu, Mana...Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-neesan, Nagisa, Nei-san, and even Margo-san...I've decided to make them my 『family』 Those people are important to me like 『family』」

I look straight at Kudou-chan.

「Therefore...I want Kudou-chan to be Misuzu and my 『family』 Not just as Misuzu's vassal...but a member of our『family』」

...Kudou-chan.

「Please let me think for a while about that offer」

Kudou papa laughs then speaks to Minaho-neesan...

「That's nice, young people are really direct at anything. Don't you think so... Kuromori-san?」

Minaho-neesan ignores Kudou papa then looks at Kudou-chan.

「It's about time...we arrive at the 『house』 Go and observe our 『family』as you want... And if Kudou-san liked it...then join our『family』 Nobody will force you...!」

As our『head』...Minaho-neesan told Kudou-chan.

「Yes...I will take a look」

Kudou-chan replies seriously...

「Hmm...it's about time」

We can see our school beyond the windshield.

「Kudou-san...it's okay to let us off here. Thank you very much」

「...Yeah」

Kudou papa stopped the car.

The van with 『Kudou detective agency』also stops...

「...As expected, you won't invite me to your castle」

Kudou papa snorts.

「Yes. We don't let men inside our castle...!」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「...Hey hey, what about this boy?」

To that question, Minaho-neesan...

「Yoshida-kun's our precious『family』so he's an exception」

Kudou papa smiles wryly.

「Well, that's fine...I'll entrust Michi to you. She's a bit hardheaded but I think she's a good woman...!」

「Yes...I'll take care of her」

Kudou papa opens the driver seat door then goes out.

「We'll continue to watch outside the school site tonight...we'll be intercepting the soldiers of Cesario Viola and Shirasaka family by ourselves...!」

「...I will leave it to you. I do trust Kudou-san」

Minaho-neesan laughs then tells Kudou papa.

「...Stop with the flattery. I'm weak to those」

Saying that, he closed the door

Then he heads back to his van without looking back.

「...Father」

Kudou-chan leaks her voice while looking at her father's back from inside the car.

Just now...the father has let go of his daughter.

The daughter has to be independent from now on.

...To find her new『family』

「Tony, open it already! We'll be camping in this car tonight!」

「Eh, please spare me from that...boss!」

「How's Noma?」

「...It's already passed working hours so I think she's going back home」

「Call her back...we'll be monitoring here until morning!」

「Eh? Seriously!?!」

「Stop complaining...go to the convenience store and buy some milk and bean jam bun!」

「No...let's buy something more delicious, boss?!」

「Shut up shut up shut up! It's obvious that it's milk and bean jam bun when you're camping!」

While listening to those voices...  
Minaho-neesan goes to the driver seat.

「...Let's go」

Kudou-chan nods.  
Our car begins to run.  
Kudou papa's figure gradually goes smaller.

「Father has told me to find my own『Kudou style』...」

Kudou-chan's lonely.

「I have no idea what I should do. Since childhood...I've believed father's teachings, that's how I lived so far...」

...I

「But still...looking at Kudou-chan's father's way...Have you ever thought『Even though we can fix this』?」

Kudou-chan's startled when I asked her.

「How about changing it from those points first?」

Kudou-chan nods.

「There's something I've always thought」

The light returns in Kudou-chan's eyes.

「Father...shouts the name of the skills his enemy craft...but that has the risk of biting his tongue. Therefore...how about shouting the name of the skill after the enemy has done the technique...」

...Kudou-chan.

Is it absolute that you have to shout the name of the technique?

「Y-Yeah...isn't that great? Changing those kind of things...I think it'll say that Kudou-chan's original『Kudou Style』」

But still...I think that'll be her first step.  
That's why...I affirm it.  
I have to push her back...

And maybe, someday she'll stop shouting the name of techniques her enemy

does...

That would really help out a lot

「...Yoshida-sama, I've got a request」

Kudou-chan looks at me.

「...W-What?」

「Please call me『Michi』from now on」

She said bashfully.

「...『Michi-kun』?」

A replacement of her father...?!

「No, not 『Michi-kun』...I want Yoshida-sama to call me only 『Michi』」

Her big eyes look up at me.

「Father's the only one who can call me 『Michi-kun』」

...Is that so?

As expected, she's lonely...

About parting with her father...

「Got it, Michi. In exchange, I've got a favor to ask...」

「What is it, Yoshida-sama?」

Michi takes a stance.

「Could you stop calling me 『Yoshida-sama』 We're『allies』 I feel itchy when you add『sama』...!」

Michi smiles when I say that.

「Got it...Yoshida!」

Y-Yoshida?!

「Uhm...as you requested, I've removed the『sama』...but is that not what you mean?」

...Err

Well fine.

I'm also calling her Michi...



「I don't mind it...best regards, Michi」  
「Same here, my best regards...Yoshida!」

Although she's younger...  
This small and cute girl calling me without any suffix...  
Yeah...that has a different charm.  
That itself has the worth.

「...We somehow arrived safely」

Then our car finally arrived at school.  
Just like earlier, we got from the front entrance.  
Of course, Minaho-neesan's face is known by the guards so they let us through  
without saying anything.  
The sky's colored red sunset...  
The time is 5:52PM.

「The news will continue at six o'clock and the national broadcast news will be  
at seven o'clock. We still have to launch an attack」

Minaho-neesan has stopped the car in the parking space nearest to the school  
building.

We get off the car and head to the principal's office.



「...Oh, welcome back!」

Nei-san welcomes us from the monitor room under the principal's office.  
Nei-san...Michi still doesn't know about her.

「Nei-san...this is Misuzu's guard...」  
「I know, Kudou Michi-san, right?」  
「...Eh?」  
「I've watched over the fight on the baseball club during lunch」

Ah...the hidden cameras.  
She's watching from this room.  
But, Nei-san's way of speaking...  
It seems that Michi has gone to the baseball game and fought with the other  
team.

「I also know...You're Natou Nei-sama, aren't you...?!」

Michi also has seen the members of『Kuromori』from her father's research file.

「That's right, I'm Nei-asn! Err...Can I call you Mii-chan?」

「Yes...please call me as you want」

「How does Yo-chan call you?」

Nei-san looks at me then laughs.

「Err...Michi」

「...What? I can't hear it!」

「...Michi!」

...Nei-san.

Before entering the principal's office, she was listening to my conversation with Michi on the corridor...

「Hmm...Michi?」

Nei-san stares at me.

「T-That's...that's what I asked from Yoshida...!!」

「...Yoshida? You're not using a suffix」

...The hornet's nest is disturbed!

「Nei...if you have time to do that then write even more」

Margo-san who's in front of the laptop scolds Nei-san...

「Yoshida-kun...I'd like you to help out is possible」

Eh...on what?

Looking at them...it's not just Margo-san and Katsuko-nee, Megu's also facing a laptop.

「Yoshi-kun, there's various reddit's on the net...write some information...!」

...Write?

「『It seems that Shirasaka Sousuke have raped other idols』or『That idol was raped』...the contents doesn't matter, we're just posting to sensationalize Shirasaka's crimes. Then after writing, paste the address of the video site」

...Video site?

Katsuko-nee speaks ahead...

「Video sharing sites all over the world...Margo-sama and I are uploading Shirasaka Sousuke's rape videos! It's videos of idols that were famous before. We'll lead the people to there...!」

Oh...those Minaho-neesan mentioned that were paid a huge sum of money to have it uploaded.

Shirasaka's idol rape videos are uploaded gradually.

Everyone will watch in curiosity...

Then...they'll know the person named Shirasaka Sousuke.

...As a rape demon.

「It'll take a while for the officials of Shirasaka family to erase the video...then we'll upload it to another site. Then, we'll spread that link. It'll be a chase」

Margo-san said with a laugh.

「But...the effect is already coming out. The internet world is on a small festical. Other than Katsuko and Margo, there are people mirroring the videos too...!」

Minaho-neesan said while looking at her own laptop.

「Anyway...let's continue this work steadily until seven o'clock」

As soon as Minaho-neesan says taht...

「Ah...Access denied!」

Megu tells Margo-san

「Then, use that laptop and change to another line...」

It seems that there are multiple lines passing through.

I...

「Uhm...I'm not good with computers」

「Oh...Yoshida-kun don't use it normally, right...!」

Minaho-neesan smiles at me.

「What about Kudou-san...?」

Margo-san looks at Michi.

「I'm literate...!」

「Then, try using that computer」

「...Got it!」

Michi joins the computer front.

...Err.

「What should I do?」

Katsuko-nee looks up at me.

「In that case, help out preparing dinner」

...Dinner?

「Mana-chan's doing her best in the kitchen by herself...!」

...Mana!

I see...letting her write badmouth to her father in the internet is quite...

Katsuko-nee paid regards to it and removed her from this job.

Although, Megu keeps on typing calmly...

「Ahn! Another access denied! What's going on!」

Megu shouts in confusion!

「Hmm, Megumi-chan can rest. Thank you...could you go with Yoshida-kun to help Mana-chan?」

Margo-san tells Megu.

「...But」

Megu wants to cooperate in staging Shirasaka that much.

「It feels pitiful to let Mana prepare dinner alone...go with Yoshida-kun」

Margo-san said kindly.

「Yes...understood. Yoshi-kun, let's go」

Megu holds my hand...

「Huh...where's Yukino?」

Speaking of which...where is she?

「Yukino's there」

Megu points out.

...Yukino

Is on the place where Mana was tied up this morning.

As expected, she's wearing a collar...

It's connected to iron chains.

Still wearing her tattered uniform...

Her breasts are exposed.

And she's just looking at the screen absentmindedly.

The multiple monitors in the room are displaying videos from television stations being broadcasted.

Majority of the news stations are continuing their report about 『Shirasaka Sousuke』again.

Only the Shirasaka family station is displaying about 『feature shops where you can eat a large serving for 500 yen』

Minaho-neesan increases the volume of the voice of the station that's doing a follow-up report.

『...Indeed, this Shirasaka Sousuke is a parasite and a villain in the entertainment world. For example, from what I've heard...!』

The commentator is speaking passionately.

The sex videos of Shirasaka's entertainers flow out steadily...

That has become a hot topic on the internet right now.

Those related to entertainment business have reported Shirasaka's wrongdoings so far...

Right now...it's a 『festival』time.

『Iyaa, that's unforgivable! That's absolutely unforgivable! This kind of guy...!』

Hearing that there's a festival, even the hot blooded sports caster came in running.

It's already the first news.

The news about the consecutive rape charges in Australia vanishing.

The current topic...is concentrated on using the Shirasaka's family name and his

position as the head of a major advertising agency, and 『Shirasaka Sousuke』 who tricked entertainers and idols to rape them.

「There's also information we weren't writing coming out...like the list of entertainers participating in Shirasaka's sex party...」

Minaho-neesan told us the situation in the internet.  
...We have the momentum.

The air right now is『You can beat up the man named Shirasaka Sousuke』... Various people who kept silent for a long time has began to reveal their grudge to the internet.

Among them are former celebrities that were raped by Shirasaka.  
Their family...friend.  
The lover of those who were raped...

「Interesting...there's people who are writing about bribery and tax evasion of Shirasaka Sousuke too」

I see...even the people who have a grudge against Shirasaka.  
They're starting to talk about Shirasaka's crimes.  
This outrageous momentum...  
The man named Shirasaka Sousuke becomes the enemy of Japan.

「That's all lies...Papa!」

Yukino...leaks out a voice of despair.

「Now then...how long can Shirasaka house hold this」

Minaho-neesan laughs coldly.

「It's about time the flames of hatred burn from Shirasaka Sousuke to the individuals of Shirasaka family itself...!」

---



## 170. Shuraba and Daily Life

---

When I go to the kitchen with Megu...  
Mana's staring at the cookbook...stiffened.  
Mana's on her same casual clothes from a while ago.

「...What's wrong?」

When I asked her...

「I intend to make curry...or rather, I've only made curry」

Mana is an Ojou-sama...she had a maid in her house all this time.  
She doesn't cook normally.

「I can only make curry. Since we've made curry during the school camp before...」

Mana said that but...  
...She's not preparing any.

「...But, I haven't cooked a large amount...」

...I see.  
She doesn't know the amount of ingredients.  
When making it at school, the materials are prepared for each group...

「I'll teach you」

Megu puts on an apron

「Do you know how to make it, Megu?」

Megu looks in the fridge.

「In Yamamine house, mother is working...since I was in elementary schools, I prepare meals several times in a week」



Megu takes out the necessities...

「Curry rice and salad will do?」

「...Un!」

Mana smiles at the entrance of her skilled 『sister』

「Yoshi-kun, can you wash the rice?」

「Oh...how many counts?」

Megu points at the rice cooker.

「I think filling up that rice cooker will be enough. We just cook once more if it's not enough...?」

The members of 『Kuromori』who were staying in this monitor room until a few days ago were only four people, Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Margo-san and Nei-san.

Therefore, the rice cooker only has the size for a domestic rice cooker.

But, there's five more people, me, Megu, Mana, Michi, and Yukino...there's nine people in total.

Un...we have to cook twice.

「Either way, I don't think everyone will eat together so isn't that fine? We can eat in order so the one's next can cook while the first one eats」

Margo-san and Katsuko-nee are centered on working on the internet.  
This situation will continue until 11 o'clock news.  
Certainly...there's no problem if they take turns at eating.  
...But.

「...Is it okay if the food disappears in one go?」

There's also the case about Cesario Viola right now.  
We'll be hiding in this school for a while...  
We should leave as much food in the refrigerator as possible...

「Katsuko-san has said that you don't need to mind it!」

Mana said.

「The food will be replenished tomorrow...!」

Eh...How?

「That's what I've heard from Katsuko-neesan too. It seems that we have ordered from the supplier that delivers ingredients to the cafeteria. If it arrives tomorrow, Yoshi-kun and I will bring it to this room...!」

I see...tomorrow's a weekday.

The food for the remaining consecutive holiday will be brought by the trader. Well then, there's no need to worry.

「...Okay, let's make some」

We make curry while carrying out Megu's instructions.

「Ah...you put that in later. It'll just break if you put it ahead of time.」

「Un...Megu-oneechan」

The half-sisters cooking along well.

Somehow, it feels harmonious as if they were together since they were born.

「...What's wrong, Yoshi-kun?」

Megu turned back to me with a smile.

「...No, nothing」

Then, Mana...

「Did we get Onii-chan's heart throbbing with our cooking figures?」

She smiles like a small devil.

「It's okay, you can touch Mana's ass or even Megu-oneechan's ass...!」

Mana flips her own miniskirt.

Mana's not wearing any panty.

When she flipped it up, you can only see her round slippery ass shaped like a fresh egg.

「Mana...we're cooking! Don't take out your ass!」

Megu scolds her sister.

「...Well」

...Seriously

I embrace Megu from the back.

「Geez...even Yoshi-kun...」

Megu feels embarrassed.

「Megu's very sexy when she's cooking」

「...Thanks」

I caress Megu's tight and firm ass...

「...Yup, it's great」

Mana sticks out her ass to me...

「Onii-chan...what about Mana?」

I touch Mana's ass...

The elasticity of this 14 year old naked butt is amazing.

The sensation is also different.

「...Let's stop for now. We're close to fire after all」

Megu said embarrassed.

「Then later」

...I

「Is kissing no good too?」

...Megu

「...it's fine...do it」

I kissed Megu's soft lips.

「...Ahn!」

Just that much makes Megu's face entranced...

「Onii-chan, Mana too...!」

Mana's plump and cute lips...

「...Ehehe! Onii-chan, I love you!」

Looking at their smiles...

I suddenly got worried.

「...Earlier, Michi's father has said this」

I remembered.

「Michi...Kudou-san?」

Mana asks.

「Yeah...we're already allies so she wants to be called Michi, she said」

「I see...Michi-san or Michi-oneechan...how should I call her?」

Mana muhltters.

「Then you see...in the car on our way back, Michi's father told me. 『Love will end someday. But family won't end』...!」

If『love』will end...

Then these two will part from me someday?

「My, that father is someone that's different from what he looks...!」

Megu's surprised.

「But, that's true...『Love』will end but 『family』will always be 『family』...!」

Megu smiles.

「Onii-chan, it's great that we're 『family』isn't it...?」

...Eh?!

「You see...Mana feels very strange right now. During Maika-san's time...she definitely should be Shirasaka Sousuke-san's daughter and Yukino-san's sister but...that kind of memory is like a movie where it's not yourself. Surely that's because Onii-chan made Mana his 『family』」

...Mana.

「My 『family』is Onii-chan, Megu-oneechan, and Misuzu-oneechan...that's for now. I'd like for the people in『Kuromori』to accept me sooner Then...Mana will become『family』with everyone」

Mana smiles innocently.

「It's okay...Mana has become Yoshi-kun's『sex slave』properly Didn't Yoshi-kun say『She's family even if a slave』」

「Un...you're right, Megu-oneechan」

「But, don't let your guard down. Do your best as a『slave』 Then, surely, Minaho-san and others will be accepting Mana」

「...I know」

Mana's already my『family』...  
...from the bottom of her heart

「I'm also Yoshi-kun's wife!『family』!」

...Megu.

「Ah...But, I try not to have strange monopolizing tendencies. I know well that Yoshi-kun has other girls. Everyone needs Yoshi-kun. That's why you don't need to mind me strangely. I won't think that Yoshi-kun's having sex with other girls as cheating」

「...But, are you sure about that?」

I'm uneasy.

「What's wrong? What are you worried about?」

Megu embraces me.

「I feel like Megu will abandon me if I do something selfish. No, of course...if Megu doesn't need me anymore, you can always go with someone else...!」

Megu closed my mouth with her lips.

「...Megu?」

「...Forever, we'll be together forever. Megu is Yoshi-kun's wife...we're already『family』...」

「That's right...you worry too much, Onii-chan」

Mana embraces me from behind.

「We'll always be 『family』forever...!」

...『Family』doesn't end  
...『Family』will continue.

『Family's』the only one that'll stay as 『family』even if you die...



「Curry and rice is done!」

Coming back to the monitor room...

The war in the monitor screen continues.

「Maru-chan and others, go ahead...Mii-chan and I are in the middle of a great campaign!」

Nei-san shouts.

Looking at the clock...it's past 7o'clock.

Even the national broadcast news are taking up Shirasaka's arrest in Australia.

...Also.

Though it's completely forgotten...the bribery scandal of Endou's uncle who's a councilor.

Their treatment is small but...that's national news, Endou! You did it!

「...Then, I'll take your offer. We've got it easier now」

Margo-san stands up.

「We've uploaded all of Shirasaka Sousuke's videos with the celebrities...even if we don't upload on the video sites, other people will be just spreading it more」

Taking a dish from Megu...she begins to eat curry.

「Nei-san and Michi, what are you doing?」

I asked Margo-san.

「Those two are disturbing the information in reddit and twitter. Kudou-san's amazing, speaking in a mysterious warrior style, posting information from the underground...leading Shirasaka's new image gradually, the people in the board are calling her 『Warrior God』

Michi...she had such talents.

「I've been taught by my father how to construct information on the internet. In the past, I also had aliases like 『Red tempest Queen』and 『The light in the tempest』...!」

Michi...that's just 『tempest』...

Suddenly...Katsuko-nee's phone rings.

「...Hello?...Roger!」

Katsuko-nee speaks to Minaho-neesan...!

「Ojou-sama! Kyouko-sama said 『Count Zero』!」

...Kyouko-san?

Margo-san's master and the first generation guard of 『Kuromori』, she's in Australia.

There was a contact from Kyouko • Dothnomechey-san?!

「...We only have now as the timing. 『Plan is go』」

Minaho-neesan tells Katsuko-nee.

Katsuko-nee...!

「...Kyouko-sama, 『Whisky GO GO!』desu!」

...What?

What's going on in Australia?

「...Margo, check the movement of Shiraska house's newspaper!」

「Roger!」

Margo-san puts the curry rice dish on the side then goes back to the computer.

「...Leave that there, we'll just eat it later again!」

Margo-san's face goes back to her battle mode.

「Ojou-sama! Shirasaka house seems to have made contact with the City Hotel!」

Katsuko-nee shouts.

...Hotel?

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「...They intend to hold a press conference!」

Press conference...?!

「...I've confirmed here too. Shirasaka house's television station's 10 o'clock news show is broadcasting 『Emergency and special interview』it seems...!」

It's 7:30 right now.

There's still two and a half hours.

「Katsuko...keep in contact with Kyouko-san in Australia. If the other side sends an image, tell me immediately!」

「...Roger!」

「Margo, grab as much information about the press conference as possible...!」

「...Got it」

「Nei and Michi-san, instigate the people in the internet and say 『There's an outrageous confirmation at the press conference this 10 o'clock』and get them interested!」

「Got it!」

「Certainly, nari!」

Everyone's facing their own computer.

Minaho-neesan is sticking to the monitor while directing orders to the others.  
...I

「Yoshi-kun, let's go and eat ahead of them」

Megu said.

「But...I have to do something.」

Everyone's fighting, and yet...

「But...Yoshi-kun has that kind of forte, doesn't he?」

Megu smiles gently.

「I think so...I tried helping out Nei-san a while ago but I have never done posting on reddit... I wasn't able to do it well」

...Megu

「Rather than that ... let's eat by the three of us. We need to cook the second batch of rice too...surely, Minaho-san and others can't eat until ten o'clock」

...Perhaps that's the case.

「We just have to do what we can right now...」

「Yeah...got it」



Mana turns to me.

「Mana...let's eat」

「Un...Onii-chan」

The three of us are eating...

Oh, I forgot about Yukino.

「Hey, Yukino...eat」

Yukino's just lying down on the floor limply.

I put a plate of curry in her side.

「...I don't need it」

She answers without power.

「Don't say that. Megu, Mana and I made it...!」

Yukino's glaring at me.

「What do you intend on doing after capturing Papa!」

...I

For some reason, I remembered what Kudou papa said.

Kudou papa said...「It can't be helped」in rapid succession.

「...It can't be helped. Everyone has a grudge against Shirasaka Sousuke...!」

Yukino fell silent.

The television and internet.

The people of Japan are attacking Shirasaka Sousuke.

Shirasaka Sousuke...is being the object of hatred now.

...Minaho-neesan's plan is frightening.

If ever Shirasaka Sousuke is in Japan.

Shirasaka might defend himself.

Shirasaka comes from the distinguished family, his appearance is good...since he's from the advertising agency, it seems that he's good at talking.

Even in press interview, internet...it was possible to talk about Shirasaka freely...

Good at fooling people...among the general public, it's possible that there are people that will protect Shirasaka.

But...Shirasaka right now is in Australia.

In Japan, Shirasaka's crimes are all being talked as『fact』...

The person himself can't refute.

Rather...the bad coping if the Shirasaka house and their news organization...  
they're dropping Shirasaka Sousuke's reputation even further.

Right now, there's no one who will ally with him.

「Anyway...eat. I'll leave it here」

I tell Yukino who's lying down.

I can see Yukino's naked ass from the torn skirt of hers.

「...Let's prepare for tomorrow's lessons!」

Megu said after she finished eating.

「Yoshi-kun...Have you prepared for English?」

...Err

...At this time?

「It is at this time that's why we have to do it. Tomorrow's a weekday」

megu takes out textbooks and dictionary from her bag.

My textbook is in the locker in the classroom.

「But...study is. I won't be going to university anyway」

I'm going to help out Katsuko-nee and Nagisa on their shop...

「Even if you don't need to go to university, you need to study! If you're going to do business then you need to be able to calculate...you need chemistry on bakery, and if you want to work on flower shop it's better if you know about biology?」

Megu strongly insists.,

「But...English is...」

It's not that I'm going abroad.

「Yoshi-kun!...you're my husband but also Misuzu-san's husband!」

Megu's angry.

「It's a problem if Misuzu-san's husband can't speak even English, right? I'm

sure that Misuzu-san has a lot of foreign friends!」

True...I feel it's like that.

「I'll do my best together with you」

...Eh?!

「Even I am Misuzu-san's『sister』. I can't afford to shame my『sister』...!」

...Megu.

「English...then social studies afterwards. History, politics, economy...if we don't have basic knowledge about that, we can't talk to Misuzu-san's friends!」

Y-Yeah.

「Also, national language too...we have to learn at least the history of literature」

「Isn't that all of it?」

I'm not even studying at all.

I haven't done it since the entrance exam.

My father disappeared after April...

「We'll do all of it...Yoshi-kun, you said that you'll make an effort so Mana can be a 『Super Model』right?! Then you also have to make efforts for Misuzu-san's sake...!」

...For Misuzu?

...Hmm.

...Then

「Got it...let's try it」

「...It's okay. I will be studying together with Yoshi-kun...okay?!」

Megu smiles.

「Then...Yoshi-kun. I'll lend you my textbook so take notes of all the English words you don't know on this page. Then, I'll look for the definition in English...okay?」

「...Okay」

I begin my study in English.

「Yoshi-kun, your posture is bad!」

Megu warned me about my back rounding up.

「Onii-chan...I'll study too!」

Mana takes out her textbook and notes.

「I also have some homework for the consecutive holidays...!」

Mana said that, but.

「...I know. I can't go back to school anymore. Shirasaka Sousuke-san is in this news a lot already... But, I have to study. I'll become a 『Super Model』for Onii-chan's sake. At least, I need to be able to speak English...!」

...Mana.

I pat Mana's head...

「When the current uproar ends...I'll ask Minaho-neesan to look for a new school for Mana...!」

「Un...then I'll enroll as 『Yoshida Mana』...Onii-chan's sister!」

Mana smiles...!

...AT that time.

The people in the carnage...

「Minaho, the contents of the press conference is assumed to be like this!」

Margo-san shouts!

「...Can we send someone to the press conference?」

「It's hard...Shirasaka house won't let any but reporters from major media groups enter the hall. They'll lock out freelance reporters」

Katsuko-nee interrupts Minaho-neesan and Margo-san's conversation!

「I've been asked by a major newspaper publisher...a named journalist can participate, can't they?」

...Katsuko-nee seems to have a secret plan.

「Journalist and critic Kaionji-sensei was my guest! That man should have a connection to the newspaper he came from!」

「...He does know the other face of Shirasaka Sousuke, right?」

「Yes...he was a regular customer of the old 『Kuromori』」

「...Katsuko, call him right now! I'll pay Kaionji-sensei as much as he wants!」

「Certainly!」

Katsuko-nee jumps to her phone.

「...Hello, Kaionji-sensei? It's me, Katsuko. It has been a while. Yes...is Sensei watching over too?...That's right, it's Shirasaka Sousuke's case. No...we don't intend to save Shirasaka. It's the opposite. We'll be informing only sensei...the current news on Shirasaka is all leaked by us. That's right...we have started this to abandon Shirasaka completely. Then, let me get straight to the topic... Actually, we have something we would like to discuss with Sensei...!!!」

The hot night continues!

---

---

## 171. Full Body Blow

---

「...The Australian rape case victim responded to the negotiations with the lawyer hired by Shirasaka family」

Margo-san...tells us while continuing to eat curry.

「...That's?」

「Yeah...after the appeal to police withdrawal, Shirasaka's sin in Australia will disappear immediately」

...He'll be released by the police?

「Of course...the victims' respond in the court is our instruction」

In Australia...Margo-san's mater, Kyouko ▪ Dothnomechey is moving behind the scenes.

「...Why did you let them settle it in the court at this stage?」

Megu asks Margo-san.

「Well, isn't that obvious? If we leave him alone...Shirasaka Sousuke will be under investigation in Australia, be subject to Australian court and serve in Australian prison」

...I see.

Since he raped a local girl in Australia...

Obviously, he'll be judged by the local judiciary.

「Minaho wants to make Shirasaka Sousuke fall to hell by her own hands...!」

I see...The topic on the internet changed from Shirasaka's rape case abroad to the entertainment world scandal.

If Shirasaka comes back to Japan...he'll be aimed by the eyes of hatred from all Japan.

「Also...it's a『trap』for the Shirasaka head family」

Margo-san grins.

「...『Trap』?」

「Yeah...well, look forward to the press conference」

Then...Katsuko-nee raised her face from the laptop.

「Ojou-sama! It's done! Everything's prepared!」

Minaho-san looked back.

「...What about Kaionji-sensei?」

「I've sent the outline of the report. When will we contact the police?」

「...You can do it at 10 o'clock. Do it at the same time the press conference starts」

「Yes...I'll mail both the Tokyo police and Shizuoka police!」

What will they tell the police?

「Well done...Katsuko, take a rest. Take a meal before it gets cold...!」

「What about Ojou-sama」

「I...don't want to eat anything tonight...」

「Should I prepare supplements?」

「Yeah...please. I can't afford to fall down on the last moment...!」

Minaho-neesan's eyes are shining brightly.

A twelve year『revenge』?...

Today...it'll come to reality.

「Nei and Kudou-san, take turns in resting...you have to get active by 10 o'clock...!」

Nei-san and Michi continues to guide the public opinion in the internet as usual...

「...I can go later, Mii-chan, go and eat first!」

「...Consent acknowledged no Sukezaemon!」

...Michi.

Just what kind of character are you playing on the internet...

「It's 『Ruson Sukezaemon』and 『Berodashi Chonma』and 『Ono's Little Sister's elder sister』are the three names I'm performing right now」

Michi, reports with confidence.

「Is that so, that's tough. Here, curry and rice」

Megu smiles then handed Michi the meal

「I'm indebt to you...!」

Staying in her samurai language for some reason...Michi kept eating.

「Haa...My shoulders are stiff」

Katsuko-nee comes over.

「Hey...massage my breasts~」

Katsuko-nee said while looking at me.

「No...you said that your shoulders are stiff right? What does the breast have to do with this?!」

「My breasts are heavy so my shoulders get stiff...!」

Katsuko-nee approaches me...1

「Or rather...I just want you to touch me」

...Can't be helped.

I massage Katsuko-nee's breasts on top of her clothes...

...Un.

It's really big.

What's with this volume?

「Hey...did you know that it feels good to have sex when you're tired?」

Katsuko-nee whispers in my ears...

「Love me tonight okay!」

...Err

「No...I want to be loved by you. Isn't that fine? Dear...!」

「...Yeah, got it」

I also whisper in Katsuko-nee's ear.



「Hey, what are you whispering?!」

Mana's glaring at us.

「Ah, Mana-chan can join in too. I'm in the mood to make love with a small girl!」

The long asleep sexual beast seems to have woken up.

「...What are you talking about?」

Megu asks me.

「Err...Katsuko-nee wants to have sex with me tonight」

I answered honestly.

「Is that so?...Katsuko-san did a lot it seems. Got it...I can do it tomorrow morning」

...Megu?

「Didn't we promise to have sex in the school building? But, I'm scared at the school at night so let's just do it before others come to school...!」

Megu seems to be completely motivated.

「Got it...promise」

I just accept everything.

I kiss Megu...!

「Ah, me too, Onii-chan!」

Mana clings to me...so I give her too.

「I want it too」

Katsuko-nee too...!

「Yo-chan, what are you doing! Come here and give us food!」

Nei-san shouts.

I...

Go towards Nei-san in front of her PC...

「...Nei-san」

Nei-san turned to me.  
Then, I kissed her softly...

「...I can finally see Yo-chan's face up close」

Nei-san whispers to me...

「It was lonely being alone...geez!」

I embrace Nei-san's body.

「...Nei-san」

「Un...Yo-chan」

Nei-san coil her hands to my back.  
We kissed once again.



...Ten o'clock.

Shirasaka family, owner of a news company...also have a television station.  
They should be broadcasting news by 10 o'clock if it was the usual but...  
Today, they just put out the opening title then immediately switched to the  
press conference room screen.  
The chairperson of the interview isn't the usual caster of the usual news show...  
It's the greatest announcer director in the TV station...

「My...Shirasaka Moritsugu is there」

Katsuko-nee said.  
True...at the center of the table in the screen.  
Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu, the head of Shirasaka family, and the chairman of the  
newspaper company is sitting.  
His face always come out when the pro baseball gets in trouble so even I know  
his face.  
His alias is 『Sakamori』  
Age...early 70's.  
Pure white hair and golden glasses.  
He's having good meals? His skin looks glossy.  
Alias...『Silver Hair demon』

Other aliases...『Japan's representative on elderly causing troubles』『King of the Aged』『The boss of elders』

「It's basically 『I want to get out』since it's a 『pain in the neck』if his own opinion won't pass through...he won't be satisfied unless he turns over the situation with his own hand...!」

Minaho-neesan explained so...

「...Then, we will start the conference. You can ask the questions later. Then, first...Chairman Shirasaka Moritsugu has something to report to everyone」

The announcer in sight took the first shot.

「...Shirasaka here」

Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu twists his mouth in displeasure then began to talk.

「Right now, my nephew...Shirasaka Sousuke seems to have very dishonorable rumors coming out about him. However, this are all just groundless rumors filled with malice...first, I would like you all to recognize that...」

『Sakamori』...seems to intend to completely deny the doubt in Shirasaka Sousuke.

「I will speak in behalf of Shirasaka family. This are all a conspiracy by someone in order to trample Shirasaka Sousuke and the Shirasaka family's honor. Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke and us are innocent...I swear to god that we're not involved in the illegal acts as the rumors say」

He said something big again.

「First...the case of Shirasaka Sousuke's arrest in Australia...just earlier, the Australian family who complained about Shirasaka Sousuke has withdrawn their complaint. Shirasaka Sousuke was falsely accused and despite not committing any sin...he was arrested by mistake. A misidentified arrest. The case of possession of child pornography has a different suspect...it has nothing to do with him」

...Un

...So that's what you came up?

「Currently, we're sending a protest against the Australian police. Also, we are

prepared to sue those Australians who caused an unjustified appeal to Shirasaka Sousuke. No...the local people might not be the wrong here. This incident was planned to damage Shirasaka Sousuke and Shirasaka family's honor. It means that you people were caught in their plans. This is outrageous! I'm very furious!」

『Sakamori』reveals an unpleasant expression.

「If you continue your unpleasant reports about Shirasaka Sousuke and us, we will have to respond. Television stations, radio, newspaper, and of course, the reporters and commentators as well, if you want to make an appeal then please do! If you people will make an unjustified attack to Shirasaka house, we will fight with determination. We'll return it 10,000 fold so wait for us!」

The press conference room quiets down.

「...That's all from me」

『Sakamori』tells the reporters as he scowl at them.

「Then, we will begin our question and answer session. If you have any question then please raise your hands...please state your name and affiliation」

Several people raises their hands.

「Yes...you」

「Eh, I'm \*\*\* from Saito TV. Shirasaka Sousuke seems to have rumors about having shameless acts with celebrities apart from his Australian case...」

Another person takes the microphone instead of 『Sakamori』

「...I'm Ohata, the legal adviser of Shirasaka family. There is a report about Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke having sexual relationship with specific people from entertainment...or that he's sponsoring some sexual parties...that is all not true. Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has nothing to do with any of those」

The old lawyer completely denied it...

「However...there are a number of sexual images with a person that seems to be Shirasaka Sousuke released on the internet. Among them, I heard that there's a person who seemed to be a minor being treated violently...」

The reporter still clings to it.

「Eh, It would be troublesome to say 『thought to be』and 『can be seen』based on speculations. I don't know what kind of videos are flowing but...Do you have a firm evidence that will confirm that the person in the video is Shirasaka Sousuke」

「That...you can see it in the video. The person in it looks very similar to Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke」

「Saying that it's similar isn't a proof that it's the person himself...!」

The old lawyer turned it down.

「I am convinced that someone that looks very much like M.r Shirasaka Sousuke commits this shameless videos then cowardly traps Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke to the crimes...」

「No, in one of our data collection, one of the women in the leaked videos has already retired in the entertainment industry...if the video is real, she can testify that the man in the video who used violence on her is Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke on his young days」

「I don't know what you intend to say but that is not true. It's impossible to prove that the person in the video is Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke by just her testimony. You don't know if someone paid her to say that」

Un...he intends to deny it with all his strength.

「\*\* From Osaki Newspaper. A part of the report says that Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has a relationship with a crime syndicate, is that true?」

「I don't understand the『Part of the report』, please give me the name of the company that made such a report. I will make a proper response」

The reporter fell silent from the words of the lawyer.  
...In the end.

The incident in Australia is a false charge. A mistaken arrest. Shirasaka Sousuke is innocent so the appeal was withdrawn.

The leaked videos related to the entertainment industry doesn't reflect Shirasaka Sousuke. You should show evidence that it's Shirasaka Sousuke  
If there're other suspicions...I will appeal that's just ridiculous.  
It seems that's what the Shirasaka house wants to push.

「It's completely a Shirasaka house's way」

Minaho-neesan mutters.

「They think that they can deceive everyone with the power of Shirasaka house's power...!」

『Sakamori』is sitting on the center of the table in the screen...  
He's staring at the reporters with mocking eyes.  
He'll never allow anyone to dishonor Shirasaka family...  
He'll crush them thoroughly and expell them from the press...

「...Can I ask a question?」

One person...a gray elderly man raised his hand.  
A white mustache...fat old man  
He looks Santa Claus.

「...Go on」

The chairman allows that person...

「I came here as the representative of \*\*\* newspaper today. I'm Kaionji」

That person is Kaionji-san?

「.....Katsuko ! Margo ! Nei ! 」

At that moment...Minaho-neesan issues an order!

「...Yes!」

「...Got it」

「...Roger!」

The three moves their hand to the keyboard immediately.

「Why is a famous journalist like you appearing in such a conference?」

『Sakamori』speaks to Kaionji-san himself.

「In the end, no incident has hapened. My nephew is innocent. What happened today is just a 『fuss』 I don't think there's no news worth having here...!」

「...Is that so?」

Kaionji-san speaks to 『Sakamori』

「I think this incident is just the tip of the iceberg...」

Then...he takes out a file from the bag.

「In my data collection...I found Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke committing a murder case...!」

Kaionji-san makes a sensational remark from the start.

The surroundings becomes noisy immediately.

「Youuuu! What do you mean, saying something as ridiculous as such?!」

『Sakamori』lost his temper.

He yelled at Kaionji-san loudly.

「Thirteen years ago...in Kanagawa prefecture, a 12 year old girl was kidnaped. This person was kidnaped, confined, raped, prostituted, killed and disposed by Mr. Shiraska Sousuke」

Kaionji-san speaks calmly.

「...W-Where's the evidence!」

『Sakamori's』roar echoes in the hall.

「The proof will be dug up by the Shizuoka prefectural police」

...Dug up?

「A person involved with Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke that time gave me an in-depth report. The same thing has already been sent to the Tokyo police and Shizuoka police. The name of the victim is Yuzuki Naomi-san」

...Yuzuki Naomi?

...It's Minaho-neesan dead sister.

「It's written in the report that Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke has buried the girl in Shirasaka's family lot in Shizuoka prefecture. The location is specific...!」

Kaionji-san said.

「Before long...the corpse will be discovered by the police. I think it's already white bones but...her hand is holding a stainless steel plate. The person who wrote this report confesses that the metal plate has Naomi-san's name and Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's name engraved in the metal plate」

I look at Minaho-neesan.  
Minaho-neesan stands gallantly...  
She's staring at the screen quietly.  
...Minaho-neesan.  
...You  
For this twelve years...  
You've been waiting for this day to come...

「...It's fabricated! That's ridiculous!!!」

『Sakamori』shouts...!

「What kind of fabrication can you do on a corpse that's buried under the soil for 12 years!」

Kaionji-san shouts back...

「Well...let's just wait for the police announcement silently. The excavation by the police should prove that Naomi-san's body has been holding Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's name for 12 years...!」

At that time...

Margo-san...Katsuko-nee...and Nei-san's hands are...

Leaking Naomi-san's images in the internet.

Before she was kidnapped...a photo of a cute girl.

The videos and photos when Shirasaka Sousuke raped her out of her virginity.

The 12 years old girl got pregnant, and her stomach got bit.

And the photo when she died.

...Then.

The photo of her body buried in the soil.

「...My late mother has issued a『Missing notice』about Naomi to the police 」

Minaho-neesan...!

「In short...she『disappeared』 There's no death report anywhere. No...they can't let out!!!」

Minaho-neesan...!

「I...I buried Naomi with my own hands. In Shirasaka Sousuke's villa in



Shizuoka. I also carved the stainless plate...」

Minaho-neesan...!

「I swore...I swore that I will definitely avenge her!!!」

Minaho-neesan...!

「I use the materials left in『Kuromori』for my 『revenge』for Naomi! Naomi died after all...! There's a lot of people living normally...have a family. But... Naomi and mother are no longer in this world. I'm the only one living in my family. That's why...I made『Naomi's death』my last trump card...!!!」

...I

Hold Minaho-neesan's hand.

「...Yoshida-kun?」

Minaho-neesan looked at me.

「...It's okay. We'll be with Minaho-neesan for always」

...That's right.

「We...we are Minaho-neesan's 『family』...!」

Minaho-neesan looks at my face...

「...Thank you」

Then she smiled.

「...Now then, we're at the crucial moment. For us, and for Shirasaka house too」

Minaho-neesan stares at 『Sakamori』in the screen again...

「The Australian rape case...maybe a national disgrace but the concern of the whole world is thin. The entertainment world scandal gathers a lot of people's attention but that's all. But...kidnaping, rape, confinement, and murder of a 12 years old girl...!」

Minaho-neesan's eyes sparkle...!

「...That's absolutely unforgivable!」

---



## 172. Ripple of events

---

「Here's the collection of my materials. There will be a copy distributed to the journalist around here so...please, see it with your own eyes」

Saying that, Kaionji-san sat down.

「...Eh, I'm very sorry but we're about to end the conference soon」

The speaker declares the end of the conference.

「...Please wait a moment!」

「...Shirasaka-san, please make a comment about the case given just now!」

「...Is the kidnapping and murder of the girl true?!」

「...Hey, reply!」

「...Are you running, hey!」

Shirasaka Moritsugu escapes his seat from the screams of the reporters...  
The news program changes from the press conference back to studio.

「...Eh, even I don't know what's going on. We'll be arranging our information...」

The announcer desperately tries to smooth over the place...  
Shirasaka Moritsugu who's the head of Shirasaka family has『proclaimed innocence』to cover up the criminal relative of his...you can only see it as him escaping from the famous journalist telling the truth.

「The net has a great reaction...they've gotten outrageous when they accessed about Naomi-san」

Margo-san said.

「Let's upload to more video sites. Nei-sama and Kudou-sama, please lead them」

Katsuko-nee gives out instructions.

「Leave it to me!」

「Certainly sir!」

Once again, the fight in the internet begins...

「Ah...they came now」

Katsuko-nee mutters.

「What did...?」

I asked...

「Shirasaka family seems to have hired a professional on internet. They're desperately deleting the videos we're uploading...!」

「They're already here too~! They're defending the Shirasaka family with a frightful force!」

「Same here, it's writing as the 『second self』...!」

I don't get it but...

Anyway, it seems that the battle in the net seems to continue.

「But, since this evening...we've been building up the image that Shirasaka Sousuke is a bad human. They can't easily change the public opinion in the internet that easily」

Margo-san analyzes.

「...Gufufu」

Nei-san suddenly laughs.

「What's wrong?」

「You see, Yo-chan...there's one guy who stick to me too much who's writing his opinion defending the Shirasaka family...!」

Nei-san laughs.

「Then, I wrote pretending to be that guy.」 『Leader, what should we do? Whatever we write, their opinions don't change』...!」

Wow...

Did the professional opponents fell into our hands?...

「Yay...they ran away! It's my win~!」

Nei-san's happy but...  
I don't get the internet world.

「I stand up in the enemy's Shirasaka Sousuke support thread and thoroughly damaged him...!」

...Michi.  
Why are you a fundamentally 『painful child』...

「Yup...as I thought. This is an advantageous situation. Naomi-san's videos are spreading. When it comes to this, the people employed by Shirasaka house won't be able to erase it...!」

Margo-san seems to be convinced on victory.

...And.  
The date changed...May 2, 00:03.  
All of the television stations have an urgent news coming up.

『Shizuoka prefectural police department discovers a skeleton buried in a villa owned by Shirasaka Sousuke』

Twelve years after her death...  
Naomi-san was finally dug up from the earth.  
The remains were discovered just as Kaionji-san's distributed reports say...  
The press began to report all the details of the case at once.  
There's nothing that relates to the existence of the prostitution organization『Kuromori』  
Twelve years ago...the pedophile pervert Shirasaka Sousuke has abducted Yuzuki Naomi (Age 12) on her way home then confined her.  
After she was raped, Shirasaka Sousuke forced her to prostitution.  
When Naomi-san got pregnant...she got killed...  
Shirasaka Sousuke buried her in the villa he owns...  
That was the scenario drawn by Minaho-neesan...

「...I buried Naomi there. With my own hands.」

Minaho-neesan mutters...

「I also had a body that can't take in customers anymore. Ordered by Shirasaka, Naomi was to be buried by the underlings of a gang...so I came with

them」

...Minaho, nee-san

「It wasn't easy...I gave them fellatio multiple times along the way...I butter up those thugs...so they brought her to Shirasaka's villa. Shirasaka's instruction was to 『Bury her in the mountains of Shizuoka』but...『It's troublesome to carry her in the mountains isn't it?』,『I hate how Shirasaka-san always acts bossy. We should bury her under Shirasaka-san's villa instead?』I instigated those thugs little by little... I didn't say that the corpse was my sister」

That is the day where her revenge has began.

「It was dusk. The thugs and I dug a hole...the wound in my stomach still hurts but I desperately scooped with the shovel. Then...Naomi who's wrapped in a huge vinyl sheet was put in the hole... Her body was completely stiff. Naomi was wrapped in the vinyl naked so she won't be identified...I want to see her face but...the thugs would be suspicious if I looked at her and cried so I didn't. I still regret that even now」

The sixteen year old girl buries the corpse of her thirteen year old sister.

「There's a small white flower blooming in the vicinity...I picked it up and offered it to Naomi's remains. Since her hands were coming out of the vinyl sheet...I had her grip the plate with the name of Shirasaka Sousuke carved in it. Then I put on the soil. I buried Naomi. When I finished burying her, it was completely nighttime...」

Then...twelve years have passed.

「...Minaho-san!」

Megu...shouts in a loud voice.

「Please also leak out my mother's videos!」

「...Keiko-san's videos too?」

Minaho-neesan's surprised.

「My mother doesn't have anyone but me. Please release the videos of Mother kidnapped by Shirasaka Sousuke, raped, and killed on the internet!」

...Megu?

「If I recall...those who killed two and above will have a death penalty in Japan, right?」

Hearing Megu's words...

Yukino who's limped out got startled.

「You...do you intend to kill my Papa!?!」

Megu and Yukino...the sisters glare at each other...

「...If I can turn it to death penalty then I will put him to the sentence!」

Megu shouts!

「That's bullshit! Why does Papa have to be sentenced to death!」

Yukino shouts!

「He killed my mother!」

Megu shouts at Yukino with a rough voice!

Minaho-neesan speaks to Megu...

「...We can't Megumi. I won't leak Keiko-san's videos...!」

「Why...?」

Megu's surprised.

「...I can't let the women who belong to the former 『Kuromori』 have a useless worry...!」

Minaho-neesan said clearly...

「It's Naomi so they will allow it...everyone knows that she's my little sister. That's why...they will understand that this is Yuzuki Minaho's personal revenge...」

Personal revenge

「There are those among the retired『women』I can't contact anymore. I think they want to completely forget about their prostitute past. Even the people who I know their locations...there's hardly anyone that knows Megumi is with me right now. Have you considered what will they think if I let out Keiko-san's videos among those people...?」

Everyone will misunderstand that their videos might also be leaked?!  
That Minaho-neesan could chase Shirasaka Sousuke...she'll indiscriminately use videos of『women』who were treasured by 『Kuromori』...

「That's why I won't let out anything else but Naomi's. Also, we have to thoroughly hide anything that suggest the existence of『Kuromori』...!」

That is Minaho-neesan's pride as the manager of 『Kuromori』

「Also...I don't want to give Shirasaka Sousuke a death sentence...!」

Minaho-neesan looks up at the monitor.  
The news turned to 『Special news report』...and they continue to report the incident.  
The screen reflects Shirasaka Sousuke's face grinning portrait photo, where did they get that?

「I'd like Shirasaka to live the remainder of his life in suffering...! Smeared in humiliation and disgrace...I want him to keep living miserably bathing in the eyes of hatred of people...!」



「...Kaionji-sensei, Thank you very much」

Katsuko-nee calls Kaionji-san as thanks.

『No, in the end, I got a scoop so I'm the one who should say thanks』

Kaionji-san's voice flows from the speaker of the room.  
Katsuko-nee seems to have connected the phone to the aux of the room.

「Please wait for a moment...I will be sending the phone to Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee hands the phone to Minaho-neesan.

「Thank you for the troubles, Kaionji-sama...The reward will be transferred to your account」

『No...I just told Katsuko-kun just now...this case is something delicious I have obtained...rewards are unnecessary』

「I won't let that...!」

「Instead of money...could you let me publish this case as a book?」



...Book.

Naomi-san's death and Shirasaka Sousuke's crime will become a book.

『I have already taken offers from several companies...』

Minaho-neesan thinks for a moment.

「Understood...I will leave the decision to you. However, I will be deciding the contents...」

『I know...this event also has Kouzuki『Kakka』involved in it, right?』

Kaionjo-san seems to have seen the background of the incident.

「Yes...I'm taking his cooperation」

Minaho-neesan affirms it.

『Kouzuki『Kakka's』aim is to deprive Shirasaka family of their newspaper company, isn't it? No, it's him so he might be also aiming at rebuilding the baseball world at once』

「We do not know Kouzuki-sama's thoughts...I'm just filled with my own personal 『revenge』...!」

『Hmm...well, let's leave it to that. Although I feel sorry to hurry...Could you make a report with a bit more of your『facts』in this case and send it tomorrow?』

Kaionji-san said...

『Actually, I am invited to a variety show tomorrow...I'd like to know the outline before that. After all, this incident seems to be a scoop that I secretly gathered and caught. I will hand the report you will have from you and hand it over to other media...that was the instruction. If I only know so few about the incident, I can't go to the variety show, won't I?』

「I will make it by tomorrow morning and send it」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「By the way, Minaho-kun...」

Kaionji-san changes the subject.

『『Kuromori』...won't reopen anymore...?!』

「...We're not in a situation where we can answer」

『...I see. True. 『Kakka』and I...liked the 『Kuromori tower』before that Shirasaka house's brat enters. It was completely ruined by that bastard...at that time, it was us, the regular customer's responsibility for not stopping that man at those times. I think it's inexcusable...!』

「That's...it is not something to worry about」

『When『Kakka』has selected you...I think that the 『Kuromori』has regained a bit of it's radiance from the past. If you didn't find prostitutes with charm and talent like Nagisa-kun and Katsuko-kun...I think that I'll never stretch my legs to come to 『Kuromori』again』

「...Thank you very much」

『Therefore...now that we're able to completely eliminate Shirasaka Sousuke...it would be a pleasure to revive『Kuromori tower』under your arms...!』

「We haven't decided our future plans yet...however」

Minaho-neesan speaks.

「I think I'll completely cut ties from this world...!」

Kaionji-san...

『That's regrettable...however, that might not be inexcusable』

「Yes...I myself is a woman who's originally not suited to managing the prostitution mansion...」

Minaho-neesan answers.



『It was a very interesting show. I enjoyed it very much...Minaho-kun』

The call that was taken last was from Kouzuki『Kakka』

『Your production is wonderful. As expected...you have the talent』

『Kakka's』low voice flows from the speaker.

「That is because Kouzuki-sama has cooperated...the one who appealed the Shizuoka police to hasten their excavation of the corpse was Kouzuki-sama, isn't it...?」

『Yeah...That kind of suspense is boring so I had it develop faster...』

『Kakka』declares that Minaho-neesan's 『revenge』is『suspense』...

『However, that was brilliant...Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu just entered the Jounan women's medical college earlier. The top of the mass media is imitating the politician feeling bad and sent to hospital, that is outrageous』

...Oh

Even though nothing's wrong...he flew to the hospital because he was afraid of the media chasing him.

Well, that would be a big annoyance to the other patients.

It's also inexcusable for him to use the hospital room for that reason...

『At most...it has gotten easier thanks to that. There's a coup in Shirasaka house happening in the gap Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu is hospitalized. Mr. Moritsugu's on a downfall. I recommend a guy without popularity to be the next head of the family. If this continues, we can divide the Shirasaka family and let it decline』

『Kakka』speaks the plan smoothly...

Yukino's listening in blank surprise.

『Even for newspaper companies...they probably won't let the people of Shirasaka family be the director the same way until now. The new representative will put under my tone. With this, that newspaper will become mine...Thank you, Minaho-kun. It is all thanks to you』

Just as Kaionji-san says...Mr. Kouzuki's aim was the newspaper company.

『In regards to this, I want to thank you...what do you wish?』

Minaho-neesan...

「Kouzuki-sama has already given his help to me」

『...About Cesario Viola's case?』

「...Yes」

Minaho-neesan answered calmly.

「You have already sent Kudou-san as support to us」

The image from the surveillance camera...

It's reflecting Kudou papa outside the school...

Kudou papa's subordinate, Toni-san, has stopped the minivan in the backline of

the baseball club ground.

It was the place where we took lunch.

Ah...I see Noma-san.

She was able to join up safely.

...But.

Kudou-papa, building a bonfire at that place...

He's making barbecue on the bonfire.

Is that okay to put fire on that place?

Oh...a policeman in bicycle came.

Uwa...he's angry.

Kudou-papa's seriously apologizing.

...Seriously.

『You don't need to think about Cesario Viola. I won't allow such an evil criminal come to Japan. He will be exterminated by all means even if I have to mobilize all the organizations I have...!』

Kouzuki『Kakka』said.

「Kudou-san, isn't with Kouzuki Security Service, is he?」

Minaho-neesan asks『Kakka』

『For the time being, I have three groups underground and two people are already died on duty. He's quite a formidable enemy』

...Two people were killed?

I see...『Kakka's』other groups are in war.

That is so Viola and others won't appear in front of us...

『...Then, about tomorrow. As planned...I will call Shirasaka house and Ichikawa-kun to『make a deal』 Even if it isn't Mr. Moritsugu in Shirasaka family...it'll be a new head. They will be making a deal with my agency and you without informing Mr. Moritsugu and his aides. There won't be any stage for the people in Shirasak clan appealing for Mr. Moritsugu's fall』

If a man of power like Kouzuki『Kakka』makes a deal with them...they can't overturn the fact somehow.

On the contrary, if Shirasaka Moritsugu makes a remark「I don't know this so this promise is ineffective」...He'll be put to shame by『Kakka』

No...『Kakka』will ignore Mr. Moritsugu, then call to make a deal with the next head of Shirasaka family...

As long as『Kakka』accepts that person...Mr. Moritsugu will have a difficulty reinstated.

『However...the venue will be changed from, the first scheduled National Theater』

Kakka said.

『I can't invite Cesario Viola on the long awaited Konpeki style symposium. The leaders of government and financial circle of Japan will be gathering there. The security is perfect but I can't possibly risk of those children be exposed to danger』

...True

If they make an attack at that place, it'll be a problem.

『Therefore...the venue will be on the capital hotel』

...Capital Hotel?

『After the presentation...how about 9PM?』

Minaho-neesan answers.

「...You plan to lure Viola to the capital hotel」

『...As expected of Minaho-kun. It helps me that you understand it quickly』

...Lure?

『We've already prepared the hotel side. Tomorrow night, I will be renting the hotel. The whole hotel is owned by me though...!』

『Kakka』laughs.

『...That's where I want to make a consultation』

Minaho-neesan interrupts 『Kakka's』words

「...It's Nei?」

...Nei-san?

『That's right. A good『trap』needs a suitable『bait』...!』

...I see

If Nei-san appears...

Cesario Viola will definitely come.

...But.

The danger naturally reaches Nei-san...!

『I'd like to see her face at least once too...your secret child...the face of the girl who had the famous American criminal chase to Japan...!』

「Kuzuki-sama...I feel sorry to say but」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Nei isn't a product of『Kuromori』at all...!」

---

---

## 173. Intermission

---

I can hear『Kakka's』laughing voice from the speaker...

『...Well fine. I will be on the hotel tomorrow as well. I have the resolution to stand as Cesario Viola's target ...So he's asking to bring Nei-san as a lure? Nei-san speaks to Minaho-neesan.

「I'm fine, Sensei...if we can kill Mr. Viola with that...!」

...Nei-san.

Both her parents and her brother were killed by Cesario Viola...

Minaho-neesan looks at Nei-san...

「Got it...we'll bring Nei tomorrow...」

...Minaho-neesan?

「Everyone has to get ready. Also, we can't hide here forever can we? If we can repel Cesario Viola with that...!」

It seems Minaho-neesan intends to gamble everything in the tomorrow's trap in the hotel.

『Rest assurd...you will be guarded tomorrow. There's nothing to worry...!』

Kouzuki『Kakka』said...

This person talks like he's just playing a game...

To be honest...I can't trust him.

『Yamaoka's『Kouzuki Security Service integrated security department』and... Kudou's『Guard department』 I will know who's the capable one here...!』

...Look

Even in this situation...

He's making them compete on purpose...

『Anyway...I'm looking forward for tomorrow. I will contact the person in

charge about the details on the 『deal』with Shirasaka house later. ...Then』  
「Yes...thank you, Kouzuki-sama」

Then...the call ends.



「...Margo, Katsuko, your opinions?」

Minaho-neesan always listen to the opinion of the two when she's hesitating.

「...To be honest, I think it's a good idea if we can settle this in one go, but」

Margo-san's expression is subtle...

「Kouzuki-san's fighting power can't be perfect at all...I think that they only have fifty percent chance on completely destroying Mr. Viola...」

...Is that so?

「But...as promised with Kouzuki-sama, we have to take Nei-sama tomorrow」

Katsuko-nee said.

「Kouzuki-sama thinks that this is just a game but...we know another person who thinks like that...!」

...Who's that?

「Right...considering Mr. Viola's personality, he'd rather be willing to play Kouzuki-sama's game...!」

Minaho-neesan reached a conclusion.

「Rather...we can think that we'll be safe here and until we arrive at the hotel tomorrow...!」

Katsuko-nee says...

「No...That's not the case. Cesario Viola certainly loves playing games but...his aide thinks realistically」

Margo-san objects.

「I think that they will aim for attacking while we're at a car before we arrive at the hotel...!」

「...It's okay. That won't happen」



Minaho-neesan tells Margo-san...

「Therefore...Kouzuki-sama purposely made the hotel event tomorrow a massive one. Surely...this information has already reached Cesario and others. They leaked information on purpose?

It's already known that Cesario has contact with the underground syndicates in Japan.

Then...if Kouzuki-san releases information that he'll mobilize all his power to the hotel tomorrow evening, waiting for Cesario Viola...

Viola will surely be informed...

「Making such a big challenge...Mr. Viola has no choice but to get on it. Rather, he can't allow anyone to make a move on us before the game begins... I think they're working out a plan on how to capture Nei with only a few pieces in plan...!」

Viola's purpose, 『Nei-san』is definitely there...

Viola will want to play the『game』correctly...

「...You got me」

Margo-san mutters.

「Viola will think about his own capture strategy...Kouzuki-san has the 『security』and『guard』have separate plans on repelling...」

Several speculations collide with each other.

「...We, we have to think a strategy that's above that」

Margo-san looks at Katsuko-nee.

「Katsuko-san...do you know how many stories the hotel have?」

「Please wait for a moment...」

Katsuko-nee looked it up.

「...Forty-two floors above ground and five floors underground」

Margo-san thinks over.

「...Minaho. When the report from Kouzuki-san's representative comes, tomorrow night, ask to hand over the keys on the fifteenth floor to the

twentieth floor to us」

...From 15th to 20th floor?

「...Let's turn off all the lights on the guest rooms...then don't tell the people in Kouzuki-san's place where Nei is staying in. Then, let's move rooms from time to time...」

「Why...?...are upper floors bad? What about the top floor?」

When I ask, Margo-san...

「This isn't a bad game...the princess being on the top floor is quite...」

Oh, I see.

There's no need to purposely tell where we are...

「Also...we have to think about escape too. If you use the stairs, won't your limit be the 20th floor?」

...I see.

「The other side is a small group but they're an elite unit. If we're on the upper floor, they can just come by using elevators. In that case, there's no need to use a high location on purpose?」

...Yeah

To confuse the enemy, it's better to stay on the floor below or in the middle.

「Also...Just like in Manga, it's a trouble if they attack from the rooftop using parachutes or helicopters」

When I say that...

「Yo-chan...you can't do that in reality you know?」

Nei-san looks at me with an amazed face.

「...Tokyo night has the night lights bright. You'll be seen immediately if you get off via parachute. Capital hotel is at the center of the city too...」

I-I see...

「Also, Yo-chan...supposed they get down via parachute and they can't get down to the hotel due to the wind, what will they do?」

...True

If they got thrown by the wind and dropped on a different place...they'll look like idiots.

「In case of Helicopters...there's no heliport in that hotel. If they land by force, they'll open up a hole on the top floor of the hotel」

Katsuko-nee also criticizes.

「Then...they should just jump while hovering?」

I just try to say it for better or for worse.

「If you jump like that...even if you can hold down the top of the building, you can't get inside」

...Hmm

「Then...how about hanging a rope and kicking the window on the lower floor invading there...」

「That's 45 floors above ground you know? There's no special forces under Viola that can do something like that」

Margo-san turned it down flatly.

「In any case, approach of any helicopters and airplanes will be checked by Kouzuki-sama's guard. There's a specialist prepared for that」

...I see.

...That Yamaoka-san won't miss that kind of thing.

「...Right. There's an airship chartered under the name of Kouzuki security service」

Katsuko-nee searches information from the internet.

「...Airship?」

「Advertising airship...they intend to fly the airship over the hotel all night long tomorrow. If they do that, helicopters and planes can't approach it...even if you jump out forcibly, you're completely exposed to the people watching in the airship」

It seems that they have started a lot of things already.

「...Margo, anything else to demand on the other side?」

Minaho-neesan asks.

「I can't think of anything for now...I will be examining the blueprint and materials of the hotel. However...」

「...What?」

「To be honest...I don't think I will leave Nei's side tomorrow...I think there's a limit to guarding alone... I want a wild card」

Margo-san said.

「...Got it, I'll arrange a last resort」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「Kudou-san's father...I think we can trust him. At least, regarding the case of Cesario Viola...」

「Right...I will say hello tomorrow」

Margo-san looks at Kudou papa in the monitor.

Kudou papa starts a bonfire again.

「By the way, Minaho...it's about Kouzuki-san」

Margo-san changes the topic...

「Kouzuki-san seriously wants to put『Kuromori』under his own control, right? What would you do?」

...Eh?!

I feel that it's like that after hearing the phone talk a while ago but.

...Kouzuki『Kakka』seriously think of that?

「Well...the『Kuromori』right now is a 『bad property』where Shirasaka Sousuke is... Shirasaka's family is behind it, Shirasaka Sousuke has a collection with the entertainment and crime worlds. For Kouzuki-san, I think it's not a property that's taken forcibly」

...I see

If it includes Shirasaka Sousuke, it could get reversed...

「Also...with this『Kuromori』will be completely eliminating Shirasaka Sousuke.

Kouzuki-san recognizes Minaho's talent...that person's wish is the reconstruction of the old『Kuromori tower』 Or rather...he just want a brothel that suits his taste I think...」

Margo-san analyzes...

「I don't intend to work under Kouzuki-sama. I don't want to sell『Kuromori』to Kouzuki-sama...」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「We're an independent organization...Kouzuki-sama and others are『guests』 I don't intend to change that principle. 『Guest』isn't a 『Master』 If we can't transact in equal terms...the prostitutes will be oppressed again...」

Just like the days when Shirasaka Sousuke had the full power over『Kuromori』  
...  
He torments the prostitutes and exploits them.

「In that case...we have to think of some countermeasures」  
「Right...Katsuko」  
「Rather than that...we should capture Cesario Viola's head by ourselves...!」

Margo-san said.

「If Kouzuki-san's subordinate kills Cesario Viola...that will be another『debt』 towards Kouzuki-san. Using that as a shield...Kouzuki-san can demand control over『Kuromori』」

...Eh?

「...Right. Kouzuki-sama is aiming for a two birds in one stone result. Having fun with the destruction game with the criminal Cesario Viola...he intends to take over『Kuromori』...!」

For that sake...He'll fight Mr. Viola on stage...!

「Yare yare...it's a mountain of problems」

Margo-san sighs.

「...Nei, how's the internet?」

Margo-san asks Nei-san...

「Un...the guys hired by Shirasaka family to『defend』are all hanging in flood. The materials we have leaked seems to have spread out that even if we don't do anything, they're getting copied really fast. The sex videos of Shirasaka Sousuke with the celebrities are already being charged by the distributors...!」

Nei-san reports.

「Then that's enough...let's take a rest for tonight. Tomorrow will be a big day」

Minaho-neesan tells us.

「Kudou-san too...thank you, you helped us a lot」  
「...Understood」

With the matter in the internet finished...Michi also stopped speaking Samurai...

I was wondering what happened to her for the moment...

This girl is cool at glance, but she's basically easily influenced.

As expected of that father's daughter, a Kudou style legacy 「...I've prepared tea and coffee!」

Megu and Mana comes from the kitchen with a pot and cups.

「Ah...you girls are attentive!」

Nei-san said happily.

「I'd like coffee...I have to keep watching over tonight」

Margo-san smiles at Megu.

There's still the possibility of being attacked here...

It seems they intend to continue watching over and manipulate information on the internet.

「The three of us can take turns. Margo too, it'll be troublesome if you don't get enough rest...」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Then, I will help out too」

When I say that...

「Ah, me too...!」

「Mana too!」

Megu and Mana also follows.

「You guys won't do...You don't know how to use the monitoring device, don't you?」

Katsuko-nee says while laughing.

「Right...if you overlook them and let the enemy invade here, it'll be troublesome...!」

Un...It's definitely bad if we're『wiped out』

「Therefore...you three should sleep」

Minaho-neesan smiles at us.

「Then I will do it too! Even I know how to use the monitoring devices...!」

When Nei-san say that...

「Nei...you're not taking enough sleep! You definitely can't have dry skin and eyebags...!」

Minaho-neesan said strongly.

「I...decided. When it comes to this, I will show the best Nei. To Cesario Viola and to Kouzuki-sama as well」

Margo-san nods.

「You're right. Nei has to look the prettiest in the place tomorrow morning. Nei's our leading character after all...!」

A beautiful princess trapped in the hotel.  
Will she be kidnapped by the evil?...  
Can we protect her with our hands?  
Tomorrow...it'll be a night of destiny.

「Also...I'll be troubled if you can't keep your best condition!」

Katsuko-nee winks at Nei-san...!  
Nei-san...

「Geez! I get it!...I just have to captivate Mr. Viola and Kouzuki『Kakka』right!」



Then, 00:40...

Everyone's watching the news while drinking tea...

An urgent interview with the Shizouka police is being shown.

『...It's inferred that there's a relationship between the corpse we found today to Shirasaka Sousuke, there will be a joint investigation along with the Tokyo police』

The detailed information that's much more detailed than the videos on the internet...

Minaho-neesan sent it to the police at the same time as the press conference...

The police...finally concluded that Shirasaka Sousuke is involved with Naomi's death

...However.

『...The Tokyo police has sent a request to transfer the suspect however...the suspect has already been released from the local police station and his current location is unknown』

The current location of Shirasaka Sousuke in Australia is unknown...

No...of course, Kyouko • Dothnomechey-san who's received instructions from Minaho-neesan has taken him out...

The rumors on the internet says that Shirasaka family is hiding him somewhere...

「Now then...I will be moving my body for a bit. I didn't have the time to train for today after all」

Margo-san who finished drinking tea said then stands up.

「...If possible, can I accompany you?」

Michi speaks to Margo-san.

「I don't mind. I also want to have a match with you at least once」

Margo-san said with a smile.

「However...you'll only be using the original『Kurou style Margial arts』」



Michi makes a dubious face.

「What do you mean by that?」

「The『Kudou style』you have now is arranged by your father right? I want to see your original form. I want to ascertain the essence of the『Kudou style』skill」

「...If that 's the case」

Michi acknowledged.

「Michi...what kind of style is the original『Kudou style』?」

I wanted to ask.

「Yes...the original『Kudou style』is fighting silently...!」

...Fighting silently

「That is to never shout the name of the technique...!」

...Not shout the name of the technique.

In that case...Kudou papa's arrangement is...

「Father talks to the opponent thoughtlessly while fighting, shouting the name of the technique in an exaggerated manner, it's a new method of fighting that chips the opponent's concentration」

Y-Yeah

「You can say that it's a『new tactic』suitable for the 21st century」

...Is that so?

Kudou papa's talking and technique names...

Rather, it feels like it stopped on the 20th century...

「Then...let's have a match without that『new tactic』 Okay?」

「...Certainly」

Margo-san and Michi goes to the upper room.

「Please wait...I want to watch」

To be honest...I'm interested

「No no...Yoshida-kun, take a bath」

Margo-san speaks to me in the middle of the stairs.

...Bath?

「The facilities here isn't supposed to have this many people.」 There's no choice but to take baths in turn」

...Speaking of which

The shower room we entered during daytime isn't that wide.

The three of us was barely fitting in...

「Look...Katsuko-san is waiting for you」

...What?

「...Dear~!」

When I turn back...

Katsuko-nee is standing, wearing her bathrobe.

「I'll be monitoring so you can take a bath first」

Minaho-neesan said with a smile.

「The subordinate guards of Kouzuki-san will be making contact...there's someone else who would want to make contact too」

Someone who'd want to make contact with Minaho-neesan?

「We're at such times so we have to take a recreational event...!」

...Eh?

「I completely forget about it but there's another one that needs to be cleaned up right/」

Minaho-neesan points at the monitor showing the news.

The news related to Shirasaka Sousuke is already over.

Another news is broadcasted...

「Mr. Endou from the council argues as follows...」

...Oh

Endou's uncle who's a councilor that's suspected for bribery...

I completely forgot about that.

That also happened...

「Tomorrow...after the school ends...there will be a continuous holiday again.  
Therefore, I'd like to settle it tomorrow...!」

Then that means that...you'll contact people in the school?!

Minaho-neesan looks at Yukino who's chained up.

Yukino's completely limped out, lying down on the floor.

She looks asleep...

She might be listening however....

Minaho-neesan whispers to my ears so Yukino can't hear.

「...I will use Yukiyo」

...Iwakura Kaichou?!

「...That girl will feel bad again if I don't poke her anytime soon」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「She's a vulgar and foolish child but...she's a cute『toy』for me」

I get that but.

Minaho-neesan, what do you intend make Iwakura-san do...?!

「...Deaaar~ Hurrryy~!!!」

Katsuko-nee calls me out from the back.

Speaking of which...when your body is tired, you'd want more sex.

...Eeei.

It's my job to accompany them./

「That's right, hurry up Onii-chaan~!」

Mana also's holding a towel and soap smiling.

...Both of them?

Megu talks to Nei-san while putting away the cups.

She seems to be taking care of Katsuko-nee and Mana.

「Hurry up~! Let's take a bath!」

The sexy beauty with an excellent style...

The 14 year old girl is waiting for me.

Okay...let's do our best.

「Now...let's have fun」

Minaho-neesan pushes my back.

---

---

## 174. Katsuko-sensei's sex classroom

---

「...Welcome customer!」

Mana speaks cheerfully.

「...Welcome」

Katsuko-nee speaks softly.

When I enter the shower room...Mana and Katsuko in their underwear were waiting for me.

That said...Mana has been no-pan since the beginning so now she's not wearing a bra.

「W-What's this?!」

When I asked them...Mana.

「We're doing a soapland play!」

...Soapland play?

Katsuko-nee seems to have taught Mana something strange again...

「Ah, don't worry Onii-chan...Mana will only do this play with only Onii-chan  
Mana will become an exclusive Soapland girl for Onii-chan...!」

No...I'm not worried about that.

「Mana-chan...don't stand in that place. You do this first」

Saying that...Katsuko-nee sits on the shower room in her underwear.「」

「...I'm Katsuko. I will be your partner for today. Pleased to meet you」

Then she puts her hand on the floor and lowered her head...

「Ah...Mana too!」

Mana puts her hand on the floor in a hurry...

「...I'm Mana. Please love me a lot!」

The beautiful woman and girl prostate themselves in front of me.

「Mana-chan...you're saying it wrong. This time, we're soap ladies so you have to serve a lot...!」

「Yes, Katsuko-sensei!」

The two look at each other then laughed.

「Now...strip」

Katsuko-nee stands up and takes off my clothes.

「But...Katsuko-nee, is this okay?」

I asked since I'm a bit worried.

「Eh...about what?」

Katsuko-nee smiles kindly.

「Something like this is a prostitute's skill right? It's not that I hate it but I don't want to treat Katsuko-nee like a prostitute...!」

...Un

I'd like Katsuko-nee to forget about her prostitute days.

...As much as possible.

「I want you to treat me as a prostitute. I want to be raped and be made a mess of...!」

...Katsuko-nee?

Katsuko-nee looks at Mana.

「I'm not as young as Mana-chan you know? I wasn't able to give my virginity to you...therefore, I'd like to devote all of my knowledge and skills to you...!」

Katsuko-nee embraces me from the back.

Her plump breasts is pressed against my back.

「In exchange...I'll be a prostitute only for you. I won't have sex with anyone but you...I'll become a woman who'll do anything for the sake of your lust...!」

She licks my ear while whispering...!

Then her left hand gropes my crotch.

「...Ufu, it got big」

Hot lump gathers in my penis...!

「Drown in my body...no, I'll make you drown...」

Katsuko-nee's tongue invades my lips...

「...I'll teach you the real pleasures of sex」

...Then..

She lowers the zipper of my pants...

「Uwa, it really got big...!」

Mana's squatting in front of me.

She removed the belt and exposed my penis...

「Mana gave her virginity to Onii-chan...Oh, that was rape wasn't it?」

Saying that, she rubs the erect glans with her fingers.

「But anyway...I won't have sex with anyone but Onii-chan! I'm Onii-chan's『sex slave』after all! I'll learn from Katsuko-san from now on and learn a lot of techniques that will make Onii-chan feel good!」

The 14 year old lips hold my glans inside.

Her mouth is warm and moist.

Her small tongue is licking my glans like a kitty...

「Mana-chan...has to grow up charming to become a『super model』...!」

Katsuko-nee tells Mana while hugging and caressing me from behind.

「That's right...Mana will aim to become a『super model』for Onii-chan. I will do anything to achieve that...!」

Mana said then she takes out her tongue and lick around my penis.

「I will create a program for a daily diet however that will be prepared after the current trouble ends...I'd like Mana-chan to do follow it from now on...okay?」

Katsuko-nee asks Mana.

Mana grabbed my penis...

「Yes, please say anything. Mana will definitely follow it...!」

Then she puts my glans back in her mouth again...

「One...never have sex with any other man but him. I think that's already okay...」

「...Yefu, I'll definitely follow that!」

Mana answers while giving me a fellatio.

「The second would be to receive a creampie everyday. Also, drink semen with your mouth...!」

Creampie and swallow...so two sex a day?

「Does it have to be only twice...?!」

...Err

...Mana

「At least, you have to get semen in your body once a day...If you'd like then you can do it as much as you like...!」

「Yaaay!」

Mana's happy.

「Onii-chan won't be satisfied with just one shot, right~!」

...Uhm

Since Mana got raped by me yesterday...

She's been forced to have sex with an amazing frequency...

She has climaxed from sex several times...

She's been developed by the sense of sex at an amazing speed.

「...However, Mana-chan」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Mana.

「You must never ask more than one from him...!」

The smile in Mana's face disappears.

「Eh...Why?」



「...When women think that there's a partner that she can have sex anytime anywhere...their face loosens. They'll look vulgar...」

Katsuko-nee explains...

「Look...people who have eaten a lot and filled their stomach are happy, but their expression is loose, right? And when they do that everyday...they'll get fat and look disgusting...」

「...Un」

Did she imagine it? Mana's face turned dark.

「It's the same in sex...if you get too satisfied everyday...your mind and body will loosen so much that you'll become helpless」

...I see.

It's not good how to feel sex easily.

...Let's be careful

「But...just like how people die when they don't eat their meals everyday...sex is also important Therefore...I decided to have sex with him at least once a day...!」

True...

I'm not having that much sex with Katsuko-nee.

「Of course...Actually I want to be loved by him more. Throw out everything and have him in the bed all day. I do my best to have sex at least once a day holding such emotions...! But still, I'll take chances, feel refreshed, and feel very loved by him...I can go back to work with a happy feeling...!」

Katsuko-nee kisses me...

「...Am I useful to Katsuko-nee?」

When I ask her...

「I'm alive because you're here with me...!」

Saying that...she hugged me sweetly...

「It is as Mana-chan knows...This person will never refuse whatever his『women』ask him. He'll do it as many times until his『woman』gets satisfied...

That's why us『women』have to suppress our desires...」

Mana's listening to Katsuko-nee seriously.

「Got it...But」

Mana said.

「If Onii-chan wants to have sex with Mana...then that's fine isn't it?」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「That's right! That's why make an effort to be charming as always so he'll ask by himself. Mana-chan will change to a『good woman』with that kind of tension!」

「Yes...I'll do my best!」

Mana answers...

「You too...promise me. If you feel our charm, then don't hold back, ask for it anytime anywhere...!」

...I

「...Got it」

If Mana becomes an attractive girl by appealing to me...

「It's really anytime anywhere...Mana will have sex with Onii-chan if he asks for it even on a crowded train...!」

Mana looks up at me with moist eyes...

「Or rather, I want to do that. In the toilet of a hamburger shop...or on a lobby of a live concert...!」

...Mana

Your delusions are leaking out...

「I see...in that case, I should think on how to make Onii-chan feel aroused by my body...!」

「Right?...Your aim is to practice to become a charming woman, isn't it?」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Mana.

「Yes...Katsuko-sensei!」

Mana smiles back at Katsuko-nee...



「...Take it off」

Katsuko-nee thrust out her chest in front of me.

I swallow my saliva instinctively.

「...The hook is behind」

I reached for it.

Then removed the hook...

The huge lump of meat wrapped in her bra...

Spills out bursting...!

Her pink colored nipple is already sharp erect.

「...Ufufu」

Katsuko-nee then took off her panty in front of me watching her.

The lewd smell drifts in the shower room.

She's already wet.

「Onii-chan...me too」

Mana jumps to me.

I...

Took off Mana's baby bra by rolling it up.

「I'll be the one to strip Onii-chan」

Mana's small hands slides down my brief.

My erect penis comes in front of Mana's face.

「Un...that's really energetic, so cute!」

Mana strokes my glans.

Meanwhile...Katsuko-nee takes the shower and adjusts the temperature.

「...Please come here. Customer」

Katsuko-nee goes back to her『soap play』

「...Is it hot?」

Saying that...she sprinkles hot water to my body.

「It's okay to touch my body you know...~」

Katsuko-nee speaks to me with her aroused eyes.

「...Un」

I reach out for Katsuko-nee's huge breasts.

I wanted to touch this since earlier...

Munyumunyu...this soft lump of flesh.

I can tell that it responds bouncily...

This is so big and yet it's not sagging.

She's doing muscle training so it won't hang down...

...Also.

Katsuko-nee's still 21 years old.

Even her skin is so young that it flicks water.

「...Do you like my breasts?」

「...Yeah」

I put her nipple washed with hot water in my mouth.

I lick it up...

I suck it...

「Ahn!...It feels good!」

Katsuko-nee is pleased with my caress on her nipples...

「M-me too...touch me」

Mana pushes her own breasts against me.

Compared to Katsuko-nee, she hasn't developed yet...

It's a plump swell that's suitable for a 14 year old girl.

Her nipple is still buried under her areola.

「Isn't it about time we let this out from Mana-chan?」

Katsuko-nee smiles suspiciously.

「Can you do that?!」

Mana shouts to Katsuko-nee instinctively...

She had a lot of chances to compare her body to Megu and Misuzu...

As expected, she's a bit worried about it

「Yes...you just need to have the customer lick and suck it out」

Hearing Katsuko-nee...Mana looks up at me.

「...Please, customer. Please take out Mana's hidden nipple with all your power...!」

... I

Sat down leaning on the wall of the shower room then place Mana on top of my knee.

Mana's cute breast is in front of me.

「Customer, please suck it as much as you want and stimulate these nipples」

Katsuko-nee tells me.

「Mana-chan...imagine it being sucked out. Imagine that your nipples are going to jump out...」

I crawl my tongue on Mana's chest.

There's definitely a stiff part inside her areola.

I suck that out...

「Ah...Ahn! Onii-chan!」

Then her other areola with my fingers...

This hard feeling...it's like a finger cushion...!

「Uwa!...Ahn! Aaaah...!」

Mana twists her body in pleasure...!

...Before long.

There's a puffed nipple in the middle of her pink areola...

It's as if a bud coming out...

It's appearing.

「Mana...Your nipple's coming out...!」

I tell her...

「...It's true. Mana got an adult breasts now!」

I roll her nipple with my tongue.

「Iyan! That tickles...!」

「Then...should we stop?」

Mana...

「No...more, lick it more...Onii-chan!」

I suck out Mana's nipple that just touched the fresh air!

「Ahn! This is good...it feels good!」

Mana twists her body in pleasure...!

「...My other breast too...Onii-chan, suck my nipple out!」

「Yeah...!」

I suck her other nipple...!

I dig it with the tip of my tongue.

Suck it with my lips...!

I massage her whole breast with my hand...

I keep stimulating it so that her nipple would come out.

「Mana-chan, imagine it...your nipples come up and big...now」

Katsuko-nee's words is being imagined inside Mana's head.

「...aaah! Aaaaahn...it's coming out...it's coming out! My breasts...!」

...Then

Her other nipple comes out of her breasts!

I immediately suck it!

「Aaah...It feels good! More, suck it...lick it!!!」

Mana writhes!

「Do this everyday Onii-chan! Suck out Mana's breasts! Then, Mana's boobs will grow bigger...!」

「Yeah...I'll suck it out everyday!」

「...I'm glad!」

Katsuko-nee also brings her face to Mana's chest.

「...I will be licking the lonely nipple~!」

Katsuko-nee's tongue attacks Mana's nipple!

「No way!...What's this!」

Mana screams from Katsuko-nee's technique!

「Take a look closely...in the past, Nagisa and I comfort each other during the painful nights...!」

Katsuko-nee's also good with lesbian techniques!

Not just her tongue but even the side and back side of it...

Katsuko-nee's teasing Mana's nipples...!

「...Aaaaaaah!」

The 14 year old girl feels intensely satisfied.

「Got it...like this?」

I copy Katsuko-nee and suck the other nipple.

「Noooo...don't suck both nipples at the same timee~!!!」

Mana's leaking out hot breaths.

「It feels good!...I love youuuu! Onii-chan and Katsuko-san, I love you twooo...!」

Katsuko-nee stretches her hand towards Mana's crotch...!

「...Hyaaaaan!」

Mana raised her voice as her vagina is being touched while both her nipples is being licked at the same time...

「Isn't this wet already?...Mana-chan's a lewd child...!」

「I'm lewd...Mana is a lewd girl...I'm sorry...!...I'm sorry...!」

Mana's crying from the pleasure...!

...I

「...Ufufu, you want to do it?」

Katsuko-nee looks at me and smiles kindly.

「...un」

My erection is on the maximum level.

「Then, tell Mana-chan...!」

Mana...is breathing roughly, panting while her vagina is being teased by Katsuko-nee.

「Mana...I want to connect with you...!」

I tell Mana.

「...I'm glad. Mana can't hold back her desire to be violated by Onii-chan anymore...!」

Mana lays down on the tile floor of the shower room.  
She spreads out her legs...

「Wait...it's a soap play tonight...」

Katsuko-nee...applies body soap in my body and Mana's body.  
Katsuko-nee's delicate hand spreads and turn our body slimy.

「Okay...we're done」

Then I play my glans on Mana's vagina.  
Just from that...the love nectar from inside drips outside.

「...Mana, here I go!」

「...Violate me! I want to be fucked by Onii-chan!」

Mana asks for insertion while shedding tears!  
What a cute 14 year old girl!  
...I

I push my glans inside her hot and moist womb!

「...Auu! It's coming in!」

My meat stick is being swallowed by Mana's small body!  
...It feels good.

「Sorry...I can't hold back anymore!」

I embrace Mana's body...



Then move my waist violently!

「Don't mind me...do what you want Onii-chan! I want to be violated! Mana wants to be violated by Onii-chan violently!」

The slimy feeling of the body soap feels good.  
The feeling of Mana's breasts...  
I can feel it with my naked chest.  
Her exposed nipples...  
Is rubbed again and again...!!!

「Ah!...Aaaaahn! it feels good...! Why...! Why does it feel so good when Onii-chan rapes me!」

Mana's hot vagina is wrapping me hotly...!  
This young girls body only I know.  
This girl whom I robbed virginity off and made my woman.  
The bud of a second year middle school girl who doesn't know anything...  
In just two days...it was forced to bloom as a『woman』...!

「...Aah! I love you! I love you! Onii-chan...My Onii-chan!!!」

We're having intense sex while our slimy body creates bubbles...!

「...It's about time I join too!」

Katsuko-nee fills her body with body soap.  
Her breasts and stomach is covered in bubbles...!

「...Let's have a sandwich」

Then, she embraces my back...!  
...W-What's this!?  
Mana's under me.  
I can feel Mana's young body in my chest.  
Katsuko-nee's behind my body.  
I can feel Katsuko-nee's nice body in my back.

「...Mana-san, does it hurt?」

Katsuko-nee asks Mana.

「...I'm fine」

I'm deeply inside Mana...  
But, I'm supporting my body with my arms so I won't put weight on Mana.

「That's okay...don't move dear」

Katsuko-nee whispers to me.

「...I will be the one moving」

Katsuko-nee clings to my back...  
She's pressing her crotch on my ass!  
As a reaction...My penis goes deep inside Mana!

「...Aaahn!」

Mana pants...!  
Once again...Katsuko-nee's uses her waist!  
...Gui!

「...Hiii!」

I'm not doing anything...  
Katsuko-nee's forcing me to piston.  
...It feels strange.  
Even though I'm the one who should be violating Mana...  
I feel like I'm being violated by Katsuko-nee...

「...Isn't this great?」

Katsuko-nee whispers to me.

「Yeah, it feels really good」

...Gui~!  
Katsuko-nee's crotch pushes my ass!  
The tip of my penis reaches Mana's uterus...!  
Then...the feeling of being wrapped by two different types of female body.  
It feels extremely good.

「Ufufu...I'll make you feel better」

Katsuko-nee rubs her rich breast on my back...  
She puts her hand on the part that connects us.

「...Do you like this?」

Katsuko-nee touches the root of the penis connected to Mana.  
She crawls her fingers on my balls as well.

「...Mana-chan too」

Furthermore, on Mana's clitoris too...

「Aaaaah! No! Don't touch me theree~!!」

Mana's panting greatly!

「Mana-chan...it's about time you want semen in your stomach right/」

Katsuko-nee whispers to Mana.

「...I want it, I want it! Don't tease mee~!」

「Then...beg for it!」

Mana screams!

「...Onii-chan! I want Onii-chan's semen! I want my stomach...deep inside my womb to be filled! Please fill up my belly...!!」

Mana's screams lewdly...  
I'm aroused intensely!

「Katsuko-nee...let go...! I want to bang her a lot! I want to pierce her deep...I want to ejaculate inside Mana!」

I move my waist.  
But, Katsuko-nee's body is sticking tightly...  
I can't piston intensely...  
I can't ejaculate if this continues!

「...Katsuko-nee, please!」

Then...Katsuko-nee.

「...There's a way for you to ejaculate even if you don't move your waist that hard...!」

...Eh?  
Katsuko-nee's long fingertips...

Touches my anus...

「...There's a switch for ejaculation here」

...Jupori~

Her finger filled with slimy bubbles...

Enters my anus...

「...Ufufufu」

Katsuko-nee touched a point inside my anus.

「...Uwaaaaaaaaa!」

...At that moment!

Like a water pipe bursting...!

My semen spurts inside Mana's womb instantly!!!

「...Hoooooott!!!」

Mana feels the man's hot liquid in the deepest part of her body.

「...Okay, you can now move as you want!」

At the moment Katsuko-nee pulls out her finger from my anus...!

I thrust my waist inside Mana like crazy...!

To release all of my semen...

To reach Mana's womb...!

「What should I do...I'm being violated again...defiled again...!」

Mana's accepting it...embracing me tightly...!

「I'm in middle school...14 years old...and yet!」

...Dokudoku.

The ejaculation doesn't stop...

「Mana has become Onii-chan's『woman』...My body is turned to a『woman』!!!」

Mana is drowning...

from the pleasure of being violated...!

---



## 175. Naked Question and Answer

---

「...Sorry, I didn't make Mana cum」

I tell Mana while breathing roughly.

My penis is still inside Mana.

There's semen and love nectar coming out of the connecting part.

「Don't mind it...Mana wants Onii-chan to feel good」

Mana kisses me after saying that.

「Rather than that...Thank you for making Mana's nipples adult!」

Mana's nipples is coming out plump erect.

I lick up her nipple.

「Ahn! It feels good! So nipples can feel this much...!」

Mana happily smiled...!

「Next would be my turn」

Katsuko-nee whispers in my ear.

「Feel refreshed after cumming once, right? Let's enjoy ourselves on the second round」

「Ah, Katsuko-san that's cheating!」

Mana speaks to Katsuko-nee from below me.

「The pleasures on the first and second round are different. The first round's semen is very thing so women desires it inside soon, then the fire will ignite like fireworks. For the second round, you can spend some time relaxing and enjoying sex after ejaculating once」

...I see

「Mana-chan...which do you like?」

Mana answers.

「...Both」

「Well, Mana-chan's greedy」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

I pull my penis from Mana.

「Wait, Onii-chan...!」

Mana gets up and fills her mouth with my penis.

「You let out for Mana's sake...Mana will be cleaning it up properly!」

The fourteen year old is sucking out the semen remaining in my urethra.  
She licks up my glans with her tongue.

「...Mana, used to doing fellatio already?」

When I ask her...

「Sorry...I'm not good at it, aren't I?」

...Mana.

「I'll get good with it so please don't abandon Mana」

I pat Mana's head.

「I won't...you're so cute after all」

Mana smiles

「I'm Yoshida Mana...Onii-chan's『sex slave』 It's Mana's job to make Onii-chan feel good...!」

Mana sucks my penis...

Then, she opens her legs to an M shape...

「Look...Onii-chan's stuff is coming out...」

My semen is dripping from the gap in Mana's vagina.

I ejaculated this much inside this vagina of a middle school girl.

「Really...I'm envious of Mana-chan」

Katsuko-nee said.

「You're always so kind to Mana-chan...」

Eh...I'm kind?

Even though I raped this middle school girl so many times?

「That's right, Katsuko-san! I think so too! Onii-chan really treasures Mana! Just like a treasure...!」

Mana touches the『宝』tattoo in her lower abdomen.

「Well...Mana knows that she's being loved as a『sister』or a『pet』...not as a『woman』...!」

Mana looks up at me...

「But, I'm glad...Mana knows that Onii-chan will come to help Mana anytime. I won't forget it」

...Mana

「I like Onii-chan...I love you. I'll be devoting myself to you forever!」  
「Even I like Mana」

I squat and match my eyesight with Mana.

「I do think of Mana as my『woman』」

Then...Mana

「Then, please be more strict with Mana...!」

Mana's eyes were serious.

「I'm very conceited. Onii-chan, you can beat this dumb me you know. No... you can hit and even kick me」

Mana holds my hand.

「It's not just me...even if it's unrelated to me, if Onii-chan feels irritated or angry...you can always hit Mana... It's okay. You can do anything. Then...when you feel horny, then you can always violate me. I want to be Onii-chan's outlet for sex...」

Mana said with moist eyes.

「I want to be a necessary tool for Onii-chan's daily life. I'd want you to use



Mana's body right when you want it. Mana will always be with Onii-chan...!」

...I

I embrace Mana's body.

「Are you that worried...?」

Mana's a smart girl.

She knows it.

Her father will be socially ruined.

Shirasaka house is fated to ruin.

Mana doesn't have anywhere to go back to.

She can't go back to her normal life.

Mana...only has the option of staying by my side.

「Because...I don't have confidence in myself」

Mana cries.

「I...I'm much younger than everyone...I'm conceited and foolish...」

...Mana

「I'll really do anything! I'll do anything so please...don't abandon me...don't throw me away...!」

Mana prostates herself.

Just how many times Mana have done this naked dogeza?

However...this is her first time to kneel in front of me.

「Mana...you can't trust me?」

I said kindly.

「That's not...true」

Mana said with teary eyes.

「I do trust Onii-chan...but, Mana can't trust herself. I'm scared...I'm scared that I might betray Onii-chan again...!」

Mana answered honestly.

「That's because Mana-chan hasn't turned to a『sex slave』from the bottom of her heart yet...!」

Katsuko-nee said.

「...Katsuko-san」

Mana looks at Katsuko-nee...

「You haven't despaired yet so you can't see hope either. Try closing your eyes」

Mana closes her eyes.

「...Remember the house you've lived so far, do you think you can come back there?」

「...I don't」

「Then despair...throw it away from your head」

「...Yes」

Mana's voice relaxes.

「Remember the people who were your friends in the school as Shirasaka Maika」

「...Yes」

「Can you go back to those people?」

「...I can't」

「Then despair from it...then throw it out of your head」

「...Got it」

Katsuko-nee tells Mana

「What's remaining in your head now...?」

「...Onii-chan and I」

「Nobody else」

「...Yes, nobody else」

...H-Hey

「Mana...don't you have Yukino and Megu left?」

Mana answers with her eyes closed.

「Yukino-san...is an『enemy』 That person is unrelated」

The feeling of abandoning Shirasaka family...has been transformed to a fierce

hostility against Yukino.

「Megu-oneechan is a good person but she's the same as me...」

「...The same?」

「Onii-chan is her first...if ever we get in a situation where she has to pick from one of us, she'll definitely save Onii-chan. Then she'll abandon me...」

This topic has been touched before.

Who will you save and who will you abandon...

「That said, I don't hate Megu-oneechan...I do like Megu-oneechan. However...we're on the same stand point. We're rivals so I can't lose」

Mana said.

「Then...what's left in Mana-chan's head is Mana-chan herself and him, right?」

Katsuko-nee confirms.

「Yes...that's right」

Katsuko-nee smiles then tells Mana.

「Then, last question...if you and him were poisoned by the enemy, and there's only one antidote, what will you do?」

「...That is」

Mana hesitates to speak.

「Will you drink the antidote yourself or will you give it to him?」

Mana's filled with thoughts...

「What about you?」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「I'll let Mana drink it」

I answered immediately.

「But...that means that you will die」

「It can't be helped. Mana's survival is much better than mine」

I think so.

「That said, if I decide to kill Mana...I think I'll regret it for the rest of my life」

Katsuko-nee smiles at me.

「Right. You're that kind of person that's why I love you」

...Katsuko-nee

「Close your eyes too」

As told by Katsuko-nee...I close my eyes.

「I'll ask another question...suddenly, the school is under attack by Cesario Viola...and there's a secret rocket can be used for emergency escape. Decide the order of people coming inside the rocket」

Oh...The『priority order』?

Minaho-neesan did this the other day...

No...But I myself want to know my current priority.

「...Who will you put inside the rocket first?」

「...Nei-san」

I answered immediately

「...Next?」

「...Mana」

「Me...?」

Mana speaks out in surprise.

「Un...Mana's the youngest so I have to protect her」

「T-Thank you」

Mana said bashfully

「Next would be Megu...Megu is someone that has to be protected, Mana and Megu have to sit next to each other...」

「...Onii-chan, why?」

「Eh...Because Mana's not used to anyone else yet. Isn't Megu taking care of being close to Mana? Minaho-neesan and others allows it too...!」

「...I-Is that so?」

What...you didn't notice?

Well...even I think that it's unexpected.

「Next would be Michi...that girl is strong but I'm always worried that she'll slip off. I think she should go ahead」

...Un

When I postpone it, I'm likely to miss it.

「After that...Minaho-neesan. As expected...Minaho-neesan is everyone's leader so she has to get on ahead. Next would be Katsuko-nee...sorry that you're on the later」

Katsuko-nee laughs.

「It's okay, don't mind it...」

Err...Nagisa's not here so exclude her...

「After that, Margo-san...and then Yukino」

Mana's surprised.

「...Yukino-san? Onii-chan is taking Yukino-san?」

「Isn't that obvious? I can't just leave Yukino in a dangerous place that's attacked by Cesario Viola」

Un...That's just too pitiful

「Then...I'll be the last」

That's the end of my priorities

「Then...if ever the capacity of the escape rocket is exceeded and you need to take out one person...who will you drop?」

Katsuko-nee asks me.

「I'll get off」

This is also an immediately answer.

「Why Onii-chan...if you remain you'll get killed!」

...I

「No...well, I'm the most unneeded in among these people」

Un...there's no need to worry

「Minaho-neesan is the leader...Margo-san is on the combat staff...Katsuko-nee can do a lot of things...Michi can be trusted with her fighting power...Nei-san is obviously the one that must be protected...Mana, Megu, and Yukino have to be saved. Aren't I the only one that's allowed to die...!」

A warm and rich body embraces my body who's keeping eyes closed.

「Don't...you must never die...!」

...Katsuko-nee?

「Mana-chan...he's that kind of person...!」

Katsuko-nee's voice is shaking...

I open my eyes.

Katsuko-nee is crying.

「What's wrong...Katsuko-nee?」

I don't understand the meaning of her tears

「I won't let you die...after all, I'll make you happy...!」

Hearing the trembling voice...Mana

「...Katsuko-san, I understand now」

A calm voice echoes smoothly.

「The words Katsuko-san said...that I haven't『despaired』yet, I understand it now...!」

...Mana?

「I have to kill myself in my own head and throw it away...!」

「Then...what's left?」

Katsuko-nee asks.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana opens her eyes and look up at me.

「Mana's head doesn't have anyone but Onii-chan」

The 14 year old naked beauty looks up at me.

「...How is it, scary? Mana-chan?」

「No...It's not scary. Onii-chan is here with me after all...!」

Then...Mana hugs me.

「...Let's be together forever, Onii-chan. Mana will also make Onii-chan happy...!」

...I

I'm being embraced by a beautiful lady and a beautiful girl...



「It's fine...lie down」

This time, I lie down on the tile floors of the shower room.

「Is it cold? Mana will shower you then...!」

Mana sprinkles hot water on me.

Meanwhile...Katsuko-nee's giving my penis a fellatio.

「Un...this is delicious...Dear」

Mana stands right above me.

Then...she squats and brought her crotch close to me.

「Onii-chan...Look at Mana's pussy」

Mana's vagina is a bit swollen from two days of abuse.

There's love nectar coming out from the gap...

「Look...Onii-chan made Mana a『woman』」

Mana opens her own slit.

Her meat hole opens.

Then semen spills out...

Mana's small clitoris is shining like a red ruby.

「Mana...put the shower there」

When I say that...

「Like this?」

Mana pushes the showerhead to her vagina

「Ahn...it feels good!」

The young middle school flesh pants in front of me.

「...Ufufu, it looks like it's good to go」

Katsuko-nee releases my penis from her mouth

「Well then...Itadakimasu!」

Katsuko-nee straddles over my body.

My penis is swallowed by a fascinating adult place!

「Ahn...I've wanted this all this time!」

Katsuko-nee trembles in pleasure.

「...Unnnn ! Un ! Uuuun!!」

She slowly shakes her body on top of mine...

「Mana...move aside...I'll make love with Katsuko-nee properly」

「Un...got it!」

Mana separates from me...!

Then I look up at Katsuko-nee's face.

We're having sex on a cowgirl position.

「How is it...does it feel good?」

「Yeah...It feels really good, Katsuko-nee」

Katsuko-nee's vagina...

It's completely different from Megu, Misuzu, or Mana.

It's a 21 years old adult vagina.

Furthermore...it's trained.

「...This is for you」

Katsuko-nee says while swaying her waist.

「Can I think that this is all for your sake?」

...Katsuko-nee

「...The past five years...my life as a prostitute...was for the sake of making you feel good...!」



Katsuko-nee's plump bust sways along with the movement of her waist.

「This technique...this body...I polished all of it only to please you...!」

Katsuko-nee...twists her waist then squeezes my penis inside her vagina...!

「Can I think like that?...I'd want to think that this is all for your sake...!」

...I

「Yeah...you're right. Everything...was necessary for us to meet!」

I grab Katsuko-nee's rich breasts from the bottom with both of my hands...  
and massage it!

「Ah...that's great! It feels greaaaaat!!!!」

Katsuko-nee pants in delight...!

The movement of her waist increases violently...!

「I...Katsuko...was born to be embraced by you...!」

...Katsuko-nee.

「My body and mind...everything is yours! Use it!」

「Yeah...I'll accept all of it!」

I massage Katsuko-nee's breasts!

「I'm happy! I love you! I love yo!...I love you dear!!!!」

Katsuko-nee...!

Katsuko-nee's body is shining in sweat...

...Beautiful

It's very sexy...

Very lewd...

What a lewd body.

...Aaaaah!?

I feel something in my feet.

Looking at it...Mana?!

Mana's licking my feet!!!!

「Onii-chan...I will serve you!」

Mana's licking between my toe fingers.

She's licking it with her small tongue.

It's a bit ticklish...and thrilling

...It feels good.

「You did this to Mana before right? That's why it's Mana's turn now...!」

...Mana

I feel shivering pleasure in my feet...

And I feel raw pleasure in my waist.

My naked glans rubs Katsuko-nee's vagina...!

...I'm being stimulated!!!

「...Aaaaah, aaah, aaah!」

I instinctively leak out my voice from the pleasure.

My whole body sweats.

Katsuko-nee is the same.

「Ah...aaaaaaah...I...am about to...dear...」

「...Katsuko-nee...me too...!」

The waist movement goes full throttle!

Katsuko-nee dances violently...!

She's bouncing on top of my body!!!

「...Aaaah, good...it's coming...it's about to come...aaaaahn...aaaaaaaah!」

Gradually...the pleasure approaches Katsuko-nee.

「...Uuuu...Ahan...Ah, it's here...it's coming...it's comiiiiing...!!!」

Then...Katsuko-nee's body tightens!

She's sucking me in!!!

「...Cum...coming...aaaaaaah!It's now! Right now! It's coming! I'm coming!...  
Cumiiiiiiiing!!!」

...M-Me too

「...I'm cumming!!!」

「It's coming out!! Now! It's coming now!...Cumiiiiiiiingggg!!!」

...Byukukukuku!

...Byukukukuku!

...Dopu!!!!

「...Aaaaaaaaah!!!」

Katsuko-nee reaches climax from the burning feeling in her womb...!!!

「Haa...haa...haa...haa」

...Before long

Katsuko-nee fell over my body, exhausted, breathing heavily.

「...Onii-chan, good work!」

Mana kisses me crawling on all fours...

...Oh

I let it all out.

...I'm used up.

「...Mana, I want to drink something」

When I say that

「Wait, I'll bring something from the kitchen...!」

Then we left the shower room naked.

---

---

## 176. Women at Night

---

Mana brought over a bottled water...  
The three of us drink—  
The 500 mL bottle...in turns  
I thought why not bring a bottle for everyone at first but...  
I see...it's much more intimate drinking like this...

「Oh...that feels refreshing. Thanks」

Two rounds in the shower room...  
I thought I'd die from dehydration...

「Ehehe」

The naked Mana smiles innocently...  
Looking at her like this, she's really cute.  
I can't believe I ejaculated inside this small girl's vagina again and again.

「Mana-chan, want to wash your head?」

Katsuko-nee asks Mana.

「Do we have a dryer here?」  
「Of course we do」  
「Then I will!」

Speaking of which...we didn't wash our heads last night.

「Okay...I'll wash it」  
「Yay~!」

Mana comes to me happily.  
Then I wash Mana's hair...  
After that, I also washed Katsuko-nee's hair.

「...You're really diligent」

Katsuko-nee says.

「Usually, you should massage our boobs and touch our but while washing our hair...!」

「Eh...you want it?」

When I asked...

「Idiot...you can always touch us anytime! You don't have to mind us」

「That's right...our body is all for Onii-chan after all!」

Mana smiles.

After that...the two washed my hair.



「...Done having sex?」

Coming out of the shower room...Nei-san gathers information in the internet by herself.

「Yes...I feel refreshed now」

Katsuko-nee on her bathrobe and towel on her head looks at Nei-san's monitor.

「Any changes?」

「Hm?...None in particular. The defenders of Shirasaka house are writing as usual but even before I write something, he gets crushed down by others. The internet opinion seems to have decided that 『Shirasaka family is an enemy of Japan』...!」

Haa...is that so?

「What about the outside...? The alarms are all working aren't they?」

Katsuko-nee looks at another monitor.

「No need to worry there, I check it from time to time. Even if they deceive the sensor, I don't think they'll be able to breakthrough...also」

Nei-san points at one of the monitors.

Kudou papa is taking it easy in front of the bonfire.

「Those people...it's not just the people we see right now. At least, there's five

more people I think. These people are making rounds at school regularly. They're in the blind spots of the camera so I don't know their faces though...」

...As expected.

Kudou papa's『guard division』, or rather『Kudou Detective office』has more members.

Kudou-papa and Tony-san and Noma-san...are just the ones making contact with the Kouzuki security service...and there's a number of professional in the underground with fake identities.

「Thank you very much, Nei-sama...I will dry my hair and change immediately」  
「Un, okay」

Katsuko-nee looks at Mana.

「Mana-chan, come over here...I'll dry your hair」  
「Okaay」

Mana is also wearing an adult bathrobe like Katsuko-nee.  
We're still on a state of alert in the monitoring room so if you walk around naked, this happens.  
But...the bathrobe is too big for her.  
Mana...it's open, your breasts are exposed you know.  
No...she's showing it on purpose?

「Mana-chan, how many times did you do it?」

Nei-san asks Mana laughingly.

「One for each of us both! Mana has a lot of semen in her stomach now」

Yukino who's chained up lying down on the floor gets up slowly.  
Then, she glares at Mana.  
...Are you a zoo lion?

「It felt really good! Onii-chan I love you!」

Mana notices Yukino then shouts in a loud voice.

「Mana-chan, don't be too loud...sensei's sleeping」  
「...Ah, sorry」

Looking at it...Minaho-neesan is lying down in the only bed in the room with

her clothes on.

She's sleeping...

「I suggested that she should take a nap...Sensei's been straining herself all this time...!」

Her sister...Naomi-san's death, her last card...

Kouzuki『Kakka's』full cooperation...

No matter how much Shirasaka family tries to counterattack...Kouzuki『Kakka』controls most of the mass media.

No...even the police and justice.

In the first place,『Kakka』has already began the internal division on Shirasaka family which is our enemy.

Minaho-neesan too...her strained feelings turned relaxed.

She's sleeping calmly now.

「...Apart from the internet world, the general world won't be moving unless it's morning. I'm only scared of a surprise attack here but...Kudou-san is watching over」

Katsuko-nee says.

「Mana-chan, let's dry your hair in the kitchen so Ojou-sama won't wake up from the sound of the dryer」

「Okay」

Katsuko-nee brings the dryer and leaves the room with Mana.

...Then

「Ah, I'm glad...Yoshi-kun help me out」

Megu seems to be holding something heavy with both hands coming up from the basement stairs.

「Eh, what?」

Megu puts the luggage in front of me.

「Air mat...we're all going to sleep in this room, right?」

Oh...it's the thing that's sold on discount stores.

It has an air pump built inside.

「I thought the proper bed should be used by the people napping...」

Un...after this, Katsuko-nee, Margo-san and, Minaho-neesan will be monitoring until morning.

True...the people napping should be able to sleep soundly in a proper bed.

「As expected...this place isn't supposed to keep a lot of people for stay. The space the air mat can extend is also limited, it seems that only two to three people can sleep in one mat」

Megu said.

A set of mat...Megu, Nei-san, Mana, Michi, and I...

...What about Yukino?

「...How many mats are there?」

「Just two...also, we had this」

What Megu took out is...I've seen something similar in the mansion's bathroom.

Perhaps...it's a soapland air mat.

Since it doesn't have an electric pump built in...you can only use hands to put air in it.

「...Un, let's have Yukino use this」

Since it's small...she can sleep alone there.

「Megu...do you have a pump for this?」

「Err, there's a bicycle pump down」

「Then, I'll inflate it with that」

「...Yoshi-kun will do it? For Yukino's sake?」

Megu looks at me.

...I

「It can't be helped...she won't do it herself either way」

I look at Yukino on the edge of the dark room.

As usual, she's sluggish like a lion.

...She's listening here.

「Her body will cool down if she sleeps on the floor directly, her body would



hurt in the morning」

...I

When I was living on the sofa...it's too hot during summer so I sleep on the floor.

The floor was cold, or rather, it stole my body temperature that I caught a cold. When I woke up, my body feels painful here and there...

I feel sorry to let Yukino experience that...

「Got it...I'll bring the air pump so Yoshi-kunm can you expand this air mat?」  
「...Roger」

Megu goes underground once again.

I...

「Nei-san...where's the outlet?」  
「Hmm...somewhere around that wall over there?」

...Oh there it is.

「Thanks」

I open the air mat package...  
Then connected it the outlet...switch on  
...Oooh  
The mat swells up in a blink of an eye.  
This is convenient.

「I brought it over」

Megu brings a bicycle pump.  
With this, we can put air on the soap land mat...  
This is quite troublesome...  
But it can't be helped.  
...I'm a man after all.

「...Okay, let's do this」

I connect it to the tube on the mat...  
Then sends air inside the mat.  
...Before long.

The mat is full somehow.

Haa...even though I just took a shower.

I got sweaty again.

「Hey, Yukino...sleep on this!」

I brought the mat to Yukino.

「T-Thanks」

Yukino answered in a small voice.

...But

Looking at her closely...isn't this a bit amazing?

Wearing the uniform I tore up...

Her breasts and ass is exposed...

She didn't wipe after our sex earlier this morning...

Her hair is completely unkempt too...

Un...the impression of a zoo lion is really correct.

...Ah, the curry I left is halved.

Yukino ate properly...

...There, there.

「Yoshi-kun...want to take shower together?」

Megu asks me.

「I got sweaty...」

...I

「No, it's fine...I just went in. I'll enter by tomorrow morning」

「R-Right...then, let's go in together tomorrow morning」

...Oh right

I did promise to have sex with Megu tomorrow morning...

「Rather than that...I want Yukino to take a shower too」

「...Eh?」

Megu's surprised.

「Because...doesn't she stink?」

The lion moves and glares at me...

「But...I don't want it. No way I'm going to shower with Yukino」

...Well yeah

Megu hates it.

Being on the shower alone with this lion.

...What should I do?

Should I bring her then?

...Then.

「...please leave the『prisoner's』treatment to me!」

Coming from the principal's office...Michi comes down saying that.

Margo-san's together with her.

Both of them are completely sweaty.

「Un...we're just about to take a shower」

Margo-san said while wiping her sweat with a towel.

「If the『prisoner』resists, is it okay to dislocate her bones? If you'd like, I can remove the joints in the neck...!」

...Michi

If you dislocate the neck joint...you'll die.

「Maru-chan, how was『Kudou style ancient martial arts』...」

Nei-san asks Margo-san.

「Un, It's very interesting...I can understand the will of the original creator. Also, the will of Kudou-san's father who arranged it further...!」

Margo-san looks at Michi.

「Far from concluding it...I think that Kudou-san's father turning Kudou-san independent at this stage is the right choice...」

「...What do you mean?」

Michi turns to Margo-san.

「The Kudou style your father has arranged...is not fit for Kudou-san」

Margo-san said laughing.

「Kudou-san's father is blessed with physique. Doesn't he exceed 180cm?」

「Yes...father's height is 185cm in documents. It's actually 183cm」

...Why is it different?

No, since it's Kudou papa, don't think about it deeply.

「Normal people would be on guard when such a big person comes near them...therefore, your father's tactic is to loosen the guard of the enemy by purposely joking around」

...I see

「I only watched the battle in the transmitted video recorder from Katsuko-san's car but...that's the case isn't it? Showing the gap to the opponent on purpose...it's a strategy of counterattacking when the enemy attacks」

「Yes...I think it's said to be simple」

「But...Kudou-san, it may be rude to say this but you're small. Also, you look very cute」

「I maybe small but I'm not cute」

「No, Michi's cute!」

I intervene without thinking.

「Un, it is as Yoshi-kun says. Kudou-san is very cute」

Megu also agrees.

「With your usual appearance, the enemy doesn't think that you're using an old martial arts...the enemy already loosens their guard from the start. No...they're underestimating you」

Margo-san says.

「Therefore, there's no need to do your father's『cheap tactics』 Or rather...it's meaningless. Rather, you should improve your other ability」

「...What ability?」

Michi's serious.

「The ability to certainly defeat the opponent with one blow... You don't have the weight, your arm strength is just small for your body. While the enemy's making light of you, you have to knock them down surely...if you attack the

other party and didn't collapse...the enemy will discover your ability and they'll fight with caution. Then...it'll be a match of physical strength. You currently don't have the stamina to continue attacking and enduring endlessly, do you?」  
「Even without stamina, I have guts!」

Michi responds...

「If you have the guts then you should acquire the effective techniques first!」

Margo-san's theory...turns Michi silent.

「True...It is as Margo-neesan says」

『Neesan』...?

Oh, Michi accepts Margo-san as her『Martial arts teacher』

「Think about how you can make a definite killing blow. I will think together with you」

「My best regards」

Michi bows obediently.

「Now, let's take a shower. Yoshida-kun, we can just wash this『animal』right?」

Margo-san said while looking at Yukino.

Yukino's looking standoffish.

「...Yes please」

「Got it」

Margo-san removes Yukino's chain clamped in a high position.

「Let's go!」

「If you make any strange moves, I'll beat you in the face...!」

Being taken by the two fighters...Yukino goes to the shower room nervously.

「Un...Maru-chan and Mii-chan are good friends」

Nei-san said happily.,

「Mareu-chan has been training alone...I do accompany her when it's calisthenics but, I can't do combat training」

I see.

Margo-san must be happy to have a younger sister.

「I think that's the same for Kudou-san. Isn't it great to have her trainn with someone other than her father?」

Megu said.

「Right?...It's about time Mii-chan reaches the age where she'll be disillusioned by her father's parody skills」

Eh...Nei-san?

「Mii-chan's in third year middle school right? Fifteen year olds don't know the 『Red rain in Berlin』or 『Waves of heavenly lightning flame』...」

N-Nei-san, do you know it?!

The true color of the 『Waves of heavenly lightning flame』!

「You're right. 『Red rain in Berlin』is quite...」

「M-Megu...you know it?」

When I ask it instinctively...

「Yo-chan...that's where you say『Do you know, Raiden?!』?」

...Nei-san?

What's Raiden?

「I've been a babysitter of a child of Shirasaka family before」

Megu said.

「Summer last year...father has asked me to do it. For one week, I stay as a babysitter on a member of Shirasaka house」

...H-Hmm.

「Then the father there had an awesome digital TV and a recorder and some new type machine...then『If our child grumbles, you can just let it watch the TV』...」

Oh...so there's that kind of parent.

「Then the child on that house...even though it's just six years old, it completely understands how to use the machine. It just keeps playing videos

even without me saying nor doing anything」

「Ah...I know that」

「Yes...the child chops multiple times while shouting『Red rain in Berliiiiiiiin』...!」

I don't get it but...

Is that a pro wrestler skill or something?

「As expected...I'm most shocked about Mongoru-man's『Nationality unknown』」

I don't get what Nei-san is talking about.

「You see...when I came back from Japan, a lot happened so Kyouko-san took me on Kouchi, on her family home for two months. Since I had a lot of free time, I read a lot of books in Kyouko-san's bookshelf. Kyouko-san loves the center of the five brothers. Therefore, there's Manga for boys and girls...!」

Haa...so that happened.

「For two months, I did nothing but read manga so I really read from one end to another」

Mana and Katsuko-nee comes back from the kitchen.

「Thank you for the wait...I'll take over」

Katsuko-nee sits in front of the monitor

「...By all means, Katsun!」

Nei-san seems to be tired from looking at the monitor all the time. She stretches herself.

「How about taking a shower?」

Katsuko-nee suggests...

「The shower room has Maru-chan, Mii-chan and the『animal』!」

「...『Animal』?」

Katsuko-nee turns around then she noticed that Yukino's not there.

「Oh...true, she certainly looks like an『animal』...!」

「Right right?...She looks like a circus bear!」

「...It's like『Josef』」

Mana jumps in the conversation.

「...What's『Josef』?」

She asks Nei-san.

「The one from『Haiji』」[「1.ほら.....『ハイジ』の」]

...Mana

Why are you so harsh on your sister...

「Un...I think you're right!」

Nei-san laughs.

「I miss『Haiji』 I brought it when I went to America. Kei-chan and I went to look for that Japanese thing...!」

Nei-san speaks nostalgically.

Margo-san, Michi, and Yukino comes out of the shower...

Margo-san and Michi are on their bathrobes.

There's quite a lot of bathrobes stocked up there.

...And yet.

Yukino's back on her torn uniform again...

No, she's not wearing a blouse under it...

She's wearing the uniform on her bare skin.

Of course, her embarrassing parts are still exposed.

「...I thought that Yoshida-kun would be pleased this way」

Margo-san said.

「He won't. Onii-chan's no longer interested looking at the naked body of that person!」

Mana said then clings to me.

Yukino's tied on chains again...

She lied down on her mat...

Somehow...she really looks like『Josef』

Katsuko-nee puts a towel so she won't get cold

「Then...the ladies will continue to watch so everyone please sleep」



Margo-san said.

「By the way...how are we going to sleep?」

Megu said.

There's two air mats

The one's going to sleep are...

Nei-san, Megu, Mana, Michi, and I...

「Nei-san and Onii-chan can go together」

Mana said.

「Megu-oneechan, Katsuko-san and I had sex with Onii-chan but Nei-san still haven't done it yet」

...Err

Mana doesn't know that Nei-san is a virgin.

「Kudou-san and I are small so we can sleep together with Megu-oneechan...」

True...it fits the size of the air mat.

「Yoshida-kun...we're concentrating on our work so spare us from starting sex in this room...!」

Margo-san laughs.

...Even though she knows that Nei-san and I didn't have sex yet.

「Oh, right, Onii-chan...if you want to do it with Nei-san, then go to the shower room or kitchen...」

...Mana

「You can use the principal's office above too」

...Katsuko-nee too

「...Maybe not for now, let's brush our teeth and sleep」

I said.

Then, Nei-san jumps to me...

「...Yo-chaaaaan~!」

The soft body embraces me tightly.

「Yo-chan dakimakura! Ufufu, so happy!」

Nei-san said happily...!

---

## 177. Nei's past (Part 1)

---

...Hmm?

...I woke up.

It's still dark...it must be still night...

...Huh?

There's a soft flesh in front of me...

...Nei-san.

Nei-san's awake...?!

Nei-san's staring at my face in the darkness...

...Beautiful

Nei-san's face...seems like an angel coming out of my dream...

Her big eyes...nose with a good shape...plump lips.

...It's really my ideal...

This must be a dream.

Inside my dream...I'm dreaming in a dream

...Un

I had that kind of dream for a while...

Mostly, I overslept and and is on the verge of being late...

Wake up, get up, change clothes, brush teeth...

That's all in a dream...

But...this Nei-san is really beautiful.

...Ah!

...She's crying.

Nei-san's looking at me.

Ha...!

At that moment...I completely woke up.

「...Nei-san?!」

Nei-san is really there.

「Ah...Sorry, did I wake you up?」

Saying that...she wipes her tears with the hem of her bathrobe instead of her pajama.

「...Uhm」

I don't know what to ask.

「...Can't sleep?」

I finally work out saying those words.

「Un...sorry」

Nei-san said.

「Thinking that because of me...everyone might be aimed at by Cesario Viola... somehow, I feel sorry」

Hearing Nei-san's words...Margo-san who's looking at the monitor turned around.

「Nei doesn't have to mind it. Cesario Viola is an enemy of the whole『Kuromori』」

It's in a low voice...different than the usual

「...Thanks, Maru-chan」

Nei-san's voice is different from usual  
Therefore...

I embrace Nei-san...

「...Yo-chan?」

「I...I'm here with you」

「...Un」

「I'll do anything for Nei-san's sake」

「...Thanks」

When I looked around the room...  
The video on the surveillance cameras outside is dark...  
A blue screen night vision is shining next to it.

As expected, it's still night.

「What time is it?」

I asked.

「3:30...!」

Margo-san said.

It seems that I feel asleep for two and a half hours...

My eyes got used to the darkness of this room...

Looking at the other air mat...

Megu is sleeping embracing Mana.

Mana's bathrobe is open and her breasts are exposed.

Michi...

Her sleeping posture is bad...

She's on the edge of the mat, still in it however...

Her bathrobe feels like it's only coiling her waistline and carried on her back...

She's almost naked...

She's not wearing an underwear but there's the leather armed case on her thighs...

Is this the taste of a warrior?

Are you always sticking weapon to your body so you can fight in an emergency situation?

But...what do you intend to do holding a weapon naked?

Hmm.

Yukino...as usual, she's sleeping like a lion in the zoo.

Turning her back against us, facing the wall...

Her plump naked butt is facing towards us.

Well fine...I want her to sleep properly.

Or rather, Yukino's amazing, she's able to sleep peacefully in this case.

She has a thick nerve like a rope used on mountain climbing after all...

I respect her in a sense.

Yukino's the only one who'll never commit suicide on whatever situation.

If she had such leisure then she'll surely complain it to someone else instead.

I think that is strong in a sense.

On the proper bed...Katsuko-nee's sleeping.

...Huh?

「...Where's Minaho-neesan?」

Where did she go?

「Minaho's preparing the attraction」

...Attraction?

「If this feeling continues all the time, her nerves will collapse...Minaho is preparing a 『conspiracy』for distraction...」

Minaho-neesan's『conspiracy』...?

Somehow, I'm getting bad vibes from it.

I'm sure I'll be made to do something again.

Well fine...

If that refreshes Minaho-neesan's mood.

「...Then, what's the current situation?」

I'd like to know what happened in the past three hours just in case.

「...Which one?」

Margo-san asks back.

「If it's Shirasaka house...the late night news are all reporting about the suspicion of murder of Shirasaka Sousuke. I can't tell you anything until the morning variety show begins but...Kouzuki-san has began to move...I think that Shirasaka house's power alone won't make it possible to overtake the public opinion. The conversation on the internet is roughly the same」

Un...no changes there.

「If it's about school attacks...Kudou-san stopped it」

...Eh?

Since when we were attacked?

「Rather than attack...they caught the opponent doing reconnaissance and tied them up...then they played rocket fireworks towards those guys. It was just earlier...」

...What are they doing?

As usual...those people.

「Then, the main unit came to rescue the scouts and all of them were knocked out by Kudou-san. His subordinates are interesting. There's one blowing fire from his mouth」

「...Is that a man or a woman?」

「Of course it's a man」

Toni-san can blow fire.

Or rather, is blowing fire strong?

「There's two subordinates just making checks and only Kudou-san fights...is there a reason for that?」

Margo-san talks to herself...

「...Toni-san and Noma-san are just father's observers. They can defend themselves but they won't participate battles」

Michi gets up.

...So you're awake

「...Which group sent the『enemy』?」

Michi looks at Margo-san...

「Shirasaka house...they aim to capture Minaho and negotiate with Kouzuki-san to make a sink or swim reversal home-run...」

It was prevented by Kudou papa...

「They won't attack anymore, they're out of time. At 5o'clock, the news show will start. The reports from each television stations are already decided. They're even editing the image related to Shiraska Sousuke. If they attack now...and capture Minaho...wake up Kouzuki-san and negotiate, they'll need at least three hours If they're a decent underground organization, they'll give up and withdraw already」

「Are the opponents not a decent underground organization?」

Margo-san laughs.

「Those kind of guys will be taking the decent underground organization to a business trip. Whichever underground organization it is, they're connected to

the top brass. Those guys who lost their chance but still fight will just be a hindrance to others. In the first place, everyone doesn't want to oppose Kouzuki-san. They won't come to be dragged in it so they'll dispatch the deputy force to forestall it」

「In order not to make that kind of situation...I think that Kouzuki-sama has sent father in this place」

Michi said...

「At this time, Kouzuki-sama earns points from it, even though he's not asked, he dispatched his own『enforcement unit』 But, it would be annoying for multiple organizations who doesn't have the intention to unite be intervened. It would be hard to identify who's the enemy and who's the ally...」

...I see.

「Therefore...if Kouzuki-sama shows that the『guard division』is already moving...such interference from the people can be prevented」

「Could it be that the commotion in front of the『Konpeki style』rehearsal building...」

「Yes...of course it's a strategy. The famous daughters from distinguished families of Japan are there so guards are also gathered there. Father purposely show a fight to warn about the foreign criminal『Cesario Viola』and that 『Kuromori』is already escorted by the subordinates of Kouzuki-sama...!」

...Is that how it is?

「...Rather than that, Natou-sama」

Michi speaks to Nei-san.

「Could you tell me about Cesario Viola?」

.....Cesario Viola

「I've read the file about the crimes that man has caused. The information about Cesario Viola is too few. We don't have any images that can identify his face...we don't know his age, habit, preference. We need more personal information to profile his future behavior」

Nei-san laughs.



「...Cesario Viola? He's gay, just gay...and intelligent...!」

...Gay?

「Cesario Viola...Real Name, Fabiano Katu Italian American. Brought up by a soldier father, he spent his childhood in Okinawa and fluent in Japanese. Committed his first murder by 17 years old and became a resident of the underground society. By age 18, he became a boss of criminal groups mainly engaged in murder and violent crimes, then caused various brutal scandals, mainly in Los Angeles... That's all the information Kouzuki security service has. His photos are only when he was a boy in Okinawa」

Michi said.

「You do know that Cesario Viola has a hobby of disguising, right?」

Nei-san said.

「Yes...I've obtained such information」

「It's actually amazing...rather than hobby...it's his life work. He changes his appearance on the mood he has on that day. 『Today would be the first five minutes of the detective movie with Sylvester Stallone, like he's beaten to mud』or『The empty headed deputy officer next to the general that often comes from the war movies』or the『Weak hearted assistant of a former Nazi German mad scientist who's doing occult research』...you see. Mr. Viola will have his exclusive stylist and make up artist change his image exactly as he wants. It'll be done over and over again until it fits with his image. Therefore, there's a room where the useless strange clothes, props, beards, glasses, gathered in the costume rooms...」

...Hee

So he's that kind of person.

「You see...Viola issued a request saying『I'd like to be a boss of a criminal group doing murder』 The stylist was troubled to death. Mr. Viola is the setting himself so they don't know what to put on

「Then , what happened in the end?」

I asked instinctively...

「You see, after re-doing it dozens of times...wearing a Baltharino hat and a

double black suit, holding a cigar and hugging a black cat on the other hand...it's like a boss on an old criminal film, that's when he calmed down. In the end... Viola's image are all in the world of movies. I guess he wants to be a movie character. But still, not a leading role but a supporting role」

...A really strange man.

「Then there's a day where he had a very specific request. The hooligan shot by Charles Bronson in the bar on the movie『The magnificent Seven』 That one's easy, the makeup artist said. 『It's okay just to make it resemble』」

Nei-san...looks nostalgic.

But...her expression turned dark immediately.

「He goes to work with that disguise. It's mostly the murder scene」

That is...Cesario Viola.

「I don't know how that person got acquainted with Kei-chan and my parents. Perhaps...Cesario Viola didn't kill my parents for『work』 I think it was because of his『hobby』...」

...『Hobby』?

「Cesario Viola is able to speak Japanese...so he can skillfully make the businessmen going to America coming from Japan trust him. Therefore...I'm sure he said something good to my parents then took out our family...」

...Nei-san's family

「Me...father and mother...Kei-chan」

『Kei-chan』...

That is the name of Nei-san's lost twin brother.

I've seen the photo before...

It's a『handsome boy』that's similar to Nei-san who's an exceptional『beautiful girl』

Then...

Cesario Viola killed him...

Nei-san who spoke her lost brother's name...she breathes out

...Then.

Nei-san's story began.



What I remember...it was just a desert.  
There's a desert as soon as you leave Los Angeles.  
If you get taken there, you're already finished...  
No matter how much you shout, it's useless. There's nobody in the surrounding miles.

...Kei-chan and I were still elementary school students.  
I talked about Kei-chan didn't I?  
He's my twin brother...  
The two of us look completely alike...  
We have been always together before.  
We just came in US...we didn't have any friends yet...

My father works on a big food company in Japan.  
I don't remember it accurately but...it was a business on an American factory management, making a branch office on Los Angeles...  
Then...we went from Japan to Los Angeles.

Arriving at Los Angeles...I two weeks passed.  
It was just in time for vacation on Japanese schools...  
Kei-chan and I...have always been staying in the house where my father's company borrowed.  
...No  
We went to a party at night one time.  
I think it was a friendship party of father's company and the people in the local town.

That's probably when Cesario Viola set his eyes...  
Then...Viola took father's favor...  
We were taken to the desert...

My father's car is a white Lexus borrowed from the company.  
That car...had our family onboard...  
Viola was on a Honda Accord...a black and blue car.  
It wasn't just him but also his sister on board.

Then...we headed straight to the desert...  
Viola who's ahead of our car suddenly stopped.

Father also stopped the car...  
「What's wrong? Did your car break?」He asks Viola.  
Then...Viola steps out of the car laughing...

He has a black machine gun on his hand...  
Viola's sister also had a machine gun

Then...he said.  
「The two children, get off the car」...  
Mother desperately refused crying but...  
Viola's sister shoots the gun while screaming...

The car's side mirror crumbled away.  
Then, smoke raises from the sand of the desert where the bullet was shot...  
As if it was a scene from a movie...  
The blue sky clears up like a fool...  
The smoke and the yellow sand piles up like a joke...  
I...I was staring at a strange sight.

...After that.  
Cesario Viola Threatened father『Then, want to die as a whole family?』  
『You might be happier if you die right now though』...

Viola's sister said...  
...Therefore

『...It's okay, father, mother』  
Kei-chan said.  
『I'm sure it'll be fine...I'll manage somehow』

Then he looks at my face.  
『Let's go, Onee-chan』he said...  
Then...Kei-chan opens the back seat door with trembling hands...

Mother and father were:

「...Don't go out」

「...Stop!」

They try to stop us...

Kei-chan and I...

Went out of the car...

Viola smiles happily as if satisfied

Then he asked us to come to him...

Therefore, we...

Slowly walked towards Viola's car...

After that, Viola's sister grabbed us...

Then, click...

Kei-chan and I were handcuffed...

「I'll endure everything that's why please spare father, mother, and Onee-chan...!」

Kei-chan said.

Even though he's just a child...

Even though he's trembling...he muster up courage

And yet...

Viola...

「I can't let that happen...today I'm in the mood of a humanism movie. I want to see hard violence action」

「Is that so?...Isn't that good in American New Cinema?」

Viola's sister said.

「『We don't have tomorrow』?」

「...That's how it is!」

The two then shoot bullets...

To mother and father in the car...!!!!

Zubabababababa...!

The bullets showered like rain.

The burning smell of gunpowder...

The white body of the Lexus have the black holes increasing...!

The windshield scattered into pieces...  
The smell of blood...  
My father and mother inside the car...  
Both of them can't even scream...  
Their body danced in the rain of bullets...

Kei-chan and I...  
Were just watching the spectacle in fright...

...We can't do anything.  
We can't help father and mother...  
Even die together...

When the shoot all of the bullets in the magazine...  
Viola spoke to his sister.

「...Sprinkle gasoline and set it on fire」  
「...Okay, brother」

Viola's sister took out a gasoline container from the car...  
They sprinkled gasoline on the Lexus filled with holes.  
Then...they set it on fire.  
The car we were in just a while ago...  
The meat chunk that were father and mother until a while ago...  
It was set on fire...  
Making up a burning sound...black smoke rises up...  
The feverish heat stings the skin in my face...  
Kei-chan and I watched that...  
We watched, unable to cry.  
Because...it only happened in just a few minutes.  
Just a few minutes ago...both of my parents were alive...  
Kei-chan and I were smiling...  
Our family was happy...!

「It's because of me. It's because I didn't get off the car sooner...!」  
Kei-chan mutters.  
And yet, I...  
I can't think of anything to comfort Kei-chan...

Then...  
We were shoved inside Viola's accord.  
The car starts to move...  
Kei-chan and I...  
Have been watching the rear window without end.  
Behind the straight road...  
A red flame is surging.  
Black smoke is rising...  
The flames and smoke grows smaller...  
But still, it doesn't disappear.  
There's nothing in the desert after all.  
No matter how far it is...the black smoke pillar can be seen between the blue sky and yellow sand.  
...That's where my parents are.  
Our parents were left in the desert...  
Kei-chan and I...  
Were captives of Cesario Viola...

Viola's aim was Kei-chan.  
Viola's a pervert.  
He's a perverted gay who likes to rape small boys...

That day...  
Viola raped Kei-chan  
While I watch them...

Viola said...  
「If you don't want your sister to be hurt then you'll do everything I want ...!」  
...Kei-chan.  
「Understood...I'll do anything so please spare my Onee-chan」  
...He said.  
...Therefore  
Kei-chan...in front of me...  
He received such horrible treatments...  
Viola...shows that scene to me on purpose...

He's having fun watching Kei-chan and my reaction...

...He's a demon!

A real demon.

Viola let me have the same look at Kei-chan...

Kei-chan who's a boy was made to wear girl clothes.

His hair is lengthened like me...then a ribbon attached to it.

Then he violated Kei-chan who's wearing a skirt as he pleased in front of me...

When Viola's going to work...

He locks the two of us in the room.

I...applied the medicine to Kei-chan's butt.

Kei-chan's anus is swollen...it's so pitiful.

At that time...Kei-chan always tells me.

「I'll definitely save Onee-chan...I'll create an opportunity so Onee-chan, run away...!」

...I

「...I don't want that. We should run away together. I don't want it unless we're together!」

Then...Kei-chan.

「...I'm already no good」

...Kei-chan who's just an elementary school boy.

...This boy, Kei-chan.

I think he really can't bear being violated by an adult man.,

He was made to wear a girl's clothing...

In front of his crying sister, being violated by his parent's enemy...it was so painful, too painful, he can't help it...

But, he endured it...

Kei-chan did it for me

Cesario Viola felt pleasure in raping Kei-chan who's struggling with all his life...  
I understand it now...

I was kept alive just as a tool to torture Kei-chan.

Even in meals...Kei-chan is the only one who's served.



Viola...didn't prepare meals for me.  
Then...Everytime Kei-chan satisfies Viola...  
The amount of food in Kei-chan's meal increase...  
Therefore, Kei-chan...  
Just to secure my meals...  
He listens to every order Viola gives...

...Just what am I?  
...Even though I'm his twin sister.  
...I'm just a burden.  
...Kei-chan is in pain because I'm there.  
Why...at that time...I...  
I didn't die alone earlier...!  
If I died at that time.....  
I'm sure that Kei-chan won't be killed...

Why did I...  
Why did I survive...!  
It's not Kei-chan...  
I'm the one who's useless...!

---

## 178. Nei's past (Part 2)

---

Hey...Yo-chan...  
...What do you think?  
The boy that looks very much like me...my twin brother is being violated  
everyday.  
In front of my eyes...  
I thought of changing it over and over...  
I thought that I don't mind being violated...or even killed just for Kei-chan's  
sake.  
I'm the elder sister after all.  
Kei-chan...dedicates his body to Viola to save me...  
...But  
I can't do anything...  
Viola is a man who's not interested in women.  
He's just a hopeless sadist gay bastard.  
...He.  
Because he wants to see Kei-chan's suffering face...  
He kept me alive just for that...!

「...Onee-chan, I'm no more. I'm no good」

When we're alone...  
Kei-chan always say that while crying...  
Perhaps...Viola went to work.  
To hit someone...to kill...

「I can't love a girl anymore. I can't marry. Because, I...!」

No matter how much Viola violates him...  
Kei-chan didn't feel any pleasure from it.

Kei-chan's not gay after all...

...no

Before sex or anything...Kei-chan is still a child.

Everything Viola does is just an act to make Kei-chan feel painful and unpleasant.

「Doing this kind of things...God surely won't forgive me. That's why I'm no good anymore」he said...!

That's why, I told Kei-chan.

「It's okay! God will surely forgive you...because Kei-chan is enduring it for her sister!」...

Then...I promised.

「...Onee-chan will marry you...Kei-chan will have Onee-chan with him forever」

I...

If possible, I'd like to give my virginity to Kei-chan on the spot...

I want to accept Kei-chan's body.

But...I can't.

Viola has attached a chastity belt on me...

...Do you know chastity belts?

It's made with Carboin Kepler...I can't escape unless Viola unlocks it.

It's impossible to cut it with a knife...

There's only a small hole for peeing and pooping...

That's the only part that has a shutter like structure...

It opens from the inside so you can poo...

When you try to penetrate it with penis from the outside, the mechanism will close the shutter.

Viola intends to leave me as a virgin...

I would sell higher that way...

There's a pedophile among Viola's servants...he's always looking at me with obscene eyes.

But...those who touched me were all killed by Viola.

Viola loves Kei-chan as his pet.

And he feels pleasure when he makes his pet feel sad.

Because of that...I was kept alive.

...No, that's not all.

Viola...doesn't want other men to violate me...

...who looks like Kei-chan.

That's how he's absorbed with Kei-chan.

...Therefore.

Soon afterwards, Kei-chan and I were taken out of the room then taken to  
Cesario Viola's『tour』

...A murder tour.

Give him money and he'll kill people.

He kill people and steal their money.

Viola is a famous sweeper in the underground society of Los Angeles.

A professional who kills『enemies』and『traitors』of those who request  
underground.

What Viola loves the most is『eliminating』witnesses...

Viola kills all of the『witnesses』of the crime of the underground organization...

Especially if there's a boy Viola liked...he'll deliberately do it.

For women...Viola's subordinates have fun with them then kill them.

Who and how to kill will always depend on Cesario Viola's mood.

The companions on the『tour』...is always scattered.

By day...a different member from Viola's crime group comes.

The job taken is different on the specialty of the professional...

If it's an『enemy』...then those specialized in killing.

If it's a『traitor』...then those who are good at torture.

When it's eliminating『witnesses』...then it would be a perverted one who  
kidnaps, confines, rapes and murders.

But...No matter what job it is, Viola's sister will definitely be with him.

Viola's sister is his staff.

She's the other head of the crime group.

Her real name is Fabiana Katou

Her usual fake name is Rosalind Orlando.

Rosalind is bisexual.

She feels lust on both men and women...

Normally, she has a short hair...and wear a western boots and tight jeans. She likes to dress as a man.

But...she only likes white boys or black girls...

No...she wasn't a woman who loved humans.

Rosalind wants is to make her sex partner surrender.

She's a hopeless sadist.

White boys are her object of control.

Black girls are her sex slaves.

Especially black girls, she said that she like the smell of their sweat...

「Asian...especially Japanese women don't have a thrilling smell so I don't like them!」

She said.

Therefore...I was out of her range.

Viola and Rosalind always pretends to be a couple on their『tour』

That's right... Rosalind does fuck her own brother occasionally.

Viola is a hopeless gay bastard but he loves only his sister.

「She's just something like masturbation. After all, Rosalind is a part of me」

Viola said.

「You have to masturbate from time to time. It's not bad to comfort yourself」

...Actually, they seem to deepen their mutual ties by having sex occasionally...  
Viola and Rosalind...the crazy siblings need to have sex so they can keep their mutual trust I think.

Kei-chan and I were adopted by Viola and Rosalind from a poor overseas family...

There's a lot of that in America.

Children of different race adopted from abroad...

Viola goes to an out-of-school city work...

He always bring us then goes to charity parties.

Local church, or a sponsored community service organization and the likes.

Viola and Rosalind...have very good acting skills.

They're good at talking brightly at such places...acting as charmers.

Therefore...the people will accept the talk that we're twins from a poor family adopted and raised.

Kei-chan and I were made to say「We're thankful to Papa and Mama」...

Viola threatens to kill me if we make a slightly strange attitude.

Then...Viola and others will be looking for their『next prey』for their hobbies on that parties...

Cesario Viola goes for any innocent and cute boy.

Rosalind Orlando...goes for white boys or black girls.

After the party, they'll get friends with the『prey』...allure them...

Kill the adults...rape the children, then kill them.

That is the『hobby』of the siblings.

「Viola really likes your brother」

Rosalind told me.

「Normally...he'll just immediately kill him after raping him. It's lucky for him isn't it...!」

...Lucky?!

What's lucky?

Living like this?

Kei-chan and I were taken company by Viola and Rosalind for a year...

Viola didn't have a house to settle down.

A lot of retreats...motel...trailer house.

There are also those nights where Viola would spend sleeping next to the corpse of the victim in their house.

There's one follower that's named Asura.

A black woman with transparent blond hair.

Sometimes...black with blonde hair.

She's formerly Rosalind's slave but she grew up and became an underling.

Her job is to become a『bait』to attract the『enemies』

Gathering information...sleeping with men...

It's like persuasion with sex...

If the partner on the job is an『opponent』...in case it's too strong, the other

members in battle would be shut in a hideout.

It was Asura who taught me the technique with cards.

Asura was born in Las Vegas...and her father was a famous dealer.

I got better immediately.

I had nothing else to do either way...

Playing cards with Asura was a good escape from reality.

Then...Asura advised Rosalind

「...This girl's useful」...

Real Casino's won't let children enter...

I was taken on an underground casino.

I worked as a dealer there for some days per week.

I earned quite an amount for Viola and Rosalind.

Of course...Viola negotiated with the owner of the casino.

The casino knew that I'm a swindler.

But, a small Japanese girl like me...

There's no way most of the customers will know I'm cheating you know?

People who knew my skills all know that we're Viola's slaves.

That's right...us.

Nothing else but『slaves』...

Child dealers are very popular.

I studied how to smile and make conversation.

...It doesn't matter if it's a lie.

Humans live in pain when they don't smile.

I learned it desperately...

Only when I'm dealing cards...

I forget the various things that happened...

I was desperate...

Desperately blended in the casino world.

Before long...I was able to do it.

Not only showing Kei-chan's suffering appearance...

But...Viola rapes Kei-chan meanwhile...

...Then

One day...one of the casino customers spoke to Rosalind.

「I'd like to buy that girl」

That man was Shirasaka Sousuke.

「I've heard it from the rumors but is that girl still a virgin?」

Rosalind answered.

「That's right. That girl's not our hobby」

「Then, three times the market price...no, I'll buy her for five times...what do you think?」

Rosalind...

「That girl earns quite a lot as a casino dealer though...」

Shirasaka speaks.

「Okay...I don't mind if you name the price. I can pay up as much as you want」

Rosalind thought that it's better to sell me to Shiraska.

...But.

「...No good. She's not for sale」

Viola rejects his sister's suggestion

「I love raping Kei in front of that girl. Kei's in despair because her twin sister is there. Isn't he cute being desperate for his twin sister? If he loses his sister then he's just a simple doll. Then, it won't be fun for me anymore...!」

But...Rosalind.

「Everything has a time to sell...now's the time to sell that girl. There's not much customers who'd put out such money...!」

Viola and Rosalind opposed each other.

「You...are you planning to order me?」

「...I don't have that intention」

「Even if you're my sister...I won't forgive you if you oppose me. You do know that, don't you...!」

「I know that!」

...That's a lie.



Rosalind was thinking of selling me to Shirasaka Sousuke without Cesario Viola's permission.

She...felt uneasy of Viola gradually getting absorbed with Kei-chan.

It's not that Viola is neglecting his work because of Kei-chan.

Viola...surely does his work as a sweeper.

But...Rosalind.

She wants to be the existence closest to Viola.

Viola's words...「I won't forgive you even if you're my sister」...

That made her uneasy.

She's worried that Kei-chan might become more than Viola's『pet』...

No...she can't allow it.

Kei-chan is on Viola's side.

That's why, Rosalind...

Sold me to Shirasaka Sousuke...

She begins her plan to kill Kei-chan.

At that time...Kei-chan and I felt uneasy.

My body's growing steadily.

Us twins look completely alike until now.

But...My body grows rounder...

My chest starts swelling...

Kei-chan begins to grow a man's body.

「...What should I do, Onee-chan」

Kei-chan's really scared.

「If I grow to have a man's body...Mr. will throw me away. Then, Onee-chan and I will be killed...!」

Kei-chan reduced his meals.

He tries to stop his growth somehow...

He even prayed to God.

I did the same.

But...we

We changed bit by bit.

I thought that we can't stay exactly the same...

...One day.

Viola had a『job』and he went to Tijuana Mexico

He brought the best『combat troop』...

And yet...Rosalind remained in Los Angeles unusually.

「Both of you...prepare to leave」

Rosalind told us.

Even though Cesario Viola isn't present...

It never happened that we were taken outside until now.

Kei-chan and I felt uneasy.

Rosalind then told me.

「...The lady, dress in lovely clothes」

Oh...I'll be sold off

「...What about me?」

Kei-chan asked her.

「I don't care about you」

Ah...Kei-chan will be killed!

「Hurry up...」

Saying that, Rosalind went out of the room.

Therefore...the two of us.

Kei-chan has the same hair length as me.

In front of the twin sister is a brother who was raped perversely...

Viola's favorite.

Kei-chan and I...

Wore same clothes.

Enough clothing to erase our body line.

So that you won't know who's the boy and who's the girl in a moment.

That surely...

Will become our trump card in the crisis...

That's what we thought.

「...You look really similar」

Rosalind said when she saw us finished preparing

「We're twins so we wear exactly the same」

I answered with the smile I remembered from the casino.

「Well fine...come」

We get out of the locked room...

Asura is crying on the corridor.

That's when I was convinced./

We're about to be sold off...killed

...We're at a critical moment.

We rode Rosalind's car...

Then we went out of Los Angeles

...It was scary

...It was frightening

Kei-chan and I held each other's hands.

We desperately prayed to god

...God.

Never did anything to help us, and yet...

Before long...

The car arrived at a hotel in Los Angeles

「...I've been waiting」

Shirasaka Sousuke was waiting on the backyard of the hotel.

He's wearing a white suit.

There's two black body guards with him.

「They're really twins」

He look at us in interest.

「Hmm...Her figure at night casino is pretty but looking at her under the sun, it's not bad」

Shirasaka looks at Kei-chan and said.

Rosalind laughs.

「Idiot...that's the brother」

Shirasaka looks at my face with an awkward face...

「By the way...you're really still a virgin aren't you?」

His eyes looks nasty.

「Want to confirm it?」

Rosalind Grins.

「Yeah...when doing some expensive shopping, you should always check it」

Rosalind took out a key

「...Take it off」

I took off my surf pants on the spot

「...Ooh!」

Shirasaka's surprised at the chastity belt stuck in my lower body.

「This is well done」

「...This is a special order for my brother」

「This is well done...the surface is black but it feels like a matte」

「...It's Carbon Kepler」

「Oh...this is interesting」

Shirasaka stroked my ass from the top of the chastity belt.

「Teach me where you order this...I'd like to buy a dozen of this」

「If you're that interested then you're just the same pervert as my brother」

「...We're doing business because we're perverts, don't we?」

Shirasaka told Rosalind while laughing.

「...Well, you're right」

「If I buy this girl...give me the boy as a bonus」

「...Oh. But, that will cost you too」

「...I'll pay 50% more. I'd like to make a deal with you from now on」

Shirasaka told Rosalind.

「I'm trying to make a base on Los Angeles in the future so I'd like to keep in

touch with people like you」

「...You're saying something nice」

Rosalind thinks that it's not a bad idea.

「...I'm not interested in boys but some of our customers are interested in that play. Above all, this twin set is good. I'll have the elder sister entertain me for a while but...I'll be selling the siblings sooner or later」

...We're being sold off.

But...it seems that we're not going to be killed.

...It seems.

I felt relieved.

Kei-chan and I will live wherever it is.

...But

An intense fear attacked me suddenly.

Rosalind's selling us without Viola's permission.

If ever Viola knew this...

What will Viola do to us.

「The previous plan will do...now, for the confirmation of the goods」

Shirasaka told Rosalind.

「I'd buy her with the amount agreed on if she's really a virgin...but if her hymen's broken already」

「I'll half the price by then」

Rosalind said while smiling wryly.

「Really...why does men care about virginity that much? Don't they think that a mature woman is better?」

「There are people in this world that appreciates Beaujolais Nouveau.) is a red wine made from Gamay grapes produced in the Beaujolais region of France. It is the most popular vin de primeur, fermented for just a few weeks before being released for sale on the third Thursday of November.] I'm one of them」

Saying that...Shirasaka gives her hand to Rosalind.

「...Give me the key」

「Here」

Rosalind handed the key to my chastity belt to Shirasaka  
Shirasaka removed the lock of my chastity belt  
I heard a clicking sound...  
Then the lock of the chastity belt was released.

「...Now then, let's take a look at your virgin hole」

Shirasaka removed the chastity belt...  
I was embarrassed  
Kei-chan grips his fist and looks down.

「...Fufufu, show it」

It's not just Shirasaka but also his body guards look at my crotch.  
Rosalind is looking at me with her scary eyes as always.  
The black Kepler chastity belt parts from my skin.  
My abdomen felt fresh air for the first time...  
The gaze of the men were hot...  
...Embarrassing  
...Miserable  
...I

At that time...!

...Shukon! Shukon! Shukon!

From the back of the hotel...  
A smoke bomb was shot...!

「What's this!?!」

Rosalind pulled out her pistol...!  
At that moment, she was kicked down by a shadow that came in...!

「...Haaaaaaa!!」

Rosalind was knocked down...!  
Fists went in Shirasaka's bodyguard's belly...  
That person's wearing a blue mask...  
Looking like a ninja we saw on TV...!

「...Kyouko, yoouuuu!」

Shirasaka screamed!

---

## 179. Nei's past (Part 3)

---

「Sousuke, I'll be taking these kids!」

Again, gunpowder blew fire at her feet...!

「...Come with me!」

The female ninja told us.

The sharp eye under her mask are watching me.

「...You want『freedom』don't you?!」

That was Japanese.

...A nostalgic Japanese.

...『Freedom』

We forgot those words.

「...Faster!」

...I

I thought of going with that person.

I looked back at Kei-chan...!

Kei-chan...

He's just standing in fright.

...Confused.

At that time...!

「.....Let's go ! 」

Another ninja came in from the white smoke.

Black mask...

...That person

Grabbed Kei-chan and my hand...!



「.....!!!」

In between those people...

Kei-chan and I were connected.

「...Let's run away, Kei-chan」

I told Kei-chan in Japanese.

## Kei-chan nods.

The black masked ninja lead our hands...

We start to run in the smoke...

「.....Don't Move ! 」

Rosalind finally got up and aimed her pistol!

...Shuba!

Along with the sound of air being cut is a small knife stabbing Rosalind's hand.

...Throwing knife?!

The blue masked ninja who first came in threw it...!

I knew the face inside the blue mask is smiling...

Then...I knew that person is a woman.

「.....Fucking Bitch ! ! !」

The ninja in blue mask throws two more gas bombs at the ground!

...Shubabababa!!!!

The white smoke of tear gas shrouds the surroundings.

「.....Come on ! 」

At the moment the visibility was shut off by the smoke...!

The black masked person pulling our hands turned 90 degrees...

It's purpose is to avoid Rosalind's chase.

To confuse them where we went...

We left everything behind the smoke...

We ran.

...My heart was pounding.

I ran with adrenaline running through my body...!

「...Uwaaaaaaaaa!」

Kei-chan suddenly cried.  
...It seems he's unable to bear it anymore.  
I embraced Kei-chan's body...  
We ran along with the black masked ninja...

After a while, we went through the employee's aisle.  
We went through there and went out of the hotel.  
There's one van that stopped before my eyes.  
The rear sliding door is already opened.

「Hurry up ! 」

The black mask ninja ordered us...  
I jumped inside.  
...Kei-chan too.  
The black masked ninja jumps and closes the door.  
The blue masked ninja boarded the passenger seat.

「...Mina, go!」

The car starts at an amazing speed.  
The hotel becomes distant.  
I saw white smoke coming out of the hotel's backyard from outside the window.  
That's where we were earlier...

And yet, we...  
We escaped from Rosalind.

「...What should I do, what should I do? Onee-chan!!!」

Kei-chan clings to me while crying inside the car.

「...Viola...Cesario Viola will surely come to kill us!!!」

...That's right.  
This is Los Angeles, Viola's garden.  
As long as we're in this city...  
We're not safe...

「...I think we're still under hotel's security cameras so don't take off your

masks for a while!」

The blue masked ninja told the driver and the black mask.

「We just intended to harass that bastard Sousuke but...we picked up two lost children now」

The blue mask in the passenger seat looks at us.

「...It's moving. If he establishes a route of slave market from US. Shirasaka's buildup won't be stopped」

The driver said.

「Well yeah...the funds used to buy these children were the money our『women』made with their bodies. Buying a slave from a money squeezed from a prostitute...that's no joke!」

The blue mask said as if spitting out.

「...But, why is a Japanese enslaved in Los Angeles?」

「Don't know. I just did sneak a look at Shirasaka's mails...!」

I was listening anxiously at the conversation of the two.  
What will happen to us now?...  
I'm filled with anxiety

「All right! I am at your back.!」

The black mask sitting with us...  
Told us...

...I noticed that person is also a woman  
...That is.

That was my first encounter with Maru-chan.

「...Then, what should we do after this? Kyouko-san?」

The driver asked the blue masked ninja, she's called『Kyouko-san』

「Go to the parking at the stadium...there's a spare car prepared there. We'll transfer to that...anyway, it's bad to be on the same car. We got away from the hotel, it's about time we take off our mask? A masked man driving in the town would be too suspicious.

She takes off her blue mask while saying that.  
Her black hair spills from the side.  
Ninja-san is a mid-thirty Japanese woman...  
It feels like she's a Japanese that lived in Los Angeles for a long time...  
Her eyes are lifted up...it feels like a thick make up.  
The black mask next to us exposed her face.  
A beautiful blonde tall girl.  
Maru-chan smiled nicely to Kei-chan and I.  
The driver also took off her mask when we reached a stop.  
A woman in her twenties with a cold expression.  
That's right...I met Yuzuki-sensei that way.

...Bururururururu!!!

The phone in front of the seat shakes.

「...It's mine. I'm sure it's Sousuke」

The person called Kyouko-san looks at her screen.

「...As expected. Mina, do you want to know Sousuke's reaction?」

「...Of course」

「Okay...Then I'll put him on loudspeakers」

Kyouko-san connects the phone to the car speaker  
Then...she answered the call.

「Haai~ Sekai no aidoru, Kyouko-chan desu~! Kyouko-chan is currently on a place where the waves can't reach or her phone isn't turned on! If you hear the sound 『Dohihibiiin』then please leave a message! Okay, dobibibiiiiin!!!!」

The voice on the speaker...  
I hear a man's Japanese voice.

『...What do you intend to do?』

「...Ten seconds」

『...I'm asking you what do you intend to do by disrupting my business』

「...Twenty seconds」

『...Hey, Kyouko!』

「...25, 6, 7, 8, 9...!」

『Don't fuck around!!!』

The man's screaming voice is like a dog's bark...

「My, who's the one fucking around?」

Kyouko-san replied calmly.

「Using, 『Kuromori's』 funds and buying something expensive...it needs approval of the administration. That was the rule I think...」

『You were the ones who decided that rule by yourselves...I'm not concerned here...!』

「Sousuke-kun...can you say that in front of Kouzuki-sama?」

When Kyouko-san said that...the other side of the call fell silent.

「You do know that Kyouko-chan is dispatched by Kouzuki-sama as an inspector, don't you? Also, Everyone knows that you're irresponsible at managing 『Kuromori』」

『No...I just...it was for the development of『Kuromori』...』

「...Hmm, so you decided to buy a slave girl abroad?」

『The risk of buying a prostitute in Japan is too big. I thought that I should find a route from overseas...』

Hearing those words...the driver mutters.

「This man did a lot of things that are too risky... it's too late...!」

The man's remark continues.

『I should be the representative of『Kuromori』 I chose how to manage it...I think you all have the duty to obey me...』

Then...he asked as if investigating.

『Then...are you keeping the slaves?』

Kyouko-san looks at us.

「...They're here」

『I see...Then bring them to my place』

「Hmm, what do you intend to do?」

『If I obtained an expensive goods for free...will the management even

complain?』

...We

...As expected, we're sold off.

We're changing masters...continue being a slave.

Kei-chan and I looked at each other.

Kei-chan's trembling.

...But that's fine.

Up until now, Kei-chan was raped for my sake...

From now on...I will use my body to protect Kei-chan.

I decided so...

Then...we can finally be the same.

Kei-chan and I will be the same.

...Then.

Kyouko-san laughed out loud.

『...Kyouko, what's funny?』

The man on the phone gets enraged.

「You see...do you know who you're dealing with?」

『...Rosalind Orlando, that's what she said』

Kyouko-san snorted her nose.

「That woman is the younger sister of Cesario Viola, the murder boss in Los Angeles. Do you intend to paint mud on the face of the most feared man in the underground society...?!」

『...I-Is that true?』

「What will I get for lying?...There's no way you told her our relationship, did you?」

『...I only told her that someone hostile to my organization came to obstruct』

「Hmm, good for you.」 Make it a Brazilian organization. I don't mind if you say my name since I'm officially supposed to be a member on an organization there. Nobody knows that I came back to Japan. You should make it that you caused trouble with a Brazilian organization... 」

『...G-Got it』

「Try not to say that we're on the same organization as much as possible.

There's a chance that you'd be killed after all...!」

『I-I'll take care...』

「Anyway...Mina and I will be taking care of these two」

Saying that...Kyouko-san ended the call.

We changed cars in the stadium...

At a restaurant parking lot, we changed cars again.

The car changes to something more luxurious...

「...Where are we going?」

When I asked...

Kyouko-san.

「Malibu Beach」

She answered.

「I rent a cottage for the rich people...with a name of an acquaintance in Japan. At this kind of times, hotels have too much public eyes. If it's a villa for the rich, the security is perfect...」

Then...the car arrived at the beach

It was my first time seeing the beach...

Since forever in Los Angeles...

The sea breeze and the blue sky...

It calmed Kei-chan and my heart.

「Now then...should we listen to your story for the time being?」

Kyouko-san asked in the living room of the rental villa.

Sensei and Maru-chan was there too.

The villa is on the rocky place on the beach...

The living room has a big motorboat tied to the bay.

「We have to know your story first...so we can know what to do with you」

I looked at Kei-chan's face.

Kei-chan's hesitant.

Well...I'm the same.

I can see Kei-chan's expression as mine like I'm looking at the mirror.

「...Talk. If you want to survive」

Sensei said coldly.

「You should intend to use everything if you want to continue living...be greedy. How can you use us...desperately think about it. If not, think of how to run away from us. We took the risk of capturing you so we won't let you escape easily however」

Sensei's tone was dry...

「Don't dare mistake that we're『trustworthy』 There's no way we are...we're also residents of the underworld」

She said with cold eyes.

「If you believe us then you're making a fool of yourself. Therefore...think on how can you use us」

Not believe but use?

「We're the same. We don't know why you were turned slaves in America even though you're Japanese but...if we think we can use your existence then we'll lend you our power」

「...What if it's judged that we can't be used?」

I asked Sensei.

Sensei smiled.

「Our organization doesn't do anything but『Kill』...Therefore, we'll just throw you out somewhere in Los Angeles. We can do it anywhere...even in Japanese Consulate」

...Japanese Consulate is impossible.

Rosalind is definitely watching it.

「I-I...I can entertain men with my anus...!」

Kei-chan who's silent all this time stood up and shouted loudly.

「I can use my mouth! I can do fellatio for hours! My fellatio was praised by Cesario-san...I'm a men's sperm toilet! I can listen to anyone's orders!」

Sensei told Kei-chan.



「Sorry but we're all women. There's no use for gays」

「I-I'm not gay!」

...Kei-chan.

「Then...please sell me off. I don't mind if you sell me to men on the roadside... therefore...please, please save Onee-chan...!!」

Kei-chan rubs his forehead on the floor...

...For my sake.

...It's always for my sake.

...I

Do I have any value to use for these people?

What can I do...?!

The skills on Casino?

No...they'll ignore it since I'm a child.

I can't really do anything.

Then...what's left for me is...

「...I'm still a virgin. I still haven't done it with a man」

...That's right.

I don't have anything but my body.

「Please sell me as a sex slave. I'll do anything. Therefore...please free Kei-chan」

Anything more than that...

I can't let Kei-chan suffer for my sake more than this...

「Aren't you misunderstanding something?」

Kyouko-san said in amazement.

「It's true that you're a pretty boy and girl... That said, there's nobody in the world who'd try to make you sex slaves!」

Kyouko-san's angry.

「Those kind of people are just the truest perverts and scums...bastards. Cesario Viola who ruled over you might be that kind of scum. Surely, Shirasaka Sousuke who tried to buy you a while ago is a bastard! But you see...it's a big

mistake to think that they're the only ones in the world!!!」

...What's there

Is an adult woman.

—Having a moral of a normal human...

This person's different from Cesario Viola.

「You see...I hate this the most! Thinking that it'll go well by just selling your body...! It's not that I'm angry at you two. I'm angry at the adults who brought those thoughts to you...! Those people should die!!!」

Kyouko-san opens a beer and drinks it.

...Then.

「Promise me both of you...once you go back to Japan safely, go to school and graduate...then work and live. Forget about what happened in Los Angeles. Don't think of selling your own body again...!」

Her lifted eyes look at us.

「If you promise me that...I can arrange it so you can return to Japan safely」  
「...Kyouko-san」

Sensei looks at Kyouko-san in worry.

「I'll take responsibility...therefore, let me deal with this」  
「...But」  
「I'm doing this because I want to...! I know what Mina thinks but I won't yield here」

Kyouko-san looks at us again.

「I have to educate this children that『This world isn't all bad』...!」

Maru-chan besides us has a blank face all this time.

...She doesn't understand Japanese.

That's right...the conversation in this room has been Japanese all this time.

「Anyway...tell me why this happened. It's okay even if the contents are messed up. Just let out everything in your head...!」

Kyouko-san said.

I started talking.

About my father and mother killed in the desert...

Everything that has happened until now.

Kei-chan was silent.

Therefore...I talked by myself.

Halfway, the chronological order became messy...

My emotions worked up and I wasn't able to speak well...

...But still

Kyouko-san and Sensei were listening.

The story of what happened to me and Kei-chan

「...Okay, I roughly understand it」

Kyouko-san said.

「Kyouko-san...how much do you know about the person named Cesario Viola?」

Sensei asks Kyouko-san.

「I know he's a dangerous one...a murder gang boss...he's a man not interested in money nor fame. Therefore...nobody knows his face」

「...His face is unknown?」

「Cesario Viola's killing request is done through his agent, Lorenzaccio Bandini. Everyone knows this man. A face well known in the underground society...a man who likes social things since he frequently appear on parties. This man shows his face to the Academy Awards」

Kyouko-san drank her beer.

「His outside connections is all done by Lorenzaccio Bandini. Therefore... nobody knows the face of Cesario Viola who performs the killing. In the first place, Cesario Viola is an alias. All we know is that he's an Italian American」

「...Then, these children knows Cesario Viola's face」

「...It's very dangerous. The possibility of them being erased is that great」

...As expected

We...

Have Viola's『Shadow of death』floating on us clearly...

「We have to take them out of Los Angeles to Japan as soon as possible...」

「But, we don't have passports」

...That's right.

We

We don't have our belongings when we were taken away by Cesario Viola.

「That said, Japanese Consulate is no good/ That place is involved with the underground organization...!

...As expected.

「We should think that the information from the American staff reaches Viola immediately. Now then, what should we do?...It's hard to get a counterfeit Japanese passport」

Kyouko-san laughs.

「...Don't make such a worried face」

...Eh?!

「This is America...people from all over the world are here. If it's hard to make a Japanese passport then just get a passport from another country」

---

## 180. Chinatown (Part 1)

---

「Well...leave it to us」

Kyouko-san said...then drank her beer

Then, she looked at Sensei.

「I'll take charge of these children's expenses. I'll do this personally after all.  
Mina and Margo doesn't need to concern themselves after this」

Sensei...

「I can't let that. At the point Shirasaka Sousuke tried to purchase these  
children as slaves...this is already related to『Kuromori』」

「Are you sure...this is just a waste of time you know?」

Kyouko-san smiles.

「...Therefore, 『Kuromori』won't be using their funds Everything will be  
charged to Shirasaka Sousuke」

「Do you think that fucker would pay?」

「...We'll make sure he will」

Sensei answered with a serious look.

「It's Shirasaka's fault for contacting the underground society in Los Angeles」

...I

I wondered if this is okay.

We...can't return anything to these people.

If we're told not to sell our bodies...

We don't have any more worth.

Kei-chan's having a gloomy face.

「Then, that's decided...Mina」

「Yes...I'll leave it to Kyouko-san」

「...Okay」

Kyouko-san took her phone.  
Then...she made a call.

「...It's been a while, it's me, Kyouko. ...Yeah, you know why I called you... that's right. I'd like some passports. Two pieces...Canada's better than US, right?...How much?...That's much higher than before. You raised the price?...I'll pay twice the amount, could you hurry it up? Tomorrow morning...okay, that amount will do. I'll pay you in cash. You can just input the photos and data when you take it? Yeah, I'd like the photos to be taken when I go to your office tomorrow...the data will be done here. It's okay if you prepare the passport's template tonight. Then, tomorrow at 10 o'clock...please」

Kyouko-san ended the call.

「...We can take photos here. Shouldn't you send the mail sooner?」

Sensei asked, Kyouko-san...

「Then, these two's faces would be leaked outside the『passport shop』... There's a lot of people who want counterfeit passport in Los Angeles but...the one I contacted is competing on the top『counterfeit passport shops』 He's skilled but his mouth is loose」

Kyouko-san opens another beer.

「...It can't be helped, 『counterfeit passport』is a work that can't be done unless you're in close contact with the local people. You need to have the same address and operate the same phone number. When someone needs a passport and it happens to be 『Huh? I can't contact him, where did he go?』 you'll lose honor in business...!」

「Then...when we take the passport tomorrow...」

「Cesario Viola will know that these children were given passports within one hour. The promise of paying twice wasn't a special express charge. At least, we can get a promise that it won't be leaked outside as long as we're in his office」

Kyouko-san smiled at Sensei.

「Mina, remember that the『other party understands our standpoint』clearly as always. They understand it so they negotiate. Then, you pay at a higher rate

than the market price. Don't do something stupid. The respect and the evaluation of the other party is told by the amount of money. If you do...the people in the underground society will respect you. Trust and reliance can be earned by doing such things」

「...Got it, Kyouko-san」

Kyouko-san sips on the beer then made a call.

「Hello, hello, hello!...That's right, it's Kyouko! Yay~! You fine?...No way! Eeh?!...John's fine too?... Oh is John pleased by my birthday present? Those are very popular even on Japanese children!...By the way. ...Yes, yes, that's right. I'd like to buy two family registry. Twins, oriental. Black hair. Eyes are brown. Ages...you can put 14 years old. ...No. Male and female. It's a mixed twins. Both of them can speak English normally...it's fine to make them non-Japanese. How much?...No way, that's cheap. You don't need to give me discounts just because we're friends. You can charge me properly...really, it's fine. I get it...John wants a new bicycle?...Okay, I'll send it as a present...it's okay. I like active boys. It's a present from Kyouko-obaachan. Then...have you prepared a dress to wear on Patricia's graduation ceremony?...Okay, pick a dress for Patricia as you like...you can just send the bill to me. What now?...It's fine, we're friends aren't we? Ah, but let's make it a tasteful dress. Decide it after consulting Patricia about it okay?...Got it. I'll be the one to send a mail to Patricia. 『Be sure to consult with your mother. If the dress isn't that good, don't buy it!』 ...It's okay even if it's branded. ...I see, it should balance the dress worn by her classmates...yup, I'll leave it to you. It's okay...the graduation ceremony is Patricia's proud moment. She must wear a good dress...it's a lifetime memory. I don't mind it at all. Yes, yes...the family register. Un, please. If possible, I'd like at least the data tonight, but...sorry, please...then, later, bye~!」

Then...Kyouko-san ended the call.

「...Canada is wide and a country that accepts immigrants. It's easier to acquire a family register there than other countries. My mother has been keeping friends there for a long time. She's a local official you see...she interacts with various『friends』 Therefore, I will never forget her family's birthday. I send something for certain. When I stop by Canada for business, I go there as much as possible...and bring souvenirs. She's not someone from the underground

society. She's just a『commoner』who have friends on the『underground society』like me. That's why, we have to interact with another『underground person』」

Thinking about it now...

That was Kyouko-san's guidance to Sensei.

It was to train Sensei.

「...Now then, we can now write data for the passport tomorrow. You'll have fake names and addresses. I can't afford to give you a false background however... There's no problem for the time being」

Kyouko-san smiles at us.

「There's a slight trial before and after obtaining a forged passport however...!」

「Kyouko-san...what route will we escape to afterwards?」

Sensei asks Kyouko-san.

「Let's see...the airport in Los Angeles is being checked so let's go to another city by car and get out of there.」

「...Want to go to Las Vegas?」

「We haven't decided on that yet. Cesario Viola would be changing his movements. At worst, we can go to the east coast and go to Japan in reverse」

It's not directly Los Angeles to Japan...

Los Angeles, New York, Europe, then Japan.

We'll come back to Japan.

...We're coming home

「Anyway...take a shower for tonight and sleep.」 Tomorrow's a big day」

Kyouko-san told us.



「You can use this room as you want...!」

Sensei told us...

After a simple supper.

「Margo is buying your change of clothes right now」



Then...

Sensei looked at Kei-chan and I deliberately

「You twins are really beautiful」

Sensei said.

「Both of you looks completely alike. Maybe it's because of the hair but both of you look like girls」

Kei-chan's expression turned gloomy again.

「If I haven't seen Shirasaka Sousuke's mail, I would've thought that you two are beautiful twin girls」

...Eh?

「Was it Rosalind Orlando?...That person told Shirasaka『The girl you're trying to buy has a twin brother. They completely look alike. If you'd like, do you want to buy the younger brother as well?』in her mail. That's what I read...」

Sensei knew from the mail that we're a male and female twins.  
Therefore...she didn't think that Kei-chan was a girl.

「...Really beautiful」

Kei-chan looks down when Sensei said that.

「But, because of that...my father and mother were killed...Onee-chan and I were enslaved. I...!」

Kei-chan was violated by Cesario Viola for always.

「You can't overturn what happened in the past...just think about what you should do right now」

Sensei said

What should we do right now?...

「I told Margo to buy boy's clothes. The two of you look like twin girls right now... Tomorrow, both of you will be boys...!」

We'll disguise as twin boys

「Disguising stands out too much There's no way to hide that the two of you

are twins so at least, let's do the opposite version of today.

Sensei told us.



Kei-chan and I were alone together.

It's been a while.

I had my Casino Job for a while...

「...I'll take shower」

I go to the shower room

...I don't have my chastity belt anymore.

I dropped it on the backyard of the hotel.

Even though it wasn't approved by Cesario Viola...

My chastity belt was removed.

...Tonight.

I'll give myself to Kei-chan...

That's what I thought.

I left the shower room wearing a bath towel.

A dim room.

Kei-chan is sitting on the bed...

「...Are we going to survive?」

Kei-chan said while looking down.

「...They're good people, and trustworthy but」

Kei-chan's trembling.

「Cesario Viola is a horrible person...!」

Kei-chan experienced fear from Viola with his whole body...

His body was thoroughly violated.

Viola's a sadist...he knows that he's the worst pervert.

「...It's okay, Kei-chan」

I said.

「...Let's go back together to Japan. Viola won't be chasing us to Japan」

Though I say that...  
I'm also anxious.  
Our life with Viola lasted for more than a year.  
Blood and screams...Viola's vulgar smile.  
Rosalind's mocking laugh.  
The fear of Cesario Viola was clearly engraved in our hearts.

「...What will happen to me when we return to Japan?」

...Eh?

「Onee-chan...you should go back to Japan. Go back to Japan and be happy.  
Study, love...laugh a lot! For my sake」

「Kei-chan...what are you saying?!」

Kei-chan looks at me slowly.

「I...I'm no good...」

...Kei-chan!

「That's not true! I tell you it's not!」

「No...Onee-chan I'm a man...violated by Cesario Viola multiple times... My body  
is no good」

...Kei-chan's a child

He was innocent...

He can't bear his body being stained.

「I can no longer marry. I can't love women...!」

Then...I

...I was a child.

「Therefore...didn't Onee-chan say that she'll marry Kei-chan!!」

I took off my bath towel...!

I exposed my skin in front of Kei-chan...

「Now, let's marry...we can get married tonight!」

I show my pubic area without chastity belt to Kei-chan.

「I don't know about tomorrow so...if ever we're caught by Viola, Kei-chan

might be taken back. Onee-chan might get killed. But, tonight's different...we're free. Right now!!!」

I kneel in front of Kei-chan...naked.

「Now...take Onee-chan as Kei-chan's bride. I'll do anything...let's get married. It's okay even for today...hey, Kei-chan!!!」

...Kei-chan

「...Onee-chan!」

He clings to me, crying  
I also embrace Kei-chan.

「Geez...don't cry. You're a man aren't you?」  
「Onee-chan...Onee-chan!!!」

Kei-chan buries his face in my chest...crying.  
I was happy.

「Now...let's do it, Kei-chan」

I want to dedicate my everything to my brother...  
My mind...my body...my purity too.  
I'll dedicate all my flesh and blood to Kei-chan.  
Because, Kei-chan...  
He has always endured it for my sake...

「Eat your Onee-chan」  
「...Eh?」  
「I'd like you to eat me...I want to be eaten by Kei-chan...!」

I tried to kiss Kei-chan.  
...And yet

「...Sorry, Onee-chan」

Kei-chan refused my kiss.

「...What's wrong, Kei-chan?」

...Kei-chan

「I can't defile Onee-chan」

...Defile?

...Defile?!

「I love Onee-chan. Onee-chan is very kind...and beautiful」

「...Kei-chan. Onee-chan loves Kei-chan too」

Happy...I tried to embrace Kei-chan.

...And yet.

Kei-chan grabbed my shoulder and tried to get away.

「Therefore...I can't do something that makes Onee-chan dirty...!」

...Kei-chan.

「Onee-chan is there for me that's why I was able to endure it so far. I endured no matter how hard it is... Viola promised me. As long as I do as he say...He'll never let anyone put a hand on Onee-chan...!」

Kei-chan forced himself to smile.

「If Onee-chan was raped...I won't be able to bear it. I was able to endure watching mother and father being killed. If ever Onee-chan was raped...then I'll kill myself...that's what I told Viola... Therefore, Viola protected Onee-chan's purity...!」

...Kei-chan

You offered your young body to Viola to protect me?!

「But...I'm no good. We ran away from Viola. It's Rosalind's fault but Viola won't forgive us. If we return right now...Onee-chan will be gang banged by Viola's followers... There were a lot who aimed at Onee-chan...!」

I shivered.

「Therefore...Kei-chan, embrace Onee-chan! Onee-chan will give her virginity to Kei-chan!」

Kei-chan shook his head.,

「...Onee-chan should go back to Japan with her virginity. Then, fall in true love... You should give your virginity to someone you love from the bottom of your heart」

「I love you Kei-chan, from the bottom of my heart...it's true...!」

I shout at Kei-chan as if clinging to him.

...But!

...Kei-chan said.

「God won't allow that...we're siblings...!」

...Kei-chan

Even in this horrible situation...

He suffered, cried, endured, endured, endured it...

And yet...God's will?!

Someone like God...!

Someone like God...!

Someone like God...!

No matter how much we prayed, he didn't help us...!

「...Let's pray, Onee-chan」

...Kei-chan said.

「I...I will pray for Onee-chan. Onee-chan, pray for me...!」

Kei-chan smiled sadly

...That's right.

We were on a protestant church during kindergarten.

Therefore.....we were always praying at that age.

I stopped doing that after entering elementary school.

Kei-chan continues.

On all the three meals...before we sleep at night...

「Our father in heaven...」

Kei-chan recites a prayer.

I...still don't know the meaning of「Mashimasu」

The prayer we learned in kindergarten is in Hiragana after all.

「Hallowed be your name

Your kingdom come.

Your will be done, on earth as it is in heaven」

That's just a mere recital.

We don't understand what it meant.

It's just a good luck charm recital.

「Give us this day our daily bread.  
And forgive us our sins, as we also have forgiven our debtors」

...Don't joke with me.  
I can't forgive...won't forgive...will never forgive.

「And do not bring us to the time of trial, but rescue us from the evil one.」  
Ah...If this is God's『trial』  
Then God's the same as the Devil.  
Just making us suffer...

「You have the endless power to flourish the land...amen」  
「...Amen」

Kei-chan looks at me.  
「...Onee-chan It's okay. I'm sure it'll be okay」  
...Kei-chan, I  
「...I'll definitely protect Onee-chan」

I'm the one who wants to protect you.  
But, I'm a woman...  
Kei-chan has been protecting me all this time...  
...Even though I'm the elder sister.

「Onee-chan, let's sleep together tonight...let's hold hands」  
Kei-chan's smile...  
...It hurts my heart

「Un...if that's what Kei-chan wants」

I just want to embrace Kei-chan.  
I wanted to dedicate my body and chastity to him  
...But, the reality.  
We slept holding hands on the bed.  
Even though we're sleeping on the same bed...  
Our only contact is holding hands.

...It was sad.

...It was painful

But...Kei-chan.

Didn't ask for more than this...

Therefore...I can't ask for anything more.

If I forced him then I will hurt Kei-chan's heart.

Kei-chan has been forcibly raped by Viola so far.

If I force it...it won't be different from rape.

Therefore...

No...that's not it.

I didn't have the charm as a woman.

Viola ignored me as a woman...

For Kei-chan...I wasn't a『woman』

Therefore...I can't ask for it.

...It's frustrating

...Miserable

I...

I wet the pillow all night...

I shouldn't have been born a woman.

Then...

Kei-chan said in the darkness...

「Sorry...Onee-chan」

「No...Kei-chan doesn't have anything to apologize for」

I lack the charm as a woman.

Therefore

「...You see, I」

Kei-chan suddenly said.

「...I can't make my penis grow big」

...Kei-chan

「Since I've been violated by Viola all the time...I'm not gay. I endured it by telling myself that I'm not gay...as expected, I still don't like men. I don't like being touched by them either」



Kei-chan...is telling me something important.

「But you see...it's the same for women I'm scared of women approaching me」

...Kei-chan

「It's painful for other people to touch me...I'm not good at it. I'm scared of humans」

The reality of our parents being killed and being taken along with the homicidal maniacs...

Kei-chan turned to hate humans...!

I let go of my hand.

「Kei-chan, sorry!」

Kei-chan grasped my hand tightly however.

「Onee-chan's an exception...Onee-chan's the only one I'm not scared of. I love you!」

...Kei-chan

「But...I can't do lewd things. With Onee-chan, with other people. My penis won't ever grow big...!」

...Aaa, I

What a sinful woman!

「Kei-chan sorry...I'm sorry, Kei-chan!!!」

I kept crying until morning.

---

## 181. Chinatown (Part 2)

---

「Cesario Viola's hobby his disguise isn't it?」

Kyouko-san speaks in English during breakfast.  
She wants Maru-chan to join the talk.  
Therefore...I answered in English too.

「Yes...there's an exclusive stylist and make up artist that changes Viola's image to what he imagines everyday」

Kyouko-san smiles.

「It's said that his disguises can be seen as a completely different person? Is that true?」

「...It's true」

「...But, then how do Viola's subordinate tell that it's him?」

Maru-chan asks me.  
Sensei also looks at us in interest.  
Kei-chan...just looks down and eats scrambled eggs.

「It's easy. If there's an unfamiliar face before when everyone gathers before they start their work, that's Viola...!」

Kyouko-san said.

「That's sloppy...」

Maru-chan said that but...

「Actually...Viola's team is always the same. The teams will change on their targets but the members of each team are always the same」

I answered.  
Anyway...I should tell Kyouko-san and others what I know...  
...So Kei-chan and I can survive and go back to Japan together 「Before the

work...They will gather at the place Viola has decided. Plaza, park...stadium, cinema, dining room. Viola likes crowded places. Then...the members who gathered for that day will look for him who disguised. Viola enjoys playing『Hide and seek』 He takes Kei-chan and I for camouflage...」

Kei-chan stops eating.

「Viola's sister will be coming to that spot too. Rosalind has been watching Viola's disguise process herself after all...」

Viola likes his sister's blowjob while getting his make up.  
Sometimes...Kei-chan does it too.

「Therefore...she know who's Viola there. Then , she grins at her subordinates who's wondering who's viola」

Unpleasant woman... unpleasant siblings.  
I want to escape...  
I want to escape from their binds.

「Then...Lorenzaccio Bandini will appear in the designated location five minutes late. He will call out the person he thinks is Viola. Then Rosalind will approach him laughing...almost a hundred percent of the time Viola himself is pointed out by Lorenzaccio Bandini」

「...How does Lorenzaccio Bandini know Viola's disguise?」

Kyouko-san asks.

「That is...Viola will call Bandini every time his disguise is done. Then...He'll give a hint. 『My disguise right now is a 1978 nominee for supporting actor award』or『The character in the fourth work of Director Sergio Leone』... Viola and Bandini are movie enthusiasts...so they can understand with just that hint」

They make such worthless plays.  
Before they kill people...

「But...Viola's subordinates are fine with that『meeting』but...we don't know who Viola is you see」

Maru-chan said in worry.

「Because Lorenzaccio Bandini's connected, I can accompany you to the site.

We can only confirm Rosalind. We've confirmed her face at the hotel yesterday」

「You two...didn't you live together with him for nearly a year? Won't you know it when you see it?」

Kyouko-san looks at us.

「Sorry...we don't know」

Viola who completed his disguise is a completely different person...  
There's no way we can distinguish it.

「...Are you the same?」

...Kei-chan

「I...Uhm...」

He looks down...and answered in a low voice.

「...There are times I do know」

Viola who has been stacking up his skin with Viola...  
...I understand.

I felt jealousy against Viola.

Viola and Kei-chan are closer than me.

...Frustrating.

...Miserable.

「...It's just rarely」

「Is that so? Then, tell us at the moment you notice it...」

Kyouko-san stares at Kei-chan

「That might be the deciding factor for your life and death...」

Right now...we...

We're on the line of life and death...



The blue sedan Ford departs from the villa.  
Inside the car...Kyouko-san's driving, Maru-chan is on the passenger seat.  
On the back seat...Kei-chan and I

...Sensei's not there.

「Mina will be going by another car to buy us some time... If we're together, there's a possibility of us being crushed in one swoop...」

Kyouko-san said.

We head to the counterfeit store for our passports.

「We'll be arriving at Chinatown soon」

...Chinatown?

「...The counterfeit seller lives there」

...Before long

The car goes to a corner in Chinatown and in front of an old building.

Facing the main street...a place with a lot of people 「Let's go. Hurry to the building so you won't be seen by much people...!」

As told by Kyouko-san...we jumped out of the car and towards the building... Kei-chan and I was wearing a matching black jersey.

It's a bit larger than our size.

These were the clothes Maru-chan bought last night.

On our head is a white baseball cap that has a mark of earth sporting equipment.

Our hair is all inside the hat...

At a distance...Kei-chan and I look like twin boys.

「...I've been waiting, it's ready」

Opening up the door on the third floor office...it was a short thin gray haired old man.

A thick lense reading glasses...the old man's eyes were big.

Grinning...there's a gold tooth in between his yellow teeth...

He doesn't look like a person we can trust

「First would be the deposit」

Kyouko-san hands a bundle of bills to the old man.

「...The rest are here」

Kyouko-san shows a bundle on her breast pocket 「True...no, isn't that a bit

too much?」

「It's fine. I'm in debt with you so I'd like to get along in the future as well」

The old man looked at the bundle then said:

「...Don't think badly of me. In this place, if Cesario Viola glared at you, you won't live...!」

...As expected.

「I know...is Viola himself doing business you?」

Kyouko-san asks the old man.

「I don't know it well but her sister told me that he came back to Los Angeles from Tijuana last night」

「Then that means...he's going to come with his『enemy attack team』from Tijuana?」

「I don't know that far...!」

The old man shook his head.

「As expected...what kind of program's there?」

Kyouko-san cross examines the old man...

「If possible, I'd like to stay away from trouble. Therefore...」

「Are they going to come attack us at the moment we get out of this building...?」

「Perhaps that's the case...when you leave this room, I'm supposed to signal from the window over there」

「...What's the signal?」

「Open the window...that's all」

Kyouko-san summarizes for a moment.

「Did you tell Viola how long we're going to be in this office?」

「It's not Viola...it's Lorenzaccio Bandini」

「I don't care who...」

「...I said that it'll take an hour and a half to make passports」

「Then...do it in one hour」

Kyouko-san said.

「Hey hey...don't say the impossible...it's for two people」

「Do you think that Viola will keep his promise with you?」

...Eh?

「The moment we're on our least guard will be at the moment the fake passport is done and available. I'll enter that office in that timing.」

Kyouko-san said then approached the window.  
She looked out from the gap of the curtain...

「Then...they'll deal with us including you. It would be far smarter to deal with us inside this room than outside isn't it?」

「Are they going to kill me as well?」

「Isn't it Cesario Viola's way of dealing with『witnesses』, right?」

「But...Lorenzaccio Bandini guaranteed my safety!」

「...Lorenzaccio Bandini isn't Cesario Viola. Do you think you can trust that promise?」

Kyouko-san smiles

「Either way...I think you should let us go as soon as possible」

「...You're right」

「Then...Hurry up and go to work. These are the data for the two. Name and address...Canadian passport number...」

Kyouko-san handed out the paper print.

「...Got it」

Then...he begins creating the counterfeit passport.

Kei-chan and I were photographed at the back of the office...

The photographs were developed soon then pasted on the passport paper.

Then...Kyouko-san's data brought from the Canadian official is brought in.

I'm a Hong Kong Canadian 『Mei Lin』

Kei-chan is...『Fan Lin』

「How do you write this in Kanji?」

I asked Kyouko-san.

「I wonder...I think you should just write it as you want」

Kyouko-san sent a mail to someone while saying that.  
It seems she's planning something

「Here...it's done!」

The sweaty old man...  
Handed the passport to Kei-chan and I  
...When I try to take it

「...Let me see」

Kyouko-san took it and checked the result.  
Kei-chan's passport too.

「Un...you did well at such an express speed」  
「That's obvious...it's my job!」

The old man said angrily.

「Now...pay up the money already and get out!」

Kyouko-san takes out the money

「I know...Margo」

Margo-san has been looking outside from the curtain gap 「...Do you know  
how many are there?」

「There's four room taking a look in this room」

Kyouko-san laughs.

「You still have a long way to go...As far as I can see here, there's seven  
people」

「...S-Sorry」

「There's no need to apologize...these kind of things are learned by experiencing  
it」

「...Yes」

Kyouko-san looks at the old man.

「Could you wait three minutes after we get out of this room before you signal  
those guys?」

「...Three minutes?」



「Isn't that fine? Just a freebee...!」

Kyouko-san smiled on the old man.

「Very well...I'll wait that long」

「Please...then, thank you for your help. I'll go come to you if I need something again...!」

「Don't involve me with Cesario Viola again!

「Even I feel sorry!...Let's go everyone!

Kyouko-san calls us out

「You don't need to see us off...!

「Yeah...then, stay healthy」

「...You too」

Coming out of the old man's office.

Kyouko-san mutters at the moment the door closed.

「Everyone...run down to the second floor!」

Kyouko-san's holding my hand...

Margo-san's holding Kei-chan's hand and we run!

As if jumping down...we run down the stairs to the second floor.

「...Stop now! Lower your heads and grasp the handrails!!」

At the moment Kyouko-san said that...

...Boaaaan!!!!

A sound of explosion comes from the third floor!!

The building shakes...

Then...outside the window...

I saw the blood-stained body of the old man falling down...!

「Uwaaaaaaaaa!!」

Kei-chan screams!

I can't even speak out!

「Tsk!...Even though I told you not to get close to the window right away!!!」

Kyouko-san...did you plant a bomb?!

「W-What happened?!」

A man wearing a suit comes from the office of the second floor, surprised from the explosion.

「...Let me through!」

Kyouko-san enters the office.

「Hey...W-What are you doing?!」

「...Sorry

Maru-chan makes the man in suit faint with an attack.

「Now...hurry up...!

We go to the office in the second floor...

It looks like a small travel agency.

The woman in front of the computer looked at us with a surprised face.

「...Let us through!」

Kyouko-san breaks open the window on the back!

Then...the other side of the office on the third floor exploded.

「I've grasped the structure of this building for a long time ago!」

Kyouko-san looks outside the window...!

「...Un, Mina's here!」

Outside the window...a pick up truck comes running!

Sensei was on the driver seat.

The truck stops under the window

「Now, jump on the truck!」

First...Maru-chan jumps to the roof of the truck.

Then...Kei-chan who's supported by Maru-chan.

Next...was me.

Lastly...Kyouko-san.

「Hurry up and hold on!」

Sensei shouts from the driver seat!

Kei-chan and I jumped to the backseat of the four door truck while holding down our beating hearts.

Maru-chan goes to the passenger seat

Kyouko-san grabbed on the pick up truck tray...!

「They're here!」

Two guys who look like hoodlums run towards us!

They have pistols on their hand!

「...Stop!」

「...Stop or I'll shoot!」

As soon as the two held up their pistols...!

Kyouko-san threw out something!

「...Oooouuuuch!」

The two men dropped their pistols.

「...Shuriken?」

When I mutter it...

「『Kabutowari』」

Maru-chan answered.

「It's a metal pellet thrown」

Kyouko-san throws more Kabutowari to the men 「Mina...start the car!」

The car starts of hard!!!

...Guaaaaaaa!!

The pick up truck went around the buildings and tried to get out of the main street

...Then!

『.....CUT ! ! ! 』

A shout was heard from a loud speaker

「...What's that?」

Kyouko-san's voice comes from the tray.

『...Should we stop the action movie here?!』

There's a hundred men holding up their guns on the main street.  
Our car is surrounded in around twenty meters.

Their clothes are all loose.

The people who we thought coming around the town a while ago...

Everyone's Viola's followers...!

Not just ordinary pistols...there are those who have rifles and machine guns too.

All of their muzzles...

Are all facing us...!

「...We've charged thoroughly this far」

Sensei speaks in frustration

The seven watchdogs from outside the window were decoys...

There are more than a hundred people placed in places we can't see...

「...Los Angeles is Cesario Viola's domain...Kyouko-san and I seems to have underestimated it」

In front of the hundred armed men...

A man wearing a white suit appears.

He holds a loudspeaker in his hand.

...This man

For some reason, he has a large bandage on his nose.

「...That's Cesario Viola isn't he?」

Kyouko-san asked us from the tray.

「...I think so」

Kei-chan answers.

「You think...?」

Kyouko-san stands up on the tray looking defiant...

「Hey! You're Cesario Viola?!」

Cesario laughs.

『That's right, you're Kyouko • Dothnomechey-san, aren't you?』

Viola speaks on the loudspeaker

『I think my relationship with the Brazilian people wasn't that bad...!』

Viola...as expected, he thinks that Kyouko-san is from the underground organization in Brazil.

「You're not so famous in Brazil after all!」

Kyouko-san provokes Viola.

「But, from what I was told...Cesario Viola is a small villain in Los Angeles who has a hobby of fucking little boys」

Viola wipes the sweat on his forehead with a handkerchief.

『I recognize your courage to speak in this situation...you should be careful. You're talking to the king of Los Angeles underground society...!』

Kyouko-san snorted.

「What king? Oh...a perverted pimp king!」

While Kyouko-san is trying to provoke Viola...  
Sensei and Maru-chan inside the car...

「Viola's aim are these children...he won't order to shoot」  
「Right...if they're killed, then he can't get them back...」

...No

It's not『these children』

Viola's aim is Kei-chan only.

He thinks that it's fine to kill me.

「Anyway...whatever Viola says, he won't leave us」

Sensei looks at us.

「...I know」

Kei-chan answered.

That's right...Kei-chan knows.

At the day when our parents were killed by Viola...

Kei-chan and I obediently listened to Viola's command to『Get the children off the car』...

Therefore...father and mother were killed.

We can't repeat the same thing.

『Heey, Kei! If you're in that truck then get off! If you come down there, I'll spare those guys...I promise it, Kei!』

The voice in the loud speaker calls out Kei.  
Kei-chan looks down.

「Kei-chan...don't do it. You can never trust his promise you know...!」

I hold Kei-chan's hand tightly.

「I know...I know...Onee-chan!!!」

Meanwhile...Sensei and Maru-chan...

「Margo...how many tear gas do you have?」

「...Six」

「We should've prepared more」

「...Un...Ah!」

Maru-chan finds sparking lights from the nearby buildings.

「...Made it in time」

I look up to the direction Maru-chan was looking at.  
There's someone signaling a floodlight from a window 「By the way...Mr. Viola!」

Kyouko-san calls out Viola.

「I heard that you're a film freak but...that's a lie isn't it?!」

Viola looks at Kyouko-san with a suspicious face.

『...Why do you think that's a lie?』

Kyouko-san grins.

「That dress...isn't that Jack Nicholson's clothes in the movie『Chinatown』?!」

Viola smiles.

『You know it...!』

「You're the one who doesn't know...! Nicholson dressed in that will fail at everything at the end of the movie, didn't he? He was unable to protect his

treasured daughter and she was kidnapped...!」

『Just because I'm dressed as Nicholson...I don't plan to do it as the movie says...!』

Viola peels off the nose bandage...

『I'll take Kei and kill you...the story is planned to continue like that...』

Kyouko-san laughs.

「My, by the way...Mr— What were closing curtains『Chinatown』?」

...Closing curtains?

『...What is that?!』

「Have you failed to remember?...Mr. Who's a movie maniac knows it doesn't he?...Eh, no way, you don't know?」

『...I know!』

「Then, say it...Go!」

Then...the situation filled with tension comes to an end.

『The last words were...!』

Viola answered.

『I forgot...What happened to Chinatown...!』

「Oh, that's right...That's right!!!」

At that moment...!

Kyouko-san raised her hands...!

...Then.

The building next to us shoots towards Viola and others!!

...Jubababababababa!!

Viola were assaulted from the side...!!

---

## 182. Thorn of Death

---

「Now, Mina, turn it!」

Kyouko-san shouted from the tray...!

「Margo, tear gas!」

Maru-chan throws a tear gas grenade from outside the window!

Viola's subordinates have their hands full with dealing with the sudden gunfire from the side...!

They can't stop our car!

The rifles and machine guns roar!

The shouts and barks...!

The men shot fall down!

There are people who are fighting behind the cars and the entrance of the buildings too.

『Don't fuck with me you idiot! Stop them!』

Viola shouts in a loudspeaker...

He himself ran to a nearby building.

Then...A white smoke wraps our car.

「Faster, Mina!」

Hearing Kyouko-san...Sensei steps on the accelerator...!

Our truck runs through the Chinatown!!!

Kei-chan and I hold our heads and crouched on the rear seat of the truck...!

The gunfires and screams are getting away faster...!

『Kei!...I'll never let you escape...!!!!』

Viola's voice echoes from far away.





「...I'll take the passenger seat. Margo, take care of the two on the back」

The teacher stopped the car after we ran about four blocks.

Kyouko-san who's holding at the tray jumped down and entered the car.

Maru-chan went next to us in the backseat...

「We leaked that Cesario Viola will come to that place...!」

Kyouko-san said in a slight excitement

「Viola says that he's the『King of Los Angeles』 underground society...!

However, there's a lot of『Kings』in this huge city. Both on the surface and back.

If there are colleagues from the old days, there are also new emerging power.

Obviously...there are a lot of『kings』who have a grudge against Viola. That's why we told those guys...!」

Kyouko-san opens her laptop while saying that.

She probably likes to know the current situation.

「Viola is a man who usually disguises himself so nobody knows his identity.」

Therefore, Viola is always a one-sided assailant. Those hostile to Viola are the one's always killed. But...!」

She's reading information on the monitor with sharp eyes.

「This time, it's the opposite. I told them that Cesario Viola would appear at that location in that time. Furthermore...It was clearly showed who is Viola in disguise...!」

Therefore...with Kyouko-san's instructions.

Viola and others were shot by those opposing power.

「...What now Kyouko-san? Is there a route we can use?」

Sensei asks Kyouko-san from the driver seat.

「No good...LAPD and the nearby sheriffs began to move. It's hard to escape the town with this car. Especially the inland are dangerous. Once they identify our escape route, we will be ambushed...!」

If we leave the city and head to Las Vegas or Phoenix...it'll be a highway in the

desert.

If we get caught by the enemy there...

There's nowhere to escape to.

There's no obstacles in the horizon after all.

Just like when father and mother were killed...

Nobody will come to help to a crime in the desert.

「That said, if we head to the Mexican coastline...that would be within Viola's influence」

「Then let's head north and go to San Francisco?」

Sensei asks Kyouko-san.

「No...let's go back to the villa temporarily」

「...Are we going to hide in Los Angeles?」

「No way...I'm bad at holding up you see」

Kyouko-san smiles wryly.

「...We'll be taking plan B!」

「The expenses will be rising again」

「Sousuke's going to pay for it though right?」

「Right...roger」

Sensei seems to have agreed.

「Should we change cars somewhere before going back?」

Sensei looks at the car then asked.

This truck has been seen by Viola.

「We don't have much time right now...Anyway, let's hurry back」

「...Got it」

Our truck starts once again.

「It's okay. There's a lot of pick up trucks in Los Angeles...!」

Kyouko-san said to reassure us.

Our car passes through Los Angeles like that...

Along the way, we bought a hamburger on a drive through and ate it while driving.

「Eat even if you have to force yourself...you need strength in case you need it」

Kyouko-san said as she forced the hamburger to my stomach and poured in cola.

Kei-chan seems he can't eat.

「...If it's impossible then at least drink some cola」

Maru-chan said and Kei-chan somehow drank the cola with a straw...

「Are we really going to be fine?」

Kei-chan asked Maru-chan.

「Will I be saved?」

Maru-chan smiled at Kei-chan...【】

「In the end...I think it'll depend on your willpower」

...Willpower.

「If you have the will to『survive』...then you can overcome any hardships」

Kei-chan...

「I honestly think that I'm fine dying...but」

Kei-chan looks at me...

「I'd like Onee-chan to live. I'd like her to live and be happy!」

My heart is wet from my twin brother's words...

「I want Kei-chan to live. I want Kei-chan to be happy」

「I...I'm no good. I can no longer be happy...!」

「That's not true...!!!」

Maru-chan grabbed our hands.

「Both of you...! You are worrying at each other...that's good!」

Her beautiful eyes look at us.

「The sister for her brother's sake...and the brother for her sister's sake... survive with all your life. You have the『will』 Put that in your chest firmly...!」

Maru-chan pats her chest.

「It's not for your sake...if you think it's for someone else...then you should be able to find resolve!」

「...Yes, understood」

I replied

But...Kei-chan

He just looked down in silence...



Then...the car returns to the villa we left this morning 「...Let's use that one」

Kyouko-san points at the boat anchored in the bay ahead of the villa.

「We'll reach the sea with that and be picked up by a big cruiser. An acquaintance of mine is supposed to be sailing a ship today. Mina's acquainted with Joan Slim right?」

「Yes...he was introduced by Kouzuki-sama. When he came to Japan, we sent one of our『women』to his hotel...」

「We'll have Joan help us...that man's cruiser is as good as a luxury hotel. We'll have him take us to San Francisco Better, we can even go to Hawaii...!」

「...That seems to be expensive」

「We can just push that to Sousuke」

「Got it...Then, I'll contact Mr. Slim」

Sensei takes out a phone from the driver's seat.

「Margo, prepare the boat with me」

「...Roger」

Maru-chan opens the door and gets off the truck.

「You two...what's wrong? Feeling unwell?」

Looking at Kei-chan who has a pale face...Kyouko-san asked.

「I-I'm fine」

Kei-chan answered, but...

「We can't get to the boat immediately so rest in the villa for a while!」

Kyouko-san said then gave the key to me.

「Look after him」

「...Yes」

Then...we got off the truck...

Kei-chan and I held hands...

「...Are you okay, Kei-chan?」

「...U-Un. Onee-chan」

I'm worried

Ships on the sea shake a lot.

In our state right now...

Will Kei-chan be able to hold out?

「Anyway...let's go to the living room. I'll prepare warm tea」

I pull Kei-chan...

Opening the door to the living room...

..... ! ! !

...I thought my heart would stop

「Heey, we're barging in!」

Who's there is...

Rosalind Orlando drinking tea...

Then...The one sitting opposite to Rosalind...

「...As expected, you are mine. This must be fate!」

A man in white suit

If I recall...it was Shirasaka Sousuke

「Mr. Shirasaka told me this. This is where you were hiding」

Rosalind said with a mean smile

「Don't worry...I didn't tell my brother anything. I'll be killed if I made a bad report...!」

I see...

Normally, Rosalind is supposed to act together with Cesario Viola all the time...

She didn't show up in Chinatown...

She knows this hideout...

...Zubabababa!

...Tatun, tatoun, tatoun!!!

I hear gunshots from outside the villa.

「We've caught the twins! I don't mind if you kill those outside!」

Rosalind shouts at the transreceiver

...It was a trap.

「...Are you really sure? Aren't those outside your friends?」

Rosalind asks Shirasaka Sousuke.

「No way. Those people are from Brazil, my enemies. I would appreciate it if you can handle it here」

Shirasaka Sousuke said while smiling.

「Well...I don't mind whatever it is」

Rosalind looks at us

She took out a pistol from her handbag...

She aimed it at me...

「...Uwaaaa!」

「...Kei-chan!」

The frightened Kei-chan embraced me.

His cold sweat flows in my body.

「I'll take Kei home. Actually, I'd like to shoot you in this place but if I don't bring you back, my brother will kill me...!

「Then, I'll take the sister...you don't mind that do you?」

Shirasaka looks at me with vulgar eyes.

「Yeah...I'll give you a discount from the original price」

「...This is what they call『WIN -WIN situation』don't they?」

Shirasaka smiled.

「The gunshots outside has stopped...it seems that it's all done...」

Kyouko-san and others...

Kei-chan and I despairs...

At that moment...!

...Bashu!!!

Kyouko-san jumps in the window!!

「...What!!!」

Rosalind aimed the pistol in panic and Kyouko-san kicked it off.!

The black pistol danced in the air and rolled on the floor.

「...Six subordinates in all?」

Kyouko-san glares at Rosalind.

Rosalind looks at the handbag and the pistol on the floor.

...She must still have a weapon in her handbag.

「...That's right, what about it?」

At the moment Rosalind said that...!

「...You're really a liar!!」

Kyouko-san aims at the window she rushed into...

She throws an iron kabutowari!!

...Busha!

「Gyaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Rosalind's follower hiding behind the window spouts blood from his forehead and blown away!!

「...That's seven!」

Suddenly, the door opens!

Rosalind's subordinate held it's gun...!

But, Kyouko-san slipped into the man's foot...!

Then she kicked up his crotch!!

「...Gueeeeeeeeeeee!!」

The man who has his vital point crushed collapsed in agony.

「...Eight!」

A man screamed from outside the window...!

「Kyouko-san...I knocked down the two!」

Maru-chan said.

「That's ten...is there someone still hiding?」

Kyouko-san looks at Rosalind with bloodshot eyes.

「Just what are you?」

Rosalind mutters in a frightened voice.

「You know it don't you? I'm a Brazilian...Kyouko • Dothnomechey...!」

「You're...『Kyouko Messer?』」

Rosalind's surprised...

「There are those who call me that too...!」

Rosalind looks at Shirasaka...

「Why didn't you tell me that it was『Kyouko Meser』?!」

「I-Is she that famous?!」

「...You're an idiot!」

Rosalind insults Shirasaka...and Kyouko-san...

「Sorry...Sousuke is a real idiot. He's helpless you know...!」

Then...she looks at us

「Let's go and escape!」

Shirasaka shouts at Kyouko-san...

「Wait...bring me too, Kyouko. If I get left behind...Cesario Viola will kill me...!」

「Isn't that great Sousuke? It's a punishment for betraying us...die!」

「Don't say that...I'm the representative of your organization!」

「What about you...you easily sold us to that woman...!」

「...!」



Kyouko-san spit on the floor...

「...Get out quickly I'll have you pay all of the expenses here. You don't mind that do you?」

「Y-Yeah...well of course...by the way」

Shirasaka looked at us...

「Since I'll be paying up...it's okay to think that I own these children don't I?」

Kyouko-san slaps Shirasaka's face!

Shirasaka's large body was blown off to the back of the wall 「W-What are you doing!」

「You see...it's impossible for humans to own another!」

Kyouko-san's eyes were burning in anger.

「I'll take responsibility for these two...I won't let you touch them even with a single finger!」

Shirasaka looks up at Kyouko-san with eyes of hatred.

「...I don't mind it even if you die here, I'll just report it to『Kakka』」

Kytouko-san's hand has the kabutowari shining as she hold it.

「...Wait, Kyouko!」

...Then

Suddenly...Rosalind jumps to her handbag!

She grabbed the pistol from inside...

「Onee-chan, it's dangerous!!」

Kei-chan jumped in...

Kei-chan who's been pale all this time...

Kei-chan who's trembling...

He picked up the pistol on the floor...!

「...Die!!」

Rosalind aims the pistol towards me

「...Like hell you will!!」

Kyouko-san throws the Kabutowari towards Rosalind 「Agaaa!!」

The iron lump hits Rosalind's left chest and her body rotates...

...But still

She pulled the trigger of the pistol...

Doguuuuun!!!

The muzzle blows fire!

...Then

「...Kei-chaaaaaaaaaaaaan!!!」

Kei-chan's belly...

There's blood coming out...!

「Dammit...!」

Rosalind...

Holds her pistol again...!

She aimed her muzzle at me...

「...Aaaaaaaa—!!!!」

Kei-chan rushes towards Rosalind—

While holding down his wounded stomach!

...Then.

He jumped at Rosalind...!

「Get away...Kei!」

Rosalind's second bullet went through Kei!

...Dogyuuaan!

Kei-chan's body jumps up...!

Kei-chan clenched his teeth...

He shot the gun towards Rosalind...!!

...Jyohyuuuun!

A hole opens in Rosalind's stomach...!

「...Uaaaaaaaaa!」

Rosalind drops the gun from the acute pain

Kei-chan then fell on the floor.

...Slowly

...In slow motion

「...Kei-chan!!!」

I run towards Kei-chan

「...Kei-chan, Kei-chan, Kei-chaaaaaaaaaan!!!」

...Kei-chan

「Onee-chan...Run Hurry...!」

Kei-chan looks up at me.,

「...Not without Kei-chan...Kei-chan...!」

I'm in panic

「Onee-chan can go alone. You can leave me...!」

「I can't do that...No way...Kei-chan!」

Maru-chan jumps into the room

「...Kyouko-san」

Kyouko-san was...

「It's impossible...there's two in his stomach...there's no way to stop the bleeding. He lost too much blood」

...No way

...If this goes on, Kei-chan

...Kei-chan

「...This is fine, Onee-chan」

Kei-chan said

「Even if I live...I can no longer be happy...!」

「Kei-chan you idiot! Didn't Onee-chan promise you that she'll make you happy! I'll marry Kei-chan! I'll bear Kei-chan's child! I'll do anything! I'll do anything so...!」

I tell Kei-chan while crying.

「...Happiness. Become happy. I think that Onee-chan deserves happiness...!」  
「Uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

I screamed in tears.  
...I can do nothing but cry.

「...Seriously, what the hell. With this, brother...Viola would kill me...!」

Rosalind opens her mouth filled with blood.

「Dammit...why did it hit Kei?...The sister's the one that should've died」

She drags bloody self to the handbag.  
Kyouko-san suddenly takes a stance.

「...I don't have any weapons. Don't worry. I just want to smoke...」

Saying that...Rosalind took out a cigarette from her handbag.  
Then she put one on her mouth and set it on fire.

「Fuuuuu...That's calming」

Meanwhile...Kei-chan's body is bleeding.  
Every time Kei-chan's heart moved, blood overflows.  
His body is getting colder every second...

「oh...Onee-chan...it's cold...really cold!」  
「...Kei-chan」

I embraced Kei-chan's body.  
I cried...clinging to him.  
My tears fell to Kei-chan's face.

「...Oh...Onee-chan's tears...they're warm...!」

...Kei-chan

「...It's okay, Onee-chan...」

Then...  
Kei-chan stopped moving...  
aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa...!!  
My screams and tears can't stop.  
...It's exploding.

...I'm bursting out...!

...Help me, Kei-chan...!

「...Now then」

Saying that, Rosalind takes out a phone from her handbag.

「Hey...what are you doing!」

Kyouko-san shouts but it was too late...

『...Rosalind? What's wrong...Hey, where are you!』

the voice leaks out from the phone.

That is her brother

...Cesario Viola

「...Sorry brother, I was done in...I'm finished」

Rosalind whispers to the phone.,

『Done in?...By who?!...Hey!』

The voice on the other side is yelling

「Kei-chan died...Kei-chan died here」

...Kei-chan

...He died?

『Hey...what's going on!? Rosalind! Did you chase down the guys who took Kei?!』

「That's right...I made a blunder and got cornered. I'm no more. I've got a bullet in my internal organs...!」

『You...Kei's also done in...?』

「Didn't I tell you earlier...Seriously...you're really dimwitted...!」

『Who...who did it! Who shot you and Kei...!』

...At that time.

Rosalind looked at me...

Then she smiled

「...Yasuko」

...Yasuko

...Najima Yasuko

That was my real name.

Viola and others are calling me『Yasuko』...

「Kei-chan and I were shot by『Yasuko...!』」

Rosalind...

She didn't want her brother to know she shot Kei-chan.

Therefore...she pushed the sin to me.

『...Yasuko did?』

Rosalind's eyes opened wide...!

「That's right! Kei-chan and I were killed by Yasuko!!!」

...Duuun!!

At that time...Rosalind's head was blown away.

...It was Sensei.

Sensei came from the entrance.

The pistol she's holding has white smoke rising from it.

「...You let her talk too much Kyouko-san」

...Sensei said

「O-Oh, right. Mina」

Kyouko-san picks up the phone from Rosalind's bleeding head.

Then, she spoke.

「...It's me, Kyouko • Dothnomechey」

---

## 183. In the silent Night...

---

『.....Kyouko・Dothnomechey ? 』

Viola's voice comes from the dead Rosalind's phone.

「I'm called『Kyouko Messer』in Brazil」

『Why is someone from Brazil hindering me...!』

「I wonder...there might be a connection...your sister's remains will be left in front of the rental villa in Malibu beach. You'll see it immediately so I'll let you take care of it...!」

『Kei...What about Kei?』

「It is as your sister said...he's dead...!」

『Did you kill Rosalind and Kei?!』

...No good

Before Kyouko-san was able to answer『yeah, that's right』

I took the phone.

「...No, it's me! Yasuko!」

I can't let these people be troubled by Kei-chan and I...

Cesario Viola's target of hate...

I have to take it...!

「I killed them! If he's going to be your toy then I'd rather have him dead!」

I screamed.

『...Then...you killed Rosalind and Kei?』

「...That's right!」

...I

I'd like to die...

The feelings of wanting to die...

I shouted those to Viola.

『...Shit, I'll kill you. Yasuko...I'll never forgive you...!』

Viola's voice from the other side of the phone is low.

『I'll let men gangbang you a thousand time, I'll leave you half-dead...No matter where you hide, I'll definitely find you...remember that...!』

Kyouko-san then stole the phone from me.

「...It's been a long talk. It seems that we're going to be killing each other the next time we meet」

『Killing each other? Don't joke...I'll only slaughter you all one-sidedly. I'll exterminate every ally Yasuko has. Cesario Viola-sama is declaring that...!』

「Is that so?...I'll expect that then」

『You don't get it at all...just how much I love Rosalind and Kei...!』

「You're the one who don't get it...Just how much the world hate you...」

『W-Whaat!』

「Do your best on chasing us. I'll wait in Brazil...Bye Adeus. Cesario ! ! 」

『...W-Wait!』

Kyouko-san ended the call.

「I can't go back in Brazil for a while then...!」

In the end...Kyouko-san shouldered everything...

「Well fine...My friends in brazil won't be scared off by an American criminal...」

Saying that...she smiled at me.

Then, she turned to Maru-chan...

「Margo...take out the men who we took out then this woman's remains outside. Drag them to the other side of the parking lot...!」

「...Roger!」

Margo-san runs out.

「Mina...how's your negotiation with Joan Slim?」

「No problem...they'll be waiting for us offshore」

「...Okay. By the way...why did you shoot Rosalind?」

Sensei answered without changing her expression



「If that continues...she'll tell information about us」

「I don't mind...that's good if he goes all out」

Kyouko-san criticized Sensei's behavior.

「...Well, it can't be helped. We can't do anything this late」

Next...her eyes turned to Shirasaka Sousuke.

Shirasaka has been at his wits' end after the gunfire.

He's trembling...

He leaked out from his pants...

「You smelly man over there! You're unrelated to this case...okay?」

「I-I get it, Kyouko!」

「...How many knows your that you have contact with Rosalind?」

「T-Those guys who you took down and the manager of the back casino only」

「You...there's no way you exposed our real names to them did you?」

「Even I am a member of an advertising Agency. I'm not an idiot to not know that it's dangerous if our real names were exposed...」

Kyouko-san snorted.

「No, you're a abysmal idiot. I think there's four or five that knows our true colors」

「W-What are you saying!」

「Well, you'll know after watching for a while...Cesario Viola might come to Japan just to kill you...」

「Hey, don't threaten me...Kyouko!」

Shirasaka Sousuke looks up at Kyouko-san while trembling...

「Well fine...I'll be erasing your footprint in this area. Don't go back to the hotel, go to Las Vegas」

「...I-I have my suitcase in the hotel and my souvenirs to my daughters too...!」

「...Give it all up. I'll have it stolen and bring it all to Las Vegas. You do have your passport, money, and phone with you, right?」

「...I do」

「...What about your laptop?」

「That's on the rental car outside」

「Then, no problem... I'll have an acquaintance of mine collect your luggage in

the hotel. Take a domestic flight to Las Vegas...through Vancouver then return to Japan. If you stay in Los Angeles, then expect that you're dead」

「...G-Got it, I'll do as you say」

Shirasaka Sousuke stood up

「Also...don't ever try to make a move on this girl...okay?」

Kyouko-san points at me.

「There's no way I will...That's a girl Cesario Viola aims at...!」

Shirasaka looks at me with his vulgar eyes.

「Mina and I will be taking this girl. She'll be raised in『Kuromori』...!」

Shirasaka's shocked...!

「Hey, Kyouko...are you sane?」

Kyouko-san smiled.

「I am...! Next time, in case you try to obstruct any of my actions...I will tell Viola that this child is in『Kuromori』」

「Hey...Kyouko!」

「Who was the representative of『Kuromori』again? Viola's first target will become Sousuke I guess...!」

Kyouko-san's voice ridicules Shirasaka Sousuke who fell silent.

「Let me tell you...the underground network in Japan is far more detailed than you think. I can just secretly inform Viola your name and portrait...even your surface work, address, and your family...」

「S-Stop that...if you do that...it'll trouble the surface company of Shirasaka Family...!」

Kyouko-san looks at Shirasaka with sharp eyes.

「Are you an idiot?...Especially, you're exceeding that level! The enemy is Cesario Viola. It won't end with just your wife and two daughters, your brother his family...and every member of your clan...get ready to have all of them get gangbanged by Viola's members and killed...!」

「Hey...spare me from that, Kyouko!」

「Isn't this all your fault for making a contract with the underground community in Los Angeles without my permission...am I wrong?」

「...I get it. I'll do as you say」

「Then, do what I say already...!」

「...Yeah」

Shirasaka Sousuke stood up and ran.

This was the time Sensei's moving to take away Shirasaka Sousuke's rule over『Kuromori』completely...

Ever since that day, Shirasaka Sousuke's power over『Kuromori』is lost little by little...

That moment was definitely the turning point...

...but

I didn't understand it that time...

I can't do anything but cry, clinging to Kei-chan's remains...

「...Sadly, we can't take that child」

Kyouko-san told me...

「However, we'll burn this child along with this villa so that even the remains won't be taken by Viola...!」

Kyouko-san...

「I'll die too. Together with Kei-chan...!」

...I want to die

...I want to die.

...Kei-chan

「Hmm, will that please that dead child there?」

...Kyouko-san?

「You're still alive aren't you?! That child gave you that life, didn't he?! He saved your life, didn't he?!」

「...That's right, but」

...I

I just want to die.

I want to die...together with Kei-chan

「...But, I!」

「But, that's bullshit!」

Kyouko-san slapped my cheek

..... ! ! !

「...Does it hurt?」

「...It hurts」

「Look...you're alive! You're alive that's why it hurts! Don't kill your heart selfishly!」

Kyouko-san grabbed my hair...

She pulled me to the entrance...

「Nooo, Kei-chan! Kei-chaaan!」

Kei-chan's corpse is getting away!

I don't want to part!

...Kei-chan!

「Kei's here!」

Kyouko-san thrusts out the mirror in front of the door to me.

「Open your eyes...look!」

...Inside the mirror.

Kei-chan was there.

His clothes are bloodstained...

His eyes and mouth were opened wide as he looks at the mirror...

That was me...

Kei-chan's twin sister.

Our faces look completely alike.

That's right...we

Ever since we were born...

We're a twin sibling that looks alike...!!

「As long as you're alive then Kei's living too...! Think about that! Therefore, live desperately!...for Kei's sake!」

...Kei-chan's sake?

「You're living two times the amount...for Kei's share too. You have to be happy two times more!」

Kyouko-san said...!

「Now, let's get ready to depart. You can't get on Joan's ship with that bloody clothing!」

I changed my bloodstained clothes...

The clothes I wore when we were taken from Rosalind to the villa...

It's not my clothes...

It's the clothes Kei-chan and I wore

「...Look

Kyouko-san handed me a scissor.

「Cut Kei's hair...I'll let you take that much

I cut Kei-chan's hair with my trembling hands.

I wrapped it in a handkerchief and put it on my pocket.

「Leave the scissors in Kei's chest

Kyouko-san said.

「If I recall, the manners in Japan...you have to leave an edge tool on the remains so he won't be taken away by the demon」

I put the scissors on Kei-chan's chest.

That's the last time I touched Kei-chan.

「Let's go...!」

I stand up staggering.

「...Kei-chan」

Kei-chan's death face looks in pain.

Kei-chan...I think his face looks always so painful

「Hey...!」

Kyouko-san held my shoulder and we went out of the room.

Riding the boat...I saw the whole villa well.  
I can tell the position of the living room.  
That's where kei-chan is...  
I left Kei-chan.

Kyouko-san and Maru-chan...  
They scattered gasoline outside the villa.  
Then...they set it on fire.

...Burning  
...The villa is burning  
...Kei-chan's burning

「Mina, set sail」

Kyouko-san and Maru-chan leapt into the boat...  
Then she told Sensei on the driver seat.

...Bubobobobobobo!!!!

The motor starts and the boat leaves the shore...  
The burning Villa...

Kei-chan...

They're going away from me...!

Heading towards the blue sea...

The green woods...

The red flame and black smoke rises...

Ah, I've seen this kind of fire before...I thought.

I saw such flames fading away when my father and mother were killed.

My life...the flame burns my family as usual...

...It's sad.

...It's miserable.

I thought.

I fainted in the boat...

When I woke up...I was on top of a bed.  
I feel that the whole room is shaking.  
Therefore...I knew that we're in a big ship.

「...Awake?」

Kyouko-san was there.  
Maru-chan and Sensei too...  
Everyone's smiling at me.

「It's already safe. This is Joan Slim's ship...!」

I'm saved?  
...I was saved.

「I looked you up in Japan's database. I wonder how you write your name in Kanji?」

Sensei gave me a pen and paper.  
My Kanji name...  
I thought that I won't ever write my name in Japanese again 「Okay...done」

I handed the paper with my name『奈島寧子』written on it.

「Natou Neiko...?!」

Kyouko-san who's reading it from the side read it as such 「It's Najima Yasuko...」

I answered...

「Liar...You can't read Yasuko there. It's actually Neiko, right?」

Kyouko-san who's a non-Japanese Brazilian...strongly insists that her Kanji reading isn't wrong.

「Kei's sister is Nei, right...am I wrong?」

Kei's sister...Nei

「Right, it's a good disturbance on Viola's pursuit...let's change the Kanji's reading」

Sensei said.

「Even if the writing is the same, it'll be a different name when it comes to English... We'll hide the Najima Yasuko name, and you'll be Natou Neiko starting today」

「Neiko's hard to say...Nei should be fine. Let's make it Nei」

Kyouko-san said

Therefore...I

From that day, I became Natou Nei

That's right...not Yasuko anymore.

Yasuko disappeared in that flame.

I'm Nei...

I changed my life to Nei.

「There's some soup. Try to eat even if you force yourself...!」

Kyouko-san brought the plate to me.

...But.

Margo...bring a mirror. Size doesn't matter」

Kyouko-san told Maru-chan

「Sure」

Margo-san brought a handglass from the restroom.

「Look at the mirror...Nei」

In the mirror...there's a crying child

That's me...

Nei...she has Kei-chan's face.

「When this girl is crying, Kei's gonna feel sad...therefore, eat」

I took the spoon.

I scooped the soup, put it in my mouth...then swallowed.

I feel blood gathering in my stomach...

The soup is becoming my blood and flesh.

「If the girl in the mirror is energetic, Kei would be pleased...live with that thought. Okay, Nei?」

Kyouko-san said.

Therefore, I

I look at the mirror every time something happens.

Happy things, sad things, even hard things...

I look at the face in the mirror...

If I look in the mirror...I can meet Kei-chan.



Kei-chan is living inside me.  
Therefore...I'm alive.  
I eat meals for Kei-chan's sake.  
I laugh for Kei-chan's sake.  
When I laugh, Kei-chan's laughing too...  
Therefore...I smile as much as possible.  
I laugh happily.

It's for Kei-chan's sake...  
For Kei-chan's sake...  
Kei-chan's sake...



The school in midnight...the monitor room concealed under the principal's office.  
Nei-san's long story finally finished.

「That was three years ago. You now know why Viola's aiming at me don't you?」

The monitor room quiets down.  
Mana and Megu were sleeping in the same air mat.  
Perhaps, Yukino too...  
Katsuko-nee's sleeping  
Minaho-neesan's not here...  
The one's awake are Me, Nei-san, Michi, and Margo-san...

「You see...sometimes, I still don't understand myself!」

Nei-san looks afar and said.

「Am I really happy, sad...my heart's in a mess, it screams. 『Help me, help me, help me!』」

...Nei-san

「...At those times, I look in the mirror. Kei-chan's inside the mirror after all. I feel relived. I feel safe...when I feel that I'm about to burst...the face in the mirror smiles. That's not my face...that's Kei-chan's face. I'm healed by the face of Kei-chan inside the mirror! Ahaha, that's funny isn't it?!」

...I

I embraced Nei-san's body...

「...Nei-san」

「What's wrong? Yo-chan...Sorry My strange story is scary isn't it?」

Nei-sann said then pats my head.

「...Sorry, Yo-chan」

Nei-san wants to be an『Onee-san』

Nei-san lost Kei-chan...

The emotion that's piled up in her heart is swelling, and about to explode.

...This person

She has lost the one she poured her love on.

「...Onee-san」

I told Nei-san

「...I'll be Nei-san's brother...I will...!」

「Un...Thanks」

Nei-san embraced me gently

「Yo-chan's really kind」

But...

Michi speaks in the very dim light.

「I think that doesn't solve the fundamental problem...」

I'm surprised.

「...It's impossible to be her twin brother」

I know that

「That person named Kei is already dead...」

Nei-san's body trembled from Michi's words.

「Even if it's not a fundamental solution...Yoshida-kun's existence has been a good influence for Nei...」

Margo-san who's silent all this time spoke up.

「Yoshida-kun has the power to heal the problems in women's heart...!」

Margo-san looks at me.

「Nei's been stable compared to before...Katsuko-san and Minaho are the same. Even your master, Misuzu-san is the same, am I wrong?」

「Well...true, that might be the case...」

Margo-san smiles

「I think it's a wonderful power...therefore, I try not to be as close to Yoshida-kun as possible...!」

...Margo-san?

「I'm in the combat force after all. If I get healed too much, my movements will become dull in case of emergency. Therefore, I try to keep away from him」

...Is that so?

「But...I'm really grateful to you. Before they met you, Minaho and Katsuko-san were in a dangerous situation. Especially Minaho...although I was warning her quite a lot, I think that it's possible for her to make a mistake on an important situation...!」

Margo-san said.

「She's stable thanks to Yoshida-kun...No, since she's not giving herself to the revenge alone and take consideration of Yoshida-kun, Megumi-chan and the other children, I think she can accomplish her plans very well. If she goes with her initial momentum...『I misjudged my resolution and drive Shirasaka Sousuke』therefore, she'll fail in the middle of the plan」

...Is that so?

Is my existence a factor why Minaho-neesan and others work well?

Even though I'm just a drag?

Therefore...I'd like to be useful even for a bit.

「I think that it's good that Yoshida-kun is making contact with Nei. Even if you can't see it as a『sibling play』...Nei right now can't make a contact with a boy except in that form. That's why I think it's fine」

「...But, I」

...That's right, I

「I really want to be Nei-san's brother. I'd like to help Nei-san...!」

...Nei-san

「...Thank you, Yo-chan. I really thank you...!」

Then...

Margo-san told me.

「That's not it...Yoshida-kun」

...Eh?

「Nei wants a『brother』existence therefore you think want to be Nei's『brother』...」

...That is

「But...you actually love Nei as a『man』 Not as a『brother』...!」

...That might be the case.

I'm a lone child.

I don't how does a『brother』love his『sister』

...But

「I do like Nei-san. I'll do anything that Nei-san wants...Nei-san's important to me...I'm fine whatever I become as long as Nei-san's happy...!」

「...Yo-chan?!」

Nei-san's confused.

「That would be troubling」

「...EH?」

「Because...I I can never become happy!」

...Nei-san!?

「If I become happy...then I would be restless inside...and I'll close myself deep inside...!」

Nei-san...separates from me.

「As long as Kei-chan is inside me...I won't forgive myself. I'm a woman that

will never become happy...!」

Nei-san said...

---

## 184. The role in the Family

---

「...Nei-san」

I just throw the words that pop in my head to Nei-san.

「I think there's nobody in the world who must not become happy...!」

...Err

「Nei-san...you decide by yourself that『you can not become happy』...but that's not true in reality...because」

Eei...just say it!

「I'll surely make Nei-san happy...! I'm an idiot so I don't know how to make Nei-san happy right now but...but, I'll think about it desperately! I'll test out everything! I'll devote myself for it!」

「...Yo-chan?!」

「Of course...I think it'll take a lot of time. Therefore...give me some time. For the time being...ten years. No, twenty years...if I can't do it in twenty years then make it my lifetime. I'll make you happy even if it takes a lifetime...that's why!」

Nei-san's tears shine in the dim room.  
She's looking at me.

「...Fufu, Yoshida-kun, is that a proposal?」

Margo-san said with a wry smile.

「It's not! It's not something that not-serious!!」

I...!

「My my...proposals are serious you know!」

Margo-san said.

「Well...that's true but that's not it! It's not that I want to marry Nei-san or

even make her my lover! I just want to make her happy! I don't mind even if Nei-san marries a man other than me. But, I just want Nei-san to be smiling and be happy...!」

My head is in a mess.

After listening to Nei-san's very sad story...

「I...I don't understand happiness. How do you make people happy? What can I do to make people happy? I don't know. I...What should I do?」

Nei-san holds my hand.

「...Thank you, Yo-chan. Those words are enough for me!」

Nei-san looks at me while shedding scalding tears!

「No! That's not it! Isn't this just words?! What I want is to make you happy from the bottom of your heart!」

「...I'm happy. Yo-chan is saying that for me」

「No no no...I haven't done anything yet! I will do it from now on! I'll do my best! I don't know what to do or what to work hard on but...I'll desperately work hard for it...!」

...Miserable.

...Frustrating

I don't know what to do at all...

But, I knew...

Right now, I...

I can't heal the sadness in Nei-san's heart from the loss of Kei-san...

...Dammit!

「...Yo-chan, that is good enough for me now」

Nei-san looks down and said.

...No.

That's not the case...!

「...Nei. Could you stop depending on your brother?」

Minaho-neesan's voice comes from a high place.

Minaho-neesan is going down the stairs from the principal's office.

「...Sensei, what do you mean by that?」

Nei-san looks up at Minaho-neesan and asked.

「...Nei, how old are you this year?」

「...Eighteen」

Nei-san answered.

「You were the youngest of『Kuromori』three years ago. Yukiyo joined in after that but...both of you were on the same age but you don't mingle that much. Agnes is a concealed existence...」

Minaho-neesan speaks while going down the stairs slowly.

「But...it's different now. Right now...you're an『Elder sister』...!」

Nei-san's surprised.

「Weren't you the one who said that you want to start the『Sister's Association』?」

That's right...Nei-san was the one who proposed『Sister's Association』

「...Yes, Sensei」

「You have always wanted to be the elder sister figure, right?」

Minaho-neesan smiles at Nei-san.

「Un...I think so...I」

Minaho-neesan looks at Megu and Mana who's sleeping...

「Is Megumi and Mana not cute?」

「...I think they're cute」

「What about Misuzu?」

「...I think she's cute」

「...Then what do you think about Yoshida-kun?」

「He's unbearably cute!」

...Nei-san shouted with a serious look

「Then...stop saying that『I can't become happy』 The『little sisters and brother』would be worried if their『elder sister』said that, right?」

「...I」



「If you want to be the『Onesasan』...then strengthen yourself!」

Nei-san's eyes have large tears spilling

「...Yes, Sensei」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「Yoshida-kun...Nei's misunderstanding it a bit」

...Misunderstanding?

「Nei's definitely the elder sister among the twins but...Nei's feeling of『I have to be the elder sister』is strong But...twins are special aren't they? In the end... even they're in the same age, Kei-kun was the man... Actually, she has lived as a『younger sister』for long...protected by Kei-kun...!」

I see...even in Nei-san's story earlier...

Kei-san, as one of the twin sibling...as a man...he protected Nei-san. He didn't have the inferiority complex just because he was the『younger brother』  
Nei-san has the inferiority complex of『I have to become the Elder sister』...but, Nei-san herself who has that complex has always been protected by someone all the time.

「Even now...Nei's being pampered by Yoshida-kun who's much younger than her. If you really want to become Yoshida-kun's『Onesasan』...then shouldn't you take the initiative and act to make Yoshida-kun happy」

...Nei-san

「Yes...I think so too. I'm a weak girl. I was wrong...!」

Her tears spill down...

「Do you think the『Onesasan』who thinks『I can never be happy』...can make her『brother』happy?」

「...I don't think so」

「Then...running away from Yoshida-kun this late won't be allowed. There's nobody else who loves you as much as this boy...!」

「...Yes」

...Nei-san

...My Nei-san

「Margo...I'll take over the monitoring. Take a shower with Nei」

Minaho-neesan told Margo-san.

「This girl cries too much that her face turned horrible...help her out」

「...Roger, Minaho」

Margo-san stand up from her seat and goes to Nei-san.

「Now...Margo-oneesan will be taking care of you...!」

「...Maru-chan」

「I'm Nei's『Oneesan』after all...it's okay to get spoiled by me as much as you want...!」

「Uwaaaaaaaaa!」

Nei-san clings to Margo-san then cries.

「Hmm...I'll listen to you in the shower room...okay?」

Margo-san turned to me...

「Don't worry about her...I've been her『Oneesan』for three years already...!」

She smiled and said...

Then...the two disappeared in the shower room...

「...Not convinced, Yoshida-kun?」

Minaho-neesan takes a seat in the monitor room then asks me.

「...No」

...I

Either way...I don't have the strength to help Nei-san.

I'm just a kid.

I'm not an adult like Minaho-neesan nor Margo-san...

...Dammit

「Don't make that kind of face...stop trying to bear everything yourself.  
We're『family』aren't we...?」

...Eh?!

...Minaho-neesan?!

「You've got elder sisters you can talk to easily...on the other side, there are

some that can't be solved by the young ones. That's what『family』is, isn't it?」

Minaho-neesan just checks the monitor, she's not looking at me.

「Sorry...I don't get that」

I don't have any brothers...

I don't have any experience on family mingling either...

「Oh right...then make it easy to understand...Katsuko!」

Minaho-neesan called Katsuko-nee's name lightly!

「Yes, Ojou-sama!」

Katsuko-nee who should be sleeping raises her body.

「You...since when you were awake?」

「Since the start...I was worried what will Nei-sama tell him...」

...Eh?

...Katsuko-nee has always been awake?

「But...why did you pretend to be asleep?」

It doesn't matter if she's awake and participated in the talk.

「Well you see...I thought that it would be better for Nei-sama to talk in that situation when I'm asleep...!」

...Katsuko-nee?

「Margo-sama would be enough for the role of『Elder sister』...Margo-sama and Nei-sama has been together in their past experience for a long time aren't they? In this case, I thought that Nei-sama will be able to talk to the end without her feelings exploding because Margo-sama is here...!」

...I see

Margo-san has seen Kei-san's death scene so Nei-san was able to talk about it calmly until the end.

「When I wake up at that time...Nei-sama will surely stop talking. In the end... Nei-sama wanted only you to listen to that story」

...only me?

「You don't get it? Cesario Viola came to Japan for just Nei-sama...it's a situation where we had to confront them. We act and think that it's natural to protect Nei-sama but Nei-sama herself is in pain」

「...Un」

「Therefore...she told you only...why Viola was supposed to be chasing her」

「Why...just me?」

Isn't it okay to tell Megu or Mana?

「She doesn't want to tell anyone her thoughts about her deceased brother but only you」

...About Kei-san?

Katsuko-nee smiled...

「You still don't understand it?...It can't be helped. You're a child who doesn't have a first love yet...!」

...First love?

「Nei-sama really likes you. Therefore...she wanted you to know the sad memories hidden in the deepest part of her heart」

Nei-san likes me?

...No way

「Then...what is my existence?」

Michi makes a dumbfounded face.

「Kudou-san, you were used as a pretext for the subject. You're not a member of『Kuromori』...so even if you hear it, she thought it'll be okay. Above all, you're a child that knows the underworld aren't you? You have the『tolerance』to listen to a scary story? 」

Minaho-neesan said.

I noticed from those words.

It wasn't only Katsuko-nee who's pretending to be asleep while listening to the story...

「Minaho-neesan has been listening up in the stairs all this time?」

「That's right. If I appear...then Nei will stop talking. It was a very good chance

this time so I made her talk until the end」

「...Good chance?」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「The shape of Nei's words that has been accumulated for three years would be okay. Letting out those words, her emotions to someone is very important... It's really good that Yoshida-kun listened...we can't free Nei's heart after all」

「...Why?」

「Margo and I were in that place. There's no need for her to say anything new... we knew everything after all. Rather, if we talk about Kei's death from our point of view, it would result to hurt Nei's heart more」

...I see

「But...she doesn't tell anyone. Unable to say it is painful. Those strong emotions have been accumulating in Nei's heart for a long time...so pitiable」

...Nei-san

「Therefore...it's fine for now. Nei was able to tell you her past. That's fine for now. Even this is a great progress...」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Anyway, remember this...Nei's body may be an adult but she's childish. Yoshida-kun, I'd like you to think that she's the youngest sister」

Nei-san's a little sister.

「That's right...even in her relationship with Kei-san she has always been the younger sister, she's been treated as the younger sister in 『Kuromori』all this time. Nei's feeling of being the little sister is deeply ingrained in her. She's dependent just like Yoshida-kun and Megumi...」

Right...Nei-san has someone with her all the time.

Usually, Margo-san.

She has the aura of『have to be protected』...so it can't be helped.

True, Nei-san is our little sister.

「It doesn't mean that you have to spoil her. The wound in her heart is too big because her brother has died...so take time to slowly heal it...!」

...Minaho-neesan.

「She never opened up her heart since the start...she got in good terms with Margo when they entered our school...she really takes some time」

Minaho-neesan leaks out a sigh.

「It'll be our task from now on to have Nei open up her heart to Yoshida-kun and everyone. Everyone, let's watch them over warmly」

...Everyone

...Us, everyone.

「Us, as the elder sisters...Katsuko, Margo, And I have different standpoints to protect Nei. Our roles are different. I'm her guide. Margo's the『intimate elder sister』...Katsuko purposely takes a close distance with Nei therefore she becomes the one she can talk with if she can't consult Margo...!」

Minaho-neesan and others are on the『senior group』...

Each of them are aware of their own roles.

I see, that's why Nei-san calls Minaho-neesan『Sensei』

「The young ones should think of their own roles too. Or rather...everyone except Yoshida-kun seems to know it already...!」

...Minaho-neesan?

Minaho-neesan looks towards Megu and Mana who were sleeping.

「I've changed my opinion about you. I formally welcome you as a member of『Kuromori』...Mana-san」

...Mana?

Mana who should've been sleeping shows a V-sign with her hand...

You were awake?

「You are the child who's the most『little sister』 You were able to read the atmosphere at such times」

I see...so she won't get in the way of Nei-san's talk

She has been pretending to sleep all this time...!

「Megumi too...Thank you」

Megu who's lying down doesn't move her body at all.  
But, when Minaho-neesan said that...as expected, she opened her eyes.  
Megu and Mana were being considerate to Nei-san.

「Both of you...make it so you haven't heard that story. Megumi...you don't want to hear Yoshida-kun's confession to Nei, do you...that's why just continue to pretend to be asleep」

...Eh?!

「Don't worry, Megumi. Yoshida-kun's definitely holding a deep affection to Nei but...as he has said a while ago...it is different from the usual romantic feelings」

Minaho-neesan told Megu.

「This person is really Nei's『first love』 Therefore Nei has become a supreme existence inside him. It's different from what he thinks about you and Misuzu. Yoshida-kun's emotion towards you is a proper romantic emotion...!」  
「...What does that mean?」

Megu gets up.  
She's really completely awake.

「Yoshida-kun won't depend on Nei. She's his『first love』so he's trying to show off, just like earlier...he's making such a big promise he can't even do...!」  
「No...I'm serious...!」

Minaho-neesan looks at me then smiles wryly.

「That's why Yoshida-kun's a『trouble child』...!」

...I

「Do you think that loving one-sidedly is a healthy relationship?」  
「...That's」  
「If you say『I'll make you happy for a lifetime』it would make women happy but...that's a proposal...but when you say『I don't mind if you marry a man other than myself』to be honest, it would trouble women...!」

Is that so...

「...Yoshida-kun. Answer honestly, are you thinking the same on Megumi and

others?」

...Eh?!

「Megumi, Misuzu-san, Mana-san too...if a better man appears for them, are you willing to back away?」

...That is.

I have no other choice.

I think that I should do that.

「Look at Megumi properly then be honest with your feelings...!」

...I

I look at Megu

Megu looks at me worriedly.

...Her long and narrow beautiful eyes.

...Tall and slim body.

...She's definitely a beauty to everyone's eyes.

「I don't want to hand her over to anyone」

Megu looks at me in surprise.

「I want to keep Megu for myself forever...!」

Those were my honest feelings.

「Then...take care of Megumi throughout your life」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Yes...」

...I strengthen my resolve.

「That's how it is Megumi. For Yoshida-kun, Nei is his『Supreme first love』but you are his『real lover』」

「...I'm very happy」

Megu's cheeks blushed and she answered.

「What about Mana-san?」

Minaho-neesan asked me.



「Mana's mine forever. I won't hand her to other men」

Mana who's on top of the air mat opens her eyes.  
She opens her legs wide to provoke me.

「Isn't that obvious? Mana is Onii-chan's sex slave. I need to have sex with Onii-chan for the rest of my life...!」

...Mana

「...What do you think about Misuzu-sama?」

Michi asks me

...Her eyes are serious

I remember Misuzu's figure.

That radiant smile...

Her delicate body...

Misuzu's hot sex...

「She's my『woman』 I won't hand her to anyone...!」

「Are you ready to fight Kouzuki-sama then?」

Misuzu's grandfather...Kouzuki『Kakka』has decided Misuzu's fiancé already...

「Un...I won't let Misuzu be married for convenience. She's my『woman』for the rest of her life...!」

I decided.

I'll accept the results of what I have done...

「...That's absurd. Saying that everyone's your『woman』」

Michi said.

That's right...this is absurd.

But that's fine.

It's fine to be absurd.

「...I don't mind」

Megu said.

「Mana too」

「Katsuko's okay about it. Also, Nagisa too...」

Mana...Katsuko-nee

「You should drag Nei-san over here sooner. Onii-chan wants to enjoy the『first love』feeling more but you see...it's easier if you make her your『woman』」

Mana said.

「But...Nei-san already had sex with Onii-chan right? Are you always having such a high tension sex?」

Oh right.

Mana doesn't know that Nei-san's still a virgin...

「My, having sex while confessing love in that high tension feels good you know...!」

Katsuko-nee made a good lie.

「I see...un, that might be right. But, you can't do it a lot with that tension. Mana doesn't want that. Mana wants Onii-chan to feel good a lot of times...!」

Mana smiles.

「Now then...Megumi, Mana-san and Kudou-san should sleep. Try to have at least a short nap...」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...What about Onii-chan? Come over here Onii-chan. Sleep between Mana and Megu-oneechan!」

Mana invites me but...

「Yoshida-kun's heart isn't settled yet right?」

...Minaho-neesan

「...Yes」

I'm still not convinced.

At my own powerlessness.

I can't help Nei-san.

My chest feels sick.

「Then, what to have sex with Mana? You'll calm down after doing it once.  
Ah...it doesn't need to be only once」

...Mana smiles at me.

But I

「Sorry...I don't feel like that right now」

「Is that so?...That's sad. If you want to do it then say it anytime. Mana's body is for Onii-chan's sake after all!」

Megu who's next to Mana has a complex expression.

...Right

If I have sex with Mana here...

I also have to do it with Mana.

I declared that everyone's my『woman』but...

It's hard to keep the relationship of my『women』well 「Yoshida-kun...try taking a stroll」

Minaho-neesan said

...Un I think that's a good idea.

I'd like to think alone...

...About myself

...About Nei-san

...About the future

「Right, Minaho-neesan. I'll take a walk」

I got up and wore my uniform pants

The top...is it okay to wear just a T-shirt?

「Then, I'm going」

When I'm putting on my shoes...

「Ah...bring that animal there too」

Minaho-neesan said.

「She's been lying down there all this time...won't she suffer if she lacks exercise?」

Minaho-neesan points at Yukino.

「...Eh? I'm taking Yukino?」

Minaho-neesan smiles wryly.

「You haven't noticed it? Yukino-san's been awake all this time」

Yukino's pretending to be asleep too?

She was listening to our talk?!

---

## 185. Night Stroll

---

...Yukino?

「Isn't that right...Yukino-san?」

When Minaho-neesan talked to Yukino...  
She slowly gets up.  
Then...she stares at me with a bad mood face.  
What happened?  
She really looks like an animal.

「Let's see...if you're going to take a stroll on the school, how about you go to the AV room in the third floor?」

Minaho-neesan said then she handed me the key.

「Here...the key to the AV room. Also, the flashlight's on the table over there」

The time is a few minutes after four in the morning.  
It's still dark outside.  
It's a bit of test of courage.

「When you walk in the school, turn the flashlight towards the floor...don't try to point the light outside the window even by mistake. It'll be a big problem if someone sees it outside right?」

Un...It would be bad if they know that there are people inside the school.

「You can turn on the lights on the AV room. That room won't leak light outside...」

...Eh?

That means that the shading curtain is closing the windows perfectly?  
...Then that means

Minaho-neesan was in the AV room until a while ago.

Did she prepare anything in the visual room?

「Here's the key to Yukino-san's chains...leave the collar as it is」

Minaho-neesan handed me a small key

「...Un」

I go towards Yukino.

「Yukino...turn your neck here. I'll remove the chains」

Yukino doesn't want it

「Don't touch me」

She hates being touched by me.

「You've been chained all this time. Don't you want to move your body even for a bit?」

「...I do」

「Then...let's go for a walk」

Yukino thought for a moment...

「...Got it」

Then she presents me her neck.

...Kachari.

The chains tied to her collar comes off...

「Then let's go」

「R-Right...」

Yukino stands up...

She stretched her limbs...

As expected, it's seems it was uncomfortable for her being chained.

「...Minaho-san, I want to go too」

Megu said suddenly.

「Can I join the walk too...?」

Minaho-neesan...

「No...stay asleep there Megumi」

「Why...?」

Megu speaks in a strong voice.

「...You don't trust Yoshida-kun?」

Minaho-neesan said while looking at the monitor, not even turning to Megu.

「That's not the case but...」

「You don't want Yoshida-kun and Yukino-san to be alone together?」

「...Yes」

Megu said

「If it's Yukino, then I don't want it」

Minaho-neesan laughs

「It seems you're quite hated, Yukino-san」

Yukino grits her teeth.

「But, no...Megumi only wants to bind Yoshida-kun...!」

「...Minaho-san!」

「It's Yoshida-kun's decision on how will he deal with Yukino-san right?...If you were there then Yoshida-kun will be considerate of Megumi more than Yukino-san that he won't be able to make a decision」

...Decision

My relationship with Yukino from now on...6

I have to decide it by this morning

...So that's how it is?

「But...I」

Megu doesn't seem to be able to consent that Yukino and I will be alone together.

「...There's nothing you need to worry about」

Yukino said.

「Either way, it'll be the same as usual./ Halfway, this man will get horny and rape me...then ejaculate inside me. He's done it a lot of times so I'm already

used to it」

She glares at my face.

「...Where are we going to do it? You won't be able to hold it until we reach the AV room anyway right? Want to do it in the corridor? Or are you going to do it in the stairs like you did before? Fine...this body's been raped dozens of times already so just do what you want」

...Yukino's looking at me.

「Don't do it with Yukino anymore! I'll take care of Yoshi-kun by myself!」

Megu takes on Yukino's provocation.

「I know, Yoshi-kun...you're feeling pain after listening to Nei-san's story. The various emotions run over your body and you want to let it all out right?! I feel the same./ That's why do me! Yoshi-kun, release all of your pain inside me... please!!」

Megu speaks to me with a serious face.

...But

「You won't do...Megumi」

Minaho-neesna said coldly

「Why am I not good?!」

...That is

「...Yoshida-kun really cares about you」

...Megu's face turned cloudy.

「Yoshida-kun can't make you an outlet of his emotions...Yoshida-kun loves you from the bottom of his heart. That's why he'll never do anything cruel to you in sex」

「...But, I」

Megu looks down

「Megu-oneechan...we have a different role...」

Mana who's lying down next to Megu speaks.



「...Mana? A different role?」

「Megu-oneechan should just become Onii-chan's『Ideal classmate lover』 You can just have good high school lovers sex. Therefore, Megu-oneechan must not become a dazzling pervert in sex...!」

「...But」

「Ah...Megu-oneechan just wants to have that kind of sex」

「...Un」

...Err

「But...Megu-oneechan wants to do is just a『rape play』done by lovers right? You just want to make a lewd play, right?」

「...Right. Yeah, I think so」

「That's right. Do it in moderation...true rape is painful and scary...!」

...Mana, who was raped by me yesterday, losing her virginity in the process says.

「I'm Onii-chan's『sex slave』so...if Onii-chan wants to do it then I'll do rape or even SM but...I'm scared if it's too painful」

「I won't rape Mana again」

...I said

Mana smiles

「Thank you I love you Onii-chan!」

...Mana

「Mana's Onii-chan's『sex slave』but I'm also a『little sister』 Therefore, I'll be Onii-chan's cute sister Just like how Onii-chan treasures Mana with all his life... Mana will love Onii-chan too As a『slave』and as a『sister』 That is Mana's role!」

Mana told Megu with a smile.

「Therefore...if ever Onii-chan feels irritated after listening to Nei-san's story and wants to throw it to someone... Then Mana and Megu-oneechan can't take that. If it was us, then Onii-chan will be considerate of us...then he won't be able to let out his emotions, won't he?」

「...If only Nagisa was here. That girl has the power to heal those emotions. It's okay to take me as your partner but...no, I won't do. I'm sure that the weight of

the sex will just bigger then it'll continue to be a marathon of sex」

Katsuko-nee said.

「If Onii-chan's just depressed then Katsuko-san would be the best partner for it. But, you just want to let out what's in your heart like a scream right?」

...Mana

Why do you know my psychological condition that much!?

「Right...that's the case as far as I can see in his expression, that must be the case」

...Katsuko-nee

Is that so? Is it obvious in my face...

「Therefore...let's leave this to Yukino-san as Yuzuki-san says...!」

Mana tells Megu.

「Yukino-san's our enemy so Onii-chan doesn't like Yukino-san at all right? Yukino-san is enough if Onii-chan wants to let out his frustrations」

As usual...Mana's horrible towards Yukino

Is she being harsh on Yukino so she can seal away『Shirasaka Maika』?

Also...Mana doesn't know my relationship with Yukino in the first place.

I told Mana that I hold special emotions towards Yukino but Mana hasn't received those words directly.

She just thinks that I raped Yukino as a part of the revenge of『Kuromori』...

「Since Yukino-san's here then it's convenient for her to be raped by Onii-chan」

「...Maika!」

Yukino shouts at her sister.

「It's regrettable, it's not rape but sex!」

Mana flares up on her sister

「...Eh?!」

「Megu-oneechan and I and the other women have『sex』with Onii-chan! We're being loved! Making love!」

Mana barks

「Yukino-san's the only one who won't change like a stone even after being raped dozens of times! It'll always be rape, you're just a defective woman!」  
「What are you saying to your sister!」

Yukino still thinks that Mana is her sister.  
Her little sister that would withdraw after some of her screams.  
...But

「I'm Yoshida Mana...Onii-chan's slave and little sister. I'm Onii-chan's『woman』! I'm completely unrelated to Yukino-san!」

Mana turned her back to her sister then lied down.

「Therefore...Onii-chan should hurry up and finish his『break』with Yukino-san! Then once you've calmed down...sleep together with Mana. Mana will embrace Onii-chan tightly...!」

Mana said.

「...Maika, you see! I'm a member of Shirasaka house! I will never lose to this guy who rapes me!」

Yukino still swings her pride.

「...Yukino-san, are you still saying that even in this situation」

Mana said in disgust.

「You and I...No, Maika-san's a daughter of a murderer. It's already known in Japan. Shirasaka Sousuke is a demon that kidnaps a girl, rapes, confines, then kills her in the mountains. The Shirasaka clan will be banished. No...after that press conference, Moritsugu-oojisama would retire. There's nothing to support Yukino-san anymore. Shirasaka house won't be able to protect you」  
「...That's not true」

Yukino glares at her sister.

「Hmm, then why is Yukino-san's phone not ringing?」

...Mana?

Yukino trembles.

「...You know it don't you? Mana has left Yukino-san's phone in a place she can see. Your receiving doesn't light up does it?」

True...Yukino's phone is on top of the table where she can't reach but she can see.

「Even though Shirasaka Sousuke-san has been making so much fuss since earlier this evening and yet...why is nobody contacting Yukino-san? What is Yukino-san's mother, grandfather doing? Don't you think that it's strange there's no contact from the Shirasaka family?」

Mana accuses her sister.

「...you're not being contacted either」

Mana smiles when Yukino asked that.

「I've already told the people of Shirasaka that I'm on the side of『Kuromori』 I had sex with Onii-chan while being watched over by Yukino-san's mother, Ichikawa-san, and the lawyer Shirasaka Koutarou...!」

「...Maika!?」

「It felt really good. Onii-chan cherished Mana a lot so I'll devote my lifetime to Onii-chan. I'm fine being a『slave』forever No...I'd rather be a『slave』 I can't think of a life other than being Onii-chan's『sex slave...!』」

Mana threw her past and her family away.

Therefore...I have to give Mana more than that...

「...Ichikawa-san has chosen to break off with the Shirasaka house. Therefore Yukino-san's mother moved over there too. She only has her mind filled about what she has to do to save herself right? Therefore she forgot it...she thought that Yukino-san has been closing up herself at Shirasaka Sousuke-san's house. There's no way she'd imagine her being kidnapped by us...!」

Mana said『us』

She has completely become a member of『Kuromori』...

「Then...Yukino-san, what will you do? Are you going to live as Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter, being seen by everyone's cold eyes? Shirasaka house will never come to save you. Really...you should think about it seriously...!」

Yukino's trembling.

「How about you think of it while taking a walk with Onii-chan tonight?」

...That's right

Yukino have to decide about her future.

We're at crossroads.

「...Mana」

Megu calls out to Mana.

「Sorry...I've been thinking about myself and Yoshi-kun all this time. Sorry that I never thought about Mana's feelings」

The two on the same air mat.

Mana holds Megu's hand.

「It's fine Megu-oneechan...Mana doesn't know Megu-oneechan's feelings」

「...Mana, sorry」

「Don't apologize...it's fine. Aren't we『sisters』?」

...Sisters

True...Mana and Megu are half-sisters

...But

「We're both Onii-chan's『women』right? It's okay...Onii-chan will be coming back to us. He won't be going anywhere with a strange woman like Yukino-san. 『Kuromori』and『Sister's association』is the place for Onii-chan to return to」

A place to return...

That's a『home』

「When he comes back...let's embrace him tightly...let's fawn on Onii-chan a lot. Right...Oneechan?」

Mana and Megu smiled at each other.

「...Yoshi-kun, I'll polish myself more. I'll become a better woman」

Megu looks at me...

「Yoshi-kun, I'll become a much more attractive woman so that you'll come back to me immediately. This is for Yoshi-kun's sake ...Megu

「That's right...Mana will be a good girl. I'll become a super model for Onii-chan's sake after all...!」

Mana looks at me.

「I'll always return to Onii-chan. I'm Onii-chan's slave after all. I'll do all of my best so you keep loving me as your『slave』 I'll become a wonderful woman... !」

...Mana

「The young one's dreams must be nice. For the time being, I'll start maintaining this body line for fifteen more years」

Katsuko-nee said.

「...I'm joking. I'll become even a better woman. I won't lose. I'm not planning to take you from the『sisters』but I'll win with my charm as a woman. I will keep winning...!」

...Katsuko-nee

「Yoshida-kun...you already have a 『place to return to』 You get that?」

Lastly...Minaho-neesan speaks.

「...Yes」

I'm no longer alone

I have my responsibilities and duties towards my women.

「Now that you know that...take a walk with Yukino-san. Then, come back here!」

「...Got it」

I answered clearly...

Megu, Mana, and Katsuko-nee looks at me with passionate eyes.

Minaho-neesan laughs.

Yukino's just looking sullen

...And, Michi

She's just looking at me thinking about something.



Going up the stairs...we reach the principal's office.

「...I didn't know that there's this kind of mechanism in this school」

Yukino looks at the hidden door.

Coming from the principal's office...we go to the corridor.

I point the white light of the LED to the floor.

「Then...what are we going to do?」

Yukino asked.

「Are we going to the AV room right away or do you want to do it elsewhere?」

Yukino covers her chest.

I noticed it.

Yukino's nipples are already erect...

「...Let's go to the vending machine first」

I answered.

「...Eh?」

Yukino's surprised

「...You're thirsty right? Let's drink something」

「...U-Un」

Then we head towards the first floor

「...What would you like?」

I took out my wallet to find some coins.

「No thanks, I'll pay my share」

Yukino tries to take out her wallet from her torn up uniform...

「It's fine...I'll treat you a canned juice at least」

I push a coin in the vending machine

「...Which do you want?」

「Then...black coffee」

「Are you sure?」

「I don't take sugar during night」

「Oh」

I bought coffee then gave it to Yukino

「...Here」

「...Hm, thanks」

Should I get some coffee too?

Oh, but...my stomach feel sick.

Let's take a café au lait...low sugar

I buy a coffee can and open the lid.

The aroma of the coffee drifts in the air.

The light from the vending machine vaguely illuminates Yukino 「...It feels strange」

Yukino said after drinking coffee.

「The atmosphere of the school at night is completely different during daytime」

True...it feels mysterious

Also, there's a sense of relief.

「I'm in this kind of uniform...not even wearing an underwear. Even though I would be ashamed and unable to walk outside if it's daytime...it's fine now」

The school building at night is sealed up.

We know that it's only the two of us here.

Therefore...

I feel a strange intimacy with Yukino different from before 「Hm...then, who do you really like?」

Yukino asks me while holding the can.

「I get that you're quite crazy towards that senior named Natou Nei but. Well, true...she's a pitiful person who experienced various hardships...」

Yukino has been listening to Nei-san's story while pretending to be asleep.

「But...you even made a move on Megumi, Maika, and that Katsuko, right?」

...Nah.

It's not a relationship where I made a move on them.

Katsuko-nee and I...



「Well...it's you so who cares. But, who do you like the most?」

I...

「There's no first or second...I like everyone and I treasure them」

「Ha?...The hell? That's absurd」

「I'm fine being absurd...I'm fine being like that」

「What the hell...I don't get it at all...!」

Yukino drinks her coffee

「Well...thinking that it's a pervert like you, there's no way I would understand it...」

Yukino stares at the can...

「But...I don't like Maika and Megumi being caught in your poison. It feels so disgusting」

This is...

Is Yukino worried about her sisters, Mana and Megu?

No, she's not.

Yukino has always been dominating Mana and Megu all this time...

Especially Megu...she has been interfering with her horribly a lot of times.

Yukino thinks of Mana and Megu as her possessions.

She feels that her possessions were being taken by me.

「What about you?」

I said.

「Talking about someone who got caught by my poison...Yukino's on top. You're the one I had sex with the most...」

Yukino laughs.

「...Right, in the end, I'm the most victim here」

Then...she looks at me.

「Let's go to the AV room right now」

...Yukino?

「I just have to be raped again right? Go on, do it. Rape me as much as you

want like a doll...!」

Yukino said as if spitting.

「I'm already used to it...I'm completely fine with it already!」

Yukino looks at me with strong eyes but...

...You still don't get it after being violated so much.

There's no way Minaho-neesan didn't prepare anything in the AV room.

Yukino's going to experience another humiliating sex again...!

---

## 186. Yukino and I

---

I walk in the school building at night with Yukino...

Yukino's walking in dancing steps

「...What are you doing?」

I asked unconsciously.

「My body's feeling a bit dull...I haven't been moving a lot recently」

「...You just kept masturbating?」

「...That's not the case!」

Yukino sulks.

「I know it since Mana told us...you've masturbated for a whole day she said」

Yukino stops her steps.

「N-No way...that girl's just saying something without basis...!」

Yukino tries to fool me desperately.

「There's no way that's a lie...or rather, Mana won't lie to me」

「...Why can you say that?」

「...Mana had a hard time when she lied to us yesterday」

Speaking of which...the three of us stayed in a love hotel last night.

「...Hard time?」

「She was on the very last moment before being disposed by Minaho-neesan」

「...That means?」

「It means she was about to be killed...」

...Yukino's surprised.

「Un...it's really good that Mana had a change of heart. She kneeled and apologized naked...so she was forgiven」

「What the hell is that?」

「It can't be helped...Minaho-neesan had her sister killed by Shirasaka Sousuke and she can't give birth to a child anymore. Katsuko-nee and others were kidnapped when they were high school students and were forced to be prostitutes...so the original『revenge plan』was to rape his two daughters, force the elder sister to get pregnant and kill the little sister」

「...Absurd That's madness」

Yukino said.

「I get that Papa's a helplessly bad person but...Maika and I are unrelated to this. We didn't do anything wrong...!」

「Say that to the people who experienced cruelty from Shirasaka Sousuke. Everyone didn't do anything wrong and yet...Shirasaka Sousuke set his eyes on them and made derailed their lives」

「That said...it's wrong to exact revenge on the family!」

...Haa

Yukino's really an idiot.

This girl thinks that she's the center of the world.

「It's not that they're bursting out their anger towards Shirasaka Sousuke's family...the target of revenge is Shirasaka Sousuke in the end」

「Then why do we have to be raped!」

「Like I said...there's no choice but to show that Shirasaka Sousuke's family suffering to show the suffering of being deprived of their family?!」

「Eh...I'm raped so that Papa can suffer?!」

「...That's how it is 」

「Wait wait...what about my human rights?!」

...Hmm

「...Who knows」

「No way it's "Who knows"! It's written in the constitution that basic human rights must be defended!」

「Then...what about the human rights of the people who experienced cruelty from Shirasaka Sousuke?!」

「Even if you ask me that I don't know. Shouldn't they just appeal to the police

and the court?!」

「Then you do it too. Say that I'm the one who raped you. You can go to the police anytime...!」

Yukino fell silent.

「...What's wrong?」

...Yukino

「There's no way I can tell the police that...!」

「Right?...it won't be solved even if you tell the police. That's why Minaho-neesan is taking revenge by their own hands...!」

「...That's not the case」

...Un?!

「I can't say that my first experience is rape...furthermore, it was you. It's so shameful I can't tell anyone. That's how it is」

...Woah

「If it was at least someone cooler...or someone with a status, then I'll be fine with it but...your class is plan, you're gloomy, aren't you just a hopeless boy?」

「...Right」

「I won't tell anyone so you don't tell anyone too」

Yukino knits her eyebrows as she speak.

「Really...if it was exposed that I'm having sex with a man like you, I'll get ruined...!」

...What should I do—

...with this idiot woman

In the end...she lacks imagination.

Therefore she can't understand Minaho-neesan's suffering.

On top of that...she's only interested in herself...

She doesn't get the situation around her...

「You haven't noticed that you're already ruined?」

「Eh...why?」

「Well...isn't your father being thoroughly beaten in the internet and TV? The

rape in Australia, the scandal in the entertainment case, the murder case. Just what kind of face will you show in the class tomorrow...?!」

「Oh that?」

Yukino answered calmly.

「That's easy. I'll just quit school」

...What?

「Papa has a very good lawyer in Shirasaka house. He's called Ohata-sensei...」

I know...there's a lawyer from that office coming with the Shirasaka family...

「That's why it'll be exhausting for a while but Papa will be bailed out immediately. The case in Australia is settled right? The gossip on the entertainment world doesn't have evidences」

「...The videos of Shirasaka Sousuke's former idol's sex movies are over the internet though?」

「They can just say that it's a『look-alike』 It won't be a proff that it was Papa!」

「...What about Minaho-neesan's sister?」

「It just happened to be a missing person found in the villa of our house. The image of Papa and that girl is fake, it's okay to say that it's all fake. I believe so Papa will definitely win his innocence」

...Yukino

「Are you saying that Shirasaka Sousuke didn't do anything wrong?」

「I'm not saying that...surely, Papa did all of that. I know that. Papa has done a lot of crimes but isn't it a different topic when you ask whether he'll get convicted or not?!」

「...He committed crimes and yet he'll be found innocent?!」

「Isn't that obvious! Papa's a Shirasaka!」

...Ah, no good

She's completely different from us.

She's only biased...

「I feel sorry for Moritsugu-sama but another person will be taking over the head position and succeed the newspaper company. But, in the end Shirasaka clan will be on the top. Haha, Shirasaka house won't be collapsing from this

much!

「You...did you not ever think of the possibility that Shirasaka Sousuke would be expelled from Shirasaka family?」

Yukino laughs.

「There's no way that will happen! I'm very loved in the Shirasaka clan! Those people won't abandon me! I'll be staying over Ichikawa-ojiisama for a while. I'll change my name to『Ichikawa』then go to a new school

「Didn't Mana speak about Ichikawa-san earlier? Your mother and grandfather has abandoned Mana. Even you...!」

「...I'm different from Maika!」

Yukino glares at me.

「Ichikawa-ojiisama will never abandon me...!」

「Then, why is nobody contacting your phone?! Normally, won't you be called and told that it'll be fine?」

「...Then there's some slip up? They just forgot to call me by chance. If not, then they don't know my phone number. I'm sure that they're calling on the phone on the house...I'm sure that is. I'm Ojiisama's prided granddaughter...!」

...Why?

Why do you think so conveniently of yourself...

After coming this far...you can say that it's a talent.

「Maika must be misunderstanding something...Or rather, she's gotten crazy after you did various things on her...!」

You're the one who's crazy here...!

「Oh right. Give back Maika to me...that girl's my sister」

「...Nah I won't. Mana's my『woman』」

「Pervert...is it fun to rape middle school girls? Are you a Lolicon?」

「That's not the case. She's my family already...She's Yoshida Mana」

「Don't say something that crazy! That girl is Shirasaka Maika! My little sister!」

...Haa

Just how far this parallel lines will go?

We'll never meet up.

Yukino and I will never understand each other.

「Anyway...tomorrow morning...no, even if it's late in the afternoon, Shirasaka house will be coming to save us. Ohata-sensei will be negotiating and they'll probably pay you millions of yen? Then, Maika and I will be released...」

Yukino's making her selfish delusions...

「Then...I won't come to this school again. Oh right...Ichikawa-ojiisan's brother is running a company in Kobe. Maika and I will rely on that person and go to a school in Kobe. Nobody knows us in Kobe...we'll never be exposed unless we say that our name is『Shirasaka』 That's why you and I will end today」

...Yukino

「I'll find a good man in Kobe. Someone who's cooler than you and even have a status. Kenji was my misunderstanding so I won't make such a foolish downfall anymore. This time...I'll redo my first love」

「...Oh」

「A cool and good sportsman...and a tough build. And it would be great if he's good at sex too. ...I've said it a while ago but it's not that I like masturbating alone. You just made a mess out of me that my body's aching. I want to have sex. I don't want to masturbate」

「...Then work on brothels. You'll be able to have sex everyday」

「Stop the jokes...there's no way a Shirasaka would do that?...If it wasn't for Papa then I can stay in this school and make you my sex friend. Keeping it a secret to everyone...if you swear allegiance to me then I'll have sex with you three times a week...that's disappointing. I won't see you again after today...

That's already happening inside Yukino's mind...

「Therefore...fuck me a lot in the AV room. That will be our last after all. Enjoy my body to your heart's content. It won't happen again...!」

What should I do?

Should I make this my last with this idiot woman?

I have a lot of『women』

I have my responsibilities and duties towards them...

Won't it be rude to the other『women』to be having a relationship with Yukino?



「Just what am I to you?」

I asked Yukino incidentally.

「Isn't that obvious? You're just a rapist」

...Right

「You deceived me and stole my virginity forcibly. Afterwards, you've raped me again and again...you're the worst」

「Yeah...I think so too」

「...What am I to you?」

...Eh?

「Hmm...it was a『woman I longed for』but」

「What's with the past tense?」

「I longed for you since the high school entrance ceremony...that's why I definitely hated you being taken by Endou so I raped you. You were my first time...」

「Right...you were so bad during your first time」

「...Right」

「You were clinging to my body with so much momentum...it was obvious you were a virgin」

「...Sorry bout that」

「It was bad...it was scary, it hurts...it was disgusting」

Yukino puts her hand on her abdomen.

「Nothing will change whatever I say this late...」

...Yeah

You can't do anything about what's done.

I have no choice but to go forward.

「Didn't you like me?」

Yukino looks at me with her big eyes.

「...I wonder. I don't hate you but I don't love you either」

「...What's that?」

「I won't be risking my life for you」

「...Then are you going to risk your life for Maika?」

「...Yeah」

「...Megumi too?」

「...Of course」

「Are you an idiot?...Even though I'm the better one here?」

I...

Coming this far, I can do nothing but laugh.

「...What's funny!」

「No...if it was Megu and you, Megumi's three times much better. No, it's ten times」

「There's no way that's the case!」

「It's true...Megu's cuter, kinder, smarter...I will marry Megu」

「...What are you saying」

「You know it don't you?...We're engaged」

「Isn't that just a joke? You two are still in first year high school」

「But, I've decided...there's no better bride than her」

「...You really love her?」

「Un. I do. I will stay with Megu forever. I love her after all...!」

There's no hesitation in my heart.

「What about Maika?」

「Mana's my『sister』」

「She's not yours! She's my little sister!」

「...My『woman』and my『little sister』 She's mine forever. I'll never let her go. I won't hand her to anyone」

「...Then that Kouzuki family's lady and Katsuko too?」

「Of course...everyone's my『woman』 I've already made a decision to be with them forever」

「...Pervert. Greedy. Madman. Lolicon」

「You don't know it I guess...I've got another『woman』, she's Nagisa」

「...There's still another?」

「Un...she's on the same age as Katsuko-nee, she has a three years old daughter」

「No way...she's married?」

「No...she doesn't have any father. Or rather, it's unknown. Your father forced her to be a prostitute and pregnant, it was a child born from that」

Yukino fell silent.

「That's why you'll get pregnant too. You'll give birth to my child...!」

「No way...I can endure other things but never pregnancy!」

Yukino glares at me.

「But...I think it's already done. You were having lots of sex without any contraceptives...!」

「That's not true...I've got good luck. I'll never get pregnant」

...If you're lucky then why were you raped in the first place?

「Then, I'll definitely make you pregnant this time」

「No way. I'll be released this afternoon...then I'll go to the hospital immediately. I'll tell only the lawyer that I was raped. Then, he'll take me to a hospital that definitely hides Shirasaka family's secret. If I get pregnant then I'll abort it. I think early pregnancy can still be managed somehow...!」

...So she was thinking about it.

「Then...we won't release you. We'll confine you until you give birth」

「That's not something for you to decide! I'll be released tomorrow! The negotiation with the lawyer will go well!...That's the schedule! It's already decided!」

That's the schedule in your brain?

...No

Let's not say anything anymore.

Whatever I tell her...it's already useless.

While we continue our talk...

We've reached the AV room.

「...What is in here?」

「...I wonder」

「I hope it has at least a bed」

But still...Yukino seems to be intending to have sex with me.

Or rather, she wants to have sex.  
She's really a『lewd bitch』by nature...

「...I'm opening it」

I open the door with the key and go inside.  
A dark room...  
I see, the shading curtain is closed up completely.  
Then...it's okay even if I turn on the lights.  
When I thought of it...  
There's a green lamp machine...?!  
When I approached it...it was a square machine about one meter wide.

「...What's this?」

「...This is a light machine from the drama club」

Yukino said.

「Light machine?」

「It's a machine that adjusts the brightness of the lights...since my friend was in the drama club at middle school, I saw it at the school festival」

I see...looking at the control pannel, it says『T-6 Dimmer machine』  
...Ah

There's a note attached under the lamp.

『Yoshida-kun, turn on the big black switch at the right -Minaho』

...Err

There's a figure written on the memo. When I turned on the switch as shown in the figure...

...Pika!

The stand on the side of the wall lights up the stage.  
The rays were gathered at the center of the AV room.  
What's there is...  
An air mat just like the one used in the monitor room.  
The illumination clearly shows the air mat from the darkness.

「...Somehow, it looks like a shooting on Adult Videos.」

Yukino said.

Un...I think so too.

Or rather...there's a huge video camera on a tripod in front of the air mat...

「My...there's something on top of the mat」

That's one file.

There's memo stuck on the cover.

『Yoshida-kun, Do as the file says. -Minaho』

「...Somehow, she asked us to follow what's written here」

「Fine...let's do it」

Yukino gets on top of the mat.

She seems to be a bit excited from bathing in the light.

「It'll be our last time...and I've been recorded on camera multiple times until now」

Yukino said while crawling on all fours on the mat.

It seems she's verifying the elasticity of the mat...

Her uniform is in tatters, she's not wearing an underwear.

Her ass is completely visible.

Her slit and anus is exposed.

「Then...what are we going to do?」

Yukino asked me then I opened the file in a hurry.

I read what's inside...

「Yukino...there's a men's Y-shirt beside the mat」

「Oh, there is...」

「Strip naked then put on only that shirt」

「...I'll wear this shirt only?」

「Err, what's written here is『make a feel of coming to a sex friend's house then borrowing his Y-shirt after having sex』」

Minaho-neesan's order is detailed.

「...Got it」

Yukino begins to take off her clothes.

Then...the video camera starts on by itself.

Since it has a red light...it's already recording.

The lens automatically zooms then the camera itself moves finely up down left and right...

Minaho-neesan is moving the camera via remote.

「Fufufu...it's a striptease. You love this don't you?」

Yukino takes off her clothes like dancing...

As usual...she's got a good body.

Comparing the breast sizes.

Katsuko-nee's...Bakyunyuu.

Nagisa's...Kyonyuu.

Nei-san's...Hounyuu

Yukino...Binyuu ← Here !

Misuzu's...Yochichi

Megu's...Namichichi

Mana's...Hikaeichichi

Minaho-neesan's...Hinyuu

Michi's...Nachichi

(Margo-san's tall and has a different physique so I can't compare)

But, I think it's a big one as a 16 year old high school girl.

It's well shaped too.

Her pink nipples are erect in arousal.

「You like my breast don't you?」

「...I do」

I answered honestly

「Of course, you always look at it as if you're licking it...」

She takes off her torn skirt too so she's naked.

Her abdomen looks slippery as it's shaved up.

The bright green『吉田』tattoo on the surface...

Love nectar oozes out from her slit, it reflects light and shines.

「There, the service ends here」

Yukino puts on the men's Y-shirt...

...But

What's with this shirt?...it's too thin that you can see through it.

Her pink nipple's visible.

No, the erect nipple insists itself from under the cloth.

It's much more lewd than just being naked.

「...Then, what should I do now?」

Yukino sits down on the air mat.

Bathing in the lights...Yukino's body is shining.

「Err...」

I turn to the next page.

「...We're going to record an interview scene」

「Interview?」

「...It's seen a lot in adult videos. They interview the actress first」

「Oh, so it's that kind of setup!」

Yukino smiles

「Okay...ask me anything!」

...She's in high spirits.

「Then, let's go...look at the camera instead of me」

「Oh, we're recording right」

Yukino smiles at the camera...

...Foolishly lewd

...She's really beyond saving.

「Then hurry up and ask」

「...Yeah」

I read the questions in Minaho-neesan's file

「...What's your name?」

「...Shirasaka Yukino」

「...How old are you?」

「I became 16 just the other day. I'm a first year high school student」

「Are you a virgin?」

「...Even though you know it」

「...Eh?」

「No, I'm not! I'm no longer a virgin」

「...How many people you had sex with?」

「Err...three」

Then, Yukino looks at my face to probe me out./

「...I don't know if you know it but...I had compensated dating sex with two old men. It was in the night park toilet. Both of them came inside me so even if I get pregnant right now...it might not be yours but the old men's」

...Err

「...You seem to not know it but...I'm both of the old men there」

Yukino's surprised.

「No way...the two of them came a lot you know」

「Yeah...I had troubles back then」

「...What the hell? It was really you...huh?!」

「That's right. That's why you don't have to worry, the only dick that pierced you is only me. The only semen that's poured in your womb is mine. With that said...if you get pregnant, that will definitely be my child...best regards」

「What best regards!」

「Give birth to a healthy child」

「I don't want it...never!!!」

Yukino wriggles her body on top of the mat...

「Hey...we're going back to the interview」

「...Got it」

I read the question loud.

「Which do you like better, masturbation or sex?」

「Sex」

Yukino replied immediately.

「...And yet, you always masturbate?」

「Well...I don't have anyone to have sex with. Also, I did it alone but my fingers



won't feel that good...won't reach that」

「...Where?」

「...My womb. My fingers can't reach the uterus where a man's penis can, it can't reach a pleasure point!」

「Then how about you buy some adult toys...something like a vibrator. You can buy those online recently」

「No way...there's no way a Shirasaka girl would do something shameless! Or rather...」

「...What?」

「I tried putting on a cosmetics bottle but it's different. A man's penis feels much better. The feeling of the skins sticking and rubbing in the places where it feels good...also」

Yukino talks to the camera with aroused eyes.

「When semen pours in my stomach...it feels good. It feels like hot water is poured in the deepest part of my body. It feels shivery pleasant」

「...Lewd」

「What?...my body became like this because of you!」

「No...that's your original nature」

「No...it's because of you!」

「You're fine taking in a dick of anyone!」

I shouted instinctively.

This girl probably will look for another man as soon as I get away from her.

Then, she'll continue her sex life.

Changing multiple men then take in semen from different men.

She's that kind of lewd bitch.

「I wonder...I don't know」

Yukino answers.

「If what you say is true...I haven't taken someone else other than you. Could it be that your penis has a very good compatibility with mine that it might not feel as good when I do it with you」

Yukin opens the front of her shirt.

「...Hey, are we done already? Let's stop the interview already」

Then she opens her legs wide in front of me...

「I want it. I've been waiting for it all this time...!」

Yukino opens her vagina with her fingers.

Her love nectar is dripping out...

「...Violate me. Hurry up and fuck me!」

---

## 187. Then, the morning Comes...

---

「I hate men like you... You're so uncool, disgusting...I don't want to be seen together with you」

Yukino who's illuminated by the lights smiles at me obscenely.

「But...I love having sex with you. You never do anything to damage my body... and you're earnest. You don't order me too...」

...Yukino.

「I really thought of having you as a sex friend if we're keeping this a secret to anyone. A relationship where I'll just call you when I feel it and have sex. ...But, not anymore」

Yukino's face turned gloomy...

「I can't stay in this school anymore. I don't know if I will go to Kobe or not but I won't see you again. I won't meet the people related to this ever again. You won't meet Maika either again!」

Yukino's speaking selfishly again.

「I'll give you Megumi...it's not that I care about that girl from the first place!」

...Lies.

Yukino and Megu have inferiority complex on each other.

「In exchange, give me back Maika. She's my precious little sister」

「...I won't give her to you」

Mana's my『woman』

「Hmm...okay. Then, I won't ask you. I'll leave it to Ohata-sensei. Don't ask me if anything happens to you...!」

「Yeah...I don't mind」

I already have that level of resolve...

「I won't say anything about myself」

...Hm?

「I don't care about you raping me multiple times... Who cares now. I forgive you...!」

「You're going to a new school and find a boyfriend...restarting your life forgetting about me right」

I speak sarcastically

「...I won't forget」

Yukino said.

「I'll remember about you. I'll never forget it」

...Yukino

「That's why...this will really be the last. This will be our last sex okay?」

Yukino speaks and decides on her own.

What about me?

I've got a lot of『women』to love right now...

Do I want to continue my relationship with Yukino?

「Hey...take off your clothes too and come here. If you don't hurry, it'll be『morning』by then...!」

Yukino invites me with a smile...

「Look...this is the body nobody but you knows. This one drank your semen a lot...」

Yukino opens her legs wide...

She spreads her wet vagina wide...

This body only I have embraced.

「...There's nothing to be embarrassed this late, right?」

Right...

We...

We hardly talked to each other.

We don't know each other's hobby nor interests

Our way of life and thinking is also different...

We're not in gear with each other.

There's only one thing we did together...

...Sex

We haven't done anything but sex from the start till the end...

「...You're right」

I took off my clothes

I got naked in front of Yukino.

My penis is already erect

「Looking at it again...it's big. This thing went inside me. Fufu...that makes it natural that my fingers won't satisfy me」

Yukino looks at my penis with a smile on her face.

Then, she looks at the camera...

「Hey...this is recording isn't it?」

「Who knows, I don't」

「I'm sure they do...that teacher is like that after all」

「Or rather...I think they're watching over this room right now」

「Hmm...right」

Yukino looks at the camera lens...

「Hey...could you ask Sensei something...」

Yukino smiles.

「Could I have a copy of this video?」

「...Copy?」

「I want to see myself having sex」

「You want to see that?」

「Eh, aren't you interested? Just what kind of lewd face am I making? I'm very interested you know...!」

「Got it...I'll ask her then」

「I-I don't need to see your face...I only want to see my face and body when having sex...!」

Yukino looks at the camera and makes poses.

「I think it's not bad to leave this sixteen years old naked body, my most beautiful time in my life on a record...」

Seriously...

There's no one but herself in her...

She's not interested in anyone but herself...!

「Then...would you like the video when you lost your virginity?」

「No thanks...that one hurts a lot, it was humiliating...you can have that」

「...Me?」

「That's right. Want to use it while masturbating/ Either way, a man like you would be thrown away by Megumi and the lady from the Kouzuki family. If you feel lonely alone then masturbate watching my videos. I'll let you use it...oh, don't let other guys watch it」

Saying that, Yukino laughs...

「Don't misunderstand. Right now, you're just on the『popular phase』  
Everyone's making some strange illusions then sticks with you. Everyone will notice it soon. You're just a boring and ordinary high school boy」

...Well

I think so too

「Well fine...come here」

...I

「...What are you doing? Don't make a woman wait. The night is short!」

I stand before Yukino in the air mat.

「Hey...can I lick this?」

Yukino points at my erection and looks up.

「...Do you want to?」

When I asked Yukino

「...Yeah, I want to lick it!」

Yukino's hand touched my penis.

「This is dirty and tastes strange...I hate this so much...and yet, I remember this when I masturbate. I remember when you make me lick this...!」

Yukino swallows her saliva...

「Humiliating...I look pitiful right now I guess」

Holding my dick on one of her hand, Yukino smiles at the camera...

「Shirasaka Yukino will be licking this penis right now!」

...Then

「...Aun!」

Yukino's plump lips wraps up my glans.

「...Ufufu」

Yukino licks my glans with her tongue while smiling satisfied.

「Un...this taste...this smell...this might become a habbit」

She puts saliva on my penis...

「My mouth remembers this... The shape of your dick...and its taste」

...Yukino

「I definitely have a lewd face right now. Aaahn, I want to see it...I wonder what kind of face I make while licking...?」

Yukino's filled with lust as she fellates in front of the camera.  
What lewdness.

This 16 years old girl is making a lewd bitch face.

「Hey...can I drink it on the second round?」

...Second round?

「I want my first one in my womb...then I want to drink the second round of semen...okay?」

「Just how many times do you intend to do it?」

「...Even though you're not satisfied with just one round usually」

「Well...you're right I guess」

「You always cum inside me three or four times」

「...Yeah」

「It's our last so it's fine. We can do it as much as we want」

「You just want to do it don't you?」

Yukino laughs.

「Yes, that's right...I just want to fuck! I want to be filled by your semen...I want to have sex with you until I get exhausted」

「...Do you want to be soaked in semen?」

「Un! That's good! Soak me in semen...hurry up!」

Looking at Yukino's reaction...I finally understood it  
...This one

She's saying that she doesn't worry about anything but...

She's forcing herself to pretend to be okay in front of me...

As expected...Yukino's heart is filled with anxiety.

About her own future...

That's why she's trying to escape through sex.

She wants to forget everything with the pleasures of sex.

「Then...let's make sure it shows in the camera clearly!」

「Yup, looks good! How are we going to do it!?!」

Look...Yukino took it.

Yukino is released from fear only through sex.

That's why Yukino's much horny than usual.

She's a bitch who loves sex.

「Before that, let me touch your tits. I haven't touched it yet today」

「Go on, here...do as you want!」

I enjoy Yukino's good shaped breasts.

I enjoy rubbing my hands to its elasticity and softness.

I lick up her pointy nipples.

「Ah...that's good. Suck it...I want you to kiss it a lot」

I suck her nipples as she requested.

「Ahaaan...I love it when you do that. It feels good...great, lick it next...!」



I roll the tip of my tongue on her pink nipples.

「...It's great as expected. It feels completely better than doing it on my own」

Yukino's looking at me with a blushing face...

「You're very careful when you touch and lick me. Will I ever find a man like you on other schools?」

She says while stroking my cheeks.

「If I really want to have sex then I'll come back to this town...then I'll have sex with you...!」

She starts her delusion again.

「But no...I think I have a very strong lust. I want to do it with you everyday」

Then...she opens her legs in an M shape

「Look...touch me here too」

I reach out for Yukino's pubic area.

Her clitoris is already showing up.

「Touch and fiddle this one」

I stimulate her clitoris by crushing it with my thumb as she told me.

「Afu...n...good. It feels really good」

Her love nectar begins to drip in addition

「Hey, put your fingers in」

Yukino's asking for a caress.

I put my forefinger in her genital.

「...Hm...ah...there...push your finger up there...a bit more...ahead...that's right...aaah...that feels good there...stir it...that's right!...Ahn, it feels good!」

The 16 year old girl who was a virgin days ago.

She might originally had a lewd blood...

I'm the one who woke it up.

What will happen to her if I'm gone?

With her body seeking pleasure, will she give herself to one man after another?

Will she really become a horny slut?

「...Aaaah! Actually, I want to be touched higher than that...but, your fingers won't reach that right? Your dick...I want your penis. Because, if it's not your penis, it can't grind there...!

Yukino seeks me with her bewitching eyes.

「...Come. Put it in...fuck me...I want to be violated again...I want to be ravished...!」

...I

「Before that...let's kiss」

...Yukino

「No kisses」

「...Why?」

「I want to be raped by you. It won't be rape if we kissed...」

「That's not true...I'm forcing myself on you」

Yukino smiled.

「Right...if you're forcing it then fine...」

I clutched at Yukino's lips.

...Even though she says『If it's forced then fine』

Yukino twines her tongue with mine.

Our tongues overlap on each other...

「...Hurry. I want you to come inside and connect with me...!」

Yukino grabs my penis with her right hand and pushed it on her opening while we're kissing.

「Ufufu...your hard thing came!」

Yukino opened her body to accept me

「...Come inside in one stroke!」

...I

Penetrate my penis inside Yukino's vagina—

Moving aside her meat wall filled with love nectar!!!

...Gunyuuuu!

My penis is twined by the hot love nectar...it's dripping in the base.  
Yukino's vagina is completely perfected.  
Soft and wet...and tight.

「More...deeper...push it all the way!」

...Aah!

I push her uterus with my glans!

「Aaaahn...it's so deep...you're kissing the deepest part of me...ufufufufu...I can feel it...I can feel it!」

Yukino rejoices at the sexual intercourse.  
She's looking at me with an entranced face.  
When I kissed her...she puts her tongue in my mouth again.  
We entwine with each other from top to bottom...

「...Un...un...!」

Yukino puts effort in her anus to tighten it...  
Then her vagina that's connected to the muscles in the anus also tightens.

「...How is it? Does it feel good?」

「Yeah...that's great, Yukino」

Yukino shows a satisfied smile.

「...It's a perfect match with yours」

「...What?」

「My insides is fit perfectly for you...I wonder?」

「...I don't know」

「I haven't done sex with anyone but you so it has turned to your shape I guess?」

「...I wonder」

「But still...our bodies are so compatible aren't they」

「Never thought of it...」

「You don't but I do think about it」

Yukino speaks as she accept my penis in the deepest part of her vagina.

「Because...when I always masturbate, I always remember only you...the size and the feeling of your penis」

...Yukino

「...Move. Just like usual」

...『Usual』

Yukino and I have done it that much?

「Hey...pierce and push it up like usual...fuck me!」

I slowly move my hips.

「Yes...like that...good...I'm being violated...I'm being ravished!」

Yukino looks at the camera...

「I'm being raped right now...I'm being fucked...I'm having sex!!」

...Yukino

.....Yukino !

「Aaah...That's right! Rub it on the place where I told you earlier...pierce it up with your penis...that's right! Aaah! Ahn! Great, there...I'm getting addicted to this...! As expected, a dick is better! It won't reach there unless its your dick! Aaaahn! It feels good!」

Yukino's body turned sweaty.

The smell of sweat and love nectar.

Sweet milk...the sexual smell of a girl...

It stimulates me further!

「Aaaah...Yukino! Yukinoooo!!」

I thrust up my hips violently!!

「...So good! That's great! I-I'm about to cum! Hey, is that okay? Can I cum ahead?」

「...Cum! Go on, Yukino!」

「Aaahn! They're recording me cum right! I'm being recorded!」

「...That's right! There!」

I thrust my hips further...

The flesh of this first year high school girl is shaking in joy from my thrusts.  
Her cute binyuu rolls as if dancing.

「...It's close...I'm about to...look at me as I cum...watch me!」

Yukino says as she looks down at me.

「...Look at the camera. It's being recorded」

「Bakaaa...I won't feel good if you're not looking at me!」

...Yukino!

「Look at mee...look as I cum...It won't do unless you look at me...! I...!!」

A hot wave rushes in Yukino's body...

「Aaaaah...it's coming...I'm cumming...look, look at me, watch meee...!」

「...I'm watching, Yukino!」

...Then

Yukino jumps.

「...C-Cumiiiiing! I'm cumming! I'm cumiiiiing!」

She opens her eyes wide...then exposes her face of delight to me.

「I'm being seeeen...by this man...my most shameful face...it's being seen...  
ah...aaah...it feels goood!!!!」

...Me too

...I can't hold it.

「...Yukino...I'm about to cum too」

「Let it ouut...ejaculate inside meeeee!」

The hot lump rises up from my hips to my penis...!

「Show me your face while you ejaculate...I want to see it...leak out your face  
to meeee!」

...Yukino!

「...Cumming!!!」

The hot white stuff blows out!

...Dooppu!

...Doupupu!

...Doupupu!

「...H-Hot!」

A man's juice spreads in Yukino's womb.

「Aaah...it came in! It's flying in...inside my womb. It's coming inside my womb...semen's coming in again!!!」

Yukino doesn't mind the camera anymore.

「This is great! I love this! The hot sperm spreading out...I love it!!!」

Yukino shouts as she look at my face.

I look at Yukino's face too.

I ejaculate...Yukino's impregnated.

Feeling each other's existence...We share the pleasure of sexual climax.

「...I love how your semen is always so hot...I've come to love your ejaculations...」

Yukino squeezes my penis while convulsing...

「Aaah...my womb is drinking it...it's drinking your semen...!」

「...aaaaaah!」

After letting it out...I lean on Yukino's body.

I bury my face in her soft and warm chest.

「Ufufu...good job」

.....Yukino。

...Yukino looks at me with a smile...

「...Hey?」

「...Yeah」

Without saying anything...we kissed again.

We twine our tongues.

We exchanged saliva...

Yukino turns her hands on my back...

She embraced my exhausted body.

I embraced Yukino as well.

「...You came a lot?」

After a while, Yukino asked me.

「I wonder?」

「You came a lot...the depths of my womb feels hot...lick my nipples.」

「...Eh?」

「My body's still sensitive...I want you to lick it」

I lick up Yukino's nipples while we're still connected 「Ahn...that feels good. I understood why that Kouzuki lady sticks to you」

「...What do you mean?」

「...Continue licking」

「...Sure」

I lick the other nipple.

Yukino's body who accepted a man's semen feels hot and pleasant.

Her breasts are strained and her nipples are erect.

「Well you see...you're great at sex. I get why she says she doesn't want to let you go」

Yukino can't understand human heart.

For her...her feelings are everything.

Therefore...

She can't evaluate me other than sex...

「I feel regrettable too. That this would be our last...」

More than the pleasures of sex.

Yukino's own pride is much more important for her.

「It can't be helped...I'm Shiraska Yukino. I'm different from you...!」

When I try to pull out my penis from Yukino.

「Wait...while we're at it, let's have this taken by the camera too」

Yukino lifts her waist so that the camera can see the part where we are connected.

「It's okay now...pull it out」

Jurururu...I pull out my half erect penis.

Love juice makes a string from Yukino's vagina to the tip of my glans.  
The milky liquid overflows from her slit.

「Ufufu...it's dripping. It's recorded properly right...?」

The lens of the camera turned...it's zooming.  
Perhaps, it's focusing on Yukino's crotch.

「You can still go on right?...I'll lick it up, come here」

Yukino holds my penis.

「Uwa...it's sticky」

She licks up the penis that's filled with love nectar and semen.

「But...it's delicious」

...Yukino

「I've completely remembered the taste of your semen. It tastes bitter and strange but I like this」

Yukino sucks my glans.

「Is this your taste? I guess men tastes differently?」

「I wonder...I don't know about other's semen」

Yukino laughs.

「You're right...you're not homo after all. There's no way you will know」

She licks from the bottom up...

「But...if semen tastes sweet or salty then I don't want it...I think this bitter taste is delicious.」

No...in the first place.

Isn't it already strange to say it's『delicious』...?!

「Hey...what should we do next? How do you want to fuck me? It's our last one so I'll do anything!」

Yukino's eyes are shining...



...In the end.

She's not a woman I can manage...

She's too selfish...and thinks of herself as the center...

She's too weak against pleasures and desires...

「Want to do it from the back? Or do you want it while standing? We did it in the shower before right? Having sex while watching myself in the mirror is really arousing. Should we go somewhere with a full body mirror? I want to do that kind of sex again...!」

...Really

She doesn't mind me at all. She doesn't think of me.

She just presses her own desires.

「...Sadly, it's about time」

Suddenly...the AV room opened.

...Minaho-neesan?

「...It's already morning」

Outside the corridor is already filled with morning light.

「Yukino-san's fun『night』ends here...!」

Megu and Mana appears from behind Minaho-neesan.

Megu is wearing her track and field training suit.

Mana's wearing her tight shirt and a miniskirt.

Both of them are looking at us with a displeased face.

「Now...both of you, show Yoshida-kun『morning』」

Hearing Minaho-neesan...Megu and Mana comes inside the AV room.

...Then

They opened up the shading curtain...

「...Ah!」

...Mornig

The morning scene spreads outside the window.

The sun's throwing an orange light from the east sky.

The school ground's shadow is light blue.

Before I knew it...it's already morning.

「...Yoshi-kun, it's morning」  
「That's why it'll be our turn now!」

The two beauties...  
Stand before me...!!!

---

## 188. Yoshida-kun's Power

---

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at me with an anxious face while bathing in the morning light.

「I've been watching... Yoshi-kun and Yukino's sex」

Un...I thought they surely did.

The video on the camera was being displayed in the monitor room.

「Hey, Yoshi-kun...Why can you be so friendly with Yukino when you have sex?」

...What?

「Friendly? Yukino and I?...We just keep complaining and cursing each other though」

「Well...I don't make complains nor curse you...!」

Megu looks at me with a serious face.

...But.

「Well, you see. I don't have any complaints on Megu. There's no need to curse you at all」

「Are you saying you don't have any dissatisfaction on me...?」

Megu looks at me with a pained face.

「Yeah...none. None at all」

...There's no way there is

「That's not true! I'm not a good girl at all!」

「What are you saying...Megu!」

I don't get it but...

Anyway, something's complicated

「Megu's very cute, kind, intelligent...if Megu's not a good girl then what is!」  
「I'm a bad girl. I'm jealous...and dishonest too」  
「Everyone's the same! You normally have those if you're a human...!」  
「Also...I'm not as beautiful as Yukino」

Megu reveals her complex to Yukino

「...Don't be ridiculous!」

I shouted

「...Yoshi-kun?」

Megu's surprised.

「Well, Yukino's surely a beauty but...Megu's a beauty that turns heads towards her...also」

「...What?」

Megu's long and narrow eyes look at me.

「...Megu's beauty is very Megu-like」

「...Me-like?」

...Un

...That's right.

「What's good with Megu is...you do everything deliberately...you always care about people...kind...delicate...that kind of Megu-ness is what shapes Megu. It's a diligent clean beauty...」

「...Yoshi-kun!」

Megu held her breath.

「The beauty in Megu's heart is showing on surface properly. I like that. Megu's body, and body too...!」

「...Really?」

「Isn't that obvious?」

When I answer that...Minaho-neesan speaks.

「Yoshida-kun...you don't seem to understand women's emotions so let me

tell you...you see, women wants men to express it on『words』as much as possible」

「...Words?」

「That's right...it's not good to just think of it. At the moment you felt Megumi's『Beautiful』then speak it out immediately」

...I see

You won't be able to tell them if you just think of it.

I look at Megu once again.

Megu's wearing her track and field training suit.

I think this slim model body is beautiful...

It's not just well organized but her intellectual face is beautiful.

「...Megu, you're beautiful」

Un...Megu's really beautiful

「...Y-Yoshi-kun」

Megu turned red in embarrassment.

「Is there anything else you want to tell Megumi?」

Minaho-neesan asked me.

「...Anything else?」

「Yoshida-kun still haven't told Megumi herself what you feel towards her, right?」

...That is

「『You know it even if I don't tell you』or『there's no need to say this on purpose』or『this kind of things should just be kept in my mind』those kind of things Megumi wants Yoshida-kun to let out everything. Also...it's important to turn the『You know it even if I don't say it』to『words』」

「...Why?」

「Reaffirming the mutual relationship makes you happy more than anything. There should be a time where you two share those『words』...」

Right

Un...Minaho-neesan taught me something good.

I look at Megu and smiled.

「Megu...I think that there's no need to say this but」  
「...WHat?」

Megu looks at me anxiously.

「...I'm grateful. Thank you for everything...Megu」  
「...Eh?」

Err...how should I talk about it?  
True...it takes time to speak in words.

「You see...yesterday night...no, it's the day before yesterday now...there's a lot of things that happened with Mana.」

「...Un」  
「At that time...I think I finally saved Mana thanks to Megu」  
「That's not true...that was Yoshi-kun...」

「No no...isn't Megu the one who noticed Mana's state of mind, understood Minaho-neesan's aim and the one who told me?」

That's right...Megu's always so calm and smart.  
She has the power to analyze the situation more than me.  
The love hotel at night, Megu was wonderful on being harsh on Mana.

「Also...Megu's very patient. I love that part of you」  
「...Love? About me?」

...Megu

「Yeah...I love you, Megu」

I spoke of my honest feelings through words.

「It's not a normal like. I respect Megu」  
「...M-Me?」

Megu's eyes turned round in surprise.

「Isn't that obvious?...You're my fiance. I won't turn a girl I don't respect my bride...!」

I think.

「Yoshi-kun! Are you really fine with me?」

...Err

「It matters not...I'm the one who feels sorry for being a man like this」

「That's not true...Yoshi-kun!」

「No...I'll do my best. I'll make an effort so I can be a man that can balance with Megu...!」

...Un

「Especially in front of our classmates...I would embarrass Megu if I become disgraceful...I'll be giving my all from now on. I promise you」

That's right...we're classified as an engaged couple in the class.

If I don't do my best...

「I don't think I'll become an honor student liked by everyone just like Megu but...I'll do all my best」

Hearing my words...Megu

「...Yoshi-kun. You really don't have any dissatisfaction with me?」

...Huh?

Megu's still on that topic?

...Hmm

...What should I do to make her trust me.

「Megu-oneechan...it's not that」

Mana speaks from the side.

「Megu-oneechan feels envious somewhat on Onii-chan and Yukino's relationship, right?」

...Eh?

...Is that so?

「But you see...Onii-chan doesn't have any respect towards Yukino...it's not like or anything, they're just somewhat friends for having sex a lot」

Hmm.

So my relationship with Yukino is something like that?

「There's nothing you need to worry about...after all」

Mana smiles.

「In the end...Yukino-san only does selfish sex. She feels good having sex now because Onii-chan is doing his best. Yukino-san only concentrates on her own pleasure...she has zero feelings of making Onii-chan feel good...!」

Mana sees is as that.

「At the current stage...you can see Yukino-san's selfishness and feeling pleasure because onii-chan is suited with the service spirit during sex but that won't happen forever. Both of them don't love each other after all...!」

Yukino and I don't love each other.

「But...Mana and Megu-oneechan really loves Onii-chan.」 Of course we want to feel good but we also want Onii-chan to feel good! We love him after all!」

...Mana

「That's why...there's no need to be losing yourself towards Yukino-san! You should be more confident about yourself, Megu-oneechan...!」

Mana gives Megu a cheer.

「Megu-oneechan is ten times much better than Yukino-san! Onii-chan really loves Megu-oneechan!」

「...Mana」

Megu calls the name of her half-blood sister.

「If Megu-oneechan isn't confident...I'd be troubled too! We promised to devote ourselves to Onii-chan for the rest of our lives right! You don't have to mind that strange woman over there...!」

Hearing Mana...Megu nods.

「Right...thanks, Mana」

...Megu smiles.

「Rather than that...Megu-oneechan. There's something I understood from Onii-chan and Yukino-san's sex...!」

「What is it Mana?」



Megu asks.

「Megu-oneechan...don't hold back with Onii-chan. Onii-chan is pleased whatever you ask him. That's why, Megu-oneechan, ask him more...!」

「But...Mana」

「Of course...let's be careful to not be a burden to Onii-chan. But, if you wait for Onii-chan to ask...another hyena woman like Yukino-san will take away your chances to have sex. Megu-oneechan, you need to become more aggressive on sex...!」

Megu and Mana look at each other.

「...Do I hold back myself that much?」

「You do...you don't have to mind us.」

Megu...

True, she feels like she's always taking a step back towards other『women』...

「You usually take consideration of us and not jump towards Onii-chan...that's why you feel jealous of someone like Yukino-san who just have sex impudently. You must not be jealous of this kind of person. Megu-oneechan is Onii-chan's legal wife right?...If you have time to wander around then stick with Onii-chan more! Onii-chan loves Megu-oneechan and he'll answer whatever Megu-oneechan wishes for...」

Hearing Mana's words...Megu's face changes.

「...Yoshi-kun」

...I

「Un...it is as Mana says. I'll do anything for Megu's sake」

「...Do you like me?」

「...I do」

「...What about Yukino?」

「I don't hate her but I don't love her either」

Yukino's face turned cloudy.

「I love Megu. I love you...a lot」

Megu smiles happily.

...Just like the morning sun

「Thank you...Yoshi-kun. I love you...thank you, I love you too!」

Megu rushed over me in short steps...

Then she jumps to my chest.

「...I love you, I love you I love you! I'll never let you go anymore!」

...Megu

「...Kiss me...no, let's kiss. I want to kiss a lot, even if that's dozens of times!!!」

Megu kisses my lips...again and again...!

「I won't hand you to Yukino! You're my Yoshi-kun after all」

Megu clings to me like a child.

「...Ufufufu. Megumi finally became obedient」

Minaho-neesan said.

「You're too considerate that you're holding back from Yoshida-kun's pamper, right? But you see, in case of Yoshida-kun, women should be approaching him closer...!」

「Yes, Minaho-san!」

Megu embraces me tightly...then answers with a strong voice.

Megu presses her soft body to me...

...Huh?

There's a warm body on my back.

「Ehehe...me too!」

Mana embraces me from the back.

「Onii-chan. It's okay for Mana to cling too right?」

Mana whispers to my ears.

「Yeah...you can depend on me more」

When I say that...

「If you tell me like that...I'll get conceited again...!」

Mana seems to know her character where she easily gets cocky.

「Then, just apologize naked...you can't fix your personality that easily so you can just change bit by bit」

「...I love you Onii-chan」

Mana kisses my ears from the back...

「Now then...Yukino-san」

Minaho-neesan looks down at Yukino

「W-What?」

Yukino who's naked on top of the air mat...

She's completely dumbfounded as she's ignored by everyone.

「In the end...you didn't understand it at all」

Minaho-neesan speaks.

「...In the end?」

Yukino's making an『eh?』face

「That was your last sex with Yoshida-kun right?...Didn't you say that yourself? That this will be your『last』...!」

...That's right.

Yukino said it herself.

「W-We're on the way! We just did it once! We're in the middle of it and you came to interrupt us!」

Yukino speaks out her selfish logic again.

「That's why I said it you know...it's already『morning』so time's out. Yukino-san's turn is over...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「Don't joke with me! I'm still not satisfied yet!」

「Even if you're not satisfied, end means end...isn't that right, Mana-san?」

Mana answers meanly.

「Yees!~ You're out of time! Onii-chan will be taken back by us!」

She sticks out her tongue towards her sister.  
Megu looks at Yukino while embracing me...

「That was your last one...right, Yukino?!」

Yukino opens her mouth wide as she looks up at us.  
...Right.

Yukino was the one who said「This is the last」

「Yoshida-kun...are you fine with that too?」

...I

「Yes...Yukino said that『this will be the last』so I can't do anything」

...Un

I must not have regrets...

Yukino's the one who decided it...

I have no options.

「It's regrettable but it can't be helped」

Minaho-neesan tells Yukino.

「Even though I gave you a last chance...Yukino-san doesn't understood Yoshida-kun properly...!」

Yukino's face turned pale.

「I won't be giving a chance to someone who can't understand Yoshida-kun's value...」

...My value?

I don't have any value.

I'm just a dumb high school student...

I'm even inferior to the people around me...

I don't have anything I excel with...

I'm always just being helped around by my『women』...

...I'm a miserable man.

「Yoshida-kun has the power to give women as『sense of security』...!」

...Minaho-neesan?

「This person will never ignore the girls he's with. He always care and watch over them. He always listens to women talk seriously. He never laughs or makes fun with women」

Minaho-neesan criticizes me that way.

「Also...he never does anything unreasonable to the girls. He's not making demands. Even in sex, he won't attack unless the girls allow it...He always force himself to endure, his heart's self-control is amazing. It's too amazing that he's broken a bit」

...My heart's self control?

「Yukino-san has trusted Yoshida-kun before you noticed it don't you?」

Hearing Minaho-neesan...Yukino refuses.

「There's no way I can trust this man!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「Do you want to watch the sex video from a while ago? Do you remember what you said earlier?」

...What did Yukino-san?

「『I'll keep our relationship a secret too』and『You can watch my videos but don't show it to anyone』and such...you are speaking a lot of things you can't say on someone you don't trust...!」

...Right

Yukino definitely...

Speaks that she trusts me...

「After having sex with Yoshida-kun a lot of times...Yukino-san understands it, right? This boy will never do anything cruel to girls. He won't get crazy on his own desires...he's a kind person who's considerate of others」

「...!」

Yukino falters.

「He's that kind of person that's why you feel relieved being with him. You feel fine. You two know that right?」

Minaho-neesan looks at Megu and Mana.

「Yes...Yoshi-kun always looks straight at me...he's thinking too seriously」

...Megu

「Me too... If it wasn't for Onii-chan...I might've been killed yesterday I think. When Onii-chan first raped me, he looks straight at me... He doesn't think of himself...he's been worried about me all the time」

...Mana

「That's why I love Yoshi-kun. I will serve him for the rest of my life. I'll become a cute wife」

「Mana too...this is the life Onii-chan saved. I will dedicate it to Onii-chan」

「No...I haven't done anything...I can't do anything either...」

Mana embraces me from the back tightly.

「...Onii-chan, I'm really happy that I became a『sex slave』!」

...Eh?

「I'm fine with Onii-chan! I want to be with Onii-chan's side! Also...I like it better being a『slave』 It's not about being a wife, girlfriend, or pet. Mana is a『sex slave』! I'm very happy! I'm very happy for the first time in my life! I'm glad I didn't die halfway! Because I was able to become Onii-chan's『sex slave』...!」

...W-Wait a moment.

Mana as a『sex slave』or Misuzu being『pet』

Is just a figure of speech...

Those were just a『wordplay』to construct our current relationship.

I thought that we can stop anytime when they hate it...

Or rather...

「Mana...are you seriously okay being a『sex slave』forever?!」

Mana...

「Un! I will serve forever...don't abandon Mana okay, Onii-chan!」

「I... Mana is the one okay to leave me...」

...That's right

I'm not a man worthy of everyone's love...

「That won't happen! Onii-chan, you should be more confident!」

...Mana?

「That's right, Yoshi-kun is an amazing guy!」

...Megu?

「Giving a woman a sense of security...is very wonderful you know」

Minaho-neesan too...

I...

...I don't get it

「And yet...Yukino-sna, you didn't understand Yoshida-kun's power. No, you didn't try to understand...you were mocking Yoshida-kun...!」

Minaho-neesan tells Yukino.

「Earlier...you talked to Yoshida-kun about your strange『delusions』didn't you? That Shirasaka family is safe, your father wins the trial and you'll live happily in Kobe...Just how much do you believe your own『delusions』?」

...Delusion

She doesn't believe herself?

「...That is」

Yukino falls silent.

「You were able to talk about your『delusions』happily because Yoshida-kun gave you a sense of security.」

Yukino's face turned blank.

「You actually feel so uneasy and yet...when you were with Yoshida-kun that you're feeling a sense of security. That is Yoshida-kun's power but...Yukino-san didn't try to look at Yoshida-kun properly therefore...you were drunk in the sense of security he gave you」

She drowned in the sense of security?

「Even though you feel comfortable...you had delusions from the『hope you

see』from your own heart...therefore, you were speaking out your『delusions』 A real idiot has a different method right...well, you're Yukino-san who's not interested in anyone else so it can't be helped...!』

Yukino hangs her head from what Minaho-neesan said.

「...You're wrong. It's not this man's power. There's really hope! My papa will be saved! Even I will be happy!』

Yukino barks.

「Is that so...if that's what you think. It's up to you to see『dreams』 But...it's different from『reality』 In two hours, the students will be coming to this school...you'll know the reaction of the public in『reality』 Yukino-san』

Minaho-neesan smiles...

---



## 189. Coming out of relationship

---

「...I will be taking care of Yukino-san so you three can go somewhere else」

Minaho-neesan said.

「You don't like how this room smells like Yukino-san, right?」

True...the AV room is filled with the stink of love nectar and semen.

「But, are you okay being alone with her Yuzuki-san? Won't it be bad if Yukino-san runs away?」

Minaho-neesan laughed at what Mana said.

「...Where would she run looking like that?」

That's right...Yukino's naked.

Speaking of clothes near her...it's only her uniform blouse.

What's left is the remains of her torn up uniform scattered on the floor.

「Even if she can escape the school naked...what will she do afterwards? If she's sheltered by the police then information about Yukino-san will be on the press immediately. 『The daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke was rape and confined』 and the variety show will be delighted...!」

Yukino's pride won't allow herself to fall in that kind of situation.

「Yukino-san's home is surrounded by the press too. Do you plan on going home by the time of the morning variety show?」

Yukino felt shivers from what Minaho-neesan said.

「In the first place...it's not easy to get out of the school grounds easily. There's a system that stops intruders here but there's also a system that won't permit escape...!」

...In the first place, Minaho-neesan's grandfather has purchased and rebuilt

this school for the selection and development of『Kuromori』prostitutes.  
Normally...there's also a system that prevents girls who became prostitutes to escape...

「I know...do what you want! Either way, I can't do anything!」

Yukino answered losing her temper.

「...I'll do everything you say」

Yukino's vigor from a while ago is lost...

Hearing Minaho-neesan...she once again calmed down and thought of the current situation.

...Yukino's situation is already checkmate.

Even if she escape from us...she can't do anything.

Rather...if she gets away from us then she has to face the media and the world directly.

Therefore...Yukino chose the situation where she's captured by us.

She doesn't think of doing something with her own power...

She's that kind of woman.

「...Then let's go, Onii-chan」

Mana smiles.

「...Megu-oneechan too」

Megu looks at me.

She looks a bit embarrassed.

「Speaking of which...I promised Megu that I'll have sex with her this『morning』」

I recall the talk from last night.

「Un...you're right」

「...Where do you want it?」

「...Err」

Mana speaks to Megu who thought for a bit.

「Can I go too?」

...Mana?

「I want to see Onii-chan's school. I want to go together...no?」

Megu...

「Un...okay」

She answered with a smile.

「Yay!~」

Mana smiles happily.

「...Yoshi-kun, I have a morning practice by 6:30 so I have to go to the clubroom. First years have to make preparations after all...」

I look at the clock on the AV room...

It's 4:42 right now.

There's still some time...

...But

「Is it okay to have sex before the morning practice? You haven't slept that much last night, have you?」

When I asked her...Megu smiled.

「It's okay, I'm young after all!...Also, I want to do it now...!」

Megu looks at Yukino.

「I want Yoshi-kun to make love with me a lot...!」

As expected, her inferiority complex towards Yukino is still not gone...

「Got it...then let's do it once...then let's embrace afterwards if we still have time?」

「Un...that's good enough」

Megu smiles.

「The average student coming to school will come by 6 o'clock the earliest」

Minaho-neesan told us.

「But, those student goes to their club activities so the entrance to the school building opens by 6:30. Nobody can enter the school building until then...!」

In short...nobody can find whatever we do in the school building until then.

「Then...let's leave Yukino-san to Yuzuki-san and let's go somewhere! Onii-chan!」

Mana hurries me.

「Ah...wait」

I put on my underwear and pants in a hurry.  
The top...who cares.

「Hey hey, hurry up!!」

Mana and Megu were waiting for me at the entrance of the AV room.

「Then...have fun the three of you...!」

Saying that...Minaho-neesan saw us off.  
I can see Yukino's face of disappointment inside the AV room...



The three of us walk in the school building...  
Somehow...it feels refreshing.

It was different from an hour earlier where I was walking in the dark with Yukino...

It feels impure and gloomy when I walk with Yukino on the dark corridor at night but...

Walking with Megu and Mana in the corridor at morning...it has a bright atmosphere 「Hey...there's nobody here right?」

Mana asks Megu

「Hey...Megu-oneechan Let's strip?」

...Mana?!

「What do you think of a naked stroll?」

When Mana asks, Megu looks at my face.

「Yoshi-kun...Uhm...」

She looks down in embarrassment...

「Megu-oneechan!...Before asking Onii-chan's opinion, you should tell him your feelings before you know! Oneechan, do you want to have a naked stroll or you don't? Which one?!」

...Megu

「...Yoshi-kun, you see...if I say this you might hate me but...」  
「It's okay...I won't hate you...!」

I go in front of Megu and hold her hand.  
I squat down and looked up so can see Megu's eyes.

「...Yoshi-kun」  
「It's okay...depend on me more...!」

Megu happily nodded.

「You see...I want to do it, the『naked stroll』...Ah, of course only with Yoshi-kun. I will never show my naked body to any other men okay...!」  
「...I know!」

We arrived in front of the stairs.  
Either way, we have to go back to the principal's office when the stroll is over...  
The entrance to the school building is blocked until 6:30...so Megu has to go to the personnel parking lot via the underground passageway.  
If we take a stroll in the school building...we'll be going through this stairs again.

「...Should we strip here?」

Megu speaks bashfully.

「...Got it!」

Mana took off her clothes first...  
In the first place, she's not wearing any underwear...only her T-shirt and miniskirt.  
Once she took the two off...she's already naked.  
Megu...  
She took off her training wear and she's now wearing only her sports bra and panty.

「...Take my underwear off Yoshi-kun」

「Sure」

Megu's skin dyes pink in embarrassment.  
I removed her bra sliding on her skin.  
The fluffy meat mountain and her cute nipple appears.  
...Down there too.  
Then...I put down Megu's panty from her thin and long legs...  
Ah...her slit's already wet.

「Megu...lift your legs」  
「...Okay」

I pull out Megu's panty from her legs.  
Megu became naked wearing only her shoes and white socks.  
Mana's not even wearing socks. She's really naked.

「Mana will be the one to strip Onii-chan~!」  
The 14 year old girl takes off my belt...  
「Ah...it's already erect. You're aroused aren't you?!」  
Mana took off my underwear.  
She looks at the penis sticking in front of her with love.

「...I'm licking this!」  
Mana licks up the glans.  
「Mana...don't start here」  
Megu scolds her sister.  
「Ehehe...right. Sorry, later then...」  
Mana speaks to my penis then caressed it.  
「...As expected, it's a bit embarrassing」

The soft ray of the morning sun...  
We line up our naked bodies...  
My penis is already prosperous.  
Megu's crotch is wet and her nipples are already erect.  
Even Mana...she's aroused that her skin's flushed.

「W-Where are we going now?」

I asked in a dry voice.

Megu and Mana are staring at my erect penis.

「R-Right...for the time being, how about we guide Mana around the school building?」

Megu said...

「That's fine...I want to go to Onii-chan's classroom」

Mana said.

「I see...then, this way. It's on the upper floor」

「Here...?!」

Mana goes in front of me on purpose.

She walks up the stairs pitter-patter...

「...Onii-chan!」

She sticks out her naked butt to me.

Mana's anus and slit are completely exposed to me.

「Mana...that's bad manners」

I said...

「We're walking naked so it's fine to have bad manners!」

Saying that, she opens her slit with her fingers and displayed it...

Her love nectar drips down the stairs.

「If you want to do it then you can stick it in anytime!」

Saying that...she shakes her ass in front of me lewdly 「...Y-Yoshi-kun」

Megu sticks to me in panic.

She holds my hand and rubs her chest against my elbow...

「I-I'm okay with it too. We can do it anywhere...!」

「...I won't lose to Megu-oneechan!」

Mana smiles...

「...Mana, you're really a good one」

I tell Mana who's on the stairs.

「...Eh?!」

Mana's surprised.

「Earlier, you said that Megu should depend on me more... And now, you're trying to take the initiative on lewd stuff to depend on me...fueling Megu even more」

Mana...

「That's not true...Mana is just doing what's obvious as Onii-chan's『sex slave』!」

She tries to deny what I say...

「Even so...thanks, Mana」

「...Onii-chan」

...I

「Earlier, Minaho-neesan told me. I should tell what I think to the others... that's why I'm saying it」

That's right...you have to make it『words』properly 「I think that Mana's a good girl. I know. There are times where words and actions were extreme but...I love Mana」

Mana who's naked in the middle of the staircase turned teary eyed...

「...Even I love Onii-chan!」

...Mana

「Mana...speak out the words from the bottom of your heart to me」

...That's right

Mana lies right away...to hide her heart.

Inside the smile and the light answer is...

「...Onii-chan」

「You...aren't you a bit high tension lately...what's wrong?」

I asked Mana with a smile.



「U-Uhm...Onii-chan」

Mana answers.

「I want you to compare」

...Compare?

「Compare me with Yukino-san」

...I see

...Shit

...I was careless.

...I

I was only concerned with Megu and Yukino's complex on each other...

...But

Even Mana...

She also had an inferiority complex towards her sister, Yukino...

「Yukino-san has a bigger breasts than me, she might be much more beautiful but Mana will do her best...I'll become a girl Onii-chan will like...!」

Mana's face gets gloomy.

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu releases my hand then pushed my back.

「Embrace Mana」

Megu's caring about her sister, Mana.

「You too...!」

I told Megu

「...Eh?」

「Come here!」

I grabbed Megu's arm then go up the stairs 「Wait...Yoshi-kun?」

「I'll embrace both of you...!」

I spread my arms then embraced the two naked girls!!!

「...Onii-chan!」

「...Yoshi-kun!」

The two are surprised.

「You two are too anxious! Depend on me even more! Speak out honestly! I'm fine with all of it...!」

「But...won't it be annoying if we do that?...Onii-chan...」

Mana mutters.

「You see...you two aren't annoying at all」

「W-Why?」

Mana...you

「Just give me troubles! When you make a mistake then I'll apologize together with you...!」

「That won't do!」

「It doesn't matter! Break the wall of your strange heart...Mana!」

「...Onii-chan!」

Mana holds her breath.

「It's much more troublesome to take strange considerations! I'm not that smart so tell me straight!」

「Because...I don't want to be hated by Onii-chan」

「If I'm going to hate you from that much then we won't be『family』...!」

I declared.

「『Family』...are you really okay with us being『family』?」

「Yeah, it's already too late even if you say you don't want it...Mana, you're my『family』!」

「U-Un... You're right, Onii-chan」

Now, it's Megu next

「Megu too...you're holding back too much...don't hold back in front of me!」

「...Yoshi-kun」

「...I will be accepting all of them!」

I look at Megu and Mana with serious eyes.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana speaks up.

「Compare my body with Yukino-san. I don't want to lose to Yukino-san. I will have sex with you hundreds of times so I can't lose to Yukino-san. Until Onii-chan says『Mana's better than Yukino』!」

「Me too, Yoshi-kun. I don't want to lose to Yukino Looking at Yoshi-kun and Yukino's sex...I really felt frustrated! Yoshi-kun, you're having casual sex with Yukino like you're friends!」

Both of them let it out...

「I know that Yoshi-kun treasures us so you embrace us gently. But...I want to accept Yoshi-kun's desires, you didn't hold back with Yukino at all...I want to be loved like that too!」

...I see

...I finally got it.

「First, let me tell you first...Mana!」

「W-What is it...Onii-chan?」

I look at Mana's eyes...

「Your body is small...when I embrace you tightly you fit perfectly...it feels really good. Your soft body is exquisite. I love embracing you so much... !」

「Then...embrace me more! Onii-chan!」

「Also...I love your face. I love your voice too」

「...Voice? You like Mana's voice?」

「Yeah...hearing that cute voice turn lewd makes me horny」

「Then say that sooner. I will pant as much as you want!」

「Also...I love having sex with you. It feels so good when I ejaculate inside you.」

「I also love having sex with Onii-chan! I want you to release a lot of them inside me!」

「Yeah...I will do it even a lot more! No, let me...Mana!」

「Say 『I'll do you』Say that you want to violate me...!」

「Yeah...I'll do you, Mana!」

「Okay! Ravish me as much as you want Onii-chan...! If you get aroused from Mana then you can attack anytime anywhere! I won't allow you to hold back!」

Mana tells me while crying.

「Next...Megu!」

「...Y-Yes!」

I look at Megu.

「I've told you before but I love Megu's slim body! Megu's ass feels really good too!」

「...My ass?」

「Un...Megu's ass is soft like a gum. It's elastic, soft...your trained ass feels really good to touch」

「Then touch it more! You can touch it a lot!」

「Also...I love Megu's face. I think that Megu's very beautiful」

「That's...I'm not beautiful...I won't match Megu」

「That's not true...Megu's beauty is intellectual」

「...intellectual?!」

「That's right...it's not just your face that's beautiful but your intellect as well. You're an intellectual beauty...therefore」

「...Therefore?」

「That intellectual face...when it turns to disorder from the pleasure of sex is very cute. It makes me aroused...」

「...Really?」

「Yeah...Megu has a gap when having sex so it feels really lewd. Sometimes, when we are together, there are times where I shiver...when I remember the times I ejaculate inside this intelligent beauty who's very serious and honorable...!」

「...When you remember...Yoshi-kun, you get erect?」

「Yeah...It gets erect. Really hard」

「Geez...then say it immediately! I'll make you feel good!」

...Megu?

「Today...let's get out of the class and have sex」

「...Eh?」

「...We can do it anytime. Tell me when you get erect」

「But...everyone will know if we get out together!?!」

「Who cares! No...let everyone know that I had sex with Yoshi-kun. Then...I'll

return to everyone with Yoshi-kun's semen on my belly...!」

「...Megu?!」

「Who cares whatever they say...no, let them speak rumors. 『Those two had sex. They had sex』then point at our backs...! Don't you want it Yoshi-kun? Us being treated like that...?」

...I

「Got it...let's do that then」

If that's what Megu wants then...

I don't have to mind the embarrassment.

Who cares about what the other students think...

「Yoshi-kun...you don't have to hold back anymore. If you want to do it then just say it anytime. Then embrace me and fuck me anytime you want!」

「That's right...Onii-chan's the most considerate her...I'm your 『sex slave』okay? I want you to violate me while I pee in the bathroom」

...Err

「Why are you so particular about sex?」

I ask Mana.

「...Well」

Mana answers.

「...Right」

「Sex makes your whole body feel it. That Onii-chan loves me. That I'm being loved」

「Yes...we're 『women』after all I want to stand as Yoshi-kun's 『woman』...!」

「Mana feels like she lives to be violated by Onii-chan」

「Even I feel the happiest when being embraced by Yoshi-kun...!」

...I

My erection reached the maximum

「...Aha, looks delicious」

Mana puts my penis in her mouth.

「Ufufu...Yoshi-kun」

Megu kisses my lips violently...

「...I love you...Yoshi-kun」

「Me too...I love you Onii-chan」

...Both of you

「I like you two...I want to embrace you two...I want to violate you two...I want to have sex with you two... !」

I confess my honest feelings

「...Want to do it here?」

「Stairs are dangerous...we might trip」

Megu said that but...

I'll stay silent about my sex with Yukino in the stairs for now...

「...Let's go to the classrooms. To our classroom」

Megu whispers while licking my neck.

「I want to be violated by Yoshi-kun at my seat...!」

...Megu

「Then...I'll do it on Onii-chan's seat!」

...Mana

「Then...whenever Onii-chan's on his class, he'll always think of Mana」

「But, if Yoshi-kun got erect from that...I will be the one to take care of him!」

「Ah, Megu-oneechan that's sly!」

「The closest one to Yoshi-kun will be the one to do it! That's the rule!」

「We don't have that rule!」

The two of them speaks loudly...

But...the two girls were smiling before they notice.

They leak out what's in their mind...

In the morning light...the two naked girls smile at each other...

---



## 190. Taste of a Kiss

---

「...Wow, so this is Onii-chan's classroom」

The naked Mana peeks in the classroom with interest.

「It's a normal classroom though」

When I say that...

「Well...it's Onii-chan's classroom. Must be nice for Megu-oneechan You're studying with Onii-chan everyday」

「Isn't that right! Jealous?」

Megu asked Mana laughingly.

「...I am. But I'm fine! Mana will flirt with Onii-chan on other places!」

「My!」

The two look at each other then laugh.

It has turned to a peaceful relationship before I notice it.

「Hey...Onii-chan, where's your seat?」

Mana clings to me.

「Here...」

I enter the classroom and go to my usual seat.

Mana walks pitter-patter.

「Here」

Somehow...this feels strange.

Even though it's the usual classrom...

The early morning as the sun is just rising...

The clean air...

I can hear the birds singing from outside the window.



Then...we're all naked.

「My seat is here!」

Megu takes her seat.

「Yoshi-kun...take a seat too」

「...Sure」

I pull my chair and take a seat.

「Look this way...」

...The naked Megu looks obliquely behind.

I can see a mountain of breasts from the side.

Her pink nipple is looking upwards.

「Burn this in your eyes and remember it. I look like this when naked. Look at me while in the class then remember me being naked...!」

「If I do that then I'll get erect」

「Then let's go have sex. As much as you want. Then let it out inside me...!」

「...Megu」

「I want to fill Yoshi-kun's head with only my naked body...!」

「...Then I won't be able to concentrate to studies!」

「I will review you everyday when it comes to studies. I will teach you perfectly」

「Then...won't I be with Megu for the whole day?」

Megu then laughs.

「I want to be with your for the whole day. Wake up together, eat together, study together...if Yoshi-kun feels horny then you can embrace me anytime...!」

Megu's eyes look at me.

「Hey...Yoshi-kun. When we come back to the mansion...can I stay in the same room as Yoshi-kun?」

「...Eh?」

「I can't sleep soundly anymore unless Yoshi-kun's next to me...!」

...No, you see.

「Megu-oneechan that's sly! If you're going to do that then Mana will sleep on Onii-chan's bed every night!」

Mana presses her naked chest against me while saying that.

「Katsuko-nee won't allow that you know」

When I say that...

「Then we'll just invite Katsuko-san and Nei-san to sleep together...let's have a big bed to sleep on. Everyone's going to sleep together with Onii-chan...then that's fine!」

Mana said calmly.

「But...I feel sorry for Nagisa and Misuzu who aren't living together with us」

When I say that...

「Well, that is a problem Misuzu-san and Nagisa-san have to think about...I won't hold back anymore. I will stick to Yoshi-kun! If not, other girls might take away Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu who's being considerate of others is already no more...  
Megu seems to have decided to hold her happiness aggressively.  
That's good but...  
It's a big problem for me...

「Hey...Yoshi-kun」

Megu stands up from her seat.  
Then she puts her ass on her desk and looked at me.

「...Look at my body」

Megu's tall and naked model body.

「Un...it's beautiful, Megu」

I convey it by『words』properly.

「...I'm glad. You see...I also like Yoshi-kun's body」

...Eh?

「When Yoshi-kun embraces me...or when I embrace Yoshi-kun, I like both!」  
「Me too! I love Onii-chan!」

Mana clings to my neck.

「I like Onii-chan's smell...Onii-chan's sweat smells like gum...!」

「...Gum?」

「Un...it smells like fruit flavored gum!」

So I have that smell.

「Mana...you smell like milk candy」

I said.

「What's that?...Are you saying that Mana's a child?」

Mana's furious.

「No...your sweat really smells like milk candy. It's sweet...!」

Un...that's right.

Girls smell sweet.

「Yoshi-kun...what about me?」

Megu asks me.

「Megu feels like lemon and honey on milk」

「...Is that so?」

「Yeah...Megu's kiss tastes like lemon」

When I answer that, Megu...

「Ah, I've heard of that! Something like when you kiss someone you really like it tastes like lemon...!」

Mana's face approaches me.

「So Megu-oneechan tastes like lemon?」

...I

「Un...it it feels very tense when kissing but sometimes, it tastes like lemon」

「...What about others?」

「Err...When I kissed Megu, it also tasted like lemon」

「...Megu-oneechan and Misuzu-oneechan only?」

「Uhm...!」

「Answer properly, Onii-chan」

Mana's serious eyes look at me.

「My first kiss with Nei-san also felt like that」

Sorry...Katsuko-nee and Nagisa's kiss doesn't taste like that yet.  
The direction of tension and excitement is somewhat different.  
I do depend on Katsuko-nee and Nagisa after all.  
Nei-san, Megu and Misuzu...I had faced them one-on-one...  
It's straight upfront so it's tense.

「Geez...Mana also want to taste like lemon!」

「Eh, Mana...!」

「Kiss me...Onii-chan」

Mana's cute face waits for a kiss.

「No...but」

Mana looks at me with an anxious face.

「Right...if it didn't taste like lemon then it means that Onii-chan doesn't seriously love me」

Seriously...this kid!

「Then I'll kiss you a hundred times. Until I come to like Mana...!」

「Onii-chan!」

I embrace Mana.

「...I'll kiss you」

「Un...please...please」

I can tell that Mana's really tense.  
The tension is being transmitted to me too

「...Here I go」

Looking at her like this...she's really a beauty...  
I'm sure she'll be much more beautiful than Yukino...

「...Here」

Mana closes her eyes.  
I kissed Mana's soft tensed lips.

A soft lip of a beauty.

Ah...it tastes like lemon...

「...How is it?」

When I release my lip...

The 14 year old girl opens her eyes...

Her big eyes look at me.

「...Onii-chan you liar」

Mana said.

「It doesn't taste like lemon...it tastes like strawberries」

Saying that...Mana kisses me once again.

「Look...as expected...!」

Mana smiles at me.

「When I lick your penis, would it taste like strawberries?」

...Eh?

「...Ufufu」

Mana then dives her head to my crotch.

「...Let's give this one a kiss too」

She kisses my glans...

「Ah...the penis tastes like penis!」

「...What's the taste of my penis?」

I asked inadvertently.

「Hmm you see...it taste like an adult」

「...Adult?」

「That's right. You see...When Mana does it with Onii-chan, she feels like growing up even more」

Mana answers while stretching her tongue to lick and suck my glans.

「...Of course, Mana's not very smart so my heart is still a child's. But you see...when we have sex, it feels like my body is growing to become an adult even

more」

「...Is that so?」

「Un...when Onii-chan releases his semen...it feels like the tip of my breast is throbbing. It feels like it's saying that my body is gradually changing to become an adult...!」

...Mana

「Can I change more and more?」

Mana looks up at me while holding my penis.

「Isn't that obvious?...Mana has changed to Mana after all」

Mana smiled happily.

「You're right...no matter what happens, Mana is Onii-chan's『slave』 We'll be together forever right」

「...Yeah」

...I have to be with this child.

I must not desert this child.

I was abandoned by my family however...

She has abandoned her family by herself.

Then...she comes to me.

That's why...I must not leave her alone.

「...I will protect you」

When I say that...Mana

「No...Onii-chan will protect me and I will protect Onii-chan...」

「...Is that so?」

「Un...I want to be someone useful for Onii-chan...!」

Mana said and smiled.

「I don't want to be a burden」

I caressed Mana's cheeks.

「You're cute」

「...Eh?」

「Mana's cute...soooo cute. It makes me happy that you're by my side」

「...Really?!」

「Yeah, really」

「Then...I'll make you even happier!」

...Yeah

So this is what conveying your feelings through『words』means.

It's not good to just think of it...you have to make it『words』properly

Have courage and convey as『words』...

Change it to『words』without regretting the time...

The various thoughts will be transmitted to the other party without ill emotions.

The dust accumulated in the heart is washed away...

「Onii-chan...you're already so energetic!」

Mana looks up at me then smiled.

「I'll let Megu-oneechan go first」

「...Mana!」

「Mana can just be for later...!」

I look at Megu.

The naked Megu sits on her desk...she looks at us with a calm smile.

It's as if a naked art sculpture of the goddess of art.

「...It's strange」

「...Megu?」

「Earlier, I felt so jealous watching Yoshi-kun and Yukino have sex and yet...when it was Mana and Yoshi-kun, I don't feel that at all」

「...Right」

「...Un」

I don't understand it well

「Mana's the same. If it was Megu-oneechan and Misuzu-chan, I'm completely okay with it. Katsuko-san and Nagisa-san too...I haven't seen Nei-san's sex but I think I'm fine with it too. Or rather...I want to watch it and join」

「...Mana?」

「『Sister's association』is amazing isn't it?...It really feels like a『family』 I love all

the girls who love Onii-chan!」

Mana clings to me.

「Therefore...I don't think I can forgive Yukino」

...Megu?

「That girl doesn't love Yoshi-kun at all」

「Right...Yukino-san is just drowning in her sex with Onii-chan...she doesn't love Onii-chan. She doesn't even like him I think...」

...Well yeah

There's no way Yukino likes me.

「Geez...don't make that kind of face! Onii-chan has us right?!」

Mana said.

「That's right! We'll be with Yoshi-kun forever and ever okay!」

...Megu smiles at me.

「There...Embrace Megu-oneechan!」

Mana stands up and pull my hand.

「Y-Yeah」

I stand up as well...

Megu is waiting for me

「Violate me in my seat」

「...Megu」

「I want to feel Yoshi-kun in the class too」

Megu opens her legs wide.

「...Touch it. My body and mind...all of them are dedicated to Yoshi-kun...」

I hang over Megu.

「Ufufu...Mana really made it rock hard」

Megu said while stroking my penis.

「...Megu, are you aroused?」



「...I am. We're naked and going to have sex in our usual classroom

「Megu's body smells good. It smells like lemon and honey combined with milk」

「...Lick it. Eat Megu's body...Yoshi-kun!」

I kiss Megu.

Yeah...As expected, Megu's lips tastes like lemon.

Then...I lick her nape.

Then...her breasts.

「...It feels good. Yoshi-kun...I love youuu~」

Megu's body trembles from my caress...

「Megu...I'll lick that place too」

「...Eh?」

「...I want to lick it」

「I-It's embarrassing」

「...Megu's body is all mine right?」

I put my head in between Megu's open crotch.

「Ahn...don't look at it so much...it's embarrassing...」

Hot love nectar drips from her slit.

On top of that...her ruby colored clitoris is shining.

「Fuuu! Fuuu!」

I blow my breath there.

「Aaaahn! I can feel it...I can feel it...Yoshi-kun!」

Then...I made my tongue crawl there... !

「...Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!」

Megu panted loudly...!

I lick up her slit...

Her clitoris too...!

「Nooo, noooo...aaaaah, not thereeeee!!!」

The tip of my tongue rolls her clitoris...!

「Aaaaaaaaahn! Aaaaaaaa! Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kuuuuun!」

Megu holds my head then pushed it to her crotch...

「It feels goooooood! It feels goooooooooodd!!!!」

Megu's panting voice can be heard from our usual classroom.

I move my tongue even more violently...!

「If you do it that much...I'll cum...Megu will cum from being licked by Yoshi-kun...!!」

I'll make you cum...!

My mouth is already wet with Megu's love nectar.

The smell of sweat and her love nectar is soiling the classroom...

「Dameeee, dameeee...ahaaa...I-It's coming...I'm cumming...the white light...aaaah...Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kuuuuuuuuun!!!!」

Megu reaches climax while calling my name.

Her whole body convulses then her arms and thighs are clamping my head...

But still...I'm not stopping my tongue...!

「Aaaah...I love this...I love this...I love you Yoshi-kuuuun!!!!」

Megu's scream echoes in the classroom.

「...Haaaaaa. haaaaaa, haaaaa」

Megu who came once is breathing roughly with teary eyes...

Small tears fall from her eyes.

Then, I lick her tears.

The taste of Megu's tears...sweat, and love nectar...

Everything that comes out of Megu's body is an aphrodisiac.

It's hardening my penis...!

「...Put it in」

Megu said

「...Violate me. I want to be ravished...Make Megu's insides feel good...!」

...I

I push my penis in Megu's opening...!

「H-Hurry up! Don't tease me!」

Megu wants me to invade her

「...Here I go」

The glans is digging in Megu's meat lips...it's sticking in...!

「Aaaah! Yoshi-kun's coming iiiin!!! More! More! Pierce Megu!!!」

The glans is swallowed by Megu's entrance...!

Her narrow meat road is expanded...

The love nectar gathered inside is pushed and gushed out sticking to my penis...!

「...More...fill me up Yoshi-kun!」

「...Megu!」

I pierce deep inside her vagina!

「Haaaaaa! I-It came! Yoshi-kun...thank you...thank you for connecting with Megu again...!!!」

「...Megu, Megu, Meguuuu!!」

I begin my piston.

Megu's whole body begins to sweat.

She's crying...Megu's crying in pleasure...

「That's an amazingly lewd face. Just looking at Megu's face makes me want to cum」

「It's because it's Yoshi-kun...I'm being loved by the person I love so it feels good...I'm happy...more...I want to be happier!」

Megu turns her hand on my back...

Oh, what pleasure it is when you're embraced by the girl while having sex.

「Sorry, Yoshi-kun...Megu's so greedy...I want to be happier... I want Yoshi-kuun!」

「Yeah...be happy...I'll make you happy...!」

Megu swings her waist from below...

「...Megu?」

「Does it feel good?」

「Yeah...it feels really good」

「I'm glad...Megu will also make Yoshi-kun happy too...!」

Moving her waist...Megu then puts pressure then tightens her vagina from time to time...!

Ah...it feels good.

「Ufufufu...is this good? It's good isn't it...Yoshi-kun's making a pleased face...so cute!」

...Megu!

「...Hey, Yoshi-kun...I've got a request」

Megu said

「...What?」

「...Say that『it feels better than Yukino』」

Megu's face is serious.

「It's fine even if it's a lie...I just want you to say it...!」

...Juppu, juppu, juppu.

Megu who's melting from the pistons...

Megu's moist eyes begs to me.

「...It feels good. Megu feels much better than Yukino. It's not a lie...it's true」

Oh...the meat folds stimulates my penis.

「Yukino just have sex without any attachment...that feels good on it's own but...her sex is only just me doing her...she doesn't think of anyone but herself...she doesn't look at me.」

「...Megu is looking at Yoshi-kun...I'm watching...Yoshi-kun's so cute...I love it!」

「Un...Megu's looking at me...making me feel good...loving me...I love you, I love you Megu.」

「I love you too! I love you Yoshi-kun!!!」

Aah...the speed of the waist goes faster...

...I want to pierce!

...More and more!

「I want to conquer this Megu's body. I want to ejaculate inside Megu!」

「Go on...Conquer it...Megu wants it...Megu wants Yoshi-kun's hot stuff inside her...!」

「...Meguuuu...Meguu...Meguu...!」

Aah...soon...it's about time...

「...Megu...I'm about to...!」

「Wait...wait for just about a bit...me too...I'm about to cum too...!」

「...Aah...I won't wait...I won't wait...!」

「Then, order me...tell Megu to『cum』...!」

Megu looks at me with pained eyes...

Ooh...cute...beautiful...

This is my『woman』...my『fiancee』...

My...Megu!

「Cum! Meguu! Cum from my dick! Cum...hurry!」

「Yes...Megu's going to cum! I'm going to cum from Yoshi-kun...aaaah, aaah, it's really comiiiiing...comiiiiing!!」

「...Huurry...I can't hold back anymore...Meguuu!!」

「It's soon...it's really soon...sorry...sorry...Yoshi-kun...Aaaaah...it's reaching...it's reachiiiiing...ah, ah, ah! I'm about to cum! Cum! Cummmiiing!」

Megu's inside convulses.

「...M-meguuuu!!!」

「...L-Let it out! Let it all out! Yoshi-kuuuuuuun!!!」

I burst out...

「Oooh...it's so hoooooooooot!!!」

The jet of semen flows in Megu's womb!!

...Dooooku!!

「...I'm being conquered! Yoshi-kun's『woman』...I'm becoming Yoshi-kun's『woman』!」

...Doooku!

「...It feels good! It feels really good! Yoshi-kun...my Yoshi-kuuuun!」

...Dooku!

「...Aaaaaah, aaaaaah, aaaaaaaaaah, aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

Then...Megu reaches climax.

Feeling my heat spreading in her womb...

...Haa...haa...haa...haa...

Even our hair is completely covered in sweat.

Megu kisses me who's absentminded from below.

「...Megu?」

「It felt good...I love you, Yoshi-kun1」

Megu embraces me.

I embraced Megu too.

I touch her breasts...then rolled her nipple with my fingers.

「Ahn...it feels good」

Megu takes out her tongue and lick the back of my ears.

「It felt really good...what about Yoshi-kun?」

「It felt the best I've ever had」

I feel like Megu's improving at sex gradually.

No...it's not just Megu.

Misuzu and Mana too...it's not that long since they lost their virginity but I feel like they're progressing a lot.

「I'm going to get addicted to this kind of sex」

「Then you get addicted to it, Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at me

「Megu is ready to be embraced by Yoshi-kun anytime...!」

...Megu

「Therefore...don't do it with Yukino anymore」

...Eh?

「I don't want to see that...I won't hand Yoshi-kun to Yukino...I don't want to hand you to her!」

Megu embraces me.  
She squeezes the penis that's still inside her...  
The semen that remained in the urethra is being splashed inside Megu's womb.

「...Onii-chan」

Then...Mana speaks from the back.

「...What's wrong, Mana?」

When I turned around...  
Mana's looking at me with face of desire.  
There's love nectar dripping out from her crotch...  
She made a puddle on the floor.

「Mana endured it, tried not to touch herself...」

She looks at me with a sad eyes.

「I'm already prepared...therefore...!」

Mana shouts

「...Violate Mana too...Please...Onii-chan!」

---

## 191. Rape Play

---

「...Mana, have sex in Yukino's seat while we're at it」

Megu told Mana

Megu caresses my back while still having my penis inside her...

Her face is the only one that's looking at Mana.

「...Eh?」

Mana who's crotch is wet with love nectar is surprised by Megu's proposal

「So even if Yoshi-kun looks towards Yukino's seat during class, he'll only remember Mana!」

...Megu?

「Actually, I want to do it but I'll let Mana do it」

Megu said with a laugh.

「Onii-chan...are you looking towards Yukino-san that much?」

Mana asks me.

「Y-Yeah...sometimes」

Actually...I'm staring at her so much that the whole class is aware...

「Therefore, Yoshi-kun needs treatment...shock therapy!」

「Hey...Megu!」

「First, I'll give you my medicine!」

Megu kisses my lips.

「What's left is for Mana to treat you...!」

She embraced me tightly...!

Mana's body is warm and soft.



「Megu-oneechan...Where is Yukino-san's seat?」

Mana asked.

「There」

Megu raised her body and points out.

「...Here?」

The naked Mana moves inside the classroom.

「No...the seat on the back」

「...Here?」

「Yes...that's right」

Mana stands in front of Yukino's desk

「This is Yukino-san's seat and that's Onii-chan's seat」

Mana looks at the distance of the two seats with a face of a detective.

「...Got it. Then, Mana will be treating Onii-chan!」

Mana smiles.

「Now...Yoshi-kun, go to Mana」

「...Megu」

「...It's fine. I will be watching over」

Then she kisses me once again.

「Un...」

I pull out my penis from inside Megu.

「...Ahn!」

At the moment the glans come out...semen drips from Megu's slit to the floor.

「Ufufu...it still looks energetic」

Mana said as she stroke my penis.

「Okaay, sir patient, please go to Mana!」

Mana's woman doctor play seems to have began...

Well fine...let's play with her.

「Un...I'm coming right now」

Coming from my seat...to Megu's seat...then this time, Yukino's seat.  
What's waiting there is the naked Mana.

「...Aha, Onii-chan came!

Mana hugs me.

Kisses me...

「Yup yup...it tastes like strawberries!

Mana said while laughing.

「Then...What should I do?」

When I asked...Mana

「Then...Mana will explain how she treats Onii-chan...!」

Saying that...Mana turned her back on me and put her hands on Yukino's desk...

...She sticks out her cute ass and turn it towards me.

「Onii-chan...violate Mana here...!」

...Mana?

Mana turned to me.

Saying her cute ass...

「...Onii-chan. Let's do『rape play』!」

...『Rape』play?

「Onii-chan...do you remember the first time you raped Maika-san?」

Mana talks about her own first experience

「I do...it's just two days ago you know」

...That was.

A horrible rape.

Maika was robbed of her virginity by force.

「Un. Please ravish Mana like that time

Putting her hands on the desk...Mana turns her face towards me.

「But...!」

「...I know that Onii-chan values me...it doesn't mean I want it the same all the time. Mana loves having sex with Onii-chan with smiles...」

The smile disappears from Mana's face.

「But you see...sometimes, I want to be made a mess by Onii-chan... I've been raped by Onii-chan during the turn of Maika to Mana right? You even ejaculated six times at night...!」

「...Mana」

She looks at me with serious eyes.

「...Let me tell Onii-chan properly first...Mana is a pervert. I've come to love being raped by Onii-chan...!」

...Mana?

「When I'm being raped by Onii-chan, my heart beats so fast...it's very exciting!」

Mana's eyes are hot...aroused...!

Love nectar begins to flow from her slit to her thighs again...

「I-I'm sure that it's from the blood of Shirasaka Sousuke... That's why...I'm perverted...I want to have lewd sex...I want Onii-chan to make a mess out of me...!」

The 14 year old petite girl confesses to me.

「I think that Onii-chan hates perverted women but...sorry Mana is that kind of girl...Onii-chan can't help but want to be raped by Onii-chan...!」

...I

「Mana...that's wrong. Mana's a normal girl. An ordinary 14 year old middle school girl... Then I...I raped Mana in a messed up horrible way...again and again...that's why, Mana has experienced horrible sex because of me...that's why the balance in your heart has become troublesome from that experience... it's all my fault...Mana did nothing wrong...!」

Because of me...

Because each of my judgement was wrong...

Mana doesn't want to be raped...

There's no way a girl wishes to be『raped by a man』...

I just wanted to stabilize the balance in Mana's heart.

This and that...since her virginity...I have raped Mana again and again...!

「That's not what you should be saying...!」

Mana shouts.

「...I want to be raped by Onii-chan! I don't want it unless it's Onii-chan! I'd rather bite my tongue and die than do it with other man than Onii-chan」

「Hey...Mana?」

「...I love you. I really do. I can stay alive as long as I stay with Onii-chan...!」

...Right

Mana no longer has anyone but me.

Mana's abandoned by her sister and her family.

「That's why, please... Onii-chan, take me. Take Mana's everything...not the normal Mana but the lewd Mana who wants to be raped by Onii-chan too... please, make everything yours...!」

...I

...I have to take responsibility.

This girl's life has been distorted by sexual outlook...

「...Got it...I'll take everything」

「...Thank you Onii-chan」

Mana tells me with tears on her eyes.

「What should I do? What does Mana want me to do...?」

I asked Mana what kind of『rape play』she wants...

「...You see...Onii-chan...can I go back to the Maika-san before?」

...Mana?

...I see.

The sudden change from Maika to Mana...

This is a psychotherapy to fill in that gap...

「Oh...sure」

「Onii-chan too...call me Maika then I'll call you Yoshida-san」

「...Got it」

Our mysterious『rape play』begins...

「Right now...I'm in an invisible chain...my hands and legs are tied up...I can't move my hand from this desk...」

Mana explains her setting

「...U-Un」

「That's why...violate me from the back like this. Don't ever stop even if I resist or say that I don't want it」

「...Yeah」

「Therefore...you don't have to worry about me...Onii-chan should just concentrate on ejaculating inside me then fill me up a lot, make me feel good...!」

「...Got it」

「...Then, let's begin」

Mana breathes in deeply...

Then...

「Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!」

The windowpane vibrates from the loud scream...!

「Iyaaaaaaaaaaa! I don't want this!! Yoshida-san, please...don't do it...don't violate Maikaaaaa!

Is Mana recalling the rape from the day before yesterday?

There's tears falling from her eyes already.

「I don't want this...don't rape me...stop...please stop」

And yet...I

...I'm very aroused from Mana's tears.

「...Don't violate me! I don't want to be raped!」

The grains of tears flows into her face.

I thought I want to lick those tears...

「..... ! ! !」

...That's when I get it.

...oh.

It's not Mana who wants psychotherapy from the『rape play』...

I also want it.

I'm also sick.

These past few days are too stimulating...

Starting with Yukino's rape...I had been forced to have sex in various situations one after another...

I've been experiencing『too stimulating sex』far beyond my imagination...

I'm going crazy.

I lost the understanding of the normal feeling.

Mana's not the only one who wishes for this『rape play』

I also am a『sick person』who needs treatment

「...Maikaaaaaa, Maikaaaa!!」

I decided to jump in the『rape play』...

Becoming a rapist...I embrace Mana from behind...!

「Nooo, don't touch me...you monsteeer! Yoshida-san is a monster!!!」

...I

I slapped Mana's ass who's twisting her body from the hate of being touched by me!

...Paaaaaaan!

The sound of two skins hitting echoes.「」

「...Hii, iyaaaaa!」

Mana's face distorts in pain.

No...I see it.

Mana is pleased from the pain of being hit...

The pleasure of hitting penetrates my heart too...!

「...Don't hit me! Please don't hit Maika's buttocks...!」

If you turn those words...it means「I want you to hit me」...

I thought.

That's why I slapped her again!!

...Paaan!

...Paaaaan!

Mana's ass has a red trace of my hand...

「...Ouuuuch!!...Stoop!...Yoshida-san, stoop!!!」

...I can't hold back anymore!

I grabbed Mana's ass...

My hot erection presses her...

「...N-Noooo...don't put it in...please don't put it inside Maikaaa...!」

「...Here we go!」

「...I-I'm being violated!...Yoshida-san's violating me...! Maika's being rapeed!!」

「...I'm going to rape you!」

...I!

I pierce Mana from the back!

Even without foreplay...it went in completely inside Mana.

My penis is buried in a hot bath...!

...Jupopopopo!

The love nectar scatters on the floor from too much momentum!

「...Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!!!」

Mana screams...!

「...Ouch, it hurts, it hurts! It huuurts!!」

...I know that it's a lie.

Mana's vagina is swallowing my penis...gently accepting it.

Her genital is pleased.

「...Uaaaaaaaaa!!」

I raised a scream I can't understand...

I begin a vigorous piston...!

「...Aaaaah!...Noooo!!...Nooooo!...Ouuuch!! My stomach feels painful...it

hurts!!!...Stop this!!!...please stop this already...Yoshida-san!」

I refuse what Mana says.

Mana's body is welcoming me.

I get aroused from that gap.

「...Uuuu, uhaaaaa...uu, uu, uu...haaaaa!」

I can't speak up anymore...

I'm just raping Mana while breathing roughly like a beast...!

...I'm raping her!

「...It's hoot! Yoshida-san's hot penis is moving inside Maika!...Help me...I don't want this!!!」

...Gucho, gucho, gucho, gucho!

Even though she says she hates it=...

Her vagina is melting...

It accepts my penis to the very depths...

It's tightening so hard...!

「...Nuaaaaauuu!」

I grab Mana's breasts from behind.

I massage her still young breasts.

I spin around her nipples...

「Nooo...don't tease my nipples!!!」

Rubbing it around with my fingers...Mana's caved in nipple comes out...!

Ooh...after violating her multiple times, Mana's body is growing as a『woman』 rapidly...

A lewd body to accept my desire...!

I accelerate my piston further...!

The head of my penis is pulling out the love nectar from Mana's insides...!

It's polishing Mana's insides... !

...Oh right.

Yukino said that it felt good around here?...

I aim my penis at that point!



「...Hiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!!!」

Mana's body twitches!

Sweat comes out from her whole body...!

「...Iyaaaaa!...Aaaaah!...Iiii...Aaaaaahn!」

The second year middle school girl pants from the abnormal sex!

「...Aaah...I'm cumming! I'm going to cum!」

The desire to ejaculate surface from the bottom of my body!

「...Noooo! Don't cum! Don't cum inside!!...Yoshida-san, please spare me from that! Please spare me from that!」

.....Mana !

Even though she's shouting that...

Mana's body is wanting me...!

Her vaginal meat tightens my penis wanting to squeeze out my semen.

Her uterus...is opening up wanting to drink my semen.

「...I'll get pregnant! A baby...I'll get pregnant with a babyyy...please don't seed Mana!...Yoshida-san, please don't impregnate Maika!!!」

I burst from Mana's screams!

「...I'll impregnate you...!...I'll make you pregnant!...You'll bear my child!」

「...Noooo!!...Noooo!!!...Neveeeeeeeer!!」

Mana's scream of refusal pushes the switch of my desires!

「Aaaaaaaaaaaaaah...cumming! It's coming out! I'm cummiing!!!」

The hot jet runs up my body!

My semen is released like a volcanic eruption!!

「...Iyaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

My Magma defiles Mana's sanctuary!!

Hearing Mana's screams...I move my waist to push it up Mana's vagina...!

「...It's spreadiing!...the hot stuff...is on my stomach...what should I do?...I'll get pregnant...I'm getting pregnant...!!!」

Hearing Mana's voice...I continue my ejaculation...

「...aaaaaah, aaaaah, aaaaa!」

Pushing my waist...my glans touches Mana's uterus...!

From hole to hole...my semen injects directly...!

Contrary to Mana's words, her body is opening to accept my sperm...!

She's pushing her waist by herself!!!

「Ahaaa...it's coming in...it's coming in...it's coming iin...!!!」

...Aaaaaah!

I poured it all in Mana until the last drop.

「...Haa, haa, haa, haa」

I relax my body and cover Mana's back.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana stopped the『play』

「...Take off your penis. I want to embrace Onii-chan...!」

「...Sure」

I pull out my penis.

The syrupy sperm drips from Mana's crotch.

I embrace Mana in front.

Mana asks for kiss.

While I kiss her softly...

Mana inserts her tongue.,

「...It felt really good...Onii-chan」

Mana looks at me with passionate eyes.

「...Mana」

「...I'm fine with Onii-chan...I want to be raped by Onii-chan forever...」

Saying that...she plays with my penis that's starting to wither.

「...Uu」

From the stroke...the remaining semen from the glans comes out.

「Ufu...what a waste」

Mana puts it in her forefinger then licks it up.

「...Un. It's bitter and tasty...delicious!」

Mana smiled at me.

「Hey...let's do this『rape play』again...Mana loves this...I want to do this more...I want to do this all the time...!」

Mana sticks her body to me then licks my sweat.

「I like being violated by Onii-chan powerfully...it's very good!」

Mana's arousal seems to have not subsided yet...

「Onii-chan...do you not want to do『rape play』?」

She looks at my face anxiously.

...I

「...I want to do it too」

I spoke honestly.

「I also perhaps gotten crazy...I know that this is wrong but I want to do it again」

Mana smiles.

「It's not『bad』...!」

...Mana?

「Mana and Onii-chan are having fun...this is a『play』 That's why it's fine...!」

Mana whispers to me.

「Make Mana more and more naughty... Make me embarrassed... I want to do indecent things... Mana won't hide anything from Onii-chan anymore so Onii-chan should let out all his lewd feelings to Mana...」

「...I」

「...You can't show it all to Mana」

「Well...if I do that then I think Mana will hate me」

I think so.

「No way...I won't ever come to hate you. Rather, I'd be happy」

「...Mana?」

「You see...Mana actually feels embarrassed but I like being naked in front of Onii-chan. I feel my heart beating so fast when Onii-chan looks at Mana's everything...it makes me happy.

That's why I will get my mind naked too」

Naked...mind

「I won't hide anything from Onii-chan...Mana's lewd tendencies...the perverted and obscene places too... Because, Onii-chan will be accepting all of Mana, right?」

「...Yeah」

That's right.

I will accept Mana's everything

I swore.

「That's why...Mana also wants Onii-chan to reveal his mind. It's okay...I won't hate you from that much...I will do anything lewd Onii-chan wants...!」

Mana smiles.

「Up until now...Onii-chan has always been taking care of Mana. But, it'll be different from now on...! Mana will open up Onii-chan's mind and will become a real『sex slave』...only for Onii-chan...」

Mana hugs me tightly...

「Mana...I」

This is Yukino's seat.

I kept staring here since the entrance ceremony...

...Yukino too.

「I've been watching Yukino from the distance... I hardly talked to her...I just thought of watching her from far away」

I open up to Mana.

「...Then?」

「But...I...I've been masturbating everyday at home while imagining Yukino.

Also...I thought that Yukino and I will never get along... I can't imagine a normal sex between normal lovers by all means... I always imagined raping Yukino. I've masturbated with those delusions」

「...Un」

「And yet...when I discovered that Yukino got a boyfriend...I wasn't able to endure the thought of that man taking away Yukino's virginity...that's why」

「...That's why?」

「I get on Minaho-neesan's『revenge』plan...and raped Yukino. I took her virginity...that was my first experience...!~」

「...Is that so?」

Mana pats my head kindly.

「But...when I actually raped her...I understood that I've just longed for Yukino's figure by gazing from afar...Actually, I never knew anything about Yukino...!」

「...Un」

「Still...I can't stop raping Yukino...I've gotten even crazier I think...!」

That's right...I

「Thinking about it now...I had sex with Nagisa then I was told that I saved her but...it was the opposite. After the sex, Nagisa said that she『likes』me...that smile saved me...」

「...Is that so?」

「That's right...then after that, Misuzu...Katsuko-nee...Megu...and Mana. I met them one after one...every time I had sex...I was the one saved. I was saved by everyone...!」

That's the first time I noticed that face.

「You're wrong...Yoshi-kun」

...Megu?

「All of us had a wound in our heart...we had something missing. We met Yoshi-kun...and when embraced by Yoshi-kun, it was cured one by one...it was filled up. It's not just us, Yoshi-kun's the same... Having sex...loving each other... we heal each other」

...Is that so?

「Except only one...Yukino」

...Yukino?

「Yukino only loves herself so sex isn't anything but something to satisfy her sexual desire...no matter how many times she has sex, love won't be born」

...True

...I can't have a relationship with Yukino.

At best, only sex friends...

No, with her selfish nature...even sex friend won't last long...

「No matter how many times have sex with Yukino...she won't be healed. Rather...both of you will only drown in sex... But...that's only eating snacks when you're hungry... No matter how much you eat, you won't be full...your hands won't stop eating snacks. It'll have no end...!」

Megu said.

「That's why...I don't want you to have sex with Yukino anymore...!」

...Megu

「Hey...Yoshi-kun. Could you expose your naked heart not only to Mana but also me?」

「Err...sure」

I nodded.

「Answer honestly...Yoshi-kun, do you want to rape me?」

In front of me...the naked Megu is standing.  
Her crotch still has my semen dripping from it...

「I...I want to be raped by Yoshi-kun. I want to my hands and feet tied up and be violated forcefully...!」

「...Megu?」

「What about Yoshi-kun?」

「Even I want to. I want to rape Megu's body...!」

「Megu smiles!」

「Then...let's try『rape play』too!」

「...Eh?」

「It doesn't need to be right now...no, it's rape after all. It's better if it's sudden. If Yoshi-kun wants to do it then you can attack me anytime you want... !」

「No...but」

「Don't mind it...this is for Yoshi-kun's『heart treatment』」

「...『Heart treatment』?」

「That's right...Yoshi-kun has raped a woman like Yukino who's a 『mud turtle』... and you've gotten a bit crazy from that first experience」

...『Mud turtle』?

...Yukino is?

「Yukino just closes herself in the husk even when having sex. Even if you push or hit her, she's just like a『mud turtle』that enters the shell and distress herself alone」

「Right...Yukino-san's a『mud turtle』」

Mana too...

「But...Mana and I really love Yoshi-kun...I think we can heal you. That's why rape me. Let's have a lot of『rape play』...!」

「Ah...Mana too! Mana loves doing『rape play』with Onii-chan!」

Mana clings to me.

「You don't need Yukino-san anymore do you...?」

...Both of them says so but.

Is that really the case?

Is Yukino beyond saving already?

...And

Can this distorted me be『cured』by the『rape play』of the two?

I don't know.

---

## 192. Thirsty Throat

---

「That's right...Yukino's no longer necessary in Yoshi-kun's life. That girl only makes Yoshi-kun suffer...」

Megu told me.

Is that so?...As expected

「Mana, will serve Onii-chan more and more...I'll become a woman who can satisfy you...! Therefore, you don't need Yukino-san anymore do you?...Right?!」

Mana rubs her cheeks on my chest...

...Then

『...Yoshida-kun, Megumi, Mana-san...come back quickly...!』

Suddenly...Minaho-neesan's voice can be heard from the speakers...

...As expected, she's peeping.

Then...she contacted us using the school broadcast from the monitor room...

She's not broadcasting to the whole school...I'm sure that it's possible to talk on each individual classroom...

...But

What does it mean by『Come back quickly』...?!

「Could it be that Viola came to attack?! Or could it be the people from Shirasaka house...?!」

I shout at the hidden microphones somewhere in the classroom.

I should be able to talk to Minaho-neesan in the monitoring room.

Immediately after, Minaho-neesan's voice answers from the speaker.

『...It's not』

...Not?



『...Katsuko's saying that breakfast is ready...!』

...I

I made a big fool of myself...!

「B-Breakfast?」

『That's right...you guys are hungry now aren't you?』

At the moment she say that...

Someone's stomach groaned.

「I-It's not me...Yoshi-kun!」

Megu looks at me.

「Ehehe...it's Mana!」

Mana holds her stomach bashfully.

『Hurry up and come back...especially Megumi, you have morning practice don't you?...Go after taking a meal』

「But...Minaho-neesan. It's hard to move when your stomach is filled...」

『That's why come back soon and eat...be sure to digest it even a bit by the time you start your practice』

Minaho-neesan's harsh...

I look at Megu.

「Let's go back...Megu」

I...

「I want to flirt with Yoshi-kun until the last minute though...!」

「...We can just do that later」

When I say that...Megu smiled.

「...You're right. My mornings with Yoshi-kun isn't today only」

「Then, once Megu-oneechan goes to practice, Mana will be sucking it off...!」

M-Mana...!

「Mana hasn't drank from Onii-chan today」

「Didn't you lick it a while ago?」

「That's not enough at all...Mana wants to drink a lot... !」

Saying that...she puts her lips on my glans...  
She tries to suck out the remaining semen in my urethra...  
I pull my hips in panic...

「Huh?!」  
「...I-I'm good for now...it'll stand up again you know」  
「Ah...I see」

Mana laughs.  
「Mana...leave some for me. I want to drink from Yoshi-kun too...!」  
「I know...Megu-oneechan!」

Somehow...the two are getting along well...  
It feels like their lust has become amazing too...

「Then, let's go, Onii-chan!」  
Mana takes my left hand and pulls it.  
「H-Hey...!」  
Megu hugs me who toppled down unconsciously.  
「Geez, that's dangerous Mana!」  
「I'm sorry!」

Megu holds my right hand.  
She holds it and tangles her arm.

「Now...let's go, Yoshi-kun...!」  
「Ah...Me too, I want to link arms with Onii-chan!」



Coming out of the classroom...we go to the monitor room via the principal's office.  
...I

I'm being sandwiched by Megu and Mana on both sides...  
We walked in the monitor room sticking close together...

「...Uwa, the sun's dazzling, Onii-chan!」

The sun has risen quite a lot that the outside is completely bright.

We walk naked in the bright corridor.

Megu and Mana are pressing their breasts to my arms.

「Hey, Yoshi-kun...」

Suddenly, Megu speak up...

「...What?」

Megu grabs my hand and let me touch her ass.

「Touch it...you love my butt don't you?」

...Megu?

「Then I'll take this hand to Mana's butt!」

...I

I walk the corridor while enjoying the feeling of the two beauties' ass.

「Ah...Onii-chan's penis got a bit energetic again!」

...Mana

You don't need to say that.

「...It's true」

Megu too...You don't need to stare at it so much.

Somehow...my penis got half-erect being observed while walking...

...It's shameful.

「Huh...it went down」

Mana said disappointedly...

Well of course it will...

If two girls stare at it fixedly...

In that sort of situation...we arrived at the stairs where we took off our clothes.

「Here, hurry up and wear it」

I hurriedly slip my underwear and shorts through my legs.

「I'm fine like this! I'll stay naked! I'm completely fine even if I'm like this...!」

Mana said with a laugh.

「No...I'll get uneasy if you do that!」

「Eh, Onii-chan...does Mana being naked make your heart beat so fast?!」

「Yeah, it does! That's why wear clothes...!」

「Yees~!」

Mana takes her miniskirt.

「But...I'm not wearing panties so it doesn't change that much. Onii-chan, you can flip Mana's skirt anytime...!」

「I know so hurry up!」

When I shout at her...

「...Yoshi-kun」

Huh...Megu, why are you still naked?

「...dress me」

Megu gives me her underwear bashfully...

I see...I have to dress her...

「Got it...here」

I took Megu's panty and put it on her.

「...Sorry」

「...This much's fine」

「Yoshi-kun, I love you!」

「Here, your bra's next」

「...Yes!」

Megu smiled happily.

After managing to wear clothes...

We go up the stairs and to the principal's office at once.

「How do you enter here? Do we have to knock?」

Standing in front of the splendid principal's office door...Mana asks me...

「There's a surveillance camera so they'll know who's coming...」

Gacha! The lock automatically opens.

「Look it's open」

I turned the doorknob and opened the door.

...Then.

What's there is...

Minaho-neesan.

She's sitting dignified on the principal's desk...

「I've been waiting...」

Minaho-neesan looks at us with her usual cold eyes...

「Megumi...wash your lower half in the shower room and change panties」

「Eh...Minaho-san?」

「If you go like that...Yoshida-kun's stuff will drip out during the practice won't it?」

「I-I like it that way. Yoshi-kun's warm stuff in my stomach while...」

Minaho-neesan stops Megu's words...

「...Other girls will notice it. Girls have sharp intuition on that kind of thing...!」

「Who cares if they notice! It's a proof of Yoshi-kun's love!」

Megu answered.

「You don't know that it won't be good for Yoshida-kun, do you?」

Minaho-neesan's words pierce Megu.

「The school is a place to learn. Everyone knows that you're『engaged』but... won't it be an annoyance to everyone if you smell like sex? They will hate a couple without delicacy...!」

「I'm fine with that! As long as I have Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu resists Minaho-neesan.

「Even if you're fine with that...what about Yoshida-kun?」

「Yoshi-kun chose me. I want him to look only at me!」

「Is that so?...So Megumi is fine with Yoshida-kun being isolated in the school?」

「That's...even if he's isolated then I'll be with Yoshi-kun forever!」

Minaho-neesan laughed coldly...

「...Megumi, do you not want Yoshida-kun to make friends?」

「That is...!」

「If you want Yoshida-kun to have a fun school life then doesn't he need friends? Don't you want him to be a boy liked by everyone at school?」

「Well...that's true but」

「Oh...Megumi doesn't want other girls to take away Yoshida-kun right? That's why you just want to cage him for yourself...!」

...Megu?

「That's why you purposely want to make the girls around you smell the sex with Yoshida-kun. Then, you want to appeal that Yoshida-kun is Megumi's『woman』, right?」

「Yes...I think so」

Megu admits it.

「I understand what you feel... But, our school is a co-ed. Even in the class, there's a boy's world and a girl's world. When you smell like sex and come to the morning...the girls in the club will spread it to the boys. Then won't Yoshida-kun be hated by the boys...?!」

「...That is!」

「Surely...Megumi doesn't think that Yoshida-kun doesn't need boys as friends too...!」

Megu looks at me.

「...Even I think so. Yoshida-kun should have more boys as friends...!」

「It's not just boys...he also needs girl friends. Yoshida-kun isn't a maniac who will push down girls that enter his sight...trust him a bit more. Enclosing him is just overprotection...it'll only result to isolating Yoshida-kun」

「...Yes」

Megu nods.

「Anyway...it's better not to bring too much of a wild sex in the air! It would be meaningless if the people around you will turn to hate you...won't that make the students who were your allies turned to enemies...!」

「...You're right. I'm very sorry, Minaho-san」

Megu's convinced from what Minaho-neesan said.

「Then hurry up and go to the shower room. Mana-san, could you check if

Megu has washed herself properly?」

「...Eh?」

Mana looks at Minaho-neesan in surprise...

「Yoshida-kun will be having a meeting with me so Mana san should wash your hands too. You touched Yoshida-kun's penis a lot, haven't you?」

「Ah...Yes!」

「The meeting will end right away so you can go to the lower room」

「...Got it. Mana's going!」

「...U-Un」

Opening the hidden door...Megu and Mana goes down to the『Monitor room』

...

Minaho-neesan closed the hidden door, and...

「...Both of them have their 『dependence』to you turned to something unthinkable」

...『Dependence』to me?!

「Yes...both of them were trying to serve you but people are looking at things as their own convenience. Actually, it has turned to a state where you are supporting the two of them hard...」

...Is that so?

「Yoshida-kun...don't you think it's troublesome? It's hard to be dealing with each girls who has become very emotional beyond reason directly?」

Minaho-neesan smiles at me.

「No...But, but of them are my『women』...should I respond to them seriously whatever happens?...I have that duty and responsibility after al...!」

「Oh...so there's the consciousness that it's『troublesome』right?」

「Well...there are times I think of that. Sometimes...」

I answered.

「That awkward honesty is a good point of yours so I like it but... But if this continues, I'm worried that the burden you put on your heart might be too much and make you collapse...!」

Minaho-neesan...?

「You've heard it from Nei haven't you? That girl is『heavier』than Megumi and Mana-san... If you confront it directly...Yoshida-kun will be squashed!」

Un...to be honest.

Even now, I don't know what kind of face I should show her.

I'm really thankful to Minaho-neesan for making a time for cushioning like this...

「You shouldn't carry everything at once...do what you can at the time you can」

Minaho-neesan said.

「No matter how capable a person is...they only have one body, two hands and the flow of time is finite... You should know what you can do at the time. Still...it's better to do one thing than do nothing. Everything is an accumulation of trivial things...!」

「...Accumulation?」

「That's right...the thing a human can do alone is accumulated. Nobody has the power to solve a problem instantly. Of course...those capable has a higher speed of accumulating it... But if you take your time, anyone can accumulate the same things don't you think?」

...I'm a stupid and I don't have the skills.

And yet...I can take time to build it up.

「Your attitude towards women...you never let their words wash away, you don't ignore nor pretend to listen...facing anything with a naively honest face is something wonderful I think. You are steadily accumulating each of the girls... you repeatedly pile up a plus in their heart. That's why there's no need to be in a hurry...you can take it slowly

...I

「Am I doing it properly? Am I really accumulating?」

Minaho-neesan smiles kindly.

「Yes...thanks to you, everyone's saved. Everyone's moving to a plus...!」

「But...I...I think that I'm the one being saved by everyone. Everyone's saving my



broken heart...I think that I'm being taken care of by everyone much more...!」

...Minaho-neesan.

「Yoshida-kun...know that there's no perfect person in this world...!

...Eh?

「Everyone has a place they lack in their heart. There's no one who has everything in order. Living means being wounded...!」

...Wound?

「As long as a human lives...as long as they live with other people...they will hit someone. Just like how stones collide with each other from the flow of the water... Both stones will crack and be damaged. Of course...humans have the ability to heal themselves but before their previous wound gets cured, they often receive the next wound. Even if it gets cured, a huge scar will still remain and sometimes, it'll shed blood again... All humans have no choice but to live with that scar...!」

Everyone's wounded...

「Sometimes...a fellow wounded will cuddle and heal up each other. Our relationship is that kind of thing...we need each other so that's why we're together. That's why don't think of『I feel sorry being saved』or that『I'm just a bother』...!」

...Minaho-neesan.

I...I don't regret dragging you in my『revenge』 I will never regret it... Because, thanks to that, we were able to get to know you... You became my precious『little brother』...!」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

This person has always kept her distance as the『elder sister』

I can't enter the distance where we can embrace each other.

She's not asking for a physical contact beyond what's asked...

She's really my『elder sister』

She's trying to become my『elder sister』

「I'm confident. If I can redo my life to the point where I met you...as expected

I'll get you involved again. I think you should rape Yukino. Even if I start over a hundred times, I will do it a hundred times as well... That's why I have no regrets」

I...

I imagine the same thing.

If I can go back in time...

「I'm the same. I think that I will violate Yukino again. I don't think I will chose a different life...!」

Then...I also imagined the continuation.

「Even Nagisa...I will still embrace her. Misuzu...Katsuko-nee...Megu...and Mana would be the same... The details might become different but no matter how many times I start over...I think I'll do the same. I...as expected, will take them! I'll make them my『woman』...!」

I feel like something was cut inside me.

Oh...so this is a straight road.

There's no regret...

I have no choice but to race this way...

「...Your hesitation has disappeared?」

Minaho-neesan asked.

「Yes...thank you, Nee-san!」

As a result...even if I die.

Even if I get caught by the police and get sent to a miserable lifetime.

I won't regret...

This is my own life.

「I'm glad that you're better now」

It seems that I made Minaho-neesan worried.

「Nei's case has shown a bad symptoms to Megumi and Mana so I'm worried that you were also influenced badly too」

Megu and Mana...bad symptoms?

「Let me go back to our talk earlier but...forget what Mana and Megumi said about Yukino. That was half-right only」

...Half-right?

「Let me tell you beforehand...no matter how much you have sex with Megumi and Mana...your trauma with Yukino won't be resolved」

...Eh!?

「Do you know the word『Compensation behavior』?」

「...No」

「It's a psychology term...for example, a couple who can't have children will love dogs instead of children...that's『compensation behavior』」

「...Haa」

「If they really love dogs then there's no problem but...if they only use the dog as a replacement to a child...in the end, the『dog』and『child』are different. A distortion will occur somewhere. Depending on the person, that distortion may cause extreme behavior...for example, the house becomes filled with dogs...!」

「...Yes」

「Even if you divert your emotions you have towards Yukino with sex with Megumi and Mana...that's just a『compensation behavior』 In the end, a distortion appears and your sex will become more extreme...and you'll shift to a much more perverted sex, won't you?」

...The『naked stroll』and the『rape play』?

No, Mana was the one who asked for the『rape play』though...

Megu said that she wants to do it too...

「It's okay for now but...there's a possibility of it getting into something even more perverted, right? Yoshida-kun, do you want that?」

「I-I don't know...」

「If you like that then there's no need to stop but...if it's something caused by the trauma with Yukino...then if your perverted sex accelerates with Megu and Mana, your brakes won't work anymore」

「...Why?」

「...Megumi and Mana-san isn't Yukino-san」

...Does that mean?

「A couple without children keeps on buying dogs...love those dogs...but the dogs aren't children so the hunger of their heart won't be sated...rather, it'll turn severe...the numbers of the dogs will increase and lastly, the house will be filled with dogs, do you understand the theory?」

「...Yes」

「If you try to eliminate the trauma from sex with Yukino using other girls...but those girls aren't Yukino-san so your sex will become more perverted...and you know what's ahead of that don't you?」

The perversion won't stop.  
The thirst won't be sated and you'll just keep drinking water...  
In the end...you'll burst.

「In the end...your trauma with Yukino-san can't be released unless you face Yukino-san」

...Yukino  
...Yukino's the only one who can release it.

「However...Megumi has misunderstood the conflict within you」  
「...Misunderstood?」  
「Megumi has an inferiority complex towards Yukino-san right? Then, she felt jealous when she saw Yukino having sex with you. Fired by the emotions of inferiority complex and jealousy...she wanted to have a violent sex with you」  
「...Yes」

There's no mistake from that flow.

「Megumi has a strong surge inside her...and has identified your trauma from Yukino. Unconsciously...」

...Megu.

「Therefore...she thinks that your trauma from Yukino will be resolved if you do a much more intense sex with herself. What's actually solved is Megumi's inferiority complex and jealousy. But...she thought that she's satisfied so she also thinks that Yoshida-kun's trauma is also released...!」

So that's how it is?

「Bringing Mana-san together was also a mistake... I thought that it would be

good for Mana-san's mental stability for the two of them to be together but it's nearing the limit. Mana-san starts to rely on Megumi and you and she synchronizes with Megumi's opinion...!」

Un...it's good that Mana and Megumi are getting along...  
She's been sympathizing with Megu's feelings too much...  
She's convinced that she has『the same feeling』...

「Anyway...I will try to separate the two after this. I'll have Nei take care of Mana. I think she should divert her head filled with herself to another child...」

Minaho-neesan is really everyone's elder sister.  
She observes everyone's state and tries to lead them to a good direction.

「Rather than that...let's go back to Megumi」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「...Un」

「I feel sorry but I'll have Yoshida-kun follow her up for a while. I think she's a troublesome girl but...I have no choice but to leave her to you」

「That's...she's not trouble at all... !」

When I say that...

「Megumi will also be in a trouble from today on...」

...Eh?

「Everyone in the school knows that Megumi is a distant relative of Shirasaka house...!」

...Right.

By spreading Shirasaka Sousuke's news...it's not just Yukino who'll be denounced in the school...!~

Everyone knows that Megu is Yukino's relative.

It's possible that Megu will also be receive bashing...!

...Why did I notice it?

This is important!

「That's also one of the causes of Megumi's unstable mental condition」

Minaho-neesan said.

I see...

That's why Megu...

I never knew it...

「That's why...Yoshida-kun, try to stay by Megumi's side as much as possible...!」

---

## 193. The two faces of Heart

---

「Anyway...send her to the track and field clubrom. I don't think you can keep company during the practice but...」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...Got it. I'll protect Megu.」

I swore, to my own heart.

「Megumi's heart is conflicted right now I think...」

「...Conflicted/」

「Shirasaka Sousuke is Megumi's father. That girl is trying to kill her father together with us. Of course...Megumi feels hatred towards Shirasaka...that's why she loses control of her emotions」

...Does that mean?

「He has been the existence that made her suffer since childhood...the dark emotions accumulated inside are bursting out in a dash...that's why she's strangely emotional...there's no way she'll be able to hold that back you know?」

...True

Megu who should be patient and quiet...feels strange.

「Then...Yukino's existence is accelerating the conflict in Megumi's heart further...」

...Yukino's existence?

「Yukino-san is the symbol of hatred for Megumi...」

...Symbol of hatred?

「Shirasaka Sousuke and Shirasaka house now. Over the years, the existence that made Megumi suffer all this time is now collapsing. The father who killed

her mother...through Yamamine house, Megumi has always been oppressed by Shirasaka family. And...Yukino is the symbol of both」

...For Megu...Yukino is.

「The daughter loved by Shirasaka Sousuke...Yamamine house's unable to go up against Shirasaka family, and the one who has been bullying Megumi has always been Yukino-san, isn't it...?」

Favored by the head of Shirasaka...Yukino reigned like a princess.  
Forbidding Megu to wear fine clothes...made her quit club...didn't allow to let her go to the first high school she aspired to...was Yukino.  
Yamamine house has always been submissive to Shirasaka house all this time but...

For Megu...Yukino is the symbol of Shirasaka house's tyranny...

「That's why, inside Megumi's heart... she wishes for Yukino to disappear along with Shirasaka Sousuke and the Shirasaka family」

「Could it be...no way, she's going to kill Yukino?」

「...She shouldn't have thought that far. Megumi's a normal girl. She just want Yukino-san to receive a penalty and have her go somewhere far away. On a very far place where they will never meet again」

...She won't go as far as killing her then.  
But still...she wants to retaliate to Yukino too...  
...and have them never meet again.  
I understand Megu's feelings...

「That's why...when she was watching the video of you and Yukino-san having sex...she was unable to allow it by all means...!」

「We're not that intimate though」

Rather...we were just yelling, cursing each other while having sex.

「...Megumi can see it as such」

... Is that so?  
True...Megu said that but.

「Also...Mana-san too」  
「...Mana too?」



「Mana-san...she has abandoned Shirasaka family you know? She threw her own past and identity and jumped to Yoshida-kun's chest. That's why, she doesn't want to see Yoshida-kun and Yukino-san getting along...!」

...Yukino for the current Mana.

She's the symbol of the『past』she threw away...

Yukino still calls Mana『Maika』...

She thinks of her as her sister and a person under her control.

Yukino...she's the『Sister』who made a fool out of her...

「Mana-san also wants Yukino to go away somewhere. She wants her to disappear. That's why...she's that harsh with Yukino-san...!」

...Un

She calmly makes her faint with the stun gun...

「I've made the two join up...so they unconsciously pull Yoshida-kun from Yukino-san」

...Is that how it is?

Both of them don't want Yukino to stay here.

Their reason is personal but their purpose is matching...

Both of them want to eliminate Yukino...

「Then...from the sense of antagonism with Yukino-san...or the anxiety...there's a tendency to lean towards much more excessive and stimulating sex」

...Anxiety?

「They're worried because Yoshida-kun might be taken away by Yukino-san」  
「That's...I'm not」

If it's Yukino...or Megu and Mana...

Then Megu and Mana are much more important.

Both of them are my『women』

I have the duty and responsibility to protect them.

「Both of them aren't confident with themselves so they're like that」

...Confident?

「Their inferiority complex towards Yukino-san...Megumi and Mana-san thinks

that Yukino-san has much more charm as a woman」

「That's...Megu and Mana are attractive enough. Even I told them over and over again...!」

「It can't be helped...That's how it has always been...」

...Always been?

「Both of them has seen Yukino-san been pampered and made to wear beautiful clothes in Shirasaka house for years you know? Those girl has been looking up at Yukino-san and...Yukino-san looks down on them. That has accumulated for a very long time...it's not easy to overturn the hierarchical relationship between the two and Yukino-san...!」

...Is that so?

I don't know interpersonal relationships like family though.

I know that both of them have an inferiority complex towards Yukino,

「That's why...those two are escaping through sex. They drown in sex」

...They escape through sex.

「Sex with the person you love is a wonder drug that's most effective on an unstable minds. If you have sex then the insecurity in the heart is released. Especially...Yoshida-kun has the power to make girls feel relieved. Both of them are escaping through sex with Yoshida-kun」

...That's.

「Remember this...sex is amazing but it's also dangerous as there's a possibility of getting addicted」

...Sex addiction

「Similar to Alcoholism and Nicotine addiction...there's a disease called sexual addiction too. How do they call it now...oh right『Sexual dependency』was it?」

...Dependency

「In case of the two...the『Yoshida-kun dependency』is much stronger than『sexual dependency』 Their minds have already set to never have sex with anyone but you...」

「...Minds?」

「There's a speech where they have a 『A body that can't have sex』with anyone but that person right? But those girls just learned about sex and their body isn't that developed yet... That's why they make it so that they're no good unless it's not Yoshida-kun, instead of falling into the worst situation where they『will have sex with anyone』」

「...What does that mean?」

「There's no choice for them...they haven't opened up to any other men but you. There's no one but you」

「But...apart from Mana who was in the enemy side until the day before yesterday, Megu has Minaho-neesan, right?」

...That's right.

Megu has Minaho-neesan who she trusts sincerely.

「But I don't have a penis you know? The sedation with Yoshida-kun's sex is really amazing. You should have confidence in your ability already」

Even if you say that...

There's no way I have confidence in my own sex...

I was just a virgin until quite recently.

「Your sex can even heal the anxiety in Yukino-san's heart who doesn't even love you at all...」

...Yukino?

「Really...when you embrace a woman, you make them feel relieved. You have that power. Therefore...she wants to monopolize you. The scramble for Yoshida-kun has begun」

...Eh?!

「Megumi and Mana-san...also don't want you to be taken away by Yukino-san. Also, both of them are『sexually dependent』only to you. On top of that... both of them are convinced that they lose to Yukino-san when it comes to charm...」

The three elements overlap...

「Therefore...their trend in sex will get even more excessive. They feel like you're going away unless they have a much more stimulating sex...!」

Minaho-neesan said.

「True...it feels like they've gone too far...!」

『Naked stroll』and the『rape play』...

「If it's a play then that's fine but...Megumi wanted to have sex during classes, didn't she?」

Minaho-neesan has heard it all.

「Ah, yes...I was surprised from that. The very decent Megu said something like that... !」

「Of course you do know that Megumi isn't a sex crazed slut, do you?」

「Well of course」

Minaho-neesan leaked a sigh.

「I'm worried that you might be taken to do that. That girl's desperate. "He might be taken by someone" she thinks...especially Yukino-san」

I see...it doesn't mean that she wants to have sex by all means...  
She just wants to hold me by doing that...

「It's a bit of a problem don't you think? 『Addiction』and『love』are different...  
You do know that this is a bad situation don't you?」

「...Yes」

「But...Megu has to face the students in the school knowing she's a Shiraska. Her dependence towards you will increase rather」

Un...in the school, Megu can only rely on me...

「Therefore...be careful and moderate on taking care of her」

「In short...I'll support Megu on the back but if she asked for excessive sex, I don't have to respond?」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「That's how it is...if Megumi can't really bear it then love her normally. Normal sex will be enough...your sex has enough power to soothe Megumi...believe in yourself」

「...Got it. I'll look at Megumi's eyes and embrace her」

「...Please, Yoshida-kun」

「No...she's my Megu. I'll take care of her. Ah...Mana to」

Un...Mana too.

I have to be careful...

「I don't mind if you do something like『rape play』...But, strongly insist that it's just a『play』in the end. Before and after the『rape play』...you have to embrace and kiss your partner closely. With a smile too. Tell them『It felt really good, thank you』and smile to your partner Try to finish the sex in a bright mood...if you do, even with『rape play』they won't develop an even more extreme sex. On the contrary, when the dark feeling remains...it'll settle in the heart of the girl and it'll increase and grow to a much more extreme and gruesome sex...!」

「...Got it」

Whatever sex it will be...I have to make it fun and bright.

Consideration is important.

I shouldn't have sex that leaves frustration in their heart.

「I can leave the two to you?...」

「Yes...Thank you for your advice Minaho-neesan」

I bow and say thanks.

「Now then...the main subject has just begun」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...Main subject?」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

...What is she planning up?

「Today is a weekday so normally you have classes until the sixth lesson, right?」

「...Yes」

「But...we have the matter with Shirasaka house and Cesario Viola so if possible...I'd like to end the classes by lunch...!」

...Does this mean ?!

「...We'll use Yukino-san to make a fuss」

Minaho-neesan's eyes shine suspiciously.

「Of course...this is a part of my『revenge』」

In short...I have to participate in it.

「...What should I do?」

「I'll explain the details later...we're in the process right now」

Anyway...she's planning something that involves Yukino.

「However...depending on the outcome of the event...I think you will have to decide『what will you do to Yukino in the end』...!」

...Yukino

「With that said...please think about it starting now」

Minaho-neesan said

「I've already made an answer」

I answered.

「From our sex earlier...Yukino has said that it will be our last. Yukino doesn't want to do it with me anymore so I will give up on Yukino...!」

...Un

If this continues...it'll be a bad influence to Megu and Mana...

I have no choice but to give up on Yukino...

「Also...if I continue to have sex with Yukino...you said that Megu will be crazy in sex... There's no emotion that's between Yukino and me...」

If it's just a relationship to enjoy sex...then either one of us will collapse soon.  
...We don't love each other after all

「Do you really believe that?」

Minaho-neesan asked.

「Eh...but, isn't that right?」

「Don't think about it with just your head!」

Minaho-neesan looked at me with a smile...

「...Don't think with just my head?」

「That's right...you're a bit top-heavy for now. It's not good for Megumi to be

instigated that way」

...I don't get it.

「Humans are creatures emotions...if you try to find a clear solution with reason alone, you'll fail horribly」

Minaho-neesan looks outside the window...

「You see...from time to time...I go to places where it hurts me before on purpose... The room where I was raped by Shirasaka Sousuke for the first time... the room where Naomi died. I can confirm the state of my heart when I go to that place」

Minaho-neesan looked at me.

「Now I don't feel anything on the room where I was first raped. The only feeling I get was『Oh, it was this room wasn't it?』 Then...I now know that the the『scars』from when I was raped and lost my virginity have already healed up. The『scar』still remains...but I know that I'm fine now」

...Un

「But...standing on the room where Naomi died...the tears still doesn't stop. Then, I know...there's still a big wound in me from the fact that Naomi died. It hasn't changed since that time. The sorrow, anger, hatred...I've reconfirmed it from that time...

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「Spirit is a litmus paper. There are a lot of things where you don't know the real one unless you stand there」

Therefore...you stand there and confirm.

「Humans are weak...so they often fool themselves. With words...logic. 『This is \*\*\*\* so \*\*\*\*\* I have to』, or『It can't be helped』 And they don't understand their real thought therefore you need to measure at the moment you face the painful reality...!」

...Minaho-neesan.

「...Face Yukino-san once more. I'll make the location and the opportunity.

Then, make the judgement once again...Is Yukino-san a necessary existence or an unnecessary existence for you?

Yukino...for me.

「Don't use logic but judge with your heart, body and emotion.. Okay?」

Minaho-neesan's words stick to my heart...



From the principal's office, I go down the monitor room.

Then...Suddenly, Nei-san jumped to me.

「...Yo-chaaaaaan!!」

I'm being hugged?!

...Mugyuuu!

Her abundant breasts are pressed against my face???

「Yo-chaaaaan! Yo-chaaaaan! Yo-chaaaaan!」

...It hurts!

I-It's soft...it's like heaven but...

If this continues, I'll suffocate!

「...Can't breathe!」

I raise my face from Nei-san's chest desperately and breathe.

...Haa, haa, haa

「...Yo-chan!」

Nei-san's smiling.

「Uhm...what's with this sudden hug?」

...She's embracing me.

「Hm...Sensei told me」

...Minaho-neesan

「Un...Yo-chan seems to be downhearted so give him a bear hug...」

...Oh



「Am I that downhearted?」

「Yeah...totally」 That's why」

Nei-san hugs me strongly again.

「Onee-chan will be hugging you...!」

...Mugyuu!

「Nei-san...too much force...it hurts」

「...Ehe, sorry~!」

Nei-san's completely back to her usual condition.

No...there's a deep sorrow asleep in the feigned brightness.

「...Really, it is as Sensei says」

「...Eh?」

「『Worry about Yo-chan more than worry about yourself』she said」

...Minaho-neesan

She's really our eldest sister.

She's been taking care of us...

「Un...it really is. When I worry about myself...I can't do anything but sigh but... if I worry about Yo-chan, then I thought there's something I can do...so I get energetic」

Nei-san smiles.

「That's right...I'm glad that Nei-san's smiling like that」

「Then...I'll smile for Yo-chan」

「You don't need to smile for me...I just want you enjoy being with me」

「...Enjoy?」

「I'm having fun when I'm with Nei-san. I love Nei-san after all」

What I learned from these past hours...is to live satisfied.

I have to tell in『words』what I think about my women.

That makes them relieved.

So it won't turn gloomy...you have to be bright...

「Nei-san, you're really beautiful...!」

「Yo-chan?...What are you saying suddenly?!」

「I...I'm really happy that I've got a beautiful sister like Nei-san...!」

「...Yo-chan?」

「Nei-san's already my Onee-san okay...!」

Nei-san's eyes turned moist.

「Un...thank yo...Yo-chan!」

This time...it's my turn to hug Nei-san.

「...I love you Nei-san」

「Me too! Yo-chan!」

「...I'll never let you be alone anymore」

「Thank you...Yo-chan! Yo-chaaaaan!」

I stroke Nei-san's blonde hair while hugging her closely.  
In my arms is a sister two years older than me.

「As expected...we're no match against Yoshida-kun」

Margo-san said as she continues to look at the monitor.

「It almost took me an hour to calm Nei in the shower room and yet Yoshida-kun didn't even take a minute」

「That's not true...Nei-san likes Margo-san too. That's why she just wanted to be pampered by Margo-san for an hour」

When I say that, Margo-san...

「Oya oya...was Yoshida-kun a child that says that kind of things?」

「I'm just saying what I really think. At that time, what Nei-san needed was Margo-san who can calm down Nei-san's heart. Margo-san is Nei-san's elder sister after all...」

Un...right.

「The elder sister has her role and the little brother has his role. I'm really grateful to Margo-san who's always taking care of us as an elder sister.

Therefore, I will also fulfil my role. We're a『family』after all...!」

Nei-san's deeply moved from what I said...!

「Mau-chan! Yo-chan said that we're his『family』...he said『family』...!」

But...Margo-san.

「Please think of me as the elder sister living on the neighboring house okay」

...Eh?

「I'm glad about what you said but right now, I must not be healed by you. We're in a middle of a combat so it would be a problem if my intuition becomes dull」

「Ah...sorry」

「No, I'm the one who should be sorry but...I don't want to forget the sensation. When my mind calms down then I may overlook something important...」

Margo-san's really a person harsh to herself...

...No, that's not it.

Katsuko-nee and Minaho-neesan has been taking care of us...and the atmosphere has turned calm so we forgot about it...

Our current situation is really severe.

We can't be crushed by the anxiety, but...

We can't get rid of the tension...

Therefore, Margo-san...tries to keep a tough look as much as possible...

That is Margo-san's『role』as the『family member』of『Kuromori』

「Ah...speaking of which, where are the others?」

There's only Margo-san and Nei-san in the monitoring room...

「Oh, Katsun is in the kitchen. Megu-chan and Mana-chan are in the shower room」

Nei-san answered

「...What about Yukino?」

I asked in worry.

「Yukino-san's in the confinement room」

Margo-san presses the keyboard.

One of the monitor shows an image of Yukino trapped in a small room. Yukino's wearing only a white blouse hanging her head.

「We had this room?」

「Un, just in case. It's our first time using it but...that only has two tatami mat space. The floor to ceiling is only 180cm」

It's really a small room.

「We don't want to use it that much...it's mentally harsh to be confined in that room」

True...it looks like you'll be turned claustrophobic.  
Or rather...Yukino's limped it looks bad.

「But, it can't be helped...Minaho-san said that it would be better to isolate Yukino-san and Megumi-san...」

I see...so Yukino and Megu and Mana won't meet each other...  
Minaho-neesan has confined Yukino ahead of time.

「Nei-san...can I leave Mana to you?」

Un...just as Minaho-neesan says...  
Mana should be separated from Megu and Nei-san should take care of him.

「Un...I know. Sensei already told me」

As expected of Minaho-neesan, she's already moving.

「I also prefer it that way. When I take care of someone, I get distracted...」

Nei-san smiled at me.

「Now...let's remove this vid before the two comes back from the shower」

Saying that...Margo-san turned the video in Yukino's room.

「Minaho and I will be watching over with this small monitor here. Therefore...  
Yoshida-kun doesn't need to worry about Yukino-san」

Margo-san told me...

---

## 194. Like hell that's a Relative!?

---

Huh...speaking of which...?

...Where's Michi?

I looked around...

「Who are you looking for?」

Nei-san asked.

「No, you see...」

「If it's Kudou-san then she brought breakfast to her father」

Katsuko-nee comes from the kitchen holding a tray.

There's a lot of rice balls in the tray.

「They were on watch overnight...so we gave them breakfast at least」

Katsuko-nee puts down the tray on the table.

「The three cases last night were dealt with Kudou-san's father」

Margo-san said.

「...Three cases? Is it Cesario Viola?」

Nei-san's expression darkens.

「There's one that looks like Viola's scout. The other two were hired by Shirasaka family. In those three cases, Kudou-san's father had a separate force take them down and bring them somewhere」

「Separate force?」

「I've confirmed it, there are two other groups aside from Kudou-san's father. While Kudou-san's father does the fancy fire show to attract the enemy's eyes... the two other groups handle them silently」

I see...Kudou-papa did say that there are men we still don't know yet. The『guard division』has quite a number of people.

「Therefore...the first rice balls I made were all for Kudou-san's father. Kudou-san has brought them miso soup as well」

「Ah, I could've helped out bringing those...」

It would be hard for that small body to carry that much alone.

「It's okay...she used a cart. Also」

...Also?

「That girl is a bit frustrated」

Katsuko-nee said

「Frustrated...?」

Margo-san smiles wryly

「She has been watching your sex with Yukino-san...Megumi-chan and Mana-chan too in the monitor here so she was made to think of various things」

...Err

I thought that it's being monitored anyway...

But...

The third year middle school girl...thinking that she watched a slightly perverted sex...

...Umumumu

「She said that she'll eat breakfast with her father...well, I think it's a good breather for Kudou-san so...isn't that fine?」

Margo-san said then hits the key for the surveillance cameras.

Kudou-papa stops the van on the road above the baseball club ground.

Ah...everyone's eating rice balls.

I see Michi sitting beside her father.

「Well, Yoshida-kun, follow it up later...she's under Misuzu-san so she's our ally but she's not a complete relative of us. I think she's been pressured mentally by being constantly with us」

Margo-san said

「Yes, got it」

Then...Megu and Mana comes out of the shower room.

「Ehehe, in the end, I also took a shower」

Mana comes to me with her wet hair.

「Onii-chan...I changed shampoo」

I smell her fragrant wet hair.

It smells floral.

「Un...I think it's good」

「...Really?」

「Yeah」

Mana clings to me

「Yoshi-kun, me too」

I face Megu.

I embrace the two girls...

Physical contact is important.

Then...I have to apply the brake here.

I let go of my body before it shifts to sexual impulse.

「Now then...let's eat」

「...Un」

「Mana's hungry too」

Both of them are smiling

「I'd like to bake bread soon but I have no time to prepare it now. So that's why it's rice balls. Sorry」

Katsuko-nee told me

「All of the food Katsuko-nee makes are all delicious. Thanks as always... Katsuko-nee...also」

I speak up my feelings.

「...You're very beautiful today」

Katsuko-nee turned red.

「T-Thank you」

Nei-san looks at me.

「Eh, you're telling that only to Katsun...so sly!」

...I

「Nei-san's very beautiful too...I love you!」

Nei-san jumps to my chest!

「Yo-chaaaaaaan!」

「Yes yes...Nei-san」

I pat Nei-san's head.

「Megu and Mana too...both of you are very cute」

I talk to the girls who come out of the shower room.

「...T-Thank you」

「...Ehehe」

The two turned shy.

Margo-san...well, I can't tell her that.

Her mood will be shaved off.

Then...Minaho-neesan comes from the stairs.

「My, you haven't started eating yet?」

I look up at Minaho-neesan...

「We were waiting for Minaho-neesan...our beautiful and gentle eldest sister...!」

Minaho-neesan's face turned red.

「There's no need to tell me that far...!」

「Well...that's what I really think. I love you...Minaho-neesan」

「Thank you...」

Minaho-neesan smiled gently...



We sat on the table and begin to eat rice ball, miso soup and fried eggs as



breakfast.

Margo-san's the only one who sits on the surveillance monitor without eating. It seems that she's going to switch with Katsuko-nee.

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san are sticking to my sides.

They seem to be taking care so that Megu and Mana don't stick on me that much.

Then, both of them are actively talking to Megu and Mana.

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san are happily talking to them so that they won't feel insecure and head their sexual dependency towards me.

Minaho-neesan has given the two of them that instruction I guess.

Minaho-neesan herself is checking the real time television broadcast on a spare monitor.

Then...the morning news has begun...

All of the stations are having news only about Shirasaka Sousuke.

From his upbringing...interview with acquaintances...comments from the self-proclaimed『informed source』

From the suspected rape in Australia to the entertainment world scandal and even Naomi-san's abduction, rape and suspected murder.

「As expected...Shirasaka family is picking up with the news this morning」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「Well...if they're the only news station that doesn't report about it, it can be said as cover-up. It'll be said that Shirasaka house's television station is misappropriating」

Katsuko-nee said with a laugh.

The other stations are also having a news story about the press conference of Shirasaka Moritsugu, the head of Shirasaka family.

『Well, Shirasaka Moritsugu-san has created a reshuffle in baseball and aroused extreme opinions around the world but...this scandal would be fatal for them won't it?』

The commentator's lawyer speaks up.

The other guest...is Kaionji-san who was the journalist from yesterday's press conference is moving according to Minaho-neesan's scenario.

『Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's idea of dispelling the suspicion with such an intimidating press conference is shallow or rather...why did he even appear in the press conference?』

Hearing the host's question, Kaionji-san...

『Well...Sakamori-san has always liked performance』

『This time it was a major failure...!』

『No...that's just a guess in the end. If ever Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's suspicion of murder didn't come up, the chance of Shirasaka family sealing this incident in the darkness is really big. In the first place, the current Shirasaka house owns a big newspaper company, television station, their influence in the media is abnormal. I think everyone has noticed that the news organization of Shirasaka family is trying to make this trivial and try not to inform the people. Even though they disclose news on people who don't like their privacy revealed...I think that the Shirasaka family had the attitude of severely condemning the crime suspicions on their family...!』

Shirasaka house...is starting to become the people's enemy...logically and emotionally.

Megu and Mana are looking in that with a gloomy face.

Both of them grew up affiliated to Shirasaka house.

They're thinking of a lot of things.

Megu has been suffering as the relative of Shirasaka family all this time.

As a member of Shirasaka family...Mana has lived as a lady...

Thinking of their standpoint in Shirasaka family...it's completely different...

「...Ah」

Mana speaks up.

Shirasaka Sousuke's house is reflected on the television screen.

『This is...Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's home. There's no lights turned on since last night. It seems that there's nobody in this house. The cooking researcher, Youko-san is said to be staying on a business hotel in Osaka yesterday but...』

As expected, the television won't talk about the two daughters of Shirasaka Sousuke.

But...their coverage about Yukino and Mana has already started.

「Minaho-neesan...will the news be coming to our school?」

When I asked her...

「Television stations and newspapers...the major companies won't come.  
Kouzuki-sama has already laid groundwork on that」

Minaho-neesan answered.

「This school is a part of『Kuromori』...it would be a nightmare if a big group of media crawls up here when people like Cesario Viola is making secret maneuvers you know? That's why we have restricted them from covering the school. Fortunately...

Minaho-neesan's eyes are looking at Mana.

「The school Maika-san attends is an Ojou-sama school right? There's a lot of daughters of politicians and celebrities so they will definitely refuse any interview...the press won't be able to do anything with it. Our school will take advantage of that flow. Well, a third class gossip magazine would be hanging around but...Kudou-san's father will be kicking them out...」

I see...if it won't become a dire situation then it's fine?

「Anyway...it's fine as long as you're in the school grounds where outside can't see. We'll be safe until afternoon」

「...Until afternoon?」

「In the afternoon...there will be reporters interviewing the students so it'll be known that Yukino-san is in this school ...Minaho-neesan

She intends to let Yukino attend class.

Even in this situation...

I recall Yukino being trapped in the narrow『confinement room』

「Minaho-san...it's about time」

Megu looks up.

The time is 6:20

It's about time Megu head to the track and field.

「Right...Yoshida-kun, please send Megumi」

Minaho-neesan tells me as a matter of course...

「Yes...got it」

I stand up.

「Ah, Yoshida-kun...do you know the back emergency exit on the first floor?」

「...Err」

「I know」

Megu answers

「The key opens from the inside so get out there. I think that there are students with club activities coming to school so be careful not to be found out by them」

「Yes...understood」

「Once you sent over Megumi, come back here...okay?」

「...Yes」

Megu has finished her preparations.

She also brings the bag so she can go to the classroom after the morning practice.

「I'll hold your bag」

「It's fine...it's light」

「Just let me carry it」

I took the bag from Megu.

「Then, we're going」

「Take care」

Katsuko-nee smiled at me.

「Mana-chan and I will be staying home!」

Nei-san hugs Mana then said.

「Come back soon...Onii-chan!」

Mana looks at us in worry.

「It's fine. We're inside the school...and if you're worried then you can watch the monitors. As long as we're in the school, you can see us with the camera」

「...Un」

Mana nods.



Once again, we go out to the principal's office...  
And once again, we go down to the first floor.  
It's troublesome but it can't be helped. That's the structure after all.  
The entrance at the school building doesn't open until 6:30...  
But there's a possibility that there are already students at the entrance.  
Therefore...we go through the emergency exit at the back of the school which is unpopulated.

...Fuu

I breathe the morning air...

The air is still cold.

Megu's silent all the time.

「...Megu」

I present my hand to Megu.

Megu's holding her bag on her right hand so her left is vacant.

「...Un」

Megu holds my hand...

The two of us head to the backyard to the clubroom while holding hands.

「...Hey, Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks down and muttered.

「I...should I take a break from the morning practice?」

...Megu

「Everyone knows that I'm Yukino's relative...」

Megu's hand is gripping mine strongly.

「What should I do...If they knew that I was a daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke...」

「There's no way everyone would know」

「But...if the reporters research that...it'll come out of the TV this time. Saying that『Shirasaka Sousuke has another daughter』...」

Megu's worried about that?

「I...I never thought of him as my father. But still...if everyone knows that knows that I'm Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter...I think everyone will hate me. Everyone will go away from me...」

...I

「Megu...that's not true...it'll be fine」

Megu looks at me with a pale face.

「Yoshi-kun...I want to have sex with Yoshi-kun and be absent from the morning practice. Hey...please embrace me. Please embrace me with all your might...!」

This is what Minaho-neesan said...  
Is this the『escape through sex』?

「...Megu」

I look at Megu's eyes.

「What are you being weak for?...」  
「...I'm weak...that's why I want to be embraced by Yoshi-kun...!」

... I

「The Yamamine Megumi I loved wasn't this weak of a woman」

Megu's startled

「...I」

「You're not Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter!...You're Yamamine Megumi! Isn't that right...Megu!」

「...U-Un」

「Then...weren't you going to be Yoshida Megumi...!」

Megu's eyes shine.

「I'd be troubled if my bride is such a weak woman...whatever happens, I'll be by your side. If there's someone who speak badly of you then I'll beat them all up. That's why...be strong」

「un...Yoshi-kun...Yoshi-kun...!」

Tears spill from Megu's eyes.

「Here, wipe your tears...look forward and stick out your chest. Megu is Megu. Shirasaka Sousuke has nothing to do with you...!」

「...Thank you, Yoshi-kun...thank you」

...I

I made sure nobody's around then...

I kissed Megu...

The time stops...

No matter how many times I kiss Megu...it tastes like lemons.

「I've been depending too much. Sorry」

When going to the clubroom again...Megu spoke.

「I'll become a good wife for Yoshi-kun. I will definitely be...!」

Megu told me again and again.

「I'll become strong...I won't lose...I'll never lose」

Megu's hand is gripping mine.

I also grasp it in return.

「I have Yoshi-kun with me after all...!」

I see fighting spirit in Megu's eyes.

...Right.

This is Megu's eyes.

Different from the eyes that want to run away to sex...

The one kind to everyone, perseveres, patient...

That's my Megu's eyes...

「...Ah, they came!」

In front of the track and field room...there are students gathered already.

They're not just members of the track and field...

Other athletic club members are here too...

「...It's her?」

「The guy?」

「No...the girl」

「Is she really a member of Shirasaka family?」

「Un...the relative of the first year daughter」

「I've heard them talking about it too...」

The students stare at us in interest.

Most of them are students we don't know.

The rumors are already spreading.

The daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke who made a big fuss in the television yesterday is in our school.

It seems that there are relatives too.

However, that much made so many students gather.

Their curious eyes...

Look at Megu

I feel anger.

I want to beat them all up.

「Megu...it'll be fine」

I hold Megu's shoulders.

「Un...Yoshi-kun」

Hyyuhyuu! A whistle makes fun of us.

「Then...what's with him?」

「The boyfriend of the daughter of a relative of Shirasaka family?」

「Or rather, he must be from Shirasaka family?」

...Just saying what you want.

...Then, at that time.

「...Yamamine! Good morning!」

Captain Takeshiba comes out of the track and field club room.

The captain with tall and good body...is already in her running shape.

That is captain Takeshiba's combat uniform.

Was she about to change her shoes?...She has her running shoes at hand.

「...Good morning, Takeshiba-senpai」

Megu greets in a low voice...



...That's why

「Good morning! Takeshiba-senpai!」

I speak as loud as possible.

「Un...Good morning」

Captain Takeshiba smiles at me.

「By the way...Yamamine! Is it true that you were a relative of the Shirasaka old man being talked in the television right now?」

Takeshiba-san suddenly asks for confirmation in front of the spectators.

「Y-yes」

Megu answered in a small voice.

I hug Megu's back...

「Look...as expected」

「Oh, so it's that girl」

「That girl must've been raped by her perverted father too?」

「Ah...that might be」

「That frightened look...」

Takeshiba-senpai knocked down the boy who spoke something foolish with her shoes...!

「Ouch! What the hell are you doing!」

The boy got enraged and Takeshiba-san...~!

「...What about you, making fool of my club member...I won't forgive you」

The men were frightened by Captain Takeshiba's anger.

「...Yamaminee!」

Captain Takeshiba shouts.

「Y-yes!」

Megu answers instinctively.

「Is Shirasaka Sousuke really your relative?!」

「Yes, that's right!」

Megu answers with a teary face.

「Did you receive any New Year's gift from Shirasaka Sousuke?!」

...What?

The tense air froze.

「...I didn't!」

Megu shouted!

「Never?!」

「Never!」

「Were you called to Shirasaka Sousuke's home to eat a meal?!」

「...Never!」

「Is that true?!」

「Not even once!」

Un...even if they're relatives.

Yamamine house is only under Shirasaka house...

Megu's house are only being tormented by the people of Shirasaka family one-sidedly...

「Has Shirasaka Sousuke ever given your house a New Year's card!?!」

「Never!」

「Not even once?!」

「Not even once!」

Captain Takeshiba shouted in a loud voice!

「...Like hell that's a relative!」

Then...she looks at Megu.

「Blood or family register doesn't matter! Relatives are a problem of heart. Not even giving a new year's present, calling you to the house for a meal, not even a new year's card...like hell that's a relative!」

From what the captain said...the spectators.

「What...she's completely unrelated」

「So it's just a relation where she has met Shirasaka Sousuke?」

「My my, that's boring.」

They changed their attitudes and lost interest in Megu quickly.

「If you get it now then disappear. Our club member isn't related at Shirasaka at all! Go!」

Captain Takeshiba's roar dissolves the spectators...  
Captain comes close to us.

「T-Thank you very much...Takeshiba-senpai」

I bow to captain.

「I didn't do anything...Yamamine, hurry up and change. The first years have to make prep」

「Y-Yes...thank you very much」

Megu bowed then head to the clubroom.

「Megu...your bag」

I hand over Megu's bag.

「Yoshi-kun thank you...!」

Megu rushes to the club room.  
The first years greeted Megu inside the clubroom.

「Good morning, Yamamine-san!」

「...What, so you weren't related at all」

「I was worried」

「That's right, we thought that the television stations might go to Megumi's house too」

「There's no way that is...she's not a relative at all」

「Right...the family name's different」

Smile spread in the clubroom...

「Don't worry, I will look at her during the club activity...I won't let any strange guy come close to her」

Captain Takeshiba told me.

「Sorry but could you come pick her up again at the end of practice. It's better if she's with you」

「Yes...got it」

I answered in a loud voice.

---

## 195. 『Plan』in progress

---

Megu's surrounded by the smile of the fellow members.  
She turned to me, smiled and waved her hand.

...Un

For the time being...she'll be fine in the morning practice.

If the students from other clubs approach Megu out of curiosity...Captain Takeshiba will repel them...

Then...I should go back.

It's been widespread that Megu and I are『engaged』...

I shouldn't stand out on purpose...

「Your expression has changed」

Takeshiba-senpai told me.

「...Is that so?」

「Yesterday, it feels like you're unreliable but...you're stretched right now.

You're making a『manly』face」

「...Thank you very much」

「Take care of Yamamine」

「Yes...I'll protect Megu...therefore, sorry. I'll leave Megu in your care during club activities」

I bow my head to captain Takeshiba

「Un...I know. Yamamine is my club member. Don't worry and leave her to me...!」

Captain promised with a frank smile.

「By the way...Takeshiba-senpai」

There's something I'm curious about

「...What?」

「Why did you know that Megu's house isn't deeply related to Shirasaka family?」

Right...the relationship of Shirasaka house and Yamamine house...  
It's not that everyone knows it...

「Oh, well you see...」

Takeshiba-senpai points at the drinking fountain at the end of the club building 「That person told me...」

A girl hiding behind the drinking fountain watching our state...  
...That is...  
...Iwakura-senpai?

「I don't know why is she familiar with Yamamine's family but...she's the student council president so she might have some special way of knowing...for the time being, it is as she said」

「Takeshiba-senpai knows Iwakura-kaichou?」

「Well...I'm the director of the athletics club. I meet her during the budget meeting. Or rather...we're in the same year. Even though she was the most gloomy and unknown during the first year...she has changed a lot. The third years call her『small Yuzuki』」

「...『Small Yuzuki』?」

「The English teachers had『Yuzuki』sensei right? Oh, she hasn't taught the first years...Anyway, she's a teacher that's always proud and has a poisonous tongue」

「Err...she's our homeroom teacher...Yuzuki-sensei」

Or rather...Minaho-neesan

「Eh, why?」

「Well...our homeroom teachers swapped last week」

「Is that so?...I never knew. Then, you get it don't you...Iwakura has the same atmosphere as Yuzuki-sensei?」

...What I know now is Minaho-neesan when she's gentle.  
But...true, Minaho-neesan on her『intercept mode』when it comes to anyone but her family is similar to Iwakura-kaichou  
The way they stretch their back, and fold their arms...

Or rather...Iwakura-kaichou imitates her.

Iwakura-kaichou wants to be Minaho-neesan but...she can't so she falls over.  
She's that kind of person.

「...Look, she seems to be calling you」

Captain Takesiba said and when I take a look at Iwakura-san again...  
She's beckoning me.

Extremely arrogant and proud attitude...

「Then, I'm going...excuse me Takeshiba-senpai」

「Yeah...come back when the morning practice ends!」

「Yes... got it!」

I bow to captain Takeshiba and head towards Iwakura-kaichou  
While making a trot...

I confirm the weapon hidden in my school uniform.

She's a person who sent a killer from the underground aiming for my life.

There's also the delinquents who attacked inside the campus.

...I must not neglect caution

「...Come here」

Going to the drinking fountain...Iwakura-kaichou told me.

「There are other students here...Takeshiba-san's glaring here...」

「That said...I think that it's dangerous to be alone with you」

Iwakura-kaichou laughed.

「What are you saying...aren't we both『toys』of Yuzuki-sensei...?」

Her smile is suspicious.

It's too doubtful.

「Anyway, come this way」

Iwakura-kaichou takes me to an unpopulated gym.

I made sure I can take out my『beat up stick』anytime...

I look around...but there doesn't seem to be anyone around.

「Well you see...I've misunderstood about you」

As soon as we're alone...Iwakura-san suddenly spoke.

「...What about?」

「My...you don't need to play dumb. It's about Shirasaka-san」

...Yukino?

「I've got an order from Yuzuki-sensei...it seems to be your plan」

Speaking of which...last night

Minaho-neesan said『I'll take a break for a moment』and went out of the monitoring room.

Did she contact Iwakura-san back then?

Furthermore...it seems that she told Iwakura-san that I'm the planner of this『scheme』...

「Who would've thought that you'd come up with such a pleasant plan...I see you in a new light」

Iwakura-san looks at me with a smile.

「Actually, I was preparing a second round of plan to get you down but I will stop that. If you can make such an anarchic project then I'd like to build friendship with you」

...What plan?

Just what is Minaho-neesan going to do with Yukino?

But...Iwakura-san shouldn't notice that I don't know anything...

I...

「That's right...I thought I want to get along with Iwakura-kaichou...」

...Was I able to play properly?

「Anyway...leave all the prep to me. I've already made arrangements. Let's have fun to the fullest...!」

「Yes...my best regards」

I bow to Iwakura-kaichou

「...Please tell Yuzuki-sensei that『I will finish the prep by the end of homeroom this morning』 Okay?」

「Yes...I'm also expecting it」



「Ufufu...you speak cutely. Then...!」

Iwakura-kaichou leaves smiling.

...I

...I hurry back to the monitoring room.

I have to make Minaho-neesan tell me the contents of the『plan』...

I ran towards the principal's office.



From the principal's office I go down to the monitoring room.

Huh...she's not here?

Only Katsuko-nee, Nei-san and Mana are in the monitor room?

「Welcome back, Onii-chan!」

Mana is playing cards with Nei-san again

...No

「Right now...I'm being taught by Nei-san how to swindle」

...Swindle?

「Mana-chan's got the talent!...With this, I think that she can pass with her swindling even in Las Vegas!」

「...Really!?!」

「Un! To cheat, you need three skills; acting, slight of hand, and courage...but Mana has it all good. She's also a good thinker」

「Uwa, yay!~」

Well...it's good as long as Mana's happy

I'll leave Mana and Nei-san play cards...

No...everyone in『Kuromori』are much more intelligent than me...

Whoever I play with will only result in me losing.

...No.

...Rather than that

「What's wrong Onii-chan? Who are you looking for?」

Mana asks at me who looks around

「Yo-chan...if it's Kuu-chan then she's in the toilet」

...Kuu-chan?

...Who?

「Kudou-san. Since she's Kudou then I thought of calling her Kuu-chan...」

Nei-san said brightly...

「...Unfortunately, I refuse!」

The door to the bathroom opens up...

...And Michi appears

She's wiping her hand with a white lace handkerchief...

And she glared at Nei-san.

「...Michi?」

When I call her out...

「Eh, Yo-chan is calling her Michi?...Then I'll do that too!」

When Nei-san said that...Michi coldly...

「I won't allow anyone but Yoshida to call me Michi...!」

Nei-san looks at me

「...Yo-chan, you're called『Yoshida』?」

「Yes...for some reason it became like that」

Un...Michi's younger. Speaking of which

「Yoshida...I've been observing your state since last night and continued to think. I just came up with an answer in the toilet」

Michi looks around

...Margo-san's not here

「As expected...Yoshida needs to die!」

...Eh?

「With the『Eternal Force Blizzard』...!」

...Err

If I recall...

She's going to trap me in a cold warehouse...?

「Wait, Mii-chan, what's wrong?」

Nei-san tries to stop Michi...

Or rather, she decided that it's not『Mii-chan』

「...Yoshida's shameful! Too shameful! I can't let Misuzu-sama be taken to the extreme shamefulness!」

Oh...Michi

She's been watching the『overkill sex』with Megu and Mana this morning...

The『naked stroll』and the『rape play』...!

Everyone's been watching it from this monitoring room...

S-Shit!

「...I will exterminate Yoshida here! I will fix you!」

Michi takes out her electric baton out of her skirt...!

「No, Kudou-san...that was Mana and Megu-oneechan's request to Onii-chan...」

Mana shouts in panic...

「Then...if Misuzu-sama asks for it then Misuzu-sama will be doing the same thing?」

「U-Un...when it comes to Onii-chan's nature, I think that will happen...」

「I will not let that happen! If Misuzu-sama's going to do something that shameless...then I will kill Yoshida here and suicide after! I'll do that...!」

Michi's eyes were serious

「I've talked with father a while ago...!」

Oh right...Michi went to deliver breakfast to Kudou-papa didn't he?

「Then...what did Kudou-san say?」

When I asked her...

「Father said『Whatever you do, do it with no regrets』 Therefore...I will beat up Yoshida-sama...to death!」

「...B-beat up?」

「I will literally strike you dead!!!!!!」

Michi's electric baton shows a blue spark!  
...That's not beating up to death!  
...You intend to kill me through electric shock.

「I'll beat you to death with『Eternal Force Blizzard』...!」

Hey hey...you intend to freeze me too?!!!  
...Then

「...But, if Kudou-san kills him then...Misuzu-sama would be in trouble」

Katsuko-nee said calmly while looking at the monitors.

「...Oh, right. Speaking of which, it's about time!」

...Nei-san's startled too

「Eh, what is it?」

Mana asks Nei-san

「Huh...Mana-chan doesn't know? Mi-chan's morning ritual...!」

...Right

...It's about time

At the moment I thought of that.

My phone rings.

「Michi, stop...it's Misuzu」

「...Misuzu-sama?」

Michi puts down her electric baton  
I pick up my phone in a hurry?

「Hello...Misuzu! What's wrong? Pee time?」

To my voice, Misuzu...

『I-I'm about to leaaaaak! Danna-samaaa!!!!』

The voice that leaks out of the phone...should be heard by Michi 「Are you in the toiler right now! Then pee right now! Now!!」

I yell at the phone!

『Y-Yes! Misuzu's permitted to pee!!!!』

...Jorororororororo

The sound of water streaming can be heard transmitted from the other side of the phone.

『Aaaaah, Danna-samaa...it's coming out right nowww! Misuzu's peeing right noww!!!!』

Misuzu shouts in a tearful tone.

The sound of her pee doesn't easily end...

「Mii-chan you see...she's not supposed to pee unless she's allowed by Yo-chan」

Nei-san told Michi.

Michi opens her mouth in blank surprise.

「Speaking of which, there was a call yesterday morning too」

Mana remembers the call from yesterday in the car.

「It's been every morning...right, Yo-chan?」

Nei-san asked about the day before yesterday

「...It's two, morning and night」

Hearing what I said, Nei-san became speechless.

「Not just morning but she also calls at night...Misuzu won't pee unless I allow her」

When I say that, Nei-san...

「But...Yo-chan, you haven't made a call with Mii-chan last night?」

...Eh?

「Last night we were together in this room weren't we?」

...That's right

「Yo-chan...nobody called you last night?!」

I got startled.

「Misuzu...could it be that you haven't peed since last night?」

If Misuzu didn't do her regular urination last night...!

『...Last night had the Shirasaka related incident continues so I thought that Danna-sama's very busy...!』

「...So you didn't call and hold back your pee?」

『...Yes, Danna-sama』

...Jororororo

She's still peeing...

Misuzu, how much did you hold back?!

「Idiot! Don't hold back! What will you do if your bladder burst?」

『Because...I didn't have Danna-sama's permission...there's no way I can do that!』

「Do it even if I don't tell you!」

『That's!』

...Uuuuuu

...What should I say at this kind of time?

What should I say to settle this?

「I get it...let's do this then. If you can't contact me and yet you can't hold it back anymore...health first, urinate anyway. Urinate without fail. Don't do anything unhealthy. I love Misuzu being healthy...!」

『...But, Danna-sama』

「I'm still talking...in exchange, if you piss in secret then Misuzu will be penalized」

『...Penalty?』

「That's right, a penalty...err, let's do something really lewd. A very embarrassing and lewd one」

『...What kind of lewd?』

Misuzu seems to be curious.

Then that means...

Katsuko-nee, Nei-san and Mana are also curious on our talk.

「Well...I'll think about it!」

『Eh, please think about it Danna-sama! Misuzu will accept whatever penalty with pleasure...!』

...Err

「Everyone's listening to this call! So if I decide on Misuzu's penalty right now then everyone else would say『I want the same』!」

『Then that means that it's a special penalty only for Misuzu?』

...What?

...Geez!

「That's right! Let's have it as such...! Therefore Misuzu herself should think of the penalty...let me tell you but that'll be a penalty in the end. It shouldn't be a new sex that Misuzu would like to try...!」

『Yes...Danna-sama!』

Misuzu's very happy.

「...Done?」

『Yes, it feels very refreshing...thank you very much, Danna-sama!』

Hearing the voice that leaks from the phone...Nei-san speaks to Michi.

「What will you do Mii-chan? If you kill Yo-chan then your beloved Mi-chan won't be able to pee and die you know. Her bladder would explode like a water balloon!」

「...T-That's a problem. That's troubliiiiing!」

Michi hangs her head while holding the electric baton.

『Danna-sama...is that Michi?』

Misuzu speaks from the phone.

「Yeah, she's right here but...」

『Please give the phone to her』

...I

「Michi...Misuzu wants to talk to you」

「...Y-Yes!」

Michi comes when she heard that it was from Misuzu.  
She took the phone from me.

「Good morning, Misuzu-sama...this is Michi」

...Misuzu

『Good morning...Michi. Are you attending to my Danna-sama properly?』

「Well...that is」

She can't answer that she was declaring about『Beating to death and freezing』earlier.

『You are my substitute, you are there so please serve Danna-sama with all your best...!』

「Y-Yes」

『Has Danna-sama asked for your body yet?』

「N-No」

『I'm sure Danna-sama's being kind, I think that Michi should lose her virginity in front of Misuzu but...Michi should serve Danna-sama actively. Okay?』

...Err

...Misuzu

『Of course...Michi has shown her peeing in front of Danna-sama?』

「...No」

『...No way, you're not showing it to him?』

「...Y-Yes」

『Did Danna-sama say that he doesn't want to see Michi pee?』

「No...he didn't say that」

『Then, why is Michi not taking the initiative!...You're my substitute there!!』

「...I-I'm very sorry! Misuzu-sama!」

『If you've got time to apologize then show it to him right now! Hurry up and bring Danna-sama to the toilet...!』

「...That is」

『Could it be that you've already peed this morning without showing it to Danna-sama...?!』

「...Kudou Michi has failed! I'm very sorry!」

『Does that mean...?!』

「...Not just the urination this morning but I've also finished defecating」

...Hey, girls

What the hell are you talking about in the morning...



Both of you are exceptional beauties and yet...

That feels really disappointing...

『Haa...I'm disappointed in you, Michi!』

Misuzu said

「...Misuzu-sama!」

『...I will give yo a penalty...okay?』

「...Yes」

『You'll turn a new leaf and do your best to serve Danna-sama as my proxy. Okay?』

「...Ceratainly」

『...Then, give the phone back to Danna-sama』

Michi returns the phone to me with a humble attitude completely different from a while ago.

「...Here」

「T-Thanks」

When I take my phone...

『Danna-sama should think of Michi's penalty. Danna-sama can do what he wants with Michi. Oh...please postpone sex yet. That would be with Misuzu... the three of us together...okay?』

Misuzu's voice is bright but...

「Hey, are you sure...Michi's completely depressed you know?」

When I say that, Misuzu...

『It's fine...it's about time for the stress to accumulate and start extreme behavior』

「...Misuzu?」

『For example...I think it's about time the things go bad and she'd think about beating up Danna-sama』

...Yes

That's right...I was just on the brink of death.

『Michi's still a child...this is her first time experiencing to be tense and on

watch all night long... And...Danna-sama had fun with Megumi-san, Katsuko-san and Mana-san didn't you?』

「U-Un...!」

『It's fine...there's no need to mind me. I'm a member of sister's association too』

Misuzu just accepts me having sex with other women with a smile.

『But...I think I can understand why Michi is being cautious. Then...she sees Danna-sama as insincere... She wants to put the blame for the pressure and stress in the alert situation to Danna-sama...』

I-I see.

『Therefore...Misuzu has stiffened her. Please be speaking with Michi with a commanding tone...a bit stronger for a while longer. If something happens just bring out my name』

「Got it...thanks」

Misuzu's amazing.

「You know Michi well」

『I knew her since we were small... I think of her as my precious little sister』

Misuzu said.

『Therefore...Danna-sama, Michi and Misuzu's fun time is my dream even now...!』

Misuzu's lesbian fetish is strong.

Perhaps...she won't accept any man other than me.

That's why she wants the three of us to have sex.

『...I think there will be a lot of difficulties but since it's a crucial moment... please do your best』

...Misuzu said.

『I can see Danna-sama by the night. I will wait for it』

「I also want to see Misuzu's dance」

『Yes...I will dance with all my best. Today's only for Danna-sama's sake...!』

Misuzu's voice is fascinating...

---

**EPUB/PDF generated by [Inwnepubs.com/](http://Inwnepubs.com/)**

---

**Translated by [Machine Sliced Bread](#)**

---

## 196. Endou and Yukino's morning...

---

When I end my call with Misuzu...Katsuko-nee spoke to me.

「Sorry but could you deliver breakfast to Yukio-san in the confinement room」

Looking at it...there's one tray on the table with rice ball and miso soup for one person.

「Neither Margo-sama nor Ojou-sama are here so I can't move away from the monitor」

「...Where did the two of them go?」

I asked Katsuko-nee

I'd like to know about Minaho-neesan in particular.

「Margo-sama is looping around the school...there are some places where she's uneasy about the surveillance cameras and sensors... It's already bright so she'd like to check it with her eyes」

As expected of Margo-san, she's always thinking ahead.

「Ojou-sama is preparing for the『trick』again」

「『Trick』?...the thing Iwakura-kaichou's taking part too?」

I want to know the contents of it

「That is...I can't speak it out. I can't take away Ojou-sama's fun after all」

Katsuko-nee said and smiled...

「However...I'll show you this video at least. It's a video from a few minutes ago」

Saying that...she operates the keyboard.

...Then

An image reflects on the monitor.

...That is

The hidden camera put on the baseball ground...



『...Why did you come here?!』

A roar echoes in the ground.

『No, you see...!...!』

A man in his practice wear is standing outside the ground...

That is Endou.

『Don't give me that bullshit bastard...! Do you know what you did yesterday?!』

The baseball club members are staring at Endou from the ground.

Their eyes are burning with anger.

『You criticized the coach in the middle of an outside game and went home without permission...!』

『You showed that state to other school...you do understand that was a disgrace on our faces...!』

『...Geropa-kouchou even came! The coach's position is completely ruined!』

『There's even a lot of students from our school...and yet, you!』

『How dare you show your face to us calmly...!』

...Right

The practice game with the baseball club from other school...

Endou was ordering a change of coach...

He mocked the coach in front of the public...

He went home without permission in the middle of the game...

『T-That's why...I want to apologize』

Endou tries to enter the ground between the wire net...

...Then

『Outsiders can't enter our holy ground without permission!!!!』

Endou's legs stopped from those harsh words.

『...Outsider?』

A big man comes out from the baseball club members.

『...Captain Ataka?!』

Endou mutters and Captain Ataka glares at him.

『...You're removed from the baseball club』

『...R-Removed?』

『Yeah, we had a meeting after the game yesterday and that's what we decided...we don't need your leave report. Or rather, don't show your face in front of us again』

The captain of the baseball club throws a『Break off declaration』to Endou.

『N-No way...that's harsh, captain...』

Endou said while laughing hysterically...

『Or rather...I think that you'll be given indefinite suspension at the staff meeting today...!』

『...Eh?』

Endou opens his mouth wide, making a foolish face.

『Are you an abysmal idiot? Making such a fuss in front of the principal...there's no way you'll come out unharmed!』

...Un

...Doing something that stupid from his temporary emotions...

...He stopped the progress of the game and even blamed the coach.

It was seen by the principal and other people from the school...

Thinking about it normally, he's completely out.

『That...uhm...』

Endou's faltering.

『Your prided councilor uncle seems to have been arrested!』

『Yeah, I saw it from yesterday's news!』

『Suspected bribery...it seems that your father's company is involved too...!』

Endou...thinks that with the political strength of his uncle...

...and the power of his father's money, he can do anything...

That's why he just rampaged yesterday.

But...Endou's shield is about to lose power.

Endou has to pay responsibility for what he has done by himself.

『Anyway...you're no longer related to baseball club. There will be a meeting in the athletics club so I will make it clear with them...!』

Captain Ataka said.

『We're already close to summer qualifier...there's no way we can let an asshole like you be with us!』

『The truth is, you should've been beaten up by everyone here!』

『Stop that, if you hit that idiot...then you'd be suspended and we won't have anyone to play』

『This brat will definitely tell his dad...!』

『Papa—Everyone's been bullying me, something like that?』

『Yeah right...he'll cry to his parents then ask them to do something about it』

『But...this guy's parents don't have the room for that do they?』

『That's where they would complain for their cute cute baby boy? They'll go to the Japan High School Baseball Federation...!』

『Scary scary...overprotection is scary!』

The club members curse Endou and laugh.

『...Isn't senpai the one exaggerating here?』

Endou who doesn't have any learning ability just opens his eyes without holding back his childish heart.

『Exaggerating?...Don't give me that bullshit idiot!』

『Yesterday's game...if it wasn't for your mistake then we could've won!』

『You just gave us extra humiliation to bear...!』

『Please quit the school before you got indefinite suspension!』

『That's right, that would be better!』

Tit for tat...!

Endou's heart heats up quickly!

『Sure...I'll quit from this school!』

...It would've been good if he hold back here and yet.  
Unable to do that...is the small human named Endou Kenji 『I will break off from weak people like you!』

Look...he's done it

『What what what's with all of you...making a fool out of me...! Even though you're not even a good baseball club...! You see, I came all this way to this school even though I'm much more talented than all of you!』

...Even though he could've stopped there.

『Didn't my father's donation buy you a lot of drinks and protein?! Just how much do you think was invested in you!! Then you just turn your hand away from something so trivial!』

Endou's true nature comes out.

『Well fine, who cares about you! I'll transfer to another high school...I will enter the baseball club there and I will definitely make you regret it...!!!!!!』

Endou puts up a middle finger to the baseball club members and shout so hard.

Endou intends to make them fall I guess...

He's glaring at the baseball clubs with bloodshot eyes.

But...

Those words thrown at the baseball club members turned to a 『cold bird』flying above their head...

『...Hmmm』

『...Is that so?』

『...Then do your best?』

『...Un, if you can then, sure』

The club members reaction are as cold as ice.

『W-What the hell is with you people...I'm serious! I will destroy you all in an official game, remember this!』

...Endou

You're so stupid it makes me sad...



『Err...someone explain it to him, I don't want to talk to him anymore...』

Captain Ataka said in disgust.

『Well then, on behalf of the captain...!』

One tall member raised his hands...

I've seen this guy...he's a second year Koizumi-senpai.

He's the baseball club member sucking cigar on the roof...the one I witnessed before I was beaten up by Endou there...

He's one of the two people who became my starting point of raping Yukino. That Koizumu spoke to Endou.

『Are you planning to transfer to a school to beat us in an official game?』

Endou...!

『Isn't that obvious!? My purpose is to make you regret...! I will make you repent that you kicked me out until you die!』

The enraged Endou shouts at him.

『But you see...which high school that's going to compete with us will accept you seriously?』

...Endou's angry face twitches.

『W-W-W-What do you mean?!』

『Well you see...you caused trouble in the baseball club of our high school, and in addition you are a student who quit school after an indefinite suspension...do you think that an admirable school would accept you specially?』

『...T-That's!』

『You can't use your uncle or your father's power anymore...!』

Endou's face turns paler every moment...

『Furthermore...you caused a fuss in the middle of a game...』

『There were scouts from other schools on that preliminary round...』

『Yeah...you probably would be quite famous on baseball clubs on the surrounding schools』

『Telling the coach that you'll tell your Papa that you'll fire him! A big idiot who shouted and ran away from the ground』

『Or rather...it seems that the video of that scene is already on niconico』

『Eh...are you serious?』

『It must've been a scout from other school taking a video and uploading it?』

『Ah, I saw it last night. It was under the『funny videos』on the site』

『Un...it was ranked five on popularity yesterday』

...That's probably Minaho-neesan's act.

Once she bore a grudge, she'll definitely take revenge...

『With that said...there's no baseball team that would take you in inside the prefecture』

Koizumi spoke to Endou meanly...

『If you really want to continue baseball then you should look for schools on the countryside far beyond the prefecture...a remote school that doesn't have an internet connection or something. You might be able to transfer to that school safely without then knowing your bad behavior...!』

『But, well...either way, we won't see each other again』

『For a school outside the prefecture, you can't hit an official game unless you go to a national tournament』

『But...it's possible that we can go to Koshien only at a fundamental level with our ability...!』

『Furthermore, the possibility of Endou's new school confronting us in Koshien... is already equal to zero』

『Either way...we're already severing connections with you』

『Yeah...well, that can't be helped』

『That's what Endou decided himself...he's already quitting our school』

『Well...live healthily on another high school!』

『Don't come back ever again!』

『Go back to the mountains!』

The baseball club members laughed together.

Endou...his face that looks like he's about to piss any moment trembles...

Lastly, Captain Ataka told Endou.

『The uniform you used yesterday and took home was an official game uniform... There were opinions from the members that you have to return it but

when it comes to this, the uniform you wore is too bad to use. We don't need it. You can have it...that's your last memory for a high school baseball...!』

Captain Ataka seems to think that it's impossible for Endou to transfer schools and continue high school baseball...

True...all the schools in the prefecture would refuse him...

The plan to go to a distant school in the current situation where Endou's relatives are involved in a bribery case, that's impossible.

Endou's high school baseball life is already over.

『U-Uhm...captain, everyone...!』

Endou puts his hand on the ground in a hurry...!

『I-I'm very sorry for speaking a-arrogantly!』

Endou kneels on the ground with a pale face.

『But...I love baseball! I don't want to quit baseball!』

Rubbing his forehead on the soil...!

『I'll stay in this school! Please...please let me stay in the baseball club!!!』

Captain Ataka looks down at Endou like a pest...

『It's too late...!』

The other baseball club members look at Endou with eyes of sneer...

『...Really, what a useless trash』

『...I'll never forgive you!』

『...Or rather, die already!』

Endou still shouts while lowering his head...!

『Are you telling me to quit baseball?!』

The captain lost temper from those words.

『...Don't give me that bullshit bastard!!!』

The other members held back the captain...!

『...Captain, we're just before qualifiers』

『That's right, there's no worth hitting that guy!』

『If you hit him you lose...he'll definitely squeal to the league...!』

『...Please calm down for now』

『Our guts are burning too but we're holding back!』

『...Please bear it』

Captain shouts!

『...Take this brat to somewhere I can't see!』

『...Yup, got it. Captain』

The two second years...Sugiyama and Koizumi who were from the rooftop that time jumped outside the ground.

『...Hey, Endou, come here』

『...Hurry up!』

The two senior members pull Endou forcibly and took him away.

『P-Please wait...I want to talk to Captain!』

Endou resists...!

『Idiot, you made him that angry, there's nothing to talk about anymore!』

『Anyway...come with us for now!』

Saying that...the two lift Endou to their shoulder...!

『Then, Captain, we'll be throwing this guy away!』

Saying that...the two carries Endou while cheering...

『Wait a moment...please, wait...hey...!』

Shouldered by the two stronger seniors...Endou's figure grows smaller and smaller...

『...Because of that idiot our training has started late. Well, let's start!』

Captain Ataka pulled himself together and told the members.

『...Yes!』

Finally... the baseball ceremony begins



「...What the hell is that?」

I'm nothing but amazed.

「That's all for Endou-kun's video」

Katsuko-nee told me with a smile.

「No, uhm...what's going on after this? Endou was taken by the two seniors... where is he right now?」

When I asked that...Katsuko-nee...

「We're still recording now」

...Recording?

So something's going on right now?

「...Could you show me the real time image?」

They must be in the school...

If they're recording with a surveillance camera...then we should be able to live broadcast.

「Well...not for now」

Katsuko-nee said.

「...Why not?」

「Ojou-sama's plan has an order. We can't show it to you right now」

...So this is also Minaho-neesan's『plan』...?

「Rather than that...could you deliver Yukino-san's breakfast already?」

Oh right...I remembered what Katsuko-nee said.

It's pitiful that Yukino's hungry.

「Yeah...right」

I bring the tray of rice ball and miso soup

...Oh right.

「Uhm, Katsuko-nee...where's the『confinement room』?」

Katsuko-nee looks at Michi when I asked...

「Kudou-san...you followed Ojou-sama when she took Yukino-san to the『detention room』didn't you?」

After Misuzu's phone call, Misuzu's face looks depressed...

「Y-Yes...should I guard him?」

「Then...could you go with him to the『confinement room』? Yukino-san might begin to rage...!」

Michi who felt that she was given a『mission』 has her face changed to work mode...

「...Certainly!」

Mana who's playing with Mana look at me...

「Then I'll go too!」

...Hmm

「I don't want to let Onii-chan and Yukino-san be alone!」

...I

Rather...I don't want Mana and Yukino to meet

Contact with Yukino still stimulates Mana's heart...

I can't aggravate Mana's dependency any further.

「No...Michi is enough. Yukino might be stimulated if we're too many...she's mentally dangerous right now...!」

Yukino was struck by reality from the conversation with Minaho-neesan a while ago...

There's a possibility that she's in a dangerous state...

「...But」

Nei-san embraces Mana from the side...

「Mana-chan's on watch with me right?!」

Nei-san smiles...!

「It's okay! We can watch the situation in the『confinement room』from this room!」

Saying that...Nei-san activates one monitor.

The state in the『confinement room』is reflected

Yukino...she's somewhat limp.

It's the same as last night...

She's lying down like a lion in the zoo...

「Watch it here with me, okay?」

Nei-san's kind words...Mana...

「...Got it」

She answered in a small voice.



「This way...!」

I head to the『confinement room』guided by Michi.

That said, it wasn't very far.

From the monitor room, to the door leading towards the bathroom and toilet...  
open the wall next to the toilet.

At first it looks like a wall in the machine room but it turned out to be a hidden door.

Three small doors line up when I pass through the back passage.

「These three are the confinement rooms」

Michi said.

「Yukino-san is on the firstmost room.」

Michi opens the lock with the key Katsuko-nee gave her.

...Giii

How should I say it...it's a very small room.

There are only two tatami mats and the ceiling is around 180cm.

You'll get claustrophobic with this...

The whole ceiling is a light panel and it glows brightly...

If this goes dark, you'll panic.

There's only 150% space to breathe.

「...Yukino, I brought you breakfast」

I try to talk to her but...

Yukino who's lying down on the floor wearing a piece of white blouse isn't

twitching at all.

「Hey, Yukino...you okay?」

I tried to enter the room but...

「Don't come in! Leave me alone!」

She snarled...

...Fuu

For the time being...she seems to be alive.

「Here, you must be hungry. I brought breakfast...!」

I try to show the meal on the tray...

「I don't need it! Bring me back home!」

Yukino's in bad mood...

「Don't say that...eat. If you don't eat it then you won't regain strength」

「...Who cares!」

「...You don't want to eat?」

I'm a bit worried.

「There's no way I would! If you have appetite in this kind of circumstances then you're crazy!」

Yukino shouts...!

Well...there's no need to worry if she's this energetic.

「I can't do anything if you don't have an appetite but anyway, I'll leave it here」

I put the tray next to Yukino lying down.

The room that's too narrow...

The delicious smell of miso soup drifts in the room.

...Then

...Guuuuuu

...Yukino's stomach rumbled.

「What, aren't you hungry?」



When I say that...

Yukino jumped out of bed and glared at me...!

「Shut up shut up shut uuuuup!!」

...No

You're the one who needs to shut up.

「Anyway, eat...we'll leave so take it easy and eat. Okay?」

I told Yukino.

「...Hmph!」

Yukino ignores me then lied down again.

...She's really an animal.

「...Who told you to bring it?」

Yukinko who's lying down told me.

「Eh...Katsuko-nee told me. She said that Yukino might be hungry...」

「Is that so?...As expected」

Yukino leaks a sigh.

「You...in the end, you're always acting according to other people's orders...!」

...Yukino?

「You don't have a will of your own...you just listen to everything other people tell you then obey them...the worst」

...I

「The only time you made a decision was during the first time you raped me?  
No...even that one was just a setup by Yuzuki-sensei and you just acted  
according to Yuzuki-sensei's plan」

Yukino glares at me.

「You don't have a self...!!!」

---

## 197. What am I to You?

---

I don't have a self...?

「...Un, right. You might be right」

I affirm Yukino.

「That's right...you'll do anything as long as Yuzuki-sensei orders you? You're not a human...you're a robot. A rape robot!」

Yukino...turned to the wall and lied down.

「Yoshida...is that so?」

Michi asks me.

「Un...I'll do anything Minaho-neesan tells me」

「...Even rape or murder?」

「Yeah...I think so」

When I answered...Yukino...

「Look, it's as I thought!...You don't have anything!」

Michi stares at me.

「...Why?」

「Well...I trust Minaho-neesan」

I answered.

「Minaho-neesan always think about us. If Minaho-neesan tells me to kill someone then that is needed for『Kuromori』...Even if it's rape, I think that will be the same」

「But...Yuzuki-sensei can make a mistake in her judgement?」

Michi said.

「That would be fine...if Minaho-neesan is about to make an important

decision then she'll definitely ask Margo-san and Katsuko-nee's opinion. Both of them are much smarter than me and if those three gather then I don't think they will make a big mistake」

I believe the intellect of the three.

「Also...Nei-san's also smart. If there's a problem then we can just contact Nagisa...I don't need to make a judgement by myself」

Yukino glanced at me.

「Are you an idiot?...You're just being used by those people...!」

Yukino said...

「Then that's okay...」

Yukino got startled from my remark...

「But...I've already exceeded that level long ago. I'm a member of『Kuromori』...and I really trust them. We're already sharing a『common destiny』...!」

Me, Megu, Mana...have no choice but to live within『Kuromori』  
No...Katsuko-nee and Margo-san are able to demonstrate their ability because they're within『Kuromori』  
Even Nagisa...she didn't break off from『Kuromori』completely...  
Above all...Minaho-neesan is fused with『Kuromori』herself...!

「Then...if Yuzuki-sensei told you to die then you're going to kill yourself?!」

Yukino asked something obvious again.

「I will...if it's an order then there's no helping it!」

Yukino's trembling.

「Are you mad!?」

...Am I?

No...I don't think so

「...Yoshida!」

Michi looks at me with a harsh face.

「W-What's wrong...Michi?!」

「Yoshida...Didn't you say that you will die for Misuzu-sama's sake?! Was that a lie?!」

...Err

「Yeah, I will. It's not pain to die for Misuzu's sake」

「But, you just said that if Yuzuki-sama orders then you can die anytime...!」

...That is

「Misuzu...no, Misuzu's already my『family』 Everyone in『Kuromori』is equally important to me. That's why I'll protect them to death and I'll use my own life. Everyone's the same!」

「...Everyone's the same?!」

Michi's face turns steeper...

「Yeah...it's not just Misuzu. I would die for Megu or Mana's sake...I'll bet my life for them. Even for Katsuko-nee or Nagisa...!」

「Why can't Misuzu-sama be the number 1?!」

...Michi?

「Misuzu-sama should be having preferential treatment compared to other women...is that wrong, Yoshida?!」

Michi shouts.

「Misuzu-sama is an angel! There's none as innocent and cute as here! Yoshida should devote to Misuzu-sama than others and deeply, deeply worship her from the bottom of your heart!」

For Michi...Misuzu's a noble existence.  
But I.

「...No, everyone's the same. Everyone's equally important. Everyone's the first for me...!」

「That's strange! You should be putting merits and demerits properly!」

...The priority order?

「Oh...if ever we were in a sinking ship...who would you take on the lifeboat first? I do have that priority level...」

「...Misuzu-sama is the first! There's nothing as important as Misuzu-sama!」

This petite girl worships Misuzu.

「...Who rides first doesn't matter」

...That's right.

「I'll definitely help everyone!」

「...Everyone?」

...Michi's surprised.

「That's right! Who cares if I die...if I was left behind the ship and drown...I will save everyone else. Misuzu, Nei-san, Megu, Mana, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Margo-san, Minaho-neesan! I will be saving everyone!」

「That's odd!」

Michi shook her head.

「If there's someone you can't help...what would you do?!」

「I don't think like that! I will save everyone even if I die!」

「Yoshida, you're absurd...!」

「It's not absurd!」

Michi and I shout at each other in Yukino's narrow『confinement room』

「...Why? There's no man who can love women that evenly!」

Michi told me.

...I

「I do...everyone's my『family』...!」

...That's right.

「...『Family』?!」

I look at Michi's eyes then tell her clearly.

「『Kuromori』is my family」 That's why I love them all. I will protect them with my life. I will definitely make them happy...everyone's my『family』...!」

...『Family』

...I finally found my『family』

...The family I should『protect』

「...Misuzu-sama's a...『family』?!」

Michi's surprised...

「That's right! Misuzu's my『family』 That's why I love her. I'll definitely protect her. I'll make her happy...!」

「Yoshida...you're insolent」

Michi mutters

「...Fuson?」

「It means that you're excessively conceited...there's no way for us commoner to be『family』with a bloodline like Misuzu-sama, do we?」

Michi has been serving Misuzu since childhood.  
Naturally, she knows the Kouzuki house well.

「I don't know about『Kouzuki』house but...Misuzu's a normal girl. She's a completely normal human. That's why she becomes my『family』」

「...What do you mean?」

「Even if you're not tied by blood...even a complete stranger...when you trust each other then everyone can become a『family』 I came to『Kuromori』and learned that...!」

「Are you really believing such absurd thing? A family with thick relations of other people than the same blood?」

「Yeah...I do」

Because...I

「I believe nothing in the『blood ties』rather...」

...That's right.

「I'm a child abandoned by my parents... Megu's the same. Mana too... The parents have a『Blood tie』so they will protect the children?...That's not true. We have to survive with our own power」

Therefore...we gather.  
That is『Kuromori』right now.

「The other people are the same too...Margo-san can't stay with her own

family. Nei-san has her family killed. Katsuko-nee and Nagisa were abducted, turned to a prostitute...and can't return to their families. Minaho-neesan's both...abandoned by her father...was kidnapped from her mother...her sister was killed. Everyone lost their true family tied by blood. Therefore...we're making『Kuromori』our own『family』」

「Misuzu-sama's different! Misuzu-sama's family is alive! It's not just her grandfather, Kouzuki-sama her father and mother are alive as well...Misuzu-sama doesn't have any complains about her family...!」

「Well...that might be the case but...!」

I have a conviction.

「Our souls call each other. We have a bond that connects us. That's what I feel」

Oh...so that's how it is.

The determination hardens inside me.

「Therefore...tonight, I will meet Kouzuki-san and ask him...『Please give me Misuzu』...!」

Michi's stunned.

「...Are you intending to marry Misuzu-sama?! That's impossible! Commoners being tied up with Kouzuki family...!」

「Legal marriage might not be possible but that doesn't matter. I want to be with Misuzu for the rest of my life. That's all」

「That makes Misuzu-sama pitiful!」

...Michi?

「Unable to wear a bridal gown...even though she's born as a woman...that's!」

Really...this warrior like girl...

She's a woman inside her head.

A fifteen year old normal girl.

Very ordinary...

「But...it's much better than political marriage, isn't it?」

「However...the role of a woman born in famous houses is to marry to strengthen relationship between houses」

Michi grasped her hand tightly...and said.

「Who cares about that fate...!」

...I

「She's already my『woman』 I won't hand her to anyone...!」

「...Yoshida?」

Michi looks up at me in surprise.

「Excuse me...could you take that boring conversation somewhere I can't hear?」

Yukino who's lying down on the floor told me with an amazed expression.

「You decide what you resolve but I have nothing to do with it. To be honest... it's nuisance to hear the absurd reason of an insane criminal!」

...Un, right.

From Yukino's perspective...I'm only a madman.

I know that too.

...But.

I have no choice but to go this way.

To live as a member of『Kuromori』...

「But...you're really something to make such incomprehensible conversations every time」

Yukino told me.

「Shouldn't you just say... 『Shut up idiot, I said I want to do it so shut up!』 shouldn't you?」

...I

「I want to talk properly. I want to understand through a dialog. I'd like us to understand each other」

「...What?」

Yukino asks me with a blank face.

「Right now...it's with Michi. I want to know what kind of girl she is and what is she thinking」



「Shouldn't you make her realize what you are thinking first/」

「Well of course...I tell Michi what I think but...I don't want her to agree with me...it's not to make her understand either. Rather than that...I want to know Michi's heart by talking」

「Oh...you want to『peek』into the heart of the woman you're talking with? You're completely a vulgar man...」

Yukino snorts her nose...

「Well...you can't understand unless you see through the heart, can you?」  
「...Understand?」

Michi mutters.

「I want to understand Michi」  
「Me...?」

Yukino laughs.

「Can't you just know that by just looking...this girl is just an idiot escort girl who loves the lady from Kouzuki-house? You don't get that?」  
「No...that's not it」

I said.

「You shouldn't judge people from their surface...You see, Michi is」

I look at Michi.  
Michi looks at me.

「A lovely girl...a fifteen year old girl who exerts herself to the hardest」

Yukino laughs.

「What's that! What? You're intending to seduce this child now?...You're loose!」

Michi...

「...Don't laugh」

She strikes the electric baton in front of Yukino's eyes...!  
A spark shines for a moment...1

「...Hiii!」

Yukino's face cramped.

「My father has taught me『No matter what...don't laugh at a person who does with utmost effort』...」

Then, she looks at me.

「I don't know how Yoshida thinks. To be honest, I can only imagine it being reckless and absurd...but, I know that Yoshida is diligent」

...Michi?

「Therefore...I put the insolent remark about Misuzu-sama deep in my chest. Anyway...Yoshida, serve Misuzu-sama from now on. It's certain that Misuzu-sama likes Yoshida... If Yoshida won't betray Misuzu-sama...then I will forgive his existence. I will also look over his fornication with the other『women』...」

...I

「I will never betray Misuzu. I swear」

I swore to Michi.

「Then, Yoshida...please tell me one thing」

Michi asks me with a serious face

She shows the electric baton to Yukino...

「What does Yoshida think with this woman?」

...Yukino?

「This woman should be our『enemy』 That's what I have heard」

「Y-Yeah...Yukino is Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter...she's taking a rebellious attitude towards us all the time so...I think that there's no mistake that she's an『enemy』」

At least...she's not an ally.

「Then why...does Yoshida treat this woman as gentle as towards other women?」

...I?

...am I kind to Yukino?

「Don't be ridiculous! This man raped me! Dozens of times!! There's no way this guy is gentle to me!」

Yukino screams.

That's right...it is as Yukino says.

「A woman raped with hostility can't do something like this」

Michi said.

「I was able to watch the rape videos with father multiple times. That is to make me understand what kind of humiliation would I take if I was caught by the enemy...it's to understand how brutal human『enemies are』 Recalling it now, I still feel sick. I felt intense hatred towards men from watching those videos」

...Kudou papa.

Another biased education again.

Showing that thing to a middle school girl...

That's why Michi became a lesbian...

「I don't see any blue bruise in your skin...not even a single teeth was broken...!」

Michi told Yukino.

「I was raped by this guy more than thirty times!」

Yukino still argue with Michi.

「But...has your genitalia been assaulted enough that it tore?...」

...Err

What kind of video did she watch...?

「Rather...you understand that Yoshida won't be rough...you trust Yoshida as a sexual partner」

Yukino trusts me?

「...There's no way that's true. There's no way I trust him...!」

Yukino looks down...

Michi continues her speech.

「Your interaction with Yoshida just earlier...I've been watching that in the camera. You seem to be enjoying having sex with Yoshida...don't you?」  
「...There's no way I'm enjoying it! I really hate being embraced by this guy! I hate it so much I can't endure it!」

Yukino tries to deny it but...

「...That's a lie. You're telling lies!」

Michi sees through it.

「Also, Yoshida...why are you seriously serving this woman just like how you do with Misuzu-sama and other women?」

I'm serving Yukino?

「Why are you working so hard so this woman feels pleasure? If you rape her then it's fine if Yoshida seeks pleasure one-sidedly. No...if this woman doesn't suffer physically or mentally then she's not raped!」

That's true but...

「Rather...Yoshida's sex is mentally and physically relieving this woman...I see it with my eyes」

...Err.

「What is Yoshida's relationship with this woman? What is this woman's existence to Yoshida?」

Michi cross examines me intensely...

...But

The answer can't come up inside me.

I look at Yukino.

Yukino's looking at me.

What are we?

At first...it was just a rape victim and the rapist.

But now...

It is as Michi says...Yukino seems to be enjoying sex with me.

And...I certainly have sex with the same attitude I have towards my other『women』

What is that?

For me, Yukino is...

For Yukino, I...

「No...but, Michi」

I open up my mouth

「But...I won't have sex with Yukino anymore...」

Yukino looks up at me startled.

「Because...Yukino said『This is the last』earlier」

That's why...I won't have sex with Yukino anymore...

Yukino turned her face away.

「That's not possible...!」

Michi told me.

「I can't think of this woman coming out of her relationship with Yoshida!」

...Yukino?

「If this woman asks for a fornication in this situation...what will Yoshida do?」

If Yukino asks to have sex with me again?

At that time...I

『...Okay, that's enough!!!!』

Katsuko-nee's voice come from the speaker...?!

『Kudou-san...thank you for posing the problem!』

Katsuko-nee's voice seems to be having fun.

Oh...Michi and I going to Yukino's place...

...was according to Minaho-neesan's『plan』

To have Michi who's fretting about Misuzu pick on me...

『That will be enough for now...everyone needs some time to cool down their heads...!』

Katsuko-nee says.

『Think about each other's opinion. Then, think about the contents of what

was said again. That's for the three of you...!』

...Eh?

It's not Yukino and I...

Katsuko-nee is telling Michi to think again about the content of the conversation too?

『People try to dodge their true intention through different words...to fool themselves. Try to face your true self...!』

Katsuko-nee's voice is kind.

『Anyway...Yukino-san, please take a meal. Both of you come back. It's about time we move on to the next step...!』

...From here.

...What's going to happen?



Yukino who's lying down...I told her「 anyway, just eat」and left the『confinement room』

Michi seems to be thinking about something.

I'm also thinking of various things.

Coming back to the『monitor room』...Margo-san and Minaho-neesan are back  
Katsuko-nee, Nei-san, Mana, Margo-san, Minaho-neesan, Michi, me...  
Excluding Megu who's in her club activity, we're gathered.

「I've recorded what you said a while ago and sent it to Misuzu-san」

Suddenly...Katsuko-nee said.

「Eh...about what?」

「Well...the one where you said you'll go to Kouzuki-sama and say『Please give me Misuzu』, dear」

Uwa...that one?

「Later...please clearly tell Misuzu from your own mouth. That's a proposal after all...!」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「But is that okay?...Onii-chan telling Kouzuki-sama that...won't that be a bad for Yuzuki-san and Kouzuki-sama?」

Mana asked Minaho-neesan in worry.

「What comes at that time will happen... I'm Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-san's ally」

Saying that makes me happy.

「Well, in the end, there's no choice but to do it!」

Then...Nei-san.

「Yeah, I also like Misuzu-san too」

Margo-san said.

「Everyone, you don't get it at all!」

Michi's angry.

「Kouzuki-sama isn't a mild gentleman! Apart from being Misuzu-sama's lover...saying『Please give me Misuzu』!」

This girl's sense of values seems to be firmly fixed.

「We know that even if you don't tell u」

Minaho-neesan lightly replied to Michi.

「But...『Kuromori』isn't such a mild organization as well...」

Minaho-neesan's cold eyes look at Michi.

「...I-I'm sorry for being rude」

Michi bows her head.

「It's fine...this is all because of Yoshida-kun after all」

...My fault?

「Normally, Kudou-san who has a shy personality doesn't easily open up her mind with others is now talking her feelings to us familiarly... If it wasn't for Yoshida-kun, that won't happen」

「Ah...sorry」

When I apologized...Minaho-neesan giggled.

「No you see...I'm praising you」

...Eh?

「You're really good at opening up girl's hearts. 」

I don't get it myself.

However, I feel like I'm offending Michi...

「Now then...should we proceed to the next stage?」

Minaho-neesan looks at Katsuko-nee.

「Yes...Ojou-sama!」

Katsuko-nee operates then a video appears on the monitor.

...That is.

「This is Endou-kun twenty minutes ago...!」

Endou in the screen...and the two seniors in baseball club...

They're beating him up...!

『Hey...bastard, doing something like this...!』

Endou crouching on the ground is suffering.

『Are you going to tell the school, the police, the Baseball league?』

The member named Sugiyama...said while laughing.

『Oh, it's not that we care if the baseball club pulls us out』

Koizumi says while kicking Endou's abdomen...

『We're not regulars even after two years...we can't participate from the start!』

『That's why...if you want to inform them then you can do as much as you want!』

Sugiyama's fist drives to Endou's jaw again...!

---



## 198. Step 1

---

『Endou...by the way, what are you going to do with that?!』

The baseball club member, Koizumi speaks to Endou who's on the ground.

『Oh, that one!』

Sugiyama grins...

『You see...it's nice and all that you got kicked out of the baseball club but don't think we're going to let you get away with even that!』

Koizumi grabs Endou's chest and pulls him up...!

『T-That?...W-What?!』

Endou stares at his seniors while blood runs down his nose.

『Isn't that obvious?...The bet!』

...Bet?

...Isn't that?!

『You, and that...who was it again?』

『...Yukino-chan』

『That's right...the bet where you're going to fuck her on what day on May...』

Endou...and Yukino's bed day...

The entire baseball club made a bet, didn't they...?

『T-That...I don't care about that woman anymore! I!』

Yesterday...Endou was shamed by Yukino in front of the baseball ground audience.

『...I don't care about that woman anymore!』

Endou said as if spitting out...

『...Hee, so that's what you intend...!』

『We won't let that however!』

Koizumu drives another hit in Endou's belly!

『...We also bet! We wanted to make money you know!』

『It's too late for a refund just because the woman's useless now!』

The two of them beat up Endou.

『...Do something about it bastard!』

『Even if it's impossible, do something about it!』

They beat up Endou.

『T-That's...What are you telling me to do!』

Endou got covered in mud and shouted half-crying 『Isn't that obvious?...!』

Koizumu tells Endou while having a faint laugh.

『Rape her or something...do something to complete the bet!』

Sugiyama laughs frivolously...

『Oh, by the way...Koizumi and I bet on May 2...it means our bet is today』

『In short...You need to do it by all means...!』

...Today?

Endou's going to rape Yukino?!

『B-But...You know her don't you?! She's the one being talked about in the TV yesterday...the daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke!』

Ooh, the baseball stupid Endou is also watching the commotion last night.

『I don't want to get involved with her anymore!』

Endou abandoned Yukino quickly.

As soon as he knew that he was a daughter of a criminal suspect...the value of Yukino has disappeared for him...

...But

Sugiyama and Koizumi...the baseball club members!

『That doesn't matter!』

『...Ha!』

『That doesn't matter!』

『...There we go!』

『That doesn't matter!』

『...Yeah!』

They're not changing their mind at all.  
They just hit Endou while laughing...!

『We're the only ones who made a bet on May 2 among the baseball club members...!』

『Isn't that right? Koizumi-kuun~...!』

『If Endou was able to finish it today then we're going to be rich!』

『We're going to receive the full price!』

『Then...how much are we going to earn again, Koizumi-kuuun?』

『Well you see...it's roughly 42k yen, Sugiyama-kuuun~!』

『For each of us...?』

『...That would be 20k yen』

『Isn't that biiiiiig...Sugiyama-kuuun?!』

『It's something you can't overlook...Koizumi-kuuuun~』

Both of them beat up Endou again...!

『That's why...You have to...~!』

『Definitely do that...!』

『Fuck that woman!』

『Then...take photos as evidence!』

Endou's being poured on with fists!  
On the soil of the unpopular back of gym...  
Endou who's beaten up falls down.

『Do you get it, Endou!?』

『You have to do it today okay...』

『Your reply?!』

Endou's not answering.

『Well fine...we'll call you later...!』

『Try to do something about that woman until then !』

『If you do anything funny then we won't be done with this』

『...Do you get it, Endou?』

『...Then, ptui!』

Sugiyama's spit falls to Endou's face.

Sugiyama and Koizumi walks away while laughing...

Endou who fell down forward...

...Before long.

『...Dammit!』

He speaks in hatred but he doesn't seem to move.

『W-Why do I have to...dammit!』

Endou thinks that he did nothing wrong...

He thinks that everyone else is responsible for his hardships...

That is what Endou Kenji is.

『Those bastards are saying bullshit...bullshit...bullshit...!!!!』

...That's when.

Someone comes in on the camera screen.

『My?!...Someone seems to have fallen here?!』

That is...

The student council president...Iwakura Yukiyo...!

Iwakura-kaichou's followed by two male students.

Both of them have a student council armband.

If I recall...all those in the student council are under Iwakura-san.

『What's wrong? You seem to be injured ...!』

Iwakura-san acts surprised then approached Endou.

『My my, this is a horrible injury... Harada, Makino, take this boy...let's see, the sports training room in the gym is near. There are meds there...!』

No...you normally take them to the doctor's office.

I've never heard of a sports training room either.

...Is there anything behind it.

『...Yes, Kaichou』

『Now... hurry up and take him!』

Iwakura-san looked towards the camera and smiled while saying that.

...She knows the position of the camera.

She's making an appeal over the camera as she acted according to Minaho-neesan's order?...

『Here, can you stand?!』

The two subordinates raise Endou.

『...Y-Yeah』

Supported by the two from the student council...Endou heads to the entrance of the gym.

Iwakura-kaichou walks behind elegantly...



「Okay...that's the end of the video」

Katsuko-nee stopped playing the video.

「Eh...wait a moment...!」

I look at Minaho-neesan.

「W-What's going on?! What did Minaho-neesan tell Iwakura-kaichou?」

...Minaho-neesan.

「I can't tell you right now.」

She said...then dinks coffee.

「...That's. Could it be that you really would let Endou rape Yukino?!」

When I asked her...

「I wonder?! Isn't that all dependent to Endou-kun and Yukino-san...? Isn't that right?!」

T-True...

I don't think that Endou would just do what the seniors say because he was beaten up by them...

With Endou's personality...he'll try to avoid Yukino instead.

He definitely won't let those two seniors win...

「What...Yoshida-kun, are you that worried about Yukino-san?」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

「No...but」

「You don't need to care about that person anymore...!」

Mana mutters.

「...Onii-chan, hug me!」

「...Sure」

I embraced Mana.

Mana is holding a deep inferiority complex towards Yukino as her younger sister.

That complex is accelerating her『dependency』towards me.

「Onii-chan has Mana already...don't think about that person anymore...!」

...Mana said.

...I

「My...Yoshida-kun, isn't it about time you pick up Megumi?」

Minaho-neesan looks at her watch then said.

True... the morning practice is about to end.

「Yes...I'll pick her up」

Megu...

She's also in『addicted』state too

I'm worried unless I pick her up.

「Hora hora, Mana-chan will be staying behind with me!」

Nei-san calls Mana.

「...I」

Mana clings to my school uniform...

「Mana-chan...you're worried about Megu-chan too aren't you?」

Nei-san smiled kindly and told Mana.

「...That's why we have to let Yo-chan stick with Megu-chan for a while... okay?」

Hearing Nei-san...Mana...

「...Got it. Onii-chan, I'll leave Megu-oneechan to you」

Mana let go of my student clothes...

「Yeah...leave her to me」

I answer while patting Mana's head.

「Nei-sama...could you clean up the kitchen along with Mana-chan?」

「Okay, Katsun!」

Next, Margo-san to Michi...

「Kudou-san...should we move our body a bit on the principal's office above? We don't know what would be the timing of battle situation in the future so we should keep up. Could you spar with me for a bit?」

「Roger...that's what I was thinking as well」

Nei-san and Mana goes to the kitchen.

Margo-san and Michi goes up the principal's office.

...Could this be

Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee are planning something again.

What is in this room they don't want Michi and Mana to see...?

That is most probably Yukino.

It's about time for the start of school...

Then...Minaho-neesan is going to let Yukino participate the class...

「...You don't need to think about various things.」

Minaho-neesan says while looking at my face.

「Clear up the problems in front of you...if you don't do what you can then nothing will be solved...」

The problem in front of me...

「First...Megumi's heart care, right?」

...That's right.

Megu...is she getting along with the other members?

Captain Takeshiba said that so I'm not that worried...

But...Megu...

She's firm but she's mentally weak.

「Got it...I'll be going」

「Bring your bag...you're going straight to classes, don't you?」

...So that's what will happen timewise.

「Right. Got it, Minaho-neesan」

I bring my student bag...

Then face the female track and field team...



「Okay...that's for the morning practice. First years, clean up...others, dismissed!」

Captain Takeshiba's voice echoes in the ground.

...Fuu

...I made it in time.

Megu's cleaning up along with the other first years.

「Ah, Yamamine-chan, your boyfriend came to pick you up!」

One of the first years noticed me.

「Go ahead...we'll do the clean up」

Ogino-san from the same class said in consideration.

「But...it's fine. I feel sorry for everyone」

Megu...says and hold the basket with the tools.

「Geez, you're not being honest...we're the one's who would feel uneasy if you make Yoshida-kun wait!」

「That's right...Yamamine-san」

...I

I hurry and enter the room with the first years.



「...Let me help out Megu」

I took the basket Megu's holding and lift it up.

「Should I just take this to the girl's track and field room?」

「...U-Un」

Ogino-san...

「It's fine, Yoshida-kun doesn't need to do that...!」

「That's right, you can just take Yamamine-san away」

「Un...you can leave the cleanup to us」

...I

「I think everyone knows it already but Megu's a very serious girl. To the extent you'll ask if she's too serious... Therefore...we're thankful that you're being considerate but I'd like everyone to let Megu clean up with everyone. I'll help out too...!」

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at me.

「Here, I'll take it...Megu」

「...Un!」

Everyone hold the tools and return to the clubroom.  
Then we make two roundtrips...

「Thank you, Yoshida-kun...we'll take care of it inside later」

「The girl's clubroom forbids boys...you can't come in!」

Un...so this is as far as I can do?

「Then...I'll wait outside」

「Un...we'll return Yamamine-san as soon as possible so please lend her to us now!」

The girl's members laugh.

「Or rather...shouldn't Yoshida-kun enter a club?」

「I mean you can be the manager of the girl's track and field team」

「To be honest...we need a boy to carry our luggage!」

From that voice...Captain Takeshiba looks out of the clubroom.

「Don't say ridiculous things! Didn't I always say that preparing and cleaning up are always a part of the training? Also, keeping things in order is also one of the basics of martial arts」

As expected of Captain Takeshiba who speaks『Athletics is martial arts』...

「S-Sorry」

「...Well, that's fine. You can just leave the tools in front of the clubroom. Either way, we'll be using it on after school practice. Go and take shower right away!」

「Y-Yes!」

「Don't daze off! Our motto is both literary and martial arts!」

「Got it!」

「Hey, faster little girls!」

「Excuse us!」

The first years bring their change of clothes and head to the shower room.

「...I'll finish quickly」

「Un」

Megu goes with everyone...

...I'm glad.

For the time being, it seems that it's going well with the girls in the track and field team...

「But still...you really are a diligent guy」

Captain Takeshiba told me.

「Diligent?...Me?」

「Yeah...normal boys won't do that. I was the one who told you to come at the end of morning practice but I didn't think that you'd help out in cleaning up」

「Well...I want Megu to get along with the other girls...also」

I look at Megu's back going away.

「If the girls always try to be considerate...Megu would feel sorry. She's not mentally strong...」

She'd be grateful being taken care of but...

Megu's heart would become heavy from placing burden on other members.

Also...the members aren't all Megu's ally.

Even now...there are first years who doesn't talk to Megu and I.

...Reality is like that.

If so...if Megu is treated as special, it has a possibility of it becoming a problem later.

Therefore...I helped cleaning up.

I also made Megu work with everyone until the end.

We have to remove the seed of the problem bit by bit...

For Megu's sake...

「...You really are caring. Don't you think that's bothersome/」

Takeshiba-senpai asked me with a smile.

「Eh...what is?」

I don't get it.

「You see...normal boys, when he enters a lovers relationship, doesn't he just watch the girls' butt and chest? Getting pampered by women to fulfil their own desire...there's a lot of them who doesn't think about the women's feelings at all, right?」

...Err

「Sorry...I don't know about other men...」

「You...is Yamamine the first girl you dated?」

...That is

Yukino's my first sex...

...Un

The first『lovers』relationship is Megu, right

Misuzu, our relationship began with『Master and pet』...

「Yes...Megu's my first」

「Then...you're too calm」

「...Is that so?」

「Yeah...you've got too much guts. It's not like a first year student」

「...Sorry」

「Idiot, I'm praising you...!」

Takeshiba-senpai said with a smile

「I want to be『family』with megu」

「...huh?」

「I just remembered it when Takeshiba-senpai mentioned it but...family is a bother isn't it? It's normal that they're troublesome...!」

...Inside my mind.

...A nostalgic memory comes back.,

「You see...I was brought up by my grandmother. Since I was a child. It's been a while since she passed away...」

I remember grandmother's small and curved back.

「My parents were busy...or rather, they're not interested in me at all... Then, my mother is a woman who doesn't do any housework at all so the whole house is being done by grandma. Everyday, she looks so troubled...and yet, grandma is always worried about me」

...That's right.

...Grandma is always.

「『Do you have a handkerchief?』or『Watch out for the cars outside』or during my birthdays, she buys a small cake and we celebrate with the two of us...she's really kind to me」

Even though she was oppressed by mother so much...  
She's always worrying about me and kindly looked after me.

「At that time...only my grandma was the one really kind to me... Then...when I was in first grade in elementary...I asked Grandma」

「...What?」

「『Grandma, why are you so kind to me? Isn't it troublesome to look after me? Aren't I just bothering grandma?』I asked...!」

...I

「I thought that I'm just being a burden to my grandma. If I didn't exist then grandma might be happier, I thought. That's why I asked told grandma. 『I'm

fine even if you don't worry about me that much. I can manage somehow by myself. Grandma should take care of herself more』I said.』

I was really a brat.

「Then...what did your grandma say?」

「Grandma said...『It's obvious that kinds are troublesome. That's why you don't have to mind it and trouble grandma a lot. It's grandma's job to look after you and be troubled, there's no need to worry about it...』

「...Is that so?」

「Yes...then, grandma died not long after that. But, I remember what she said. That's why...!」

That's right.

...I

「Isn't it obvious that you worry and look after your『family』?...! It's natural that it's troublesome. But, if you are suffering or in trouble...you have to help, it's『family』after all...!」

I think so.

「So Yamamine's already your『family』?」

「...Yes」

I answered Takeshiba-senpai clearly.

「I see...then take care of her in the future」

「No, I'm the one who should ask that」

I bow my head to Takeshiba-senpai...

「Un. Leave her to me during club activities...But」

Takeshiba-senpai laughs.

「...What is it?」

「Well you see...your helpfulness is really like a grandmother」

「...Eh?」

「I now get it why you're unwavered...!」

Senpai said grinning...

「...Yoshi-kuun~」

Megu who took a shower quickly and put on her uniform runs towards us.

「Hey...your princess came back. Go and meet her」

Captain Takeshiba pats my back.

「Yes!」

I run and pick up Megu...

「You see, Yoshi-kun! Everyone was kind to me! Captain, the other girls, everyone...!」

Shirasaka Sousuke's illegitimate child, Megu.

She's not telling anyone but she must be having a lot of things she's thinking inside...

Her hate towards Shirasaka Sousuke...and the desire to destroy Shirasaka at the same time...

As a daughter of a Shirasaka...there was always the fear that she'd be punished in public...

Therefore...her『dependence』towards me is rising.

Megu takes refuge in her mind...

「I'm glad...everyone's kind」

「Un...everyone's kind...I'm glad that they're all kind!」

Megu spills tears in my chest.

I'm really glad that the track and field team accepted Megu as usual.

...But

We're going to class after this and attend a lesson.

The people in class...

How will they accept Megu...?

I don't know for now.

---

## 199. The class people

---

「I'm weak aren't I?」

Megu said looking down...

The two of us head to the school building...

The other first years from the track and field are taking a distance from us.

「Until quite recently...I thought that I would be made prostitute through Shirasaka-san's order... I thought that I have to give up my high school days...!」

...Right.

Shirasaka Sousuke left『Kuromori』and was about to set up his own prostitution ring.

Then...he planned to make Megu one of his prostitutes...

When Golden Week was over...Megu was supposed to be taken away from Yamamine house.

「And yet...I met Yoshi-kun, met Minaho-san again...I felt happy that I got my emotions loosened...I'm no good」

...Megu

「I myself know it...I'm relying on Yoshi-kun too much. Yoshi-kun is by my side so I can still head to the classroom now. Actually...my heart is throbbing」

Everyone in the class knows that Megu is Yukino's relative.  
Shirasaka Sousuke's blood relative.

「What should I do?...I might become a girl that can't live without Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu holds my hand tightly.

...I

「It's fine...I'll protect you. I'll beat up those who say anything strange about

Megu...!」

But...Megu

「Don't do that...Yoshi-kun, that's not the case...!」

Megu's sorrowed eyes look at me...

「Then that would just make me useless」

...Megu?

「I don't want to be protected by Yoshi-kun. I didn't like Yoshi-kun from that...!」

「...What do you mean?」

「I want to be the girl that stands beside Yoshi-kun. When I heard about Yoshi-kun's story at the mansion...I thought I want to stay by Yoshi-kun's side. And yet...!」

Megu looks down again.

「Before I noticed, I've been depending on Yoshi-kun...relying on Minaho-san... I've been relying on my Yamamine parents...everyone in the club...and captain Takeshiba... I shiver from my own weak self right now...what a miserable girl I am...!」

Megu's hand is trembling.

「I really get fed up with my own self. During the club activities, my head calmed down and I felt startled. Ever since yesterday...I've been relying too much on Yoshi-kun...」

Right now, yesterday is in Megu's head...  
Especially, she remembers the sex we had this early morning.  
Megu was strange for certain.  
She was drowning with her sex with me.  
All of this are just to escape the reality that she's a daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke...!

「...I want to become stronger」

Megu mutters.

...I



What should I say at these times?

...To this girl.

...This treasured『woman』

「...I thought of this but...」

Words spill out of my mouth by themselves.

「Getting strong...isn't that troublesome for the body? You have to work hard and spend time training...!」

What am I saying?

「But...in case of your mind. To strengthen your mind...」

「...What should I do?」

Megu looks at me.

「...You just need courage」

I beat my chest.

「...As long as you have courage then you should be able to overcome most things...your mind can be stronger with just courage alone」

「...Un」

Megu pats her own chest.

「You're right...it's courage」

I'm glad.

Megu's expression calmed down.

「Also... I've been thinking about this since long ago. No matter how painful something is...it'll end someday」

「...Eh?」

「I also experienced various things but I managed somehow. No matter what hardships, sorrow...there's definitely a time where it would end. Everything will pass away. The night will surely come...!」

Megu laughs.

「Yoshi-kun...isn't that『the morning will surely come』?」

...I

「I hate mornings. Another harsh day would begin again. I'm always waiting for the night time. At night...I can lie down on that sofa in the dark room and I can be alone... At that time, I was always waiting for the『night』everyday...!」

...When I returned from my dorm life in middle school.

My parents divorced before I noticed...

My father disappeared...

My gentle grandma died long ago...

I've always been alone in that house.

The darkness at night was my only refugee.

If I sleep... I forget everything...

「I've been enduring until night came, every day, until last week...」

Even though it's just a while ago...

I completely forgot about it...

...I'm also no good.

「I've been depending on everyone. Everyone has been together with me so it has become natural before I knew it...I completely depended on everyone. It's not just Megu. I'm also miserable」

Un...I must not forget the loneliness in that darkness.

I must not forget my gratitude to Minaho-neesan for scooping me out of there.

Those by my side...everyone in『Kuromori』too...

「Yoshi-kun, you're not depending at all...because, Yoshi-kun's been doing his best. You always do your best for all of our sake...!」

Megu grabs my arm.

She leans her body...

「Also...well」

I answer.

「Everyone has expectations on me so I have to do my best. I want to be useful to everyone」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「I've always been an unwanted child」

「...Unwanted?」

「Un...for my parents, I was a『childbirth regret』」

I was born so my parents can't divorce...  
...For the sake of appearances.

「Therefore...after grandma died, I've lived carefully so that my parents won't see me」

...I hold my breath.

「Therefore...I'm glad. Minaho-neesan gives me instructions...I can do something for Megu and Mana. Recently...I understand Katsuko-nee's feelings」  
「...Katsuko-neesan?」

「...Un...Katsuko-nee makes delicious meals for us...I think she's happy that she affects people like that. I think it's very blissful to see someone who eats your bread and show a face that it's『delicious』...」

Relationship with others...gives an effect...  
As long as the effect is positive towards the other...  
Then there's nothing happier than that...

「Even I am the same...Megu, Misuzu, Mana...sometimes Nei-san too...when you show a gloomy or afraid face...when I touch you...then make your heart calm even a bit, it makes me happy」

「...What about Katsuko-neesan and Nagisa-neesan?」

「Those two are adults so they will be the one to come when they really needed me...」

That's why...I'm not that worried.

「When they really feel uneasy, then they will send an SOS signal properly. I understand that they will」

「...Right. Katsuko-neesan and Nagisa-neesan are adults」

Megu looks down again.

「...Yoshi-kun, sorry」

...Megu?

「...I was very childish」

Then...she looks at me.

「I never thought about Yoshi-kun at all...! I've been looking at myself all this time...sorry!」

「W-What are you saying?」

I don't know why Megu's apologizing at all.

「Even though I promised to be a good wife...!」

I clench Megu's hand.

「Let's just take it easy...let's grow up little by little, every day. I will do so too」  
「...Yoshi-kun」

「I don't know a lot about people other than me...I won't notice it. No, I don't understand even myself, when it comes to it, I don't understand at all...!」

That is the sort of feeling I have.

I was alone every night in that darkness...

There was only myself there...

I don't understand the situation around myself.

「I want to know about Megu more. Misuzu, Mana, Nei-san...Katsuko-nee, Nagisa too...Margo-san and Minaho-neesan...and even Michi...!」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「I...I think that I don't understand everyone at all」

「...That's not true.」

「No, that is. Because, I discover something new everyday. When I see what its in the mind that I've never seen until now...『Oh, I didn't understand』I reflect myself multiple times...!」

Perhaps...human heart is a polyhedron.

When you look at it from the side it's square...when you look from above then it's round.

But...it doesn't contradict itself.

It certainly exists as one『human heart』

Therefore...you have to look at it from various angles.

「『I know everything about that one』or『I know all』at the moment you think of that, you feel you're going to fall to a pitfall... Therefore...you must not stop making effort to know」

「...Yoshi-kun」

「Then...when you think that you understand the other...you must get to the core of it...with courage」

I knock my chest.

「Therefore...I won't stop making efforts to understand Megu...」

...Megu

At first...the kind and trustworthy class chairman in front of me.

But...I found the sadness and sorrow concealed deep in her heart...

And yet, Megu who scolds the unstable Mana severely is also her.

On the other hand...the weak Megu who depends on me is also Megu.

Megu doesn't have a perverted constitution like Yukino.

Sex for Megu is to monopolize me, to escape from reality...a defense mechanism of her mind.

Even now...

The various sides of Megu...I see it bit by bit...

I understand Megu bit by bit...

「But...I think Yoshi-kun will hate me if he comes to know me. I'm a girl with a dirty heart」

「...That's not true」

I immediately denied it

「The more I understand about Megu the more I'll come to like you」

That's right...I

「That's why I will get to the core of Megu a gain and again. With courage. I want to really understand Megu...!

Megu and I look at each other.,

Megu's eyes reflects my face.

Un...I

I'm having a refreshed face...

There's no hesitation in my mind...

「Yoshi-kun...I love you」

Megu mutters.

「Thank you...it's my first time to understand the meaning of『I love you』...!」

...Megu?

「I will also make an effort to know about Yoshi-kun. I'll make an effort throughout my life. Have courage to get to the core...!」

Megu brings her face to my chest...

「I love you...I really do, Yoshi-kun...!」



Entering the school building...there are those who whisper when they see Megu.

As expected...it's exposed that Megu's a relative of Shirasaka family.

But still...there are no students at the entrance who came to speak with us.

They just look from the distance.

But still...it's not pleasant that they cast a rude gaze on other people.

「Yoshi-kun...let's go」

Megu pulls my hand.

「...I'll be fine」

「Un」

The two of us walk in the corridor dignified and head to the classroom  
...But

There's a crowd of people before our classroom.

「...Oh, it's them」

「Eh, that's Shirasaka's daughter」

「No, just a relative」

I see...they heard that there's a daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke in this classroom...

The spectators gathered from the school...

「But still, that's amazing...it's multiple rape in Australia isn't it?」

「He's a national disgrace」

「Rather than that, I heard that he's a genojin eater」

「Somehow, it's said that he did it with a certain idol unit」

「...48 of them?」

「No...it was all members wasn't it?」

「Indeed a sex monster」

「The girl that was kidnapped and killed, so pitiful」

「Even though she was so small...she can't meet her mother can she?」

「That's horrible」

「Or rather, the fire yesterday was amazing isn't it?...they did that to destroy the evidence, right?!」

「As expected of Shirasaka Group」

「I'd like Sakamori to quit as the owner of the baseball team. His relative is a criminal」

「He'll resign you know?...That press conference was a huge failure isn't it?」

「Or rather...isn't Shirasaka house's newspaper and tv station in a bad spot?」

「Yeah...that one's strange too. They've been defending Shirasaka Sousuke all the time...」

「It seems that there are some protests in front of the television station」

「Right right, the talents who were protecting Shirasaka Sousuke in their program are listed over the internet」

「Isn't that『violation of privacy』?...are they idiots?」

「Un...Shirasaka family vs the world」

「I saw it on the net too...a talent is protecting him, they're mostly from the same office」

「Is that also connected to Shirasaka?」

「Idiot, Shirasaka Sousuke himself is the director of an advertising agency...there's no way it's not」

「The darkness of the mass media and advertising agency should be revealed...!」

Minaho-neesan's『revenge』device is amazing.

She divide the time and expose Shirasaka Sousuke's evildoings from various aspects...it's filled with momentum now.

Ever since last night, the faces of the man named Shirasaka Sousuke is revealed one by one

There are some who are interested in the case in Australia...

There are some who are reacting only to the entertainment world scandal.

There are some who are strongly interested in the kidnapping and murder of a

girl...

It's only people who have antipathy and criticism against the name『Shirasaka house』...

...But

As a result, everyone's interested in news.

The image of『sex criminal, Shirasaka Sousuke』is penetrating at a national level...

「...Sorry, please let us through」

I push aside the spectators and enter the classroom with Megu.

「Hmm, she doesn't look like Shirasaka Sousuke from the TV」

「Isn't that obvious? She's just a relative」

「But...don't you think she's cute?」

「Or rather, what's with the man sticking to her?」

「Well...could it be that he's her boyfriend?」

...Oh, the spectators are noisy

「...G-Good morning」

As soon as we enter the classroom...the classmates gazes gathered to us.  
The bell is about to come...

Most of the students are gathered already.

Everyone of them doesn't greet Megu.

「Hey...Megu」

I try to protect Megu and take her to her seat...

...Then

「Hey hey...Yamamine-san」

One of the delinquent schoolgirl talks to Megu with a scornful look.

「...What?」

Megu...turned to that girl while feeling nervous.

「Could it be that you were also raped by Shirasaka Sousuke?!」

The spectators outside the classroom rushes up!



「...There's no way that's the case」

Megu answered with a sad face.

「Well look...according to the TV report, Shirasaka Sousuke is a lolicon isn't he? Then I just thought that Yamamine-san who's a relative was also attacked?」

「That's right...Yamamine-san, are you a virgin?!」

The delinquent got cocky and the others spoke horribly towards Megu.  
...I

「Megu was virgin until she did it with me...!」

I told the delinquents clearly.  
The spectators make noise again.

「...W-What the hell!?」

「Those two had sex?!」

The delinquents still clings.

「Could it be that you're just being fooled by Yamamine-san? It's easy to pretend to be a virgin so it's easy to fool naive boys!」

「Yoshida, weren't you a virgin too?」

The two delinquents are laughing.

「Sadly...Megu's my fifth」

The delinquent's laughter stops...  
Or rather...the whole classroom and even the spectators on the hallway turned silent.

「When I took Megu's virginity, I saw her hymen properly...there's even blood too. I was really glad...」

When it comes to this...I have no choice but to say it clearly.

「Megu's my woman! Just because she's Shirasaka Sousuke's relative, Megu herself has nothing to do with it! Stop bullshitting me you all!」

The anger bursts out from inside me!  
So I'm a human that explodes from emotion this much.

「I'll beat up those who speak badly about Megu!」

...The delinquents  
Though they're scared...they speak to me.

「Hee...so you two fucked already」  
「R-Right...they're『engaged』so isn't that obvious that they will?」  
「Right...as expected, she's got a nympho blood!」

...These bitches!  
At the moment I tried to hit that girl...!  
Megu slapped that girl...!

「...Don't misjudge me!」

...Megu  
「I will bear this man's child...it's impossible now but in the future. I will marry him and become happy. That's why we're『engaged』」

Megu's words are powerful  
「We have sex...I want to serve him. I will do anything that pleases him...he's my husband!」

The girl that was slapped speaks.  
「What『engagement』you're in high school! Saying that he's your husband, are you an idiot?!」

Megu won't lose.  
「Even a high school student can decide with their lives already. I will live with him for my lifetime. That's what I decided. I swore. You don't know my vow but we're connected. I'm happy...!」

...Megu!  
「...There are people who become professional athletes at their first year in high school. There are a lot of people who chose their own lives. I chose to marry him! My heart is...already Yoshida Megumi!」

Megu declared strongly.  
I...

「What you think doesn't matter. If you want to laugh then do it. But, I will

protect MEgu. I will protect my『family』for the rest of my life. That's what I decided...!」

Inside the classroom that fell silent...  
One boy stands up...  
That is Tanaka.  
He's my classmate with a big-bro personality.

「Could you tell me one thing?」

Tanaka speaks out in a loud voice so the spectators outside could hear.

「Just how much of a relative is Shirasaka Sousuke's house...and Yamamine-san's house?」

...I

「Megu...the relationship of Shirasaka house and Yamamine house...?!」

I asked on purpose.  
If it's Shiraska Sousuke and Megu...then he's a blood related father and daughter...  
If it's Shirasaka house and Yamamine house...

「The second wife of the founder of the newspaper company from Shirasaka family married Yamamine house...that's the relationship」

Shirasaka newspaper company is developed after war.  
That history isn't so old.

「The founder's second wife?...That's the only relationship? Is there anyone else from Yamamine family who married into Shirasaka?」

Tanaka asks on purpose.

「None...The people in Shiraska house today are all the ex-wives' children. The second wife from Yamamine house didn't have children...」

Megu answered.

「Even if we're called relatives...we're not that close. They take care of the employment but...people from Shirasaka house never let anyone from Yamamine join their newspaper company...」

Tanaka speaks in a loud voice.

「Whaat!! Then, that's meaningless! Isn't Yamamine-san totally unrelated!」

Tanaka's voice spreads to the classroom and the corridor.

「Uhm...」

One girl in the class opened her mouth.

「I've been in with Megumi-chan in middle school...I've gone to play Megumi-chan's house a long time ago...」

That girl speaks while looking down.

「Megumi-chan's house is a sorry...ragged house It can't be compared to the Shirasaka house that was on screen last night...they seem to be poor」

The『poor』expression dissolves the air in the classroom.

「That's right, Yamamine-san's poor! That's why...she wants to marry Yoshida sooner and build a happy family with the two of them...that's why she's『engaged』with Yoshida! She's a poor and a girl who experienced hardships so it can't be helped」

Tanaka speaks absurd things selfishly.

But...everyone got convinced by that remark...

「I see...Yamamine-san, so that's the case」

「Speaking of which...Yoshida's working part-time...」

「Or rather, Yoshida-kun looks very poor too!」

「When you go out with a poor one...it's normal that you'd want to marry?」

「But, do contraception...poor and getting many children is the worst pattern」

「Yoshida-kun's doing his best, doesn't he?」

...Err

Is this okay?

The image of us being『poor』is totally stuck with us but...

「Speaking of which...Yamamine-san is Shirasaka-san's relative but...she was never called to Shirasaka house to eat a meal...」

「Yes...that's right」

Megu answered.

...Err

True...she haven't eaten in Yukino's house...

We had sex though...

「Or rather...the matter with Shirasaka Sousuke in the TV is completely unrelated to Yamamine-san. Everyone, you can go back now!」

Tanaka...ends the talk.

「Sorry...Yamamine-san」

「Right...there's no way Yamamine-san's related to such a bad family right?」

「I will explain to the people in the club too」

「Un...we're the one who knows what kind of person Yamamine-chan is」

When it comes to this...Megu who's usually kind to everyone...

The schoolgirls accepted her easily.

The delinquents are still in bad mood, but...

Megu's accepted by the other girls, they're not stupid enough to cross that...

I feel a bit relieved.

「That's right...Yamamine-san is different from Shirasaka-san...!」

Hearing that girl's word...I got startled.

Even Megu's relatives attracted this much attention...

...Then.

Shirasaka Sousuke's true daughter...

What will happen if Yukino comes here?

「Speaking of which...Shirasaka-san's not here yet?」

「There's no way she'll come...her father's a criminal you know?」

「Right...normally you won't come」

...That's when...

「...Hey, she came!」

A voice comes from the corridor...

「Eh, her...?!」

「...Somehow, isn't she plain?」

The spectators said.

Yukino's plain?

「...The bell's about to ring. Go back to your classrooms」

...Minaho-neesan's voice?

「Hey...let us through!」

Minaho-neesan appears from the spectators.

Behind her is Yukino...

Yukino is...

---

## 200. Endou-kun's judgement

---

Yukino appears behind Minaho-neesan...

...Err

I torn down the uniform Yukino's wearing until yesterday...

What she's wearing right now is what Mana brought out of her room...a spare uniform.

Yukino's...wearing that uniform『normally』

No...it's different from『normal』

Our high school girls are...except for some super serious girls...

They've devised how to wear their uniforms.

They try to roll up their skirt at their waist to shorten it...

They try to open a button on the blouse...

It's the so-called...high school girl feel clothes in Japan.

Yukino was the same.

...Until yesterday

「...The hell is that?」

「...Hey hey, what does this mean?」

The classroom turned noisy...

Well of course...

Yukino right now is just like a super-serious high school...

She's wearing the school uniform perfectly according to the『school regulations』...

Just like how the illustration on the student handbook look like...

The correct length of the skirt is unstylish.

Her blouse is buttoned up to the top.

...And.

Her hair is separated in braids.

There's no ribbon but a black rubber hair clip.

From the center of her forehead to her head...her hair is divided into two perfect parts.

Then...an old style nerdy silver rimmed glasses...

Yukino...your eyesight isn't bad, is it?

Anyway...

Yukino was toned down to a quiet girl by her dress...

...Amazing.

Doing that far...Yukino who's a well-known beauty looks like a plain girl.

「...What, is it that woman?!」

「...Shameful」

From outside the corridor...statements from the spectators who don't know about Yukino pops out.

「...It's not, you idiot」

「Yes...if I recall, she's a girl with good looks」

The first year from the class next door who has seen Yukino told the senior.

「Ah...what do you mean?」

「...She came looking like that on purpose」

「...Why?」

「Well...if she pretends to be a serious child then you won't be coming for her would you?」

「Like I said, why?!」

「Well you see...her house is surrounded by the press! When she's captured then she'll have an impression that she's good」

The spectators were convinced by that explanation.

「Wow...that's the worst」

「That girl usually mess around normally?」

「Well...her dad's in an advertising agency」

「She probably hangs around the clubs and mess around?」

「Couldn't she have fucked with a model boy?」

「She's Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter after all...!」

「That girl's father gather's girls in his house and have a party, doesn't he?」

「That girl's definitely participating there...!」



「Un un...she's definitely『selling』」

「Yeah...if I recall, she has that face」

「Well...she came to the school on that look on purpose...!」

「...Camouflage?」

「That's stupid...does she think we would sympathize with her by wearing that dress?」

「Why are you going to sympathize with Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter...!」

「Well...『I didn't know that my Papa did something bad. Boohoo!』she tries to gloss it over?」

「Can't be fooled like that」

「That's obvious...that's just bullshit」

The spectators on the corridor heats up on their own...

「Oh right...let's take photos!」

「Ooh...let's upload it on the net!」

The boys take out their phone and capture Yukino's image.

「Ah...me too」

「Right...you can't take photos of a criminal's daughter that easily」

「He's the most famous criminal in Japan right now...Shirasaka Sousuke」

The phones give out a shutter sounds.

...Yukino.

She remains standing next to Minaho-neesan all this time...

She's enduring as she's exposed to the harsh sounds of shutter from the corridor.

「...It's about time」

Minaho-neesan looked up at the clock in the classroom.

Then...

The homeroom chime rings.

...Kinkon! Kinkon!

「Okay...everyone, go back to your classrooms...!」

Minaho-neesan told the spectators.

「...But, Sensei」

The somewhat excited senior tells Minaho-neesan...

「...Hurry up」

Minaho-neesan...gave that one a cold gaze.

「U-Understood」

「...Hey, let's go」

「Right...for the time being, we saw her come to the school」

「Let's come back later」

「Un...we also took photos」

「I'll come back to take photos later...when I upload this to net in real time it'll become a『festival』for sure!」

「Ah, that's good...!」

While speaking selfishly...

The spectators disband in the corridor.

...Then

「Okay...good morning everyone」

Minaho-neesan greeted morning with her usual expressionless face.  
Yukino's standing beside Minaho-neesan while having a gloomy face.  
She's not going to her seat.

...The class is confused.

Even though it's just been a month since the entrance ceremony...

Yukino's a classmate.

She's a classmate they saw everyday.

For Yukino to appear with such a『serious girl』look

Everyone would be confused.

Or rather...the air says「What's this?」...

「First, Shirasaka-san has something to say to everyone」

Cued by Minaho-neesan, Yukino bows her head...

「...I'm sorry for my father causing a fuss on the society」

Ah...she's being made to say that.

It's not the words she want to say...

From that speech...it was transmitted.

At that moment...the people in the class felt something『out of place』from Yukino...

It turned to『antipathy』immediately...

「Okay, Shirasaka-san, take a seat...」

Yukino goes to her seat.

A cold gaze attacks Yukino.

「...We'll begin our attendance」

Minaho-neesan confirms the attendance while looking at the list.

When she's at Endou, she stopped...

「...My, Endou-kun's absent?」

His seat is empty.

「Sensei...Endou-kun's bag is here」

The student next to his seat reported.

「Uhm...he came to the baseball club this morning but...Endou was banished...」

The baseball club student explained the story this morning.

「Then...perhaps, it got to his head and he went somewhere?」

The baseball club member only knows that Endou was taken away by the two seniors.

Afterwards...Endou was beaten up by those delinquent baseball club members, then Iwakura-kaichou took the destroyed Endou to the gym...Minaho-neesan and I are the only one who knows here., 「Speaking of which...Endou-kun's house is in bad state too. Yesterday, the fuss was about Shirasaka-san's father's news so the report about it became small」

Minaho-neesan said filled with sarcasm.

「Eh...what?」

「I didn't know」

The small voices flutter in the classroom...  
Oh, it's because the matter about Shirasaka Sousuke was greatly reported...  
There's a lot of students who didn't know

「Endou-kun's councilor uncle...he seems to be arrested for bribery」

Minaho-neesan said calmly.

「...Bribery?」

「...What's that?」

The boys asked Minaho-neesan...

「It's taking bribe for convenience...simply put, they apply pressure in the market to make it convenient to those who flush out funds. Then, it seems that Endou's father was also one of the briber...it seems that he's one of the people who handed money behind the scenes」

「...Oh, speaking of which, Endou's father's company got a lot of work from the city, didn't he?」

「Eh...so they give money to the uncle and take the work?」

「That's how it is I guess」

「...What happens now that it's exposed?」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「NOrmally...they will resign from the Diet before he's arrested by the police... If you're in the congress, then you'll be blamed thoroughly by the other lawmakers. It seems that he'll be driven out by the political party he belongs to...well, it's impossible to come back as a politician.」

「Eh, so Endou's proud skill『My uncle's a—』won't work anymore?」

「That's how it is...nobody would take you in if you have a criminal record you know? If he can't get a party take him then the next election would be hard...」

「Won't it be harsh for Endou's father's company to not have a work on the city?」

「Right...they might go bankrupt」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「...Sensei, that's not something to laugh about!」

A serious girl opposed Minaho-neesan.

「My, it's funny you know...don't you remember what Endou-kun told me yesterday?」

...Right.

Endou did the『My uncle is a city councilor』against Minaho-neesan, in front of everyone.

「Well...that's a lot of change for one day. I wonder if that's how the French Revolution felt...right, Shirasaka-san?」

Right...Endou picked a fight with Minaho-neesan yesterday and Yukino's house was exposed to the class.

Shirasaka house...owning a major newspaper company...

Yesterday, she picked that topic on purpose to elevate things up...

Those in my class and others...they got more interested in the news about Shirasaka Sousuke.

Yukino no longer has a place to go to.

「By the way...what about Endou being expelled from the baseball club during this morning practice?」

One of the male student asked the baseball club member.

「Oh right...you guys don't know」

Yesterday, after the physical examination, there are those who returned home immediately so they don't know what happened during the practice match.

「Yesterday...we had a『practice game』with a baseball club from other school」  
「Oh, Endou mentioned that」

「Then...that Endou bastard, while in the middle of the game, he did the『Wait till my Uncle hear about this』in front of the other schools and the principal...!」

「...Could it be that he's crazy?」

「But still...he said that he'll cut off the baseball club's coach with the power of his uncle」

「Eh...Why?」

「No...he's totally useless so the coach asked for a substitution...then he suddenly snapped!」

「Un...I saw that too. 『Why am I getting replaced?!』he shouts...then screams『I'll

get you coach and director fired』』

「Then...he went home without permission while in the middle of the game」

「That's just horrible」

「Or rather...is he some country's dictator?」

「Or rather...there's a limit on being stupid」

「Inside his brain, his uncle councilor is a『great leader』」

「But...you know it normally. The city council member doesn't have the authority to dismiss director or a coach in a private high school's baseball club」

「Well you see...it's Endou」

「He's an abysmal idiot...」

「Also...his councilor uncle has lost his position...」

「He can't use his father's money too...」

「Ah...Endou」

「Un...he's checkmate」

On Endou's seat where nobody's seating right now.

「Well fine...if someone sees Endou-kun, tell him to come to the faculty office」

Minaho-neesan said with a smile.

「The principal's calling him...Endou-kun's going to have an indefinite suspension」

「Eh, why...Sensei?!」

「Idiot, he just did that in front of other school's baseball club! He's a shame in the school!」

「It was in front of the principal too...!」

「Or rather...Endou seems to be quitting school」

The baseball club member tells everyone.

「...Eh, no way?」

「Earlier, when Captain Ataka told him『You're removed from the baseball club』 he snapped...then he told us that he'll transfer to another school, enter the baseball club there and make us regret...!」

「...Hoo?」

「Is that even possible?」

「Well, 『the possibility is on a particle leve』I guess?」

「Un...he caused trouble to another high school...I don't think that he'll be able to enter a school or a club in such a halved time...!」

The apathetic air drifts in the classroom.

「What will happen to him?」

「...Shouldn't he just die?」

「No, even hell would be lukewarm for him...!」

「Un...I think he'll tell the demons in hell『My uncle is a city councilor』...」

「...I feel sorry for the demons」

「Can't win against an idiot right...?」

...Then, one of the student turned to me.

「Speaking of which...in the middle of the game...wasn't Yoshida doing a Hero Show behind the wire net?」

...Hero Show?

「Ah, I saw that! It looks like a small girl swings a chain and scythe...then a cool girl beat up some of the hoodlums?」

Michi and Margo-san?...

No, she was swinging a steel ball but there was no scythe A scythe.

「What was that? Yoshida and Yamamine-chan were there too...!」

...Err

...How should we explain this?

「Oh...that was people from the nearby college filming an indie movie」

Minaho-neesan said with a nonchalant face.

「...Indie movie?」

「It seems to be an action hero movie. It seems that it will be on a university's school festival. For the time being, the application to shoot came to our school」

Un...lying smoothly...

「Oh...but still, that was an amazing punch」

「I see...so there's no way that's an iron ball attack」

「But, that girl's a cutie isn't she?」

「Cute girls fighting that nasty makes you fire up, don't they?」

「I see...that might be a college level indie film」

...As expected of『Kudou style』

It's too much of a comical attack that you can't see it as a serious fight from a distance.

The guy who started the talk about said that it was a『Hero show』

They try to make that kind of impression...

Kudou papa's actions are surprisingly deep.

「Or rather...Yoshida」

The baseball club member looks at me.

「I thought that I just mistook you for someone but...last week, there was another beauty with you...」

...Awawa

Right...the baseball club...

Last week...they witnessed Misuzu and I kiss...!

「...My, what is it about?」

Megu talks to him.

「No...Yamamine-chan...you see...actually」

Is it okay to talk or not?

The baseball club member is confused...

「...You do know that Yoshi-kun and I are『engaged』...don't you?」

「...Yeah」

「I don't mind it at all...I'm completely fine with it...!」

Megu said then smiled at the baseball club member...

Those eyes are scary.

She's applying pressure.

「No, uhm...Yamamine-chan...it's nothing」

The baseball club member fell silent.

「Yoshi-kun and I were there because the college students came and



asked『We'll be recording a movie so please appear as a background character』  
That's all. The two girls are students from other schools who were scouted by  
the college students too. We completely got along...!』

Megu throws a lie smoothly.

It seems that Megu was able to escape the mental burden...she's gotten strong.  
As a member of『Kuromori』she's reinforcing Minaho-neesan's lies...

「Oh, so that's what happened...!』

The schoolgirl who came to see the game was convinced easily 「But...  
Shirasaka-san was there too, right?』

...Err

「That's right. Shirasaka-san was also called out by the college students...  
Everyone will take a meal there then the bad guys will attack...it's a story of two  
action heroines taking them out』

...That's amazing, Megu

She's doing well on making up lies on the spot.

「But...everyone rode the car together. Shirasaka-san rode together too』

Wow...this one was watching it closely.

「That's right...the movie's story goes to that extent. After that, we went to  
the town with the college student's car and we were treated hamburgers. That  
was a make up for the performance fee...right, Yoshi-kun!』

「...U-Un』

I just nodded.

「That's one meal saved for us!』

...Ah, Megu.

She intends to use the『poor』setting that was mentioned before...

For the students to accept us...

She judged that it's good to make them think that we are『poor』...

「Un...that was great. We were treated with the biggest burger available. It's  
my first time eating such a thing』

Or rather...I have never been to a hamburger shop.  
Anyway, let's just say what's suited.

「Hee...is that so?」

Okay, good...it seems that we're able to fool them somehow.

「Then...when Endou-kun comes, tell him. I'll ask everyone to take care of Shirasaka-san. She's having lots of hardships because of her father...!」

Minaho-neesan brings the talk to an end.

「Then...that's all for the homeroom. Have fun studying today...!」

Minaho-neesan comes out of the classroom with a cold smile.

Then...

Only the students remain in the classroom...

Usually, the classroom would get noisy immediately but...

The strange silence continues.

Everyone's paying attention to Yukino

「U-Uhm...Yoshiko...Yukari too...」

Yukino talks to the usual girls she's going along with

...But

Both of them didn't turn to Yukino.

「Hey, Endou-kun seems to be quitting school...what about you, Shirasaka-san?」

The delinquent that was trying to get to Megu and I...

She's now targeting Yukino.

「Are you going to stop too? Are you going to the same school as Endou-kun? You two are going out, aren't you...?!」

...Yukino

「...I don't know about him. I don't care about him anymore!」

「Hmm, could it be because of Endou-kun's uncle making an incident...?」

「It's not...I didn't know anything about him at all...!」

Yukino's just thinking about her own self until the end.

Herself...among all of the options she has...

The delinquent find fault on what she said.

「My...Endou-kun might think the same? Who would've thought that Yukino-san's father was a sex criminal...!」

Yukino lit up.

「My papa's not a sex offender!!!!」

「Huh?...He's not? I saw it on the internet. Your father is raping a former idol...!」

...Right

It's not just in the news.

There are a lot of videos over the internet.

「That's not my Papa! He's just someone who looks like him then forced to say that it's my Papa!」

「Is that so...still, that's strange? On the middle of the video...she said『S-Stop it Shirasaka-san!』」

「That's on 13:42, I saw it」

Another delinquent joins the war.

「『Stooooop, Shirasaka-saaan...don't cum insiiide!!』」

「But, Shirasaka-san's father came inside」

「That was an idol that was popular ten years ago wasn't she?」

「My brother was an old fan...that's why he's a bit depressed」

「...It was completely him」

「It's not just that girl...there's a video where he raped a five girl unit too.

Weren't those girls 14 years old at that time?」

「Ah, I saw that...they were wearing their costumes then they were raped in something like a waiting room」

「Those clothes were certain」

「Un...no doubt. I was a big fan since I was a child...」

「...Disappointed?」

「No...I got so aroused」

...A-As expected of the boys

Everyone jumped to the talk of the erotic videos flowing out...

「Seriously...there's a lot of inspection sites in the net. It's almost exposed which hotel they took the leaked video, and which studio's waiting room too」  
「Oh yeah...everyone's got some amazing investigation skills」  
「Then...the old man attacking in the video too...they knew that it was your father from the position of his mole」  
「Un...that's completely alike but that's a bit irrational」  
「Or rather...your father's dick is slightly distinctive」  
「Ah...it's bent to the right a bit」  
「Anyway...it's like a purple-black glans」

The delinquents attack Yukino all together...  
Having her father's penis criticized in the class...that would be unbearably hard for a 16 year old girl...

「Who cares about the idol videos!」  
A delinquent girl speaks in a loud voice.  
「I feel sorry for that kidnapped girl!」  
「...She was kidnapped and killed, wasn't she?」  
「The corpse come out from your villa!」

...Naomi-san  
...Minaho-neesan's sister

「That's just too cruel!」  
「That's right...too pitiful!」  
「That's absolutely unforgivable!」

The delinquent boys was participating the idol videos...  
When it was about Naomi-san...the serious schoolgirls protests.

「...You're wrong. That's not my Papa!」  
Yukino says that but...  
「Comparing the videos of the former idol...it was all the same person, it's exposed!」

The delinquent boy said coldly.

「Your father...is an advertising agency director and he comes out on TV

programs doesn't he? It was compared to the videos and photos he had at that time

「Un... That was Shirasaka's father...!」

The materials Minaho-neesan spread over the internet...  
The people over the internet are investigating it thoroughly...  
No matter how much Yukino denies it...  
The fact that Shirasaka Sousuke is a rapist, kidnapper, and a murderer can't be overwritten anymore.

「Your father's the worst scum」  
「A national disgrace!」  
「A demon...someone like that!」

...Yukino is...

---

## 201. Bullying...is not cool

---

「No! No! No! Everyone's just being fooled by her!!!」

Yukino can't finally bear it and snapped off.

「This is all a lie! That person plotted this...!」

That person...

That is...Yuzuki Minaho...

「Everyone, all of you are just being fooled!」

Yukino screams as she cry...

...But

「...Shirasaka-san, look at the reality」

「That's right...there's no way someone can fool all of Japan」

「Everyone's stating the facts apart from you and your television station」

「Even the internet...there's no lie that can go through」

The classmates' cold glance makes Yukino...

「It's not! That person...that person is...!」

...But

「You...think about it carefully」

「At first, your father was arrested by the Australian police, wasn't he?」

「Un...it's overseas」

「Next...the scandal in the entertainment world is discovered」

「Yeah...the videos of the idols from the past」

「After that...the hideout of your father suddenly flamed up」

「...That was a huge fire wasn't it?」

「Then...lastly, the kidnap-murder case of a 12 years old girl」

「There's rape too...the video was released too」

「Then...the body was found in your villa...!」

Starting three o'clock, to evening, until midnight...it flows without stop...

「There's no way this is a work of someone alone you know?」

Un...that's what you'd normally think

「That's right...at least the first incident in Australia is impossible」

「That was just him being caught in a bad moment by chance」

「Well of course...there's no way someone plotted for the Australian police to move」

「...It's a different country after all」

Well...we did

Minaho-neesan did...

This is the『revenge』Minaho-neesan has worked on for 12 years.

The villain image of Shirasaka Sousuke can no longer be broken.

「Well, even if it was an accident...Shirasaka Sousuke was arrested in Australia. Shirasaka Moritsugu's newspaper tries to hush the case and stir up a revolt」

「Un...that's what is said on the morning variety show too」

「The employees who resist control of Shirasaka family's newspaper company also seem to have blown the whistle too」

「No...they're in the entertainment business aren't they? Just because they were in the advertising agency, they were being badmouthed...」

「The internet speculates that the people from the entertainment world released the video of the video of their own idol being raped in their office...!」

「Also...there's the talk of hoodlums who can't endure their conscience and talked about assisting Shirasaka Sousuke on kidnapping, rape and murder...」

「Un...no matter how you think about it, there's a lot of people involved」

「...As the result of the arrest in Australia, those who had antipathy against Shirasaka Sousuke all stood up together...!」

「Yeah...there should be at least 30 people moving there...someone's writing it on the inspection site over the net...!」

「Either way...Shirasaka Moritsugu tried to cover up the event in Australia」

「That's definitely fishy...then suddenly the hideout was in flames」

「Shirasaka Sousuke's a lolicon pervert...it seems that he's been famous for

kidnapping girls and rape them since long ago」

「There's a lot of people who thought of the chance of accusing him」

「Or rather...Shirasaka house itself is being hated by the whole Japan...!」

Yukino barks

「It's not! It's completely wrong!」

For Yukino...the status of Shirasaka family is the root of her own identity...  
Having it denied...

It's the same as denying herself...

「This is all nonsense...everyone's saying nonsense...!」

Yukino shouts while in tears...!

「It's all that person's work! This happened because of that person's orders!」

The delinquent boy laughs at Yukino.

「...There's no way you know?」

「Or rather...who are you talking about?」

「The one who moved the Australian police...mass media...and even induce the behavior in the internet...」

「...The one who buried the body of the missing girl on the villa?」

...Yukino

「...That's right! It's that one!」

The class laughs out loud.

「Who is that one then?!」

「If there's that kind of person then isn't that a『God』...!」

「Hey, Shirasaka...if you're going to say that far, could you tell us who that is!」

「That's right...if there's someone like that in this world then could you tell us who that is?!」

The delinquents scowl at Yukino.

「...T-That's...!」

At the moment Yukino tried to speak...!

「...Hiiiiiii!!!」



Yukino's body twitched from the back!

「...Gyawawawawawaw! Gyaaaaaaa!!!」

Yukino holds her back and screams!

「...Guaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!」

I get it.

I saw this reaction from Michi's electric baton several times.

This is a shock from the stun gun.

Yukino's got a remote controlled stun gun attached to her back...

「Agyaaaa...agyagyagyagya!」

I don't know whether it's Minaho-neesan or Katsuko-nee...

When Yukino tries to talk about Minaho-neesan or me...at that moment, an intense electric shock would be sent to her back...!

Therefore...Yukino...

She followed Minaho-neesan forcing her to wear a modest style without complains.

She behaved herself in front of Minaho-neesan.

She was forced to apologize in front of everyone about her father.

No...she was made to wear a uniform following the school regulations on purpose...

So her body line can't be seen, hiding the electric shock item attached to her back...!

「Yukino...are you okay?」

Megu rushed to Yukino and raised her in her arms.

She's not worried about Yukino.

Megu quickly isolates Yukino to not let the other people know about the electric shock device., 「Hey...what's going on with her?」

The delinquent asks Megu.

「Yukino's like this since she was a child...when something doesn't go her way, she panics then her head flips」

Megu lied again.

「Ah, I've heard about it...Shirasaka-san's like that」

「Haa...she's panicking when she lose to reality!」

Megu's lie is easily accepted

「...Is she okay?」

「If we leave her for a while she'll heal...this is normal so don't mind her」

Megu declared.

「My house was treated like a slave by Shirasaka house so I've been forced to take care of Yukino since long ago」

Half of it is true and the later half is a lie.

But, since the half-truth feels factual...the class believes Megu's words.

「Right...since the entrance ceremony, Yamamine-chan's been anxious about Shirasaka-san all the time...!」

The schoolgirl's words reinforce Megu.

「It can't be helped...Shirasaka house is rich...and Yamamine's house is poor」

...The『poor』setting has become been fixed.

Well, not that I mind.

「It's really not something you need to go to the nurse office so don't worry... this is normal for her. Right, Yukino?」

Megu rubs Yukino's back.

No...she's touching the electric shock device hidden under the uniform...

If she does something then the electric shock like earlier would attack Yukino's body...

She's telling Yukino that.

Megu's also a member of『Kuromori』

「...T-That's right. I'm fine now」

Megu shakes off Megu's hand and tries to get up

But...her eyes are frightened

Her body's trembling.

「What's that...she's getting panic shocks, isn't that really bad?」

「You know it yourself don't you? Your Papa's a real criminal!」

「If it doesn't go your way you snap off?...just how much of a child are you!?!」

「...You're helpless」

The delinquents makes fool of Yukino.

「Really...you're a disappointment! Shirasaka-san!」

Yukino bites her lips, enduring it.

「Hey, what's the ruckus...the class has already started!」

The classroom door opened and the middle aged math teacher comes in  
At the same time...the chime rings.

「Get back to your seats...」

The temperature in the excited room cools down suddenly 「Okay...open your textbooks. Page 34! Start from the top right problem!」

Then...the class begins as usual



Somehow...the first hour ended.

Yukino's limped out.

During the class, Yukino's being harassed by the delinquents.

They throw eraser waste...

Kicking her chair from behind...

...Are you in grade school?

I'm a bit worried...

As soon as it's break time...Megu goes to my seat.

Then...she holds my hand tightly.

She's looking at me with an expression never letting me approach Yukino...

「Hey, they're here...it's her!」

「That's Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter?!」

The students from other classes and years come to see Yukino...  
They're looking at her curiously like a panda in a zoo.

「It's annoying that there's a lot of people in the hallway!」

The delinquent girl told Yukino sarcastically...

「Shirasaka-san...do you have anything to say to the people in the hallway?」  
「Or rather, do an interview or something!」  
「That's right, it's time for a Q&A!」  
「How does it feel knowing that your father's a perverted lolicon?」  
「Eh? Shirasaka knew it before?」  
「Or rather, could it be that Shirasaka has already done it with her father?」  
「Papa...stoooooop!! We're parent and chiiiiilllddd!!」  
「...Isn't that fine? Let's have fun Yukino!」

The delinquents laugh vulgarly.  
The normal students are looking at the situation with an unpleasant face...  
They're not complaining...  
Everyone hates Yukino...  
She endured the ten minutes of humiliation and...the next lesson begins...  
The second hour was chemistry.  
The chemistry teacher is a slightly deaf, old near retirement teacher...  
The bullying of Yukino continues from earlier.  
...Then, 15 minutes since the lesson has started.

「...Excuse me」

Suddenly...the classroom opens  
Minaho-neesan came in

「...What's wrong, Yuzuki-sensei?」

The old chemistry teacher asks Minaho-neesan...

「The principal has to talk with Shirasaka Yukino-san...!」

The delinquents are making a「It's here!」face 「Hey hey, Shirasaka, are you going to drop out?」  
「Well...you're a stain in the school right」  
「Bye bye, Yukino-san!」

Minaho-neesan speaks to Yukino.

「I don't know what business it is but anyway...she's called so please come」

Then...she looks at Megu.

「Yamamine-san too, please come with us」

...Megu

「Because, Yamamine-san is Shirasaka-san's relative, right?」

Megu's friends got angry from what Minaho-neesan said.

「Sensei...Yamamine-san has nothing to do with Shirasaka-san's house!」

「That's right, even if they're relatives...Megumi-chan's is not close with Shirasaka-san's house at all!」

The delinquent boys gets on it too!

「That's right! Yamamine-chan's house is『poor』you know!」

「They're『Poor』!」

Minaho-neesan calmly spoke with her usual cold eyes.

「I was just told by the principal to call them...if you want to say it then go directly to the principal」

With those words, Megu's friends are...

「...That's just cruel!」

「...Megumi did not do anything wrong!」

「...Don't go, Yamamine-san!」

Megu has friends who protest.

Yukino...doesn't have anyone like that...

「It's okay...I'll explain it to the principal properly...」

Megu smiled at her friends and stood up.

...I

「...Sensei, I'll go with Megu. Is that okay?」

I stand up too.

「I am Megu's...Yamamine Megumi's『fiance』 I'll explain it to the principal along with Megu...!」

Minaho-neesan smiled...

「Right...then, could you come too?」

...Un

This is fine isn't it...Minaho-neesan?

「Now, let's go...Yukino!」

Megu goes to Yukino's seat

...But

Yukino's not standing up

「I-I...」

She seems to be feeling anxiety and fear from being taken away from the classroom 「Hurry up and stand...the principal's waiting」

Minaho-neesan pressures Yukino with a cold smile.

「Yukino...if you stay here then you'll only be bullied by everyone」

Megu whispers to Yukino.

Then...she puts her hand to Yukino's back.

「...Let's go」

She pats the electric shock device with her fingers.

「G-Got it」

Yukino stands up from her seat...

Minaho-neesan asks the class.

「Speaking of which...did Endou-kun come back?」

Everyone shook their heads.

「Where did he go?...Endou-kun's called by the principal too it seems」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

Perhaps...Minaho-neesan is the only one who knows Endou's location...



「...Tormenting me this much...are you satisfied already?」

Yukino speaks to Minaho-neesan while walking in the hallway.

「No...it's far from satisfaction」

Minaho-neesan answered with a smile...

「You intend to do something further than this to me?」

Yukino's frightened

「I wonder?」

Minaho-neesan answered bluntly.

Going back at the principal's office...

Margo-san and Michi are there.

Michi's holding a red and thick whip...

「I think you can use that whip with the same feel as the steel ball. Kudou-san」

Margo-san said.

「...Yes」

Michi swings the red whip lightly...

But still, the tip of the whip cuts the air sharply.

「It's made of reinforced rubber if you seriously and expertly use it, the speed of the tip will exceed the speed of sound」

S-Seriously?

If you beat one with such a whip, the skin would split. Even bones may break.

「The attack range is narrower than the steel ball but those take too much time to make a second shot after one blow. If it's a whip, that won't be the case. You can attack anywhere immediately within the radius of 2.5m. That space is your absolute control area」

「...Yes!」

Michi swings the whip!

Right...left...

Shuba, shuba, the whip's tip hits the floor!

Dusts from the carpet of the principal's office scatter around...

「...This is good!」

The response seems to be confident.

Michi smiles.

「You know the weakness of the whip right?...That is it would never be stolen. If the opponent grabbed your whip then swings the tip constantly...you'd be in a position where you can't reach the enemy. If the enemy grabbed it and pull it, it would be disadvantageous for the small Kudou-san!」

「Yes...Master!」

Before I noticed...

Margo-san has ranked up to『master』of Michi.

「...I like this weapon. I will keep this」

Michi holds the whip with a full smile.

「I'll give that whip to you...」

Margo-san said.

「Is that true...Master?!」

「Un...I think that weapon better suits Kudou-san than me. I took it out from the warehouse thinking so」

Michi look at the whip with sparkling eyes.

「...Red Butte, I'll name you Red Butte!」

Michi said happily.

Margo-san...

「Then, try to get used with the feel of it and try various things...the hidden garage on the underground is wider so let's practice there. It seems that Minaho would be using this room...!」

「Yes...Master!」

「Go ahead, I will talk to Minaho first then I'll follow you」

「...Roger!」

Michi opens the hidden door to the lower floor...then she looks at me happily.

「...I'll definitely make use of this Red Butte」

「S-Sure...do your best」

I can say nothing but that.



Then...Michi politely bows to Minaho-neesan, glanced at Yukino with eyes of hatred...then went down the monitor room.

「...There's currently no abnormalities. Kudou-san's father is also watching...!」

Margo-san reports to Minaho-neesan.

「Kouzuki-sama's『challenge』is working right?...I don't think they would attack until tonight」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「...『Challenge』?」

When I asked, Margo-san...

「Look, using the hotel to wait for Viola.」

「Cesario Viola himself comes to Japan for his commitment to Nei but the other people are different」

...Different?

「Especially...Lorenzaccio Bandini, the manager of Viola's group. They came all the way to Japan so I think they want to promote their work and ability.」

「...Kouzuki『Kakka』would be the best target for that, won't he?」

...I see

Misuzu's grandfather who's a big-shot...has a lot of『enemies』

It's a big opportunity so they made contract with such people, assassinate Kouzuki-san and earn a lot of money...

In addition...they want to show off their ability to the underground community of Japan.

「Kouzuki-sama has moved on his own with that flow...」

「Well,『Kakka's』having fun being targeted by Viola」

「Therefore...at least, I don't think Viola would assault the school」

「It's not a hundred percent safe but...Mr. Viola doesn't want to lose his strength by doing something bad...」

「He only brought a few elites...」

「Cesario Viola would happily play the game『Kakka』has set up...he's that kind of man...!」

Then that's fine but.

「Therefore...we should process our worries as much as possible for now...」

Margo-san told me.

「Leave Kudou-san to me to let out her stress」

...Let out her stress?

「That girl joined us by Misuzu-san's instructions...she's not a member of『Kuromori』right? That's why she gathered a lot of stress staying overnight with an unknown group」

「Therefore...she was stricken hard by Yoshida-kun this morning」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Or rather...that girl's starting to『depend』on Yoshida-kun」

Eh...Margo-san?

「That girl told Yoshida-kun『Chose only Misuzu-sama』but...it's different in her heart」

「Yes...to be exact『Please choose Misuzu-sama and me』...!」

「She's a former『Misuzu-san LOVE』lesbian girl after all...」

...Does that mean?

「The lesbian who had no interest in boy...has inevitably gotten interested in Yoshida-kun」

「Earlier...she was being conscious of Yoshida-kun when she was swinging her whip」

「Un...that was cute」

...R-Right

「Well...anyway, I'll have her distract herself with some exercise. Also...that whip can be used. We need Kudou-san's power during confrontation with Viola...!」

「Right...if she's trying to be an escort then it's better to have a whip than a steel ball...」

「I'll instruct her so we can use her as we want」

「Please...Margo」

「Katsuko-san and Nei are watching over but...」

「Is it impossible for Nei to be alone?」

「I think she'll be fine...if something gets caught in the sensor then she's supposed to inform us through alarm」

「Then...could you ask Katsuko to come here?」

「Roger...Minaho」

Margo-san heads to the hidden door...

Then, she stopped...

「...Yoshida-kun, do your best」

Margo-san told me.

「I pray you make the right choice...!」

「Y-Yes」

I don't get it but...

Anyway, I made a reply

Margo-san disappeared beyond the hidden door then soon after Katsuko-nee comes to replace...

「Did you call for me, Ojou-sama?」

「Yes...Katsuko, remove the device from Yukino-san's back...!」

The remote controlled electric shock device pasted on her back...

「Yes...certainly」

Katsuko-nee goes towards Yukino.

「Let's see...please use the next room. I'm going to have a confidential talk with Yoshida-kun」

...next room?

「The broadcast room is next to the principal's office in case something emergency happened...」

...True, there's a small door on the wall.

「Though you can come in from the corridor...you can come in directly from the principal's office too」

...Right

「Then, Yukino-sama...shall we?」

Katsuko-nee said...

Yukino looks uneasy.

「Or would you rather have the stun gun with you all day long?」

Minaho-neesan said coldly.

「No...please remove it...peel it off」

「Then...let's go to that room」

Katsuko-nee takes Yukino to the next room...

Remaining in the principal's office is...Me, Minaho-neesan, and Megu.

「Now then...」

Minaho-neesan takes a seat on the principal's desk...

Then opens her laptop...

「It's about time you want to know what happened to Endou-kun, don't you?」

Right...where's Endou...?!

「This is the video 20 minutes ago...!」

Minaho-neesan turns the screen towards us...

---

## 202. Step 2

---

The video on the laptop...

It was a room inside the gym

I see Iwakura-kaichou...her two student council members who are her followers.

Then...another one.

Endou who fainted is rolling on a small bed.

No...it's different from normal bed?

The height is strangely low and it's obviously too small.

A person lying down barely makes it fit...

「You noticed?... That's a stretcher」

Minaho-neesan grins

「Stretcher?」

When I asked...

「it's a bed with a caster to carry a patient to the hospital...it's normally used on ambulance」

Oh...I see

「Furthermore...this one's a special product」

Minaho-neesan said...

In the screen...Endou's body and limbs are bound.

「That's a restraint to prevent the patient from acting violently while in the middle of an emergency transport...」

...Restraint?

Looking at it closely...it looks like a black leather belt

Endou got fixed to the stretcher by the two student council boys.

『There we go!』

In the monitor screen...Iwakura-kaichou takes out a headphones and googles with a characteristic shape.

『...I'll be showing you a wonderful dream』

Iwakura-kaichou puts on the headphones and googles on Endou...smiling meanly.

「This google has a monitor inside. 『Head Mounted Display』...it's a monitor that can display video directly to the eye. The headphones are also special... when you wear that, you can't hear the outside sound. In short...his vision and hearing is restricted that he can only perceive the video and sound we give...」

Minaho-neesan explained.

Restrained freedom...

Eyes...are forced to watch a video...

Ears...are only hearing specific sounds.

「This is referred to a 『brainwashing device』 used by cults in the past」

...Minaho-neesan?

「Could it be...are you 『brainwashing』 Endou?」

Minaho-neesan laughs from what I said.

「There's no merit on brainwashing someone like Endou-kun. Brainwashing won't repair his idiocy. Even his personality...!」

Then...why do that?

「...Endou-kun will see the truth. The reality」

In the screen...Iwakura-san seems to be having fun, connecting the google type monitor and the headphone cords to a laptop.

『...Wake him up』

Iwakura-san told one of the student council boys

That boy seems too take out some medicinal bottle and made Endou smell it...!

『Muhaaa!!!!』

Smelling the medicine...Endou wakes up...!

『...Geho, gehogehogeho!!!』

Endou coughs violently.

...Then

『W-What the hell...it's dark! I-I can't move my body!...What's going on...!!!!』

Iwakura-kaichou presses the keyboard

『...Step 2』

The chairman's voice can't reach Endou's ear blocked by the special headphone.

『What! It's bright...hey!!!! What's this!!!!』

Minaho-neesan speaks while looking at the monitor.

「Right now...Endou-kun's being flashed a dazzling light. A light hypnotic state to make him unable to know what's what. That's a stimulating effect」

So it's that kind of machine...

「Right now...Endou-kun no longer knows if he's standing up or lying down.」  
Unable to know the boundary between dream and reality...therefore!」

Minaho-neesan's eyes shine coldly.

「...We'll have him jump to a bitter reality...」

...Minaho-neesan.

...What are you going to do with Endou using Iwakura-kaichou?

『...What the hell is this?! I, what's going on?! Hey!』

Endou screams from the dazzling light.

He tries to shake up his body but...

The restraint firmly secures to the stretcher that he can't move even a single millimeter...!

「Now...this is the real thing」

Iwakura-kaichou operates the laptop...

「The hypnosis intro has already ended」

Minaho-neesan presses some keys too.

「I'll split the screen and show you what Endou-kun's eye see right now...!」

...Then

The screen's divided to left and right.

Right...the surveillance camera showing the same state of the room as before...

Left...

The video coming directly to Endou's eyes.

What's on the video is...

...Yukino

...It was Shirasaka Yukino earlier this morning.

『...What...Yukino?! Yukino...are you there?!』

Endou who's perception is controlled...has already been unable to know whether it's a video from the past or something currently there.

Endou is restricted lying down on a stretcher...

If you think logically, Yukino who came to his sight would be stuck in the ceiling.

But...Endou who's perception is messed up doesn't notice the absurdity.

『Eh?!...Yukino, why do you look like that?!』

On the left side of the screen...Endou sees『Yukino』half-naked wearing a men's Y-shirt right now.

That's right...this is Yukino in the AV room several hours ago.

The past Yukino returns to the current Endou.

She smiled.

Then said...

『...Okay...ask me anything!』

That's right...in the AV room before dawn, Yukino certainly said that to the camera.

『Eh...what are you saying, Yukino?!』

Endou doesn't get it.

『...Then hurry up and ask』

The half-naked Yukino speaks towards Endou.



『What question?! Where is this?!...What are you doing!』

Endou asks one after another...

Naturally...Yukino can't hear that voice.

『...Shirasaka Yukino. I became 16 just the other day. I'm a first year high school student』

Yukino answered.

Oh...this video's edited.

My lines were cut.

『What are you saying?! I know that already!』

Endou loses temper on the past Yukino!

『No, I'm not! I'm no longer a virgin!』

The past Yukino radiantly told Endou.

『W-What's that?!』

Endou's at loss.

『Err...three ...I don't know if you know it but...I had compensated dating sex with two old men. It was in the night park toilet. Both of them came inside me so even if I get pregnant right now...it might not be yours but the old men's』

With that answer...Endou finally noticed.

『Yukino...who are you talking to?』

The past Yukino ignores Endou's question completely.

『...No way...the two of them came a lot you know』

Yukino talks without reserve, and intimately to someone.

『Yukino...was ejaculated on a lot...?』

Endou's trembling.

『...Sex』

Yukino answered with a smile.

『...I did it alone but my fingers won't feel that good...won't reach that...

...My womb. My fingers can't reach the uterus where a man's penis can, it can't reach a pleasure point!』

Yukino's eyes are burning in lust.

『I tried putting on a cosmetics bottle but it's different. A man's penis feels much better. The feeling of the skins sticking and rubbing in the places where it feels good...also』

Yukino talks to Endou with aroused eyes.

『When semen pours in my stomach...it feels good. It feels like hot water is poured in the deepest part of my body. It feels shivery pleasant!』

Those words throws Endou's mind in disorder

『What the hell?! W-What's the meaning of this...!』

...Then

That's when he heard the voice of the『past me』who's been cut until now.

『...Lead』

That's right...at that time.

I told Yukino that...

『What?...my body became like this because of you!』

Yukino smiled.

『No...that's your original nature』

I made such voice.

It's not like me...

But, true...that's something I said.

『No...It's because of you!』

『You're fine taking in a dick of anyone!』

『I wonder...I don't know』

Endou's extremely confused from our conversation.

『Hey! Who are you talking to! Who are you!!!』

Endou screams.

The split screen on the other side...

Iwakura-kaichou smiles as she look at Endou suffer...

The past Yukino opens the Y-shirt she's wearing.

『.....Hey, are we done already?』

Then, she opens her legs wide...

The past Yukino's not wearing an underwear.

The genital shaved like a baby becomes exposed.

...Huh?

I noticed.

The green『吉田』tattoo is not on Yukino's abdomen...

This video seems to be considerably processed...

『I want it. I've been wanting it all this time...!』

The past Yukino opens her vagina with her fingers.

Love nectar drips down...

『Hey...wait a moment...Yukino!』

It's Endou's first time seeing Yukino's vagina.

No...far from Yukino, it might be the first time he saw a female's private part.

Much more...the sight of a girl at the same age spreading her slit...

『...Violate me. Hurry up and fuck me!』

The past Yukino said while breathing roughly.

『I hate men like you... You're so uncool, disgusting...I don't want to be seen together with you』

Yukino smiles obscenely.

『But...I love having sex with you. You never do anything to damage my body... and you're earnest. You don't order me too...』

Endou's confused.

『I really thought of having you as a sex friend if we're keeping this a secret to anyone. A relationship where I'll just call you when I feel it and have sex.』

The image of the firm『Yukino』collapsed in Endou's mind...

『Yukino...who are you talking to! Who are you doing it with!!』

Endou shouts in hate!

『Hey...take off your clothes too and come here....!』

Yukino invites the『man』with a smile...

It's not Endou...it's another『man』

Yukino spreads her legs wide...

Her wet vagina opens up...

『.....There's nothing to be embarrassed this late, right?』

『...You're right』

The voice comes from the side then...

The past me is on the screen.

Endou doesn't see me as I was hiding all this time...!

『...Y-Yoshida?!』

Endou's surprised.

The past me gets naked in front of Yukino.

Yukino takes off my clothes and look at me with a fascinated smile 『...D-Don't fuck with me! That's my woman! You bastard, stop this at once!!』

Endou snaps off!

He desperately struggles with his body to get out of his restraint!

But...the leather belt just digs into Endou's body!

The past me got naked.

Yukino wasn't shaken by me who got undressed rather, she smiled at me when she saw my penis.

My penis was already erect.

『Looking at it again...it's big. This thing went inside me. Fufu...that makes it natural that my fingers won't satisfy me』

Yukino licks her lips.

...What a lewd face.

『Hey...Can I lick this?』

The past Yukino points at my erection then looks up.

『...Yukino, what are you talking about』

Endou's stunned from Yukino's aggressive words.

『...Do you want to?』

The past me asked...then Yukino.

『...Yeah, I want to lick it!』

Yukino's hand touched my penis.

『Hey, stop it...Yukinooo! Don't touch Yoshida's dick!!!!』

Endou's voice has no way of reaching Yukino in the past.

Yukino holds my dick in one hand then smiled towards Endou...

No...she was just looking at the camera...

Endou right now can't see it but her turning to him...

『Shirasaka Yukino will be licking this penis right now!』

A smile from an aroused woman.

『Bastard!! Don't do that!!!』

...But

『...Aun!』

Yukino's plump lips envelops my glans.

『...Ufufu』

Yukino smiles satisfied then licks my penis with her tongue...

『Un...this taste...this smell...this might become a habit』

She rubs her saliva to my penis...

『My mouth remembers this... The shape of your dick...and its taste』

...Endou

...Oh poor Endou.

The woman he thinks her girlfriend shows herself fellating someone else...

The 16 years old girl is showing a horny bitch's face.

『Hey...can I drink it on the second round?』

Taking her lips of my glans...Yukino told me.

『I want my first one in my womb...then I want to drink the second round of semen...okay?』

『Just how many times do you intend to do it?』

『...Even though you're not satisfied with just one round usually』

『Well...you're right I guess』

『You always cum inside me three or four times』

Our past conversation can only be heard as an exchange of sex friends.  
Yukino laughs.

『 I want to be filled by your semen...I want to have sex with you until I get exhausted』

『.....Do you want to be soaked in semen?』

『Un! That's good! Soak me in semen...hurry up!』

The『true form』of Endou's girlfriend whom he believed to be a virgin...  
A lewd bitch...

She already knows a man and she's awake from the pleasures of sex...  
That is Shirasaka Yukino.

『Ah...that's good. Suck it...I want you to kiss it a lot』

Inside the screen...I am sucking Yukino's nipple.

『Ahaaan...I love it when you do that. It feels good...great, lick it next...!』

I rolled the cherry colored nipple in my tongue 『.....It's great as expected. It feels completely better than doing it on my own』

Yukino was looking at me with a flushed face...

『...Why? Why?! You're my woman aren't you?! Why Yoshida! Even though you didn't let me touch you!』

Endou's shock turned to anger...  
Inverse proportionate to Endou's mind...Yukino's behavior escalates further.  
She opens her legs wide to an M shape...

『Look...touch me here too』

Yukino requested for my finger by herself...

Her clitoris is showing up.

『Don't touch it! It's not for Yoshida to touch!!!』

Yukino ignored Endou's orders.

『Touch and fiddle this one』

I stimulated her clitoris and crushed it with my thumb.

『Afu...n...good. It feels really good...!』

Yukino panted while shaking her body.

Love nectar drips down again...

『Hey, put your fingers in』

Yukino pleaded for a further caress.

『...Hm...ah...there...push your finger up there...a bit more...ahead...that's right...aaah...that feels good there...stir it...that's right!...Ahn, it feels good!』

Yukino can no longer be seen but a lewd bitch...

『.....Aaaah! Actually, I want to be touched higher than that...but, your fingers won't reach that right? Your dick...I want your penis. Because, if it's not your penis, it can't grind there...!』

Yukino looked at me with malicious eyes.

『...Come Put it in...fuck me...I want to be violated again...I want to be ravished...!』

Endou...!

『Stop...stop this...hey! You bastard! Get away right now! I'll beat you up!!!』

He throws a wholehearted anger to us.

And yet...I

『Before that...let's kiss』

...I asked a kiss from Yukino.

...Yukino.

『No kisses』

Endou's breath stopped for a moment.

『...Why?』

I asked Yukino.

『I want to be raped by you. It won't be rape if we kissed...』

『That's not true...I'm forcing myself on you』

With my sophism...

Yukino smiled.

『Right...if you're forcing it then fine...』

Endou trembles...!!!

『That's bullshit! You're mine! Yukinooooo!!!』

...But.

I jumped and covet Yukino's lips.

Yukino tangles her own tongue too.

The two of us overlap our lips in the past...

『...Stop screwing around...don't make a fool of me...don't bullshit me...!!!』

Endou's sorrowful voice.

『...Hurry. I want you to come inside and connect with me...!』

Yukino asks for insertion.

『Stooooooooop!!!! Don't show that to meeeeeee!!!!』

Yukino and I overlaps.

『Ufufu...your hard thing came!』

Yukino happily smiled.

The part where we're connected is shown clearly.

...In Endou's vision.

『Stop! You bastards! Doing that in front of me...I'll never forgive you...!!!』

Nobody's listening at Endou's rant.

『...Come inside in one stroke!』



Yukino opens her aching body and wait for me.

I...

I push down the soft meat and love nectar and slip my glans inside Yukino's vagina!!!

...Gunyuuuuu!!!

It's seen clearly that we're connected.

We're piling up...

We're having sex...

The two of us were completely united.

『...Dammit! Dammit! Dammit!』

Endou raises a voice of despair./

『Aaaahn...it's so deep...you're kissing the deepest part of me...ufufufufu...I can feel it...I can feel it!』

Yukino's pleased by the sexual intercourse.

She's looking only at me with an entranced face.

I kissed her and she puts her tongue in my mouth again.

She doesn't resist kissing a man who's not her boyfriend anymore.

『...You bastards...dammit...making a fool out of me...!』

Yukino's only looking at me.

『...How is it? Does it feel good?』

Yukino's smiling with a satisfied face.

『.....It's a perfect match with yours』

『...Eh?』

『My insides is fit perfectly for you...I wonder why?』

『...I don't know』

『Our bodies are so compatible aren't they』

...Endou sheds tears of anger and hate from our conversation.

『...Move. Just like usual』

...『Usual』

Endou discovers that Yukino's been betraying her all this time...

『Hey...pierce and push it up like usual...fuck me!』

I slowly moved my waist.

『Yes...like that...good...I'm being violated...I'm being ravished!』

Yukino's looking at Endou...

In reality...she was looking at the camera...

Endou right now can only feel that she turned to him.

『I'm being raped right now...I'm being fucked...I'm having sex!!』

...Endou!

『...Yukinoooooooooooooooo!!!...Yukinoooooooooooo!! Dammit!!! Bastard! Bastard! You bastards!!!』

But...Yukino's drowning in sex with me further.

『Aaah...That's right! Rub it on the place where I told you earlier...pierce it up with your penis...that's right! Aaah! Ahn! Great, there...I'm getting addicted to this...! As expected, a dick is better! It won't reach there unless it's your dick! Aaaahn! It feels good!』

She moved her own hips wanting me...

『...Why Yoshida...dammit...making a fool out of me...!』

I intensely pierce Yukino's insides!!!

『.....So good! That's great! I-I'm about to cum! Hey, is that okay? Can I cum ahead?!』

The past Yukino was greedy to the sexual pleasure.

The body of the first year high school girl sways around from the violent penetration of a man.

Her cute binyuu dance around.

『.....It's close...I'm about to...look at me as I cum...watch me!』

Yukino looked up at me and said.

Not Endou...she's looking only at me.

『Look at mee...look as I cum...It won't do unless you look at me...! I...!!』

A hot wave starts surging in Yukino's body...

『Aaaaah...it's coming...I'm cumming...look, look at me, watch meee...!』

『...I'm watching, Yukino!』

The past me whispers in Yukino's ears.

...Then.

Yukino jumps.

『.....C-Cumiiiiing! I'm cumming! I'm cumiiiiing!』

She opened her eyes widely then exposed her face of delight to me.

『I'm being seeeen...by this man...my most shameful face...it's being seen...  
ah...aaah...it feels goood!!!!』

Endou's dumbfounded.

This is not an adult video...

Her girlfriend...the girl he believed to be a virgin...

She's having sex with man other than him and reached climax...

She's being violated by the waves of pleasure in the world where there's only  
the two of us...

『...Y-Yukino...this is a lie, isn't it...?!』

...The past me.

...Reaches the limit.

『.....Yukino...I'm about to cum too』

『Let it ouut...ejaculate inside meeeee!』

Endou...

『Idiot! If you cum inside...!!』

But...Yukino.

『Show me your face while you ejaculate...I want to see it...leak out your face  
to meeee!』

She begs for a creampie herself!

『Hey, stop it Yoshidaaaaaa! If you cum inside, I'll kill you! I'll definitely kill

you!!』

...too late!

『...Cumming!!!』

The white hot juice blows up inside Yukino!

『...H-hot!』

Yukino's body curved greatly!

『Aaah...it came in! It's flying in...inside my womb. It's coming inside my womb. semen's coming in again!!!』

...Endou's in complete despair.

『...H-He came...he let it out inside?!...Hey!!』

Yukino...

『This is great! I love this! The hot sperm spreading out...I love it!!!』

Yukino screams at my face.

I also look at Yukino.

I'm ejaculating and Yukino's impregnated.

In a world where there's only the two of us.

『.....I love how your semen is always so hot...I've come to love your ejaculations...』

Yukino says while her body twitches.

『Aaah...my womb is drinking it...it's drinking your semen...!』

Endou screams...!

『...Aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!』

He screams raising hell...!

『Dammit! Bastards! Making a fool out of me!!!...Aaaaaah!』

But...we in the past...

Are enjoying the reverberations of sex while embracing each other.

We pile our lips together again not knowing who's doing first.

We twine our tongues.

We exchange saliva...

Yukino turns her hand on my back...

She embraced my weakened body.

I also embrace Yukino.

『...You came a lot?』

Yukino asked me happily.

---

## 203. Step 3

---

『Okay, flash!』

Iwakura-kaichou in the screen mutters then presses the keyboard.

At that moment...Endou's vision is enveloped by an intense flash of light.

At the same time...a「Buuuuuun!」sound gradually gets louder then it ended with「Kiin!」

Then, a shrilling sound that could tear your ear...!

Endou turned sweaty on his whole body...endures the attacks of light while his body twitches!

Then...he fainted...!

「You do know that intense light is harmful on human brain don't you?」

Minaho-neesan told me.

Speaking of which...there was a TV anime where it had a lot of cases of children fainting.

「When you use it on a goggle type head mount display, it completely blocks your vision so it's useless to close your eyes... The intense light goes through the eyelids so the effect on the brain won't change. There's also the additional sound effect. When you hear a quiet bass to a high pitched explosion sound in an instant...your brain will naturally cause to panic」

Iwakura-kaichou smiles and observes the state of Endou who fainted away. Then she look at the two student council boys...

『...Throw him away. Just as scheduled』

Scheduled...

Everything is on Minaho-neesan's『revenge plan』...

『I'll go back to my classroom too. The whole school needs to see something this interesting...!』

...Wait

There's still something else...?

『I should be slightly unwell and be in the nurse office right now so...I'm glad that I can play the student council president and the honor student. I can participate in this fun thing』

Saying that, Iwakura-kaichou looks up at the camera.

『Thank you...Sensei!』

Iwakura-kaichou winks towards the surveillance camera.  
Iwakura-kaichou really knows the position of the cameras.

『Leave this to us...we'll see Yukiyo in classroom later!』

Then...the video on the screen went off.



「That was roughly ten minutes ago」

Minaho-neesan spoke to the two of us in the principal room.

「...Where's Endou now?」

When I asked her...

「Let's see...should we watch Endou-kun real-time?」

Minaho-neesan operates the laptop

...Then

The view behind the former gym is reflected...

There's silhouette in the camera.

The two boys under Iwakura-kaichou...are pushing Endou's stretcher.

Endou's goggles and headphones are already removed.

All the black leather restraints were also removed.

Endou's limped out.

...Then.,

Another pair appears from the side.

That's the delinquents from the baseball club, Koizumi and Sugiyama.

Both of them are still wearing their baseball team uniform.

They didn't seem to have attended classes.

『Yo. Throw that idiot somewhere around. We'll be just fooling him around afterwards』

Sugiyama told the student council boys

『...Then, I'll leave the later to you. Come to the student council room after school. Yukiyo seems to be going to give you a reward』

『Uhihi...then I should come』

Koizumi shows a vulgar smile from what the student council boy said.

『The reward can be either money or the president's service, either is good anyway』

『...How about both?』

『That's great but you should wait for your turn. You can go after us...』

Not just the student council boys but also Koizumi and Sugiyama were also Iwakura-kaichou's follower?

『Is it no good if we postpone the fun with Kaichou later? I don't feel like doing after you guys』

Sugiyama answers dissatisfied.

『Why not? Ask her later...it's continuous holiday later again』

One of the student council boy said willingly.

Iwakura-kaichou's promiscuity seems to be a daily occurrence.

『...You're right about that. Not that I want to bang after school today. I'll have fun with the president someday in the holidays』

『That's fine...either way, we're coming to school to practice everyday during the consecutive holidays』

Sugiyama agrees with what Koizumi said.

『Rather than that...go back to your classrooms already. It would be bad if the students in the council doesn't attend class won't it?』

『It's fine...this guy will rampage after this. Everything would be confusing as hell...!』

The student council boys said while knocking on Endou's head.



『...I see』

Sugiyama and Koizumi laughed weirdly.

『...Use this』

The student council boy handed a plastic bottle to Sugiyama.

『...What's this?』

『It's a medicine mixed with erection stimulants』

『Oh...this is interesting』

『It seems that the tingling of your dick won't stop even if you ejaculate five to six times in a row』

『Nice...I want to drink this』

『Idiot. It's painful to have it erect all the time you know...』

『Hm...Koizumi, no way?』

『Yeah...I was made to drink when I did it with Iwakura-san but...it became penance after the third ejaculation』

『Wow...that's how effective this is?』

『Poor Endou-kun』

『What are you saying?...Shirasaka Yukino-chan's the poor one here you know?』

『Haha, you're not wrong』

The boys surrounding Endou laughs at him...

...Wait a moment

...Poor Yukino they said?

What are they going to make Endou do?

「...Minaho-neesan?」

I look at Minaho-neesan.

Minaho-neesan calmly smiled.

「What's going to happen is your own『trial』...!」

My own...『trial』?

「Calm down for now and look at the flow of the situation. Then, observe the movement of your heart patiently」

My heart?

「What do you really want for yourself?...What do you want to do?...Stand on the very brink and think」

Minaho-neesan looks at my eyes.

...I

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu grasps my hand.

「I'm here with you...we're together...okay」

She's snuggling to me with a face about to cry 「...Y-Yeah」

Megu's hand were cold.

Megu's nervous.

「Then...this is Step 3」

Minaho-neesan mutters.



『One-two!』

Koizumi and Sugiyama lifts Endou on the stretcher and throws him on the grass...!

『Gueee!!』

Endou bounced on the grass and cried out...

『Then take care of it...!』

『...Leave it to us!』

The student council boys take the stretcher and leave 『Okay, this is our job now...!』

『Now then...!』

Koizumi takes off the lid of the plastic bottle.

Sugiyama hold down Endou on the ground and pinched his nose.

『...Ugeeeee』

Endou opens his mouth from suffocation.

『Now!』

『Roger!!』

Koizumi thrusts the bottle into Endou's mouth.

『Ugugugu...gufu!!』

The medicine in the bottle is poured into Endou's mouth forcibly.

『Gu, gurujii...geho gehogeho!!!』

His face got wet but still Endou is forced to swallow the medicine.

『Gueeeeeee!! Help meee...I'm drowniiing...gehogeho!』

『Idiot, you won't drown from this much!』

『You...you don't even know where you are?』

Koizumi and Sugiyama pushes the bottle into Endou's mouth until the last drop while laughing...!

『Ugeee...geho, geho!』

Endou coughs violently.

『Hey...Endou, you awake?』

『Hey...do you know us Endou?!』

Endou opens his eyes from what Sugiyama and Koizumi said.

『Eh...where's this?』

Endou's surprised.

But...the shock to the brain with the『brainwashing device』and the medicine he has drunk is taking effect...

He tries to get up but his eyes are spinning around that he can't stand up well.

『What are you doing you idiot!』

Sugiyama forcibly grabs Endou's collar and lift him up.

『Eh...I? What's going on?...W-Where's Yukino?!』

Endou's completely confused.

Just a little while ago...Endou was beaten up by these two delinquent.

Then the two people woke him up at the same place...

To Endou right now...

She doesn't know if my sex with Yukino shown by Iwakura-kaichou is dream or reality.

『What are you saying...aren't you going to rape Yukino-san after this!』  
『You do remember what we told you a while ago? Bastard!!!』

Endou who's feeling dizzy is threatened by the delinquent senior's roar.

『But...was that...true...Yukino...????』

Sugiyama shouts at Endou's ear...!

『Who the fuck cares about the truth! You don't have a future as long as you don't fuck Yukino-chan!』

But...Endou...

『B-But...Yukino, and Yoshida...!』

It seems that the video from a while ago are flashing in Endou's agitated head!

『Heyyy, Endou...! You've got a dick don't you?! Then jam it in!!!』  
『That's right...! Do it in one go and be a man!』

The delinquents fuel Endou...

『...But, But, But...!!!!』

Endou's in panic.

『You want to fuck Yukino-chan don't you?』  
『Your dick's already hard for it you know!』

The medicine is effective.  
It's clear that there's an erection in Endou's crotch even through his pants.

『Go and throw that hot emotion to Yukino-chan!』  
『Yukino-chan's your girlfriend isn't she?』

Those words has a strong effect on Endou's heart...!

『Y-Yukino...Where's Yukino?』

Endou asked with confused eyes.

『Isn't that obvious that she's in the classroom?! We're in the middle of class

you know!』

『...During class...my class...Yukino...Yukinoooo!!!!』

Endou barks.

『Here, take this and go!』

Sugiyama hands over a metal bat to Endou.

『Beat up those who hinder you...!』

『Here...Hurry up! Yukino-chan's waiting for you...!』

Koizumi laughs and pushed Endou's back...

『If you don't hurry up then someone might take away Yukino-chan!』

Endou's heart is set on fire!

『...Uuuuuu, Yukino! Yukino! Yukinoooooooooooooooo!!!!!!!』

Though his steps are still unsteady...Endou runs towards the classroom...!



「...Minaho-neesan, do you intend to make Endou rape Yukino?」

I asked Minaho-neesan.

「I wonder...what shall we do?」

Minaho-neesan is looking at me with her usual cold eyes.

「If I say that this is part of my『revenge plan』...what will you do?」

I...

I'm a member of『Kuromori』

If that is what Minaho-neesan wishes then I have no choice but to obey.

...But

「...This is fine. Like this」

Megu told me while holding my hand.

「You can return Yukino to Endou-kun...right?」

...Megu

「As long as Yukino's here...Yoshi-kun won't be happy. Yukino doesn't love

Yoshi-kun at all...!」

...That is

「This early morning...Yoshida-kun embraced Yukino-san, Megumi, and Mana-san in turns」

Minaho-neesan told me.

「...How was it embracing the three?」

...How was it?

「...It was different wasn't it? Sex with Yukino-san...Megumi and Mana-san...!」

...That is

「I...I know Mana and I were watching in the camera so...we can't hold back and go to the AV room」

...Megu?

「Yukino's thinking about herself only. That's her sex. Thinking only about making herself feel good...not even having the feeling of wanting to make Yoshi-kun feel good or entertained」

...True

...That might be

「Therefore...Mana and I...!」

Right...sex with Megu and Mana...

Both of them don't care about their own pleasure but me.

They value that we feel good together.

「I feel sorry for Yoshi-kun when I see his sex with Yukino. It seems that you were serving Yukino one-sidedly...!」

Megu and Mana sees it as such.

Therefore...they jump in the middle of sex.

「...Yoshi-kun, we're here」

...Megu?

「...You don't need Yukino anymore!!」

...I

「My...Endou-kun seems to have arrived at the classroom...!」

Minaho-neesan switched the cameras...!



『...Yukinooooooooooooooooo!』

Endou opens the door suddenly then comes in...the class were surprised.  
Endou's wearing his baseball club clothing...

But, the practice wear that should be white is now muddy...

There's a stain of yellow medicine applied from under his face to the chest.

He seems to have lost his hat somewhere...his hair is soppy...

His face is swollen blue and his bleeding from his nose...

He almost looks like a zombie.

Then...he has a metal bat in his hand.

『Yukino...?! Yukino's not here?!』

Endou screams looking at Yukino's empty seat.

『W-What's wrong with you?』

The old chemistry teacher in charge at that time calls out Endou 『Shut up bastard!』

Endou swings the metal bat with all his might!

...Gobu!!!

A hole was opened in the blackboard!

『Kyaaaaaaaaaa!!』

A schoolgirl screamed!

『...Answer! Where did Yukino go!!』

One schoolgirl answered Endou's shout.

『Shirasaka-san's in the principal's office!』

The confused Endou glared at that one.

『...Principal's office?!』

『That's right...he was called there a while ago!』

Then, startled...he looked at my seat.  
My seat is also empty.

『...Yoshida's not here too!』

Endou flings his bat to the teacher's desk.

『...Y-Yoshida's on the principal's office too!』

The color of Endou's eyes changed.

『Whaaaaaaaaaaaaaat!!!!』

It completely turned to an eyes of a madman.

『Both of them are in the principal's officeee?...!!!!』

『Didn't we just say that?!』

The schoolgirl forgot the Megu went together due to Endou's momentum...

『Those bastards...making fun of me, messing me, deceiving me...!!!!』

Endou jumps out of the classroom!!

『...Dammiiiiitt!!!!』

He breaks the windows in the corridor with his bat!!

...Barin!!

『...I won't forgive them...I won't forgive them...I'll never forgive them!!!!』

Though he's unsteady...Endou heads to the principal's office...!  
Holding a metal bat in his hand...!



Minaho-neesan turned on the interphone switch.

「...Katsuko, it's close」

Katsuko-nee is in the『emergency broadcast room』next to the principal's office along with Yukino.

Inside the room...she should be peeling off the stun gun device stuck in Yukino's back.



『...Roger, Ojou-sama』

Katsuko-nee's voice comes from the speaker...

I...

「Endou's heading towards this room isn't he?」

I prepare my beat up stick...

「My...what do you intend to do? Do you intend to fight Endou-kun?」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Well...he might hurt everyone here」

I have the obligation of protecting everyone.

「Yoshida-kun...this principal's office is the pivot of defense in the school. That door won't open with just a baseball bat so don't worry」

...But

「Besides...Endou-kun will be entering the next room」

...The next room

「Well...can't be helped you know? Endou-kun's aim is Yukino-san...!」

But...That is

Won't Yukino have a hard time?

「I don't expect this but...」

Minaho-neesan looks at my eyes.

「...When you said『everyone』just now」

Her cold eyes stab my heart.

「...Yukino-san's not there, is she?」

...I

「Yoshi-kun...that's wrong! Yukino's not in our group!」

Megu holds my hand.

「Yukino's different...that girl...!」

...That's right.

...Shirasaka Yukino

Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter...

『Kuromori's』enemy

Minaho-neesan's subject of『revenge』...

「Please throw her already...I beg you. Abandon Yukino...!」

Megu clings to me crying.

...At that time.

「...Yukinooooo!!!!!!」

Endou's yell can be heard from outside the room.

Endou has come before the principal's office.

It seems he ran straight here.

「Open this up!! Yukino...come out!!!」

...Dago!

...Dakakaga!

Endou's hitting the principal's office door with a metal bat...

Minaho-neesan shows the image from the corridor to us.

Endou who's deranged and became a mass of anger and hatred is breaking the principal's office in rage.

...Then.

The door to the『emergency broadcast room』next to the principal's office opens up.

「...What's this, you're noisy」

Katsuko-nee comes out of the room.

Then...she told Endou.

「...Shirasaka Yukino-san is in this room」

Endou shows an「Eh?」face...

But still...Katsuko-nee comes to the corridor so the inside of the room can be seen...

Looking at the『emergency broadcast room』...

At that moment...

Minaho-neesan pushed on some switch.

「..... ! ! !」

Endou's surprised looking inside the room!

「...Yukinnoooooooooooooooo!!!!!! So this is where you are!!!!!!」

Endou's voice.

Echoes throughout the school building.

「This will be broadcasted to the school」

...Minaho-neesan?

「Voice...and video too」

Minaho-neesan shows me a monitor...

The surveillance camera switches from one after another...

The TVs installed in the classrooms in the school shows the video in the『emergency broadcast room』

「A confused student taking a schoolgirl as a hostage and occupying the emergency broadcast room...it can't be helped if they pressed the broadcast switch by mistake, won't it?」

Minaho-neesan intends to do this from the beginning...!

Endou's voice roars in the whole school.

『...Yukino, you deceived meeee!!』

Endou enters the room stealthily while holding a metal bat!

At the moment he enters the room...Katsuko-nee slams the door from the outside!

She's not reflected on the screen.

As if Endou closed the door by himself...

Endou and Yukino became alone in the『emergency broadcast room』...

『...Kenji...what's wrong with you?』

Yukino's surprised at Endou's change.

Yukino's appearance...

Her blouse is removed as the unit stuck on her skin is removed...

Her white blouse is in half off state.

The buttons on her chest is undone...

The hem of the blouse is outside too...

It was as if she's in after sex.

No...the white blouse...

It will flash back Endou's memory...

It will remind him the video Iwakura-san showed him earlier...my sex with her...

『Yukinooo...you...you've done it here! You've done it with him!!!!?!』

Inside the confused head of Endou...the current『emergency broadcast room』  
matches the image of the『AV room』

『Playing me like a damn fiddle...!』

Endou strikes the metal bat on the wall

...Baki!!!

『Kyaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!』

Yukino's scream goes through the whole school building!!!

---

## 204. Step 4

---

### 204. Step 4

『I'll never forgive you! I'll fuck you up, Yukinooo...!!』

Endou's yell can be heard by the whole school through the speakers!  
Inside the screen...Endou holding his bat gets closer to Yukino.

『...Noo, don't come!』

Yukino cries out in fear.

...I

「...Minaho-neesan!」

I tried to stand up but...

「Don't...Yoshi-kun!」

Megu desperately clings to me

「You mustn't go...stay here, Yoshi-kun!」

Megu doesn't let go of my arm.

Meanwhile...Endou approaches Yukino...!

Endou who's drunk with stimulant looks at Yukino with bloodshot eyes.

『Don't come...don't come near me!』

Yukino throws a nearby book at Endou...!

But...that act only escalates Endou's heart even more!

『...Don't fuck me with this bullshit!!!』

Endou struck the desk in front of Yukino with a metal bat!

...Baki!

Chips of wood scatters around!

『...Iyaaaaa!!!』

I can't endure this anymore.

I shake up Megu and stand up!

「...Minaho-neesan, you can go to the next room from here, don't you?」

The『Emergency broadcast room』next door can not only be entered from the corridor but also from the principal's office.

Earlier...Yukino and Katsuko-nee went to that room by this small door.

「...Do you want to go to the next door by all means?」

Minaho-neesan stares at my face.

「Is that because you want to help Yukino-san or is it because you don't like Yukino-san being raped by Endou-kun...?!」

...I

「...Both」

I answered clearly

I don't want to see Yukino hurt.

I don't want to allow a man like Endou rape her.'

That kind of selfish human.

「You do know what will happen if you come to help Yukino-san right now?」

...I

I look at Megu.

Megu's looking up at me with a serious face.

The state in the room next to here is being broadcasted to the whole school.

If I come to help in there...

That would be seen by the whole school too.

Me, a member of『Kuromori』swinging my beat-up stick.

「...Are you still sure about that?」

Minaho-neesan presses me for a choice.

「Yoshi-kun...chose us! You can just abandon Yukino!」

Megu told me while crying.

「Even if you save Yukino...she won't thank Yoshi-kun! That girl isn't that kind of girl...!」

It is as Megu says.

...Yukino

She's selfish and egoistic...she's always been looking down on me.

She doesn't think of me as anything but a tool for pleasurable sex.

What she would do if I help her...

She never liked me from the bottom of her heart...

...I know

...I know that

But...I

「It's not a question of who should I chose or who should I abandon!」

I shouted at Megu.

「I want to do it so I will...that's all!」

Yukino's heart will never look at me.

...But

I won't hand Yukino to anyone.

...Not to a man like Endou.

「...You're finally obedient to your own desires」

Minaho-neesan smiled.

「That's fine...you should face your own desires...」 「...Minaho-san?!」

Megu looks at Minaho-neesan with a startled face.

「Megumi...if you want to become Yoshida-kun's wife then believe that『whatever happens, Yoshida-kun will be coming back to you』」

「I can't believe that. I don't have that confidence...!」

Megu answers.

「Then...make a desperate effort so you can have the confidence」

Megu...

「...Minaho-san?」

「If you're feeling frustrated then refine yourself to become a better woman. Become a『woman』suitable for Yoshida-kun before you depend on him...!」

...Megu fell silent.

「Yoshida-kun is a man...」

...I

「...Yoshida-kun...I order you as the master of『Kuromori』」

...Eh?

「...Help Yukino-san from Endou-kun...and violate her instead of Endou-kun」

...Minaho-neesan?

Minaho-neesan took out a bar stun gun from the desk drawer then handed it to me.

「Since it's the type used in the mansion so you do know how to use it don't you?」

I took the stun rod.

When I turn on the switch...electricity begins to flow.

「...The timing is only for a moment. The video would black out for 15 seconds. You have to take down Endou-kun and you will rape Yukino-san instead in the meanwhile...!」

...I will rape Yukino...?!

「After 15 seconds...let the whole student body think that it was Endou raping Yukino...can you do it?」

This is Minaho-neesan's『plan』?!

「Endou-kun would have the disgrace of a rapist. Yet without being able to have sex with Yukino-san at least once. And...the whole school will know that Yukino-san's raped by a man...!」

Her『revenge』to Endou and Yukino...



「...Can you do it?」

「...Yes」

I answered.

「Yoshi-kun...!」

Megu looks at me crying.

「Megu...I'm this kind of man. Understand that and stay by my side」

Megu's surprised.

「...Is that okay for me?! Is it okay for me to stay by Yoshi-kun's side?!」

...I

「You're important to me too. I'd be troubled if you're not here」

I put emphasis on the word 「too」...

I already have a lot of「women」

I can't live only for Megu.

...Megu.

「...Got it...I'm also one of Yoshi-kun's『women』...!」

Megu bites her lips tightly...

「I can't always be depending on you forever...!」

Megu looks frustrated...

I can't find the words I can tell Megu in reply.



Minaho-neesan briefly explained the flow of the『plan』

What's left is to execute it.

『...Stop, don't come! Don't come near me!』

Yukino and Endou are still chasing around the『emergency broadcast room』

No...to be accurate, Endou swings around his bat as Yukino ran around then he enjoys the look of Yukino in fear.

『You made a fool out of me...Yukinoooo!!!!』

Finally...Endou threw his bat!

He jumped towards Yukino who's wearing a white blouse.

『Iyaaaaaaa!!!!』

Yukino shouts violently!

『Don't resist...!』

Endou slaps Yukino!

...Bashi!!

A dull sound...Yukino's blown off the wall.

『Ugyaaaaaaaaa!!!!』

She yelled with her whole body!!

『...Yukinooo!!!!』

Endou approaches Yukino slowly.

Right now...the video of a girl being raped is being broadcasted to the whole school.

Filming this video is the video camera on the tripod in the『emergency broadcast room.』

Minaho-neesan taught me the position of that camera through the surveillance camera.

「This camera's tripod can be knocked down remotely. The students watching the video will think that the camera collapsed from the vibration. At the moment it falls, it'll black out...」

Then...the image would be lost?

「There's still audio broadcasted so be careful. Don't make a noise okay?」  
「...Got it」

「Defeat Endou-kun within 15 seconds...remove the camera from the tripod. Then rape Yukino-san holding the camera in your hand...!」

...like filming sex.

...Then, my face won't be seen.

「The concentration of the students won't be interrupted in less than 15 seconds. If it takes more time...there are students who would think that it's

suspicious」

In order for Endou to continue to rape Yukino, we need to finish everything in absolutely 15 seconds...!

「Now...stand by...!」

I face the door heading to the next room with the stun rod on my hand.

『Help meee...someone, help meeee!!!!!!』

Yukino ran away to that door inside the『emergency broadcast room』  
She tries to turn the knob but...

...It doesn't open.

The door's lock is managed by Minaho-neesan remotely...

『...Ehehehe, Yukinooo...Yukinoooo.....!!!』

Endou's half naked, approaching Yukino.  
You can see that there's an intense erection under his practice wear trousers.

『...Stop...don't do this...Kenji!』

『...Shut up!!!!!!』

Endou slaps Yukino again...!

『Even doing it with such a man...you perverted woman!』

He gripped Yukino's blouse and pulled it at once!!  
The buttons of her blouse scatters around!  
Yukino's light blue bra is clearly visible.

『Noooooooooooo!!!!!!』

『I told you not to resist!!!!』

Endou slaps her once again!  
Yukino's body was beaten to the wall!

『...Yukinooooooo!!!!!!』

Endou attacks with his bloodshot eyes!

『Nonononono!!!!』

Yukino desperately tries to hide her chest but Endou pulls her hair.

『Ouch!!!!』

Endou stretches his hand to the guard loosened by the pain.  
He pulls up her bra!  
With her bra rolled up...Yukino's breast is exposed to the camera...!

「Uoooooooo!!!!」

The schoolboys leaked out from the whole school building.  
...They're watching.  
Everyone in the school is paying attention to the live rape play!!

『Hey! Open this door!!』

A knocking sound can be heard from the『emergency broadcast room's』door.  
A male teacher who saw the broadcast came here in haste!

『Don't do something stupid!! Endou!!』

He knows that it's Endou, it might be the advisor of the baseball club.  
Endou's on the camera, wearing his baseball club practice wear...

『Shut upppp!!! All of you are making fool of me!!』

The voice of the teacher only poured fire to Endou's anger.

『Kuh, this door is locked!!』

『Where's the key here?!!』

『It wasn't in the staff room!』

『Why!?』

The male teachers shout in the corridor...  
But, the door to the『emergency broadcast room along with the『principal room』is locked remotely by Minaho-neesan.  
There's no key.

『...Yukino, Yukino, Yukinoooooooooooo!!!!!!』

Endou grabbed Yukino's breast with all his strength!

『...Ouuuch!!!!』

Yukino screams!!

『Dammit...this breasts are mine...that guy...that guy massaged this...!』

Endou grabs Yukino's breasts like squeezing it.

『Yukinoooo...!』

Endou tries to kiss Yukino!

...But!

『I hate you!!』

When Endou's face approached her, Yukino gave him a head butt!

...Gohi!!

A dull sound...Endou holds down his nose!

There's blood coming out of Endou's nose...!

『Bitch!!!!』

The blood rise in Endou's head and he beat Yukino again!

『Iyaaaaaaaaaaa!!! Help meeeeeee!!!!...Someoneeeeeee!!!!』

Yukino shouts!~!

『...Yukino...Yukino...Yukino...!!!!』

Yukino's exhausted...

Endou's hand lift Yukino's skirt.

Just like her bra...her light blue panty is exposed to the camera.

『I'll fuck you up...I'll fuck you up...I'll fuck you up...!』

Endou's hand reached out for Yukino's panties.

『I'll rape you...I'll fuck you hard Yukinoooooooo!!!!』

As he try to pull down her panty...!

「Yoshida-kun...stand by」

Minaho-neesan called me out.

「Step4.....READY..... ! 」

At the moment Endou's trembling hand pull the panty down...!

「.....GO ! 」

The tripod of the camera collapses.

The video that was broadcasting from the ceiling of the『emergency broadcast room』is blacked out...!

You can only hear Endou's voice.

『...W-What the hell is thissssss!!!』

The door from『principal's office』to the『emergency broadcast room』clicked and unlocked.

I open the door and jumped inside...!

「..... ! ! ! 」

Endou's staring at Yukino's crotch in astonishment.

What's written there is the green tattoo saying『吉田』 ...!

Endou's eyes are nailed down to the tattoo...!

I stick the stun rod to Endou's neck!!

...Baribaribaribari!

Sparks and burning smell...!

Endou falls behind while looking at the character『吉田』...!!!!

It didn't even take two seconds.

「..... ? ? ? ! 」

Yukino stares at me in blank surprise.

I first checked Endou's state...

Endou fainted with his eyes open.

He's completely knocked out.

When I kicked him around his belly...there's no reaction.

...Okay.

I rolled Endou's body on the corner of the room with my foot.

Then...I head to the camera.

I remove the video camera from the fallen tripod...

Huh, how do you remove this?

『Hey, Endou...say your conditions! How can we make you release that girl inside?!』

The angry voice of the PE teacher can be heard from the corridor...

He's not barricading himself like in a criminal drama...

『Get out of there quietly! Endou! Your parents are crying!』

...Somehow, I can't think of the words from outside.

I somehow managed to remove the camera from the tripod and...

...15 seconds passed.

The camera broadcasts video again.

I hold the camera making sure that it won't catch Endou who's rolled down on the wall...

The door I jumped in has already been closed by Minaho-neesan.

The camera's facing Yukino.

Yukino's looking up at me hiding her blouse with her hand.

...The fear from being attacked still remains.

She's trembling...having a pale face.

But...Yukino's eyes I see is...

There's another shine showing up...

Yukino's wants to convert the fear from being attacked by Endou to another thing...

She looks at me after the violence and fear...

Yukino's lewdness lit up.

Yukino's eyes are shining in flames of lust.

The switch in her mind is trying to escape to the pleasures of sex.

...I

I unfastened my belt and took off my pants.

I also took off my underwear.

I stand in front of Yukino with my lower half naked.

I stick out my half-erect penis before the frightened Yukino.

「...Aaaah!!」

...Yukino.

Yukino looks up at me with a senile face.

...I

I instruct Yukino to『lick』with my eyes.

Yukino pressed her lips to my penis silently .

...Chiro, chiro...chupa.

Yukino's face doing fellatio is shown in the whole school.

All of the students are looking at Yukino lick.

Using her tongue skillfully...everybody can see that Yukino's used to it.

...They can only see her as a nympho.

She's sucking it up without any instructions given.

My penis grows harder...bigger...

She's sucking the glans happily...

...I

I pull out my penis from Yukino's lips.

Yukino looks regretful...

I pat Yukino's shoulder

That alone made her understand...

She lied down on the floor and spread her legs widely.

She's waiting for my insertion.

She opened her own blouse...

Shows her white breasts to me.

I make sure Yukino's tattoo won't show up in the camera...

I turn up her skirt carefully...

Yukino's genital that's shaved by me becomes exposed.

Love nectar drips from the slit.

That look...it's broadcasted to the pupils of the school using the camera on my hand...

「...R-Rape me」

Yukino told me in a muffled voice.

「Make a mess out of me...I don't care anymore...everything's gone messy...!」

Yukino told me with a half-crying face.

That face is delivered to the each of the TVs in the class...

「..... !」

My penis touches Yukino's opening.

I shoot that with the camera too.

Yukino's slit, naked breast and face...

Everything is clearly visible...

I invade inside Yukino!



「...Aauuun!!」

My glans slip inside Yukino's vagina...!

「Haa...aaaaa...aaaaa...ah!」

Violated by a man...Yukino's body twitches.

I stroke it inside in a dash!

「Aaah! I'm being fucked...I'm being rapeeeeed...!!!」

Yukino's vagina who accepted my penis to the root is being knocked by me.  
...Then.

I slowly begin piston.

「Iyaaaaa...aaaaaaahn...aaaaaa...I'm...I'm being raped...being violateeedd!!!!」

Yukino's body shakes and sways.

Her cute breast dances to the rhythm.

Her eyes have melted, her face is loose...

Yukino's melting from sex.

「Aaaah...it feels good...being raped feels goooood...pierce me moreee...stir me up inside moreeeeeee!!!」

Yukino's pleased from being violated.

What would the students think seeing such a girl?

...Lewd?

...Pervert?

At least, there won't be any students who would sympathize with Yukino...

The reported daughter of『The perverted rapist kidnapper murderer, Shirasaka Sousuke』...

As expected, the daughter was also a perverted woman...

That's what they will recognize...

Yukino's about to lose everything now.

「...My breast too...touch it...my nipples, stir them up...!」

I answer Yukino's request.

I play with her breast gently.

「Aaaahn...this hand is great...I love this hand...!」

Yukino...only likes my sex.  
She's not looking at me in the middle of sex.  
She's just drowning in the pleasure that happens inside her.

「Aaaaah...much more intense...intenseeeee!!!」

I sped up the movement of my waist.  
My abdomen slaps Yukino's crotch!  
My glans is making a knock inside Yukino's vagina...!

「Auaa!...Aha!...Aaaah!...Aaaaah!!」

...Yukino  
Yukino's pleased...

「Aaaaaah...I...I'm cumming...I'm about to cum...the white thing's coming...  
loook...look at Yukino cums...loook...!」

Yukino looks up at me with eyes that looks in pain while swinging her head  
left and right.

That lewd expression is also being shot by the camera in my hand.

「...Aaaahn...it's soon...it's coming soon...it's hereee...the wave's hereee...!」

Yukino's climbing the stairs to climax...!

「Aaahn...cumming...I, I'm cumming...loooooook...loooooook...aaaaaah!...C-  
Cumminggggggg!!!」

Yukino's body tightens!!!

「...I'm cumiiiiing! I'm made to cuuumm.....Look! Looooook...!!!!」

Yukino's showing her most embarrassing face as a woman to the school!!!  
...Me too...

...I can't hold back anymore!

「...Uh...!!!」

...Dopyu! Dopyu!

「Aaaaah, so hoot! Your hot stuff is coming out! I'm being impregnateeeeeed!!!」

Yukino accepts the ejaculation in her vagina.

「The hot stuff is spreading inside my stomaccch...it feels good...!」

Yukino's no longer thinking.

Her family, her parents...her own future...

Just a few minutes ago, she was on the verge of being beaten up and raped by Endou...

She threw all of reality...

She only immersed only in sex...

Indulged herself in sexual desire...

She has stopped thinking...

A genuine dementia...she fell to the sexual madness.

...But.

The expression of delight Yukino shows...

For some reason looks like an innocent angel...

「...Aaaah...aaaah...ahaaaa...!」

Yukino's enjoying the afterglow of sex.

I let it all out inside Yukino...

I pull out my penis from her.

From the opening of Yukino's vagina...

My white semen is dripping down.

It was hot semen that lets out steam.

That state is also captured by the camera too

「...I'll lick it up...I'll lick it up and make it clean」

Yukino raised her body...

Then she licks my penis.

「Delicious...semen's very delicious...I love this...」

Yukino who stopped thinking doesn't understand the meaning of the camera I'm holding.

She hasn't imagined that this video is being broadcasted to the whole school.

Thinking so...my penis becomes hard again.

「Let me drink it this time...please ejaculate in my mouth...!」

The 16 year old...nympho angel said that.

...I

I grabbed Yukino's head and pushed my waist...

...Before long.

At the moment I ejaculate...

I pull out my penis.

「Eh...what?!」

I ejaculate in Yukino's surprised face!

The white liquid splatters...

Yukino's beautiful face is made dirty...

This one's much more arousing for those who watch this video in their classroom...

My semen drips down on Yukino's breasts

「...Aaaaahn! You're horrible」

Yukino says that...

...as she scoop out the semen in her face with her fingers and lick it.

...Then.

「...Ufu, delicious」

Then she smiled.

She's really not thinking of anything...it was a smile of a person with dementia.

---

## 205. Shameful Parade

---

Suddenly, the door connected to the principal's office opened.

Minaho-neesan shows up

「Okay, that's all...broadcast end!」

I put down the camera I'm holding on top of the desk

「...Broadcast...end?」

The half-naked Yukino with her upper body covered in semen asked Minaho-neesan.

Her face is still senile from the afterglow of sex.

「Your sex just now was broadcasted live in the school」

Minaho-neesan laughs

Yukino still doesn't get it.

「You see...this is the『emergency broadcast room』for when a disaster strikes the school In short...the video being shot by that camera is being delivered to every room in the school...

...Finally

Yukino's startled...!

「Congratulations Yukino-san...! Everyone has seen your naked body, sex, and even the face when you cum by everyone. The students and staff of this school...!」

「T-That's a lie?!」

...Yukino's body starts to tremble

「There's no way I'm lying you know? Remember what I have done to you until now...!」

Minaho-neesan is laughing.

Yukino's complexion turned pale.

「Furthermore...in the broadcasted video, Endou-kun's the one supposed to be raping you. Therefore...you lost to pleasure in the middle of the rape, you've become a miserable, unbecoming, the worst perverted woman. Those would be the only eyes that look at you in this school...」

I feel people are gathering outside the corridor.

『Hey, it's here』

『Isn't it the broadcast room?』

『No, it's different from the broadcast room』

『Ah...the teachers are here!』

『It's here as expected!』

『Dammit, they're fucking inside!』

I hear the voices of the people.

『Hey you people...we're in the middle of class! Go back to your classrooms!』

The male teacher's angry voice can be heard...

『What are you saying!...After seeing that much, there's no way you can study quietly!』

『That's right!』

I can hear the voices of the schoolboys too...

「...Since Yukino-san's sex video has been cut off...the male students gather even more. Also...there's seems to be quite a number of boys who ran to the toilet holding down their crotch...!」

So there are guys who wasn't able to hold back from Yukino's gasps?

「Isn't that great, Yukino-san...starting today, you're the Sex Queen of this school!」

Minaho-neesan laughed happily.

Yukino's trembling in despair.

「...Megumi, come here」

Minaho-neesan calls Megu.

Megu appeared on the doorway.

She's crying?

「...Minaho-san, I」

...Why are you crying,

...Megu?!

「...Why does this have to happen...!」

Was it that painful...

For Yukino and I to have sex?...

Is it sad...

「Megumi, Yoshida-kun...I've got to talk to you」

Megu looks up.

...I also look at Minaho-neesan.

「I was a prostitute but, I went to management afterwards didn't I? Therefore I saw a lot of men」

...Minaho-neesan begins to speak calmly.

「The customers of『Kuromori』...it's not always someone like Kouzuki-sama who play moderately. The customers who go crazy on the mansion's『women』 and fall into ruins aren't that few...!」

Go crazy and fall to ruin?

「Getting crazy on the 20s or 30s, younger women...there were a lot of men who lost their wealth and social statuses. Found out by their wife and children... insulated, and now live in small apartments. ...Without status and money, they can't come to the mansion as a customer...those are men who really became alone in their lives」

『Kuromori』...has made a lot of men unhappy...

「I don't feel sorry for those people. I am a manager of a prostitution ring...and we offer prostitutes to customers. How they associate with us is depending on the customer...we cannot interfere with that. Even if we know that their ruin... we never put a brake on the guest's mind. That's just a kill-joy you know. We are selling『dream time』to our customers. We cannot bring our customers back

to reality...!」

Minaho-neesan's looking at Megu and I with a serious eye...

「It's a common pattern for a guest to be too addicted to a prostitute and be in ruins...men sometimes get obsessed with a woman he can't ever understand, he can't ever love...!」

A woman you can never understand and a woman that won't love...  
That's what Yukino is to me.

「A far younger woman who's way of thinking, and sense of values are entirely different makes men on their good years fall in love. In severe cases, they haven't even made their first conversation. In the first place, the minds don't connect. They don't understand each other... And yet...by piling up their skins, the adult man gets addicted to the young prostitute girl...then he goes crazy. He'll throw both his work and family...then spend all his time in the mansion...!」

Un...that thing's true.  
I can somehow understand.

「Those men...they know that the girl doesn't love him, and she will never turn to him. Even knowing that there's nothing but a dark future...he'll still throw away everything and keep chasing the girl rushing to ruin」

Minaho-neesan looks at Megu.

「Megu...understand that there are men like that as well」

...Then.

「But you see...it's not determined that the man who falls for a prostitute is lead to ruin. There are men who notices the importance of his own family and escapes from the temptation of the prostitute. On the contrary...there are wife and children who sometimes regain their husband and father from a prostitute from desperate thought. Both had the『Ties of family』therefore...they come back to their『real house』...!」

...『Ties of family』

「Therefore...Megumi...think that Yoshida-kun's got no choice but to be addicted to a woman like Yukino-san. Then...but still, if you don't want Yoshida-



kun to be taken away by Yukino-san...make an effort to make a『family ties』 You must not just cling to Yoshida-kun in this situation. If you're only a burden to him...Yoshida-kun will go to Yukino-san more and more. ...Not to the『reality』 but to the『dream woman』」

Megu nods slightly.

「And, Yoshida-kun...it's a good thing that you're leaving yourself to your own desires. Reveal your desires even more. Play with various more women. But...if you don't want to make your『family』cry, then see through at the critical moment」

...Critical moment.

「No matter how much you play...don't go to a point where you get too addicted that you can't get away from it. ...Do you want to make Megumi cry again?」

I look at Megu.

Her eyes are swelling from tears.

「No...I don't want Megu to cry anymore」

「This time...it's Megumi's fault for crying. Your other『women』...Katsuko, Nagisa, Misuzu-san, they won't cry from you having sex with Yukino-san. Mana-san...she'll be in bad mood but she won't cry. Everyone understands. That doing it with Yukino-san is only a『play』for you. That you don't seriously『love』her like themselves. No matter how many times you have sex with Yukino-san...they believe that Yoshida-kun would be coming back to his『family』properly...they have confidence that if something happens, they will be able to take back Yoshida-kun even by force. That's why they're fine. Rather, everyone thinks that you should be able to play more...!」

...Minaho-neesan.

「Megumi...become stronger. Polish yourself even more. You're the one with the weakest mind among Yoshida-kun's『women』...!」

「Yes...Minaho-san」

...Megu

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu comes before me and kneels.

「...Thanks for the hard work. I'll clean this up」

Megu takes out a white handkerchief and wipes my penis.

「Now...let's close this down」

Then...she raised my underwear and let me put on my pants.

She clings to my feet tight...

「Sorry...let me do this just for a while. I will surely become stronger...I'll become a strong girl so...!」

...Megu

「Sorry...I'll treasure you. I will treasure Megu」

「No. Yoshi-kun always treasures me. ...Minaho-san is correct, I am weak. I...!」

Megu's determined.

「I won't be jealous of Yukino anymore. I won't be afraid of Yukino. Because...I am Yoshi-kun's『woman』after all!」

I pat Megu's head.

Megu smiled happily to me.

Yukino's looking at that spectacle with a stupid face.

「...Now then, shall we clean up?」

Minaho-neesan told me.

「Un...what to do?」

「There's a wagon over there, isn't there?...Could you place Endou-kun there facing upward?」

I pull the fainted Endou and put him on it.

「Now then...」

Minaho-neesan puts on a thick toilet cleaning gloves and head towards Endou.

「This is strange if the rapist looks like this you know?」

Minaho-neesan removed Endou's pants and exposed his penis.

「Ufufu, the stimulant and aphrodisiac is working」

Endou's penis is still erect even if he's fainted.

「Now then...it's been a while」

Minaho-neesan strokes the penis on top of the gloved hands.

It spews semen in no time

「We've got a proof of rape with this...」

The semen's hanging down...yet Endou's penis is still erect because of the medicine.

「Okay...Endou-kun's prepared now」

Following...she lifts the nearby vase...

「Yoshida-kun and Megumi, go back to the principal's office...」

「Ah, okay」

Megu and I go back...

Looking from the doorway...

Minaho-neesan smashed the vase against Endou's head!

...Guwashan!!

The vase broke hitting Endou's head!!!

『Hey...What! What's that sound?!!』

It seems that the sound was heard even outside the corridor.

「Well then...Yukino-san, wait for a while here. We'll be coming to pick you up soon」

「...Eh?」

Leaving Yukino who's shaking from fear...Minaho-neesan goes back to the principal's office.

Then, she closes the door.

「...I will be responding to the people outside. Megumi, bring the bath towel over there. Yoshida-kun, stay by my side and do according to what I say」

Minaho-neesan instructed us.

Then...this time...she heads outside the principal's office to the corridor...

『Dammit...what's going inside this time?』

『Could it be that they're still fucking?』

『Hey...the key to this room is still not found yet?!』

The male teachers and students are making a noise outside the corridor.  
...That's where.

Minaho-neesan opens the door to the principal's office!

「...I have the key here!」

Everyone's gaze gather at Minaho-neesan who suddenly appeared...!

「Y-Yuzuki-sensei?」

「There's a spare key in the principal's office...!」

Why was she in the principal's office...they wonder.  
Why does she know that there's a key in the principal's office...?  
Minaho-neesan's calm attitude has overwhelmed the people around.

「...I'll open the door, make way」

「Ah...yes」

The middle aged teacher in front of the emergency broadcast room yields the place to Minaho-neesan.

Minaho-neesan puts in the key to the keyhole.

Then the lock opens up.

Cheers of「Oooh!」rose from behind.

Minaho-neesan opened the door.

Inside the room is Endou with the fragments of the vase on his head...

The half-naked Yukino's on the far end.

Semen's dripping on Yukino's face...

Her breasts are exposed.

「...Iyaaaaaaa!!!!」

Noticing the eyes of the schoolboys and male teachers beyond the door...  
Yukino screams!

「Don't enter boys! Yamamine-san...bath towel!」

「Here!」

Only Minaho-neesan and Megu comes in the『Emergency broadcast room』  
Yukino tries to hide her body with the bath towel handed by Megu but the bath towel is too small.

It only hides from her chest to the butt...

「She struck him with the vase on his head to protect herself. That's why he fainted...!」

Minaho-neesan explains the situation to everyone like a great detective...!

「It's lucky that he fell on the cart...Yoshida-kun, could you please carry Endou-kun using this cart?」

Endou's lying face up with his lower half exposed.  
His penis has semen clinging to it and is erect.

「Y-Yuzuki-sensei...just like this?」

The male teacher asks...

「His head has been hit hard. I think that it would be better to carry him in this cart, however...!

The male teacher shudders from Minaho-neesan's strong eyes.

「...W-Well, if Yuzuki-sensei says so」

「Shirasaka-san will come with me too...I'll bring her to the hospital with my car」

Minaho-neesan insists strongly.

「Eh...what about the police? Shouldn't we call an ambulance...?!」

Asked by the middle aged teacher...Minaho-neesan...!

「What do you think would be the future of this child if the world knows this!  
This girl is Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter!」

The students reacted to what was said!

「As expected, she is!」

「Wait, what?!」

「The one that was raped...she was Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter!」

「Wasn't she just moaning, enjoying every moment!」

「A daughter of a pervert is also a pervert!」

「Could it be that she's been exploited by her father?」

「Hey, let everyone know!」

It has completely turned to a『festival』

「Y-You're right...Yuzuki-sensei. If this case gets known by the media, it'll involve the honor of the school...!」

「Now that you know, please open up the way...!」

I push the cart and head the corridor carrying Endou.

「Wow...he fainted?」

「It seems that Shirasaka's daughter beat him with a vase」

「Oh, so that's why...!」

「Hey...his dick's rolled out」

「Uwa...it's smeared with semen, dirty...!」

Meanwhile...Minaho-neesan goes to Yukino at the far back...～

「Now...let's go, Yukino-san」

「...Eh?」

Yukino's completely scared.

「Then, want to stay in this room? If I leave this room open then the male students and teachers would just gather one after another you know?」

...Yukino

「U-Understood. Please take me」

Yukino stands up.

「Oh, she's coming out!」

「Wow, there's semen on her face you know?!」

「Look at her thighs...isn't that dripping wet?」

「That's semen and love nectar?」

「Amaziiiing, they went out a lot」

Yukino heads outside to the corridor exposed to the men's curiosity...  
After all, the bath towel is too small that it can only hide Yukino's half-naked body.

The semen splattered on her chest and on her thighs...

Everything's exposed.

「That sperm...it was in there wasn't it?」

The boy's glance goes from Endou's exposed erect penis to Yukino's crotch.

Rapist and the raped girl...they're exhibited side by side.

Actually...the semen on Yukino's body is mine.

The one inside Yukino too...

But...the spectators don't know that truth.

「Now...let's go. Let's proceed slowly so it won't shock Endou-kun's head」

Then...Yukino's shameful parade starts.

I...

I slowly push Endou's cart and walk the corridor...

On the side...Minaho-neesan holding Yukino's back as they walk.

Megu's on Yukino's side too.

From the spectators viewpoint, Minaho-neesan is protecting Yukino...

Actually...Yukino's being threatened by Minaho-neesan.

No...Yukino can't help but rely on Minaho-neesan or Megu in the current situation where she's surrounded by the onlookers and perverted eyes.

Minaho-neesan goes around the school building on purpose.

As we approach the classroom...there are a lot of students who were watching Yukino from inside.

The boys with their vulgar eyes...

The girls with contemptuous eyes...

They're looking at Endou and Yukino.

All of the students watched Yukino raped.

Even though she's violated, halfway, she was pleased and looked like a nympho.

The person herself is parading through the school building...

「...What's wrong, Yukino-san? Stick out your chest more. You're now the number 1 celebrity of this school...!」

Minaho-neesan whispers in Yukino's ears.

...Yukino

She's walking, trembling...with a frightened face.

But...I noticed it.

A new one drips down from Yukino's thighs.

Yukino...she's aroused.

Her love nectar overflows even during this shameful parade...



We head to the first floor with the elevator for the baggage.

Only Endou-on-cart, I...Yukino, Minaho-neesan and Megu are riding the escalator.

「Hey, hurry down!」

「First floor! First floor!」

The observers hurry down the stairs.

At the moment the door closes...

Minaho-neesan speaks to Yukino.

「How is it? Doesn't it feel good for the perverted and lewd Yukino-san that everyone pays attention to her?」

「...This isn't real. This is a lie...」

「Sadly...this is reality. You have no choice but to live as a perverted girl...Yukino-san」

Yukino glared at Minaho-neesan.

「...Yukino-san. When I give you my cue, pee in front of everyone」

...Yukino

「No way...I can't...!」

「It doesn't matter if we abandon you here. Won't those bloodshot boys gang rape you...?」

「...That's」

「If I pat your back twice...you will pee on the spot. Okay?...」

Before Yukino can respond...

The elevator arrived on the first floor and the door opens.

Getting outside the door...it was filled with spectators again.

Minaho-neesan noticed one female teacher in the corridor.



「Izuyama-sensei...please come!」

If I recall...it's a new teacher who just left the music college.  
The female teacher with long hair and white dress comes here.

「Yes, Yuzuki-sensei...kyaa!」

Izuyama-sensei looks at Endou's erect penis and raised a surprised voice.

「Izuyama-sensei, sorry but could you bring this boy to the infirmary」

Minaho-neesan said.

「B-But...isn't this boy's penis bare exposed?!」

Izuyama-sensei said with a blushing face.  
Since she went to a music college...she should be quite the young lady too.

「It seems that his head has been hit strongly so please carry him as is. I have to take this girl to the hospital」

Minaho-neesan pushes Endou to this ojou-sama teacher on purpose...  
Is it sexual harassment or power harassment.  
The onlookers are grinning and having fun

「B-But」

Izuyama-sensei's hesitating.

「Then, hide his crotch with this?」

Minaho-neesan hands a small hand towel to Izuyama-sensei

「O-Okay」

Izuyama-sensei spreads the towel and tried to hide Endou's erection...  
The hand towel is too small that the erect penis can't be hidden 「...E-Err」

Izuyama-sensei repeatedly slides the fabric of the towel over the penis...!  
...Dopyu!

Endou's penis ejaculated again!

「...Kyaaa!」

The semen drips on Izuyama-sensei's dress

「This is...noooo!!!」

Izuyama-sensei breaks into tears.

The spectators cheered when they saw that!

「Then, Izuyama-sensei...I'll leave this child to you」

Minaho-neesan smiles

「T-That's...!」

A male teacher coming from the second floor speaks to Izuyama-sensei who's confused.

「Izuyama-sensei...we will carry him」

「Yuzuki-sensei...we should just put this guy in the infirmary, right?」

I can tell the ranking among the faculty from this situation.

The staff and the teachers understand that Minaho-neesan's the ruler of this school.

Therefore...they all ask Minaho-neesan for instructions.

「Please get Saito-sensei a medical examination. If ever there's a problem then call for an ambulance...!」

「...There's no need to call for the police, is there?」

The spectators quiet down when the teacher asked that.

Minaho-neesan...

「Endou-kun and Shirasaka-san are dating. It's unknown how far they would play as a lovers...both of the students have their parents causing an incident in the society, you do know that don't you, Sensei?」

「...That is, yes」

Minaho-neesan looks at Yukino.

Then, she pats her back once.

「Shirasaka-san...were you raped by Endou-kun?」

...Yukino

「No...I wasn't raped by Kenji」

...That's right

I'm the one who raped Yukino.

「It seems to be rape play. A quite elaborate mischief. A lewd and vulgar one... and halfway, this girl hit his head with something」

Minaho-neesan declared.

「...Then」

「There's no way we can call the police to this sacred school for such a foolish thing. It's about time for the athletics club tournament soon...isn't it pitiful for the students to have their participation refused?...」

「That's right!」

「We're unrelated to this!」

「Yeah, we were just forced to watch that sex video. Rather, we're the victims here!」

The spectators heat up...!

「Therefore...if in case Endou-kun needed for an ambulance, say that he bumped his head during the lesson. Please try to get matter of the schoolgirl secluded in the broadcast room and having a sexual intercourse from being leaked outside...!」

「Understood...Yuzuki-sensei」

Minaho-neesan looks at Izuyama-sensei

「Endou-kun's penis, it's Izuyama-sensei's responsibility on putting it inside his pants! Okay?」

「Eh...eh, eeh!!!」

Ignoring the flustered Izuyama-sensei...we head to the entrance.  
We left Endou's cart too.  
Then...we get out of the school building...

「Hey...it's her, it's her!」

「Really, the girl from the TV from a while ago」

「...Was she seriously raped?」

「No matter how you look at it, didn't she feel it in the end?」

「Or rather, didn't she cum!?」

The students are looking at Yukino's face from the windows of the school

building.

The boys...the girls...

From each and every window...they send Yukino a glance of contempt  
Yukino...she's walking, looking down with her pale face.

「You can't...Yukino-san Look up...!」

Minaho-neesan ordered her...Yukino raises her face.

「...Hiiii!!!」

Yukino's afraid.

From first to third floor...an unbelievable amount of eyes look down on Yukino.

「...She's a pervert」

「...She's Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter isn't she?」

「...She's beyond saving」

「...That was a creampie」

「...She even fellated herself」

「...Yeah, she was drinking with a lewd face」

「...Could it be that she never gets embarrassed from it?」

「...She should be」

「...But, what would she do after this?」

「...No choice but to die?」

「...The whole student body saw her embarrassing thing after all」

「...She did well surviving」

Contempt, Malice...eyes of mockery.

Hundreds of cold eyes slow Yukino's heart...!

Yukino looks up at the school building and trembles.

「Okay...now, Shirasaka-san」

Minaho-neesan pats Yukino's back twice...

...Yukino

...Shaaa!!!!

She leaked out while looking up at the school building...!

---



## 206. Then, Shirasaka Yukino's an untouchable now...

---

「Wow, that's dirty!」

「She leaked herself!」

The spectators move away from Yukino in panic.

I don't part from her.

Since I don't get away...Megu doesn't as well

「...What will happen to me from now on?」

Yukino mutters as she look up at the sky.

「...Who knows」

I don't know

「Whenever it is...it is up to Yukino-san」

Minaho-neesan answered.

「But...you have always made the worst choice as always...」

Yukino's staring up at the sky absentmindedly.

「A really foolish child...there has been a lot of ways to save you before you fall into this point and yet...!」

Minaho-neesan tells Yukino...

「...Is that really the case?」

「That's right...Yukino」

Megu said coldly.

「Mana who should've been disposed the same manner as you has become happy as Yoshida-kun's『woman』 That girl chose for herself in the end. She chose to come to our side...!」

Yukino...once again looks at the school building...

From each and every window...eyes of curiosity and scorn downpours on Yukino.

Yukino...

「I...I don't deny that I'm stupid」

She mutters as she look up at the school building.

「But...it's fine. This. I am myself...!」

...Yukino!?

「I didn't do anything wrong. It's not my fault. I was just fooled by the cunning ones...!」

Then...Yukino waved towards the school building...!  
With confidence...dignity...!

「...Oooh!」

A cheer come from inside the school building.  
Shirasaka Yukino right now is the school's number one heroine.  
All of the students...were watching Yukino raped...  
No, the scene where she indulge herself in a lewd sex...  
Nobody here doesn't know Yukino...!

「...I won't forget this. This view...this frustration」  
「...Is it frustrating? Yukino?」

I asked instinctively

「Isn't that obvious? I was fooled and was made to experience such cruelty...  
this is frustrating. I will never forgive you people...!」

「...Is it only frustrating?!」

「What do you mean?」

Yukino sent me a glance.

「...No」

I better not tell Yukino...  
Falling into such a situation...she doesn't think of it as『embarrassing』but  
only『frustrating』

Even though her figure she never want everyone to see has been seen by all of the students...

Yukino...doesn't feel 『embarrassed』about it

「You...your world is really centered on yourself...」

To be honest...I think it's amazing she's got this far.

「Isn't that obvious?...It's my life. I live for my own sake」

In the end...this girl...she'll look down on people no matter what standpoint she is in.

Believing that she's special...dominating a high place.

Therefore, even if she feels『frustration』and『hate』from such humiliating experiences...

She won't feel『embarrassed』it seems.

With the pride that's too large and her insensitivity to others...growing up into the consciousness that the Shirasaka family is a privileged class...Yukino has grown up to be this shameless woman.

「...I will never forgive you people」

Yukino tells us as she wave her hands towards the school building windows.

「I'll never forget...I will never forgive you people even if I die...!」

This mental strength...arrogance.

That's what Shirasaka Yukino is.

「It's fine and all but...what do you intend to do?」

Minaho-neesan asked Yukino with a smile.

「I won't do anything...I know that I can't win against you people in my head. Therefore, I will just keep this frustration in my heart. That's all I can do right now...!」

Yukino answered with wet eyes.

「I can't stay in this school anymore...fine. Either way, I will transfer. Any where's fine...better, I'll leave Japan and go to an American school! Let's see...I'll ask Ichikawa Ojii-sama...!」



Yukino said then smiled.

「...Any place will do as long as you people are not there!」

...Yukino!

「I will restart my life to a place where you are not there! Even love...I can redo it! I will become happy in a place without you people. I will show that I definitely can...that is my revenge against you people...!」

Yukino...speaks about a『dream』convenient to herself

...But

Yuzuki Minaho isn't a naive woman that would let that happen.

「My, Yukino-san...I won't let you escape you know」

Yukino froze.

「You will stay in this school...Until graduation. You will continue to spend your life here accused of being a perverted nympho woman by the students. When you get pregnant and your stomach grows bigger, let's have everyone take a look. After that, shall I exhibit your childbirth too? You giving birth before all of the students watching...!」

Yukino turned to Minaho-neesan.

Minaho-neesan's eyes are cold as usual.

All as usual...

In short...Minaho-neesan's serious.

「It's really fun to play with a mentally strong child like you. Your heart won't break for just most things」

Yukino's back trembles.

「Rebel against me more! I will be crushing you thoroughly...I look forward to it...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「It's okay...I will make sure that you won't go crazy. You won't be interesting if you break. Let's have fun for the next three years...!」

Yukino despairs.

「Look...someone came to pick you up」

Minaho-neesan...looks at a car coming from behind the school building.  
That's a black Benz.  
What's in the car is...

「...Eh?!」

Margo-san and Nei-san!?  
Why is Nei-san here...?  
What would they do if Cesario Viola's scout finds her?!  
Nei-san waved at me through the glass window.  
The Benz crossed the ground raising a sand smoke then stopped in front of us...  
The door opens up...  
Margo-san and Nei-san comes out.  
Both of them...are wearing a black leather jacket saying『Kuromori』  
It's the delinquent look at the night city...  
No...Nei-san usually wears a skirt, yet...  
She's wearing a perfect fit leather pants right now...  
...Boots on her feet.  
Her hair is tied up and covered by a hat.  
She's dressed to look like a boy...

「...Shirasaka Yukino, is that you?!」

Margo-san shouts in a loud voice so she can be heard by the spectators from the school.

Margo-san's wearing sunglasses.

Margo-san who's blonde and tall, having a good build can be seen as Yakuza from far sight.

「We came here from the request of boss Kanemoto from Kansai Tatejima Union, we came here to take you. You do know that your father has a lot of debt with boss Kanemoto don't you?!」

The students are shaken by what Margo-san said.

「...Speaking of which, that appeared in the television too」

「...So it's true that Shirasaka Sousuke's related to the gangsters」

「...Borrowing money from the gangsters and he goes wild merrymaking」

「...He can't repay that money so he ran away to Australia didn't he?」

「...No, from the rumors I heard over the internet, he ran away with the gang's money?」

Anyway...it seems that the relationship of Shirasaka Sousuke and the gangsters is totally known by the public.

「You will pay your father's debts with your body! Shirasaka Yukino, you'll be a high school prostitute!」

The spectators spring out from what Margo-san said.

「...A high school prostitute!」

「...Seriously!」

「...Can I fuck her if I pay enough?」

Hearing the spectators...Margo-san

「This one will earn from rich old men! She can't be cheap that can be sold to high school students!」

Margo-san goes in front of Yukino...

Then she takes off Yukino's bath towel...!

「...Kyaaa!」

The remnants of the white blouse Endou torn to pieces was also pulled by force.

Yukino's naked upper body is exposed to the people.

Margo-san holds down Yukino's back strongly.

That's when Nei-san comes in

「...Okay, there you go!」

She pasted a big tag on Yukino's naked back.

What's written on the note...

...『Foreclosure items』

「Listen! This girl is a security for the loan! You don't touch her! Those who try to make a move on her even on secret would be beaten up! That's not all...it would include your friends and family, remember that!」

Margo-san threatens the students!

...That's where.

Yamaguchi, the physical education teacher comes...

「You, weren't you the international student who graduated last year?! That other one's second year, Natou...?! Just what on earth are you doing?! Huh!?!」

Yamaguchi...he's been on the best four on the national Judo convention during his school days so she knows the delinquents of the school.

With his gigantic figure...he's supposed to be the toughest guy in the school.

「Oh...speaking of which, she is!」

「It's the delinquent seniors!」

「Idiot, both of them are beyond delinquent level」

「...They're very heinous」

「There's a rumor of them hunting hoodlums in the town, right?」

「I've seen it...they beat up real Yakuza」

As expected...Margo-san and Nei-san's combination has a well known bad reputation 「As usual...what an annoying teacher」

MArgo-san clenches her fist and steps in front of Yamaguchi 「Hey...you...!?!」

When Yamaguchi responded...it was already over

「...Sha!!!」

Yamaguchi's big body danced in the air and dropped to the ground.

「...Gueeeeeee!!!」

In just one attack...the gigantic figure of the PE teacher was blown off and fainted...

It became a scene to the surroundings...

「You see...I'm working underground...!」

Margo-san laughs.

「Is there anyone here who want to fight the people from the underground society?!」

Nobody's responding.

「Then...we'll be taking Shirasaka Yukino! No complaints!」

...None

There should be none.

「From today onwards...this girl is our『goods』 Those who try to get involved with her don't have a guarantee with their lives...!!!」

「...Hey, get in the car!」

Nei-san pushes the half-naked Yukino on the back seat of the Benz.  
Then, she gets inside the car herself...

「With that said...Shirasaka Yukino's an untouchable...!」

Then, the Benz starts again

「...We'll be recovering Yukino-san from the parking lot for the faculty so don't worry」

Minaho-neesan whispered to me.

「Is it okay to use the secret garage? Nei-san also went out of the surface...?」

When I asked, Minaho-neesan...

「It's about time for the tide to change...!」

...Tide?

「When you shut yourself up, they'll only get behind your back...it's about time we make a different response and take advantage against Viola...」

Minaho-neesan seems to be thinking of something...  
Then...I just have to leave it to her and trust.

「...Return to the classroom with Megumi for now. I will handle the staff meeting. We'll be ending the morning class with this...」

Minaho-neesan said then went back to the school alone.  
I look up at the school building once again.  
There are still a lot of students gathered in the window.  
Everyone's looking at the Benz going away.  
Yukino's right there now...

「Let's go, Yoshi-kun」

Megu gives her hand to me.

「S-Sure」

I hold Megu's hand.

We walk towards the school building.

「...Megu」

「What?」

...I

「Sorry for various things」

Somehow...I can't come up with what to say

「I'm the one who should be sorry...」

「...Eh?」

「Minaho-san...she really knows about Yoshi-kun. No, it's not just Minaho-san... Katsuko-neesan and Margo-san too understands Yoshi-kun. They know so they can calmly watch over you」

Megu...

It seems that she doesn't have the composure to have the confidence.

「Well you see...everyone's smarter than me...I'm a simple man after all」

I answered.

「Everyone can guess how I will act. Those ladies you see...」

「Un, you're right...I had to know that Yoshi-kun would never turn a blind eye at Endou-kun beating up Yukino」

Megu said sadly.

「I thought I wanted Yoshi-kun to act as I wanted. I've been spoiled. I think it's arrogant...Yoshi-kun is Yoshi-kun after all. Yoshi-kun will always act like himself. I liked you because of that and yet...I'm so stupid...」

...I

「But...Megu is just being worried about me as Megu? Then, there's no helping it」

「I...in the end, I was just thinking about my own self...!」

「...I wonder? Megu's worry is all our worry. Megu wants to stay with me

forever...that's why, right?」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「It's fine if you think that you are wrong, we can fix that. We'll always be together so let's take time and get to know each other little by little」

「I...is it okay to be beside Yoshi-kun...?」

Megu's still worried nonetheless...

「...There's nothing good or bad about it. We're together」

I answered in imperative...

「Megu will be with me forever...if Megu's not with me then I would be troubles. It would be sad. I need Megu. Therefore, stay by my side...!」

I embraced Megu.

Megu snuggled close to me.

「...Yes, dear」

Megu replied happily.

...Un

As expected, this is the right answer...

People...each of them have a different way of getting along.

For Megu...she's not confident with her relationship with me.

Therefore, she worries immediately.

Even though there's no problem between us...she'll feel uneasy by herself.

As a result...this early morning sexual addiction symptoms...

Her excessive fear of Yukino...

Then...I'll just become slightly more aggressive and pull Megu...

When Megu's lost and depressed...then I have to pull her forcibly.

Perhaps...in a commanding tone too.

I'll have that kind of relationship with Megu...

「...Yoshi-kun, what are you thinking?」

Megu peeks into my face.

「...About Yukino?」

I pull Megu into the shadow of the shoebox and kiss her forcibly...

「...I'm with Megu. I'm only thinking about Megu」

「...I'm glad even if that's a lie」

I rub Megu's tight ass.

「It's not a lie...kiss me, Megu」

「...Eh?」

「I want Megu to kiss me」

「...Un」

We overlap our lips again...

「...I'm very glad, Yoshi-kun」

「...Why?」

「Yoshi-kun's the one who asked for it」

We embraced each other

「So stupid...Megu just approaches too close before I would even want something」

「Right...recently I've been coming too close to Yoshi-kun a bit too much」

「Even I would ask for Megu once I wanted you」

「Un...anytime. Just say it when you want me...!」

We hide ourselves in the shadow of the shoeboxes for a while  
Embracing and kissing each other...



Now then, when we come back to the classroom...it would be a big fuss.  
Self-study lesson.

The teachers are in an urgent staff meeting.

Everyone's excited on the talk about Endou and Yukino.

Fortunately...Megu who's Yukino's relative and the fiance, me...were left alone.  
It's been told this morning that Megu and Yukino are unrelated...

Therefore...nobody tried to talk to us.

Everyone's excited among themselves.

Tanaka and others left us alone too.

Megu and I held hands and stayed in the corner of the classroom.

Silent all the time...



Sometimes, Megu smiles.

Holding hands was just enough.

We had the『bond』

After that...there was an explanation broadcast from the principal to all of the students.

It was Minaho-neesan's instructions...

Endou and Yukino's case became a malicious prank.

In short...that was just a rape play in between lovers and that was broadcasted to the whole school...it wasn't really a rape.

「Hey, there's no way that's the case...Shirasaka was beaten up seriously」

One of the schoolboys said so.

「Un...Yesterday, everyone was watching Shirasaka ignore Endou in the baseball club ground...!」

「Endou had a grudge on it and that's why he hit Shirasaka I guess...」

「By the way...Yukino-chan was feeling goofy that she was moaning halfway...」

「That's what they call a nympho」

「Could it be that she's done it with Endou before?」

「No, Endou was a virgin...there's no mistake there since he declared it on the welcome party of the new members on baseball club」

「With that said...Yukino-chan has been trained by her perverted father is a much more credible thought」

「I think so too...Shirasaka Sousuke,

There's no way he won't make a move on his daughters」

「No matter how you think about it that should be the case」

「Shirasaka...that fellatio was great」

「Yeah, as if she's an AV actress」

「Showing that kind of technique to a classmate...that's unbearable」

「Idiot, don't make a move on Yukino-chan. Isn't she already a source of money for the Yakuza...?」

「...High school prostitute?」

「She'd be selling high on those rich fat oily men」

「Don't make a move on Yakuza's goods...」

The principal's broadcast continues in the middle of that conversation...

For the time being...Endou and Yukino would be put on an indefinite suspension by the school.

『Either way...this cast isn't a big crime. It is very vulgar and nasty prank but we think that this event shouldn't be reported to the police』

The principal said but...

「Well...I get that they don't want to make this a police case but...」

「Time is time after all」

「It won't be ending well if the activities of the athletics club would be self-controlled with this...」

The principal's judgement on not making a call on the police was mostly accepted.

『Endou-kun and Shirasaka-san who caused this accident...everyone, as you know, their houses are attracting the attention of the media. They've been unstable in such circumstances that they have gone and made such a ridiculous mischief... Everyone, please understand that』

「...You say that but」

「What about the guy who said that they would sell Shirasaka's lewd photos to the press?」

「No...they just took the photo from the screen right? That's too bad that they won't use it」

「Un...there's already those who are uploading over the internet but...」

「What's the net's reaction?」

「...There are a lot of people who are saying that it's a『fake up』」

「Well of course. Nobody would believe at someone saying『the daughter being raped is broadcasted live in front of the students』just in time the father is being reported」

「How about the photos in the corridor after the rape?」

「That's bad...it's too good to be true. There's semen on her face too」

「Un...They would just reply『Isn't this just an AV actress?!』」

「They can't see that as a first year high school girl no matter how you look at it」

「Well, unless you saw the live broadcast like us...you'd normally think of it as a faked information」

For the time being...it seems that the event of Yukino being raped in school won't be spread to the world.  
It'll be kept as a rumor at most.

「Or rather...that video's not left on the broadcasting room?」  
「No way that would be? If he have recorded that then Endou would be a real idiot」  
「No, Endou's a genuine idiot you know?」  
「Well...if ever it was recorded...the school is already collecting it」  
「The 『emergency broadcast room』is connected to the 『broadcast room』isn't it?」  
「They are but there's no such recording system. It's a broadcast room where the principal gives evacuation orders during disasters after all」  
「...I see」

Minaho-neesan...she perhaps have taken a video.  
In case Endou's house sue the school...  
She surely recorded Endou beating up Yukino...  
...Speaking of which  
What happened to Endou?

---

## 207. Aftermath

---

The principal's broadcast continues idly...  
Anyway...They've repeatedly asked not to leak today's event outside multiple times.  
Everyone knows that Yukino's father is making a commotion in the world right now...  
They would want to avoid the bad influence coming to their student life.  
That is especially on the athletics club.  
Even the delinquents don't want to drive their own school to decline...  
It's possible for those who doesn't have friends at school or those who don't love the school trying to talk it to the media but...  
What they can only offer is witness story and indistinct photographs...  
I think it's good enough to be on a third rate weekly magazine.  
Anyway...Yukino's rape live broadcast would be a black history for the current students.

『Students...especially schoolgirls are in great shock. Kondo-sensei, our school counselor is in the nurse office so the students who think they have received a strong shock should go there for a consultation. You can go to your homeroom or club adviser as well. Please consult to someone whom you think is easy to talk to』

...Speaking of which.  
Schoolboys who are familiar with adult videos usually were actively talking about it from a moment ago but...  
The schoolgirls, some of them are silent...there are some who are even crying...  
Of course...  
The sex they saw for the first time was their classmate...  
Furthermore, it was a rape video...some other children are in trauma.

「...Therefore, we have discussed to discontinue today's classes. All of the

after-school club activities are cancelled as well. I'm very sorry for the clubs near the tournament but...please take a rest in order to calm your minds. We the school faculty and staff will be discussing how to deal with this in the future. Tomorrow's club activities will resume as normal however...today, we would like you to leave the school immediately except for the students who wished to be counseled』

The morning classes are suspended.  
The after-school club activities are banned and the students are forced to go home from school.

Yup...this is Minaho-neesan's schedule.

If there's afternoon classes...then we can't respond against Shirasaka family or Viola.

Right now...we want a bit of some time...

「As for Endou...for the time being, someone from his house came to pick him up」

One of the boy who went scouting on the staff room came back and told everyone.

「What's with that...in the end, it won't be a police case?」

「Is this the power of the parents again?」

「For the time being...he's been expelled by the members of the baseball club yet the advisor hasn't handled it yet」

「Then, there's no helping there」

「Endou's father would just roll money and deal with it somehow? Saying that it's donation to the school and baseball club」

「...It must be a big trouble for the uncle and the father when they're in big trouble right now...」

「Then, where's Endou right now?」

「It seems that he's still in the nurse room」

「Won't his parents come to get him and take him out secretly on the backdoor?」

「Well...they can't come home dignified」

「That was some violence shown to all of the students right...」

「Rather than seen...he showed it himself...」

「But...what would happen to Endou after this?」

「For the time being, he's got an indefinite suspension...he might just drop out after」

「For the time being, Endou's father's a powerful local figure」

「Won't he drop out himself before he gets expelled?」

「Rather than that, Endou's father would make him quit」

「That way, the damage won't be big?」

「While the parents are being targetted by the media for the bribery case, his son barricaded himself and raped」

「But, it wasn't rape according to the principal, right?」

「Well, that's just the opinion of the school」

「Actually...well, won't that kind of thing be sticky from now on?」

「Yeah...Endou house and Shirasaka house...both of their lawyers making a thorough discussion」

「At most...won't Shirasaka house make a rape trial for their daughter?」

「Won't they settle it quietly?」

「No...it would become『You've damaged our girl so your son has to take responsibility』」

「No way...they're going to marry?」

「Un...that kind of development might be interesting...」

「Right...Shirasaka was on it half-way of the rape too...」

「Their bodies must be compatible so it's fine I guess. Both of them should just get married」

「If Endou and Shirasaka marries...would you go?」

「No way I would...」

「You're right...it feels like we've already been shown the newlywed's first night」

「Yeah...I think I had enough」

「Or rather...they're a couple I can't give my blessings to」

「No...you guys are impossible for Shirasaka you know?」

「What is?」

「Well...look」

「...Oh」

「...Yukino-chan's taken to the Yakuza's office?」

「She's going to be forced to prostitution after this」

「Well, yeah I guess...」

「Then that means that...it's goodbye to Shirasaka?」

「Is that how it is?」

「No...she'll attend high school at day and work at night」

「Un un...prostitution is a night job after all」

「Nono...she can also do it at days you know?」

「Day time...there's a big discount!」

「Hey hey...since she's a high school prostitute, she has to come to school you know?」

「Right...if she's not a high school student then her value would go down」

「Then...Shirasaka would still belong to our class?」

「Idiot, like hell you can study with a prostitute monitored by the Yakuza」

「Well, you're right」

「Or rather...would you like to stay together with a girl who shows off her sex?」

「We're fine but the girls wouldn't want that」

「Un...that video is a bit too raw」

「Then...both of them are out?」

「Or rather...either way, they won't be coming to our school again?」

「Well, I guess they won't...they'll probably disappear quietly」

「Un...normally, you'd be ashamed to come back」

「We won't probably meet Endou and Shirasaka」

「Or rather, I don't want to meet those shameless people」

「Even if it's not a rape...that's a very shameless sin」

The class say that but...

What will really happen?

Minaho-neesan declared that Yukino will stay in this school...

...Endou

Is he someone that would easily back down?

As I've seen Yukino's defiance earlier...

Endou is also a person who lacks the sense of『embarrassment』just like Yukino

I don't think that they would just fade out from this...

...Then

「Ah...it's Endou」

Speaking of the rumor...

The students looking outside the classroom window saw Endou being taken away from the school building.

The schoolboys flock at the window.

I also join in them and look down at Endou's figure.

「Far from doing it on the back door quietly...」

「He's returning from the place where all of the students can see?」

「Well, you can say that it's very Endou-like...」

「You can't win against idiots...」

...Endou

His head is wrapped in bandage...

His shoulders were supported by men in work clothes and they head to a light van.

The people in work clothes must be from Endou's father's company

The car is perhaps the same.

That's trouble...they came to pick up the president's son

Well, the father...and Endou's prided『excellent lawyer』...

Their hands are filled with the city council member uncle's bribery scandal...

Ah...Endou's looking up here.

I left the window.

It's bad to show myself and arouse Endou in a weird way...

「You bastards! Hey! You motherfuckers! Remember this! I will definitely come back!!」

Endou's shout goes from under the school building...

If someone who doesn't know what happened saw that, he'll look like an insane man.

「Don't fuck with me! Fucking! Bastard! You sons of bitches! Idiot! Baka! Fools!」

He's already messed up.

「...etc., The criminal seems to be speaking incomprehensible things」

One of the boys made such narration.



「Now, botchan...let's go」

「We'll prepare a private room in the hospital...!」

「There are also Marrons glaces, Botchan's favorite」

The employees in work clothes push Endou in the car.

「Dammit! Dammit! Remember this all of you! I will never forgive you!!」

...There's nothing to forgive.

People lacking『embarrassment』are really strong

They insist that「they did nothing wrong」at any time...

「Oh...they're out」

Then...Endou's car starts...

「In his case...shouldn't it be the light van of their house but instead a yellow ambulance?」

One of the boys said.

「Anyway...both of them aren't here」

「Yeah...it's finally quiet」

Then...Minaho-neesan enters the classroom and dismissed the class.

「Earlier, the principal has said it but...for those who feel depressed, you can consult our counselor」

「Sensei...I'm feeling horny though」

One of the delinquents make a joke.

「Then hurry up home and masturbate. What do you think your right hand is for?」

Minaho-neesan's reply is harsh

「Anyway...those who don't have any business then you can go home. Okay?」

「Well fine...it's holiday tomorrow again anyway」

「That's how it is Then...let's see each other again at the end of the golden week」

...Minaho-neesan looks at each of the students in the classroom.

「Everyone, cheer up...」

Minaho-neesan's words were inverse.  
We don't know how to return this classroom to the energetic one.  
We have a fight we have to put our lives on from now on.  
This might be the last time we'll be with the other students in this classroom  
「Then...let's end the class」

Minaho-neesan's words pierce my chest.



「The track and field got a meeting in the clubroom」  
Megu comes to my desk and said.  
「It seems that it'll only take around 15 minutes but...Captain Takeshiba wants to pull everyone together」

Un...captain Takeshiba...  
She hates Yukino's rape broadcast the most...

「Got it...then, should I wait in front of the clubroom?」  
If it's just around 15 minutes...

「It's okay. Yoshi-kun can go ahead」  
Go ahead...it means under the principal's office.  
「...But」

I'm worried about this morning  
「I'm fine already...Yukino's done that much so everyone don't mind me anymore」

Megu said that but...  
「I'll be fine alone. I'll come back once the meeting ends. Yoshi-kun, go back and take it easy...!」

...I  
「No...I'll go with Megu」  
I must not corners at this time.  
I have to be at Megu's side any time.

At the moment I thought it's「troublesome」or「well, it should be fine」...our bond of trust would break  
...Therefore

「I just want to walk together with Megu...let's go」

I tell Megu in a somewhat strong commanding tone...  
Megu stretched out her hand happily.

「...Un, Thank you, Yoshi-kun」

Holding hands with Megu...we head to the clubroom  
...On the way.  
Megu speaks while there's nobody else around.

「...I'm happy」

Megu snuggles to me.  
I kissed the back of Megu's ears.

「Hyan!~」

Megu laughs

「Geez...do that kind of thing later」  
「Un...later」

I smell Megu's hair

「What are you sniffing at?」

「Megu's hair, it smells good」

「...Yoshi-kun smells good too」

「Me?」

「Un...I love Yoshi-kun's sweat」

「I also like Megu's sweat」

「...Eh?」

「When I'm wrapped in the smell of Megu, that's where it feel the most peaceful」

After having sex and embracing Megu, she smells nice.  
The smell of mixed milk and honey...it smells gentle.  
I like that time very much.

「...Yoshi-kun's amazing」

Megu said while blushing.

「What are you talking about?」

「You're getting cooler and cooler. Since earlier, whenever Yoshi-kun speaks, it makes my heart throb...1」

Well...that's because everyone, including Megu taught me a lot of things...

What I learned this morning...『Speak what you think...especially if it's something that would please the other』...

I've learned earlier to『expose my desires honestly...however, be careful not to lose trust by having minimum judgement』

Also...『In Megu's case, I have to take the lead, even being a bit aggressive』...

I'm learning little by little.

How to engage with people and my『women』

「Megu's the same. I'll get better and better」

「...I wonder?」

「That's right. Megu has a very good foundation. The more you polish the more you shine...you're that kind of girl」

「...T-Thank you. Yoshi-kun」

If it was Megu before...

『Yukino's much more beautiful』or『Compared to Yukino?』she'd say

But...she endures it now.

So she won't fall down comparing herself to Yukino...

So her jealousy against Yukino would disappear.

I think that kind of effort is cute.

「Megu's so cute」

「...Really?」

「Yeah...you're very cute」

I kiss Megu

「...I love you. Yoshi-kun」

Megu accepts my kiss.



「Forget everything you saw today! We're women in athletics but our hearts are a samurai! We can't lose our focus just after watching such a thing!」

I can hear captain Takeshiba's voice from inside the clubroom.  
The captain is upset as she's speaking this far.  
Takeshiba-senpai's a tough one.  
She must have never seen a sex video ever.

「We won't have a practice for today due to the school's orders but...try to flex at your own individual homes at least. Those who can run around their home then run. Okay?!」

「Yes!

The club members replied.,

「Second years and the third years who'll go to the tournament...I won't force it but I will be training my muscles in the city's sports center, those who want to come then come. It'll be self-training in the end...!

「Okay, I'll join you up!」

「Okay, then dismissed. Tomorrow, we'll be meeting at the usual time...good bye」

「...Good Bye!」

Then...the club members come out of the room  
The first years went out last as they were cleaning up.

「Okay! Those who want to self-train, let's run to the sports center!」

Takeshiba-senpai comes out so I lower my head.  
Senpai saw me then smiled.

「Ugh, Captain...isn't that 10 kilometers?」

「That's right, let's go ride a bus. Bus!」

「Shaddap! It's better to get ourselves sweaty and our head empty at this kind of times!」

...As expected  
Yukino's video was too stimulating for Takeshiba-san...

「Now, let's go!」

Then...Captain Takeshiba and at least five senior members begin to run...  
Everyone's holding a big sports bag...their uniform and books are inside.  
It must be a big trouble to run 10 kilometers holding such a luggage on their back.

Waiting five more minutes...

Megu comes out of the clubroom

「Yoshi-kun, thanks for the wait」

...We hold hands again

「Bye gals」

Megu says goodbye to the other first years...

「Huh...Yamamine-san, where are you going?」

「This way home, right?」

Megu...

「We've got some business with Sensei for a bit」

「Oh, I see」

「Then bye... See you tomorrow」

We part from the first years who are heading to the school gate...  
We head to the school building...



From the principal's office...we go down the monitor room  
...Then

Mana hugs me.

「...Onii-chan, Onii-chan, Onii-chaaaaaan!」

She must've seen Yukino's video too  
Mana's complex against Yukino is strong.

「Onii-chan, I was lonely...!」

「Yeah, Mana!」

I embraced Mana tightly.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana's surprised.

「I was lonely too. You weren't with me」

「...Really?」

「Yeah...!」

I rub my cheeks with Mana's.

Mana smiled happily.

「Ahn! Onii-chan!」

Embrace her tightly...

I must not ignore Mana ever...

Embrace her as strong as possible as much as possible...

So she won't feel uneasy...

「Yo-chan, welcome back!」

Nei-san is still on her boyish look

...I

「I'm home, Nei-san」

I embrace Nei-san's body too.

「W-W-W-W-What's wrong...Yo-chan?」

Nei-san's in panic.

「Un...it's Nei-san」

Nei-san too...she actually is a person I need to hug as much as possible too...

I understand it after hearing her past last night.

She also needs a hug...

That's why I embrace her.

「What? You want to be pampered by me?」

「That's right. I want to be pampered by Nei-san...please pamper me」

While I embrace Nei-san's plump body...she gently strokes my head.

「It can't be helped...then here. I'll pamper you for a while」

Nei-san happily said.

「Here...pampered~!」

I rub Nei-san's back.

「Ah, that feels great...Yo-chan」

As expected...she's got too many worries that her body's tense.  
There's a lot to know by just embracing...

「...Why did you go out? Even though you could've been found out by the enemy」

When I asked...  
Margo-san who's in the monitor answers...

「There's a slight change in the situation」

...Change?

「It's not Cesario Viola himself but...there's an information that Viola's employed people are checking about『Kuromori』」

Nei-san continues what Margo-san is saying.

「It would be troublesome to the other ladies like Nagisa-san, won't it?」

...I see.

If they investigate『Kuromori』...

Nagisa, and the former prostitutes of『Kuromori』has the danger of being aimed at.

「If we keep on hiding...it's possible that Viola might capture them. Kidnap Nagisa-san and make her a hostage...」

That would be bad...!

「Nagisa...are they okay?」

「For now...」

Margo-san answers.

「They're having minimum guards but we can't afford to guard them openly. That would just advertise that those people have a very deep connection with『Kuromori』after all」

「Therefore...Nagisa-san and others will continue their normal life as usual!



We're trying not to give them inconvenience as much as possible!」

That's why Nagisa doesn't contact me.

Right now...she's refusing contact with『Kuromori』as much as possible...

「But...we can't stay in this forever. Then...there's an information that Viola's side seems to be approaching Nagisa-san. Therefore we used our wild card」

Margo-san...

「If I show up...Viola would concentrate here don't you think?」

「Yeah, once we clearly show that Nei's here...Viola would put his force here. He brought a few people from America after all」

Therefore...Nei-san went out on purpose and let them see her...

The students in the school went home this morning...

「While we're at it...we made a light provocation」

Nei-san laughs.

「I dressed like Kei-chan...!」

So that's why Nei-san's dressed like a man.

「Cesario Viola likes to take on provocations. He's that kind of man」

Margo-san analyzes.

「Now...this is a match!」

---

## 208. Fated ties

---

「Un. Mr. Viola's quite pissed off at this time I think!」

Nei-san laughs.

「I did appear as Kei-chan after all...Viola hates that kind of joke...!」

「Eh?!...But, doesn't Viola himself have a disguise hobby?」

If I recall...he always pretend to be a character on a movie when he does his underground work...

「Viola's a person who won't feel good unless he's the leading part therefore he always disguises for himself!」

...Haa

「Before...there was this young child Viola liked...at that day, knowing that Viola disguised as『Doc』from『Back to the future』he appeared on the meeting place as『Marty』」

「...What's『Marty』?」

「Yo-chan...you don't know Michael J. Fox's role?」

In the first place, I don't know about that『Back to the...』something something...

Because of this, it would be hard for Nei-san to tell the story...

「Oh, it's fox...Fox. Got it」

Fox is a movie company isn't it?

Un...I somehow got it

「...Then, what happened?」

「He's tortured by putting a large headphone playing『Va Helen's』song so loud it would tear your eardrum...in the end, it seems he was electrocuted at the clock tower」

...Hmmmm  
I don't get it...

「Well, it can't be helped...Before Viola appeared as『Doc』he showed up as the leading role『Marty』 At least, if it was『Biff』then he might not be killed...」

Now then...What is『Biff』?  
No...let's not ask.

「By the way...Yo-chan, my manly look completely looks like Kei-chan, doesn't it?」

Nei-san's laughing brightly but...  
I know that it's actually not.  
That is to provoke Cesario Viola, a painful method to get his eyes glued on us...  
Nei-san herself doesn't really want to look like Kei-san I think.

「...I don't know whether you completely look alike. I've never met Kei-san...」

I answer looking straight at Nei-san's eyes.

「For me...whatever you wear, Nei-san is Nei-san...」  
「...Yo-chan」

Tears gather in Nei-san's eyes.

「I don't know anyone but Nei-san. Kei-san...or Kei-san's twin sister Neiko Yasuko-san too, I don't know them. What I know is only you...the always beautiful bright and kind Nei-san...」

「...Uuuuuu...Yo-chaaaaaaaan!!!」

Nei-san jumps to my chest.  
I firmly caught Nei-san's bod.

「...It'll be fine. I will protect Nei-san」  
「Un...Un...thank you...thank you...Yo-chan...!」

I embraced Nei-san's crying back for a while.



「Sorry...this is all I can make」

Katsuko-nee puts down the noodles on the table.

The garnish is omelet and salad.

「I didn't have much time today, I can't afford to take time either」

Katsuko-nee has been watching inside and outside the school in turns since last night.

Last night...Minaho-neesan and Margo-san and Katsuko-nee were taking turns in sleeping breaks but...

Minaho-neesan has been doing school work since morning...

「It's fine when it's just checking the surveillance camera videos but...I also have to check the TV reports this morning and induce the opinion over the internet」

Wow...that's trouble

「Nei-sama is helping out but...she went out with Margo-san earlier to collect Yukino-san. Therefore, I had to manage alone in this room ...!」

Right...

Minaho-neesan has been with us all this time...

「Sorry for being useless」

Mana lowers her head to Katsuko-nee with a gloomy face.

「It's fine...Mana-chan doesn't need to know the work behind the scenes!」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Mana gently.

「...Minaho-neesan's still on staff meeting?」

When I asked...Katsuko-nee operates the surveillance camera monitors...  
The staff room appears on the monitor.

「...It's not over yet it seems」

Wow...Everyone in the meeting are making a sour face.  
Well...Endou and Yukino both have their parents in trouble...  
They can't be easily disposed.

「Ojou-sama's having fun」

Katsuko-nee looks at Minaho-neesan and said.  
Minaho-neesan's participating the conference with her usual cold eyes.

「Minaho...as expected, she's prepared to quit as a teacher...」

Margo-san who's job is to watch the monitor has muttered.

「She intends to completely finish her『revenge』and Nei and Viola's fate by the end of the Golden Week...!」

...Minaho-neesan

「It'll be late if we wait for her return. I feel sorry but let's go ahead...Megumi-chan, help me out here」

「Okay」

Katsuko-nee and Megu line up the Soumen and small bowls on the table.

「Nei and I will continue to monitor so Katsuko-san and Yoshida-kun and others can eat first」

Margo-san said.

「Huh...where's Michi」

Speaking of which, I haven't seen her.

「She keeps on training with her whip on the secret garage...that girl's a hardworker」

Saying that, Margo-san shows the image in the garage  
Michi's swinging a red whip...

Cutting the wind...the tip of the whip splits the empty can into two.

She can easily cut down a steel can...

Margo-san holds the mic.

「...Kudou-san, come back」

『...Is it an enemy attack?』

Michi on the screen immediately replies.

「It's not...it's time for lunch」

『I'd like to do a bit more training before it's too late...』

「You eat when it's time to eat...it's an important job for soldiers」

『...I'll return immediately』

Michi has completely made Margo-san her second master...

「She'll be coming back so wait for her...」

Margo-san really cares about Michi...

No...Michi also needs more『Bonds』...

「...Mana」

Calling her out, Mana comes to me like a puppy...

「What is it Onii-chan?」

She snuggles to my chest so I hug her and pat her head.

「When Michi comes back...tell her『Please become my Onee-san』」

「...Why?」

Mana's making a blank face.

「Mana is a year younger than Michi...there's nobody here younger than Michi but Mana. I think it's hard for Michi to breath since it's all elders」

「Therefore, Mana's going to become Kudou-san's『little sister』is that it?」

「Yeah. Michi's staying with us because of Misuzu's orders for now but...I think we should strengthen her reason for acting with us positively」

「Right...it's better to give her the『want to protect』feeling to Mana-chan who's younger than the older ones like Yoshida-kun and others」

Margo-san agrees.

「But...Mana's got a bigger breast than Kudou-san」

Mana said then rubs the tip of her breast to me.

「It's true that Mana's physically better than Michi but...Mana's much better when it comes to the『little-sister』-ness」

「...Is that so?」

「Yeah. You're very cute」

I say then embrace Mana's body.

「Got it. Leave Kudou-san to Mana. Mana also wants to do something about Kudou-san」

「What do you want?」

「...Kudou-san's scheduled to be Onii-chan's sex partner too right? Kudou-san's

really cute like a doll...and her way of speaking is very interesting so Mana likes her. I thought that she can enter the『Sister's association』...!」

...Mana

「I agree」

Katsuko-nee tells me.

「I think that Kudou-san would be a good partner for you」

「Eh, why...?!」

「It's different from when you do it with Mana-chan...you are actively taking care of her don't you? Nagisa and I are older...Megumi-chan's on the same age...of course, we cherish you regardless of your age but...younger one's have a different way of approach don't they?」

...True

「Not Mana-chan's『Onii-chan』but...try being『Onii-san』」

...『Onii-san』?

「Uhm...Katsuko-san. What is 『Misuzu-san's』standpoint for Yoshi-kun?」

Megu asks...

「Misuzu-sama's a bit sly. That one's very clever and her expression is very abundant」

「...What do you mean?」

Katsuko-nee smiles at Megu.

「She changes her approach to him at that time and at that situation. There are time where she's『a year older Onee-san』who leads him kindly, then there are times where she acts as『the same age girl』on purpose...there are times where she turns completely to a『pet』he controls. She's using all of them perfectly」

Speaking of which...

Misuzu's got a lot of faces.

「Right...she's completely on the『Young generation』leader in front of Mana but...Misuzu-san's very spoiled when having sex with Onii-chan」

Mana states her impressions.

「...Misuzu-san's very charming indeed」

Megu's getting depressed again...

「Megu...stop the habit of comparing yourself to others. Megu has Megu's own charms」

「...But」

I close Megu's lips that's trying to speak up.

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「I love Megu...that's all to it right?」

「...U-Un」

Katsuko-nee

「Megumi-chan...let me teach you something good」

「...What is it?」

「Later, when he have sex with Misuzu-san...after the sex, try handing Misuzu-san a towel and say『Thanks for the hard work』」 Then, smile gently」

「...Smile and hand Misuzu-san a towel?」

「That's right. 『I don't mind it. Thank you for making him feel good』tell your gratitude. Keep it firm」

「...No way」

「If you want to be his lawful wife then you need that kind of skill. 『Whatever happens, I know that this man will come back to me』have that attitude. You can just pretend at the start.」

「Un...you're right, that kind of attitude might work on Misuzu-san」

Mana agrees with Katsuko-nee.

「We may be『sisters』who love him but...we're in a battle competing for him. That fight is to polish the 『woman』in you...1」

Katsuko-nee winks at Megu and Mana.

「So we should steal Onii-chan with our own charms?」

Mana takes on Katsuko-nee's words.

「Okay, I won't lose to Nei-san!~!!」



Mana calls out Nei-san who's facing a pc.

「Eh, me...?!」

「Well, among Onii-chan's『women』Nei-san's the most beautiful! Nei-san is Mana's goal...!」

...Now then

We finally lost the chance to say that Nei-san's still a virgin.

「Therefore...if Megu-oneechan has the time to feel depressed then attack Onii-chan with your own charm!」

「My charm?」

Megu doesn't know what it is.

「You see...Megu-oneechan, you're really the type of woman who likes to devote herself. The same as Katsuko-san」

Mana begins her analysis.

「Very Japanese...or rather, you're a woman who suits taking care of her husband, And yet...!」

「...What?」

「If Megu-oneechan feels depressed at this time...won't Onii-chan be the one who devotes himself to you all the time? I think that's a bad trend...!」

Having Mana talk about what she thinks to someone else...she's really Yukino's sister.

However, unlike Yukino...Mana's overwhelmingly smart.

Her observation and situation assessment are excellent.

Although...Mana's got a too good observation power that she realized that her grandfather and mother didn't love her...

Mana abandoned her family because of that observation.

If that was Yukino...she won't be aware that her grandfather abandoned her and she'll wait for her family's help forever...

Speaking of which...where's Yukino right now?

「You're right...I can't keep troubling Yoshi-kun!」

「Look, you're feeling down again! You would feel depressed if you just keep looking at yourself. Megu-oneechan only needs to look at Onii-chan!」

「...Only Yoshi-kun?」

「For example...what do you think Onii-chan needs right now?」

「...Err」

Megu thinks.

「Okay, time out! Megu-oneechan...Onii-chan doesn't have any chopsticks」

「Ah, sorry...Yoshi-kun!」

That was the talk while they set up the table.

Megu hands me a chopstick in panic.

「...Megumi-chan」

Katsuko-nee talks to Megu.

「You see...what I'm most worried about is『whether he's eating his three meals』 The good balance of nutrition and if it's delicious... Right now, I feel sorry for being able to prepare only this much」

Katsuko-nee said as she look at the Soumen, omelet and salad on the table.

「No, it's enough. It looks very delicious」

I tell Katsuko-nee.

「It makes me happy that you say that」

Katsuko-nee smiled happily.

「But, really...all I'm worried about now is food. I wonder what kind of food I should make for you next...」

...Katsuko-nee.

「Haha, Katsuko-san's like Yoshida-kun's mother...」

Margo-san said from the side then laughed...

「No, you're wrong! Margo-san!」

Mana rebuts.

「Mana...Maika-san's mother never worried about Maika-san's food even once.... Even though she's a food critic, she always leave the food on the house to the maids. Last year...when Yukino-san wasn't home on a middle school trip,

the maid was on day off. She knew that the maid would be absent that day beforehand and yet...Maika-san's mother completely forgot about it and didn't make any meals for Maika-san but...she just said『My, sorry』and laughed it off...」

...Mana

「Sorry...that was a verbal slip」

Margo-san apologized to Mana.

「But, my aunt in Shizouka doesn't do that. She always calls then ask『Are you eating properly?』『What was your meal today?』 Therefore...it's not the parents who worry about food. It's those『who loves you』...!」

Katsuko-nee loves me...

「Mana...my house is like that too. My mother is a woman who doesn't care if I have eaten properly or not...」

I look at Katsuko-nee.

「Katsuko-nee...thanks for the delicious food as always. I'm very grateful」  
「What are you saying...aren't we『family』」

Katsuko-nee said.

That's right...

...We're family

「Katsuko-neesan...thank you very much for your delicious meals」

Megu thanked Katsuko-nee

「Un! Katsun, thanks! I love the meals you make!」

「Katsuko-san...I always thank you」

Nei-san...Margo-san too

「Katsuko-san, Mana will be helping out from now on so please teach Mana how to cook!」

「Yes, I don't mind. Mana-chan!」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「What can I do for Yoshi-kun?」

Megu thinks...

「Hey hey, you're thinking inside again! Megu-oneechan, at those times, you should look at Onii-chan!」

Mana warns Megu.

「Onii-chan...what would you like to drink?」

Mana asks me.

「...Err」

「If it's something cold then there's barley tea and oolong tea in the fridge...!」

「Then...barley tea I guess?」

...It's soumen after all.

「Hey hey, Megu-oneechan...Onii-chan said barley tea」

「Got it, I'll go get it right now!」

「Onii-chan's very easy to understand so just stare at her then you'll easily know what to do!」

「Un...you're right, Mana」

Megu smiled at Mana then heads to the kitchen

...Then

「I have returned...!」

Michi comes up from the underground passage

「Just in time...let's eat」

I talk to Michi...



「Kudou-san...please make Mana your『little sister』...!」

While eating... Mana speaks to Michi

Michi...

「Does that mean you want to be my disciple?」

...Michi

「I'm still inexperienced as a warrior so it's still too early for me to take a

disciple...!」

If she doesn't talk...she's really a cute girl with black hair...  
Her warrior way of thinking is very disappointing...

「Kudou-san. I don't think Mana-chan mean it that way」

Margo-san helps from the side.

「...Then, what does it mean?」

「Mana-chan is asking for your protection...」

Michi puts down the chopsticks.,

「...Protection?」

「Kudou-san...you're 15 years old aren't you?」

「Yes, I'm in third year middle school」

「Mana-chan?」

「...Mana's 14 years old. Second year in middle school」

「A younger girl is saying that she wants your protection. What should a warrior do?」

Hearing Margo-san...Michi looks at Mana's face.

She's actually a year older but...

Their height is almost the same.

No, Mana might be taller.

Mana's completely winning when it comes to the size of the chest.

Mana's tiny boobs is in the middle of growth but...Michi's a complete flat.

When you look from afar...you'll be convinced that Mana's older.

No, Michi's calm and style is somewhat adult, proud.

Anyway...from their looks, that's what you would see.

「I had various things happened to me and I threw away my house and family.  
I can't return to my real family anymore. Therefore...I want Kudou-san to  
become my『Oneechan』...!」

Michi...

「Got it...if that is what you want then I'll become your『sister』 Call  
me『Oneesama』...okay?」

「Yes...Michi-oneesama!」

Michi's spine shivered from Mana's response.

「...Try saying that one more time」

「Michi-oneesama!」

Michi smiled satisfied.

「Somehow...this feels good」

Oh right.

Michi's a lesbian.

「I'm the youngest of three brothers and sisters therefore it feels very fresh to be called『Oneesama』」

Right.

Michi has elder brothers and sisters...

Both of them belong in the Kouzuki security service...

However, her elder sister is still a high school student and yet...she's the top on Japan's Karate wasn't it?

She's a famous Karate girl.

「Then, please take care of me in the future! Michi-oneesama!」

Either way...it's important for Michi to have her『bonds』with us increased.  
I think it's good that Michi and Mana becomes『sisters』

「Once you're done eating...Kudou-san and Yoshida-kun, could you two go to Kudou-san's father?」

Margo-san told us.

「I'd like to have a meeting about our escape from here」

「...Escape?」

「Now that we've used the card showing Nei...there's no choice but to aim for a short decisive battle」

Margo-san said.

「But still...we lack people with combat skills. If possible, I would like to reduce the enemy force」

...Reduce enemy force.

「We'll escape the school in the afternoon then we'll all head to Misuzu-san's presentation. The guards of the distinguished families of Japan would gather there. There's nothing safer than that place」

True...

「Also...we have no power to act decentralized. If we're moving then we have to move as a while. In that process...we have to take out the enemies one by one. I'd like to have everything settled by tomorrow morning」

Does that mean...

We're going to abandon this place and move...

The battlefield would be Kouzuki『Kakka's』hotel tonight...and we are going to take Cesario Viola's head?

Margo-san...

No...perhaps, Minaho-neesan too...

「Uhm...we're all moving?」

Mana asks Margo-san.

「That's right. Everyone's going. If not we I can't protect nor make an attack」

...Un

We can't just split into attack and protect groups.

Those who have fighting capabilities among us are...

Margo-san and Michi only.

「With that said...we're going to bring that person too?」

Mana said『That person』

「Yeah...we're going to take Yukino-san too of course. It can't be helped. Until Kouzuki-san's『reconciliation』with the Shirasaka family ends...Yukino-san is a precious『hostage』...!」

Margo-san answered naturally...

...Yukino.

Yukino's going to move with us too...?!

---





## 209. Junk Sex

---

「Where's Yukino right now?」

When I asked, Margo-san...

「She's in the『confinement room』again」

In that small room?...

「We have to deliver food to that girl too」

Katsuko-nee said.

「I'll go later」

Katsuko-nee and Margo-san have a mountain of work to do...

Megu and Mana, it'll be trouble again.

Megu and Mana...Yukino's sisters have a strong inferiority complex against her...

「No, The priority is for Yoshida-kun and Kudou-san to go meet Kudou-san's father after finishing the meal」

Margo-san said.

「It's okay for Kudou-san to be alone earlier this morning when she brought food but...this time, we'd like to have Yoshida-kun go as the representative of『Kuromori』」

「I'm a representative?」

「If it was a business meeting then I would rather go you see...」

Margo-san smiles wryly.

「It's too dangerous for me, Kudou-san, and Kudou-san's father to be in one particular place in the school...!」

True...if you gather the combat capable people in one place...

Furthermore, if the enemy notices it at that time...

The enemy would infiltrate from a different entrance immediately.

「We even exposed the hidden gate for the parking lot for the staff to the enemy. They're thinking of invading there for now I think. They don't know the route from the principal's office after all」

I see...they released that information on purpose...

That is to put the enemy's attention only there...

「In order to go from outside the school to the staff parking lot, the shortest distance you could take would be through the baseball club's road, where Kudou-san's father is working. Or rather...there's hardly any pedestrian there」  
「But...those from the athletics are running there aren't they? That's why the club activities were postponed for today!」

Margo-san's explanation is supplemented by Nei-san.

I see...this is in order to evade involvement of the students to the battle...

「...Nei, are all the students coming home?」

Margo-san asks then Nei-san switches the cameras from inside the school one after another.

「Hmmm, there are still some who are remaining」

「Once the staff meeting ends...Minaho would make the teachers patrol around the campus...」

「...Will everyone go home by 1 to 1:30?」

「It would be at least past two o'clock when the faculty and staff goes home」

Margo-san calculates.

「In short...we can't escape from the school until 2 o'clock. If we leave this place with someone else left in the school...it's possible that the enemy might mistake them for someone once they invade.」

...Un

「We will be leaving openly once the teachers and the students are all gone. As showy as possible. We'll be pulling all those who were aiming at us to the『national theater』」

Margo-san said.

「But...they might take students or teachers or staff as hostage?」

Is that not possible?

「...Why would they take hostages?」

Margo-san laughs.

「The enemy knows that we're a『Crime syndicate』 They won't just take someone unrelated to『Kuromori』as 『hostage』...」

I see...we're not allies of justice.

Even if an unrelated student or teacher is caught by the enemy...we won't even make a move to help.

That's what the enemy thinks.

「What the enemy knows is...『I don't know what kind of ulterior motive they have but they're hiding in this school』 They don't exactly know the relationship between『Kuromori』and this school too. What the enemy knows is only the content of Iwakura-san's file. In short, Nei and Yoshida-kun are students of this school. But...Nei and Yoshida-kun doesn't have any special close friend inside the school right? Someone who you go with from house to school...」

True...I've gotten familiar with my classmates only on these past few days... Nei-san's an invincible existence in the school so nobody's familiar with her.

「Well...the enemy thinks that they can grab Nei and Yoshida-kun talking to their classmates while going back from school. But...they can't get any information from those children... Yoshida-kun's relationship with Megumi-chan would rise but...Megumi-chan's here. Then, furthermore, Megumi-chan's friend won't be targeted. They don't think it would have an effect on us...」

...I see

「Would my foster parents be okay?」

Megu asks worriedly.

「They should be people under Shirasaka family...the scenario should be『Kuromori』kidnapping Megumi-chan away from the Shirasaka house」

...Right.

「Therefore...The Shirasaka family should be closely monitoring Yamamine-san's surroundings thinking that we would make contact with them. Then if Viola's followers go there...」

...What would happen?

「They're both not idiots to make a meaningless fight. The people on the spot hates exhausting themselves on something worthless. As long as it's not something big...Yamamine-san won't be caught up in combat. It would just end in glaring.」

Megu breathes a big sigh of relief.

「With that said...Yoshida-kun, tell Kudou-san's father that『We would be leaving from the hidden garage at 2:15 with three cars』 The destination is the『national theater』 The selection of the route would be left to Kudou-san's father. He's much more familiar when it comes to guarding VIPs」

Margo-san told me.

「Err...We would be leaving from the hidden garage at 2:15 with three cars... the destination is『National theater』 The route would be left for Kudou-san's father」

「Yes, that's it...please」

「...Yes」

「There's a chance of being heard over when you tell this over the phone. Even more when it comes to mail. Mails could be faked...above all, it's important to have a representative go talk directly. It's fatal if you don't build up a mutual trust relationship...」

...Right

Then...I should go.

Especially now, Kudou-papa attracts the enemy's attention...

We can't let other people go to somewhere dangerous.

「Also...don't forget this. Kudou-san's father isn't on our side」

「Got it...Kudou-san's cooperating with us due to Kouzuki『Kakka's』orders...we don't know when they would become an enemy」

Margo-san smiled happily from my answer./

「That's how it is so please don't talk on any information about us. I'll leave the choice of what to say and what not to say to you. Also...I think Yoshida-kun would be fine but, don't ever tell Kudou-san a lie. It would only confuse him and he'd lose trust to us」

「Okay...got it」

I answer Margo-san...

「Uhm...I'm in the same position as my father however...」

Michi's looking at us with a strange look.

「I am here only due to Misuzu-sama's orders...it's unknown when I would become your enemy」

...Michi?

「And yet...why are you talking about this in front of me right now?」

Margo-san laughs.

「Kudou-san...are you registered in Kouzuki security service, aren't you?」

「Yes...this is supposed to be my first job」

「What's the content of your job?」

「I was told to follow Misuzu-sama's orders」

「OK...then, Kudou-san swore her loyalty to Kouzuki security service?」

「...That is」

Michi makes a confused face.

「You're not...Kudou-san is swearing loyalty to Misuzu-san in the end?」

「...Yes」

「Then, Misuzu-san's...Yoshida-kun's『woman』 Then, Yoshida-kun's a member of『Kuromori』」

...Un

「Then, Kudou-san...whose ally are you? What would happen if Kouzuki security service's Kudou-san's father becomes hostile against『Kuromori』」

「...That is」

「No...what would happen if Misuzu-san turns hostile against Kouzuki-san, her

grandfather?」

...Michi?

「I am Misuzu-sama's ally. I swore my eternal loyalty to her」

「Is that so?...Then, if『Kuromori』turns hostile against Kouzuki-san...who do you think Misuzu-san would ally with?」

Michi looks at me.

「...Reluctantly, Yoshida's side I think」

Margo-san smiled at Michi.

「...Kudou-san, it's about time you clarify your own position. If not, you'd only cause inconvenience to those around you...!」

Michi breathes in

「Are you telling me to become a member of『Kuromori』?」

Margo-san laughs.

「Nobody's telling you that. Actually, Misuzu-san's not a member of『Kuromori』 As Yoshida-kun's『woman』...therefore, she's on our side. That girl's kind to Megumi-chan and Mana-chan, as one of Yoshida-kun's『women』... she's taking care of those younger than her. She's respecting Minaho, me, Katsuko-san and Nei...Yoshida-kun's a member of『Kuromori』too」

「That's obvious...Misuzu-sama shouldn't be a member of a criminal organization like『Kuromori』...!」

Michi said strongly.

「She's not a member but Misuzu-san's our ally. You can say she's a relative. We have that kind of relationship」

To be accurate...Misuzu's owner was Nagisa, but...

Michi doesn't seem to know about Misuzu and Nagisa.

Margo-san is composing the logic from the information known by Michi.

「...Since it's a good opportunity so decide about it when you see your father. If you want to be with the Kouzuki security service, then we don't mind you staying behind with your father. We should be acting without any of our

members in the future...!」

Margo-san said then thrusts away Michi.

「...!」

Margo-san stops Michi who's trying to talkj.

「Don't answer right now...think about it. When you decide something important impulsively you'll regret it later. It's not needed for Misuzu-san's guard to be acting together with us, right? You're a member of Kouzuki security service」

「...Yes」

Michi replied languid.

...Err

Is this okay?

We currently need Michi's power.

As a human...she's not bad either.

If possible...I'd like us to be together, but

...No

That is for Michi herself to decide.

I can't say my opinion.

「Now then...Yoshida-kun」

Margo-san looks at me.

「No...Megumi-chan and Mana-chan too, listen, after this, we have to break through the danger...」

「...Yes」

Megu and Mana looks at Margo-san with a serious face.

「From now on, even just a trivial oversight might become fatal on someone's life. Have the guts to overcome that」

A slight oversight might become fatal.

「There's this famous stage director in London named Peter Brook...of course, Yoshida-kun doesn't know him, right?」

「...Sorry」

「Peter Brook said. ...There are a lot who makes a mistake of feeling『Looking good』『This is going well』when the situation progresses. That's just a mere illusion. But...at the moment you thought『Huh, something's wrong』『Strange』that's not an illusion. At that times, something's really out of order...!」

At the moment you thought it's『strange』...it's not an illusion.

「It's human nature when they think『Huh, something's wrong』but everyone around you is calm, you would think that『It's just my imagination』 But...it would be bad if the situation with the people you treasure become the worst than feeling a sense of crisis」

「...Yes」

「Believe in your own senses...when you think it's『strange』or『something's wrong』don't hesitate and correspond immediately. You don't have to mind the state of the people around you. That is the secret for everyone to survive」

...Un

I engrave it to my heart.

「Megumi-chan, Mana-chan, do you get it?」

「...Yes」

「Understood!」

Both of them nodded big.

「Then...I'll ask you after you eat your meal」

Me, Megu, Mana, Michi...and Katsuko-nee begins our meal.

「You don't need to hurry that much...!」

Katsuko-nee told me who eat the soumen in rush.

「It's still 12:30...the time you're going to tell Kudou-san is 2 o'clock」

...I see

I eat slowly.

「Here, Onii-chan...barley tea」

「Thanks」

I drink the barley tea Mana handed me.

Yup...delicious



「By the way...who's going to bring Yukino's food?」

I'm a bit worried about that.

「...I will go」

Megu answers

「Mana too」

...Mana too

But...to be honest, I'm worried about these two.

Yukino's existence created a big trauma in their hearts.

Furthermore...like this morning...

Megu's instability is infecting Mana...

Both of them are showing symptoms of sex addiction together...

「I'll be going too!」

Nei-san who's facing the PC turned to me.

「I'll take care of her...she's bad at dealing with me isn't she?」

...Un

If Yukino faces Megu then she'll just speak abusively...

If it's Mana...she'll order from a higher position.

Yukino's been treated as a princess by Shirasaka house...she bullied Megu and always treat her sister badly.

But...Nei-san.

When against Yukino, she's stronger.

If she's spoken harshly then she'll just come back harsher...

「Un, I'll ask you Nei-san...!」

Nei-san smiles...!

「Roger! Megu-chan and Mana-chan are coming too...I'll teach you how to discipline that girl!」

Nei-san told the two...

「Megu-chan...why did you heat up when you saw her have sex with Yo-chan?」

Nei-san asked Megu calmly.  
It's Nei-san so it's fine or rather...she naturally asked...  
Megu also answered normally.

「Well...Yoshi-kun looked like he felt really good...」  
「Right...somehow, he looks like carefree with Yukino-san...it looks like he felt better than when he does it with Mana」

Right...Mana too...  
She's been watching over my sex with Yukino in the AV room...  
She was unable to endure and come to me.

「Hmm...I wonder」  
Nei-san looks at me.  
「Yo-chan...what do you think? Does it feel better when you do it with her than other girls?」

...I  
「No」  
I answered clearly.  
「...That's not true」  
「Un...you looked like you felt really good」

Megu and Mana seems to be not convinced  
「That's what I think too」  
Nei-san speaks.  
「That...he feels very good with that girl that won't Yo-chan be different with the other girls?」

Megu and Mana looks at Nei-san in surprise.  
「Look...that girl is not interested in anyone but herself...and she's weak to pleasure isn't she? Then, Yo-chan does his best with her so that girl can just get absorbed in sex. She's drowning in her own pleasure...!」  
The two nods from Nei-san's speech.

「That's why...it may look like much more flashy and much more pleasurable than the others but...that's not the case for Yo-chan, I ask」

The gaze gathered at me immediately

「So...what do you think, Yo-chan?」

...I

「To be honest...I'm already in trouble just responding to Yukino's request during sex with her. She just throws her own desire and doesn't worry about me」

Well...that's what makes it feel carefree.

I know that her mind isn't thinking about me.

「Right...he's always earnest whoever he has sex with. You always do your best to make your partner feel good, right?」

Megu and Mana nods at Katsuko-nee's explanation.

「I think so too...」

「Un...Onii-chan's that kind of person」

「Therefore...I think selfish girls like Yukino-san is his ideal sex partner. Listening to whatever she says...she'll feel good by herself」

「But...what about Yoshi-kun then?」

「Onii-chan doesn't feel good when he has sex with Yukino-san?」

Megu and Mana looks at me.

「Hmm...well, normal」

That's the answer I came up.

「...Normal?」

Megu looks at my eyes...

Err...

How should I say it?

「Sex with Yukino feels like masturbation」

「...Masturbation?」

「No...how should I say it?...it feels like I'm ejaculating with the delusions in my

head?」

「Onii-chan...I don't get what you're trying to say」

Hmm...

The girls don't get it...

「It feels like I'm playing a game」

「...Game?」

「Yeah...I think I'm just bad at saying it. Sex with Yukino feels very irresponsible. I know that her heart won't be for me...I know that she only sees me as a sexual tool. It feels very clear...that we're having light sex」

「Yoshi-kun...can't you have carefree sex with me?」

...Well

「In case of Megu and Mana...I think about various things while having sex」

「Various things?」

「I wonder if it's okay to have sex?」

「It's okay! Or rather, let's have more sex! Onii-chan」

...Mana

「But...Megu and Mana...Misuzu and others, we're going to be together for the rest of our lives aren't we? You would bear a child someday...we can't just have sex like a game」

「...Yoshi-kun!」

...Megu?

「Are you thinking of us that carefully?」

「No...well...we're『family』so isn't that obvious?」

I answered.

「Yukino's only for now. She's that kind of woman so we can have sex without problems...」

「You can't do it with Mana and others?」

「Well yeah...sex with you isn't a game」

Mana's surprised when I say that.

「It's okay to have sex as a game! Mana is Onii-chan's sex slave after all. You

can play with Mana's body as much as you want...!」

Katsuko-nee...

「I've been watching him since the first contact with Ojou-sama but...he has never asked for sex with a girl」

...Speaking of which, I

「During his first rape with Yukino-san...Ojou-sama and I prepared everything, then Ojou-sama ordered him『now, violate Yukino-san』...that's when he does」

「True, you're right. Yoshi-kun never asked to have sex with the girls by himself...!」

「The matter with Mana was also first ordered by Yuzuki-san」

Err...I

「Onii-chan...could it be that you hate having sex with us?」

「That's not true! That's!」

I immediately deny it.

「I just...I had to do sex one after another due to a tremendous momentum, I desperately get myself into it... But, I won't ever have sex with a girl I don't want to have sex with. Everyone's a girl with their own charm...so I embrace them...」

Nei-san laughs.

「In the end...everyone's just asking too much from Yo-chan!」

「...Asking too much」

Megu looks down.

「That's right! Yo-chan's a person who thinks he definitely has to answer when someone asks him...!」

「Right...we're forcing him too much I guess」

Katsuko-nee thinks too.

「No...it's not I'm forcing myself. It's just that the feast comes in one after another so I am desperately eating...」

What am I saying...

「This boy doesn't know how to not finish his meals」

「Un...Yo-chan's a boy who appreciates the whole thing...」

Megu looks at me.

「Got it...Yoshi-kun and Yukino's having only sex where they have bad manners...!」

...What?

「You're right...eating junk food occasionally might feel better」

「But, for Yo-chan...what he feels from having sex with Yukino-chan isn't a pleasant sex...!」

Katsuko-nee...?!

Nei-san...!?

Uhm...what are you all saying...?!

---

## 210. To the next stage

---

「Anyway...Megumi-chan and Mana-chan too, both of you worry about Yukino-san too much」

Katsuko-nee said.

「That's right...Yo-chan treats Megu-chan and Mana-chan much better...and I think he loves you two!」

Nei-san tells the two.

「...I know that but」

Megu answers.

「But...when I watch Yoshi-kun and Yukino's sex...it really feels painful」

I...

「Got it...I won't have sex with Yukino anymore then」

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at me.

「Eh, are you sure about that, Yo-chan?」

Eh...Nei-san?!

「What do you think, Katsun?」

Nei-san turned to Katsuko-nee

Katsuko-nee is...

「I...I don't think you should cut it off with her like that」

「Un...I think so too」

Margo-san joins in the conversation.

「We have hypothesized that Yukino-san is Yoshida-kun's『safe blanket』but

the situation might be a bit different」

Megu looks at Margo-san

「What do you mean?」

Margo-san laughs

「I think Yoshida-kun's feelings he has for Yukino-san is much more complicated. Even at this stage...he doesn't forsake Yukino-san. Even when having sex with Yukino-san, he doesn't take the pleasure one-sidedly like a rapist. Rather, he's working hard to serve Yukino-san. He only makes his own pleasure a secondary」

「...That might be the case」

Megu looks at me...

...I

「Well...that said, I don't want Yoshida-kun to become a man who grabs women calmly to satisfy his own needs only...」

「That is...I think so too」

「Then, Megumi-chan...you do understand that it's not a good idea to make Yoshida-kun and Yukino-san separate immediately...」

...Err

I don't get it...

「Perhaps...Yoshida-kun has some trauma when having sex with a girl...it's a complex」

.....Complex

「Yoshida-kun doesn't ask to have sex with you, right? Or rather...he won't. That's one of his complexes」

...I

「Furthermore...when Yoshida-kun's having sex, he always concentrate with the girl he's doing it with? That's amazing. He always gives priority to the pleasure of the other than his own」

「Yes...he's like that」

Katsuko-nee declares.



「That is for now...I think Yoshida-kun's『women』is yielding good results. Girls, you feel an amazing『sense of security』when you have sex with Yoshida-kun, don't you?」

「That is...yes」

「Mana also feels very warm」

Megu and Mana answered while blushing.

「That is because Yoshida-kun always does his best to not betray your expectations...and he never refuses does he?」

...Never refuses

「When you girls feel uneasy and asked Yoshida-kun to embrace you...No matter how tired Yoshida-kun is, he'll desperately embrace you...!」

Megu and Mana look at each other

「Yes...I think so」

「Un...Onii-chan's always doing his hardest」

Margo-san speaks to the two.

「But...if you continue doing that, Yoshida-kun mind and body would give up, don't you think?」

「...That is」

Margo-san looks at me.

「Earlier, Yukino-san's rape in the『Emergency broadcast room』...Minaho didn't make that event as a part of revenge for the Shirasaka family」

...It's not『revenge』?

「Minaho thought that you'd make up your mind through that event and abandon Yukino-san」

So I would abandon Yukino...

She created such a big event for that?

「Therefore...this morning's stage, the event where Yoshida-kun compares Yukino-san to Megumi-chan and Mana-chan was repeated...」

The sex with Yukino in the AV room and the sex with Megu and Mana in the

classroom.

「Yoshida-kun right now is bearing everything alone right? But, there's a limit to everything...isn't that right?」

...Un

「...Yoshida-kun, you should realize your own limits. You can't save everyone with your own power」

...Margo-san

「You should give priority on who you should save first...who should you protect first...」

I've been told this multiple times up until now.

...Priority level

「If you've got the composure in the situation then of course...you can save all of the people you listed but...if you go beyond the limit... You can't save the people in your order, right?」

...I can't save everyone.

「Even if you're Superman...you can't save all of humanity. Understand that. But still, in order to save more people...you need to dare abandon the people in the lower priority」

...Prepare to abandon

「The initial plan was to have you watch Yukino-san raped by Endou-kun. Therefore, Megumi-chan was in there too」

Then...I would chose Megu and abandon Yukino...  
That was the decision supposed to be made.

「What changed the plan was after observing your sex with Yukino-san in the AV room this morning」

That early morning sex?  
Where Yukino and I cursed at each other...

「That sex was a very strange one. You two should have a relationship of a rapist and the victim...and yet you were having sex like close friends. It's

different from lovers...it's a very strange sex where you have established a relationship of trust although there's no love between each other...」

True...Yukino and I.

We have a strange trust on each other.

「So Minaho noticed that it's not good for Yoshida-kun's spirit to dispose of Yukino right now」

Yukino's supposed to be immediately disposed.

「For Yoshida-kun...Yukino-san is still a meaningful existence. Therefore... Minaho-decided to take Yukino-san this way. For your sake...!」

For my sake...

「Therefore...formally, she made you chose whether you'd go help Yukino-san or not. Of course, she knows that you'd chose to rescue Yukino...to press down Megumi-chan's opposition」

It was all foreseen by Minaho-neesan...

「But still...she wanted you to embrace the choice『of your own will』 It's not fate or the flow of situation...you chose it, don't you?」

「...Yes」

「Then...Minaho and I will be allowing Yukino-san. She's on the list of『women』 Yoshida-kun's trying to protect...」

Yukino's not my『woman』

But...for me.

She's always a『woman』that exists in the『list of priority』in my mind.

She's on the bottom part though.

But still...I

I always am considering Yukino.

「But...from now on, think before you act. Your list is already a lot. It's reaching the limit now」

...Un

「If you go beyond the limit...everyone might die. Make sure you always have the room to keep your『women』where your hand can reach them...okay?」

「...Yes」

I'm dumb...

I don't have any special abilities either...

I should figure the range of what I can do or I would just trouble everyone.

「Megumi-chan and Mana-chan too...it's about time you stop asking from Yoshida-kun always. Think about Yoshida-kun's mind and body limit...」

「...Yes」

「...Got it」

The two nodded small

「I've been prioritizing my own feelings that I've been asking too much from Yoshida-kun, I reflect on it...」

「Mana too...I've been depending on Onii-chan too much」

...I

「No...of course, you can rely on me anytime you feel lonely. I'm here for that reason」

「Thanks...Onii-chan...but」

「Un...we also want to become girls Yoshi-kun could rely on...!」

Megu...Mana...

「I'll try to learn how to endure...and polish my femininity」

Mana said.

「Me too...I'll do my best to become a good wife...!」

Megu swore to me.

「With that said...Yoshida-kun, your list for the time being is...」

Margo-san speaks.

「Nei, Megumi-chan, Mana-chan...Nagisa-san, Katsuko-san...then, Misuzu-san and Michi-san, lastly and a bonus, Yukino-san, is that right?」

Michi's surprised.

「I'm included?」

Margo-san smiles.

「That is the『priority』list of the people Yoshida-kun treasures... Yoshida-kun thinks of Kudou-san as his family long ago and he treasures you...!」

「That is...I understand but...」

Michi falters...

「Margo-san...that's not enough」

I said.

「Oh, right...I forgot Minaho too. Minaho's much older than Yoshida-kun and she's the guardian of the whole『Kuromori』...But she's in Yoshida-kun's list. Minaho's surely pleased ...!」

I...

「No...it's not just Minaho-neesan...you're in my list too, Margo-san...!」

Margo-san's surprised...!

「...Me?」

「Yes...Margo-san's also my treasured『family』 We're relatives. I think of you as my sister...!」

Margo-san...

「Err...I」

Nei-san speaks to the confused Margo-san...

「Maru-chan...you should just say『thanks』at that time...!」

「T-Thanks...Yoshida-kun...!」

I make a list in my heart.

Minaho-neesan...Nagisa...Katsuko-nee...Margo-san...Nei-san...Misuzu...Megu... Mana...Michi...then, Yukino on the bottom.

That is my current family.

The people I should defend...

I should concentrate on protecting these people...

I should make a clear distinction to the other people...

...If not

I won't be able to protect anyone with my power.

I should know my own limit...



After the meal...Michi and I prepares to go outside.

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san switched and this time, Nei-san's going to eat.

「Yoshida-kun...bring this with you」

Margo-san handed me three round go-like stones

There's a switch on top of it.

「It's like a children's『alert buzzer』 If you press the switch, it'll make a tremendous loud alarm after 15 seconds...!」

It'll roar a sound after a time difference...

「The followers Cesario Viola brought were American style...」

...American style?

「It means they solve everything with guns」

...I see

The enemy's supposed to be armed with firearms...

「Even in America...during the first world war, there were a lot of people who returned home without even shooting a gun in the battlefield」

Margo-san tells a story.

「As expected...there's quite a resolution needed to pull the trigger aiming at people. There wasn't a lot of people who can pull the trigger without hesitation」

...I see」

「Therefore...in the current US military, they're being trained to reflexively shoot at something moving. They were trained to pull the trigger arbitrarily before they could check if it was a human」

...Does that mean?

「Of course...there are a lot of mistaken fires as a result. There are many cases

of they mistakenly shot and killed an ally. But, that's the policy of the US army...!」

Margo-san looks at Michi.

「Kudou-san...I think your father told you this but...don't ever make a careless move in front of Cesario Viola's minions. They shoot their guns by reflex. If you shoot your bloodlust straight ahead...you can just be shot」

「...Yes」

Michi answers.

「Yoshida-kun too...don't throw something towards the enemy. They would shoot at that moment...!」

Once you show a chance...they'll shoot.

If you show a will to attack...they won't hesitate.

「This buzzer is used to curve their nature. Place it quietly on a place away from yourself in a way the enemy won't notice」

...Un

「No matter how trained a human is...they will absolutely react to sudden events. That includes loud sounds and light... You can create a chance there」

...I see

「Got it...I will take this」

I put the『Buzzers』in my pocket

「Then...we're going」

When I say that...Nei-san who's eating soumen...

「Take care! I will be feeding Yuki-yuki properly so don't worry!」

...Yuki-yuki?

「It's already decided that girl is Yo-chan's bitch! If she's a human they could be jealous of her right?」

「Ah, that's great! Mana will think of that too...!」

No...Mana

Yukino's your real sister you know...

Are you sure about that...?!]

「Mana will be taking care of Yuki-yuki too...so take care!」

...Is this okay?

...Haa

「Right...if you think of her as not human, then you'd think『who cares』...!」

Even Megu says that.

「Ah, wait a moment...!」

Katsuko-nee runs holding a paper bag...

There's a navy blue suit inside the bag.

「What's this Katsuko-nee」

「That would be the clothes you're going to wear in Misuzu's presentation today...!」

...Katsuko-nee

She's been resizing this while in the middle of this business.

「...Try wearing it for a bit」

I try putting on the business suit.

「Hmm...the length is just right. The sleeves are a bit jammed」

Katsuko-nee marks it with a dress pin.

Following...I put on the pants...

「I have to raise the hem for a bit...after that, there's no problem」

「...Katsuko-neesan」

Megu speaks to Katsuko-nee

「Could you let me do it?」

Katsuko-nee

「Is that so...okay, that helps. Please」

She smiled and handed Megu the pants

「Ah, Mana wants to help out too!」



Mana said that but...

「Mana-chan...can you sew?」

「Err...I've sewn during our home economics class...」

Mana's in low spirits because of what Katsuko-nee said.

「Mana...I will be doing it this time so watch. Next time, Mana will help out」

Megu gently speaks to Mana.

「Un, got it...Megu-oneechan...!」

Mana happily smiled.



「...It's really strange」

Coming out of the school building...Michi told me.

There's already nobody around...

Most of the students have already left the school.

There still some of them left but, the teachers will patrol and drive them out either way.

The teachers would be coming home too then finally...the school would be unpopulated.

It'll take a bit of time I guess.

「What's strange?」

I asked Michi.

「The group 『Kuromori』...Even though it's a group of people without any blood relationship, they're turning to a group united like a『family』」

「Un...we are basically a group of people who lost their family so I think everyone thought that they want their own『family』」

When I answer...

Michi sends me a glance...

「Yoshida...you don't get anything...」

...Eh?!

「『Kuromori』...is gathered around Yoshida. Although they're people who

originally thought about『family』...if it wasn't for Yoshida, they won't be gathered as a group in such a short time」

「Is that so?...I just entered『Kuromori』recently. Margo-san and Nei-san are already good terms with each other back then...」

「But...Shirasaka house's daughter, Mana-san naturally blends to the group as well...」

「It's not Mana-san but Mana...Mana's Michi's『Little sister』after all...」

「...You're right」

Michi's cheeks blushed.

「Before I knew it...I was also caught in the wave of『family-fication』...」

「...We're not forcing you. Michi, unlike us, you have both of your parents...」

「...Yoshida」

「Those who have their family should prioritize their own family」

That's what I think

「...You're right」

Michi mutters sadly...

「...Yoshida」

Michi suddenly called me.

「What?」

「...I will definitely protect Yoshida. Therefore, Yoshida, please think of surviving more than anything else...」

...Michi

「Yoshida is here that's why those people are united. Yoshida right now is a person who can't just die...!」

I can't die...

...Un

I won't die right now.

I have to live until I make everyone happy...

Even if I die, I can't...

「I have to live whatever happens」

「...Yes」

Going from the backyard of the school building towards the baseball club grounds.

On the sloping ground...『Kudou Detective Office』is parked...

In front of the van...

Kudou papa doing radio exercise alone...

「Oh...what's wrong?」

Kudou-papa smiled looking at Michi and me.

「Father...I've brought lunch」

Michi said then I hand over the paper bag Katsuko-nee gave., 「Hm...what's the menu?」

「It's soumen...!」

「Oh...I wanted something cold and refreshing...!」

Kudou-papa's pleased.

He put the plastic container in the paper bag in the ice.

I brought over the soumen for several people, omelet and salad...

Michi brings a flask with cold barley tea.

「Also...a message to Kudou-san」

When I say that...Kudou-papa.

「Get in the car...we'll talk inside」

...Err

Kudou papa covers his mouth with his hand and whispered to me.

「...Do you know lipreading? If it's here, the enemy might know what you're talking about...!」

...Oh.

Doing a radio exercise in a place where the public would notice...

It's being watched by the enemy already.

Rather than that...he's purposely making the enemy's eyes concentrate here...

「Well, get in」

Kudou-papa...opened the slide door of the van.

...Then.

Toni-san is sleeping like a log.

「Hey, Tony, wake up! It's food! Food!」

Tony-san gets up.

「Fwaaaaaii, boss...!」

They were observing 24 hours in turn...

「Norma too, stop what you're doing and come here. It's food!」

「...Please wait a moment」

Norma-san is facing a laptop in the driver's seat.

「Now then...what's the message? Let me hear it first」

Compared to yesterday...Kudou-papa seems to be a bit blunt.

Well...he's been watching outside since last night...

It can't be helped...

「Then...I'll speak」

I told him what Margo-san said.

「『Kuromori』members will be escaping this school with three cars from the hidden garage for the staff at 2:15. Everyone will be on it. Nobody will remain in the school. ...The destination is『National theater』 The route heading there would be left to Kudou-san's judgement...!」

Kudou-papa looks at me.

「...A complete withdrawal?」

Before I could answer...Michi speaks.

「『Kuromori』is prepared to resolve everything by the end of today...!」

In short...we'll take Cesario Viola's head today...

「...Well, that's not a bad judgement. If you just shut yourself in here, the situation will only get worse...!」

Kudou-papa said.

「...Is that so?」

When I asked...

「This is a good hideout but...you people have more people closed up in there than what's planned, right?」

True...it might be a bit too much

「If you shut yourselves in there, you'd be lacking in food and daily necessities and the stress would accumulate. It can't be helped that you aim for a short-term decisive battle...!」

That is a pro's judgement.

Then...is Cesario Viola thinking the same thing?

「Kouzuki old man made a『final battleground』with pleasure...so you have to settle it only tonight at the hotel...you guys and Viola...!」

As expected...that's the case.

「...Boss!」

Norma-san speaks up from the driver's seat.

「What's wrong?」

「Pattern Blue!」

...Her voice is tense.

「We've been glaring at each other last night, we're getting quite frustrated... they're the same it seems」

Kudou-papa looks at me.

「It seems you came at a bad time...!」

...Does that mean?!

「...Enemy attack!」

---

## 211. After school battle x field

---

「Norma-chan? Do you know who's the enemy?」

Kudou-papa asks Norma-san in a joking attitude.

「...No matter how you look at it, it's Norinco connection」

Norma-san answer while looking at the monitor.

「There's three cars heading here. All of the cars are packed up with a combat personnel. You can easily tell that they're dangerous at a glance...there's also a person who has a Chinese Broadsword!」

...Chinese Broadsword?!

「I see. It's about time the Japanese gang cooperate...The guys who were hired are from the foreign gang staying here illegally」

「Yes boss. They're the type of people who does anything as long as there's money」

In short...it's not Japanese but a huge number of kung fu master attacking in full force?

「You don't know? Recently, there's a case in Shinjuku's business district where a foreign organization and those with Chinese Broadsword killing each other...in terms of brutality, they're far more dangerous than Japanese」

And those guys are heading here?

「We've arranged three surveillance cameras on part time workers on the nearby main street. Then...the mechanism is to notify us as soon as anyone strange comes in」

Kudou-papa says that but...

That part timer is not a normal person.

There's nobody from the Kouzuki security service guard department but Kudou-

papa, Tony-san and Norma-san...

Kudou-papa actually have a lot of staff moving in the background.

「Norma, issue the first class alert...!」

「Yes boss. First class alert will be issued...!」

Norma-san presses something on her laptop.

「...What should be the strategy code name?」

Kudou-papa answers.

「The strategy's name...『Phantom Hurricane』!」

Michi nods...

...Err

What should I do?

「Boy...who do you think hired that foreign gang group?」

What we're opposed right now is...

Cesario Viola and Shirasaka house...

「...Viola's side」

I answered

「Why do you think?」

「Shirasaka house has been gathering the attention of the media right now so they won't hire an organization of a foreign gang」

Well...they're guys who would do whatever as long as you pay for it but...

A subtle control won't work so they can't stop if they turn reckless.

If the media discovers the relationship of those guys to Shirasaka house...they'll only be criticized by the public again...

「Shirasaka house doesn't have a merit to attack us directly right now I think...」

If they would...then they would quietly send someone to assassinate Minahoneesan.

There's no way they would do it by three cars.

「Then...if they were people employed by Cesario Viola...what's the purpose?」

...That is

「Feint? While attacking upfront with a dangerous group...they would have a separate force attack from another location?」

Kudou-papa laughs.

「Nice...that possibility is very huge!」

Therefore...it's a first class alert.

Kudou-papa's subordinates placed around the school are all alarmed...

「No...I don't think that's the case」

Michi speaks up.

「Cesario Viola doesn't have the reserve capacity to put out a separate fighting force.」

...Eh?!

「There are five subordinates coming from US confirmed to be Cesario's subordinates. Among them, the manager, Lorenzaccio Bandini has no combat capabilities. One of them was taken down the other day. The remaining three... the two of them are Romeo Montague and Guiliano Jenka」

And the last one is Cesario Viola himself

There's no confirmation however...

「Cesario Viola is fluent in Japanese but the other two can only speak English. I think it's impossible for the two to take leadership in Japan」

True...it's hard to find a person who can communicate in English and sneak into the enemy territory together.

「How about the possibility of Viola himself making a business trip? Since he's fluent in Japanese, he might lead the army himself」

Kudou-papa asks his daughter.

「Cesario Viola is a very careful person. At this stage...I don't think he'll come by himself」

...I see.



「No...if Viola becomes the command tower, he can use Romeo and Giuliano too. Those who can speak Japanese just speak that and Romeo and others will speak English. There's a possibility of them putting all the pieces together and attack all at once?」

No way, they're all going to charge?...

「That's impossible」

Michi denies it immediately.

「Viola has no merit even if we're beaten down in this place」

...Eh?

Cesario Viola came to Japan to take back Nei-san didn't he?

If he fulfils his goal then he won't mind taking the hard way?

「...Fufu」

Kudou-papa laughs.

「You're right...Kouzuki old man is hanging a huge carrot after all」

「What does that mean/」

I asked.

「This time's expedition started with Viola's personal grudge. The proof is Viola bringing only a small number of subordinates from US. All of the expenses are shouldered by Cesario Viola. Japan has a high exchange in favor of Yen so the cost of stay is expensive!」

I see...to take away Nei-san...

To kill Minaho-neesan and Margo-san...

Viola doesn't have money at all...

「That's where Kouzuki-san set up his game. A game where he bet his own life」

Tonight's confrontation at the hotel.

「That's effective...if he outwits Kouzuki-san, it would be a good publicity in Japan. On the contrary...There might be someone who's already going to assassinate Kouzuki-san」

Nei-san has no financial value however...  
Kouzuki『Kakka』does...

「Viola himself may insist but the manager...Lorenzaccio Bandini won't allow this money making scheme. The other two too」

I see...nobody but Viola is interested in Nei-san.  
Viola's subordinates came together with him to Japan but...while they're at it, it's better for them to make money and raise their name  
...Wait?

「Then...why do this foreign gang are attacking us right now?」

If the decisive battle would be at night...there's no need to purposely bother attacking.

「Scouting...they're throwing in sacrificial pawns to find out our fighting power?」

Hearing his daughter...Kudou papa...

「That might be but...the important is the other one」

...The other one?

「They want to cut down our fighting potential even for a bit at the night battle...」

With that said...

「This foreign gang is a decoy...and they're attacking to chink our strength」

The enemy's target is...Kudou-papa, Michi...and, Margo-san if possible.  
In short...our own fighting power.

「Therefore...we will stop them with all our strength」

Kudou-papa said.

「While fighting the foreign gang...they will aim at us. Perhaps, a sniper. Right now, I'm monitoring all of the points where you can snipe in the area. And if possible...deal with the sniper」

「...A counter attack」

「That's right. Even if it's Romeo Montague or Giuliano Geneca or both. If we

can take care of them here...the battle at night would be easier」

...I see

「At most...there's only one assumption」

Kudou-papa said.

「Cesario Viola might be much more stupid than we think. If he's a man who attacks all out at this stage, then I can't give him credit. Also...」

「...What?」

「What if Viola brought other men from the US?」

I see...there's that possibility too

We've confirmed that there's five people under Viola coming to Japan...

If there are members who are at Japan from other flights.

This assumption would overturn the foundation.

「Therefore...we have to consider the possibility that there's a separate force that will come attacking...」

Even if the possibility is only 1% we have to think of countermeasures...

「This isn't a game. Make a mistake and someone will die. You may be ready to die but...if someone dies because of your naïve judgement, it feels unpleasant...boy」

Kudou-papa told me.

「We can't deal if there are five skilled criminals in Romeo Montague class... Kouzuki-san has decided the hotel battle today so we can't increase the staff numbers further」

If you extend the deadline until the decisive battle...Viola will definitely call his people from US to Japan to kill Kouzuki-san.

Before that happens...they set the date to『tonight』

「As expected, America is far away」

「But...father, if they were in Los Angeles, they could reach here in just twelve hours」

Michi said.

Kouzuki『Kakka』declared the decisive hotel battle midnight last night.

There's more than twelve hours until evening today.

It's physically impossible to call a reinforcement from Los Angeles...

「Don't be stupid, there's the time difference you know? Even if you organize a unit to send here, it's in the middle of the night there so they can't do anything. Criminal organizations aren't army. If you talk about a number of people, you can't just pack them up and send them immediately. On top of that...your pride would be as big as your power. Just because they're ordered to『come to Japan right now』, it's impossible for them to jump on the plane on that same day...」

Un...I'd sleep early at night and depart next morning.

「Because of that...that would be only a selfish assumption in the end」

Kudou-papa changes his previous remark easily.

「It's possible that Viola already have 200 people flying over here right now... you can't ignore that possibility too」

...It's not good to be fixed.

「You have to think of all of the possibilities. If not...you'll only assume the favorable, and at times you go timid, you'll only think of disadvantageous assumptions. Humans are that kind of creature...!」

Kudou-papa laughs.

「That's why...let me and Michi deal with those foreign gangsters. Okay?」

「Yes...father」

...Wait

「Assume the enemy have firearms.」 It'll be Kudou-style level 3G」

「...Roger」

...U-Uhm.

「What should I do?」

Kudou-papa looks at me.

「This Titan Boy is completely bulletproof. Just wait inside」

...What?

「Tony, Norma, go and eat first. Make sure to leave some for me too!」  
「Roger, boss」

Tony-san said then opens the lunch we brought.

「Let's eat, Norma-san」  
「My, soumen...it's properly cooled up too!」  
「Boss...please come back before the ice melts」  
「...I know!」

Then...three suspicious cars come from the other side of the road!

「Let's go, Michi-kun!」  
「Yes, father!」

Both of them jump out of the Titan Boy...!  
W-Wait a moment.

「Tony-kun, press it」  
「Hasta La Vista」

Tony-san pushed on some switch  
...Then

...Zubababan!

The ground in front of the car blows off!  
The three cars stopped suddenly...!

「First move wins!!!」

Kudou-papa crushed the windshield of the car with the iron pipe he's holding!  
The foreign gangsters inside the car descends the car shouting some unknown language!

At the moment the man holding the Chinese broadsword raised his sword...he becomes a prey for Kudou-papa's iron pipe!

「Fuahahaha...Secret Technique, Sand Dust Windmill!!!!」

Kudou-papa hits the enemy by swinging his iron pipe...!

「Our boss doesn't use any special weapon」

Tony-san speaks while eating Soumen...

「『Kudou Detective Agency』is the sign on our van...he always wear something flashy doesn't he? He's questioned by the police every day. The content of the car is also being checked」

「Therefore, he fights with anything that's in the location like that...」

Norma-san said while slurping the soumen.

「In the first place...that's just a normal looking iron pipe but it's carefully selected for it's strength and lightness for combat...」

Kudou-papa seems to be a human who looks playful but actually a serious one at root.

「But, if you devise the hole in the iron pipe...when you swing it it would make a swinging sound right?」

「That's right, it seems that he devised various things so it would sound good」

「He's obsessed on things that strange」

「Doesn't that iron pipe have a name too?」

「If I recall...it's called 『Douglas Cue』...」

Kudou-papa blows out two enemies with his continuous skill!

「...Secret Technique『Double Head Snake』!!!」

The two subordinate stares at their boss while slurping soumen...

「Where did he came up with that name...?」

On the other hand, Michi...

「...Red Bute!!」

Michi uses the red whip she got from Margo-san...

She's completely used to it, it seems...

She's beating down the enemy while not allowing them to approach her...!

「Still...Kudou-style really is...」

「Yeah, no matter how you look at it...they look like a hero show on a department store roof」

Tony-san...Norma-san.

You people say that...

「You can only see them as playing around from a distance right...」  
「That might be the correct answer in some sense」  
「But...isn't it a bit idiotic?」  
「Well yeah. I can understand why boss' elder daughter doesn't accept『Kudou style』」  
「The younger daughter seems to be having fun though...」  
「Michi-san's a daddy's girl after all」

Michi's red whip kicks the enemy like she's dancing...!

「Hai hai hai hai...haiyaa!」

After deciding the technique, make a sudden pose...it's really Kudou-style like  
「Really...she looks cute」  
「...She's in combat group」  
「Or rather...musclebrain?」  
「He's not thinking of anything but how to fight coolly」  
「Even though half of it is thinking of fashionable things...」

Un. It feels very disappointing...

「By the way...Tony-san, Norma-san, you do not fight?」

I tried asking.

「Well, we're...」

「That's not included in our contract...」

...Contract.

「We're specialized in brain labor」

...Err

「...You're not skilled then. Do you fight?」

「We only acquired basic fighting tech but Norma」

「...What」

「No...Norma-san's called the『fighting demon's wife』locally」

「Geez...that's an old story」

「Therefore, when it's really hopelessly dangerous, Norma-san will sally forth but...think of that situation as the worst」

「I won't fight. That's what I signed for!」

Nroma-san sips the soumen while huffing in anger.

「D-Dangerous...!」

One of the foreign gangster on the back takes out a pistol.

「Go push」

Tony-san pushes another switch

...Then

Sparks blows up from the Titan Boy's body.

「That's just fireworks...it's to cause dizziness」

Tony-san calmly says that then...the enemy holding the pistol was distracted for a moment.

「...『Mirror Knife』!」

Kudou-papa picks up a stone and throws it on the man's head!

I don't know how he came up with that『Mirror』or『Knife』but...the stone hits the man's head and he falls behind.

「Secret Technique『Otstritch's lake!』」

Then, Kudou-papa swings his iron pipe and jumps into the enemy!

「Gabracho! Gabracho! Gabugabuuu!!!」

Making an incomprehensible shout...he secures the pistol that fell on the ground while crushing the enemy.

「Why...when you think that it's a copy made in China? Isn't this Mon P228?」

Err, Kudou-papa holds the pistol.,

「SIG Sauer P226...this is a hit!」

Then...Kudou-papa shoots calmly!

...Dakyuun!

...Baririn!

The window of the enemy's car behind cracks



「In the first place...I don't know where the bullets will fly with my skill...!」

He shot for the second time!

...Dokyuuun!

The bullet shoots the ground!

「..... ! ! !」

The foreign gangster flinches.

「Now...do you still want to continue?」

Kudou-papa closes the distance with the enemy.

「A pistol on the right and an iron pipe on the left...then an outright lie from my lips, life is on my back!」

「Father...what are you saying?」

Michi comes to the enemy while swinging her whip.

「Young ones doesn't need to know!」

Kudou-papa holds the pistol ready again...!

The gangster directs the people around...

It seems that he's giving a『withdraw order』

「...Hmm」

The foreign group put their fainted companion in the car.

It's jam-packed inside the car originally and now it got further packed...

They ran back in the car...

There's someone screaming from inside the car.

Either way...they were cursing at each other.

「Shut up!」

...Dakyuuuun!

Kudou-papa makes another warning shot...

The gangsters fell silent.

Thirty meters away from us...

The car turned then they ran away...

「...Now then」

Kudou-papa looked around for a while

「...Michi, hide!」

At that moment...Kudou-papa and Michi jumped into the grass!

...Bashu!

Bullets were shot on where Kudou-papa was a while ago!

...It's a sniper!

「3 at 42...!」

Tony-san tells someone over the radio;

『...Okay, we're taking care of that』

At that moment...a woman voice comes from the radio.

「Watch post...status report」

Tony-san instructs...

『1 to 12...no abnormalities』

『12 to 26...nothing』

『26 to 38...no abnormalities』

『38 to 50...42 secured one. Nothing else』

『50 to 60...no oversights』

...At least, there are five observing the surroundings.

Tony-san opens the car's sliding door.

「Boss...secured one sniper. There doesn't seem to be any combat」

「Roger...Tony」

Kudou-papa and Michi gets up.

They've jumped out from a far place from where they jumped a while ago...

They're trained on this too...

「I know that we would be aimed at while those foreigners withdraw...Snipers aim at the gaps in mind after all」

Kudou-papa said.

「Yes, we've been constantly moving so that we won't be aimed at while in

battle...」

I see...then

Kudou-papa and Michi never stopped and continued their attack.

「Them too...at the moment he shoot, we all concentrated. There's a chance created」

At the moment the sniper pulled the trigger...Kudou-papa's people defeated the sniper?

「Tony, who secured it?」

「Neko-senpai」

「...Her?」

「She's on her way right now」

「Neko-san's post?」

「Mizutani-san will be taking over」

「...Well fine」

...Then

A flashy mini car comes in from the end of the road.

The mini car painted in lame pink color.

Inside the car is...

...What?

A small child is holding the steering wheel...

...Before long.

The mini car arrived in front of us.

「Thanks for the wait...I've caught the sniper!」

Coming down the car...is a girl you can only see as a middle school student.

Or rather...isn't she an elementary schoolgirl?

She's wearing a flashy shirt brand for elementary school girls now.

Both of them have a black and pink lame shining.

「Is this one really Kudou-san's subordinate?」

When I asked Tony-san...

「Yes, Neko-senpai...Kaneko Kanako-san...38 years old」

「...Thirties!?!」

A sneaker hits my side!

「You! Don't talk about my age!!!」

Neko-senpai seems to have thrown the sneakers she's wearing...

「Who cares about that...show me the face of the sniper」

Kudou-papa tells Neko-senpai

「Is it Romeo Montague or Giuliano Genca?」

If it was the killer Cesario Viola brought from America...the fight tonight would be easier.

「...That is」

Neko-senpai shows the enemy lying on the back of the car to Kudou-papa  
「Well...isn't this Lorenzaccio Bandini?」

...Cesario Viola's manager?

「Wasn't Lorenzaccio Bandini not participating in combat?」

Kudou-papa said...Norma-san...

「Ahahahahaha, it looks like it was a fake info...!」

...Hey hey...?!

What the hell!?!!!!!

---

## 212. The sixth placer in Ohio

---

「Speaking of which...I just remembered this now」

Norma-san's startled.

「If I recall, Lorenzaccio Bandini's file says that he placed sixth in 1990's national rifle championship in Ohio state convention」

A sixth placer in Ohio...

Just how much skill is that?!

「Is that from LAPD?」

Kudou-papa asks Norma-san.

「No,it's not on LAPD. It's from the FBI...」

Kudou-papa clicks his tongue...

「Why did you not check something that important?」

「Well...it's 1990...and he's just sixth in Ohio you know?」

Kudou-papa throws the iron pipe on the ground!

「You, are you underestimating Ohio!!」

「No...I don't. This is a 20 year old matter however...」

「He might've become better after 20 years you know?! Right now, he might be on third place!」

...I feel that Ohio's unrelated to this however.

「Didn't I tell you to list it and make a report no matter how small it is? Hey, Tony-kun, I asked Norma-san didn't I?」

Neko-senpai...

「Well well...that doesn't matter Kudou-chaan~ We've secured the enemy so

no problems this time」

「Shut up you loli babaa!」

Hearing Kudou-papa...Neko-san snaps off.

「Don't call me Lolibaba!」

「Then shut up! This is a very important talk right now!」

Kudou-papa glares at Norma-san.

「...Norma-kun's working under Kouzuki security service, under my『guard department』. Either way, you're under me...」

「...Yes」

Norma-san is listening at Kudou-papa seriously.

「Norma-kun's responsible for herself and I don't care whatever you do after you do the job posted on you. But...You're under me right now. You have to follow my ways...」

Kudou-papa's words are strict.

「My way...they often say that I take too much time preparing or that I've been wasting too much thinking on all of the possibilities. It didn't start just today. Norma-kun and I have been doing this business since kindergarten...!」

The area becomes quiet...

「I don't care if people on the same line of work make a fool out of me. Even if the clients tell me to eliminate waste, I don't intend to stop. No matter how much reduced my share is...I take my time on investigation. That is my policy. I don't overlook no matter how small it is. I know a lot of people who laugh at me but lost their lives on a simple mistake...!」

「That is...I know but」

「No...you don't get it! Just a single oversight can give birth to a decisive mistake. Our work has mistake meaning someone's death. It's not just my or Norma-kun's life. It's the life of our important allies. What is it like to keep other's lives...think about it again...!」

Norma-san...

「I'm very sorry!」

She bows her head with a half-crying face.

「Don't bow on me! Apologize to Neko and others!」

Norma-san bows her head to Neko-san...

「Neko-senpai...I'm very sorry! I'm really sorry for making a half-baked report!」

「Un...well, be careful from now on」

Neko-san answered kindly.

「Yes...thank you very much!」

「Apologize to the others too!」

「...Y-Yes!」

Norma-san heads to the radio...!

「Don't do that! You should go to each one of them and apologize!」

「Y-Yes!」

「...Buy a canned coffee and hand it to them! Got it?!」

「Yes...I'll be going!」

Norma-san starts running...

She's going to all of the people surrounding the school and apologize directly?

「...That's some spartan education」

Neko-san leaks a sigh and said.

「Norma and Tony were asked by Kouzuki old man to be our intelligence specialist」

That's why the two doesn't fight.

「It's the worst timing right now. When you get used to the work and site, your intuition would work... Unintentionally ignoring the basics of investigation. By thinking『It's okay to ignore this much』...You'll fall into a huge pitfall...!」

「...True」

Neko-san mutters while looking at Norma-san's back growing smaller.

「Both Neko and I have noticed various things since we had a lot of allies who died. What you need to survive... I'd like Tony and Norma to realize that before someone dies. If possible...by themselves」

「...As usual, you always look after them」

「...Is it bad?」

「No, it's not...that's what I like about you」

Neko-san laughs.

「...Let's eat. We've got some Soumen」

「There's only your share, right?」

「Eat Norma's share. It's good if there's no soumen when she comes back」

「...Is that for education too?」

「...Yeah」

Neko-san points at her light car.

「What about Lorenzaccio Bandini inside that?」

「Leave him alone」

「...Seriously?」

「He's fainted and bound, right?」

「Yeah...he won't wake up within two hours」

「Then, leave him...we would like to know whether Cesario Viola would move and retake the captured Lorenzaccio Bandini」

「...I see」

Neko-san laughs.

「Tony, report on radio. Maintain the first class alert. The others would understand with that alone」

「...Yes」

Tony-san heads to the radio in the driver's seat.



Kudou-papa looks at me inside the car...

「Boy...let's talk for a bit」

「Ah, sure」

「Michi-kun, get in the car」

「Yes...father!」

Neko-san whispers to Kudou-papa.

「...Who's that?」

「『Kuromori's』rookie」

「Really?...I can only see him as a『dick slave』or a『Card Role』」

I...

「Hello...I'm Yoshida. I'm just a normal high school student」

Really...I'm useless.

I myself think so.

「Oh, hello. Call me Neko」

「...Sure」

Her voice is kind but Neko-san's eyes are wary of me.

Well...I must be a sore thumb on a criminal organization main on prostitution like『Kuromori』

Michi comes beside me.

「Don't be afraid...stay calm, Yoshida!」

...eh?

「Yoshida right now is here on behalf of『Kuromori』...!」

...Right

No good...

「I'm telling you to stop making that face!」

...Michi

「What's going on? It's my first time seeing Michi-chan scold a boy」

Neko-san laughs.

「Or rather...Michi-kun's talking so closely with a man... Papa's a bit shocked」

Hearing her father's words...

「W-We're not close!」

Michi's in total denial.

「Well fine. Girls would lose it sooner or later...」

When everyone's inside the car...Kudou-papa closed the door.

This titan boy is said to be bulletproof.

For the time being...we're safe here

「Tony-kun, you already ate yours?」

「...Yes」

「Then, Tony's on watch」

「...Roger」

「Lean your ears here」

「Yes」

「Norma-kun too, listen!」

『...Yes boss』

A voice comes from the speaker

She must've put the phone on hands-free so she can listen to the conversation inside the car while walking.

「Neko...eat the soumen. I'll take care of these」

Kudou-san recommends the soumen to Neko-san

「My, looks delicious...then let me take a sip!」

Neko-san begins eating.

「Now then...first would be you, boy. Do you understand the reason why I

scolded Norma-kun so much?

Kudou-papa stares at me.

「Well...the information about Lorenzaccio Bandini until now is that he's a manager without any combat capabilities...the people on alert didn't expect Bandini to come...so I think that the attitude to precaution was different」

「Is that all?」

...Err

「If it was known that Bandini had an experience in rifle shooting...then the need for measures against a sniper would've been larger...」

「Is that all?」

...Err

「For the time being...that's all」

...Fuu

「But, that's big. It's important for those who are alert to know who's their target...the rifle's much more important. 」

「...Yes」

「Or rather...sniper rifle is something you need to learn properly with your body」

Neko-san said while sipping noodles.

「The enemy right now is a group of killers from Los Angeles. Most are young boy gangsters rising in the poor district of Los Angeles. Well everyone's used to shooting guns...there's a lot with an experience of shooting people with a pistol or getting on a gunfight at short distance...but it's normal that they're fundamentally unable to shoot a rifle」

...I see

「Nowadays, there are those children of hunters who shoot a rifle since childhood...what about in the army? Just like this time's case, if you're not someone with an experience in rifle competition you can't be a sniper...」

「For a sniper, the rifle and the bullet are expensive. An ordinary criminal won't reach that foot easily」

Neko-san adds to Kudou-papa's explanation

「That's why, we look up at the enemy force's file in advance, if there's no military personnel then we usually eliminate the possibility of a sniper. Kudou-chan didn't ignore it this time. This man sends a man even when he knows that there's only a single percent of possibility and knowing that it's wasteful」

That's why Neko-san and others were posted on identified sniping points beforehand.

Therefore, Lorenzaccio Bandini carrying a rifle was immediately noticed and was caught.

「But...as expected, we're also humans. If we believe on the small chance of a sniper, we go check it. To be honest, everyone was acting in anticipation of a raid from a separate force...」

「Yeah...if Neko wasn't in the area, Bandini might not have been caught. Or rather, it's possible that Michi-kun and I get sniped...」

「Therefore...it's stupid to overlook the information that there's someone experienced in using the rifle on Cesario Viola's subordinates」

...Is that how it is?

No, even Kudou-papa thought of the possibility of the sniper appearing even a little.

「Even if a sniper appears, then a separate force succeeded in the feint, it would mean that the skill of the shooter isn't that great?」

Neko-san laughs at Kudou-papa.

「That's right. Therefore...I instructed you to capture the sniper at the moment he shoots」

That's why only a single bullet was shot.

Kudou-papa and Michi avoided it though.

「But...In the case of this sixth placer in Ohio, he should've been caught before

shooting. It's dangerous to be seen by that man on a scope」

...I see

「Therefore...that lady on Kouzuki Security Service has to be apologizing to Kudou-chan and Michi-chan the most. And yet, to give priority on the people doing the outside work...Kudou-chan's an adult」

「That's not how it is. If she doesn't apologize to Neko properly, Norma-kun next time would be underestimated by her companions. It would be troublesome. If such a subordinate turns to a rumor, it would hinder my future activities. I'm not thinking about you people...」

「What are you saying. Kudou-chan's so sweet. If she's under me, she's fired right away...!」

「...I can't let that happen. She's an important asset given by Kouzuki old man」  
Kudou-papa leaks a sigh.

「By the way...what's the reason why you gave the soumen to only me?」

Neko-san stares at Kudou-papa

「Neko...you like that car?」

Kudou-papa looks at the car holding Lorenzaccio Bandini.

「I do but...either way, that's just a camouflage for work. I'll do it if Kudou-chan needs it...!」

「I'll compensate for it」

Eh...what's going on?

「...Kudou-chan, you're really amazing. I didn't think that far. I just took this foreigner like that」

Neko-san said in frustration.

「...Tony. Does anyone have any information on spotting other Cesario Viola's subordinates?」

「No, there's nothing」

Kudou-papa looks at Neko-san.

「Cesario Viola's right hand manager is caught. If this is out of their expectation then isn't it strange for them not to take any action?」

That's right...normally, you'd desperately try to take him back but...

If he's the manager, then he knows a lot of information about Viola...

「Tony, move Titan boy. 30 meters to the school side. Get away from Neko's car. Do it slowly...

「Ah...okay」

Tony-san starts the car's engine.

「This car is made to be explosion proof so we can be at ease at least」

...Does that mean?!

「...Does that mean that there's a bomb in Lorenzaccio Bandini?」

Michi speaks up.

「We're not sure...if it was me, I would do that. Normally, you'd interrogate Lorenzaccio Bandini when you catch him don't you? If you make him explode at that moment...」

Then all of the interrogators would be killed by the bomb.

「But...would Cesario Viola do that far? It's his own right hand you know?」

Neko-san speaks up...

「『Lorenzaccio Bandini doesn't participate in combat』that was the info. Then won't that make...『Lorenzaccio Bandini is Cesario Viola's right hand』a lie too?」

...Ah

Is it a trap/

Was Lorenzaccio Bandini sent to be caught by enemy on purpose?

「The subordinate caught yesterday was interrogated but there's hardly any useful information. Viola's precise on his measures. Then...there's no way for him to let his manager have a rifle and go alone?」

...If Bandini is really an important man...

There's no way he'd be put to such danger.

「But, Bandini's the only one with a known face among Viola's organization, right? The job won't be done unless you pass it to Bandini」

Neko-san says that but...

「If it's just『face to face contact』everyone can do it. It doesn't need to be Bandini, he can be replaced by someone else. In the end...Bandini's only that kind of existence...and the judgement and all the work is done by Viola himself」

...In that case.

「Father. In that case, the 5 person group who came to Japan from Centrair airport with Lorenzaccio Bandini...」

「They brought Bandini who has a known face on purpose...it's a fake to attract our eyes」

In the first place, everyone took the fake name of each member of the Beatles  
In short...it was all a fake from the start.

「Cesario Viola went to Japan separate from those five people...we don't know how many he has brought...!」

「Are we going back to the drawing board?」

Neko-san said disappointingly

「Perhaps, Bandini doesn't notice that he's a human bomb」

「That might be. Cesario Viola doesn't have expectations on a sniper that placed sixth in Ohio...」

As expected...Ohio's sixth is no good!

『Boss...everyone's not here!』

Norma-san's voice come from the speaker.

『I came to apologize but everyone's not here!』

Hearing that...Kudou papa.

「That's obvious. We're in first grade alert, like hell you can make contact on your allies!」

...I see.

The enemy knows who's the『person in charge of caution』

『Eeh?!』

Kudou-san...

「Come back already! Don't panic, and do it slowly!...Also, don't approach Neko's car. Okay!」

『Yes!』

Then, at the moment Norma-san replied

「Boss...a signal came out」

Tony-san shouts.

「From how?」

「Gun-san!」

「As expected...they found a guy tailing Norma」

As expected, Norma-san is being tailed by Viola's subordinate.

「It was right to let Norma go...if it was earlier, we won't know that the enemy is an exploding human bomb. Making Norma go divides the enemy concentration to two」

「Right...until the enemy chasing after Norma grasps our number and faces, the enemy will hold back from blowing him up」

Neko-san mutters.

「Give Gun a blue sign. Don't interfere even tailed. Also, turn Rascal to follow. I doubt it but Gun might have someone tailing him too」

The person going to identify the one tailing might also be tailed so he's going to send a person to check it...?!

「We don't know the number of enemies we have so we have to assume all possibilities」

「Roger!」



Tony-san faces the laptop.

「It's gotten easier now...you can use emails」

「But, don't write anything concrete. It's easily reproduced even if it's erased from the memory」

「It can't be helped but send only cryptography...if you give out detailed instructions, only those who doesn't have any reading comprehension would know how to do」

「Well, right...now then」

Kudou-papa turned to me.

「After revealing his skill...I want to hear the boy's opinion」

My opinion?

「No...I'm just a normal high school student...and a stupid one to include」

「Just say what you think from what you see...we've got the analysis and judgement」

「...Haa」

「Actually...when delivering breakfast, Michi-kun reported me the details of『Kuromori』and Cesario Viola. It's about that Nei girl...」

...Michi

She was listening to Nei-san's story last night.

Then she told Kudou-papa this morning.

Perhaps...Minaho-neesan knows that Michi will report to Kudou-papa so she let her deliver breakfast.

Then...Margo-san sent me here this time...

She thinks that it's unavoidable for Kudou-papa to possess some information.

Rather, she might be thinking that an amateur like me is suited for this.

I don't have any special knowledge as someone in the underground society...

「What do you want to know?」

「What...it's easy. What do you think about Cesario Viola?」

...What?

「Err...someone I can't know the true nature. His image doesn't suit him...」

I answered honestly.

「His image doesn't suit?」

「Yes...this is only from what I've heard from Nei-san, it seems that Cesario Viola's a vulgar and violent homo. However...from what I've heard from Kudou-san, he looks like very clever and punctual...」

Un...it doesn't match.

「You think so too?...Actually, I do」

Kudou-papa mutters.

「Viola's personality can't be grasped completely. It is as if there's two Viola...」

Two Viola?

「Earlier...if the violent Viola is the real one, then he'd just leave the planning to his manager, Lorenzaccio Bandini. Furthermore, Bandini has the quick wits enough to control Viola」

...But

「Viola made Bandini disposable. In short, he didn't have that much power in the organization...in short, all of the planning and execution is done by Viola himself」

「But...somehow, he's eccentric and impulsive from Nei-san's story...I can't think of him as an intelligent person at all」

I think.

「Right?! But, in an organization like Viola's...the top man won't be approved unless he has some talent...」

If he's just eccentric and impulsive...nobody would follow him.

「You guys...how about you think about it once you've emptied your heads?」

Neko-san told us.

「Cesario Viola's not even a real name, right?」

「Yeah...it seems. His real name is」

「Fabiano Katou. He's an Italian-American, right?」

If I recall, that's what Nei-san said.

「Forget about that and just think about Cesario Viola's name」

...Neko-san

「『Cesario Viola's』a woman's name」

...What?

「Tony-kun's detailed about this, right?」

Neko-san talks to Tony-san.

「Yes. She's a character in Shakespeare work...!」

Tony-san told us smiling.

「In Shakespeare's comedy『Twelfth Night』, the female protagonist『Viola』was dressed as a man and introduces himself as『Cesario』」

「In short...『Cesario』and『Viola』are names of one girl. The『Viola』as her girl's name, and『Cesario』as the man's name」

...What does that mean?

「The fake name of Viola's dead sister is also from Shakespeare. 『Rosalind Orlando』 『Rosalind』is the main character of『As you like it』...As expected, it's a character that can be turned to a man by dressing up 『Orlando』is the name of her lover」

「『Orlando』isn't only on Shakespeare. It's also in Virginia Woolf If I recall, it's about a hermaphrodite who kept living for 300 years」

Neko-san said.

「『Viola』equal『Cesario』and 『Rosalind』and『Orlando』...They are symbols of transgender and sexuality」

「Why would they make such a code name?」

Tony-san asked curiously.

「Either way...Fabiano Katou is a criminal who's not who he claim he is...!」

Kudou-papa mutters.

「I don't know who they are but, the person who thought of『Cesario Viola's』  
code name must be in a higher position」

Neko-san speaks.

「Right. Fabiano Katou is a leader of a mere execution force...then I think  
there's a smart boss who's organizing the whole organization separately」

The boss of the organization is someone other than『Cesario Viola』?

---

## 213. Oyako Daka

---

「Tony-kun, could you summarize the characteristics of『Cesario Viola』we currently know?」

Neko-san asked Tony-san.

「Err...first is his real name...」

Tony-san tries to recite Viola's profile.

「No no...That is Viola's『information』 What I'm asking is his『feature』」

Neko-san smiled.

「...Features?」

「That's right. What kind of criminal Viola is?」

「Err...he's a boss of a criminal organization that receives work from people to threaten, cause mayhem, and murder...whenever he goes to the scene, he's always in disguise so his real face is unknown」

「That's right...Viola's real face is only known by the executive class of the organization. Why would they do something so troublesome?」

「That is...Viola has a habit of disguising...he's sexually perverted...and he's a human with a strong makeover desire...」

Tony-san replied

「...Do you really think so?」

「...Eh?」

Kudou-papa helps out

「Don't tease him too much...someone who major in criminal psychology at college gets his head stiff when taking on at FBI's profiling method」

「...It seems so」

Neko-san looks at me.

「What do you think?」

...I

「It is so they can change to another person anytime? Since you don't know his face, nobody would notice if they become a different person」

「...Correct」

Neko-san's face gets serious.

「Why do you think so?」

「Well...they used Lorenzaccio Bandini as a sacrificial pawn, right? Then the story about Bandini an important person in the organization and him being Viola's manager is a fake. Then, isn't there a possibility that Cesario Viola himself is a fake...?」

Neko-san nods.

「Yeah. It's possible that the original Cesario Viola...real name, Fabiano Katou is dead long ago and we're dealing with another generation's『Cesario Viola』...!」

The mysterious boss...Viola might've been replaced already.

「But...Then who in the organization tells『This one's Cesario Viola』?」

Tony-san asks his doubt.

「That is...according to Nei-san, she said that on the old days, her sister, Rosalind and Lorenzaccio Bandini are the only ones who know Viola's identity...」

Viola appears in disguise at the meeting place with the members of the organization.

The other members doesn't know who Viola is because of the elaborate disguise.

Then...Rosalind and Bandini points him and guarantees...and that's how Viola functions as the organization's leader.

...But

Rosalind died on the shootout with Kei-san.

Lorenzaccio Bandini became a human bomb on the mini-car over there.

「...There must be some others who know which one is the disguised Viola is. Even if they knew, they pretend that they can't until Bandini points him out. In the end, they leave the surface to Rosalind and Bandini and there's a guy who's hiding inside the organization...」

Kudou-papa mutters.

...I see.

Blending among the other men...someone's instructing Viola from the shadows...?

「We now know that Lorenzaccio Bandini wasn't an important person in the organization. If there's someone making instructions to Viola other than Bandini...Then perhaps, there's someone among Viola's men directly connected to the organization's big boss」

...I see

「No...that guy might be the big boss himself」

Neko-san said.

「Right. Pretending to be a subordinate and staying by his side...but actually, that guy might be the top of the organization directing Viola」

Tony-san speaks in excitement...

「Though it's possible...isn't that taking it a bit too far? Won't the real boss not do a job that would make his hands dirty?」

Kudou-papa rejects Neko-san's theory『Boss is the subordinate』...

「However...at this stage, there's no way we can make a decision. We should just deal with all of the possibilities right now」

Kudou-papa leaks a sigh.

「Then...what should we do with Lorenzaccio Bandini in my car?」

Neko-san asks for Kudou-papa's judgement.

「...Leave him」

「Leave him like that?」

「We'll leave him like that for two hours...we'll check whether the enemy would

really come to pick up Bandini., If the enemy comes then we'll completely block this road and leave him until night」

「...Why?」

「It's troublesome if Lorenzaccio Bandini really has a bomb set up. The bomb removal team of Kouzuki security service isn't familiar with this case...Yamaoka on the integrated guard division is a muscle brain. If we take Bandini there carelessly...then he might just blow up!」

「Right...it'll be troublesome if Kouzuki security service building is blown up」

Tony-san speaks.

「Let Shige's group monitor Bandini. They're not going to be taken to the battle tonight anyway」

「Roger, Kudou-chan」

Neko-san answers.

「Bandini won't die if he's detained for a day. We can't afford interrogating a sacrificial pawn right now. On the contrary, if we take hold of a false information, it would be troublesome...」

Well, he's an adult so he'll be fine even if he's trapped in a car.  
It's sunny today but it's not that hot.

「Either way, it'll be settled tomorrow...no, it'll have to be settled...!」

...Tomorrow?!

「Now then...we've exposed our hands this far but...」

Kudou-papa looks at Michi

「...What do you think, Michi-kun?」

...Michi

「...I've understood how father thinks about thinks deeply and prepare for it.  
It's a very good reference」

「Don't say taht」

Kudou-papa answered coldly.

「...Michi-kun, do you want to enter this kind of world?」



...Eh?

「...If possible, I'd like to succeed father's Kudou style」

「This is unrelated to Kudou style...what I'm doing right now is underground business. Also...it's only danger and the income isn't suitable」

Neko-san looks at Kudou-papa

「Should I go out?」

「No...stay. I'd like Neko to be here」

Kudou-papa tells Neko-san.

「Unlike me who's doing underground work...you can be a regular member of Kouzuki security service like Etsuko, Shinichi, and Haruka. They're official bodyguards. Their salary and holidays are guaranteed. They also have a veto power to unreasonable work. They get a social status too...but」

Kudou-papa stares at his own iron pipe that was put aside.

「There's nothing here. You're not allowed to go to the surface...and yet, you always stand next to death」

「Father...do you regret it?」

Kudou-papa laughs.

「Don't be stupid...I like this so I took this road. Even if I'm reborn a hundred times, I will go to the underground world. That is my mission」

「Then...Me too...」

Kudou-papa stopped Michi.

「...Don't be easily swept away by the sentiment of parent and child. Let me be clear. I have no regrets on my way of living. But...I don't think I want my daughter to follow the same path as me...!」

「...Father」

「Above all...you've already decided your road, right?」

Michi...

「Yes...I would like to devote my life to Misuzu-sama」

「Then, go that way, I will stay here...!」

「However...there are still a lot of things I have to learn from Father!」

Michi desperately holds to her father.

「...There's nothing like that!」

Kudou-papa throws it away in a single phrase.

「What's ahead is only a road of carnage...didn't I tell you a while ago? Everything will be settled by tomorrow. What do you think that means?」

「...Father?」

「We...Yamaoka and Etsuko, the people at Kouzuki security service headquarters...were ordered by Kouzuki old man to『exterminate』 But...the meaning of『exterminate』differs between them and us」

...The meaning differs.

「Those from headquarters...they're okay as long as they have protected Kouzuki old man from Cesario Viola and send him away to America. Their『exterminate』is 『to repel』 But, our『extermination』...!」

Neko-san speaks with dark eyes.

「Kill Cesario Viola and his colleagues!...Everyone of them that came to Japan. That means we won't let anyone alive by tonight until tomorrow morning. That is the『extermination directive』we underground people received from Kouzuki-san...!」

So they will go with the intent to kill...!

「Michi...I don't want you to kill people」

Kudou-papa said with a calm face.

「...Father」

Michi looks down.

「If you're going to live as Misuzu-ojousan's guardian...then everything I've taught you until now would be enough. The true essence of Kudou style ancient martial arts can be exercised in the battlefield. What I will be teaching you are techniques to surely kill people. I don't want to teach you that」

Therefore...Kudou-papa always show tricks that looks like he's playing around.

「No...I already know. The secrets of Kudou style」

Michi looks up at her father's eyes.

「I've discovered father's hidden『secret book』 I can't use it in actual combat but...I continued training it」

「...I see」

Kudou-papa's words are clogged.

「I'm sorry...it caught my eye not knowing what father thinks...please forgive my impoliteness」

Michi bows her head to her father.

「No...it's fine. Knowing it and using it is different. It is for you to decide on how to make use of the skills you've learned」

Kudou-papa forgave his daughter.

「But still...I can't allow you to go run after me and do underground work. You follow Misuzu-ojousama That would be your『Kudou style ancient martial arts』」

「...Father」

「I've shown you my underground this far because if you're going to be guarding Misuzu-ojousama, then you'll be in the position using people from the underground like me and Neko」

As a legitimate guard...she'll handle the people in the underground.

「For that sake, it's better if you're familiar with the way underground people live, work, think, and behave. Thus I've put you by my side until today」

Kudou-papa looks at Michi's red whip.

「Let me see that」

Michi handed the『red bute』to her father.

「Nice whip...who gave you this?」

「『Kuromori's』Margo-sama」

「I see...」

Kudou-papa pulls the whip to check its strength...

「I've been advised that weapons like this are better than a hammer...」

「An appropriate judgement. This is a weapon to protect people. A weapon to

keep the enemies away...the color's flashy too I think it's a good weapon for a guard」

Kudou-papa returns the whip to Michi.

「We people underground don't hold weapons that can be seen as weapons from outside. So the enemy won't be wary...so you can infiltrate. You're out when there's a body check on the way. But...the guards should have weapons that are easy to know. Extend your whip so everyone can know the wonderfulness of your whip Spread the image of『Misuzu-ojousama's guard's red whip is frightening』 That would be your and your lady's first barrier」

If Michi's strength is known by the world...half of them won't attack Misuzu.

「But...you need another skill in addition to your whip. 『Secret Technique』 A sure kill skill when the enemy thinks that you're going to attack with your whip. If you have such a『secret technique』it would be useful in times of emergency」

「...Understood, Father」

「Michi-kun, this will be the last advice I will give you」

Kudou-papa smiles.

「With that said...Neko. Michi-kun's my daughter...don't drag her to underground business. Sorry but you will also deal with it. If you try to scout her secretly, I won't end it with just a sorry」

「...I know. Kudou-chan」

Neko-san said.

「I also have a son. Even I...it's too late for me to make a fuss on doing such work but...I don't want my son to do this job. I will tell the others. Nobody will pull Michi-chan in the underground work...ever」

「...Sorry but, please」

Kudou-papa bows to Neko-san.

Lastly...Kudou-papa looks at me.

「...Take care of my daughter」

...I

「On behalf of『Kuromori』...I'll take care of your daughter...!」

I bowed to Kudou-papa.



「He's a very good father...」

On the way home from Kudou-papa's car...

I told Michi...

「Father is my pride...」

Michi said sadly.

「I...what should I do from now on?」

I looked up at the sky.

May sky's a fine weather.

「It's okay...Michi has me and Misuzu」

「...Eh?」

「You're not alone...no, you won't be alone」

I hold Michi's hand.

Michi grabs my hand in silence.

「Really...it is as Margo-san says」

Her small hand grasps me tightly

「Yoshida has the power to heal a woman's heart」

「...Michi」

「Call me Michi」

Michi said with a serious face.

「Father was the one who gave me the name Michi. 『Michi』is『Unknown』, it leads the『Way』」

「Yup...that's a good name」

「Yes, that's because it's the name father gave me」

Then...Michi smiled

She clenches my hand tightly

That shows the strength of Michi's heart.

This lesbian samurai girl...is mentally strong.

Perhaps, even more than Mana who's younger...

Though her combat capability is already beyond adult, her mind is still growing.  
She's always been with Kudou-papa after all.

Michi's tense now that she has parted from her father.

Her insecurity is appearing.

Someone has to take care of Michi's heart.

That is my job.

「Now, let's go back...once we get out of the school and reach the『national theater』you can meet Misuzu...!」

「Yes...Yoshida!」

...Hmm

ミッチィ has become 美智 but...

Yoshida seems to remain like that...

Well...that's fine

「Let's hurry! Yoshida!」

「Yeah...Michi」

We ran holding each other's hands.



Returning to the『monitor room』...what's there is a『women garden』  
Everyone's dressing up...preparing for Misuzu's presentation 「Yoshi-kun...how does it look?」

Megu's wearing the green dress we chose.

「Yeah, very beautiful」

Megu shows me her long foot extending under her dress.

「It is as Yoshi-kun says...this dress emphasizes my feet. Katsuko-neesan praised me」

Megu's very happy

「Katsuko-neesan also did my hair...I borrowed some accessories as well」

Megu who dressed up looked very elegant and clean.  
She's gorgeous but...not cheap.

As expected of Katsuko-nee's sense.

「Onii-chan, what about me?」

Mana appears.

...Err

On the other side, Mana's mistakenly on the sexy route.

Her yellow dress...exposes her back and stomach...it exposes her skin boldly.

Her hair is raised...and what's with that dragonfly-like sunglasses?

Somehow, it looks like a small child cosplaying a high class hostess...

「Nei-san did this but...」

As expected...

「It's theme is『Loli bitch』!」

...Hmm

But, this 14 year old healthy body is counteracting the superficial vulgarity.

Is it because her growth is good?

There's no lewdness nor nastiness at all.

This is cute on it's own.

This『Sexy』and『Cute』subtle balance is very Nei-san like 「Oh, you're cute Mana」

When I praised her, Mana jumps into my chest.

「At times like this, you should at least give a hug!」

「Un, you're right」

Mana wants to be spoiled so I gave her a hug.

With the elegant Megu and sexy Mana line up...it feels strangely balanced.

Each of them complements the appeal of the other.

They look like『beautiful sisters』

「It's right to make Mana-chan that kind of sexiness and flashiness」

Nei-san appears from the depths of the room.

「Also, looking like that...nobody would know that Mana-chan's from Shirasaka house!」

True...they probably won't think that Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter would

appear in such a flashy and sexy dress after making such a noise in the society.

「Un...I think my friends at school won't notice me」

Mana said it herself.

「Mana-chan...you should be wearing something more flashy from now on. A dress that would make you shine...!」

Speaking of which, Nei-san's wearing a black pantsuit.

As expected...she seems to be dressing up to disguise as a『man』against Cesario Viola.

However, unlike earlier, the clothes doesn't compress her chest.

Nei-san's abundant chest and constricted waist...and her soft ass are emphasized.

Nei-san's fundamentally a voluptuous girl so a simple black suit would look good on her.

「You're beautiful, Nei-san」

I say then embrace Nei-san.

I feel her soft and warm body with mine.

「Ufufu! Thank you, Yo-chan!」

Nei-san pats my head.

「Just in time...come here」

Then...Katsuko-nee calls me from behind

Katsuko-nee's wearing a tight skirt and a wine red suit.

She looks like a beautiful secretary in a big company.

She's even wearing an elegant glasses.

「Look...I might meet my former guests」

Misuzu's symposium has a lot of people from the upper class.

There would be guests of『Kuromori』among them too

「Therefore, even if I meet them...I'm in a look that there won't be any problems...」

Un...there's a high possibility that they would take their wife and children.



Even if it becomes a scene where they have to give a greeting, they would mistake her as a secretary.

「Come here. You have to change too, right?」

...Oh right.

Katsuko-nee corrected the size of the navy blue suit.

「Wait, I'll go too Yoshi-kun」

Megu smiles.

「It's my job to change Yoshi-kun's clothes」

「Eh, what about Mana?」

「Mana-chan will be waiting in this room with me!」

Nei-san told Mana.

「Mana-chan, I'll put you some make-up」

「Eh, Nei-san...really?」

Mana rejoices.

「Nei-san, make it flashy!」

「It's fine. Didn't I tell you earlier? Mana-chan's cute when she's flashy」

Anyway...I'll leave Mana to Nei-san...

I go in the back with Megu.

That was the dressing room.

「The fixed suit is placed there along with a new Y-shirt」

Katsuko-nee said...

「Okay, Yoshi-kun...I'll be taking off your clothes!」

Megu happily takes off my uniform

「...Ufu!」

Megu laughs.

「What's wrong?」

「Taking off a man's jacket feels very thrilling. It really feels like I'm Yoshi-kun's wife!」

「Right!?...That's why, let's have everyone alternate when changing his clothes.  
We won't leave it to only Megumi-chan!」

「Okaay, Katsuko-neesan!」

Megu speaks while standing behind me, taking off my clothes.

「I will be the one doing the necktie today. Megumi-chan doesn't know how to tie a man's tie, right?」

「Yes, please teach me. I want to practice it...!」

Megu smiled at Katsuko-nee.

「Yoshi-kun, don't need to learn it. I will be the one doing Yoshi-kun's necktie in the future!」

...Is that so?

「By the way Katsuko-nee...about my hairstyle」

「...How do you want it?」

Katsuko-nee looks at me.

「Could you make it look a bit wild?」

「Wild?」

「Misuzu seems to prefer that one」

That's what Misuzu said on the day where I first raped Mana.  
Today is Misuzu's hour of glory.  
I'd try to look as Misuzu likes as possible.

「Got it...I'll make it look good」

Katsuko-nee smiled.

「...Katsuko, you've got time?」

...Then

The door opens and Minaho-neesan enters the room.

Minaho-neesan's on her usual black clothes.

Long sleeves and a long dress hiding her neck.

No...the fabric is different from the clothes she usually wear at school.

It's shining so it's silk I guess?

Well...nothing changes on her silhouette though.

「Yes What do you need, Ojousama?」

Katsuko-nee asks...

「What do you think about her look?」

Appearing behind Minaho-neesan is...

...Yukino

「Pu!」

Katsuko-nee laughed out.

Un...what the heck

Yukino's on her modest face just like this morning.

Her hair is divided into two braids.

Her face has a thick black frame eyeglasses.

That's what's the same from this morning but...

Her clothes.

「Ojousama...is the theme『Bee』?」

A dress with a painful yellow and black stripes...

...Err

The stripes are thick. It has a prisoner clothes look.

What kind of sense is this?

「No...the theme is『road construction site』」

R-Road construction site????

Minaho-neesan's sense is frightening

If I recall...this is the color used in the barricade for the road construction.

「I tried to use black and yellow to warn all the surrounding pedestrians...!」

Yukino's in a black state with a pale face.

Yukino's going to a celebrity gathering in this outfit...!

---

## 214. Beyond the Gate

---

Coming back from the dressing room...Nei-san is『dressing up』Michi.  
That said, she's not actually being dressed up.  
Michi's on her usual super-oujou-sama school uniform.  
In places like Misuzu's symposium, this uniform should have a considerable status.  
It's much more dignified than cheap dresses.

「How does this feel?」

Michi's『dress up』is putting a red ribbon on her long black hair...  
Then...a faint, thin make-up.  
I guess it's called Natural makeup  
Nei-san straightens Michi's eyebrows...then puts a lip balm on her mouth.  
Michi who looks like a Japanese doll from the beginning, her beauty increased with something that small.

「Did Nei-san suggest putting makeup on her?」

When I asked Nei-san.

「No, not me. It's Mii-chan」

Michi seems to have asked Nei-san herself.

「...Thank you very much」

Michi thanked Nei while looking at her figure reflected in the hand mirror.

「Kudou-san's very beautiful!」

Mana gives her admiration.

「I'd be troubled if I'm not...!」

...Eh?

「I am Misuzu-sama's guard. And, my role as a guard to make the enemy focus down on my existence」

Michi already begins to explore her own way now that she's separated from her father.

...But.

「But...isn't it bad if Kudou-san stands out more than her master, Misuzu-san?」

Megu threw a question to Michi instead of me.

「That is not a problem. Misuzu-sama's thirty times much more beautiful than me」

Thirty times?

「I'm doing all of my best to stand out and not be buried in the glow of Misuzu-sama's beauty」

Un...well

Misuzu and Michi are both beauties so it's fine.

「Here, Yoshida-kun...Megumi...Mana-san」

Minaho-neesan handed us an envelope

「What's this?」

It feels like a hard card is inside tho...

「That's money...100k yen each. Also, a public transportation card. It's charged with 10k yen」

Minaho-neesan looks at us with serious eyes.

「Depending on the circumstances after his...if at worst, you were separated from the others, use the money without hesitation. You should be able to manage most things with 100k yen. When you take the train or bus, be sure to use the card...don't buy a ticket. They can anticipate your destination from the price. If you think you are being tailed then you can make a stopover anytime」

Minaho-neesan really thinks about us...

「The meeting place on unforeseen circumstances would be Tamayo's hotel.

Go there. In case we need shelter, you can talk to her」

Tamayo-san's love hotel we stayed at the day before yesterday.  
Where Megu, Mana and I spent a night together.

...But

「The map to Tamayo-san's hotel is here. We went there by car last time so I thought you might not know the exact location」

Minaho-neesan puts down a printed map on the table 「Please memorize this place now. The location of Tamayo's hotel, and her phone number. This paper shouldn't be taken. After you memorize it, I'll dispose it on the shredder」

Minaho-neesan...she's assuming the possibility of the enemy infiltrating this monitor room after we go out...

Therefore, she intends to dispose any information she doesn't want to be known.

desperately memorize the map.

Minaho-neesan turned to Yukino who's waiting behind...

「I won't be giving anything to Yukino-san. Not a wallet nor an ID. She'll be following us with desperate resolution penniless...!」

Yukino shivers.

「If ever you try to run away from us...all of Yukino-san's embarrassing videos and photos would be released on the internet. Yesterday, Shrirasaka Sousuke's rape videos...and today the obscene images of his daughter...! The media and the society would be noisy again...!」

Yukino's face sinks down horribly.

She doesn't have the energy to make any more complains.

Minaho-neesan laughs at Yukino then she handed me a wristwatch.

「Put this on, Yoshida-kun. The same thing is attached on Yukino-san's arm. Once every ten minutes, it sends a weak radio wave on each other to check the position of the other. If ever the radio wave doesn't reach for more than 20 minutes, it'll alarm loudly...」

So we'll immediately know if Yukino runs away from us?

「If in case Yukino-san disappears and the alarm rings...please report to me immediately. At that moment, I will automatically consider that『Yukino-san has escaped』and send all the files to the internet and media...!」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

In short...Yukino and I have to stay in a distance where the radio waves reach each other.

「Well, even if I say weak radio waves, they'll reach as long as you're in the same building. But, it might be useless underground. Yoshida-kun...try pressing the red button on the wrist watch」

I pressed the button on the side.

『Pipi...Sensed within 10 meters』

Yukino and my watch send a message at almost the same time.

「If ever you don't know where the other is, press that button. It'll tell you the distance」

In that case...Yukino will absolutely have to be at a distance where the radio waves would reach my watch...!

Yukino wearing a black and yellow construction site dress is looking at me with eyes of despair.

「Now then, should we go? Did everyone go to the toilet already?」

Margo-san comes.

Margo-san's wearing a black suit and sunglasses.

She can be seen as a guard from the distance.

No...she's doing that on purpose.

We'll be heading to the『National theater』...where the Japanese Classical dance from Konpeki school will be presented.

Those dancing in the symposium...including Misuzu are all distinguished families in Japan.

Big names from the political and business world would visit the venue to watch their child's dance.

Normally...each of the house has a guard gathered.

Then, Margo-san thinks of blending as a『guard』

No, it's not just Margo-san.

Among us, those who are wearing black clothes are Minaho-neesan, Margo-san, and Nei-san only.

Minaho-neesan and Nei-san...if they're alone then black would stand out but if the three of them are lined up, they look like a team.

Margo-san's the bodyguard, Nei-san's the assistant of children, Minaho-neesan is in charge of management.

It won't be strange to think that they're hired by a famous house.

Then adding Katsuko-nee on her beautiful secretary style wine-red suit...they feel like a first-class servants employed by a high rank family.

The problem is...we the『young class』coming to the venue with these first class people, doesn't look childish at all.

Even if Yukino's『modest face + construction site dress』does her best to be fashionable...she can't make out a suitable elegance from『Minaho-neesan + Katsuko-nee + Margo-san + Nei-san』team

I'm just a poor high school boy.

Megu's a beauty but she's a lovely flower on in the field.

Today's Mana is on her cute『Loli Bitch』

Michi...she's a beauty but she's not putting out an Ojou-sama aura. Rather, she's letting out bloodlust.

Misuzu looks like she'd be surrounded by these four people.

Misuzu has the appearance that makes her look like a princess.

「Then, let's leave」

Minaho-neesan looks at us...

「This will be the final match. Tonight, everything will be settled...therefore, we'll all attack. Sorry...we can't afford to separate the groups to attack and defense now」

First...we'll go to Misuzu's symposium.

Then...settle with Shirasaka family at the hotel specified by Mr. Kouzuki

For me, I have to confront Kouzuki『Kakka』

Then...engage with Cesario Viola at the hotel...

「Therefore, let's all come back home in good health...!」



Hearing Minaho-neesan, everyone except Yukino nodded.  
We left with our backs to the wall.  
We will return here again when the enemy's completely destroyed.  
Cesario Viola...Shirasaka house too.

「When we leave, this room would be locked. Without Minaho's biometrics, this will never open again. Minaho...survive by all means. The biometrics won't work unless it's the living Minaho」

Margo-san told Minaho-neesan.

「I know...I can't die leaving you behind...」

Yuzuki Minaho...our『sister』and our『mother』...



Through the underground passage...we head to the hidden garage for the school personnel.

「The first car would be my Blue Maserati, the second car is Minaho's black Benz. The third would be the white van driven by Katsuko-san」

Margo-san gives all the instructions to escape from school.  
Today's white van is pasted with『Maruko stage clothes』in magnets.  
They've prepared more equipment in the white van than usual probably in case of unforeseen circumstances.

「Since we'll always be having the order of first to third car and the second one would be enclosed...the three cars will always go together from the signals Okay?」

Margo-san tells Katsuko-nee.

「Yes, roger」

「It would be our loss if the enemy caught Minaho or Nei. That's why Nei would be on the second car. Kudou-san, as you're the second guard, you'll be on the same second car. Megu-chan and Mana-chan too」

The driver of the Benz is Minaho-neesan. Michi on the passenger seat. Back Seat: Nei-san, Megu and Mana. That's all.

「Yoshida-kun will be with me on the first car. Yukino-san will be with Katsuko-

san on the third car」

When it's decided that she'll be away from me, Yukino's face turned cloudy immediately.

「Now, get in...!」

Katsuko-nee orders Yukino with cold eyes.

Yukino gets in the van with a gloomy face.

Katsuko-nee puts on Yukino's handcuffs immediately.

It's connected to the steel pipe inside the van.

「I hate people complaining when I'm driving so be quiet. You do know what this is don't you?」

Katsuko-nee shows a stun gun to Yukino.

「...I-I know」

Yukino who has experienced electric shock several times in these past few days became docile at once.

「Come Yoshida-kun get in」

Margo-san gently talked to me who's looking at Yukino.

「Then, later Onii-chan!」

Mana shows her face from the window and told me brightly.

「Yoshi-kun, take care」

「It's fine. We'll be acting together even if we're in separate cars」

I told Megu.

「Michi...take care of everyone」

「...Certainly」

I sit on the passenger seat of the Maserati

「Sorry, Yoshida-kun」

Margo-san speaks while fastening her seatbelt.

「...What?」

「The Benz and the van in the back are bulletproof but this car can't sacrifice

mobility by making the car heavy... There's no way to prevent if we're shot」

I see...so the cars on the back are sturdy.

「It can't be helped. At that time, we'll just deal with it」

I answered.

「Yoshida-kun, please watch the surroundings. Especially when waiting for the traffic lights, they might pretend to be a pedestrian closing to us so pay attention」

「...Yes」

「Well, Kudou-san's father would be joining the guards too though」

Margo-san wears leather gloves...

「...Now then」

Maserati's engine starts lightly.

Immediately after, the engines of the two cars started...

Margo-san opens the hidden garage shutter wirelessly.

May sunshine pours down over us.

「OK.....Let's go ! 」

The three cars go outside...!



Kudou-papa greets us outside the back gate of the school.

Titan boy driven by Tony-kun...Norma-san's driving a yellow Prius.

Then, Kudou-papa's on his Vespa.

Coming out of the school grounds...Norma-san's Prius began driving in front of the Maserati, the first car.

Norma-san seems to be our guide...

We left the route to the『National Theater』to Kudou-papa...so we're going to go after Norma's Prius.

Norma-san never accelerates the speed, she puts the blinker ahead of time as soon as possible then shows us the direction of the turn.

Kudou-papa's Vespa is sticking on the side of the Benz, the second car.

With this, even if a suspicious person approaches while we're waiting the traffic

light, it can be dealt with immediately.

The Titan Boy is following behind Car 3. Even if there's a sudden attack from behind, with Titan boy and the two bulletproof vehicles can manage somehow. We run towards the center of the city as 5 cars + 1 Vespa sticking together... Of course, it can be seen as a guarded vehicle now...Neko-san and Kudou-papa's subordinates are following us while not leaving our car line.

「How much is the possibility that the enemy would attack on road?」

I asked Margo-san.

「In this case, there's no meaning in thinking of the possibility. It depends on the enemy whether they would attack or not」

Margo-san said with a smile.

「However, we can only just hope now that we reach the『National Theater』as soon as possible. The closer we are at the『national theater』the harder it is for the enemy to attack」

「...Why?」

「Yoshida-kun, do you know where the『National Theater』is?」

...I

「No, I don't」

「It's in the side of the moat of the imperial palace. Next would be the Supreme Court...the center of Japan. It's close to the National Diet Building and the Japanese government departments」

Oh...that's why the security's strict.

「Then...from the information I've heard a while ago, It seems that the undersecretary of the Commerce Department in the us would be coming to Japan for the Konpeki school presentation today」

...Ambassador?

「It seems that the undersecretary's daughter is learning Japanese dance in US. Their teacher seems to be a disciple of the Konpeki school. Therefore, they came with the official stance of courtesy call with his family...」

...Official stance?

「Actually, he wants to make a secret conversation with Kouzuki-san about Japan's political and business world. Today, the people gathered would be the people showing up in the US-Japan economic summit」

「...Then that means?」

「There should be police officials, public security officials, and even America's secret service and US Military around the『National theater』」

Also...the guards of the famous houses.

「What about Cesario Viola?」

「Naturally, Kouzuki security service is reporting to public peace. Viola's an American criminal. I've thrown fake information that『It's possible that Viola will come to assassinate the undersecretary in US』...!」

...Eh?

「If a senior US government official visiting Japan is killed...Japan's face would be ruined. Everyone from America's security too. I think everyone will desperately stop Viola」

Margo-san's mouth is smiling but...

Her eyes are serious.

「Therefore...to be honest, if we go to the『National Theater』don't be so worried. The decisive battle would be at the night hotel however」

The first class hotel downtown owned by the Kouzuki family 「Kouzuki security service would be the only protection from there...」

It is as Margo-san says...

As we approach the center of the city, we see more police cars.

It seems that they're inspecting here and there.

Our convoy was also stopped by the police.,

Kudou-papa made the young policeman rage for a bit but we managed somehow...

Somehow, the 5 cars + Vespa arrived in front of the National Theater.

Even at the entrance of the theater...of course, there was inspection too.

First, Nroma-san talked to the person in charge of examination.

「...We somehow arrived safely」

Margo-san sighs.

As expected, she's nervous.

「I'm still not trained well」

She said.

「If it was Kyouko-san, she would be joking to calm everyone down but...I can't think of anything at the moment」

...No

Margo-san normally doesn't joke, right?

「Kyouko-san is holding Shirasaka Sousuke in Australia right now, isn't she?」

Kyouko Dothnomechey-san, Margo-san's teacher...『Kuromori's』guard  
She's detaining Shirasaka Sousuke under Minaho-neesan's order right now.

「No, perhaps they're already heading to Japan I think. However, we really can't read Kyouko-san's movements...」

「Is that so?」

「She can take actions I can't imagine calmly. Compared to her, I'm just a running girl...that's what I really think. This time too, I think she'll be coming in an unthinkable method」

Though he's released by the Australian police...Shirasaka Sousuke is missing currently.

I can hardly think that they will take a plane to come home...

How do they intend to come back?

「Anyway, it's our turn now」

Norma-san's Prius finished the inspection and goes to the parking lot of the『National theater』

Following, our car goes to the inspection gate

The person in charge of inspection is wearing a Kouzuki security service uniform.

The venue guard seems to be mainly Kouzuki security service.

「You guys from the guard department too?」

Since we're after Norma's car...the inspector past his thirties seems to think

so.

He speaks to us in a frustrated tone underestimating us.

「...『Kuromori』」

Margo-san calmly.

「Huh?」

The inspector seems he doesn't get it.

「Try to contact the headquarters. Say that『Kuromori』has come...!」

「...What『Kuromori』?」

There's now way this staff knows『Kuromori』?

「Just make a call and check it. We're Kouzuki-san's『Guests』...!」

Margo-san removed her sunglasses and looked at the man in charge with cold eyes.

「You people?...You're not in the invitee list」

The man in charge is still going strong.

「That's why I'm telling you to ask the headquarters. Why do you think we're with the Kouzuki Security Service guard department?」

「Aren't you people subcontractors of the guard department?」

「Are you an idiot?...We're special guests of Kouzuki『Kakka』that's why he expressly sent the guard department from your company you know?」

「No...there's no way」

「Just make a call. Go ahead and ask the headquarters for the name『Kuromori Minaho』...!」

「I-I'll check it right now...!」

The inspector contacts the headquarters with a transreceiver.

「Is it fine to introduce ourselves as『Kuromori』?」

When I asked, Margo-san...

「It's fine. You should show your power of authority at this scene...!」

Margo-san laughs.

「Kyouko-san taught me before...」

「...Is that so?」

「Yeah. It feels strange. Teaching what I learned from my master. Somehow, it feels ticklish...!」

The man in charge immediately returned with the color of his face changed.

「I-I'm very sorry! Please pass!」

His attitude has changed completely.

I don't know if it's Kouzuki『Kakka』or Misuzu but...it seems that the security headquarters has reported that we're coming.

「We're fine. We're the same as you...a celebrity's guard」

Margo-san laughed and put on her sunglasses.

「But...if you take that attitude to our master...you'd be easily losing your job...」

The inspector turned pale.

「Uhm...which one is『Kuromori Minaho』?」

Margo-san...

「The girl wearing a black and yellow dress on the third, white van」

Err...

That's...Yukino.

「Eh, she's not on the Benz?」

Margo-san laughs.

「Our Master's an odd fellow...」

Saying that...she enters the Maserati on the『National Theater's』parking lot. She stopped the car and waited for the next one.

The second car passed right away.

Megu and Mana are wearing a dress, Nei-san on her black pant suit is on it too... Michi's wearing her uniform.

But...they didn't realize that the one driving is the『Kuromori Minaho』

When it comes to the third van...the inspector kept bowing to Yukino inside the



car.

Yukino's dressed on a construction site color and her face changed to a plain one, she's handcuffed to the steel pipe on the van...

Margo-san's remark of『odd fellow』seems to have let it all pass.

Katsuko-nee deals with it with her usual pleasant smile...

For the time being, 『Kuromori's』cars passed through the gate safely.

Following...Titan Boy too

Well, Tony-san's a regular employee of Kouzuki security service...

...The problem

「What's suspicious about me!?!」

...Kudou-papa

Well, he's wearing a red color shirt and lack suit...

A middle aged man riding a Vespa...it's suspicious

「It's fine, that person is...!」

A man coming from the theater called out the inspector.

「Are you sure, director」

That's right...this man

He's the director of the Kouzuki Security Service general security department...

Yamaoka

The one having an affair with Michi's mother...

「Remember this...that person is the special guard department manager, Kudou Yuusaku」

Director Yamaoka speaks in a slightly foolish tone 「Oh」

The inspector nods big.

「What's with that『Oh』!」

Kudou-papa's completely angry.

Director Yamaoka knocks on the window of the Benz.

Minaho-neesan opens the window.

「...What?」

「Once you parked the car, I'd like some time to talk」

「Very well...」

Director Yamaoka is the head of the security department of Kouzuki security service.

Minaho-neesan also wants to discuss about 『VS. Cesario Viola』

「Where's the headquarters?」

「It's on the interior of the lobby on the first floor」

「Then, I'll give you a visit later」

「Thank you」

Minaho-neesan closes the window.

「Well anyway...let's get out of the car」

Margo-san turned the Maserati to the parking lot and the other cars followed us

---

## 215. In the theater

---

「It's late to ask but...is this okay?」

I asked Margo-san when she stopped the Maserati in the parking lot of『National theater』

「What?」

Margo-san asks back while turning off the engine.

「No...it's still 4 o'clock」

I look at the wristwatch I got from Minaho-neesan.

Misuzu's『Konpeki class symposium』should be held at night.

Anyone but the parties concerned can't enter the theater before opening...?!

「Isn't it bad to come here this early?」

Margo-san smiled...

「Well, don't mind that...Misuzu-san's already here too」

Misuzu's already in the venue to...

「Kouzuki Security Service's timetable says that the performers gather at 1PM. They'll have a stage rehearsal at 1:30 They should be practicing respectively at the lobby」

Even though the symposium is at night...

Isn't 1PM a bit too early?

「Today, the students who will appear at the symposium are over 50 in total...!」

「Eh...that many?」

「Well, they're starting from six years old. It seems that the small girls would be dancing together」

I see...even if you say it's a class, there are also elementary school students  
Even if the scale is big, there's no change that it's a Classical Japanese dance class.

However, everyone's a child of a big name in politics or business...

「That's why...the『stage rehearsal』before the performance would take some time」

「Stage rehearsal?」

「...They would dance in the stage just as you can see in the real performance...  
there would be lighting and sounds too. Then, they will repeat it several times.  
This is probably the first time for the younger ones to dance on such a big stage  
so they need to get used to the venue. Since the apprentices in the classroom  
aren't professional dancers...it'll take a lot of time to organize the schedule.  
They're more than 50 people after all」

The actual『presentation』...would take three hours at longest.  
And yet, the『stage practice』...would take more than twice.

「Then...of course, the the apprentices are all from good family so they're not  
coming to the theater alone...!」

...I see

Everyone has their guardian and escort coming with them.

「Therefore...even if we blend in with them, nobody would think it's strange」

Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Margo-san, Nei-san, they look like they've been  
dispatched from some house...

Megu, Mana, Michi...they look like friends of the apprentices.

The problem would be Yukino and me.

「What do I look like?」

I asked honestly.

I don't look like guard at all...

That said, I don't have the character of being a friend of a famous person.

「What is Yoshida-kun to Misuzu-san?」

Margo-san asked with a smile,

「I...」

I am Misuzu's『man』

「Walk with your chest puffed out and with dignity...otherwise, it would be rude to Misuzu-san」

...Right.

I don't need to care about what the people around me think.

There's a『bond』between Misuzu and me

...That's enough.

「Well, you feel like a rich kid more than you think so don't worry」

Margo-san looked at my appearance then said.

「That suit is tailored nicely, Katsuko-san's repair is perfect too. You've got shoes prepared too, right?」

「Yes」

This suit is Minaho-neesan's grandfather's suit, Katsuko-nee fixed it to my size.

The leather shoes, and the Y-shirt were prepared before I noticed.

Katsuko-nee, thanks.

「Well...the hall's already filled with people...aside from the performers' attendant attendant, the people from Kouzuki Security service would be in swarm too. You don't have to mind it so much Your identity is checked by Kouzuki security service so your status is guaranteed」

Eh...that inspection?

「But,there were only three people in front of the gate, right?」

「Well, if there are are a lot of them...it would be exposed that important people gather here today. That's unpleasant to the eye. The big names mind that kind of thing. Actually, I think that there's a group gathered around the gate when something goes wrong」

「Then, the easy check we saw...」

「That's only a pretense. When the inspector misbehaved, they purposely lead someone suspicious to wait. That way, they can see the attitude」

Suspicious people...

I get the reason why on Kudou-papa.

Were we that suspicious?...

「Normally...when a person like that comes at such time, it'll be shut-out completely. In an assembly like today...the mass media, journalist...or, a spy, or a imposter who just want to get close to a famous person...those kind of people creep in the venue somehow, they come in the gate one after another. The guards would be in a big problem...」

I see...the cast and the attendants are supposed to be at the venue by 1:00. If a man comes at such an unfinished time, it can't be helped to be thought as suspicious.

「Also...Kouzuki Security Service's Director Yamaoka came out immediately right? He's watching over a security camera」

Speaking of which, he did.

「Actually, they're making second and third checks at the same time」

...I see

「Therefore...Viola's staff won't disappear in this hall...so be at ease」

Margo-san smiled at me.

「But...the theater has a lot of people working there. If they disguise as a cleaner, or a restaurant staff...」

Margo-san laughs at my worry.

「Yoshida-kun...this is the『National theatre』 Security towards that is thorough」  
「...Is that so?」

「Today, this reserved by『Konpeki class』...the stalls and restaurant are on a day off. Then, the staff in the theater and clean up, and lighting, are all people arranged by Kouzuki security service」

「...Eh?」

「...The people from the upper class like to go to the theaters quite often.

Watching from the audience or their children on the stage. Therefore...Kouzuki security service has a department which holds staff that does theater work」

Everyone's from Kouzuki security service.

「In a genuine professional drama, opera or musical, staff for sounds and lighting that are not professional won't do but...if it's Japanese traditional dance presentation, Kouzuki security service can do it」

Margo-san told me.

「That's why, as long as you're inside the theater, you don't have to worry about Viola」

...Is that so?

Let's put Cesario Viola's raid on the corner of my mind for the time being...  
Let's concentrate on another problem for now.

...In short.

...Misuzu.

Misuzu's grandfather, Kouzuki『Kakka』...

As expected, he's not here yet...

...Also.

Today, Misuzu's『fiance』will come too...

「...Onii-chan?」

Margo-san and I aren't getting off the car so Mana knocked on the window of Maserati with a worried face.

「...Oh, I'm getting off」

I forced a smile and open the passenger seat's door.  
Minaho-neesan, Nei-san, Megu and Michi are already outside of the car.  
Katsuko-nee and Yukino too.  
I get off the Maserati in a hurry.  
...Hm?

「What's wrong?」

Megu asks me

「Nei-san and Margo-san are wearing the same shoes」

Both of them are wearing the similar leather black shoes.  
Low heels...

「Oh, it's easier for us to move with this...we focus on functionality」

「That's right, you can easily run when something happens!」

Both of them looked at each other and smiled.

「This is a custom design. It's made according to the shape of our feet!」

「This also has the latest sports shoes tech. They look like normal leather shoes however」

「...Hee」

「Kudou-san's shoes is the same, isn't it?」

Margo-san asks Michi.

「Yes...is it easy to know?」

Michi answered calmly.

「We first look at the shoes when we meet the people from the same profession」

「...Why?」

When I ask...

「Yoshida-kun, take a look at the people's shoes. You'll immediately understand...!」

Minaho-neesan told me.

「G-Got it...」

For the time being...I take a look at Michi's shoes again.

「This...the sole...?」

Unlike ordinary leather shoes...it's not flat?

「Yes. My shoes are for combat. The sole isn't made with leather but with rubber. Furthermore, since my combat is limited to urban areas...this isn't a military sole but a custom-made special sole pattern」

「We're the same!」

Nei-san shows me her shoe sole.

It looks like ordinary clean leather shoes but...the sole looks like jogging shoes.

「This is fine with asphalt and concrete but...it's a problem since it doesn't grip



on slippery linoleum or even waxed wooden floor. The rubber shoe sole itself is special made. Because of that, the decrease is also fast...」

Margo-san taught me.

「The shoe sole Kudou-san's wearing right now has the same material from what we're using before I think. Want to test the bottom of the rubber? If you'd like then I'll introduce the workman doing ours...!」

「Thank you very much」

So specialist guards think this much on their shoes.

「Now, it's about time we go」

Minaho-neesan calls out everyone...

We head to the theater from the parking lot.



Kouzuki security service guards were standing even at the entrance of the theater but they let us through without saying anything. It seems that all of the guards already know about us.

「...Danna-samaaa!」

Misuzu came to meet us in the wide lobby.

Misuzu's wearing a Yukata for practice.

「I've been waiting!」

Misuzu comes near me.

「Yuzuki-sama...everyone, thank you for coming today」

Misuzu bows to everyone.

「We've arrived a bit early. Sorry」

Minaho-neesan said...

「Everyone's my『family』so don't mind it」

In short...we're formally registered as Misuzu's『attendant』

With this, we won't have any problem before the theater opens...

Looking around the lobby...girls in Yukata here and there are practicing

independently.

Each of the girl has a guard around them.

「...Does Misuzu have anyone from her house coming with her?」

When I asked her.

「Father and my parents will be here at the opening time but...?」

「No, not that...I'm talking about guards」

Misuzu laughs.

「Everyone from the Kouzuki security service...!」

I-I see.

True, Kouzuki security service are tasked to guard the『Symposium』today...

In the first place, the people from Kouzuki house would be the top priority...

They even made Yamaoka who's the head of guards, there's no need for anyone else...

「Also...Michi has returned」

Michi stands before Misuzu.

「...I'll return to guarding Misuzu-sama」

「Please... Michi」

he guard exclusive to Misuzu returned to her duty.

「Then, I'll be having a chat with director Yamaoka...!」

Minaho-neesan told us.

Information exchange with Kouzuki security service.

But...I don't think director Yamaoka has any information we want to know.

Minaho-neesan said that it's a『chat』

「Katsuko, Margo, come with me」

「Yes, Ojou-sama」

「Nei...go with Yoshida-kun and others」

「Roger!」

Nei-san jokingly salutes to Minaho-neesan.

From a distance, Minaho-neesan looks Misuzu's guard...and Nei-san's a

subordinate.

「I think you know it already but don't approach windows. There might be a guy on a lens」

Margo-san said worriedly.

「It's fine! I know it already...!」

「Then...Yoshida-kun, take care of them」

The ladies along with Minaho-neesan went to the headquarters.

「...Misuzu-saan!」

From the entrance of the lobby, a girl carrying a cart calls Misuzu 「What's wrong, Kanako-san?」

「Could you help us if you're free? The pamphlets to be distributed to the guests today on the rehearsal hall has arrived but we have to fold it into two」

「Okay, I'm coming...!」

So the apprentices work on this.

They're making preparations during the breaks from the stage rehearsal.

「Uhm, Misuzu-san」

Megu calls Misuzu.

「Could you let us help out too?」

Mana smiles.

「...Is that okay?」

「Well, aren't we...Misuzu-san's『family』?」

Misuzu and Megu looked at each other...then, smiled.

「Then, please...!」

「I-I'll help out too!」

Nei-san said.

「Yukino-san will be helping out too!」

Mana told her sister sadistically.

Yukino's just silent all the time.

「Now, let's go」

Michi stands behind Yukino then forced her to move forward.  
We head to the girl with the cart.

「Hello, I'm Horaguchi Kanako」

The very mature and elegant girl bows her head to us.  
This person is perhaps a lady from a good family too.

「Everyone...are you Misuzu-san's relative?」

Misuzu...

「Yes, that's right」

She answered clearly while smiling.

「Hello, I'm Yoshida Mana...!」

Mana greeted loudly.

「Y-Yoshida Megumi...nice to meet you」

Rivalling Mana...Megu also introduced herself as『Yoshida』

「I'm Yoshida Nei! Nice to meet you!」

Nei-san too...

No, is this okay?

Since we've got Cesario Viola's case...we shouldn't give out our real name.

「Are you all sisters?」

Kanako-san asks in surprise.

「That's right!」

Nei-san happily lied...

「Ah, that one's different!」

Mana points at her sister.

...Err

...What should I do?

It's bad if the name『Shirasaka』appears here...

As expected, people from Shirasaka family won't be coming after the fuss they

made yesterday...

In a place where it's only celebrities...If someone calls themselves『Shirasaka』,  
everyone would think that it's related to『Shirasaka house』

Then, when I'm hesitating...

Yellow Stripe Black Dress

「This person is Kishima Kuroko...!」

Michi said.

Wait...Michi

Isn't that just how she looks...!

「...I-I'm Kishima」

Yukino greets Kanako-san.

Then, can't be helped.

Yukino's 『Kishima Kuroko』here...

「Kishima-san's quite an oddball so don't mind her! She's lived in foreign  
countries for long!」

Nei-san warns.

「She's a returnee?」

Kanako-san asks Nei-san...

「Yes, she is...she's been living in the republic of Val Verde for ten years until  
last year!」

Where is that place?

「...Then, This one's Kuromori Kounosuke-san」

Michi points at me and said.

...W-Why?

But...it would be strange to deny it here...

Michi doesn't look like she'd say a joke...

Hey, can't be helped.

「...I'm Kuromori」

I bow my head.

「Kanako-san's father is Horaguchi Fumiya an actor」

Misuzu introduced her.

「Is that so?! My father's a fan!」

Megu speak out loudly.

My father...she means her foster father.

「Thank you very much」

Kanako-san seems to be used to this kind of reaction.

「Oh, is that so? I also look at Horaguchi-san's movies」

Even Nei-san said that so he must be a famous actor.

I don't know about him though...

I hardly watch television nor movies...

「Kanako-san...how old are you right now?」

Nei-san asks.

「Fifteen years old...I'm on my third year in middle school」

Eh...she's that young?

She's very mature so I thought she's at the same age as Misuzu.

「I'm 18 years old but I'm in second year in high school. Don't ask why」

Nei-san said with a laugh

「This girl, him and me are in first year high school」

Megu points at Yukino and me then said

「I'm in second year middle school! You're 15 years old so you're in the same year as Kudou-san, right?」

Misuzu-san's in second year high school...

Ages from 14 to 18 have gathered.

「Then, shall we all work on this pamphlet?」

Misuzu who's the oldest speaks.

「How many is it?」

「3500 copies」

Wow...that's a lot.

「With this number, we'll be finished immediately」

Misuzu said

「Where should we work?」

Megu asked...

「Saito-san said that the desk there will do」

Looking at it...there are several desks for reception lined up.

「Then, let's go there」

「Ah, I'll take the cart」

I push the cart in Kanako-san's place

「Sorry...Kuromori-san」

Kanako-san said.

Oh right, I'm『Kuromori-san』right now...

「We can line up on the seats」

Mana and Megu runs in short steps then heads to the desk.

「Hey, Kuroko, come here!」

As usual, Mana's harsh with her sister.

Placing the pamphlets on the table...

「We only have to fold it into two, right?」

「Yes, that will do」

「Will there be a fold-in tuck today?」

「Yes. From what I've heard...Yoshinaga-san's starring stage...Emiko-chan's movie will be inserted it seems. There might be others however」

「Should we do that too?」

「Ah, Yoshinaga-san and Emiko-san have their managers take care of it and they seem to fold it themselves. It won't arrive until 5 o'clock」

As expected of the class of Konpeki style.

There are apprentices who are doing business entertainment related.

Then...

「Kanako-san! It's about time for your『stage rehearsal』!」

Another girl in Yukata comes from the stage.

「Eh, Manami-chan? I thought my turn shouldn't be coming yet...!」

「Mayumi-chan and Toshiko-chan's dance took more time than expected...Akira-san's『Dojiji』was decided to be postponed Therefore, Kanako-san and my『light adjustment』is moved ahead...grandmother said」

「『Light adjustment』...shouldn't we be wearing proper costumes?!」

「That's right. It seems that they have to check the color adjustment. Make-up is okay so you have to wear your costume as is」

Misuzu interrupts the conversation of the two...

「Kanako-san, go ahead...we'll be taking care of this」

「Sorry...Misuzu-san」

「Don't mind it. Once we're finished folding this...is it fine to leave it on the desk?」

「Yes, Saito-san will be taking care of it later」

「Got it」

「...Then, I'm sorry」

Kanako-san goes to the girl who called her.

「Thank you Misuzu-san...the others too, thank you」

The other girl bowed at us.

Then, the girls in Yukata headed to the dressing room.

「It's hard to run when you're wearing kimono!」

Nei-san said while looking at the girls running in short steps, worried about the hem of their skirt.

「The one that just came is Manami-san...the headmaster's granddaughter」

Misuzu said while taking out a bunch of pamphlets.

「What should we do with this/」

Megu asks Misuzu.

「This one will be the cover so please fold it here」



「Un, got it...」

Each of us put down a pamphlet and started folding.  
Yukion's the only one who's staring at the pamphlet placed in front of her.

「Hey, Kuroko-san...you shouldn't stop your hands from working!」

Mana told her then finally, Yukino started working.

「By the way...Michi. Why am I『Kuromori Kounosuke』?」

I asked while folding the pamphlet.

「I thought that it would be strange for Kuroko-san being the only not a Yoshida」

True...it would be strange of everyone apart from Yukino are from the same house.

Four siblings...

「Also...that's what's embroidered in the suit you're wearing right now」

...Eh?

I look inside my suit.

True...there's an embroidered『Kuromori Kounosuke』in gold thread inside the pocket.

This suit is originally owned by Minaho-neesan's grandfather...

「Well done noticing it...Michi」

I'm surprised at Michi's observation power.

...Then

「My my...what are you doing at this place?」

Suddenly...I heard a voice.

「I don't think a prostitute and their family is suited to come to this place...!」

The source of voice filled with malice...!

---

## 216. Match with the elder sister

---

The girl who spoke badly against us is...  
Dressed in a pink pantsuit.

「Misuzu-sama...I don't know what's your intention taking that sort of people with you but...」

She's speaking coldly towards Misuzu.

「Kouzuki-house shouldn't be associating with people with that kind of status I think」

I've seen this girl before.

「...Aneue, please restrain yourself from speaking rudely to Misuzu-sama」

Michi speaks up.

This girl overflowing with malice is Michi's sister.

Kudou Haruka...

Japan's number one in high school Karate, bodyguard of Kouzuki『Kakka's』other grandchild.

「My, you've gotten arrogant Michi, telling me how to speak up...」

Kudou Haruka throws an eye of contempt to her sister.

Michi looked down in fright.

...She's bad with her sister.

「I'm talking to Misuzu-sama...you shut up...!」

Once again, she turned her eyes of contempt to Misuzu 「I am just want to warn Misuzu-sama...!」

She's much taller than Michi.

A beauty introduced in TV news as a karate girl.

Looking at her attitude towards Misuzu and us...

Kudou Haruka's got some considerable confidence.  
She's on third year high school...much older than Misuzu.

「I just want Misuzu-sama to understand her own position. Misuzu-sama, it'll be a big scandal if you associate yourselves with people on a prostitution organization. When that happens...it won't be just Misuzu-sama, Ruriko-sama's reputation will be damaged as well...!」

Kudou Haruka blames Misuzu.

「Misuzu-sama already has a fiance...please stop making contact with such lowlives」

She's on the high ground until the end...  
Though she's choosing words as a vassal, her attitude is clearly looking down...  
Kudou haruka kept speaking.

「...Pu!」

Nei-san laughs.

「Oh, we're『low lives』?」

Nei-san replies to Kudou Haruka's jeer

「...Are you saying that a someone from a prostitution organization isn't a low life?」

「...At least, more than a woman like you!」

Both of them look at each other.

「...Aneue...You don't understand about the organization『Kuromori』at all...」

Michi told her sister in a low voice while looking down.

「There's no way I'd know? Living as a woman selling her own body, isn't that the lowest...?!」

Megu got angry from what Kudou Haruka said.

「Everyone didn't do it because they liked it! Don't be selfish...!」

It's something unforgivable for Megu who was born in a prostitution mansion.

「My, sorry. But, it's not like I'm interested in low lives like you. I don't even

want to get acquainted with you...I don't even want to look at you」

Kudou Haruka speaks in mockery atgain.

「Then go there! Don't come here!」

Mana shouts.

「If I can then I will. But, it doesn't go that way...do you get it?」

Kudou Haruka shrugged her shoulders.

「If you stay in this hall...Ruriko-sama will see you. You see, I don't want Ruriko-sama to see such dirty things as much as possible. Therefore!」

The air calms down.

「Even if I force it, I'll have to eliminate...all of『Kuromori's』people...!」

This karate girl...

She intends to drive us out of this venue...?!

「To be honest...I don't think of Kouzuki family...only Ruriko-sama. I'm sorry Misuzu-sama, but...!」

Kudou Haruka laughed.

「But...Ruriko-sama's the next head of the Kouzuki family. I think that we need to prioritize Ruriko-sama before Misuzu-sama...!」

「Hmm. Ruriko's a girl dissatisfied with Mi-chan's relation with us?」

Nei-san asks for an explanation.

「That's not the case...this is my own decision. I would like to take care of anything that would cause any sadness to Ruriko-sama. Ruriko-sama's very kind so...if she discovers Misuzu-sama's delinquency...I think that she'll be in pain」

...Delinquency?

Her associating with『Kuromori』...

「Therefore...I thought of waking up Misuzu-sama's eyes before Ruriko-sama discovers this...!」

Kudou Haruka smiles.

「In ten minutes...everyone from『Kuromori』will be evacuated from this

venue. Then, promise not to approach Misuzu-sama ever again...!」

Kudou Haruka turned her eyes towards us.

「Especially you...!」

She knows my relationship with Misuzu...

「I feel sorry about your genital but...I will crush it here, so your sexual function can't work again」

You meant to crush my dick?

「When that happens...Even if the shameless Misuzu-sama would give up on you?」

...Hey hey

「I feel disgusted to touch it so I'll use the sole of my shoe. I love the word『trampling down forcibly』...!」

She punches her palm in front of her chest...!

I go in front.

The other party says that they'll use violence...

I can't expose the『women』to danger...

「My...I thought that you'd hide in the shadow of the women but it seems that you've got some courage. It might just be a façade but...or is it that you're an idiot who doesn't know the power of my Karate...!」

I'm okay being insulted.

Anyway...I've got to protect everyone.

「...I won't allow any more impoliteness even if you're my sister」

Michi stands up.

「My, are you sure? I'm surprised...!」

Kudou Haruka laughs at her sister.

「You know Michi...You never won against me ever. Even though you're weak, you're forcing yourself to be hurt...!」

The age difference between the sisters is three...

High school third year and middle school third year...the difference in physical ability is big.

On top of that...they know each other's skills...

...But

「...Michi would win if she's serious」

I declared.

「...Yoshida?」

Michi looked at me in surprise.

「Don't be ridiculous...This girl is an incompetent one who ran away from Karate practice. There's no way I...Kudou Haruka would lose you know?」

Kudou Haruka...doesn't accept her father's『Kudou style ancient martial art』  
She doesn't even know its true ability.

The little sister who chose Kudou style over Karate...it seems she think that she only escaped from the pain of practice.

「Or do you think that you can win against me with such a foolish martial arts?」

Kudou Haruka speaks filled with self confidence...

「I wonder, I think Mii-chan will win」

Nei-san said.

「I also think that Michi-san will win!」

Megu speaks seriously for Michi's sake.

...I

「...Michi. You never won against your sister she said...it's on Karate match anyway right?」

Michi looks at me.

「Isn't that obvious?...I'm using Karate!」

Kudou Haruka threatens...

「What?...Then Michi would win as expected」

Mana laughs.

「Right...it's not even on Michi's level. This Karate girl」

Nei-san shows a thin smile.

「But...」

Michi herself seems to be really bad at dealing with her sister.

I can see an intense tension.

「It's okay...Michi's got『Kudou style』」

I told Michi clearly.

「That's right, Michi-san's very strong!」

Megu also cheer Michi.

「Un. Mii-chan can do it!」

Nei-san too...

「Look, Kuroko-chan too, say something!」

Mana slapped Yukino's head...

「D-Do your best...」

...What the hell?

「...Got it. Everyone」

Michi steels herself.

「Aneue...let's have a match...!」

Kudou Haruka smiled.

「...Are you sure?」

...Then

「...Danna-sama」

Misuzu ignores the tense air completely

She suddenly fawns on me.

She leaned her whole body on me.

She takes my hand and kissed my fingertips.

「You see, Danna-sama. Yukata's got a lot of holes in various places...!」

Then, my hand...

She invites it to the side of her Yukata and inserts.

「...Please touch Misuzu's breasts」

I...

I touch Misuzu's breast inside the yukata, under her bra.

「Ufufu...this underwear is for the Japanese traditional dance. The fabric's slippery isn't it? Even if the kimono slips, it won't be tangled...!」

I climb my fingers on her smooth cloth.

My fingertips is skating on Misuzu's soft breasts.

「Ufufu...it feels good when Danna-sama touches me!」

Misuzu leaks out a hot breath

「Ahn...That's my nipple...!」

The firm feeling under the fabric...

Misuzu's nipple gets erect fast.

「Aha...it feels good!」

Misuzu's foolery has completely taken everyone's breath away...!

「W-W-W-W-W-W-W-What are you doing! Misuzu-sama...that's shameless!」

Kudou Haruka yells loudly...!

「My, Haruka-san...you can't say that an act of love between people as shameless...!」

Misuzu smiles with her fascinating eyes...

「Are you okay with that everyone...if this continues, Misuzu will completely monopolize Danna-sama!」

Misuzu smiled...

「Yadayada, Yo-chan's mine...!」

Nei-san jumps to my front!

Nei-san pushed her abundant breast against me.



「Aaaa!...Mana too!」

Mana clings to my feet.  
Rubbing her cute breasts...

「Y-Yoshi-kun...me too!」

Meggu holds my left hand.  
Then she kissed it again and again.

「...Kuroko-chan, you won't join?」

Nei-san asked...Yukino...

「Err...U-Uhm...!」

「Then, Kuroko-chan's left out...!」

Mana grinned...

「No...uhm...!」

...I

「Yukino! Roll your skirt and show me your panties!」

If she won't come here then I'll just attack her and have her participate 「Y-Yes!」

Yukino raised her skirt and shows her panties to me.  
...Her panty's stripes.  
Yellow and black...

Are you a daughter of a Thunder or what?

「S-S-S-S-S-Shameless! Shameless! What are you people doing?!」

Kudou Haruka lost her temper!  
Misuzu ignores her state.

「Michi...come here」

「...Yes?」

She got startled as she's on the verge of fighting with her sister.

「Just come here already」

「...But」

Michi's still wary of her sister.

「That person can't do anything...ignore her and come here.」

「...Yes」

Michi comes to us.

「Danna-sama...pat Michi's head」

Misuzu told me with a smile.

「...What?」

My right hand is massaging Misuzu's breasts.

My left is being held by Megu...

「Your gentle hand...take it from my chest to Michi's head...」

Misuzu said kindly.

「U」

I puled my right hand out of Misuzu's Yukata then put it on Michi's head.

I slowly stroked the shining black hair of the 15 year old girl.

「Michi...you've endured well being ridiculed」

Misuzu praises Michi.

「And...you did well standing up for your『friends』」

Misuzu called us『friends』...

「Even though you're bad at dealing with your sister, you stood up and showed courage. ...Thank you. Today's Michi is my pride...!」

「...Misuzu-sama」

Tears float on Michi's eyes as she's being patted by me.

「...You're already our『friend』 Our『little sister』」

「...I'm unworthy for your words」

The tears of the 15 year old warrior girl spill out.

「...Kudou Haruka!」

Misuzu calls Kudou Haruka while looking at Michi.

「W-What...!?!」

Kudou Haruka who's puzzled by the development of situation responds in panic...

「...I won't forgive you」

「...What?」

「I'm saying that I won't forgive you...!」

Misuzu's voice feels overwhelming with strong will 「I-I...what do you intend to do?」

Kudou Haruka pretends to be calm but...  
Her voice is trembling.

「You mocked me. You mocked my『friends』 You declared that you'll harm my most beloved Danna-sama in the world... I'll never forgive you...!」

Misuzu's face is smiling.  
But...her eyes are burning in anger.

「I-If you won't forgive me then what will you do? Do you intend to report my rudeness to Kouzuki『Kakka』」

Misuzu...

「Someone irrelevant like you can be disposed even if I don't use the power of my grandfather」

She looks at Kudou Haruka with cold eyes.  
That's right, these eyes are...  
Minaho-neesan's eyes.

「Such a thing...Misuzu-sama's just a high school student...」  
「And you, you're a high school student too Haruka-san, aren't you? It's a high school student punishing a high school student she can't forgive...that will be all」

Misuzu's words were completely the same as Minaho-neesan.

「I'm a Karate user before a high school student. I'm Ruriko-sama's bodyguard」

Misuzu laughs at what Kudou Haruka said...

「For me...you're someone worthless!」

Misuzu's words pierces Kudou Haruka...

「M-Misuzu-sama...Y-You...?!」

「If it was me before...I might've yielded to your threat. No...your plan might've been successful. But, sadly...I have changed. I've become strong in these past few days that I myself would be surprised...!」

Misuzu smiled at Kudou Haruka...

「...Those people hiding in there, get out!」

Misuzu called out to the screen of the lobby.

...Does that mean?

「I already know it so get out already!」

Misuzu's sharp words...four girls appear from the screen.  
Everyone's wearing a pink pantsuit just like Kudou Haruka.

「...Ambush?」

When I mutter...

「No, Yo-chan...everyone wants to pull Mii-chan away from us. That's why she purposely provokes Mii-chan so they can take her away from this place」

Take Michi?

「Got it. They intend to drive us out forcibly while Michi's gone...!」

Megu said.

I see...as expected, they're afraid of Michi's combat power...

「No, That's not it...!」

Nei-san laughs.

「It doesn't need to be them who'll push us out...!」

...Eh?

「They'll pretend to be in a fight with us...make a noise and call out Kouzuki security service guards. Also...today, there would be heavy figures in business

world and the undersecretary of US will come, right?」

「...I see!」

「If we make a noise in this place...what do you think will happen?」

This four that ambushes us...perhaps, they will exit.

They can't stay in this venue.

「Anyway, they intend to make some noise in this place. Then, they can make a pretext to drive us out, right?」

「Then...why Michi?」

「Well...She must've thought that it's disgraceful to drive out her own sister!」

What the hell?!

It's only for her own appearance!

「But...what about Misuzu? Misuzu will be sent off if she stays with us right?」

Right.

Before they take out Michi...

They should take out Misuzu first...

「I got it Onii-chan!」

Mana shouts...!

「These people intends to humiliate Misuzu-san!」

Humiliate Misuzu?

「...Right. We're just a secondary objective」

Megu said.

...Wait

Someone...please explain it to me.

「Like-I-said...!」

Nei-san...

「The objective of these girls is to get rid of Misuzu-san from from the beginning...!」

...What?!

「If she's sent out...Misuzu-san won't be able to show up in the presentation

today, right? Even though her name is in the pamphlet...even though Kouzuki-san's acquaintances will come, if Misuzu-san makes a scandal and can't participate, what do you think will happen?」

Misuzu's name would be dishonored.

「Then...this girl's master, Ruriko-san...she'll become the only performer from Kouzuki family...!」

Misuzu...stares at Kudou Haruka in blank surprise...

「You thought of influencing Ruriko-san and my succession dispute?...Kudou Haruka-san!」

That's why...Misuzu.

She's preparing Michi to confront her sister...

She purposely chip their spirit.

「...I see~!」

An unexpected voice comes from the side.

When I turned around in surprise...

Margo-san's here...

「Maru-chan, since when...?」

「The fundamental of my work is to erase my presence you know...」

Margo-san smiles.

「...Misuzu-san, before you dispose this child」

Margo-san makes a suggestion.

「I think she should have a match with Michi...」

...Un

I think so too

So Michi's inferiority complex towards her sister is taken out...

She should win against her sister on a fair fight.

「...Right」

Misuzu answers.

「How about this...Kudou Haruka-san was it? If this girl, there won't be any

disposal. We'll forget all of your rude acts against Misuzu-san...」

「What would you do if Michi wins...」

Megu speaks up.

「...How about we make her a prostitute?」

...Megu?!

「This girl insulted the women of the mansion. I'll never forgive that...!」

If Michi wins then Kudou Haruka becomes a prostitute.

「I don't mind it if it's just once but...I'd like her to experience the pain of being a prostitute」

「...What do you think, Misuzu-san?」

Margo-san asks.

「I think that's good...what do you think, Haruka-san?」

Kudou Haruka...

「...It's fine as long as I win right? I will win. There's no way the elder sister would lose against Michi...!」

---

## 217. In the box

---

「Michi, are you fine with it too...?」

Misuzu looks at Michi.

「...I」

Michi doesn't seem to be interested in having a match against her sister.

「Michi...do you remember what your father told you?」

I asked Michi.

「Michi...you should make your own『Kudou style』already」

「...Yoshida」

「Even if the opponent is your sister...Michi should fight」

Mana...

「That's right! Elder sister or any blood relation doesn't matter! Just beat her up!」

Mana...you're saying that even if Yukino's next to you?

Her inferiority complex is quite complicated too...

I know know the reason why Minaho-neesan dressed Yukino horribly this morning.

Megu and Mana have their inferiority complex rooted into Yukino strongly...

『Mana and Megu dress up』and『Yukino's dressed down』so their inferiority complex won't be stimulated...

At least, if the preconception of『Yukino's much beautiful than me』both of them will greatly improve...

「Kudou Haruka-san...do you know about me?」

Margo-san suddenly speaks to Kudou Haruka.

「Margo Starkweather-san...you're a guard of『Kuromori』, right?」



Kudou Haruka seems to have investigated about us just in case...

「I'm only a year older than you but I'm doing this work for more than three years now. Let me give you an advice as a senior in the same industry...you don't have the talent so you should stop being a guard...!」

Kudou Haruka's expression turned severe.

「...You're just a guard of a prostitution ring, don't insult me who's a member of Kouzuki Security service!」

Margo-san laughs.

「...Sorry. I'm a cold-hearted woman so I declare the people without talent about it clearly. You should quit before you trouble Kouzuki security service. This world isn't a world for a dull child like you...!」

「I'm a Karate inter-high school champion! Which part of me do you think has no talent?!」

「That's why, I think you should stay as an athlete. You can't protect people. After all, you're someone who should be protected...!」

Margo-san's eyes are cold.

「...This impoliteness!」

Kudou Haruka tries to hit Margo but...!

At that moment, Nei-san threw the ballpen from the desk to Kudou Haruka.

「Here you go!」

「...Eh?!」

Kudou Haruka avoids that pen...!

Margo-san's fist appears close to Kudou Haruka's face.

「..... ! ! ! 」

...Stopping just before.

If she take one more step...

Kudou Haruka's face would've been crushed.

As usual, Margo-san and Nei-san's cooperation is amazing.

「...You still want to go?」

Margo-san smiled.

「I-It's unfair...!」

Kudou Haruka complains...

「You...if you were suddenly attacked by the enemy, would you tell them that?」

...Un

Kudou Haruka's a karate player...

She's not used to underground work.

「I-I was just relaxed just now! I will not fail like that in actual combat...!」

...Really, She's no good.

「We're having an actual fight right now though」

Kudou Haruka trembles from what Margo-san said.

「If it's you and Michi-san, it might be just a sister's fight but...if someone from the Kouzuki security service tries to punch someone from『Kuromori』isn't that already『combat』?」

Margo-san speaks calmly.

「『Kuromori』is indebt with Kouzuki-san greatly but we're not his subordinates. We're an independent organization. Didn't I ask you first if you know me...!」

Right...Margo-san is...

「You know that I carry the『signboard』that I'm the guard of 『Kuromori』and yet...you picked a fight with me...!」

「That is because you insulted me!」

...If you're going to say that.

Kudou Haruka insulted Misuzu and us a lot earlier.

「But, you're the one who tried to hit me, right? Huh...you don't know? At those times...the one who made a move first loses」

「T-That's false charges...!」

「I wonder...there's this much witnesses, there's no way you can gloss it over」

Margo-san points at one of the girl under Kudou Haruka.

「Hey, what do you think? Who's at fault just now...?」

Margo-san asked filled with composure.

「...That is.」

The girl sent Kudou Haruka a glance...

「I'm asking your opinion so speak frankly!」

Margo-san's words are calm but she's not hiding her bloodthirst.

The girl...

「Haruka-sama...this time, it's our loss」

「W-What are you saying?」

Kudou Haruka's surprised from her follower's answer.

「In the first place...we're the first ones who tried to provoke the other by insulting them so they would cause trouble...」

「...On top of being found out, Haruka-sama who's provoked the same way and tried to beat them up, it's a bit problematic」

「Also...that one even took the trouble of stopping right before it hits」

「Even morally, the one talking is right...」

The four followers all rebuked Kudou Haruka.

「—Is what everyone's saying though?」

Margo-san's ahead of Kudou Haruka multiple times.

Fundamentally, the experience is too different.

「Michi...you should warn your sister」

Misuzu who's been watching over the situation speaks.

「If she continues being a bodyguard, Haruka-san will die. Ruriko-san will be in horrible state too」

Michi stares at Misuzu...

「Therefore...beat Haruka-san」

Michi prepares herself.

She takes out a white glove from her pocket then throws it at her sister.

「W-What are you doing...Michi?」

The elder sister's surprised...

「Aneue...no, now that it came to this, blood relation doesn't matter. By my master, Kouzuki Misuzu's decree, Kudou Haruka...I challenge you to a duel...!」

「Don't be ridiculous, for sisters to have a duel...!」

「It's because we're sisters...I will punish you for putting shame on Kudou family any further...!~」

Hearing that...Kudou Haruka

「Michi...do you really think that you can win against me?」

「...If I can't win against a person like you then I'm not fit as Misuzu-sama's guard...!」

The two glare at each other.

「...It's definitely a 1 on 1 match right? They won't be participating, right?」

Kudou Haruka looks at Margo-san with suspicious eyes.

「It's a duel isn't it? Then I won't interfere. In the first place, she can beat you by herself...!」

Margo-san replied lightly.

「Are you saying that I'm weak?」

Kudou Haruka glared strongly.

「That's right. You're weak that you don't notice how weak you are」

「Un...on top of being weak, an idiot too. That's what you get from practicing only Karate I guess...」

Nei-san adds...

「...The theater basement won't be used today, right?」

Margo-san asks Misuzu.

「Yes, today's the presentation for the classical Japanese dance so it won't be using the revolving stage」

Misuzu answers.

「...What's theater basement?」

「Oh, Danna-sama...it's the underground room below the stage」

Misuzu told me.

「Then, should we do it there? There's no other place to duel in this theater, right?」

「Yes...there are guards everywhere in the hall」

「That said...I don't want to go out of the theater right now」

...Un

We'll purposely make ourselves target of Cesario Viola.

「Then, the duel location would be the theater basement...let's settle this before the『symposium』begins」

「Yes...I will act as the witness. Are you fine with that, Haruka-san?」

Misuzu asks Kudou Haruka.

「...Got it, I'll open the lock」

Kudou Haruka said.

「Then, call us out when you're ready! And, when you lose, you'll be penalized as a prostitute!」

Nei-san said...

「I don't mind...either way, I'll win. In exchange, if I win, you'll have to give back Michi...!」

Give back Michi?

「...I'll train Michi on Karate again. I'll have to punish the little sister who opposes her elder sister thoroughly! This is all because of that foolish father's brutal martial art『Kudou style』...Michi's corrupted」

Michi...

「You don't know anything...Let me show you my growth」

Michi's no longer hesitating.

「Hmph! I'll punish you...remember that!」

Kudou Haruka's going to underestimate her sister until the end.

...Then

「...Oh, so you're here!」

There are two girls coming from the other side of the lobby.

I quickly realized that one one is the master while the other is the retainer.

「While I was practicing with Yoshiko at the dressing room...you were gone before I noticed. That's troubling...!」

The long black haired beauty smiles at Kudou Haruka.

Her height is the same as Mana...her face looks similar to Misuzu.

As expected, she's an exceptional beauty...she feels much more gentle than Misuzu.

Somehow...the word『elegance』fits her very much...

This girl is in front of me.

「...Ruriko-san. We'll borrow Haruka-san for a while」

Misuzu called out her cousin, Kouzuki Ruriko.

If I recall, she's 15 years old...third year in middle school.

「My...are you working something?」

Ruriko-san looked at the mountain of pamphlets in the desk and asked.

「Yes. Kanako-san asked us to fold the pamphlets into two」

Ignoring the dangerous atmosphere just now...Misuzu radiantly speaks to Ruriko-san.

「My, is that so?...Then, let me help out too. Yoshiko」

「Yes...Ruriko-sama」

The retainer, Yoshiko-san looks like a high school student.

Like her master, Ruriko-san, she looks like a very gentle person.

「...Haruka-san and others, you have to return to the headquarters, are you not?」

Misuzu said calmly.

They have to make a reason to open the passage to the theater basement.

「My...is that so, Haruka-san?」

Ruriko-san asks her guard.

「U-Uhm」

「Then, please hurry up and go. Yoshiko and I will be helping out Misuzu-san here...!」

Kudou Haruka hesitates to leave her master

「I'll be protecting them here so I don't think there would be any problems...!」

Margo-san smiles.

「Therefore, go already and just return at once...!」

Kudou Haruka...

「...Ruriko-sama. I will be coming back immediately. Yoshiko-san, please take care of her. Misuzu-sama too...don't do anything unfair! Everyone, let's go」

「Y-Yes1」

Kudou Haruka walks angrily.

Her four underling girls follow her.

「...Why is she saying 'unfair'?」

Ruriko-san asks Misuzu.

「I wonder...Haruka-san is always furious in front of me...」

「Un, really, that girl just says what she wants, right?!」

Nei-san says while looking at Kudou Haruka's back.

「...Sorry, Misuzu-san」

Ruriko-san bows to Misuzu.

「Don't be...it is not something for Ruriko-san to lower her head for...!」

「But...Haruka-san did something rude, didn't she? That girl pledges her loyalty to me but...her methods are wrong and her behavior is always excessive...!」

This girl...she noticed Kudou Haruka's true nature.

「Even though Misuzu-san and I are not in a standpoint where we're in a

conflict... Inside Haruka-san's head, we're supposed to be rivals...」

As expected...Kuodu Haruka's acting on her own.,

「If I'm a bit more firm...then I think I can stop her action in advance. I'm sorry. I've caused Misuzu-san inconvenience...!」

Ruriko-san's worried about Misuzu from the bottom of her heart.  
...I think she's not a bad child.

「Don't mind it. We're cousins. Also, everyone helped me out...!」

Misuzu introduces us to Ruriko.

「Starting there, Margo-san. Nei-san.w Megumi-san Mana-san...」

Each of them bows to Ruriko.

Ruriko-san replies with a bow to each of them too.

「...Then」

When she reached Yukino, Misuzu stopped speaking...

「...Kishima Kuroko-san」

Michi speaks instead of Misuzu.

「Oh right, Kuroko-san...!」

「My, wearing yellow and black dress, it suits your name very much...!」

Yukino didn't say anything, she just has a downhearted face...  
Still, she bows to Ruriko-san.

Ruriko-san's the only daughter of the eldest son of Kouzuki『Kakka』...

She knows that she's an Ojou-sama among Ojou-sama's when it comes to nobility.

Or rather, hearing Ruriko-san talk this close

...She's surely a『Super sheltered lady』

Blandly and softly...

There's no evil at all...

She smiles at Yukino with a very innocent face.

「...And」

Misuzu looks at my eyes.



「...Kuromori Kounosuke」

I introduced myself.

It's fine to know my real name if it's just Ruriko-san but...

Her retainer, Yoshiko-san's here.

I thought that it's better to call myself『Kuromori』in this case.

Misuzu also took care not to say the last name of the girls...

「...Everyone's Misuzu-san's friend」

Ruriko-san said.

「Family...!」

Misuzu answered.

「...Family?」

「Yes...family」

Misuzu spreads the pamphlet without saying anything else.

「Then...should we work?」



Sitting side by side on the table...everyone begins to work at the pamphlets.

「If we have this number, we'll finish this immediately...」

Yoshiko-san said...

「Wait, Maru-chan...that's crooked. You should align the corners then fold!」

「Ah, sorry sorry...!」

「American's are the only one bad at this things!」

Nei-san and Margo-san are messing around.

「Wait wait...Kuroko-san, do it firmly!」

「Eeeh?」

「Really, you're so bad!」

Mana's scolding her sister again.

...Megu.

She's working at an amazing speed. Furthermore, it's delicate.

「...Megu?」

「Ah...what? Yoshi-kun?」

「You're working so amazingly though...?!」

「Well...I've been the class representative often before so I'm used to this. Also... I'm the type that gets immersed when concentrating...」

Speaking of which, a while ago...she just kept folding the pamphlets without talking to anyone.

Somehow...it's such a simple task but each of their personality comes out.

...Misuzu's working on almost the same speed as Megu.

But, she still has the composure to talk to Ruriko-san while working.

Everyone here has different personality

Ruriko-san's very careful but very slow...

On the time where others can finish at five...she somehow completes one.

「Horahora, Ruriko-sama...if you match the corners in here, you can do it smoothly...」

Yoshiko-san's also terribly slow. She's boundlessly careful though.

「...Misuzu-san」

Ruriko-san speaks up while continuing her work.

「Nadeshiko-sensei praised Misuzu-san's progress these past few days...!」

「I'm not making progress」

Misuzu said.

「No. As far as I can see, Misuzu-sama's improving greatly...!」

Yoshiko-san said.

「Even so...Nadeshiko-sensei has told us but」

「...What?」

「She said that Misuzu-san might've fallen in love...!」

Misuzu's cheeks blushed from what Ruriko-san said.

「That is...by chance, today's dance would be a love dance...」

「That is what Nadeshiko-sensei said however...Misuzu-san's dance didn't look like『A dance of a girl in love』until last week. And now...it's firmly expressed as

an『adult woman suffering from love』...』

Suffering from love?

Misuzu...are you suffering?

「...Then, I』

Ruriko-san looked at me.

「I have seen Misuzu-san holding hands with Kuromori-san during the other day when you entered the rehearsal...』

Oh right...at that time...

From the second floor window of the Konpeki style rehearsal building...

Ruriko-san and Kudou Haruka looks down at Misuzu and me.

「Yes...Ruriko-san』

Misuzu doesn't seem to have any intention of hiding it to her cousin.

「I've fallen in love with him...!』

She holds my hand tightly...

Megu's silent work stopped.

Yukino's looking at us with a『Huh?』face

Margo-san and Nei-san are smiling.

Mana touched Megu's shoulders.

「I want to bear this man's child...!』

「My...my thoughts were right after all!』

Ruriko-san's eyes are shining as she look at us.

「But...Misuzu-sama. How about your fiance?』

Yoshiko-san asks Misuzu.

「She's right...Misuzu-san has a fiance grandfather has decided just like me...』

Ruriko-san's face turned gloomy.

「We will talk to grandfather after the gathering today. Also...I'll ask for his permission to be in a relationship with this man...!』

Misuzu said clearly.

「My, wonderful! I will support you...Misuzu-san!」

The 15 year old cousin is moved deeply...

「By the way...who is Misuzu-sama's fiance?」

Yoshiko-san asks

「Well...I can't say it now」

Misuzu answers then looked at us.

「Please keep working...and please listen to my story」

...Misuzu.

「Ruriko-san and I are Kouzuki Shigetaka's granddaughters. There are no other grandchildren. The current Kouzuki house has grandfather controlling everything...the successor of the family would be either Ruriko or me. Therefore...there are a lot of people who wants to be married to us aiming at the property of Kouzuki...」

Un...

If you marry Misuzu and Ruriko-san...you'll inherit a huge wealth and power.

「Of course, there are men in the Kouzuki family as well...there are a lot of nobles intimate with Kouzuki house...politicians and foreigners...and relatives who are proposing to adopt their family to the bride. Ever since Ruriko-san and I were born...」

That's already the talk even at baby stage.

「If this continues...a battle will start. Ruriko-san and my safety would be threatened. Therefore...grandfather had decided our『fiance』among the Kouzuki family Once the fiance is decided...the quarrel will die out...

「However...it has never been announced who in the family is the『fiance』officially」

「Eh, why?!」

Nei-san asks.

「If we announce it while we're still young...the『fiance』would receive strong envy from the family. There might be people who'd try to kill him. Therefore,

it's unknown who's the『fiance』decided until it's announced」

「...Misuzu-san, do you know who is it?」

Megu asks.

「Yes...I saw him during my 16th birthday」

「In short...the『fiance』guy knows his own standpoint too, right?」

...Margo-san asks.

「Yes...that is right」

Misuzu answered in a small voice.

「Since I'm 15 years old...I haven't been told who's my『fiance』yet」

Ruriko-san said.

「That『fiance』will be coming today, right?」

I...

「Then...I'll talk to him and break the engagement」

Misuzu looks at me.

「Yes...Danna-sama」

Ruriko-san's eyes shine, she's impressed.

「That's amazing. That's wonderful!...I'll support you! Misuzu-san!」

---

## 218. What is Sex?

---

「But will Gozen-sama allow it?」

Ruriko-san's retainer...Yoshiko-san said.

The vassal of the noble Kouzuki house, calls Kouzuki『Kakka』『Gozen-sama』

「Gozen-sama, once he has decided on something, it's not something that can be overturned easily... Misuzu-sama is still young, isn't it better to take a look at the situation and take time top persuade him so he can understand?」

Yoshiko-san's suggestion is reasonable but...

「Then...won't that be impolite for my current『fiance』?」

Misuzu said.

True, even though Misuzu doesn't intend to get married with him in the future...it feels sorry for the man who thinks『I'm her fiance』without knowing anything.

「Besides...I myself can't endure the reality that I have a『fiance』other than this one」

Misuzu looks at me.

「I want to live with this gentleman」

Nei-san and Margo-san's looking at us amusingly.

Megu and Mana have a slightly complicated face.

Yukino, her mouth is opened wide.

I...what kind of face I'm making right now?

「I might be disowned by grandfather after this. I might be banished from Kouzuki house today. But still, I don't mind. I know that even if I became just my body alone, I know that this gentleman will accept me...」

Misuzu's prepared for it.

If she's disowned by Kouzuki house...she can't stay in her home anymore. She can't go to school either. Even the dance would be impossible.

Misuzu would lose everything.

But still...she said that she wants to be with me...

「I'm moved...!」

Ruriko-san said.

「What a wonderful thing it is...right, Yoshiko!」

But, Yoshiko-san...

「Are you really sure about that...Misuzu-sama?」

She's shocked in the situation where Misuzu might be expelled from Kouzuki house.

「...Kuromori-sama too, are you okay even if Misuzu-sama leaves Kouzuki house...?」

Oh...this person.

She thinks that I knew Misuzu was a member of Kouzuki house and that I seduced her.

「When I first met Misuzu, I didn't knew which house she was born in at all」

I poke honestly.

「Even know...I don't know Kouzuki house well. I think that's fine. I came to like Misuzu, not Kouzuki house」

Misuzu smiled at me.

「Danna-sama...your hairstyle today is wonderful...!」

「Oh, this?...I thought that Misuzu would like it so I had Katsuko-nee fix it」

「...As I thought」

Misuzu leans her body to me.

「...I love you, Danna-sama」

...Misuzu.

Misuzu turned towards Margo-san, Nei-san, Megu and Mana.

「I'll ask everyone too. If ever I were to be expelled from Kouzuki house...will you allow Misuzu to live by Danna-sama's side?」

Misuzu asks looking at each and every eyes.

「I don't mind it at all! It's fun to have the『family』increase!」

Nei-san took the lead.

「I am in that standpoint after all. If Misuzu would join in, I would be pleased to welcome you」

Megu said.

「When you talk about that, Mana's the same too... Mana only has Onii-chan as her place to go after all. I'm completely okay」

Mana answers.

「I don't know about Minaho's opinion but...as an individual, I welcome you. I like Misuzu's personality and talent much more than her family. If you go to his side, then of course, you'd be helping out in our『job』right...?!」

Margo-san asks.

「Yes, of course!」

Misuzu answered with a smile.

「Uhm...Misuzu-sama」

Michi speaks up shyly.

「Whatever the situation it may be...I will be escorting Misuzu-sama for the rest of my life. I will accompany you everywhere...!」

If Misuzu is disowned by Kouzuki『Kakka』  
Misuzu and Michi would become members of『Kuromori』?  
the smart and sociable Misuzu...  
Michi who has a special fighting ability.  
It would be great if the two of them becomes formal members.,  
...But.

Kouzuki『Kakka』isn't that generous to allow that...  
She might confine Misuzu and separate her from me.



No, he might just kill me...

For Kouzuki『Kakka』, the life of a man like me is just worthless.

Is it okay for『Kuromori』to be hostile against Kouzuki『Kakka』?

「You won't ask that person?」

Ruriko-san points at Yukino

「...Eh, Me/」

Yukino's surprised.

「If I recall『Kiirode Kuroko』-san, was it?」

Yoshiko-san asks, Yukino;

「...Kishima Kuroko!」

No, you're Shirasaka Yukino.

Or rather, you're proudly calling yourself with that false name?

Did she like it unexpectedly?

「Right...how about we ask Kuroko-san as well?」

Misuzu looks at Yukino.

「Ah...I...」

Yukino's confused.

「I...don't mind it... Just do what you want...you two. Either way, you already thought what I would say...!」

「Yes. Then, we'll do as we like...!」

Misuzu answered Yukino with a smile.

Ruriko-san stares at Misuzu...

「Understood, Misuzu-san...please leave the future of Kouzuki house to me」

Her face is cheerful.

「I am very happy. Misuzu-san who's been holding back at everything for the sake of Kouzuki house has decided to make her happiness first... With this...I don't have any more regrets」

...Regrets?

「I will live as grandfather desires. I'll dedicate my life to Kouzuki house. As long as I can see Misuzu-san happy...I'm satisfied」

...Wait

Hey...wait a moment?1

「Ruriko-san...are you okay with that?」

I asked instinctively.

「Yes. I am a daughter born under Kouzuki house after all...!」

Ruriko-san replied with a smile that has no hesitation.

「In the first place, I am the daughter of the eldest son of Kouzki Shigetaka, Kouzuki Shigeaki Receiving the legitimate blood, I've been prepared to take over the next generation Kouzuki house since I was born」

That's right...this girl's the eldest son's daughter.

Misuzu's the second son's daughter.

The current head of Kouzuki house, Kouzuki Shigetaka『Kakka』...has no other grandchildren.

Ruriko-san and Misuzu are supposed to be fighting on succession...

When you talk about blood, it's orthodox that Ruriko-san would be succeeding...

「Misuzu-san, you're very beautiful, you're abundant in talents...among the clan, I do know that there are people who say that『they don't know who would succeed between Misuzu-san and I』 I know that there are people who plan to divide the Kouzuki family into two by letting Misuzu-san and I fight on succession. Actually...they purposely whisper bad things on my ear so Misuzu-san and I would have discord...」

Ruriko-san's eyes looks sad...

「I, of course ...don't believe those hearsays. I've known Misuzu-san from childhood very well...I admire her as a cousin」

「I also love you, Ruriko-san」

「Thank you very much. But...the people who speak selfishly just keeps on increasing. The cruel rumors spread, then a lot of people on my side misunderstands. They really think that Misuzu-san is fighting with me...」

...Oh, that person?

「Earlier...Haruka-san has caused trouble with Misuzu-san, I think that's the reason. I understand. Haruka-san is just loyal to me...I am very sorry」

Ruriko-san bows her head.

「Raise your head. Don't mind Haruka-san... We will be dealing with her properly」

Misuzu said.

「...Deal with her?」

Ruriko-san looks at Misuzu.

「I've thought that Haruka-san's not fit to be a bodyguard for a long time. That person was first recommended to be my guard but I declined it and chose Michi」

「Yes. Then, Haruka-san became my guard」

...I see.

Kudou Haruka's a third year in high school.

Normally, Normally, she should take care of Misuzu who's a second year in high school.

When they do that, she can guard her even at school...

And yet...Misuzu rejected Kudou Haruka.

Therefore, Michi who's in third year middle school protects Misuzu who's older...

Then that would mean that originally, Michi is supposed to protect Ruriko-san who's in the same third year middle school.

「That is why Haruka-san has a grudge against me. To some extent, that is the reason why she's treating Michi and I badly. It has nothing to do with Ruriko-san」

Misuzu bows her head to Ruriko-san.

「Not at all. Though she's older, Haruka-san is still under me. I sincerely apologize for Haruka-san's impoliteness」

「No, no, it's my fault...I wasn't able to remonstrate Haruka-san who's the same

age as me... Misuzu and Ruriko-sama didn't do anything wrong. Yoshiko will take all of the responsibilities」

Yoshiko-san joined in and the three had a tournament on lowering their heads...

「But, it will be okay now. I am thinking of having Haruka-san quit her bodyguard job...!」

Misuzu said.

「Haruka-san should better concentrate as a Karate athlete. That person's an athlete, she doesn't have the sensibility fit for a guard」

She'll cut her down.

「That is...I think so too. Haruka-san should devote herself in Karate...」

Yoshiko-san said.

「Actually...even now, she takes more time in her Karate practice, she's been neglecting to guard Ruriko-sama...」

「Yes, Michi-san guards me when in school」

...Eh, Michi protects Ruriko-san?

「Thank you for always」

Ruriko-san bows her head to Michi.

「That is because we're classmates. It's natural to protect a close classmate. Especially, Misuzu-sama didn't give such instructions like『protect Ruriko-sama』...!」

Seriously, this warrior girl is bad at lying.

I see...Misuzu has sent Michi in stead of Kudou Haruka who's busy at Karate instead of work...

Michi kept guarding Ruriko-san who's always with her in the school.

「I know the best how the school feels very suffocating for people of Kouzuki...」

Misuzu tells her two year younger cousin.

「Yes. You need to be in a generous attitude so you won't receiver any slander

from anyone. You mustn't be very intimate with anyone as well」

If you become intimate with the successor of the Kouzuki family...others would be jealous of that person.

Therefore, Ruriko-san has to treat everyone around her equally.

...She can't have a close friend.

「The only one I can trust from the bottom of my heart is only Yoshiko...」

Ruriko-san smiled at Yoshiko-san, her retainer.

Kudou Haruka...Even though she's her guard, she's not trusted at all.

「The me before is the same」

Misuzu said.

「However, I do not have a『retainer』...My father hates the Kouzuki's old tradition...」

I see...Ruriko-san's father is the eldest son belongs to the enterprise of the Kouzuki family...

Misuzu's father...if I recall, he's a high rank bureaucrat in the ministry of Education, Culture, Sports, Science and Technology.

He must've hated the tradition of Kouzuki house descending from an old noble blood.

Therefore, he refused to put a『retainer』for Misuzu.

「I understand. I lived together with Yoshiko since I was three. If Yoshiko-san wasn't there for me, I would've been devastated by the loneliness. It must've been very painful for Misuzu-san...」

Regardless of her father's will...Misuzu is Kouzuki『Kakka's』grand daughter, she had to fight the world as a member of Kouzuki house.

Envy and slander...she has to stand up alone from the self-assertive kindness... It's very lonely

「I am fine. Grandfather helped me out during the most painful times...!」

Misuzu said then...she writes the word『Nagisa』in my palm

...I see.,

That's why Kouzuki『Kakka』entrusted Misuzu to Nagisa

He believed that if it's Nagisa, she'll heal Misuzu's loneliness...

「Then, I have a lot of people I trust from the bottom of my heart」

Misuzu looks at me.

From Nagisa to me.

Then...Megu, Nei-san, Margo-san, Mana.

Everyone's Misuzu's『family』

Yukino's the only one out of place though.

「Therefore...Everyone's Misuzu's『family』, right?」

「...Yes!」

「...I envy you」

Ruriko-san said.

「Ruriko-san, join out『family』too!」

Mana shouts.

「...Mana, it's impolite to speak suddenly」

Megu scolds Mana.

「Ah, sorry」

Mana bows her head.

...I

「Ruriko-san's already a family however」

I said clearly.

「Danna-sama?」

「Ruriko-san is Misuzu's cousin. Then, she's family to me. Isn't that right... Misuzu?」

Misuzu looks at my face.

「...Yes, Danna-sama」

Then, looking at Ruriko-san...

「Danna-sama is very reliable. He's a gentleman. He'll never betray me. Therefore...he'll never betray Ruriko-san」

「...Really?」

Ruriko-san looks at me...

「Please trust Misuzu's eyes for people」

Misuzu smiles.

「That is...I do trust him however」

Ruriko-san's puzzled

「I...I've always thought of Ruriko-san as my sister」

「...Misuzu-san?」

「Though we're cousins...right now, Ruriko-san and I are the only daughters who carry the weight of the Kouzuki house. I'm the position where I know about your suffering and hardships the most...!」

「...Yes」

「Please call me Misuzu-oneesan」

「...Misuzu-oneesama」

「How does it feel?」

Misuzu smiled.

...Then

Ruriko-san's face softens...

「It's strange...Misuzu-san feels much more close than before」

「It's Misuzu-oneesan」

「Yes...Oneesama」

「Then, Danna-sama will be Ruriko-san's brother. Is that acceptable, Danna-sama?」

「Un...you can rely on me on anything from now on, Ruriko-san」

Hearing me...Ruriko-san's face blushed...

「Y-Yes...Onii-sama...!」

Misuzu looks at Yoshiko-san...

「Yoshiko-san...that's how it is. I think this is better so the rumors between Ruriko and I won't be spread anymore but...」

Misuzu worries about Yoshiko-san who's been Ruriko-san's long time retainer.

「Yes...That's right. I think that this is good」

Yoshiko-san said that but she thought for a while...

There's no clarity in her words.

It seems that she's doubting if this is Misuzu's plan to ensnare Ruriko.

「As mentioned earlier...I will marry this man. I don't have any ambition on Kouzuki house. AS usual...I intend to have Ruriko-san as the head of the future Kouzuki house」

Misuzu...made it clear that she doesn't have the ambition to become the owner of Kouzuki house.

「I'm grateful to you who have been watching over Ruriko-san since age three. Please stay by Ruriko-san's side for always. But...I've also watched over Ruriko-san since she was born. I am the older cousin of Ruriko-san. I don't have any relative at close age other than Ruriko-san. I've always thought of her as my little sister. The same as me...!」

Yoshiko-san...

「...Please forgive me for my impoliteness」

She apologized for doubting Misuzu in her mind even for a moment.

「Onesama! Misuzu-sama has become my Onesama! That's wonderful! Yoshiko, don't you think so too?」

Ruriko-san smiles happily.

「Yes...Ruriko-sama」

Yoshiko smiled at her master.

「Let's return to our talk...it would be dangerous to leave Haruka-san as Ruriko-san's guard. That person is a very shallow person」

Misuzu said...

「True...I feel like she's growing to become arrogant」

Yoshiko-san who opened up suddenly complained about Haruka-san.

「Did she gain confidence after winning the inter high school championship? The media's been doing what they want featuring her as a『beautiful karate girl』」



Today too, she brought four of her friends in Karate club saying『I made a security unit for Ruriko-sama』...And yet, she's not around Ruriko-sama at all』

Those four followers are like that?

「Today's Konpeki style presentation would have a lot of celebrities coming after all...」

Misuzu sighs.

「Yes...she came in a suit trying to make herself look good in front of those people」

So that pink pant suit was for that?

She's really a small shot or rather, she's childish.

Misuzu speaks to Ruriko-san.

「If she continues to grow like that, it's clear that she'll make a blunder and disgrace Ruriko-san sooner or later. We'll have Haruka-san concentrate on Karate and retire from being Ruriko-san's guard」

「However, would that obstinate one easily quit? That person boasts about being Ruriko-sama's guard」

Yoshiko-san asks in worry.

Boasting...she must be thinking that it's a『status』

Nevertheless...she's neglecting her job which is to protect her master.

「It's okay. Earlier...I made Haruka-san acknowledge to have a duel with Michi due to her impoliteness towards us」

「Haruka-san and Michi-san will have a duel?」

Ruriko-san's surprised.

「...Yes. I will fight with Aneue」

Michi answers with determined eyes.

Her hands continue folding the pamphlet properly.

By the way, the only one's working at this stage are...

Michi, Megu, Nei-san and Margo-san only...?

Mana's fascinated in listening to our talk. Her eyes are sparkling. She's interested in the circumstances of the other houses.

Nei-san doesn't cut any corners. She's a serious person to the root. Though her ears are tilted this way, she's moving her hand properly.

Megu's a too serious of a child so she's working silently. Even if she hear the circumstances of Kouzuki family, it's clear for her that it's impossible for her to do anything about it.

Margo-san...she's working while listening properly. She's a person who can do two things at the same time. While moving her hand, her head is calmly analyzing the current situation.

I'm together with Misuzu so I feel that it's rude to Ruriko-san if I'm working on something so...sorry but I stopped my hands.

Then, Yukino's just staring on top of the desk absentmindedly. 『Why am I here?』her face says. That feeling...well, I can understand it.

「If she lost to her little sister, Michi and broke her nose...Haruka-san will stop her arrogance. She'll notice that she's not suited to be a guard then concentrate only the world of Karate. We intend to thoroughly corner her...!」

Misuzu told her cute cousin.

「...Michi-san can win against Haruka-san?」

Yoshiko-san's surprised.

It's not unreasonable.

Michi and Haruka-san have their age and physique completely different...

Haruka-san's strength in Karate is also known...

She has never seen Michi fight with Kudou style I guess.

「Yes. Michi will win overwhelmingly」

Misuzu declared.

「Oh...so it's a duel」

Ruriko-san agrees.

「It'll be fine, Yoshiko. If it's a duel, Haruka-san doesn't have a winning chance」

「...Ruriko-sama?」

「...Haruka-san came to guard me with such shoes after all」

...Ruriko-san noticed it?

「Today's Haruka-san's wearing a pumps」

Ruriko-san told Misuzu.

「Yes...it seems easy to take off, coming to guard with such shaggy shoes, you can only think of her as an idiot」

Misuzu said in anger.

「It can't be helped...Haruka-san came here for her promotion instead of guarding me today」

Ruriko-san answers.

「Therefore...we'll have her retire from being a guard」

Misuzu said...Ruriko-san;

「Understood. I'll leave it all to Misuzu-oneesama...!」

Ruriko-san gave her approval.

With this, Michi can beat up Haruka-san fair and square.

「That's how it is...Michi, are you fine with it?」

Misuzu asked...

「Yes, certainly...!」

Michi's hesitation disappears.

「By the way...Ruriko-san?」

Misuzu asks her 15 year old cousin.

「Yes, what is it Misuzu-oneesama...!」

Ruriko-san's completely accepted Misuzu as『elder sister』

「Ruriko-san...do you know the word『sex』?」

...Misuzu?

You...what are you suddenly saying?

「No...I'm very sorry.」 I've never heard of it」

...Eh?

...Never heard of it/

「Yoshiko...do you?」

Yoshiko-san...

「I'm sorry...I do not have any knowledge about it」

Yoshiko-san doesn't know it too?

Yoshiko-san's in third year high school right?

No, her face looks serious.

Does these girls really don't know the word『sex』...?

「What is『Sex』?」

Ruriko-san asks Misuzu while smiling...

---

## 219. I love you so much!

---

「Eh, Ruriko-san doesn't know?!」

Mana speaks loudly.

...No wait.

Mana, not good!

Isn't it something that you shouldn't say by all means?!

「It's written on the immigration card when going abroad...!」

...Mana?

...What????

「...What is an immigration card?」

I asked instinctively.

「Onii-chan...you never travelled abroad?」

「...Never」

...No way I would

「Let's go next time...Danna-sama!」

Misuzu clings to my arm.

No...talking about it in this case...

「Look, after the column of your name in the immigration card...it's a place to mark if you're a male or female...」

Hey...Mana.

The『SEX』you're talking about is the『distinction of sex』?!

「Is that so, Yoshiko?」

Ruriko-san asks the girl three years older than her.

「I wonder, I don't remember. Everything is prepared by the secretary in advance when we head abroad...」

「You're right. We only had to write on the places where we need to be the one's writing after all...!」

...Hmm

「Uhm...is your overseas travel not a family vacation?」

Mana asks.

「Of course, we come with out family」

Ruriko-san answers.

「We're still underage so we can only travel with our father's」

...Errr

「...How many people go with you?」

I'm scared but I'll ask.

「Let's see...in case of a family trip, father, mother, several secretaries...also」

「There are 4-5 bodyguards too...!」

「Right...therefore, we go with roughly 15 people each time...」

「Even when vacation abroad?」

「When overseas, we have interpreters depending on the country...」

「There's also a tour guide accompanying us」

「Well, it doesn't cross over 20 people」

That's not a family trip...

「My house travels overseas twice per year...it also serves as a recreation trip for the secretary and bodyguards」

By definition, it's not a family trip.

A-Anyway...I've never seen『SEX』written as the distinction of sexuality.

「Uhm...Ruriko-san, do you watch television?」

Nei-san asks timidly.

「No...not even once」

Ah...as expected.

「You don't watch news either?」

Nei-san asks further.

「Yes...I'm supposed to not know anything about politics or social matters」

「Eh, why?」

Ruriko-san...

「I'm the symbol of Kouzuki house. If I become familiar with the society...it is likely to trouble my husband in future. I will inherit the Kouzuki house but I will not interfere with the enterprise under Kouzuki at all. I will leave the management to the specialists...that is the education I received」

She's shut from the information about the world?

「Ah...But, I'm allowed when it's within the school's scope of study. I know how society and politics work. I've learned modern history in textbooks too...」

She's the type that says『I only know the theory』...

「You're not reading books or novels?」

Megu asks.

「No, I like books. I enjoy the books in the library at house...!」

「There's a library in your house?」

「Yes. All of the books I read were selected by grandfather...Yoshiko and I enjoy the book sin library in order」

Even the books...they only read what Kouzuki『Kakka』chose.

「By the way...what is Ruriko-san's most liked book?」

Nei-san asks.

「『What Men Live By』written by Tolstoy」

Unfortunately, I haven't read that.

「You do not read magazines or something?」

Mana asks.

「Yes, I try not to see such things」

「Uhm...how do you decide your clothes or hairstyle?」

This time, Megu.

「That is...Yoshiko and I have father's stylist chose our clothing...we wear as instructed by that person」

「Our hair too...we leave it to the haidresser」

These two doesn't have freedom of choice.

No, it's not only one who has no freedom so they're not frustrated...

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san...if they're together then they won't feel it as odd.

「Today was fun isn't it...Yoshiko?」

Ruriko-san asks her retainer.

「Being able to talk to so many people ...」

「Yes...Ruriko-sama」

...Eeeeeeeeeeh?!

「Our school always have the same faces since kindergarten after all...」

Misuzu explains.

「There are some new students at the time of first years in elementary and middle school but...most of them came from kindergarten」

Yoshiko-san supplements

「I have this personality...I'm not very detailed with the trends so the people I can talk to gradually decreases too」

Well...right.

As the age of the girls rise, their conversation won't get engaged gradually./

「Are you not lonely?」

Megu asks.

「Lonely? I am always with Yoshiko except during class. Michi-san is in the class so I have no idea why you think I'm lonely」

「You're always together?」

「Yes, I live together with Yoshiko...oh, our bedrooms are different however」

「Ruriko-sama and I have been sleeping on the same bed till elementary but...



since middle school student's an adult, I'm taking a rest on a different room」  
「It makes me a bit lonely however...」

...Hmm

Yoshiko-san's completely devoting her life to Ruriko-san.

No, I should assume that's normal.

Since Ruriko-san's three years old, Yoshiko-san's 6...they've always been together.

「Mana slept with Megu-oneechan and Onii-chan in the same bed until morning the other day」

Mana suddenly said.

Are you talking about when we stayed at Tamayo-san's love hotel?

Rather than staying together until morning...didn't we just have sex that time?

「If you say that, Yo-chan and I sleep embracing each other!」

Nei-san said then laughed.

...That happened too.

Yukino's sending a glance over here.

Oh...when I first raped Yukino, we stayed together until morning too.

Misuzu noticed my expression.

「Danna-sama...please stay with Misuzu overnight too」

「Oh...sure」

「Don't say sure! Misuzu wants to monopolize Danna-sama at night!」

「Yeah, got it」

I laughed and replied.

「Ah, Mana wants to stay together overnight just the two of us too!」

「Let's make an even schedule」

Mana and Megu said.

「Right. You should give a day to Katsun and Nagisa-san too」

Nei-san answered with a serious face.

「But, I think it's fun if everyone's together at night」

Mana gives her opinion.

「Let's make that day too. But...I also want a night to monopolize Yoshi-kun」

「Un, that's definite!」

「Let's consult the『sister's association』just in case」

「Un, a general meeting of『Sister's association』!」

Megu, Mana, Misuzu, Nei-san's excited.

「It somehow looks fun isn't it...」

Ruriko-san looks at the four with a smile.

「Really...what a good relationship」

Yoshiko-san's surprised at the state of the four.

It's surprising for them to see that Misuzu who's a member of Kouzuki house blends with the other three.

「Yes, we're『sisters』 We became『sisters』by oath...!」

Misuzu answered.

「My, is that so?...then everyone's Misuzu's『family』, right?」

「Yes. Therefore...I'm not lonely anymore. Everyone's as good as my family...no, we're close『sisters』more than family」

Misuzu said with a radiant smile.

「I'm very envious of you...Misuzu-san」

Ruriko-san looks pleased.

「Misuzu-san has a man she loves...and people she calls『sister』...!」

「Ruriko-san has Yoshiko-san...she's similar to a sister」

Megu said.

「Please don't be absurd. I am in a position of serving Ruriko-sama!」

Yoshiko-san violently denies it.

「Don't say that...Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san, enter the『Sister's association』 too! Everyone can stay together, eat together, talk together! I'm sure it's fun!」

Nei-san speaks with a friendly smile.

「Yes, that's right! Mana thinks that's great!」

Mana's also heating up.

「...I'm grateful to hear that however」

「...We are」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san looked at each other lonely.

「I have the position as the daughter of Kouzuki...」

...I

「That doesn't matter to us」

Misuzu looks at me radiantly.

「Yes...that is unrelated to us.」

「...Misuzu-san」

Ruriko-san's surprised

「Both the position and standpoint doesn't matter at all for us. Therefore, we're『sisters』 We became『sisters』...we have formed a『sister's association』like that!」

Misuzu said.

「As I've said earlier...Danna-sama didn't know that I was a daughter of Kouzuki house yet...he loved Misuzu」

「Yeah...that doesn't matter at all. I love Mii-chan after all!」

「Misuzu also loves Nei-san!」

「Mana also loves Misuzu-san!」

「Misuzu loves Mana-chan too!」

Each of them tells each other their『love』

「I too love Misuzu-san」

「Misuzu also loves Megumi-san!」

「Megu-chan, I love youuuuuuu!! Let me give you a hug!!!」

「I also love Nei-san!」

「Megu-oneechan's always so kind...Mana's thankful! I love you!」

「Me too, I love you Mana! I love you very much!」

「Maru-chan, I love you a lot!」

「I also love you Nei!」

「Margo-san's so cool! Mana loves you!」

「Mana-chan, you're cute!」

「Ufufu...Danna-sama, I love you!」

「Ah, Mii-chan, you sly! I also love Yo-chan!!!!」

「Y-Yoshi-kun...I-I love you okay」

「Onii-chan, Onii-chan, Onii-chan...I love youuuu~!!」

「Yoshida-kun, I love you...!」

Seriously...these『sisters』

「I also love you all. Margo-san...I love you, Misuzu...Nei-san, I love you.  
Megu...I love you too. Mana...I love you a lot」

I tell each and everyone of them

...Then.

「...Horahorahora」

Nei-san looks at Yukino.

「Kuroko-chan...what's wrong?」

Yukino's...startled...

She resumed her pamphlet work.

「No, who cares about that how about you say your current feelings?」

Nei-san said...Yukino.

「...H-Hate」

Her hands are trembling.

「There's no way I'd love that man. I hate him」

「You hate him so much you love him...?」

Hearing that, Yukino's enraged!

「I hate him! I hate, hate hate, really hate him!」

Therefore...I

「I liked you...from the first time we've met...!」

Yukino looks at me.

「I-I...I hate you...」

Yukino's fidgeting.

「Mufufu, Ruriko-san, please remember this...this is what they call a Tsundere!」

Nei-san says something strange again.

「...Tsundere? What language is that?」

「It's italian」

...N-Nei-san

「It's when they like the other party so much that they'd say the opposite『hate』...it's taken from the name of the ancient roman philosopher Tsundere Anus!」

「Is that so?...That's very knowledgeable. Right, Yoshiko?」

「Yes...it's my first time knowing it too」

...Hmm

They have never met an innocent mischievous girl like Nei-san...  
They're super『boxed ladies』after all

「I-It's not...I really hate that guy! I hate him so much!」

Yukino shouts.

「...She's a tsundere isn't she?」

Ruriko-san's interested at Yukino.

「Yes, a tsundere!」

Nei-san laughs.

「Really...everyone seems to love each other...」

Yoshiko-san looks at us then said.

「My...I also love Yoshiko-san you know?」

Misuzu smiles.

「Of course...Ruriko-san too」

Ruriko-san's cheeks turned red.

「I also love Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san」

Nei-san rushes in.

「I also love you two. Ruriko-san, Yoshiko-san. Will you be friends with me?」

Megu smiles.

「Mana also likes you two! Ruriko-san! Yoshiko-san! Mana's just 14 years old and in second year middle school...please become Mana's Onee-san!」

Mana offers.

「I also love you. Ruriko-san, Yoshiko-san too, I think you two are very honest」

Margo-san said.

「Kuroko-chan, what do you think about those two?」

Nei-san turned to Yukino again.

「Ueeeeee?!」

This time, Yukino's confused.

「Kuroko-chan, I'm asking what you think...」

Nei-san asked...everyone's gaze turned to Yukino 「...T-They're fine, I guess?」

「What's fine, Kuroko-chan?」

「No...these girls are rich girls and yet they're not arrogant, they're obedient...it feels worrying that they're naive but...I don't think they're bad」

...I don't know why you're looking above.

Even though you're a daughter of Shirasaka family.

Furthermore, how dare this woman who's always so arrogant and troubles her surrounding say that.

「I'm not asking your impressions...I'm asking if you like them or hate them!」

Nei-san speaks strongly and Yukino;

「There's no way I'd hate such cute girls!」

Hearing that...Ruriko-san.

Her face turned red...

「T-Thank you very much」

Misuzu whispers in my ears

「Danna-sama...please finish it off...!」

I...

「Ruriko-san...Yoshiko-san!」

I look at the two of them.

「I love you...Ruriko-san. Yoshiko-san too, I love you!」

Ruriko-san's face flushed...

「That is...is it because we're members of Kouzuki house?」

I answered laughing.

「It's because you two are lovely girls...!」

Both of their eyes got startled.

「I love you two as much as these other girls」

Misuzu...Nei-san...Megu...Mana...Margo-san...Yukino...

「The same as everyone?」

Ruriko-san's surprised.

「Yes...the same. Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san too」

Yoshiko-san...

「No...I can't let that! I can't allow myself to be in the equal as Ruriko-sama!」

Yoshiko-san who's always been under Ruriko seems to be resistant to the word『same』

「That's from the bottom of my heart so there's no helping it. I like Yoshiko-san as much as Ruriko...!」

Ruriko-san...

「Wonderful...what a fantastic thing! I'm the same as everyone!」

「Yes, the same!」

「It's my first time being told such things!」

Ruriko-san's deeply moved.

「Ruriko-san...Danna-sama and us loves you two. Just as much as everyone... What about you?」

Ruriko-san looks at us.

「I-I...I love you all too! Is it okay to love?」

「Of course. Love more and more! We're going to love Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san more and more too ...!」

Misuzu said, Ruriko-san;

「Aah...Misuzu-oneesama! I finally understood the meaning of the word Oneesama! I'll join! I'll join everyone' 『sister's association』! No, please make me a『sister』! Yoshiko and me!」

「...Ruriko-sama!」

Yoshiko-san looks at her master worriedly.

「It's okay. We can trust them. They've been opening up to us all this time...!」

「That is right however」

「From now on...Yoshiko will become my『Oneesama』too!」

「I...」

「When there are other people, I'll be the same as before... But, if it's just the two of us, when we're together with the other『sisters』...okay?」

Ruriko-san who's been lonely being alone with Yoshiko-san...  
She's completely pleased to join in the『sister's association』...

「Michi...it's a good opportunity so join in the『sister's association』too」

Misuzu called out Michi who's purposely left out.

「No...I am Misuzu-sama's vassal...!」

Michi who's lonely being the single person left out...  
She still insist that she's a guard.

「I'm telling you to become my『little sister』...this will be your last chance」

Hearing that...Michi

「I-I'll join in...please let me join in!」

The end of her speech turned strange.



「With this...you no longer have a hesitation in your battle with your sister」

Misuzu said...

「Even if you lose your genuine sister connected by blood...the bonds of『sister's association』is eternal. I'll become your『sister』forever. Join in with that intention!」

「Yes...Misuzu-samaa!」

After that...

It became fun time.

Everyone begins to work on folding the pamphlets again.

This time...Everyone's talking to Ruriko-san about themselves.

Especially Mana talks about the dance club in her middle school...

Ruriko-san is happily listening to the stories of the『little sister's』talk as an『elder sister』

Then...She also listened about Megu's athletic club interestingly.

Margo-san's talk about US...Ruriko-san also talked about travelling abroad.

...Happily.

...Gladly.

「It's my first time opening up my heart and talking to people other than Yoshiko!」

Ruriko-san said.

Then...Misuzu lets Margo-san and Michi talk about martial arts...

Both of them talk about their simple story of self-defense...

「Michi-san...she's my classmate since kindergarten yet, it's our first time talking like this」

Ruriko-san feels admiration again.

「I can only talk about martial arts however...」

「No, it's very interesting!」

She only has the knowledge on the area set by her grandfather.

On top of that, at the super ojou-sama school...she has a very narrow relationship with friends.

It feels like every of the story feels fresh and interesting.

Everyone's working together and talking happily...

The work of 3500 pamphlets ended successfully.

「Ruriko-sama...it's about time for our stage rehearsal. Let's return to the dressing room」

Yoshiko-san reports to Ruriko-san.

「Right...Then, Misuzu-oneesama, everyone」

Misuzu stops Ruriko-san who stood up.

「Wait...shake hands with everyone. Yoshiko-san too」

「...Yes?」

「You're going to be everyone's『sister』from now on!」

First...Misuzu shook hands with Ruriko-san.

「...Best regards, Ruriko-san」

「Yes...Thank you very much. Misuzu-oneesama」

After that, it was the order of age.

「...let's all get along, Ruriko-san」

「Yes...Margo-oneesama」

「...Best regards! Love ya, Ruri-chan」

「Uhm...I've thought that you're very beautiful since the first time I met you, Nei-oneesama!」

Next...is me.

「...Yeah, best regards」

「Same here...Onii-sama Please be affectionate with me」

W-Well...

「My best regards, Ruriko-san」

「Yes, Megumi-oneesama!」

「Thanks! Ruriko-oneechan!」

「Yes...Mana-san!」

「...Best regards」

「Same here...Michi-san」

...Err

「Come here, Kuroko-san!」

Misuzu said then Yukino comes timidly.

「My best regards...Kuroko-oneesama」

「B-Best regards」

The two shake hands.

We exchanged greetings and handshake with Yoshiko as well.

There's no difference from Ruriko-san.

She's completely treated as an equal『sister』...

「Then, I will return to the dressing room first...Oneesama」

Ruriko-san bows to Misuzu.

「I will be coming soon after...」

Misuzu replies...

「By the way...Misuzu-oneesama?」

Ruriko-san asks.

「Uhm...in the end, what is『sex』?」

Ah...we completely forgot about that.

「Let's have that talk later...we'll teach it to you when everyone stays overnight」

Teach her when staying overnight?

「You can't ask anyone else okay? Danna-sama and I will be teaching you and Yoshiko-san deliberately...!」

Misuzu told her『little sister』with a smile.

「Yes, Oneesama...I look forward to it!」

Ruriko-san answered with an innocent smile...

---

Translated by [Machine Sliced Bread](#)

---

## 220. Kouzuki Shigetaka's boredom

---

When Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san can't be seen anymore...  
Margo-san whispers towards her chest pocket.

「Coast is clear...!」

...Then

Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee comes in

「I connected the phone and sent over the audio...!」

Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee removes the earphones inserted to their ear then smiled.

Both of them were listening from our conversation with Ruriko-an just now...?

「...Are you sure Misuzu-san? Disobeying Kouzuki-sama's will...?」

Saying that, Minaho-neesan's smiling.

「I don't mind...this is the only for us to be happy」

...Us?

「I can't endure to follow grandfather's will and just become the slave of Kouzuki house along with the『fiance』he decided. I will release Ruriko-san from that fate too...!」

Misuzu said clearly.

「Ruriko-san is very lovely and a wise young lady. Are you sure about this Misuzu-san...in worst case scenario, Yoshida-kun might be taken away...!」

Minaho-neesan asks and Misuzu...

「That won't happen. Danna-sama loves his『women』equally」

「My...you're quite confident aren't you?」

「Yes. She's my Danna-sama after all...!」

Misuzu smiled at me.

No...I

「Misuzu...I'm just a worthless high school student you know」

「Yes. I understand」

「I'm not even good at thinking」

「That's the best part!」

Eh...that's the what?

Misuzu...do you like idiots?

「But, Danna-sama has the courage. You have the integrity that won't betray us. It's no good if it's not Danna-sama. For me...or a girl like Ruriko-san」

...Err

I don't get it.

「She's a girl similar to Misuzu-san...intelligent, imaginative and insightful」

Margo-san said.

「Un. She's not just some Ojou-sama. She knows her own position and circumstances...thought of various people's expectations, feeling their ambition, but still trying to advance on the road she had to live in」

Megu, summarized it as such.

True...she's a much more firm child than I imagined.

「You're right...she understands the scope of what she sees. There's also a sense of balance. She's a good girl」

『The scope of what she sees』...?!

「Those girls have information completely isolated by Kouzuki『Kakka』... they're genuine『super-sheltered girls』」

True...they don't have any sexual knowledge at all...

She seems to be ignorant of politics, economics, and social problems as well.

「That's right. They can only be seen as『Young ladies who's ignorant of the way of the world』by the people of the world...」

Minaho-neesan analyzed.

「If you take time and talk to them then, Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san will gain true wisdom. Almost everyone who talk to them think that『they are poor Ojou-sama who only has paradise in their heads』」

I see...

『I don't watch television』or 『I don't know about fashion』

Their clothes were『entrusted to the stylist and hairdresser』after all...

Their conversation on girls of the same age would end.

After all, her favorite book is Tolstoy's『What men live by』...

They can't form a conversation with normal girls.

「You can easily label them as『Super sheltered ladies』and set them up and it's done. Nobody's going to approach them. Since they know the horror of the Kouzuki house...everyone won't say any bad thing...!」

Acknowledging that it exists then...ignoring it.

Then...Ruriko-san grew up with only Yoshiko-san as her friend...

「Everyone doesn't notice those girl's true essence!... That's why people like Kudou Haruka underestimate them!」

Nei-san said.

Kudou Haruka is underestimating Ruriko-san?!

「They're just generous Ojou-sama therefore she could do what she wanted. That's why she came in a colorful dress like today and tries to sell her name to the celebrities by saying she's Ruriko-san's bodyguard」

That pink suit and pumps.

The four followers were for that?

「...Aneue's not like that before. As expected, when she won the inter-high school competition and made big by the press. Until then, she's been steadily training...and recently, she's looking forward to going to glamorous places...!」

Michi said.

「The person who lived in a serious simple life finally got lost her way it seems」

Megu said.

「Oh, she finally made her『debut』at third year high school...! Of course she'll become restless」

Mana who's been longing for the world of adults while being a second year middle school girl, laughs.

「It's a miserable story. When she's seen on television, received fan letters, she's completely in high spirits and recently...she's absorbed in cosmetics and clothes...!」

Mana...

「It hurts to have your sister turn like that...Mana knows a person who has an elder sister who's a junkie at dressing up...!」

No...that's you.

I remember Yukino's room messy with clothes and cosmetics.

But...

What happened to Mana's memory of Shirasaka Maika?

It didn't become a split personality did it?

I'm a bit worried.

「Speaking of which...Haruka-san and others hasn't returned yet」

Megu said.

True...I feel like they're too late.

「Could it be that she's scared of Michi-san and ran away?」

Mana said meanly.

「That's not the case...Aneue thinks that I'm weaker than her...」

Michi said calmly.

「Also...Aneue wouldn't think of turning her tail and running away before the『symposium』tonight」

She'd sell herself to the celebrities even if she dies...

「Perhaps...she's finding a plan for her sure-win」

...Plan?

「Aneue doesn't trust everyone in『Kuromori』...」



I see, she's thinking that Margo-san would be intruding halfway 「...Really, she's underestimating a lot」

Margo-san grins.

「Well...I can roughly imagine what kind of moves she'll be using」

Wow...Margo-san, your smile is scaryyyy.

「I'll leave that to Margo...let's return our topic to Ruriko-san...」

Minaho-neesan turns back the topic.

「Katsuko and I didn't appear so Ruriko-san wasn't cautious」

...Cautious?

「Yoshida-kun, Megumi, Mana-san are in the same generation so there's no problem...Margo and Nei are personally honest so it's pure in a sense」

「There's no sense, we're pure!」

Nei-san pouts from what Minaho-neesan said.

「Well, even if I'm somewhat suspicious, she only thought of me as Yoshida-kun's bodyguard...」

Margo-san's my bodyguard?!

「Since you're introduced as Misuzu's boyfriend...Ruriko-san thinks of Yoshida-kun as a son of a good family」

No...why?

My face looks like a commoner...

「...The suit Yoshida-kun wearing now is really a good one」

This suit is something I borrowed from Minaho-neesan's grandfather...

「Now ay...did it cost 100k yen?」

When I asked, Margo-san laughs.

「You can't afford it even with 1M yen」

...T-That much?

「This fabric is a vintage one...you can't make it anymore so the price is

invaluable」

Minaho-neesan lent such an expensive thing to me.

「In the first place, you had similar body shape so I didn't spend that much time but it looked well. Even I am satisfied with my own work!」

Katsuko-nee looked at the suit she tailored and spoke happily.

「If it's Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san...they'll understand the value of this suit at a glance」

...Is that so?

「Since those girls have first-class observation power...Katsuko and I didn't appear...」

...Minaho-neesan?

「A woman who have fallen to prostitution, even once will inevitably have a dark shadow with them The people who understands, will」

...Right

Margo-san and Nei-san...even if they're in underground work, they're not prostitutes.

But, Minaho-san and Katsuko-nee...

「It would be strange for prostitutes to be together with Misuzu-san don't you think? When I come close and Ruriko-san turned cautious of us, it would be bad. Even though Misuzu-san took her trouble to open Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san's heart, even though she made good friends with you...」

「I'm thankful of your consideration...!」

Misuzu bows her head to Minaho.

「...Then, would you like to tell me about Kouzuki『Kakka's』plan about Misuzu-san and Ruriko-san...」

...Eh?

「Yes. I would also like to report it to everyone...!」

...Misuzu?

「Earlier...Ruriko-san has talked about the people who were trying to make

Ruriko-san and I fight inside the Kouzuki house...」

Un. I've heard about that.

「That is grandfather's doing...!」

Kouzuki『Kakka』...purposely let his two granddaughters fight?

「As expected...」

Minaho-neesan mutters.

「So that's how bored Kouzuki-sama is」

...Bored?

Because he's bored...he let his granddaughters fight?

「Yes. Grandfather intentionally splits Kouzuki family by making them fight...I think he's eliminating the bad people in the process」

Misuzu answered with a gloomy face.

「I think that's just half of the purpose」

...The other half is?

「The later part is grandfather's hobby.」 He intentionally had Ruriko-san and me brought up in a distorted manner...and looks forward to our growth」

...Hobby?

「Ruriko-san and I are two years apart. There are no other grandchild other than us because grandfather ordered so. His eldest and second son...each of them make a daughter. The two year difference is also calculated from the beginning」

「But...isn't there a possibility of giving birth of a boy instead of a girl?」

I asked...

「It's now possible to preselect the sex of your child. That kind of technology has been established」

Misuzu smiled at me.

「Why does it have to be daughters? Normally, won't he want a boy for a successor?」

Misuzu...

「Grandfather...I think he wants to make a disturbance in Kouzuki house on purpose」

...Disturbance?

「If the successor is a woman...the list of problems would increase later. Rather than『Who will be the bride?』the『Who will become the husband?』has a bigger argument」

I see.

Misuzu or Ruriko-san's marriage partner can become the next ruler of Kouzuki house.

Everyone from their clan would plan to send their own son.

「But...Misuzu-san and Ruriko-san's 『fiance』have already been decided, isn't it?」

Margo-san asks.

「Yes...I know who it is. My own『fiance』that is. I don't know about Ruriko-san. Furthermore...my partner hasn't been publicly known yet...!」

Who's the『fiance』...the clan would have suspicions.  
He's really shaking it up...

「Kouzuki house has become too big. Grandfather's opinion is that half or a sixth of the current scale is better」

「...He wants to restruct Kouzuki house itself」

「Restructure?」

「Restructure, it means rebuilding. Eliminate the useless staff and make it a slimmer organization」

Margo-san taught me.

「Also...grandfather doesn't trust men」

He doesn't trust men?

「『Men today can't be trusted』he says constantly. Grandfather is already beyond 80 years old after all...」

In Kouzuki『Kakka's』eyes...the men living nowadays are『young men』

「Does it mean that Kakka trusts women more?」

Nei-san asks...

「That's where grandfather's hobbies are built in」

...Hobby

「As you saw earlier...Ruriko-san doesn't have any knowledge about sex. In order for other girls not let her know...Yoshiko-san, her one and only『friend and sister』has been with her since three years old」

Being together with Yoshiko-san...Ruriko-san won't be lonely.  
Since then, Yoshiko-san's also been living with her isolated from information...  
she doesn't question her own situation.  
It's because she's convinced that's how it is.  
Just the two of them snuggling each other...they don't hold doubt why they don't have other friends.

「Grandfather wanted to raise a girl with pure culture」

True...Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san both grew up to be obedient and good girls.  
However...with the information being restricted, there's no difference from being distorted...

「What about Misuzu's case?」

I dare to ask.

「In my case...it's the opposite」

...Opposite?

「When I was 8, grandfather showed me a sex scene of men and women」

...Misuzu

「...Also, the video of father having sex with his mistress」

She's seen man and woman twining at age eight...

「Then...I felt completely sick of it. I became unable to deal with men...!」

Kouzuki『Kakka』...purposely gave Misuzu a sexual trauma.

「Grandfather wanted me to become a lesbian...」

Misuzu's lesbian taste was directed by Kouzuki『Kakka』?

「I'm really bad with them...I've seen men in their animal-like appearance again and again. I'm already no good. I can't wipe off my disgust with men...」

No...But

「Misuzu...I」

「Ah, Danna-sama's different. Rather than that...I'm no good unless it's Danna-sama. The only men I talk to is grandfather and Danna-sama. I don't speak directly to men even the teachers or doctors at school

「Eh...your father?」

「Father...I haven't talked to him since I was 8. When he wants to talk, I tell him to mail through mother」

W-What does it mean...?

「I...at the times when I was most hurt isolated from school as the daughter of Kouzuki house...grandfather brought me to Nagisa-sama. I was saved thanks to Nagisa-sama」

「Err...working part time in Nagisa's shop, right?」

...Don't male customers come there?

「90% of the customers are female...if a man comes, someone else takes my place」

I see...Nagisa's been taking care of her.

「Grandfather thought that Nagisa-sama would heal me...then, Nagisa-sama has completed my lesbian preference」

Nagisa...after retiring as a prostitute...

After getting pregnant with a child whose father is unknown, Shirasaka Sousuke banished him from the mansion...

She became distrustful of men.

Then...then she trapped girls who hate men to lesbian acts in the shop.

「Who would've thought that Nagisa-sama would transfer me as a pet to Danna-sama」

As long as he leave it to Nagisa...Misuzu's lesbian preference will be strengthened.

And yet...Nagisa.

She gave Misuzu to me.

「I was really scared. But, I can't go against Nagisa-sama's orders...」  
「S-Sorry...」

I remembered when I first did it with Misuzu and apologized.

「Danna-sama was very gentle with me. He told Misuzu『I like you』」  
「...Misuzu?」

「I...I came to love Danna-sama more and more. I'm already done. Misuzu will become Danna-sama's pet forever」

「Un...I'll treasure you」

「...I love you. Danna-sama」

Misuzu snuggles to me.

「I'm no good unless it's Danna-sama. Other boys are a no. I don't even want to talk to them. I only want Danna-sama」

...Misuzu.

「I grew up distorted according to grandfather's desire. Grandfather wanted to make me a lesbian who hates men but...Misuzu became a『woman』only for Danna-sama」

We already have a relationship Kouzuki『Kakka』doesn't desire.  
I see...that's why.

Misuzu will have to fight her grandfather.

「But...Why does Kouzuki-san wants Misuzu to be a lesbian and Ruriko-san to be isolated from any information about sex?」

Minaho-neesan answers my doubt...

「Isn't that obvious? She doesn't want his daughters to be taken by other men」

Taken by other men?

「Un. I guess he wants to keep them under Kouzuki-san's control」

Margo-san said.

Just because he doesn't want his granddaughters be taken away by other boys, he forced one to be a lesbian and restricted information about sex on others?

「Like said...it's his hobby」

Misuzu's eyes are in pain.

「But, we can save them on the last minute. He won't be violating his own granddaughters after all」

That's...

No, Shirasaka Sousuke was trying to do that didn't he?

Raising his daughter as he want then rape her.

The girl named Agnes is still in the basement of the mansion wasn't she?

「But...what will happen afterwards? Misuzu-san and Ruriko-san, will you be happy if you do as Kouzuki-san expected?」

Mana said.

「Grandfather is enjoying it. Our joy and sadness...looking down at the top, he thinks it's interesting」

It's like he's observing a creature...

He stares at his granddaughter's suffering interestingly?

No...he purposely creates the cause of conflict...

He's trying to give waves of hardship to his granddaughters...

「Therefore...Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san needs Danna-sama too」

Misuzu looks at me with strong eyes.

「...Me?」

I don't have any power.

I'm an idiot high school student...

「What do you think will happen if both of them are taken by the fiance without any sexual knowledge?」

Without any knowledge about sex...they might be turned to a mess.

「But, Kouzuki-san won't let that happen, right?」



Kouzuki『Kakka』wants to mopolize his daughters...

「Grandfather's aged...he won't always be healthy」

I-I see...

「Besides...perhaps, grandfather thinks that after his death『whatever happens, happens』...」

This time...Kouzuki『Kakka』dominates the whole house and it's well balanced, but...

If ever he collapsed suddenly...The factors of the problems made to distract『Kakka』from his boredom will be bursting out in one go.

『Kouzuki house』will be turned into a mess.

Among them...Misuzu and Ruriko-san would be crushed by the severe situation...

「Grandfather is thinking『If I'm going to die then I better take down Kouzuki house with me』...」

Misuzu said sadly.

「Therefore...there's no choice but to fight. Fight grandfather...and my own fate」

...I

「Got it...I'll do anything I can. For Misuzu's sake」

Misuzu smiles.

「Thank you very much. Danna-sama...!」

Then, I turned to everyone.

「Everyone...please cooperate. Fighting against Kouzuki-san might be suicidal...」

To my words, Margo-san;

「It's something Minaho, the leader of『Kuromori』should decide with」

...Minaho-neesan.

「I will support Yoshida-kun and Misuzu-san. Either way『Kuromori』intends to

be get rid of so...as soon as possible...」

Minaho-neesan said that we don't have to worry about the influence of Kouzuki『Kakka』against『Kuromori』

「If that's Minaho's plan then I'll stay silent and follow...!」

Margo-san smiles.

「Well, I'm the same. I'll own a bakery so there's no problem if we confront Kouzuki house!」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「Uhm...Misuzu-san」

Megu speaks to Misuzu with her face turned red.

「I'm the same...I'm no good unless it's Yoshi-kun」

「...Megumi-san?」

「I grew up in a brothel...I didn't expect myself to be loving men in the future. Actually...I was on the verge of being sold as a prostitute by Shirasaka-san」

In Shirasaka Sousuke's plan, Megu's supposed to work as a prostitute when the golden ended...

「But, everyone saved me...and I didn't become a prostitute. Then, Yoshi-kun loves me...therefore...I won't love anyone but Yoshi-kun. I definitely don't want being embraced by a man other than Yoshi-kun」

「If so, Mana's the same! I'd feel disgusted if I'm going to have sex with someone other than Onii-chan!」

Megu and Mana doesn't know anyone but me.

「Me to me too! Yo-chan forever!」

Nei-san...you're a virgin!

「Therefore...I don't want Misuzu-san to be separated from Yoshi-kun」

「Un, Mana will protest against Misuzu-san's grandfather!」

「I will protest too~!」

「...Everyone」

Misuzu's moved.

「Whatever happens, I am Misuzu-sama's guard」

Michi says she's not following Kouzuki house but Misuzu.

「Let me ask just in case...what about you Kuroko-chan?」

Nei-san laughs and asks Yukino...

...But

Yukino's looking at a distance...?!

「...What's wrong?」

Nei-san asks...

「Those three foreigners have been looking at us since a while ago...」

...Three foreigners?

Following Yukino's glance...

There's three women with slender and tall body shape.

The three of them are on their late 20s and early 30s.

The two of them are twins? They look completely alike.

Their face and figure's completely the same.

They're wearing white pantsuit.

Black shoes and black leather gloves.

Sunglasses on their eyes and hair dyed white.

Then, the woman in between the two...

She's wearing pure white tight skirt suit.

The same sunglasses and white hair.

「Misuzu...go behind me」

Those three smells danger.

「Un...Minaho, go back too」

Margo-san and Michi comes forward

The three foreign girls smiled then approached us.

---

## 221. White Viola

---

The twin young foreign white haired women wearing black leather gloves, white pants suit, and sunglasses...

And another white haired woman wearing a white tight skirt also has sunglasses.

The three of them stand in front of us...

All of them have a face and figure of a model...

The twins come at front.

「Hello...I'm 『Government official』from America's department of commerce./ My name's『Katherine』 This girl's my sister『Audrey』」

...Err

True, when you look at the card suspending from her neck...

『Guest / US department of commerce』

They were checked by Kouzuki security service and passed through the gate

However, she calls herself...『Government official』

Anyway, she's speaking broken Japanese.

The other two seems unfamiliar with Japanese...they're just looking here while smling.

「Sorry...where's the guard headquarters?」

「...Then」

I hold down Mana's mouth who tried to speak...～

「Mana...don't talk」

「...Eh?」

Mana's surprised.

...Strange.

I feel something's odd...

Don't show any opportunity to these three...!

「Please stop the games...you're scaring the children」

Minaho-neesan spoke in Japanese.

「I'm not playing...I'm talking seriously...!」

I spread my arms to protect Nei-san.

Megu and Misuzu...Katsuko-nee's embracing Mana.

YUkino's cowering.

「...Michi-san, don't make a move」

「...I know」

Michi's hand is already holding the handle of the red whip

Margo-san spoke to the three.

「Let me ask your name once again」

The twin who's speaking in broken Japanese smiled then...

「I'm『Katherine Hepburn』 My twin is『Audrey Hepburn』...Then that one is the international exchange chief『Vivien Leigh』

Un...I don't get it but.

Anyway, I knew that it's a false name.

You don't smile this much saying your own name.

These people have bad personalities.

「Able to come here with that setting...Kouzuki security service doesn't seem to be serious」

Minaho-neesan said like sighing.

「Could you stop the stupid way of talking? You can talk Japanese properly right?」

Margo-san said.

「Why do you think so?」

The foreigner woman asks while grinning...

「...Cesario Viola has spent his childhood at the US military base in Okinawa, he had a setting of being able to speak Japanese fluently」

Margo-san answers

「Which of you is Cesario Viola?」

Margo-san looked at the twins

She ignored the woman in skirt.

「Wait a moment...they're not, Maru-chan!」

Nei-san shouts from behind.

「Cesario Viola's not among those women...!」

...U-Un.

I'm surprised at what Margo-san said too.

I've heard that Viola's a master of disguise but...

Can he take shape of such a young and beautiful woman?!

「No...that's not it. Nei」

Margo-san speaks in a calm tone...

「These people aren't the『Cesario Viola』who came to Japan targetting Nei」

...Meaning?

「They're a different『Cesario Viola』from what we fought before」

There's more than one viola?

The three women laughed.

They all understand Japanese?!

One spoke in broken Japanese and the other two pretended not to understand...

They're all fake...!

「You got us, Miss Margo Starkweather. I wonder if that's the result of『Kyouko Messer's』education...」

The woman in tight skirt standing behind spoke in fluent Japanese.

『Kyouko Messer』it's the underground name of Margo-san's master, Kyouko Dothnomechey-san

Knowing that name means...

「Kyouko-san taught me not to talk to people who can't introduce themselves

properly...!」

「My, excuse me」

The tight skirt woman gives instruction to the twins with her eyes when Margo-san told them.

The woman who's speaking in broken Japanese opens her mouth.

「Nice to meet you...I'm Cesario Viola. My real name's Fabiano Katou!」

Then, the twin who's been silent until now...

「Hello...I'm Rosalind Orlando. Real name, Fabiana Katou!」

Nei-san opposes.

「No! Rosalind's not a woman like you...she died! She's shot by Kei-chan...!」

Nei-san must be having flashbacks.

Nei-san shouted strongly.

「You're right...『The fourth Cesario Viola』had that kind of case...!」

The fourth...Cesario Viola?!

「But, the Viola there has already been sent over his next『Rosalind Orlando』」

The other『Cesario Viola』said.

「Right. 『Cesario Viola』need to be shown with his little sister『Rosalind Orlando』in public...!」

The other『Rosalind Orlando』laughs.

...What's going on.

「Danna-sama...you mustn't take what the『enemy』say in face value!」

Misuzu brushes off my confusion.

Right...this might all just be a lie.

「Well...it doesn't matter if you're another『Cesario Viola』and 『Rosalind Orlando』though...」

Margo-san told the『enemy』calmly...

「By the way...who's supervising these two?」

Margo-san's eyes turned to the tight skirt woman.

That woman laughs.

「...Who do you think?」

Margo-san...

「Either way, it's another code name associated with Shakespeare? If I have to guess, is it 『Lady Macbeth』?」

「My...I'm not that old however」

The tight skirt woman denies it laughing.

「If you're 『Katherina Minola』 then that would be helpful」

「I'm not that 『Shrew』」

「Then...Cressida?」

「I'm not a lass that flirts like her」

The two laughs.

「...Then, 『Ophelia』?」

「No matter how you look at it, naming myself as an innocent lady, isn't that shameless?」

「...Then, who are you?」

The woman laughs.

「『Cordelia France』」

「In short...you're not the top but there's still someone above you?」

「That's how it is...I'm just being used」

Miss Cordelia answered.

「Then...what business do you have with us?」

Margo-san asks the women

「It's just a simple courtesy visit...we'd like to see your faces at least once」

「Coming to check the faces of the people you're going to kill...?!」

Yukino raised her voice hysterically.

Miss Cordelia laughs...

「We don't intend to fight you. There's no meaning if you don't gain a single yen, don't you think?」



「Then...why did you come here?」

The other『Cesario Viola』answers

「It's to witness」

「That's right, your fight with the『Fourth Cesario Viola』」

The other『Rosalind Orlando』added

「Strange. Even the『Fourth Cesario Viola』won't be gaining money from fighting us」

Margo-san said.

That's right...even if he captures Nei-san, there's no financial compensation. They're completely saying that this conduct began from the『fourth Cesario Viola's』grudge.

「The organization allowed the『fourth Cesario Viola's』travel to Japan as promotion of activities」

Miss Cordelia said.

As expected...they're aiming to show the western, American murder organization『Cesario Viola』to Japan...

「However...the『fourth Cesario Viola』has already made a client contract in Japan」

...Contract?

...Murder?

「The person Shirasaka Moritsugu has asked to erase all of the people involved in this case」

Miss Cordelia happily said.

The head of Shirasaka family?!

The enemies have joined together.

...No.

『The fourth Cesario Viola』has made business with Shirasaka house by himself. Rather than a free promotion service...it's better to work with to make money. Viola's follower's motivation has changed.

「We'll give you a list on this occasion」

The other『Rosalind Orlando』took out a piece of paper from the handbag.  
That's a list of names written in English.

「Here you go」

Rosalind hands the paper.

「...Michi-san, take it. Be careful」

Margo-san instructs...Michi takes the paper calmly.

「It's okay...I don't bite」

Rosalind laughs.

「My, she's not your type?」

The other Viola teases her sister.

「You're right. I haven't eaten a black haired girl yet...!」

Michi...

「I have a poison so I'm not delicious」

Rosalind looks pleased...

「My my, what a cute thing to say...!」

Michi handed the paper she received to Margo-san.

Margo-san checked the paper...then handed to Minaho-neesan on the back.

「My...you're quite naive. If we had a radioactive polonium on the paper, you'll all die」

Miss Cordelia said.

「You're not Russian Mafia, you don't do such unromantic assassinations, do you? Polonium and VX gasses are dangerous to set...you don't do such boring way of killing, do you?」

Margo-san answered.

「My, why do you think so? We might be much more violent than you think?」  
「Beautiful ladies won't do acts that would hurt their beauty...and also」  
「...Also?」

「...Cordelia is a familiar name. I've heard about the person named Cordelia

Prisken a lot from Kyouko-san...」

Margo-san stares at Miss Cordelia

「Kyouko Messer, what did she say about me...?」

「I wonder...shouldn't you just ask her?」

「As expected...Kyouko Messer's already in Japan?」

「You do know Kyouko-san's methods way better don't you? She's hiding herself into a place no one can see until it becomes the highlight of the show」

「Hearing that makes me relieved...I've got a『loan』from Kyouko Messer」

「...Loan?」

「That's right...it's not『borrow』but『loan』 I'd like to payback soon. I don't want it to stay for the rest of my life」

Miss Cordelia said.

「Then...you just came as a watcher?」

「Well...that's one of the reasons」

Margo-san and Miss Cordelia look at each other.

「『The fourth Cesario Viola』had been given strict orders not to attack this theater」

...Eh?

「There's a lot of children from good families of Japan here, don't you think? It won't become a promotion if we got them involved in a bad way」

...Right.

They want to advertise the power of the organization of『Cesario Viola』to Japan's upper class.

If they killed a child of a noble who has nothing to do with it...they'll become infamous.

「Besides...we came as a government official of our home country」

Miss Cordelia points at the name tag showing『American commerce department』hanging on her neck.

「We won't do any act that would lose States' authority. We're patriots after all...」

Margo-san smiles wryly.

「I appreciate your thoughtfulness...!」

「The『fourth Cesario Viola』will be attacking everyone moving to the hotel after this. Let's see, that kind of recreation's better after dinner isn't it? How about we start the fight after 8PM?」

...After 8.

「Even if we don't fight...you'd be infiltrating by that time, don't you?」

Margo-san said.

「Obviously...it's a highlight on how far can we approach you before the battle starts, don't you think?」

Miss Cordelia laughed again.

「Then, that's all from us. Please say my regards to Kyouko Messer. I might not be able to meet her...」

Miss Cordellia is about to leave but...

「There's no way Kyouko-san would say hello to you」

Cordelia stopped.

She turned to Margo-san.

「What did Kyouko Messer told you about me?」

Margo-san answered.

「She told me that she doesn't love anyone as much as you...!」

「...Is that so?」

Cordelia glared at Margo-san

「Are you Kyouko Messer's current lover?」

Margo-san laughs.

「I'm Kyouko-san's apprentice. She's still treating me as a child even now」

「...Child?」

「...I'm from the facility too」

Hearing that...Miss Cordelia's face calms down.

「...Is that so?」

「It's the same reason why Kyouko-san parted from the Brazilian Crime Organization『Marandoro』and became a guard for『Kuromori』 For her, we are all her『daughters』...!」

「...I get it somehow」

「That's why...I don't want you to bear a grudge to Kyouko-san」

「I'm not...I just feel regretful on her talent. Kyouko Messer might be able to win against the『First Cesario Viola』...」

Cordelia said sadly.

「Good day...I'd like to see you again」

「Right. I'd like to open some California wine with the three of us」

「That's impossible...!」

「That depends on your feelings however...?」

「Anyway...win against the『fourth Cesario Viola』 Let's continue talking if you survive」

「You're right...」

「...I wish you good luck」

Miss Cordelia walks out.

The white twins go after her.

「...Bye everyone」

「...Do your best」

Then...the three white death gods disappear

「...Margo-san, how far do you trust those people's words?」

Misuzu asks.

「I don't trust anything about them」

Margo-san laughs.

「But...that person bothered to come to see Margo-san」

Megu asked with an anxious face.

「If that person's really Cordelia Prisken...Kyouko-san's first apprentice, she'd be the the longest partner she worked with」

「...What?」

「From what I've heard from Kyouko-san...Cordelia Priskin is supposed to be dead」

We're talking to someone who's supposed to be dead?

「Well fine. They're not our ally but they're not completely our enemies」  
「How can you say so?」

Megu asks.

「If they're really our enemies...we're already killed now. The three of them had enough fighting power」

...Un  
I think they overlooked us.

「Assuming that someone's ruling above『Cesario Viola』...I imagined the possibility that the current Viola isn't the original. Who would've thought that there were multiple『Cesario Viola』in one organization」

「They say that the one aiming at us is the『fourth Cesario Viola』 At least, there's a four pair of『Cesario Viola』and『Rosalind Orlando』?」

Megu asks...Margo-san;

「They might just be deceiving us on that part. Even those twins, we don't know if they're really a『Cesario Viola』」  
「But...that would make a reasonable explanation About everything until now」

Katsuko-nee said.

「The Cesario Viola aiming at us...is called 『fourth Cesario Viola』by those girls but...the image is a strong and violent young opponent」

...Un. True.  
From what I've heard from Nei-san...he's a dangerous old man.

「I can't feel their elaborate plan at all. I don't understand why such crude criminals had been let loose for a long time」

Katsuko-nee said...Minaho-neesan;

「It must be true that the organization is manipulating multiple『Cesario

Viola's』at the same time Depending on the content of the job...they change the Viola that would work for it」

...Then

「The『fourth Cesario Viola』that's aiming at us is the team that's taking the most violent and brutal jobs」

「Right...those three have a much more sophisticated atmosphere」

I see.

They undertake various criminal acts from various people...

In reality, they let the person suited take the job...

And the top of the team are named『Cesario Viola』and 『Rosalind Orlando』

Then, the crime legend of Viola strengthens.

There's no problem if he's killed or arrested.

Another『Cesario Viola』is alive and well.

Even if if they confess『I am Cesario Viola』at the police station...it'll only be thought of as a lie.

『Cesario Viola's』criminal case will just continue.

「I don't really think that more than four pairs of『Viola』exists but...there might be more than two pairs」

Margo-san said.

「By the way...the list given a while ago」

Margo-san asks...Minaho-neesan spread the paper.

If we're going to believe Cordelia's words...

That is the list of people Shirasaka Moritsugu asked『the fourth Cesario Viola』to kill.

「...Yoshida-kun's name isn't here」

I look in the list.

True, My name's not here.

「Shirasaka house hasn't noticed Yoshida-kun's existence」

Right...I

Shirasaka house doesn't know me at all.

「Rather than that...Shirasaka Moritsugu seems to be serious Katsuko-nee said after looking at the list.

「There's even people's name from Shirasaka family written too. Mr. Ichikawa, and Shirasaka Sousuke's wife too...」

...Shirasaka Moritsugu

...It seems that he wants to kill everyone involved in this incident.

Kill everyone...and just turn everything unsettled.

A last resort.

「My name's here」

Megu's surprised.

Yamamine-san's names...aren't here.

He knows that Megu is Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter.

The cause of this event...he's trying all of the parties concerned with Shirasaka Sousuke.

Therefore...he requested only Megu to be killed.

「...Maika-san too」

Mana said.

Shirasaka Moritsugu wants to kill Shirasaka Maika.

...And

「That's...granduncle...!」

In the list...

『Shirasaka Yukino's』name is written

「No way...!」

Yukino's lost in grief.

Shirasaka Yukino...Shirasaka house; Shirasaka Moritsugu has abandoned her.

---



## 222. Enemy and Enemy again

---

「I got it now...」

Margo-san sighs.

「Miss Cordelia's our『enemy』...!」

Does that mean...?

「She's not the person in the past Kyouko-san talks about」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Yoshida-kun...who do you think Shirasaka Moritsugu want to kill the most in the list?」

Minaho-neesan spreads the list in front of me.

Misuzu and Megu also looked at the paper on the table.

Written on the『Murder list』is...

First...the people of『Kuromori』that's hostile against Shirasaka house.

...Minaho Kuromori

Shirasaka Moritsugu only knows Minaho-neesan as the leader of『Kuromori』

Therefore, the surname's『Kuromori』instead of『Yuzuki』

Following...Katsuko Takanashi. Margo Starkweather

He recognizes both of them as people in『Kuromori』...

Nei-san's name isn't here.

It's obvious...Shirasaka Moritsugu doesn't know Nei-san.

Nei-san has never appeared in front of the guests of『Kuromori』

The only one who has business with Nei-san is the『fourth Cesario Viola』

Nagisa's name isn't here...I feel relieved.

Un...it's already been four years since Nagisa has retired from『Kuromori』

Following the list are the number of people with『Shirasaka』in their last name.

It's all names I don't know.

Perhaps, these people are rebelling against the Shirasaka head; Shirasaka

Moritsugu, trying to rebel against Shirasaka house by making a deal with Kouzuki『Kakka』

Lastly...Shirasaka Sousuke and his family.

The list ends with old man Ichikawa's name.

「If you're Shirasaka Moritsugu...who's the highest priority to kill?」

...I

「...Minaho-neesan?」

Minaho-neesan's the mastermind of this case.

Minaho-neesan should be the one Shirasaka Moritsugu has the most grudge against.

Margo-san laughs.

「Sadly...it's not her」

...Eh?

「...Shirasaka Sousuke-san」

Misuzu mutters

...Why?

Shirasaka Sousuke is his nephew isn't he?

Even though he's been looking after him up until now...

「You're right...if Shirasaka Sousuke-san's mouth is sealed, it'll become a futile situation」

...Megu?

「This time's Shirasaka house's scandal...to be honest is all just crimes of Shirasaka Sousuke being exposed. Therefore...if Shirasaka Sousuke dies, you can just make everything vague...!」

Margo-san said.

「Right...rather, the Shirasaka house thinks that if Shirasaka Sousuke continues to live, it'll be bad for them. He'll be caught by the media and just talk about Shirasaka Sousuke...!」

...I see.

It is as Katsuko-nee says.

As of now, the only evidence Minaho-neesan released is about Naomi-san's remains.

Various entertainment reporters shed bad rumors about Shirasaka Sousuke on TV...

Shirasaka Sousuke's comment hasn't been taken yet.

If ever Shirasaka Sousuke's taken to an interview, or a press conference...

This scandal will flame up even more.

「Therefore...before that happens, Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu would like his cute nephew to die. That's the only method remaining to extinguish this scandal」

It doesn't matter if the death is suspicious.

If Shirasaka Sousuke dies...the spark this scandal will disappear.

The media's pursuit will stop.

「...Papa」

Yukino mutters in a small voice.

Mana, she's not saying anything. She's just holding Megu's hand tightly.

「Therefore...Minaho has instructed Kyouko-san to turn Shirasaka Sousuke missing」

Un. Nobody knows the current location of Shirasaka Sousuke.

「So that's why that woman asked Margo-san about Kyouko-san!

「That's how it is. Those people know that Shirasaka Sousuke is with Kyouko-san」

Shirasaka Sousuke and Kyouko have left Australia.

If they discover the departure record...what's left can be imagined easily.

「Miss Cordelia spoke to us in Japanese and intimately is part of the plan. She thought that someone would accidentally talk about something that can be a hint」

「But sadly...not a single one of us knows Kyouko-san and Shirasaka Sousuke's current location」

Nei-san laughs.

「Wait a moment...does that mean that those three want to know Shirasaka Sousuke's whereabouts...?」

A bad feeling crosses my mind.

「That's how it is Yoshida-kun...Miss Cordelia lied about her being just a『witness』for the other viola」

Margo-san declared.

「Those three have come to kill us according to their contract with Shirasaka Moritsugu...!」

As expected...!

「I don't think those three are running under『Fourth Cesario Viola's』orders No matter how you look at it, those three are on a higher rank. And yet...them searching Shirasaka Sousuke's location...!」

They are aiming for Shirasaka Sousuke's life too.

「The reality is that they overlooked us this time so they can know the location of Shirasaka Sousuke」

Margo-san leaked a sigh.

「Then, they intend to kill us either way?」

Megi asks.

「...Should be. Shirasaka Moritsugu didn't make a contract with the『Fourth Cesario Viola』but rather with those people's『Organization』」

Minaho-neesan answered.

In short...Our enemy only the『fourth Cesario Viola』

Our enemy is the whole『Organization...』

Even the other『Cesario Viola』 would come to attack us.

「Is there no way to annul that contract?」

...Misuzu asks.

「It's only when the client can't pay up a lot of money, then they can void the contract」

「Un, regrettably...underground world prioritizes trust. Once the contract has

been signed, it has to be executed no matter what」

Margo-san answers.

「There's only two ways of cancelling the contract. Shirasaka Moritsugu withdraws the kill contract by paying a penalty...」

「And the other one?」

「Shirasaka Moritsugu is unable to pay up the reward for success...!」

...Err.

Margo-san explains what Minaho-neesan said.

「If the client is judged to be unable to make payments...the murder contract will immediately be cancelled. It's foolish to do work if it won't turn to money, don't you think?」

「They have to make such a rule...the person who'd do anything just to dispel his grudge relying on a『Criminal organization』should have the resolution of being killed later...!」

I see...if a person who pretends to have money requests for a murder.

「If they killed the person as requested and he said『I don't have money』... The『Organization』would have net loss. It costs quite a lot of money for people to kill people after all」

The client's life won't be equal to it.

「Therefore...the『organization』constantly monitors the client's pocket. Then... If ever the client no longer has the ability to pay...the contract would be cancelled at that point」

...I see.

「Shirasaka Moritsugu...has requested to kill this many people. The contingency fee would become several hundred of millions of Yen. But if Shirasaka Moritsugu loses power...and falls down from the head seat of Shirasaka family, he can't spend that much money freely」

It would become impossible for Shirasaka Moritsugu to pay up hundreds of millions of yen as an individual.

No, in the first place, the kill request was made only because Shirasaka

Moritsugu is sticking to the head status...

After he's chased out as the heads of the house...it would be meaningless.

「Therefore our current strategy is to endure Shirasaka Moritsugu's downfall」  
「Meaning...making the deal of the rebels in Shirasaka family with  
Kouzuki『Kakka』a success?」

I asked, Margo-san;

「On the contrary...the night hotel would become a bloodbath. Everyone on  
that list would be gathering together」

They can reasonably kill everyone.

「Are they going to blow off the hotel with missiles?」

It could be the radioactive material and murder gas that came out from the  
conversation with miss Cordelia a while ago

Mana asked worriedly

「Mana-chan...cost-effectiveness is very important in business」

Margo-san gently smiled to Mana.

「Even though they're going to earn millions of yen...it's stupid to hammer it  
all for a missile. The『expense』enemy use would only several ten million yen」

But still...that's a lot of money.

If it's the foreigners that attacked earlier, they can easily mobilize hundreds of  
people.

「With this...I've understood the gist of why Miss Cordelia approached us」

Minaho-neesan thinks

「But still...I think them purposely greeting us that way and talking about her  
having something『borrowed』from Kyouko-san is true...」

Margo-san answers with a dark face.

「But, we don't know if Miss Cordelia's『borrow』is『Favor』or『grudge』. Either  
way...the number of enemies have increased」

We trembled.

「But...why is Kyouko-san's name not on the list?」

Katsuko-nee who's been looking at the list all this time asked.  
Speaking of which...『Kyouko Dothnomechey』the name that's most famous in the underworld is missing.

「Could it be that Shirasaka Moritsugu failed to notice her?」

Megu said...

「No...Shirasaka Moritsugu knows that Kyouko-san is the guard of『Kuromori』」

Minaho-neesan said

Right...Kyouko-san's been the guard of『Kuromori』even before Margo-san and Katsuko-nee joined.

There's no way Shirasaka Moritsugu is unaware...

「I can only think of Miss Cordelia negotiating with Shirasaka Moritsugu to remove her on the list」

Margo-san concluded.

「Eh?...Why?」

I don't know the reason

「Why did she do it...even I don't know」

...Then

「Isn't that obvious?」

Yukino speaks up.

「That person's not a『job』...but a personal kill target?」

...Yukino, you?

「...Un. Yukino-san might be right」

Margo-san agrees.

「There's nothing else possible!」

No...Uhm

Yukino, do you understand your own position?...

「Haa...Somehow, I've gotten hungry」

...Yukino, Yukino-san?

「Even if you think about it, nothing's going to change. Either way, whatever happens will happen...!」

Sometimes, I'm envious of Yukino's thick nerves just like climbing mountain ropes.

Margo-san laughs.

「Right...Yukino-san's right. I think we can trust Miss Cordelia's promise that they won't attack the theater nor raise an incident until after 8. However, it's not only the three of them, endless spies have invaded」

Right. Miss Cordelia said.

Even if the attack starts at 8...the agents would be sneaking before.

As soon as it's 8PM...there's a possibility of the person next to me being shot and killed.

「Well...there's only Kouzuki security service and the child's guards here now but, The venue would be gathering more and more guards from each respective houses」

Katsuko-nee said.

Right, before the opening time...various families would be coming here starting with Kouzuki『Kakka』

Of course...the VIPs would be having top level guards.

The safety of the venue rises.

「Everyone, try to be together as much as possible. Don't separate from each other. Don't approach people you think suspicious even for a bit. When you feel something strange then report to Minaho or me immediately...okay?」

Margo-san said.

「...We know!」

No...Yukino.

What are you to us again?

I'm getting even more worried.



「Should we report Miss Cordelia's matter to Kouzuki security service?」

Katsuko-nee asks Margo-san.

「No...they're using IDs from American commerce department, director Yamaoka can't deal with it. Those three are special. I don't think the agents would be using the same method. Rather, I think it's better to let Kudou-san know it. That person will be checking on the people coming to visit from US government today」

「...Michi-san, where do you think your father is right now?」

Katsuko-nee asks Michi...

「I think that father will be flying around the theater anyway. Norma-san's in the front entrance so I think you should call her instead」

Yeah...we should stop going out of the theater.

「Got it...I'll contact her」

「Please...Katsuko」

Katsuko-nee bows to Minaho-neesan and head towards the entrance.

「Now then...what should we do?」

Margo-san asks Minaho.

Then...Misuzu speaks.

「Uhm...I should prepare for my『dress rehearsal』soon...!」

O-Oh right.

She has to change costumes.

「Un. You're going to the dressing room right?」

「Yes. Does everyone want to join in?」

Now then...what to do?

「Right...Megumi and Mana-san should be with Misuzu-san for a while if possible」

Minaho-neesan said

「Why?」

I asked...

「That's the safest place in the theater right now. There are girls doing practice independently outside but most of the performers are in the dressing room, right?」

I see...the guards who protect the performers should be in the dressing room too.

「Yes, that's why everyone should go there」

Misuzu said...Minaho-neesan;

「That's not going to happen. Today's performers are small children, aren't they? Shouldn't the guardians come along, not just the guards?」

「Yes, I think there are some」

「It would be fine if it's their mother but...if it's the father, they'll know our faces...!」

Ah...They might be customers of『Kuromori』

At such places...furthermore, before the opening time, it would be bad to see Minaho-neesan's face.

「Therefore, we'll stay in the lobby for a while」

「Okay, then I'll go there too」

「If Maru-chan's there then me too!」

...Nei-san?

「You see, Maru-chan's the safest place for me!」

Nei-san said and smiled.

What's left is Michi, Yukino, and Me.

「Yukino-san...I think she shouldn't come to the dressing room」

Misuzu said.

「...Why?」

「Her look...is indeed strange」

True

Yukino's wearing a yellow-and-black construction dress.

It's definitely not vulgar clothing but...

No matter how you look at it, it's a girl weak in the head.

Her hobby is too bad...it stand out too much.

「Besides...Today, Takabayashi Sayaka-san is here?」

「...No way?!」

Hearing Misuzu, Yukino raised her voice.

「...Who's that?」

「It's Yukino-san's classmate in middle school」

Mana told me.

「She's been talking about Yukino-san in the dressing room since lunch time.  
『I've come to play in Shirasaka Sousuke-san's house』she said...she's always  
been talking about the arrangement of the house and even the snacks served」

Misuzu smiled wryly.

Shirasaka Sousuke's a director on a leading advertising agency.

As a member of Shirasaka family...Yukino even attended an Ojou-sama school  
until middle school.

It's not strange if she's acquainted with a pupil of Konpeki style school.

「...That woman」

Yukino made a bitter face.

「Then, it's better not to show your face」

No matter how disguised she is...Yukino's former classmate will be able to  
identify her identity.

「Mana, is it okay to meet her?」

「Maika-san has never met that person even once...in the first place, Mana isn't  
Maika-san!」

Mana said then smiled.

「It's okay. I'll be with you」

Megu said.

「Danna-sama, what about you?」

...I

...What should I do?

...Then

Several people come this way.

Kanako-san who asked us to work on the pamphlets is walking ahead.

Behind her...

Kudou Haruka's four followers.

「Sorry...I had to take off my costume after the『dress rehearsal』...!」

Kanako-san who changed to her practice Yukata came back breathing roughly.

「The clothes today were borrowed from the headmaster so I can't let it get dirty」

Kanako-san wiped her sweat with a small hand towel then said.

「My...are you done already? I'm sorry, Misuzu-san and her guests did everything...!」

「It's not just us. Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san came to help out too」

「Really?!...I'm very sorry」

「Don't mind it」

On behalf of everyone...I spoke to Kanako-san.

「We're Misuzu's 『family』after all」

Hearing what I said...Kanako-san's surprised.

「Misuzu-san...could it be, this person?」

Ah...shit

Kanako-san seems to have misunderstood me as Misuzu's secret『fiance』

「It's not...Kanako-san」

Misuzu...

「This one isn't the『fiance』grandfather has decided on me...」

Megu and Mana pats my back.

「...Eh?」

「This is Misuzu-san's territory」

「Un...it can't be helped」

...Girls

「Geez, you're slow~! Hurry up and go to Mii-chan's side...!」

Nei-san thrusts me from behind.

I line up next to Misuzu.

Misuzu smile as she look at me.

「This is the person I chose...the one I love...!」

...Misuzu?

「My...Is that so?!」

Kanako-san's face turned bright.

「Yes. I'll tell only Kanako-san!」

Among these two...Kanako-san has her face feel very mature but...  
She's younger than Misuzu.

「...I can't tell Manami-chan?」

「Ufufu...you can. But, only Manami-chan」

「...Yes!」

Misuzu and Kanako-san smiled peacefully at each other...  
Kudou Haruka stares at us with a bitter face.

「Then, we can leave the pamphlets to Kanako-san, I assume?」

「Yes...Nadeshiko-sensei's apprentices would be coming soon」

「My, isn't Kiyoko-san already here if you're talking about apprentices?」

「I've seen Kiyoko-san do independent practice with Midori-san and Makie-san」

「I see...the apprentices are busy aren't they?」

Misuzu and Kanako-san are having conversation only apprentices of Konpeki style can understand.

「It's almost time for Misuzu-san to prepare...」

「That's right... I have to hurry」

Kanako-san looks at me.

「Have you seen the order in the pamphlet?」

...Order?

「Misuzu-san...will be the third from the end for today's dance」

Third from the last?

「The last would be the headmaster, Nadeshiko-sensei's dance」

Today's gathering is a symposium of Konpeki-style dance.

So the last...the teacher will be dancing herself.

「Before Nadeshiko-sensei is Manami-chan who's the best in our class」

True...they said that Manami-san's the headmaster's granddaughter wasn't it?

Misuzu's before her.

Then that means that Misuzu's the second most skilled among today's apprentices?

「It's a huge selection. Misuzu-san really did her best」

「Don't say that...it's embarrassing」

Misuzu's embarrassed.

「Un...I'm looking forward to it. Misuzu」

「Today...I will dance for Danna-sama...!」

I want to kiss Misuzu.

But...it would be bad here.

Kanako-san's looking...

Behind her are people glaring at us.

「...Sorry but, you haven't forgotten your promise with us?」

Kudou Haruka told me...

---

## 223. M

---

「...Who's this?」

Kanako-san asks Misuzu as Kudou Haruka shows an unusual atmosphere.  
Misuzu smiled gracefully...

「She's Ruriko-san's guard...don't mind her Kanako-san」

「...But」

「We'll settle this among ourselves」

When told like that...Kanako-san has no choice but to be silent.

「Misuzu-san can take priority of her lesson anyway...you can leave the rest to us」

Margo-san said.

「You don't mind if we send Misuzu-san to the dressing room first do you?」

Margo-san asks Kudou Haruka with sharp eyes.

「Yes, I don't」

Kudou Haruka acknowledged.

「Anyway...don't worry about it, Kanako-san」

Misuzu tells Kanako-san again.

「It's really going to be fine!」

Nei-san smiled at Kanako-san who's uneasy.

「Y-Yes...!」

But still, Kanako-san looked uneasy.



Everyone moved together from the lobby to the dressing room entrance.

From the side aisle of the theater to next to the stage...

There's a big sign saying『Authorized person only』in big letters.

「The other side will be the dressing room. That door is left open today」

Misuzu explained.

I see, today's the Japanese traditional dance『symposium』...

There's more than 50 people performing...

There would be guests visiting the dressing room too...

When it's not the performer's turn, they can go watch others dance...

The door separating the spectator seat and the dressing room is left open.

...Then

There's a lot of stern men waiting around the door.

「Those people are everyone's guards」

Misuzu whispers on my ears.

Today's performers are all child from a distinguished family.

In case of female guards, they can go inside the dressing room...

The male guards can't.

Therefore, they wait in here.

...Then.

「...Misuzu-sama, you're coming with a lot of strange people again」

One person...a man in black aged over 50 calls Misuzu.

He stared at Minaho-neesan.

「My, Tanizawa-san...you're already here?」

Misuzu smiled.

「I've taken a head start today...I'd like to check the security system in here...」

The man called Tanizawa answered Misuzu with his twisted grin.

「Danna-sama...this one's Tanizawa-san. He's the chief of grandfather's full-time security unit」

Kouzuki『Kakka』full time guard...?

I see, Kudou-papa's doing various investigations on the outside...

There's another person that sticks with『Kakka』as his guard.



I now understand why the evaluation of Kudou-papa from director Yamaoka is low.

To the regular members of Kouzuki security servcice...Kudou papa from the『guard department』may seem only unreliable to Kouzuki『Kakka』  
He already has a dedicated escort unit.

「Tanizawa-san...this is Kuromori-san」

Misuzu introduced me as『Kuromori』

It's the chief of the unit sticking to Kouzuki『Kakka』

That alone makes him know that I'm a member of『Kuromori』

「...I'm Kuromori」

I bow to chief Tanizawa.

Chief Tanizawa looks down on me with cold eyes.

It seems that he doesn't intend to greet a man from prostitution ring.

「Misuzu-sama...please refrain from playing with strange people, You'll make『Kakka』worry」

「My, what are you talking about?」

Misuzu answered with a smile.

「Grandfather knows」

「If you say so...」

Chief Tanizawa looks at Margo-san.

「Oh, Nee-chan, it's been a while...where's master today?」

As expected...she knows Margo-san's face, he must've come to the『Kuromori』mansion 「Kyouko-san is on a business trip. Therefore it's only me today」

「Don't work on such a demon woman...come to our side. It's not fun to be a brothel guard isn't it?」

Chief Tanizawa solicits her in front of Minaho-neesan.

「The salary here is much better than Kouzuki security service though」

Margo-san answered with a smile.

「Don't be silly, we've got welfare pension and unemployment insurance here. If you think about your future benefits, isn't coming to a decent company much better, right?」

「Kouzuki security service is a decent company?」

「Better than a brothel at least you know? I'm still an executive in Kouzuki security service even if I look like this. I can let you join in the company without examination with my authority voice now!」

Executive...he's on a higher position than Director Yamaoka.

「Sadly...I don't have any intention」

「...Why? You're so cold. Well fine...if you changed your mind, you can contact me anytime」

Chief Tanizawa said.

「Danna-sama...Tanizawa-san is here to Ruriko and I will be safe」

...Misuzu?

No, he's the chief of the escort unit for Kouzuki『Kakka』

His work should be perfect.

「Grandfather is worried so he sent Tanizawa-san ahead, didn't he?」

Misuzu asked and chief Tanizawa smiled wryly.

「That's how it is...we can't leave it to the unreliable lads like Yamaoka and Kudou」

Chief Tanizawa seems to think that Director Yamaoka and Kudou Papa is still『half a man』

「Hey...Kudou's girl. What's with you leaving your master on an important escort duty?」

Chief Tanizawa scolds Kudou Haruka.

Kudou Haruka is a registered guard in Kouzuki security service.

Chief Tanizawa is a person above her in the company.

「I-I'm very sorry...!」

Kudou Haruka bows her head.

「Tanizawa-san...sorry but could we borrow this girl for a while?」

Margo-san asks.

「...Why?」

「This girl picked a fight with us」

「...Oh」

Chief Tanizawa looks down on Kudou Haruka with an amazed face.

「Then...Nee-chan will be educating her properly?」

「No...this girl will be taking her on」

Margo-san points at Michi.

Michi looks down.

「This girl...isn't she the little sister?」

Chief Tanizawa's surprised.

「Yes, Michi will fight her sister. I gave her order to definitely win」

Misuzu told the chief.

「I'm also included to the people Kudou Haruka insulted after all」

Chief Tanizawa sighs...

「Got it...I'll leave the match to Nee-chan. This girl's as foolish as her father」

「No, she resembles her mother」

Misuzu said.

「No...well, that Kudou doesn't take his wife seriously so she turned strange...!」

Chief Tanizawa knows Kudou mama and Director Yamaoka's relationship...?  
Then, chief looks at Kudou Haruka...

「Either way...taking on a fight with other organization while holding the name of Kouzuki Security service, that's some irresponsible work, it won't end with just displeasing Misuzu-sama. I don't mind it so Nee-chan can beat her up. I'll allow it」

Chief Tanizawa doesn't seem to trust Michi's skills.

He allowed Margo-san, not Michi to punish Kudou Haruka.

Kudou Haruka and the four followers face turned completely blue.

「No...Tanizawa-san. That would be troubling me」

Misuzu speaks seriously.

「If Kudou Haruka wins against her sister...could you make it irrelevant?」

「...What do you mean?」

「This match is needed by Kudou Michi」

Michi looked up in surprise.

「...Misuzu-Ojousan, you're quite evaluating this girl highly」

「Yes...I intend to have Michi as my guard for the rest of my life」

「...Understood」

Chief Tanizawa speaks to Kudou Haruka.

「Hey you...If you win against this small girl, I'll forget everything you've done. Win with the intention to die. Okay?!」

That order...Kudou Haruka.

「If I win...please put me in Chief Tanizawa's team!」

「...What?」

「I don't want to be guarding children. I can't get serious. If I'm going to guard then let it be a VIP...!」

...She's really an idiot.

「I have that much talent...!」

Kudou Haruka's gotten strange confidence because she's labeled as best in Japan's Karate.

「...You」

Chief Tanizawa tries to scold her but Margo-san stopped him.

「...Leave the rest to us」

「...But, Nee-chan」

「This talentless girl can only understand with her body either way」

Chief Tanizawa looked at Margo-san...Misuzu...then once again, Kudou

Haruka.

...Then.

「Don't die foolishly...Karate girl. If you lose, you're fired. Remember that」  
「There's no way I'll lose against my sister!」

Kuodu Haruka seems to be a complete idiot...

「Then, I'll enter the dressing room. Megumi and Mana-san, come with me!」

Misuzu said but...Mana seems to be interested in the fight.

「I...can I stay with Onii-chan?」

「Mana...if we're with them, Michi-san can't fight freely」

Megu said.

「Mana-san...Misuzu's dressing room is the same as Ruriko-san」

Misuzu told Mana.

「Could you help Megumi-san talk about Danna-sama's wonderfulness to Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san?」

...Does that mean?

Recommending sex with me to Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san?

Mana smiled.

「Got it...Mana will talk to Ruriko-san!」

...Err

「...Danna-sama, come here」

Misuzu pulls me out from the others.

「...What?」

Misuzu whispers in my ear so the others won't hear.

「...Please look after Michi」

Michi's completely disheartened because she'll fight with her sister.  
It seems she's not good at dealing with Kudou Haruka.

「Michi...that girl's mentally childish. A weak girl. She's essentially a useless girl unless someone controls over her」

...Misuzu?

「...Therefore, Danna-sama, please dominate Michi when Misuzu isn't around」

I dominate Michi?

「Michi is an M. She wants to be ruled by someone she trusts」

「M...?」

Misuzu laughs.

「A masochist」

...Eh?!

「Misuzu's the same」

...Misuzu?

「Misuzu is a girl who wants to be『dominated』by Dana-sama...!」

True...Misuzu.

She's my pet at first...

I feel like she wants to be『dominated』

She prefers to be the passive...be violated by me...

「I'm different from Megumi-san and Mana-san...both of them tend to be sadist if you ask me」

I look at Megu and Mana.

Both of them are looking at us with a blank face.

...Speaking of which.

Those two actively seek sex by themselves.

True, they're more S than M.

「Please completely dominate Michi's heart on this occasion., Michi needs Danna-sama.」

...Misuzu.

Misuzu calls Michi with a strong voice.

「Michi!」

「Y-Yes...Misuzu-sama?!」

Michi looked up in panic.

「When I'm not with you, Danna-sama is your master. Follow all of Danna-sama's orders!」

Misuzu's instruction sticks to Michi's heart.

「Y-Yes. Certainly!」

「Then, Danna-sama...please take care of Michi」

Misuzu smiled at me.



We part with Misuzu, Megu and Mana from the dressing room's door. Katsuko-nee went to contact with Kudou papa so she won't be back yet.

「Then...let's go」

Margo-san calls out Kudou Haruka.

「I won't lose. No, I cannot lose」

Kuodu Haruka mutters

「...Then, how about the battlefield?」

「...This way!」

Kudou Haruka opened the door to the stage

We follow her.

On the stage is a lighting in the middle of it.

There's a lot of staff working around.

From the stage side...going to the basement stairs.

To the underground of the stage...we head to the『theater basement』

「Wow, this feels chilly!」

Nei-san said.

It seems that the cold air accumulate on the underground.

The theater basement is a dimly lit place with only emergency lights.

There's nobody here now.

「This is the axis of the revolving stage. Ah, this is what's making it go up!」

Nei-san looks at the theater's mechanism in interest.

「Kuroko-chan, come here!」

Nei-san pulls Yukino's arms.

「...Eh?」

「Just stay with me!」

Saying that, Nei-san stands behind Margo-san.

Minaho-neesan also goes behind Margo-san.

Kudou Haruka and the four followers take distance.

I stand before Margo-san.

Michi's still looking down.

「Now then...should we make confirmations?」

Minaho-neesan told Kuodu Haruka.

「You'll fight with Michi...when you lose, you'll be fired from Kouzuki security service, and become our prostitute...are you okay with that?」

「Very well...either way, I will win」

Kuodu Haruka said then winks at her followers.

「...Now!」

The four of them moved around and surround me.

「...Eh?」

I tried to escape but the four karate girl's movements are fast.

They caught me before I noticed.

The girl with the best physique holds me from behind.

「A-Aneue...!」

Michi's surprised.

「I'd like to take a small insurance.」

Kudou Haruka said.

「Just so that girl won't make a strange movement while I fight with Michi」

She intends to prevent Margo-san from intervening by taking me as a hostage?

「I don't mind...either way, I thought that this would happen」



Margo-san said calmly  
Nei-san embraced Yukino behind her and smiled.  
I see. That's why Nei-san secured Yukino first.  
They're aware of Kudou Haruka's hostage strategy...

「He's also a member of『Kuromori』...I hope you're prepared」

Minaho-neesan said.  
...Right.  
I'm already prepared for this much.

「...Michi. Don't mind about me, fight with all your might」

Michi looks up at me in surprise.

「Beat them down, that's an order...!」

Michi's...puzzled.

「Now then, should we begin...Michi」

Kudou Haruka takes off her pumps.  
She becomes barefoot and stakes a Karate stance.

「You do know it...you never won against me. This will continue to happen forever...!」

Michi's frightened from her sister's words  
Why are you that scared of your sister?  
Does she have some kind of trauma?

「Now...take a stance, Michi」

Michi takes a stance with her trembling hands.

「...What are you doing, Michi?!」

I said instinctively.

Michi looks at me.

「That's a Karate stance...!」

「Y-Yes...I always fight Aneue in Karate」

Michi answered.

「You're not doing Karate!」

I shouted...!

「You're『Kudou style』!」

Michi's surprised.

「...B-But」

I see.

I know what Michi's afraid of...

『Kudou style』should overwhelm her sister.

It'll shatter Kudou Haruka's pride...

She's afraid of her sister's body getting hurt.

Michi is scared that Kudou Haruka would have a body that can't do Karate anymore...

「Michi...do with the intent to kill」

I said.

「...Yoshida?」

Michi trembles.

「It's not Yoshida...call me『Master』」

「..... ? ! ! ! 」

「Misuzu told you earlier didn't she? When Misuzu's away, I'm your mastert」

「...But」

Michi's trembling again.

「Do it for me...!」

I『dominate』Michi

I ready myself.

「Abandon your sister...your family is Misuzu and me!」

Michi's eyes opened up wide.

「Life for only Misuzu and my sake!」

...Michi

She breathes in...

Then...breathes out.

「Aneue...I'm sorry」

Michi's trembling stopped  
Her champion spirit piles up.

「I have to kill Aneue」

Saying that...she takes out a red whip hidden under her skirt.

...Shuba!

The tip of the whip cuts the air and taps the floor of the theater basement...!

「Y-You...what are you doing!?!」

Kudou Haruka's surprised.

「There's no way you're going to use that?」

「Is there a problem?」

Michi looks at her sister coldly.

「Don't be stupid! If you're going to fight me then do it with bare hands」

「...Sadly, I have to win」

「Throw away your weapon. Do you not care about what happens at this man?!」

Kudou Haruka winks at her followers surrounding me.

...But

...Doshu!

Throwing knife stabs at the very end of the follower's feet.

「I missed on purpose...release『Master』 Unless...!」

Michi holds another knife opposite to the hand with the whip.

「T-That's unfair...Michi!」

At the moment Kudou Haruka speaks!

Michi's whip attacks her sister...!

...Zubashu!

The chest of Kudou Haruka's pink suit is torn up!  
Her white bra's exposed!  
She ripped out exactly her clothes without hurting Haruka's body.  
Michi's skill surprises everyone.

「There's no such thing as unfair when it's a struggle to protect their『master』」

A whip on the right and a throwing knife on the left...!

「Let me say it again...let go of my Master」

Haruka's followers who are holding me let go of their hand.  
...I

I slowly get away from the four and returned to Michi's behind.

「I'm very sorry...『Master』」

Michi said.

「I will be punishing this woman immediately...!」

---

## 224. Kudou Michi

---

「...Margo-sama, please take care of Master」

Michi glared at her sister as she speak.

「Roger...Yoshida-kun, stay behind me」

I go to Margo-san's back.

Nei-san came to my side.

「...It'll be fine!」

She smiled looking at me.

Mlnaho-neesan is staring at Michi.

Yukin came close to me.

She grasped the hem of my suit tightly.

「...Yukino, you're scared?」

Yukino sent me a glance...

「Shut up...」

Yukino's trembling lightly.

「You coward! Relying on weapons, you're not a martial artist!」

Kuodu Haruka is hysteric.

Michi...

「I'm not a martial artist...」

She stares at her sister with sharp eyes.

「I'm the shield that protects my lord and the word that moves according to my lord's command...!」

Suu...haa

Michi's peculiar breathing echoes in the dark theater basement.

「The original『Kudou Style ancient martial arts』...changes you to a『lethal weapon』with no will」

A『lethal weapon』with no will?

「Aneue...let me show you the end of life. Even if Aneue was born from the『Kudou』house...it would be a waste to die without seeing the essence of this work...!」

Michi said.

She dumps the red whip and throwing knife on the floor.

「...Why?」

Kudou Haruka's surprised.

「Once again...you want to fight with me bare hands?

Michi ignores her sister and head to the four followers.

「...Come! 」

As if sliding around...Michi heads to the four people.

「I will take down the four of you...!」

Michi approached without hesitation and the four Karate girls trembled...

「You see...humans have a sense of distance where they will reflexively refuse when stepped in by others...!」

Margo-san said.

「That's basically the range where you stretch your hand straight. Everyone hates『others』entering that zone. Their『survival instinct』sends a signal of『danger』...!」

Michi invades the refusal distance of one of the Karate girls!

「...Hii!」

The Karate girl reflexively thrust out her fist to Michi...!

...Then!

The girl's body flies in the air and her shoulder falls on the floor!

Michi used the momentum of the fist to throw her off!

「...You can be passive properly. Ladies?」

Michi's cold eyes fuel the fear of the three remaining Karate girls.

「...Toaaaaa!!」

They attack Michi all at once!

「...Suu...haa...suuu...!!!!!!」

Michi's body shakes like jellyfish in the waves, she evades the three people's attack swaying.

「...Aaahnnn...doouuuu...toroaaaaa...!」

Michi scoops from down the ankle of one girl's kicking leg...!  
She twists the joint of the elbow stretched out by the another girl...!  
At the moment the final girl tried to grasp Michi...her body flipped and she thrust the girl's throat from below...

「...Gueeeeeeee!!!」

The three girl's anguished screams overlap.  
Each of them fell on the floor and groan in pain...!

「...The four of them are now unable to fight. As an athlete, I didn't give them any injury to hinder them so it'll be fixed after a week rest. Please continue to practicing with your friends after this」

Shoulder...ankle...elbow...holding down the throat, Michi expressionlessly talked to the suffering Karate girls.

「...You may have been tempted by Kudou Haruka but, if you experience this, you'll go back to the world of sports」

Margo-san told the girls.

「You have rules, and fight one-on-one on a place where there is a referee, don't you? Our world doesn't have that. There's no fouls nor referee. And...the number of opponents would differ in time and place...!」

Smiling...Margo-san looks at Kudou Haruka.

「Michi and I have been training 1 vs. many. In addition...you have to protect someone...!」

...That's right.

Margo-san kept hunting delinquents and Yakuza at night town.

...She takes down multiple opponents while protecting Nei-san.

So that was an actual training...

「...S-Scary」

Yukino clings to me.

...Seriously.

I embrace Yukino's shoulder tightly.

「Now then...Aneue」

Michi once again looks up her sister.

「...『Kudou style ancient marital arts』 secret is on the breathing method」

Again, she waveringly...shaking irregularly approach her sister.

「The whole secret of the martial arts is to...feel the enemy's『Qi』interrupting that『Qi』and create a『gap』and and attack...」

...『Qi』?

「Look...Japanese likes to say『read the air』don't they?」

Margo-san smiles at me.

「In that case the『Qi』flows in the『Air』 Humans are『individuals』who hold separate wills, but they're a『en masse creature』who needs to live in『groups』 Therefore they take care of their『qi』so they can communicate with other people's『qi』 『Group』that conforms a matching『qi』 The ability to sense『Qi』 and synchronize themselves is a power every human is born with...!」

「Then...the essence of『qi』is breathing Match the『breathing』with the opponent...match the rhythm of the pulse. Those who completely synchronize their『qi』synchronizes the biological body rhythm itself...!」

Margo-san...Michi?!

What are you guys talking about?

I don't get it.

「Consequently...the mystery of martial arts is to synchronize the 『qi』with the enemy and freely『detach』from the synchronization」



Michi said.

「Drawing your opponent to your own『qi』world...and swallowing your opponent I guess. That is the『qi』synchronization. Then...at the moment, they're swallowed in, you can strike them by withdrawing yourself from the synchronization...and taking the enemy's gap to attack」

...Margo-san.

I see, Margo-san's fighting style is always surprising the enemy. She creates a gap in their mind and reap it quickly.

「But...『Kudou style ancient martial arts』is different...!」

Michi's body sways again.

「『Kuodu style ancient martial arts』never synchronizes with the enemy's『qi』 Refusing to match the『qi』...they always shift the focus of the opponent's『qi』 Therefore...we can do this special breathing other schools can't immitate...!」

Shurururu...suuu...suuhahahahaaaa...suuu...suuu...!

An irregular...unstable breathing.

Michi's『breath』extends to the darkness with an eerie rhythm...

「Father seems to be fooling around when fighting because...the essence of this is to not let the enemy realize your breathing method」

Wearing a fancy dress on purpose...strange weapons and and clumsy manner...

It is so the enemy won't notice the special breathing method...

「Then...aneue. You will receive our ancestral skills with your life...!」

Michi's body bends...!

She jumped to her sister's bosom at a tremendous speed!

「...hyaaaaaa!!!」

The frightened sister thrusts out her right fist in reflex...!  
Kudou Haruka's right arm bent on an impossible direction!

「Gya!!」

It's my first time hearing the sound of people's bone breaking

「Kyaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Yukino clings to me.

Margo-san and Minaho-neesan calmly watches.

「Prepare yourself!!!」

Michi's hand approaches Kudou Haruka's neck!

...Shit!

If this continues, Michi would really kill her sister...!

I have to stop her!

But...Yukino's clinging is getting on my way...!

I can't move quickly...!!

「You two! What are you doing!!!」

A woman's scream came from the stairs...!

「Don't move...I'll shoot!!」

In the middle of the stairway...a woman holding a pistol...!

...That is.

「Michiii...stop this!!!!!!!!!!」

That is...

Michi and Haruka's mother...

Kouzuki security service general security department...Kudou Etsuko.

「...Michi, stop」

Using the gap Kudou mama created...I speak to Michi.

「The enemy's not killed yet however?」

Michi ignores her own mother holding a gun and answered me.

「I said『with the intent to kill』...I didn't tell you to『kill』!」

Michi lowers her hand aiming at her sister's windpipe...

「I follow Master's orders」

Then, she throws down her elder sister's body on the theater basement floor like throwing garbage 「...Bugaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Kuodu Haruka with a fractured right arm screamed loudly.

「What have you done!」

Kudou mama rushes over her daughter in hurry...

「Even though I told you so much not to fight Haruka seriously...!」

...Does that mean?

Kudou mama...she's Kudou papa's childhood friend.

Of course...she knows all of『Kudou style ancient martial arts』

Even what happens if Michi seriously fight her sister...

「Aneue has become my『enemy』...」

「Do you intend to kill your sister!」

「...If it's to protect my lord then there's no other way」

「Don't be stupid!」

Michi's mother pulled her.

Michi didn't avoid it.

「...You're just like that man... He can ignore his own family members just for『Kudou style ancient martial arts』and irrelevant matter!」

Kudou mama scolds Michi with a demon look.

「I'm the successor of『Kudou style ancient martial arts』before being your daughter...」

Michi answered without changing her complexion.

「If you're the『enemy』of my lord...even if it's my sister, mother, even father, I will fight them...!」

「...You're Crazy」

Kudou mama insults Michi.

「...Haruka, are you okay?」

The mother calls out the sister whose arm is broken by the little sister.

「I just broke the bone in the upper arm, it'll be fixed right away. It'll take more than half a year to recover but...she can still go Karate」

Margo-san said with a smile.

「A guard of a『prostitution organization』shouldn't speak that proud!」

Kudou mama turns her anger to Margo-san.

「What about you?...You're just an employee of a security company aren't you? Don't be so arrogant as you're not someone who's not even stuffing her face on the underground world」

「I'm an employee of Kouzuki security service! I'm different from you...!」

Kudou mama turns her disdain to『Kuromori』...

「...A woman who's having an affair with another man than her husband shouldn't be selfish」

Michi tells her mother.

「You're just a child, don't criticize your parents!」

Kudou mama tried to slap Michi again...!

...But.

This time, Michi avoid her mother's hand.

She poked her mother's neck.

Kudou mama then fell on her back...

「Michiiii...yoouuu...!」

Kudou Haruka looks up at her sister while enduring the pain in her arm.

「Even though you're that strong...you've been hiding that from me all this time?」

Kudou Haruka sheds tears of regret.

It seems that she can't agree that she lost to her sister with an overwhelming power difference.

「I was ordered by this one to not win against Aneue」

Michi calls her mother『this one』

She no longer wants to admit Kudou Etsuko as her mother.

「Mother...why...?!」

Kudou Haruka looks up at her mother while crying.

「This girl is a child of『Kudou style ancient martial arts』 This girl has been

thinking the way of『Kudou style』since she was born. Even though nobody taught her, she understood how to fight using『Kudou style』...no, no matter how much I taught her, she can't understand the rules of ordinary combat sports. She's a girl who can't do anything but『Kudou style』...!」

Does that mean?

「...I'm not interested in fighting as a sport. A definite 1 on 1, time limit, foul moves...I can't understand the judgement of a referee. Is that even related to real『combat』...!」

Michi's only interested in『actual combat』killing each other seriously.

「This girl's a genius. He said. There's no one as precocious as this child among the successors of『Kudou style ancient martial arts』...but」

Kudou mama speaks hatefully...

「This girl's power can only be used in the『underground world』at current times. She's a meaningless genius...!」

Kudou Haruka looks up at her sister.

「Then...her not winning on a karate match against me...」

Margo-san speaks.

「Michi-san's already an adult so she tries to respect the rules of a Karate match. Therefore, she's confused. Michi looks for a way to beat down the opponent surely regardless of the rules. That is largely framed by the martial arts of karate so she can't do it as she want, she'll lose」

「Yes...I can't move freely in Karate's frame」

Michi confessed.

「Michi...since when you were convinced that you could win against me?」

The tree years older elder sister asked her little sister.

Michi...

「Ever since I was at the age of consciousness, I never felt inferior to Aneue...!」  
「You thought that I was weaker ever since you were born? You've always been making fun of me all this time...!」

Tears of frustration and hate falls down.

「...I'm very sorry」

Michi bows her head to her sister.

「Either way...this world is impossible for you. You should go back to the world of sports with your friends」

Margo-san spoke coldly to Kudou Haruka.

「Dammit...everyone knew and mocked me for being weak...dammit!」

Kuodu Haruka trembles as she cry.

「Either way, my talent is only this far...I'm so weak that I can't even beat my little sister...!」

「Since I knew this would happen...I told Michi to not fight Haruka seriously and yet...!」

Kudou mama glares at Margo-san and Minaho-neesan.

「...I hate you all. I'll never forgive you」

Margo-san...

「No...her weakness isn't her talent or her body」

Kudou mama and the elder daughter looks up at Margo-san with eyes of anger.

「Her weakness is her heart」

...No

...Heart?

Even Michi's not strong at all...

「Michi...」

Michi reacts to my call.

「Yes...Master?」

「Throw away your house at this moment...dedicate your life to me and Misuzu」

「...Certainly」

Michi turned to her mother and sister.

「Farewell. Thank you for raising me this far. I express my gratitude to the two of you」

「Michi...what are you saying?」

The mother's surprised.

「I have completely become the『Kudou style ancient martial arts』successor, both in body and mind. I can no longer go back to you, my『family』anymore」

Michi...

「Please dispose all of my personal belongings. I'm sorry for giving you trouble...!」

「Michi...don't be ridiculous!」

Her sister shouts.

「As a warrior...I met my lord to devote my life to. I will follow this road. Stay in good health...!」

I...

「Misuzu and I will be taking Michi. She'll be living for our sake. She'll give birth to my child...!」

Michi who's been expressionless towards her mother and sister...had her spine shivered.

「...Master!!!」

Michi earlier said that the『original』Kudou style martial arts』is turning oneself to a『lethal weapon』with no will』

In short...Michi hasn't thought how should she use her overwhelming combat power on her own.

As a warrior...she believes to dedicate all her power to her lord.

It is as Misuzu said...

Michi needs a person to『dominate』her

If there's no one...Michi will be crushed by her own power.

「Stay by Misuzu and my side. You only need to think about Misuzu and me」

「Yes...certainly」

「Don't make that face...I'll treat you the same as my friends. You want to be

loved by Misuzu and me don't you?」

...Michi

「Yes...master」

「Then, take an attitude that would please Misuzu and me...our pleasure is your joy. Isn't that right...Michi!」

「...I will bear that in mind」

then...Michi smiled clumsily.

Well...this is fine for a first time.

「Let's kiss...Michi」

I embrace Michi.

「Please...my everything is Master's. Please do as you like」

I pile my lips with Michi.,

Kudou mama and her the elder sister looked at us bitterly.

「I'll never forgive you all...I'll use everything to take you down...『Kuromori』...!」

Kudou mama speaks her curse to Minaho-neesan instead of me.

「We don't intend to ask forgiveness from anyone however...」

Minaho-neesan replied with cold eyes.

「We are risking our lives for our own survival. If Michi-san isn't under his and Misuzu-san's rule...then we won't be accepting her...!」

「Kudou Michi-san...welcome to『Kuromori』!」

Nei-san said with a smile.

...Michi

「...Thank you」

She said and bowed her head.



Kudou Mama called the medical team of Kouzuki security service.  
The four Karate girls and Kudou Haruka received emergency treatment.



Kudou Haruka's broken arm is braced.

The other girls also had the parts Michi hurt, fixed.

「I think it would be painful but...we can't make a fuss in the theater right now. Walk on your feet and get out of the building. Okay?」

Kudou mama told her daughter and the girls.

It's before the opening of the『Japanese traditional dance symposium』

They can't call in ambulance in the theater...

They had to be taken by the Kouzuki security service personnel outside in a place where the performers and the guards from famous houses can't see.

It'll hurt the honor of the company...

「I'm sorry...mother」

Kudou Haruka apologized only to her own mother.

「It's okay...director Yamaoka had prepared a car for you all」

Using that car...Kudou Haruka and others would be brought to the hospital.

「By the way, Haruka-san!」

Nei-san calls her.

「...You do remember your first promise, don't you?! Ushishishi」

The first promise...

If she lost to her sister...Kudou Haruka would be a prostitute of『Kuromori』only once.

「...What?」

Kudou mama shows strong vigilance...

Kudou Haruka...

「Even I intend to stay in the Karate. I won't go back to what I said...!」

The karate girl who had her arm broken by her sister swore to fulfil her promise.

---

## 225. Please punish me

---

We head to the stage wing from the『theater basement』once again.  
Kudou Haruka and her four injured followers were walking on their feet, holding down the part that hurts.

Kudou mama and the emergency personnel are with them.

They head from the entrance to the dressing room to outside the theater.

They head to the hospital avoiding public eyes.

We saw them off and head towards the dressing room where Misuzu is.

We've got to return to the front of the dressing room or you won't be able to return to the lobby.

「It's quite flashy once again」

Kouzuki security service chief Tanizawa is waiting for us in the corridor where the dressing rooms are lined up.

「It's this girl's overwhelming victory. She broke her arms without hesitation」

Margo-san narrates the fight to chief.

「It's very brave of her breaking her real sister's arm」

Chief Tanizawa looks down on the petite Michi in admiration.

「No...that much spirit would be promising in the future. Kudou Haruka's skill is only losing her anger...if you slip through it and decide the match in one shot, I think it's quite a big deal」

Chief Tanizawa seems to have checked Kudou Haruka's ability when she was employed.

The chief analyzes Michi's ability to take down her sister who's the top at high school Karate.

「Though the skills can be mastered through time...the mind's not good yet. At that age, if you've got guts, then I look forward to your future growth. I intend

to let the elder sister be recruited just for formalities but...this lady can be officially recruited in the training frame」

It seems that Michi and Haruka are in temporary employment in Kouzuki security service.

「Tanizawa-sama...I've got a request」

Michi asks the Kouzuki security service's executive.

「Please delete my membership」

Chief Tanizawa's surprised.

「...Ojouchan, are you saying you're leaving the company?」

「I will be serving Misuzu-sama as an individual in the future」

「However...you won't get a salary if you don't belong to Kouzuki security service you know?」

「We'll be taking care of this girl's salary...」

Minaho-neesan told chief Tanizawa.

「You...?」

『Kuromori』paying up Misuzu's guard fee...Chief Tanizawa can't understand.

「...Yes. I decided to affiliate myself with『Kuromori』」

Michi answered with a serious face.

「What? You guys aren't just『prostitution ring』but also a『security department』?」

Chief Tanizawa speaks sarcastically, Margo-san;...

「That is not the case but...this girl can't develop her talent on a big place like Kouzuki security service. That's why we decided to take her in

「No way...She's going to be Neechan's disciple?

「This girl's master is only her father. I only have the standpoint of an elder sister who will study together with her...!」

「...But」

Chief Tanizawa seems to be troubled about how to reply about Michi's transfer.

「Tanizawa-san, I don't mind it so could you let Michi-kun do what she wants?」

Turning my gaze to that voice...  
Kudou papa is together with Katsuko-nee.

「...Father!」

Michi bowed to her father.

「I just met Etsuko and Haruka...Etsuko glared at me」

Kudou papa answers.

「If the father says so then it can't be helped...to be honest, it's not fun to have a girl who could become the『future strength』of our company be taken away」

Chief Tanizawa said.  
Chief didn't see Michi's fight earlier.  
For the chief, Michi's still a『girl with a promising future』

「Besides...I don't think this girl's success could be entrusted to a tiny『prostitution organization』」

Chief Tanizawa glared at Minaho-neesan as he speaks.

「Are you saying that Kyouko-san and I can't guide Michi-san properly?」

Margo-san smiled.

「I'm not saying that but...apart from Neechan, Kyouko-san's out of standards」

...Out of standards?

「If it's a human resource like Margo-neechan...I'd be gladly welcoming her to Kouzuki security service. Neechan's skill has no kink. On practical use...as expected, unless you're guarding an VIP with orthodox method, it won't work」  
「Kyouko-san's orthodox too」

「Liar...she's a bottomless unorthodox. She can calmly put the VIP she should protect as a bait and uncover the hostile forces, right?」

「That's a misunderstanding. Kyouko-san serious at her work. She won't make

mistakes on her purpose and methods. She won't put the person to guard in danger. But...she can calmly abandon someone who she doesn't guard」

Margo-san said.

「Right. If Kyouko-san was here right now...she'd definitely protect the people's safety in the theater but she'll turn the guards from Kouzuki security service as shields. Those who chose guard as profession should be prepared as a matter of course, Kyouko-san can make that decision」

Minaho-neesan laughs.

「Looking at it...she's not fit for a large organization」

As an executive of a security company...you also need to pay attention to the safety of your staff.

『You should be ready to throw away your life』it would be troubling if you instruct with that assumption.

Chief Tanizawa and Kyouko Dothnomechey-san have different fundamental mindset.

「In that sense...Kudou Michi-san is a talent close to us」

Margo-san told the chief...

「Don't be ridiculous...She's still a small girl. That can be fixed depending on the future education...!」

For Chief Tanizawa...as an employee of Kouzuki security service, an employee that's disciplined is the best.

「Sadly...this girl's combat ideology has already been perfected. She's the successor of the『Kudou style ancient martial arts』」

「Is that so, Kudou?」

Chief looks at Kudou-papa...

「Her spirit is drawn towards『Kudou style ancient martial arts』 More than me...」

「Then?」

「Yes...I think it's impossible to straighten her out. Even if she enters our company...she'll only belong to the underworld like my『guard department』」

「That's why you want her out?」

「Yes...a small caliber like me can't teach this girl」

「I don't think Kyouko's a woman with such a big caliber...!」

Chief Tanizawa thinks.

「...Promise me one thing. Don't let this girl entertain a guest ever」

Chief looks at Minaho-neesan.

「I promise...Kudou Michi won't be a prostitute」

Minaho-neesan declared clearly.

「Got it...I'll allow the transfer」

Chief Tanizawa told Michi.

「However...you should ask for Misuzu-oujouchan's permission properly. Also, if you're fed up with『Kuromori』you can always come back to Kouzuki security service. Make sure to keep those two」

「...Certainly」

Michi replied...



「Then, why are you here?」

Chief Tanizawa asks Kudou papa.

「Well you see...!」

Kudou papa whispered something to Chief's ear.

「...What?」

Perhaps...it's about Miss Cordelia and the white Viola.

「Then...what happened to those guys?」

「They've already gotten out of site. I've let my reserve guys tail them」

「Then...did you tell this to Yamaoka already?」

「...Well you see」

Kudou papa makes a troubled face.

「He's too stiff...so if he discovers this situation, he'll just turn the defense

frozen you know?」

「Even if you say that...Yamaoka's the one responsible for this field. There's a『chain of command』」

Chief Tanizawa complains at Kudou papa skipped director Yamaoka and reported to the position above 「I'm not good with him...」

「Got it. Anyway, let's go to the headquarters. I'll talk to Yamaoka」

「...Thanks」

「Both of your daughters have disappeared from the control of our company. We need to have Misuzu-ojousan and Ruriko-ojousan a guard...」

「Can't we just have Tanizawa-san's subordinates for that?」

Kudou papa asks.

「...Is that your aim?」

「Yes...Yamaoka's guys don't have enough experience nor skill」

「True...the『enemies』have penetrated through the guards Yamaoka has assembled. They're not normal enemies」

「They can't cope with babysitting and guarding them」

I see...as expected, guarding a child is a low status for them 「Got it...leave it to me」

Chief Tanizawa calls out the man in black suit near to him.

「Sugai, guard this place. I'm going to the headquarters for a while」

「...Roger」

「Also...call Fujimiya to the headquarters」

「...Yes」

The man called Sugai took out his phone immediately.

「Eh...you're letting Fujimiya guard the ladies?」

Kudou papa's surprised.

「Are you dissatisfied with Fujimiya?」

「It's the opposite...isn't Fujimiya the top among Tanizawa's unit?」

「There's no other woman vacant」

Chief tanizawa smiles wryly.

「But if Fujimiya's on『offense and defense』, isn't she a definite『attack』 woman?」

「She's got good sensitivity to『danger』 She's qualified for the current situation」

「The other guards from other houses would be frightened you know?」

「Don't care, let them be. I think they should have that much tension」

That Fujimiya seems to be a scary person.

「Besides...me taking out Fujimiya is an effective message to the other houses and to Yamaoka too」

Chief Tanizawa seems to be putting pressure on the venue in a good sense...

「Uhm...if you're going to report to the headquarters, should I accompany you/」

Katsuko-nee asks anxiously...

「No, it's possible that Yamaoka would make a strange misunderstanding if you were there. Leave this to me...」

Chief Tanizawa said.

Un. If he misunderstood...then it would be troublesome if he thought we're connected with Miss Cordelia.

We should leave director Yamaoka to Chief tanizawa.

「...Let's go. Kudou」

「...Sure」

Chief Tanizawa and Kudou papa heads to the headquarters in quick pace.

「Let's go back to the lobby for now」

Minaho-neesan said

「You can go to Misuzu's dressing room along with Michi-san」

...Eh?

「You have to report to Misuzu-san don't you?」

True...that's right but.

「While we're at it, come and take Megumi-chan and Mana-chan」



Margo-san smiled at me.

Right.

If they stay there all the time...they'll only trouble Misuzu and Ruriko-san.

「I'll be the one to take care of Kuroko-chan!」

Nei-san said while looking at Yukino who's sticking to me.

Yukino's been holding the hem of my suit all this time since the fight a while ago.

「I...」

「Hey, Kuroko-chan, come here!」

Nei-san pulled Yukino from me.

「I'll be with them so don't worry...Michi-san can remain at the dressing room until chief Tanizawa's subordinate comes in to guard Misuzu and Ruriko」

「...Roger」

Margo-san gives her instructions.



Michi and I head to Misuzu and Ruriko-san's dressing room.

There were a lot of girls who changed to their stage dress in the hallway already.

Each of them have an adult woman wearing a suit...

Oh, so this is what chief Tanizawa meant by『babysitting and guarding』a while ago.

True, they have a different feeling from the male guards gathered at the entrance of the dressing room.

Though they've been properly trained...they don't look like they're specialized in combat ability.

It's needed to be a calm woman when you have to guard small children.

「Master, this way」

Michi walks abruptly.

「Michi, you've come here before?」

「Yes. This symposium occurs every year. Our ladies have been using the same

dressing room...!」

Each of the dressing room has a name printed on paper and pasted on the door.

Most of the performers are using a shared big room but...

Misuzu and Ruriko-san have a private room assigned for them.

「Excuse me!」

When I speak out from the outside...

「Yees?!」

Mana shows up from the inside.

「Ah, Onii-chan! Michi-san too!」

Mana happily looked at me.

「Can we enter now?」

Misuzu had to change her clothes.

I asked Mana just in case.

「Wait a moment...!」

Mana goes back to the dressing room.

「Misuzu-san, Onii-chan and Michi-san is here!」

「...Please come in!」

I hear Misuzu's voice from inside.

「...Then, excuse me」

「Excuse me」

Michi and I go in the dressing room together...

The dressing room was six tatami mats wide.

There are two dressers having Misuzu and Ruriko-san sit in front of each.

Both of them are already in their Japanese clothing.

「Welcome」

Ruriko-san greeted me.

「Ah...Sorry to disturb you before your performance」

「Please don't mind it. We're still not on stage. Misuzu-san and my turn would be very late」

...Speaking of which

「Misuzu...what about stage rehearsal?」

Misuzu smiled wryly

「I'm waiting for the stage director to call me now. It seems that they're pushing the overall time」

「...Will you make it?」

There's not much time left before the opening time though 「At worst, they'll make only light adjustments...and they might not have the time to check my dance from the beginning to end」

「Would you be fine in that situation?」

「Yes...this is normal for us late performers」

Misuzu seems to be used to this situation.

「The headmaster dancing at the last always dance on main event without practice」

Well...she has to check everyone's practice carefully...

She's considerably tired from that and she can't confirm her own dance.

But...the headmaster is a professional dancer...

She has the capability to dance in front of the audience without problems no matter what situation it is.

「Then...how was it?」

Misuzu asks about the result of the match between Michi and Kudou Haruka.

「Un, what happened, Onii-chan?」

Mana looks at my face in curiosity

Next to Misuzu, Megu's also paying attention to me 「Michi's win...an overwhelming one」

When I answered...Mana;

「As expected...I thought it's absolute!」

Mana's frolicking

No...it wasn't on the level Mana imagines.

It was a perfect victory at a ridiculous level.

「Then...what happened to Haruka-san?」

Ruriko-san asks me.,

「Haruka-san's arms hurt a bit so she left early. Her mother's with her...」

As expected, I can't tell that Michi broke Kudou Haruka's arm.

It might be too stimulating for Ruriko-san and others.

「Oh, her mother also belongs to Kouzuki security service...!」

Yoshiko-san calmly said.

「Yes, they're heading to the hospital with great care. Her four friends are accompanying her」

To be accurate, the four of them are also sent to the hospital by Michi but I won't speak of the details.

「Then...about Ruriko-san's guard after this」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san's face turned serious as they listen to me.

「Chief Tanizawa seems to have sent Fujimiya-san」

「My, Fujimiya-san?」

Ruriko-san's surprised.

「She's too good to be my guard...!」

「Ah, he said something about no other women can be a guard this time」

Anyway...I speak about what I know.

「Then that can't be helped but...I somehow feel sorry for her, don't you think Yoshiko?」

「Yes, Ruriko-sama...!」

The two ladies look at each other.

「...Uhm, Misuzu-sama」

Michi speaks to her master

「What's wrong...Michi?」

Michi looks straight to Misuzu.  
But she's nervous she can't speak.

「Michi has decided to devote her life to her masters, only Misuzu and me...」  
Instead...I reported to Misuzu.

「...Is that so? She swore her loyalty to Danna-sama and me」  
Michi...

「Yes...I'll devote my life to the two of you...!」  
Michi speaks in a hoarse voice.

「Then...she's leaving Kouzuki security service」  
A long as she's a member of Kouzuki security service...  
She would be bound by the chain of command of the company  
Since she swore her allegiance only to Misuzu, she won't listen to her boss...that  
kind of selfishness won't be allowed.

「Right...that's way better」  
Misuzu consents

「For the time being...on the outside, I will be affiliated with Kuromori-sama」  
Michi avoids to use the organization name『Kuromori』because we're in front  
of Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san.

「Understood...」  
Misuzu smiles happily.  
「Well done making up your mind. Danna-sama and I will be loving you a lot  
okay...」

Misuzu seems to be satisfied from the bottom of her heart that she got  
Misuzu free from the hands of her family and Kouzuki security service.

「On that topic...Misuzu-sama」  
Michi looks up at Misuzu.

「Actually...earlier, I have committed a blunder of not keeping Master's order a while ago」

...Eh?

That happened?

「Master...Yoshi-kun?」

Megu's surprised at Michi's change.

「Yes, he is my master...」

Michi looks at me.

「Michi...explain what blunder you have done in detail」

Misuzu ends the talk about『Master』

She's worried that Megu will feel strange jealousy against Michi.

Michi...

「Yes. Master has given me an order to『fight my sister with the intent of killing』but...I have misunderstood it as an order to『kill』」

...Err?

That thing happened right.

「Fortunately...before I cut the enemy's throat, mother has intervened the match...and Master has corrected my misunderstanding at that time」

「No...it's not like a big problem happened. Kudou Haruka's injured but alive...!」

I tell Michi in panic.

「No! I've misunderstood Master's orders and made a mistake of attacking for a certain death...!」

Michi...why are you saying that?

I don't get what's Michi's intention.

「Understood...Michi」

Misuzu grins.

「In short...you want to be punished by Danna-sama?」

Me...punish Michi?

「...Yes. If possible」

Michi bows her head to me.

「Danna-sama...what kind of punishment should you give Michi?」

Misuzu whispers to me

...I

「Michi...what kind of punishment do you think is appropriate?」

Because I'm not replying, Misuzu asked what Michi hopes for.

Michi...

「...My butt」

...Butt?

「Please beat my butt violently」

「...Beat?」

It what meaning?

「She's asking to have her butt slapped strongly...!」

Misuzu tells me with an aroused face.

---

## 226. The blue ribbon for the girl who stick out her ass

---

Slap Michi's ass...?

M-Me?

「Michi wishes for Danna-sama to do it, is that correct?」

Misuzu smiles.

「Yes, I'd like to be punished in front of Misuzu-sama」

Michi said with a red face.

At that moment, I understood everything.

This isn't『punishment』

Michi wants a『reward』...!

「Ruriko-san. No matter how trivial it is, a guard shouldn't make a mistake. However, Michi's still young...I think that hitting her butt will be enough as a punishment」

Misuzu speaks to the surprised Ruriko-san.

It seems that it's Misuzu's strategy to show Michi's foolery in front of Ruriko-san.

「...U-Uhm...Should Yoshiko and I go out?」

Ruriko-san asked embarrassed.

「No, if possible, I'd like Ruriko-san to watch. Ruriko-san doesn't have a retainer but Yoshiko-san for now...there's no need to worry for Yoshiko-san to fail because she does everything well but...」

「Please don't be absurd」

Yoshiko-san denies it in panic.

「I am still inexperienced in my work...」

「That's not true. Misuzu knows how much loyal Yoshiko-san to Ruriko-san.



But...Ruriko-san will be succeeding Kouzuki house someday and in the future, you will have a lot of people following you other than Yoshiko. Yoshiko-san isn't someone who can do anything. I think there will be people who will make mistakes」

「True...I don't think that I will be Ruriko-sama's『retainer』forever」

Yoshiko-san answered with a puzzled look.

「The lord must give firsthand punishment to his retainer who made a mistake. Furthermore, unless you punish them secretly so they won't be dishonored in front of others, it would just be pitiful for the punished one. You have to give them punishment and make them regain oneself...it shows the Lord's expectation and love」

「...Yes, I see」

Ruriko-san's drawn by Misuzu's plausible speech.

「Therefore...for a young girl like Michi, I think『butt slapping』is a proper punishment. Ruriko-san will also have a time to punish someone soon so please observe. Michi, do you mind?」

「Not at all...please have a look」

Michi also tells Ruriko-san.

「If you say so...then I will take a look...!2」

Ruriko-san answered with tension.

「Let's do it...okay, Yoshiko?」

「If Ruriko-sama says so...」

Yoshiko-san's also being pulled by Misuzu's strange logic.

「Megumi-san and Mana-san are my『family』...so you will watch Michi's punishment as a matter of fact, right?」

Misuzu speaks to Megu and Mana.

「This is a private punishment...please refrain from telling others, for Michi's honor. And, when the『butt slapping』ended, Michi's sin will be forgiven. Everyone, is that okay?...!」

Misuzu looks at the people in the room.

「Un, got it! We won't tell anyone that Michi-san was beaten!」

Mana said with a bright face.

「I will be watching properly too」

Megu answered with an embarrassed face.

「Then, Michi...how many times do you want your butt be beaten by Danna-sama?」

Michi glanced at me.

「...Ten times, please」

「My, isn't that too much?」

Misuzu rejects it immediately.

「Danna-sama, please hit her with all your might. If you hit her ten times then Michi's butt would swell...!」

「I don't mind if it swells!」

Michi said but...

「You can't...I'll allow only five times」

Misuzu said.

「Danna-sama is very kind...he would feel sorry if he does beat your butt for ten times」

...No

I'm just surprised by this development...

To be honest, I don't think that five or ten times does matter.

「Then, please do it with all your might five times」

Michi looks at me.

her eyes are moist and hot.

「Michi...you're saying it wrong」

Misuzu guides her further.

「At this situation...you have to plead『make it hurt』」

Michi swallows her saliva...

「...M-Master. P-Please make it hurt」

...I

「Got it...Michi」

Now that it comes to this...there's no choice but to do it.

「Michi...raise up your skirt and show your butt」

Misuzu orders her.

Michi slowly rolls up her prestigious middle girl's school skirt.

Michi's thin legs.

Michi's skin is transparent white.

This fifteen year old girl...there's a red whip and electric baton, tied with black leather on her thighs that has no muscles yet.

It's like a garter belt...

Michi's panty today is black.

The flesh of the third year middle school girl wearing a black underwear creates an immoral feeling.

Michi points out her round ass to me.

「...Get on all fours like a dog」

「Yes, Misuzu-sama」

Michi makes a dog pose while sticking out her ass.

「Raise your face and look at the mirror. You can see Danna-sama in the mirror, can't you?」

「...I do」

Michi and my eyes met in the mirror.

Michi's face is completely enchanted...pleased from the punishment.

「...Please」

「U-Un」

I get close to Michi's ass...

「What are you doing...Michi!」

Misuzu's scolding voice echoes!

「W-What...?」

「There's no way you'd have your butt slapped by Danna-sama like that」

...Eh?

Misuzu...what are you talking about?

「You have to take off your panties! It won't be a punishment unless you feel it with your skin directly!!」

...Take off her panties?

Then...I'm going to beat her raw ass?

「I-I'm very sorry!」

「Hurry up and take it off!」

「I-I'll do it immediately!」

Michi reached out for her own black panties...

Then lowered it smoothly.

「Take it off properly!」

「Y-Yes!」

Michi takes off her panties while in all fours.

White ass...a small anus and a hairless pussy is clearly visible.

Only those two were colored salmon pink.

「I-I took it off!」

Michi's black panties are rolled up to her right ankle 「Danna-sama, please confirm the feel of Michi's butt first...」

...What?

「You won't know where to hit unless you touch it you know?」

...I

「Michi, I'll touch your butt」

「Please enjoy it...」

My hands touch Michi's ass.

「...Haa!」

Michi's sensitive.

A woman's ass feels chilly.

A smooth ass without any scratches.

Michi's ass has a soft elasticity like raw rubber.

「...Ah, aaaaah!」

Michi's face seems to be painful.

「Michi...look」

Misuzu whispers to Michi's ears.

「I'm watching...Misuzu-sama...!」

Is this a lesbian play where they don't mind me?

No, I just have to enjoy the feeling of Michi's ass for now.

I rub her ass meat...

「Ah...it's embarrassing...it's embarrassing, Misuzu-sama」

「Don't look only at me...take a look at Danna-sama's face in the mirror」

Michi's eyes are looking at me.

「P-Please do it right away...!」

Her passionate eyes look at me.

「P-Please make it hurt...!」

...I

I grabbed Michi's ass once again...

Raised my hand to the fullest!

「...Let's go!」

...I swing down my hand!

It cut the wind and slapped Michi's ass!

...Bachiii!!!

「...Hyaaaaa!!」

Michi shed tears of delight from the first one!

「...Second!」

...Bachiii!!

「...Aaaaaaahn!」

My hand mark raises from Michi's white butt!

「...Third!!」

...Bashiii!

「...Ouuuuuuchhh!!!」

Michi's skin turns sweaty.

「...Four!」

...Bishiii!!

「...Hiiiiiiii!」

I feel a hot liquid from the butt I beat up.

Michi's love nectar is dripping from her slit., 「...Fiveeeee!!」

...Bashiii!!

「...Kyaaaaaaan!!」

The last blow digs into Michi's ass!

I pushed my hand on it...

After enjoying Michi's butt for the last time, I let go of my hand.

Michi's butt is swollen red.

There's love nectar dripping from her vagina...

She flopped and fell down on the floor.

「See, five times was right isn't it...!」

Misuzu smiled at Michi

「...Misuzu-samaa...?」

Michi's lightly absentminded.

「Danna-sama...please embrace Michi tightly」

Misuzu told me.

「Michi has endured the punishment so please praise her」

...I

「...Michi」

I embrace the small body that fell down on the floor.  
A delicate small body...

「You did well...that's amazing, Michi」  
「...Masteeeeer!」

Michi's tense heart relaxed all at once.  
Michi cried out in my chest.

「...As expected, she was holding back」

Misuzu said.  
...I-I see.

Her confrontation with her sister...

Michi has destroyed her sister's body and pride...

In spite of her mother's strict order to『never win against her sister』, she  
obeyed my orders.

Afterwards...Michi remained expressionless as she bathe in her mother's cold  
words.

This fifteen years old girl pushed all this emotions into her small body and  
endured it.

Then...it spouted after the punishment.

「Michi...we'll be together forever...!」

I embraced her small body tightly.

「Michi, Misuzu and me will stay together. I won't let you go...!」  
「...Uwaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!」

Michi cries.  
Loudly...

The thoughts she pushed aside turned into overflowing tears...  
Michi has also lost her true family.

「Yoshi-kun...I'm here too」

Megu smiled.

「That's right. Onii-chan. Mana's here together with you...!

Mana comes to us.

「...Michi-oneechan!」

Mana talks to Michi.

Michi looks at Mana in surprise.

「Mana's still in second year so I can call you Oneechan, can I?」

「...I-I」

Michi's confused though she's crying.

「I'll call you『Michi-san』...but call me『Megumi-oneesan』okay?」

Megu said

「I-I...I am Misuzu-sama's guard...」

Misuzu speaks.

「That's right. Michi's my guard...my『family』!」

...『family』

「You swore to protect me with your life didn't you?」

「Yes...I swore」

Michi answers while still embraced by me.

「We're together for the rest of time...isn't that what『family』is?」

「...Is this okay?」

Michi asks.

「What does Michi want?」

Misuzu asks Michi in reverse.

「I-I...」

The warrior girl who only knows the words『Lord』『Vassal』『Loyalty』she found herself at loss.

...Then.

「You're already a『family member』 Mana's your『little sister』Megu is your『Oneesan』...Live with that thought」



I order Michi as her lord.

「Y-Yes...certainly」

In the end...this girl got some fierce fighting ability but her heart is weak.,  
She always need someone to support her from behind.

If she's not pushed then she won't move.

Michi is a useless girl unless I watch over her.

「If you have trouble or you don't understand something then you can consult me anytime. Michi doesn't need to worry alone anymore」

「...Y-Yes」

Michi spill hot tears.

「Michi's such a crybaby」

I lick Michi's tears...

It's salty and a slightly bitter.

「Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu smilingly brought her face to us.

Then she licked Michi's corner of the eye.

「Misuzu-sama?」

Michi's surprised.

「You don't need to hold back in front of us. Michi can cry and laugh in front of us」

「Un...we're family after all」

Somehow...

Misuzu and I look like a married couple and Michi's our daughter.

Our cute small daughter.

「We're here too!」

Mana interrupts the good atmosphere.

「...Michi-oneechan!」

Mana smiled at Michi.

...Michi

「I'll cherish you a lot...I'll take care of you...Mana-san」

But still, she's being formal to her『little sister』

Well, she's talking like that to her actual sister too...

This might be the normal for Michi.

「...It's about time to let go」

Michi told me with her eyes swollen from tears.

「I'm already fine」

She told me bashfully.

「Ah, sure...」

When I tried to release Michi's body...

「Michi, that's not how you say it」

Misuzu's guidance comes again.

「It's wrong to order your master」

「...I'm very sorry」

「Danna-sama...does it feel good to embrace Michi's body?」

I answered honestly.

「Yeah, it does」

「Then, please hug her until you're satisfied...Michi's body is for Danna-sama after all」

Misuzu smiles.

「...Michi!」

I embraced Michi's body once again.

「Michi too...embrace Danna-sama's body」

「...Yes」

Michi's hands goes through my back then embraced me tightly.

「How is it? Embracing and being embraced feels good doesn't it/」

「Yes...Misuzu-sama. But」

「...What's wrong, Michi?」

Michi answered.

「It feels so good that this might become a habit...!」

Misuzu laughed.

「It's okay, make it a habit. We're『family』after all. I also love embracing Danna-sama...!」

「Mana too! I love being embraced by Onii-chan...!」

「Me too...I'm addicted to it」

...I

「Come at me!」

I spread my left arm widely while embracing Michi on my right.

「...Yes!」

Misuzu and Mana jumped to my chest...!

Megu embraced me from the back.,

「...Everyone's the same!」

Misuzu mutters.



...Before long.

We let go of each other.

Everyone seems to have regained their energy.

Smiling, they're all cheerful.

Michi who's always expressionless is showing a refreshed face.

「Master...I actually would like to consult about something」

Michi asked me.

「Sure...what is it?」

「I would like Master to embrace me」

「Didn't we just hug each other a lot earlier?」

「...Not in that meaning」

...Ah

「I'd like to offer it while Misuzu-sama watches」

...Err

Offer it, she means...

Michi's puirty...

Megu and Mana stares at me.

「You...that kind of thing...」

「I was ordered to make a consultation anytime」

True...I did say that but.

「Very well, let's make an opportunity tonight...」

...Misuzu?

「In exchange...it'll only be Danna-sama for the rest of your life」

「...Understood」

「Michi...how many people do you want to teach『Kudou style ancient martial arts』?」

Misuzu asked indirectly.

「If possible...I'd like three」

「Then ask Danna-sama, not me」

「Yes...Master. Will three be okay?」

Michi asks me with her ears turned bright red.

...Give birth to three children?

No...If Michi wants to bear children then there's no helping it.

「I-It can't be helped」

I answered.

「Onii-chan, Mana would like one girl」

「Yoshi-kun, me too...」

...Err

「...I'm moved」

While I was troubled, I hear a voice from behind.

When I turned around, Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are crying?!

「Misuzu-san...it's wonderful. What a wonderful『master-servant』love!」

Ruriko-san's been born at the heart of Kouzuki family.

Her grandfather's the head of the family and her father's the eldest son.

Having no other family...since the age of three, Yoshiko-san who's three years older is her『retainer』

For Ruriko-san...all of human relationship is『master slave』

「The love of a vassal『family』is like this...」

「The scales have fallen off my eyes」

Yoshiko-san said.

These two doesn't know the various patterns of people's relationship.

The『lord』Ruriko-san and『vassal』Yoshiko-san, they're the only two in their world, isolated this whole time.

These two grew up with only little contact besides themselves.

The exception is Kouzuki『Kakka』and Misuzu only.

Even the『hugs』we did just now...they only understand it on the terms of master-servant relationship.

「If Misuzu-sama and Kuromori-sama marries...it'll really create a wonderful『family』...!」

Ruriko-san thinks that I'm a man from a famous house somewhere.

---

## 227. Practice hugging

---

「Ruriko-san, do you also want to embrace Danna-sama?」

Misuzu made a proposal

Pardon? Me and Kuromori-sama?」

Ruriko-san's surprised.

「Hug, a hug!」

Misuzu said with a smile.

「In the west, since ancient times, it's an act of showing affection」

「...However」

Ruriko-san's puzzled

「This is Japan...and hugging a man is somewhat...」

Yoshiko-san who's her retainer is also confused.

「He's my Danna-sama. He will become Ruriko-san's relative so there should be no problem doing a dear hug」

Misuzu attacks logically.

「Ruriko-san, you will be meeting a lot of foreigners as the representative of Kouzuki house from now on...therefore, you should be accustomed to hugs starting today」

She wants Ruriko-san and I to hug by all means.

「It's completely fine! Onii-chan's not scary!」

Mana jumps to my chest.

It can't be helped...I hug her and pat her head.

「Ehehe...Onii-chan, I love you!」

Megu followed...

「Yoshi-kun...me toe」

「Sure, Megu-oneechan, here!」

Mana lets go and I embraced Megu this time.

「...Stroke my back」

Answering Megu's wish, I pat her head while hugging her.

「Un...I love it when Yoshi-kun does this」

Megu looks at Michi.

「Michi-san too...you want it again too, don't you?」

「Ah, uhm...if possible」

Michi speaks bashfully.

「Yoshi-kun...do it」

Megu switched with Michi.

「...Michi」

Michi's body is really small...

「I-I...I love being embraced filled with strength」

「Un, got it」

I embraced Michi's body to my heart's content

Michi leaked out a huge「haa」sigh

「...Being embraced by master makes me feel relieved」

...I

「Michi's so cute ...!」

She looks dignified when in combat however...

Embracing Michi like this, she's cute like a Japanese doll.

Her white skin and black hair...big eyes and well shaped nose.

She's quite a beauty.

「I-I...am not cute!」

Michi says as her body tremble in my arms.

「Michi...you must not deny your lord's words. At such times, you must answer with: 『Thank you very much, I'll stay as a cute woman so please love me a lot』」

Misuzu's guidance enters.

「I-I'm very sorry...!」

Michi looks up at me with her red face.

「...Thank you for calling me cute. Please love me a lot from now on」  
「...Sure」

I stroke Michi's hair.

Michi stretched her spine feeling comfortable.

...She's like a cat.

「Michi...it's about time we switch」

Misuzu said.

「I also want to be hugged by Danna-sama...」  
「Y-Yes!」

Michi released her body.

Misuzu goes to my chest...

「...Danna-sama」  
「...Misuzu」

Misuzu's wearing a beautiful stage Kimono.  
The Kimono smells insence.

「...I will be dancing only for Danna-sama tonight」  
「Yeah, do your best」  
「I love you. Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu hugs me.  
...I hold Misuzu tightly.  
Misuzu's silk clothes creates a rustling sound.

「Ufufu...Danna-sama's gotten energetic」

Misuzu smiled at me.



Then, she looked at Ruriko-san...

「What do you think, Ruriko-san About us hugging Danna-sama? It doesn't feel scary at all does it?」

Ruriko-san...

「Yes. Kuromori-sama's affection with everyone has been conveyed」

「Danna-sama is a very gentle person. He respects me and other women...he won't force himself to embrace a woman's body」

「That is...even I understood that. Kurormori-sama embraced everyone gently」

It's seems that's how Ruriko-san sees it.

I was just embracing everyone as usual however.

「Therefore...I think Danna-sama would be the best way to practice hugging with Ruriko-san」

Misuzu attacks.

「Ruriko-san's already 15...when meeting up with foreigners, you really need to give them a hug...」

「What should we do...Yoshiko?」

Ruriko-san asks the girl three years older than her.

「...I don't know」

Ever since six years old, she's always been with Ruriko-san...Yoshiko-san also doesn't have any experience with men.

「Ruriko-san, have you ever hugged someone?」

Misuzu asks.

「I had with grandfather. Never with father. Yoshiko, we do hug sometimes」

Ruriko-san answers

「At night, when I feel lonely...I sleep embracing Yoshiko」

Really...Kouzuki『Kakka』are keeping these girls in quarantine.

「Have you hugged a young man?」

「...Never」

「Then, isn't Danna-sama the best person for practice hugging?」

Misuzu is trying to promote me...

「That might be the case however」

Ruriko-san's confused.

「Then, first...how about Yoshiko-san give Danna-sama a hug first?」

Misuzu changes targets.

「M-Me...?」

Yoshiko-san's puzzled.

「Yoshiko-san is Ruriko-san's retainer, you will be meeting up a lot more foreigners from now on. I think there will be occasions on parties where you will be asked for a hug...!」

Kouzuki『Kakka』has thoroughly refused the opportunity of these two coming in contact with men thoroughly.

Then, it won't change from now on.

However, Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san thinks that they're still children so they only think that they're not called for adult gatherings.

If they grow up a bit more...they had to attend parties.

Misuzu knows their feelings.

Misuzu herself has been on the same position as Ruriko-san, being isolated from men.

「After Ruriko-san's social debut, Yoshiko-san will be coming together too, won't you?...Yoshiko-san's already an adult, you can't do without giving a hug」

Misuzu intends to start with Yoshiko-san

「I don't like to debut in the society」

Ruriko-san said.

Staying in a world with only Yoshiko-san is with her...it must be frightening for her to go out to the adult world.

「You do know that the successor of the Kouzuki house isn't allowed to have such selfishness...!」

Misuzu looks at Ruriko-san.

「Well...I do know but」

Yoshiko-san rouse herself as she look at Ruriko-san who has a gloomy face.

「Understood...then I will try to experience hugs」

Yoshiko-san looked at me nervously.

「This is for Ruriko-sama's sake」

Yoshiko-san comes to me.

Yoshiko-san's wearing a purple kimono. She walks in small steps.

Her skirt's never thrown into disorder...this one's also an Ojou-sama.

If I recall, she's 18 isn't she?

Looking at her closely...this person's quite a beauty.

「P-Please...!」

Her body's stiff...trembling.

「Excuse me then」

I embrace Yoshiko-san gently.

「...Ah」

Yoshiko-san leaked out a small voice.

「...Don't be scared, it'll be fine」

I whisper in Yoshiko-san's ears

「...Y-Yes」

Yoshiko-san's tension doesn't go away.

「Yoshiko-san...take a deep breath」

「Yes?」

「Deep breath...breathe in」

Yoshiko-san breathes in deeply.

I can feel her chest expanding...

「Okay...then slowly breathe out」

...Fuuuuu

Yoshiko-san breathes out.

「Not yet...breathe all of the air out of your lungs」

She's nervous so she can only breathe in so little and can't exhale.  
Therefore, I made her conscious of deep breathing...

「Then breathe in deep...okay, breathe out. Let it all out...」

After repeating deep breaths several times...  
Yoshiko-san's body has gotten soft.  
The hardness of her body is taken away.

「Okay...looking good」

I stroked her black hair on her back.  
When her tension came off...Yoshiko-san's flesh comes through clearly  
I can't tell her chest that's crushed by her kimono however...  
This one's got a big breast.  
Her ass is well developed too.  
That said, her waist is thin and firm.  
As expected of an 18 year old...her body's on the verge of becoming an adult.  
...No no.  
Evil thoughts will come up and be transmitted to Yoshiko-san.  
I should only concentrate on gently hugging Yoshiko-san's soul.  
Her frightened soul hugging a boy for the first time.

「...Yoshiko-san」

「...Yes」

「Yoshiko-san's body is so soft, warm...it feels good」

I whisper in Yoshiko-san's ears.

「Kuromori-sama's body...it's solid, it is embracing my body firmly」

Before I noticed, Yoshiko-san's body has completely relaxed.  
She's entrusting her body to me.

「I never thought that being embraced by a man feels this peaceful...!」

Yoshiko-san said...Misuzu;

「Danna-sama's very good at it. No man is as gentle as that when hugging」  
「Yes...I think so too. Kuromori-sama's kindness is being transmitted to me...」

The girl who's been forbidden to make contact with men until 18 years old gives her impression on her first physical contact.

「Yoshiko-san...it's about time Ruriko-san take her turn」

Misuzu said...

「Ah...Yes. I'm sorry」

Yoshiko-san lets go of me in panic.

「If you want to hug again then you can ask Danna-sama anytime. Danna-sama will be giving you an embrace anytime」

Misuzu's words...

「Ah, yes...thank you very much」

Her face turned red as she answered.

「Now...it's Ruriko-san's turn」

Ruriko-san's nervous.

「I...I」

「What's wrong? Ruriko-san?」

「...Uhm, after all」

Is she embarrassed or scared?

Ruriko-san's fidgeting.

「Danna-sama...please」

Misuzu smiles.

...Un

If Ruriko-san won't come then I should go to Ruriko-san 「D-Don't come...I-I'm scared」

Ruriko-san's frightened.

「...Look at my face」

Ruriko-san's face say「Eh?」

「Look at my face」

The big eyes of the 15 year old girl looks up at me.

「...Are you scared?」

「...A bit」

For a third year middle school girl...a man might be scary for her.

「I'm not scary」

I said.

「No...it's scary」

Ruriko-san's trembling

「It's not scary」

Misuzu comes close then kisses my cheek in front of Ruriko-san's eyes.

「Yes, it's not scary」

Megu comes and kissed my other cheek

「Un, not scary!」

Mana kisses my ear.

「Yes...Master isn't scary at all」

Michi kisses my neck.

My four『women』turned to Ruriko-san's back.

「We're here with you. It's not scary...!」

Misuzu whispers to Ruriko-san's ears.

「...Then I'll hug you, Ruriko-san」

I spread my arms widely...

And embraced the small frightened body.

I hug Ruriko-san closely...

Misuzu and others embraced me and Ruriko-san.

「...Ruriko-san's heart is throbbing」

The delicate body embraced tightly...a fierce heartbeat comes through.

「Y-Yes...I...!」

I caress Ruriko-san's nervous back.

「...Hiii!!」

Ruriko-san trembled.

She's very sensitive.

「...Leave it to me」

I whisper to Ruriko-san's ear.

「...Leave everything?」

「Yes...Ruriko-san's mind and body...to me...」

「...But」

Ruriko-san's scared

「...Ruriko-san」

I said.

「Yes?」

「I will protect Ruriko-san」

「...Eh?」

「Misuzu and I...my『family』will make Ruriko-san happy」

「W-What are you talking about?」

Ruriko-san doesn't seem to understand it

「I'll concentrate to the sound of Ruriko-san's heartbeat. Ruriko-san, listen to my heart」

「...Kuromori-sama's heart?」

「Yes...press your ears to my chest and listen」

Ruriko-san presses her ear to my chest.

「...Dokun, dokun, it says」

「Yes, it's because we're living」

「I...it's my first time to hear the sound of other people's heart」

I pat Ruriko-san's hair gently.

Slowly, gently...

Bit by bit...Ruriko-san's body's stiffness is coming off.

She's relaxing.

It's not my strength alone.

The warmth of the four body hugging Ruriko and me...

Ruriko-san's tension loosens.

「Ruriko-san's heartbeat has gotten calmer!」

Mana said while embracing Ruriko-san's back.

「Danna-sama and Ruriko-san's heartbeat are in sync...」

Ruriko-san's surprised from what Misuzu said.

「...Me...?!」

「Yes...we're becoming one right now」

Our heartbeats overlap...

Just like one creature...

「...It feels strange」

Ruriko-san said.

「I...I feel very close to Kuromori-sama」

We're embracing each other...

「Misuzu-sama, and everyone else too...」

Misuzu speaks to Yoshiko-san.

「Yoshiko-san, want to join in too?」

「...Me?」

「That's right. Let's all become one...!」

Megu reaches out for Yoshiko-san.

「Now, come in...!」

Yoshiko-san enters to surround Ruriko-san and me 「Listen to everyone's heartbeat」

Misuzu said.

「Let's all pile out heartbeats and let us become one」



「...Un」

「Understood」

「...Certainly」

Mana, Megu, Michi...follows Misuzu's instructions.

Pressing ears to each other's body...we listen to the heartbeats.

「L-Like this?」

Yoshiko-san joined in too

「Mana, your pulse is a bit fast.」

Megu tells Mana.

「Eh, what should I do?」

「Take a deep breath. You'll feel calmer. Just remember the feeling of love from the other side」

Misuzu tells Mana.

「Yoshiko-san's heartbeat, I think it's slightly larger...」

Michi said...

「I-I'm sorry...」

「Please don't apologize...leave your mind and body to us」

「...Yes」

...Before long

「Ah...it overlapped」

「Un...our heart rings on the same rhythm」

Our heartbeat's synchronized.

「So we can do this kind of thing too...!」

Ruriko-san's impressed.

「Yes, we have become one. Therefore...Ruriko-san」

Misuzu speaks.

「You are no longer alone with Yoshiko-san...!」

「...Yes?」

「We are all your『family』」

「...That is」

「If someone had wicked thoughts...our heartbeats won't overlap」

True...Misuzu is right.

「We do love Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san after all...!」

Ruriko-san...

「I...grandfather told me not to believe people's words. To be careful with kind words especially...」

I continue to stroke Ruriko-san's hair with the same rhythm as before.

「Therefore...I don't understand words very well But, this heartbeat...this warmth」

Ruriko-san puts her cheeks to my chest...

「Everyone...is my『family』, isn't it?」

I once again embraced Ruriko-san's small body tightly.

Ruriko-san also hugs back.

Misuzu, Mana, Megu, Michi...Yoshiko-san too...

Ruriko-san and I are being embraced from outside., 「What should I do?」

...Ruriko-san?

「I might come to love being hugged by Kuromori-sama」

「...Then I'll give you hugs anytime you want」

「But...Kuromori-sama is Misuzu-sama's lover...」

「It's fine, Ruriko-san...we're sisters after all. I don't mind it at all...」

「...But」

Experiencing physical contact with a man for the first time...

Ruriko-san's heart is shaking.

Misuzu's『Ruriko-san's invitation plan』is going well 「Please practice hugging a lot. Danna-sama and I will always be with you...」

「...Is this okay?」

「In exchange, it'll be a secret. It'll be misunderstood when seen by others...you can only practice with Danna-sama...okay?」

「...Yes, understood」

「After hugs would be a kiss...!」

「...Eh, Misuzu-san?」

Misuzu smiles.

「You don't know?...In the west, you have to kiss when greeting people. You have to practice kissing too...!」

Misuzu's lesson is escalating further.

「B-But...!」

「It's practice. It's fine. Misuzu's Danna-sama will be with you properly...! We'll show you a good example...!」

Misuzu tries to kiss me...

...At that time

...Konkon!

The door of our dressing room was knocked.

「...It's Fujimiya」

A dignified woman's voice.

F-Fujimiya-san...?

...O-Oh right.

Chief Tanizawa said he would send a new escort to Ruriko-san...!

「Excuse me!」

Fujimiya-san's a woman so she opened the dressing room calmly.

S-Shit...!

I'm still hugging Ruriko-san...!

The other girls are surrounding us...!

At this situation...

H-How should I explain this...?!

「..... ? ! ! ! 」

The tall woman who opened the door and entered the room...

She's looking at us in confusion...

「What...is going on...?!」

At that moment...

Megu shouted...

「...Fight!!!!」

Megu, Mana and I shouted at the same time

「...Oooh!」

「Fight!」

「Ooh!」

「Fight!」

「Ooh!」

「Fight!」

「Oh, ooh...!!!」

Then, we let go of each other...!

Halfway, Misuzu and Michi also participated.

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san were stunned...

「E-Everyone's psyching up before the actual performance!」

Megu tells Fujimiya-san...

As expected of an athlete.

---

## 228. Beat to death Swordswoman

---

「I'm Fujimiya Reika. I'm appointed as Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama's guard...  
my best regards」

Kouzuki security service's top ace, Fujimiya-san...  
As if, she's dressed as a male role in Takarazuka.  
She's cross-dressed as a British gentleman.  
Gray suit, brown best ten...blue necktie.  
Brown leather shoes.  
Though she's a slender and tall lady...her male costume suits her well.  
Far from being strange...it upgrades her charm.  
This suit must be also a high quality article. I can tell by just looking at it.  
It's perfectly fit to her body...it's custom-made.  
Her short hair is beautifully combed.  
An amazing beauty.  
On top of that...she has elegance and grace.  
Standing with her spine stretched out...it conveys the lightness and toughness  
of her body.  
This person...she's strong.  
She's having a brown leather gloves in her hand...  
Then...she's holding a thick cane.

「I'm honored to have Fujimiya-san with us」

Ruriko-san said with a smile.

「I'm sorry...there's an information that there's a troublesome enmity that  
might infiltrate...」

Fujimiya-san said calmly.

「Is that so?」

Yoshiko-san makes a worried face.

「Please be relieved...My team is already mobilized」

Fujimiya-san smiled.

「Yes. Fujimiya-san came here so there's nothing to worry about」

Ruriko-san answered.

「However, my body is only one so...I'm very sorry but Ruriko-sama, Misuzu-sama, please stay together for a while., Of course, Yoshiko-san too」

Fujimiya-san clearly distinguishes Misuzu and Ruriko-san as『sama』and Yoshiko-san as『san』

Her subjects to guard will only be Misuzu and Ruriko-san...Yoshiko-san will only after it.

「It's possible that the enmity approaches Using Yoshiko-san. If you need anything, my group will accompany you so Yoshiko-san, please stay by Ruriko-sama's side」

「...Certainly」

Yoshiko-san replied.

After that...Fujimiya-san ignored us and looked at Michi.

「You are Misuzu-sama's guard?」

Michi lowers her head...

「I'm Kudou Michi...」

Fujimiya-san looked at Michi's state...

「Hmm...your posture is good. I can tell that you're properly trained. Your grace is also good...you're raised well...!」

Michi was analyzed by just looking.

「This isn't from Mr. Kudou's education but from Misuzu-sama's guidance」

Fujimiya-san made a conclusion.

「Yes. Michi has enrolled in our school as my guard. She tries to be on the top class so she can be by my side as much as possible」

Misuzu said.

Misuzu was the one who put Michi on the super ojousama school.

「She reached the first-class since she was small—if she's not mingling with the first class people, she won't master the real grace」

Misuzu really loves this three years younger warrior girl...

「Mr. Kudou is someone who possesses a top-notch skill...but unfortunately, he lacks elegance. If he didn't have that shortcoming, then he won't be under the table but the top of the surface」

Fujimiya-san said in regret.

「I'm very sorry. Father loves working behind the scenes」

Michi answered bashfully.

「You have to negotiate with people hard to handle behind the scenes so Mr. Kudou can naturally take such attitude. If you serve for that long, you'll become a person with a vulgar behavior」

「Therefore, I pulled out Michi from Kudou-san at early stage...」

Misuzu answers.

「Kudou-san has taught her only the practice of techniques but...majority of her daily life is with me」

「I think that's an adequate judgement. Grace is something cultivated by every day life」

Fujimiya-san said.

「Surely, in three years, you will grow into a wonderful guard...you're growing up to be an outstanding talent appropriate for chief Tanizawa's eyes」

「No, Michi won't belong to Kouzuki security service」

Misuzu declared clearly.

「Michi will always be my exclusive guard」

「Yes...I will serve only Misuzu-sama」

Fujimiya-san...

「Is that so? That's regrettable. Belonging to Kouzuki security service means

pledging loyalty to Kouzuki house...certainly, it might be necessary to become a vassal only for Misuzu-sama. Ruriko-sama has Yoshiko-san with her...」

「Yes, therefore...Misuzu needs Michi」

Ruriko-san has Yoshiko-san who's three years old older than her as her『retainer』

On the contrary, Misuzu has Michi who's three years younger as her『guard』

「If something happened, you're free to consult me anytime. Even if you're not a member of Kouzuki security service...you're a junior who protects Kouzuki house」

Fujimiya-san told Michi gently.

「Eat more and make your body grow more. Your endurance is still lacking as of now, isn't it?」

「Yes...Thank you very much. Uhm, Fujimiya-sama...」

「...What is it?」

「Could you give me some training at least once?」

「...Me?」

「Yes. I would like to see the techniques of the『Ice Swordswoman』Fujimiya-sama」

Michi bows her head to Fujimiya-san...

「I do prefer my other alias」

Fujimiya-san grips her cane firmly.

「This isn't even mentioned...when I have the time, I take as much enemies as possible. For some reason, I was called 『Beat to death Swordswoman』...I'll show you all my skills」

...『Beat to death Swordswoman』

No way...does she beat up with that stick?

「Fujimiya-san's a first class fencer...and yet why do you not use swords?」

Misuzu asks.

「Swords aren't suitable for the guards this era」

Fujimiya-san answered.



「When you cut bodies with sword, it'll spurt blood...when that happens, it'll hinder your combat with multiple humans. There's blood sticking to the sword too, it'll worsen the condition of the blade. If you swing it a lot of times, no matter what sword it is, it'll chip, break, or bend. Above all, fighting with sword is terrible. It's not something you should show to a subject who's from a good family」

I-I see.

Fujimiya-san looks at her stick.

「Canes originated in the west as a substitute to a sword. In the first place, it's a weapon. However, in modern times, carrying around a stick isn't considered armed. That's the advantages of the cane. It also looks elegant too...」

Fujimiya-san kisses the handle of the cane lightly.

「This cane is custom-made...it weighs three kilograms. It's made of special alloy so it'll never break or bend. I love the striking power of this cane...!」

...Striking power

「Even if the enemy is wearing a bulletproof vest...if I strike them with my stick, they'll receive a fracture and be made impossible to fight. If they're repelled quickly...then you can defeat the enemy without even the subject noticing」

Therefore she's the『Beat to death Swordsman』

「We are guards. If the assassin uses firearm then there's no need to fear bloodstream...we have to avoid the blood flow thoroughly. The blood of the subject are ourselves...furthermore, we shouldn't let the enemy's blood flow. Blood seen by our subjects to guard means shame in our work. Therefore, I put everything in the blow. There is nothing I can't break with my full power strike」

Fujimiya-san said.

I see, the thought of doing everything gracefully...is fundamentally different from Kudou papa.

Kudou papa looks like he's just kicking everything around.

True, Kudou-papa can't be trusted to guard a famous person.

「...By the way, Fujimiya-san」

Misuzu said.

「Why are you not greeting the people important to me?」

Speaking of which...

Fujimiya-san didn't greet me, Megu or Mana.

Or rather...we're completely ignored.

...Could this be—

Is this because we're from『Kuromori』?

Fujimiya obviously knows our identity.

「Fujimiya-san...you became my guard, right?」

Misuzu speaks strongly.

「Then...I think it's reasonable for you to greet my dear friends」

...Fujimiya-san.

「Excuse my impoliteness. I'm Fujimiya Reika of Kouzuki security service...!」

She bows her head to us.

Fujimiya-san's a first class professional guard.

Even if she despises『Kuromori』from the bottom of her heart...

She will follow the order of one of her masters, Misuzu

「...Kuromori Kounosuke」

I greeted with my alias.

Either way, Fujimiya-san knows my true identity.

But, I decided to declare myself as a member of『Kuromori』

「Yoshida Megumi」

「Yoshida Mana」

Both of them bowed.

The names『Yamamine』and『Shirasaka』can't be spoken in this place.

「I think there's a lot of things happening but please...protect Misuzu and Ruriko-san」

I told Fujimiya-san.

「Please leave it to me」

Fujimiya-san answered.  
Then...we hear a knock.

「...Yes?」

Yoshiko-san answers.

「It's Kanako」

...Kanako-san.

「Come in」

Ruriko-san answered, the door opened.  
Kanako-san shows herself.

「Thank you for the wait. Misuzu-san...it's about time the person before Misuzu-san ends her『stage rehearsal』so please stand-by on the stage!」

Kanako-san said in a hurry.  
It's because the opening time is approaching.

「Understood, thank you」  
「You're welcome!」

Kanako-san closes the door.

「Why is Kanako-san coming instead of the stage director assistant?」

Ruriko-san asks curiously.

「Consideration. Ruriko-san is with me and on top of that, Fujimiya-san is here too ...!」

The two successor daughters of Kouzuki house...and the top ace of Kouzuki security service.

Normal people would be frightened and find it hard to approach.

Therefore...Kanako-san who's friends with the two came all the way to call Misuzu.

Kanako-san's a good girl.

「Then, I will be going. Danna-sama」  
「I will head to the stage side too...Yoshiko」  
「Yes, Ruriko-sama」

Earlier, Fujimiya-san said that they should stick together as much as possible...  
Ruriko-san seems to have decided to go to the stage side along with Misuzu.

「Un, we'll go back to the lobby」

I smiled at Misuzu.

We can't go to the stage side with them.

I'd like to see Misuzu's dance on the real performance, not on training.

「I'll cheer from the audience seats...Misuzu and Ruriko-san, do your best」

「Yes, thank you very much. Kuromori-sama」

Ruriko-san said.

「Please wait when the symposium is over okay?」

Misuzu told me.

...Yeah.

Soon, Kouzuki『Kakka』will be coming to this theater too...

Misuzu's『fiance』will come too.

I must confront them.

「I know」

I embraced Misuzu once again.

「...Danna-sama, I love you」

Misuzu told me in front of everyone watching.

「Michi...Ruriko-san and I will be followed with Fujimiya-san. Please guard  
Danna-sama...!」

「Certainly」

Michi answers her lord.



We go back to the lobby together.

The『Kuromori』group occupied the sofa in the lobby.

「Welcome back, want to drink coffee?」

Katsuko-nee asked me.

「Thanks...!」

Unlike earlier, the people in the lobby has increased.

It's about time for the doors to open.

At the reception, people of Konpeki school are starting their preparations.

The children first coming out on the『symposium』are doing their last practice in the lobby.

Of course, those girls have their『guards』and『attendants』with them too.

The security guards in Kouzuki security service uniform have also increased.

In the lobby...

Everyone from『Kuromori』is clearly distinctive.

Yeah...

Something's strange...

Margo-san and Nei-san aren't that strange.

Katsuko-nee...she's barely okay.

Minaho-neesan...it's slightly strange.

Her dress isn't strange however...

It's clearly isn't an atmosphere of someone coming to see the children's dance presentation.

Then there's Yukino.

The hell are you?...

This black and yellow striped dress has too much destructive power.

Wearing this on a public place, her hobby can't be understood.

Or rather...I don't get what it means.

The braid and the thick black edge glasses strengthens it further...

Un, looking at her from the distance...she looks like an advertising character.

It's like an advertisement character of a honey product on a small local food company.

Like she's;『Honey Soldier, Yukino-chan』

It made me want to eat pancakes.

...Anyway

When this group gathers...it's extremely standing out.

「...Maika Don't get too close to me during the opening」

Yukino tells Mana.

「...Why?」

She's called Maika so she speaks to her sister in ill humor.

「If we're lined up then they might notice that we're the daughters of Shirasaka you know? Your friends will be coming to watch today, won't they/」

Yukino's worried about that.

It's okay. Nobody would notice that you're Shirasaka Yukino.

With your father's scandal reported on TV...

There's no daughter who would come out to the public with such an interesting figure.

If someone noticed it...they'd definitely avoid you.

「Nei-san, do you have a magic marker?」

Mana ignores her sister's words and called out Nei-san.

「I do, what'cha gonna do?」

「I'll put a huge『Shirasaka』on Yukino-san's forehead...」

...Mana

As usual, she's harsh with Yukino.

「How was with Misuzu-san?」

Margo-san asks me.

Minaho-neesan looks this way.

「Misuzu and Ruriko-san have been entrusted to Fujimiya-san」

「You met her?」

「Yes. We were in the dressing room when she came...」

「What kind of impression you have with her?」

Margo-san asks me.

「Dignified and cool, I guess. I can tell that what she's wearing is a first class item...her shoes were firm too」

I speak my impressions right away.

「Her behavior is clean, her speech too...Above all, she looks so strong, she feels reliable」

「Fujimiya is the top among the Kouzuki security service...she's a first class」

Yeah...true.

「Somehow, Kouzuki security service feels strange doesn't it? Kudou-san, chief Tanizawa, director Yamaoka, Fujimiya-san...all of them are different types of people」

True, they have different atmospheres.

「It's because they have different departments」

Margo-san said.

「Kouzuki security service is a company specialized in protecting VIPs...」

Err...what does that mean?

「Yoshida-kun, how do you think Kouzuki security service accomplish their work?

Minaho-neesan asks me.

「For example...if you receive a request from a person. 『It seems that I'm targeted by a bad guy so please protect me』...and Kouzuki security service accepts that request...how do you think the job will be done?」

...That is

「To protect the person who made the request...?」

「...How can you make sure that the person is protected?」

「That is...defend the person and fight the the bad guys」

「Sadly...that's not how business works」

Margo-san said.

「Kouzuki security service have their guards contracted for a certain period of time. A month, three, half a year...or forever. If the guard is attacked during that period, it's Kouzuki security service loss」

「Why?」

「When they're attacked, the subject will be in a dangerous situation right? If possible, nobody wants to be attacked, right?」

Well...that's certainly true.

「Therefore the guard contract for Kouzuki security service, they issue a unit outside while guarding the subject at the same time. Those people will figure out who will attack the guard and drive them out thoroughly.」

...Does this mean?

「That's right. Kudou-san is in charge with that kind of work」

Thoroughly investigating and eliminating the assailant in advance.

「If the contract period is one month...within one month, they will dispose all of the people who are targeting the subject」

I-I see.

「Kudou-san's『undersurface』team is actually fulfilling the core of the work. However, not everyone knows that. Even if you ask the person who asked for a guard, they sometimes don't know. There's a lot of people who rely on their secretary for business.」

「What's best for customers is when there's nobody attacking, the contract period ended, and they report『It's OK now』」

Minaho-neesan said.

「The hidden unit is invisible to the customer. What the customer only see is the person guarding themselves...therefore, director Yamaoka's integrated security department all look good, and are easy to understand」

Margo-san said.

「The minimum requirement is to have a good physique and a rank in martial arts. Thus it's better if you won some tournament」

「So the guard sticking to the subject is only for appearance's sake?」

I asked.

「I won't go that far. They are training very strictly...if you're not competent, you won't be hired in the first place. But, the contents of your job is different」

「Director Yamaoka and the people in his integrated security department...aren't told about the activities done by Kudou-san and others from the『background』」

Minaho-neesan?



「If they knew that the person from 『behind the scenes』already crushed the possibility of attack in advance...the tension of the guards protecting their subject would be gone. Therefore, they're not told about it」

...I see

「Then...the team lead by chief Tanizawa is an exception. They're the elite counter-terrorist group guarding the highest level of VIPs」

True...Fujimiya-san has a different atmosphere.

「Tanizawa-san and others have the first class fighting power...and yet they have the grace and education to cope with the elite people」

「Fujimiya-san is definitely one but, Tanizawa-san」

He's quite a man with a broken attitude...

「He has that kind of attitude because I'm a member of『Kuromori』 Chief Tanizawa is a person who can cope with the elite people and the people『behind the scenes』 He's like that in front of Kudou-san and me but...that's because he judged that it's better to talk to us casually」

I see...Fujimiya-san knew that I'm from『Kuromori』and tried to ignore me. That's a natural response from the elite people.

However, chief Tanizawa is an officer in Kouzuki security service...

He also gives Kudou-san and others from『behind』instructions...

He has to negotiate with people from organizations like us.

Therefore...he was talking casually.

「Kouzuki『Kakka』has his own team able to talk with the people of the elite world. That's chief Tanizawa」

I see...that's hard work.

---

## 229. Super Flat

---

「Yoshida-kun...what do you think it means to be『dignified』?」

Minaho-neesan asks me.

「...Dignified?」

「What is『Elegant』what is『Vulgar』? What is the difference between first class and second class?」

「I never thought of that」

I lived in a world where that doesn't matter.

「Even in the upper class, there are some vulgar people, and vice versa...then what decides a person's『dignity』」

Minaho-neesan's question is hard.

「Yoshida-kun...have you seen a genuine art of either Picasso or Van Gogh?」

「...Genuine?」

「Not a printed or seen on TV...have you seen a genuine thing with your own eyes」

「Never」

「Then, let's go see next time...」

Go see?

「Once you see the work of a top-class artist exceeding the first class with your naked eye, even amateurs can tell it's amazingness」

...Un

「Therefore, you should feel the amazingness of the top-class work...then compare it to the first class, second class works」

「Shouldn't we avoid showing Yoshida-kun the later works of Picasso? That's a different fight after all」

Margo-san intervenes from the side.

「Different fight?」

「Picasso has lived long and has always been a master...even his graffiti scribbles, art dealers collect all of it at high price. That said, it's not bad work but...I think it's not good for the aesthetic eyes」

「I'll let him see from his initial works『Blue Period』『Rose period』to『Cubism』」

Minaho-neesan tells Margo-san

「That's a lot. Won't it be a month trip to Europe?」

「But still, it's important to experience the genuine article...」

...Err

「Is it that important to see the genuine articles?」

Margo-san...

「If you didn't see the genuine thing, you can't clearly know how the author actually made the work」

...Un

「Talking about my experience...there's an art textbook that listed a painting of the horse of the King of Europe. That horse's picture is somewhat strange. The horse's neck is thick and the head is too big」

「...Then?」

「Then...looking at the textbook, it says 『The dynamism is being expressed by drawing the thick horse neck. When I read that, I thought 'Is that how it is?' but...」

Margo-san smiled.

「Minaho brought me to the national gallery in London, the real thing was there...then」

This person...even though she's strong.  
She's having fun when talking about arts and music...

「The horse picture is very huge...it's an image you look up from below」

A big image...you look up from below

「That's right...looking from below, the neck of the horse that was too fat for the small textbook photo is actually fitting. It's a perspective trick. The author has that picture from the beginning...he has calculated the angle and distance from where the viewer would see. It's big after all. Those kind of things won't be discovered unless you saw the real thing, I'm really moved...」

I see.

The photo's size is reduced so you can't understand it.

「Geez, Maru-chan. In the first place, the color of the real thing and the photo is different don't you think?」

Nei-san comes in too.

「Yo-chan...the real oil painting is really sparkly and beautiful!」

「Right...no matter how much printing technology develops, the real colors can't be reproduced」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Besides...the real thing still has the painter's brush mark still remaining. You can really tell that it's made by human hands. It'll make you think humans are amazing. They can express a lot of things with just the point and lines made by the brush sweep 」

Nei-san's eyes are sparkling too.

「I'd like to bring Yoshida-kun to a photography exhibit instead of paintings」

Margo-san said.

「When a real top-class photographer takes it, the photos developed have a completely different depth. That's why printing is only half the charm. I think you won't know the real value unless you see the original print...!」

Is that so

「Anyway...first we'll let him touch something top-class. Experience the genuine greatness...then understanding the first and second class will be later」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Right. If you see something half-hearted, your eyes would be clouded」

Margo-san said.

「Uhm...why is Margo-san and Nei-san so familiar with art?」

Margo-san laughs.

「Isn't that obvious?...Nei and I received Minaho's education」

Minaho-neesan...

「Kyouko-san's hobby is included too. That person is really fussy to see the first class and hone her aesthetic eyes」

I never met her yet but...it seems that Kyouko-san has a variety of hobbies.

「If you obtain the power to see through the value of things...then you can also understand the value of others」

Minaho-neesan said.

「For example...the suit you're wearing right now. Why do you think it's a luxury item?」

「Well...Margo-san said that the cloth of the fabric is vintage」

If I recall...that's what she told me.

「Then, why do you think that fabric is vintage?」

Well...that is.

「Today...there's no machine remaining that weave that fabric」

Margo-san told me.

「There's a much more rational loom now. That cloth takes time and effort to weave.」

I-Is that so?

「When you think you want to know the value of things...you first need to imagine how much work it would take. Top-class craftsmen's creation with time and effort are absolutely expensive.」

I-I see.

「Next...feel whether the work contains ideas that only geniuses and skilled craftsmen can come up with. It's called『flash』」

...Un

「In the end, you have to put emphasis on the time and effort taken. Pay flash to the inspiration afterwards...」

Minaho-neesan said.

「...Why?」

「The flash and novel ideas stand out but...it doesn't match the time and effort taken. Trying different ideas after a hundred of times...it removes failures and accumulate experience」

「That's what's boring with the modern art you see. They just come up with a new idea, then splash their paint then announce their work...the weight of it being developed over time can't be felt!」

I don't get the meaning of Nei-san's opinion.

「For example...this ball-pen here」

Minaho-neesan took out a pen.

「This thing...it took dozens of blueprints to make it」

...blueprint

「How many mm should be the length...what kind of mixture of ink should be put in. A lot of blueprints are drawn, a lot of prototypes have been made to just put ball-pen into the world」

I-I see.

Making things isn't that easy.

「Then they make it into a product and sell it...the buyers will see the beauty as the ease of use and select it again. The unaccepted ones will be weeded out. Then they'll take the data of the remaining designs and use it for the next product」

「...Un」

「That takes time and a lot of people refine it. Don't you think it's wonderful that things are made like that?」

Minaho-neesan smiles.

「Imagine every time you see things. How much time and effort taken to

create a single thing」

I look around.

The theater building...the sofa in the lobby. The lighting in the ceiling. Carpet.  
The reception desk. Chair.

It's things everyone spent time thinking.

Thinking about it...human world is amazing.

「All of the things in this world are created by everyone that way. First, the accumulation of man's effort and time should be felt. Even artists...they take many years to acquire basic skills, then they take over their master and seniors' guide with trial and error」

「Well, in the era where everyone you can easily debut without being someone's disciple...even if you don't take time to train, the environment lets you create work-like things」

Minaho-neesan and Margo-san look at each other.

「True...the young ones only have the『flash』 Without the backing of skills and experience, the『flash』alone won't become a work...」

「Doing only that and in the end, unable to earn experience, there are artists who became old-men」

Nei-san speaks as if venting out.

「There's no need to be that angry. Those kind of artists disappear」

「They don't! Aren't they being arrogant?!」

「Well...the art industry is a small world. Especially in Japan. Well, there are people who have reason in irregularity and boast around」

「That's what grinds my gears!」

「But...I think that artists who doesn't have that kind of content will keep their status until they die. They'll disappear in art's history without leaving any traces. During 19th century, the academy painters who were just stupid impressionists are completely forgotten now」

「Well...you're right but!」

Minaho-neesan breaks the conversation of the two.

「Nei...keep the criticisms on the modern art at that level. Yoshida-kun would be troubled」

「Ah, sorry, it's an uninteresting story for Yo-chan right?」

Un...I don't get Art that much

Or rather, why is everyone so knowledgeable?

「Let's go back to our topic. Yoshida-kun, it's about time for the opening. Then, there will be a lot of people with a family standing of『first class noble』coming」

「...Yes」

「It's a good opportunity so observe it. Then, compare their『dignity』」

Earlier, Minaho-neesan said that there are『elegant』and『vulgar』people even among the top-class families.

What's the difference?...I have to think on practice.

「It's not just Yoshida-kun, you too」

Minaho-neesan is talking not only to me...but also to the『younger generation』who's been staring until now.

「Got it」

「...Un, I'll try」

「Certainly」

Megu, Mana, Michi answers...

「Hmm, you really like teaching people something. Is this why you became a teacher...?!」

Yukino criticizes Minaho-neesan.

Minaho-neesan's face turned dark.

She glares at Yukino...

「It's not. Minaho's personality isn't suited to become a school teacher」

Margo-san laughs.

「Right...Sensei doesn't teach children she doesn't like」

Nei-san looks at Minaho-neesan meanly.

「She likes to educate the children she likes very much though...!」

True...Minaho-neesan's not the type that teaches everyone in the class



equally.

「She's not a school teacher but a tutor. She's much more suited to be a governess Margo-san said.

「What's governess?」

「It's a private tutor live in teaching elementary education to the noble children in old Britain」

Oh, Minaho-neesan fits that one more

「You two, remember this...!」

Minaho-neesan seems to be a bit angry.

「...What's wrong?」

Katsuko-nee comes back with a cup of coffee

「Here, your share」

I receive the cup.

「Minaho-neesan said that it's going to open soon, so she told us to observe the visitors and discover the difference in『dignity』」

I explained.

「Right...It'll be the time of hardship for Ojou-sama and me」

...Right

Today's audience...there will be former customers of『Kuromori』as well.

The famous people who look forward to watching their daughters and granddaughters dancing...they don't think that they would be meeting women from brothel here.

Will they be ignored...they might even go to the security to report.

「Should I go to the third floor seats?」

Katsuko-nee speaks timidly.

「Today's『Symposium』is a all free seat...since no guests would come on full house, I don't think anyone would come to the third floor」

It's the dance『presentation』of the children from the Konpeki school.

Only relatives and friends would be coming to see...

Today's performers also has daughters of celebrities like Kanako-san...Kouzuki security service guards would check and chase away the media at the gate  
「Katsuko...be dignified」

Minaho-neesan said.

「You have retired from being a prostitute haven't you?」

「...Yes」

「Do you intend to be dragged down by your past and live looking down?」

「I don't feel that way」

「Then, be calm. If you're not a prostitute then you're just an ordinary woman, aren't you?」

Hearing that...Katsuko-nee.

「I'm very sorry Ojou-sama. Katsuko has been mistaken」

She bows to Minaho-neesan.

「As long as you understand...!」

Minaho-neesan intends to close the『Kuromori』brothel.

Therefore...she's trying to stand in public calmly.

This theater lobby is a battlefield for the two.

「Mana-chan, stay with Megu-chan and Me!」

Nei-san told the uneasy Mana.

「It's fine...Mana-chan and Megu-chan looks fashionable. When you two line up, you look like sisters」

「Un...with me as『guard』Nei as『retainer』, Michi looks like your friend」

Margo-san said.

True, Margo-san and Nei-san...they both look like servants, wearing black suits. Michi's wearing the same super-oujou-sama school uniform, her identity is guaranteed.

「Now then, should we attach one more item to Kuroko-chan!」

Saying that...Nei-san took out a black thing from the bag.

It's an Alice band.

It's a headband with two round black discs tied to it.

Is this the one they sell on the amusement park in the mouse country.

「Here you go, Kuroko-chan, wear this!」

...Err

With her hair braided in the middle, ugly makeup and dark glasses.

Black and yellow stripe dress.

And when you add a mouse ear headband.

Yup...it's perfect.

Yukino's completely an『out of place』girl

It's『out of place』or rather『mistaken』...

From which world are you from?

「What do you think? My identity won't be found out right?」

Yukino asks me.

Yukino's not good with anyone from『Kuromori』so she can only talk to me.

Even if she talks with her sister, she knows that she'll only respond harshly.

「Un...Well, nobody would think you're Yukino」

I answered honestly.

「Then fine...who cares about my outfit」

Yukino said with a negligent feeling.

「You see, I also have glasses with mustache growing on it」

Nei-san took out the『Nose mustache glasses』

「I don't want that...I'm not from a variety show!」

Yukino got angry.

No...you already are.

If you're not, then what are you?

Hmmm.

「We will be opening soon! Performers, return to the dressing room!」

The woman at konpeki style reception shouts.

「Okay, return immediately! The guests are waiting outside!」

There are guests already in front of the theater...  
The children doing their last practice in the lobby returned to the dressing room in a hurry.  
The『retainers』and『escort』of those too...  
Those holding the children's clothes or have tools used in practice, have left the lobby.  
Man in black suit appears from the stage.

「The theater is clear. The curtain's dropping down」  
A woman runs from the dressing room.  
「The performers have all entered backstage!」  
The chief receptionist declares.  
「Then...let's open!」  
The theater's front door opens...!  
Soon, about thirty people enters.

「Welcome!」  
The people at the reception must be apprentices of Konpeki school too.  
They greeted the guests with a loud voice in unison.

「Welcome! Please show your tickets!」  
A spectator who's holding a bouquet...  
A lady in gorgeous Kimono coming to visit the dance.  
There are girls with the same uniform as Misuzu and Michi too.  
The lobby turned colorful in a dash.  
...then.

「...Dear!」  
「...Yoshida-kuun!」

At the reception...there's two people waving their hands at us...!  
A beauty with a soft and gentle smile.  
And an angel-like cute girl.  
This two...  
Are Nagisa-san and Mao-chan...!!!

「...Just wait for a moment!」

「...A moment!!!」

When the two were done at the reception...

They ran towards me with light footsteps.

Nagisa hugs me...

Mao-chan clings to my feet...!

「Ehehe...I came!」

「Mao also came!」

The mother and daughter smiled at me.

...Err

「...Were you okay?」

I wasn't able to make contact with them since yesterday 「Yeah...for now」

Nagisa said.

「For today, the shop is closed. The children were sent home as well」

「Un! then, Mao and Mama came to Yoshida-kun!」

Does that mean?

「When it comes to this...it's safer if we're all together, don't you think?」

「It's safe!」

Nagisa and Mao-chan smiled.

「If they're not with me...the bad people won't be dragging the girls in the shop...」

True...Cesario Viola's power is limited.

They can take Nagisa and Mao-chan as hostage to control our movement but...

We're all now gathered here.

Furthermore, they don't have the room to target Nagisa's children at shop.

Instead of distributing their strength, they'd rather go attack us all at once.

「You see, Minaho-san has been sensing footage all this time」

Nagisa said.

「Therefore...I know everything. Even the sex at school」

No way...Yukino's school broadcast rape?

「...Ufufu! I know~!」

Mao-chan laughs.

...Eeeh?!

「Rape me later too...!」

Nagisa speaks cutely to me.

「Let's take video too! Un, that's great!」

「That's great!」

Err...

This high-tension mother-daughter...

But, I'm relieved that Nagisa and Mao joined us...

I feel relieved.

「By the way...who's this female entertainer?」

Nagisa looks at Yukino.

「Kyahahaha, so funny!」

Mao-chan laughs.

「I'm not an entertainer! I'm Kishima Kuroko!」

Yukino shouts angrily...!

「Kuroko-chan! Kuroko-chan! Kuroko-chan! So funny!」

She completely became Mao-chan's toy...

---

## 230. Nagisa's associates *etc.*

---

「Megumi-chan, Mana-chan...it's been a while...Mao-chan, greet them」

Hearing her mother, the three year old Mao-chan bows her head.

「Hello...I'm Mao!」

W-What a cute creature

「Hello, Mao-chan」

Megu greets her.

Then, Mana...

「We've met each other before but it's first time for Mana, right?>」

Megu smiles at Mana-chan.

「Un...Hello, Mao-chan. I'm Mana!」

Mana bends her waist and greets Mao-chan with a matching line of sight.

「Onee-san is Mana-san? I'm Mao!」

「Right...we only have a slight difference!」

She smiled at Nagisa's daughter.

「Mao and Mana...Manamao?」

Mao laughs.

「...Also, it's also your first time」

Nagisa looks at Michi.

「I'm aware of your face and name」

Kudou papa never neglects thorough investigation.

Nagisa's file must be in there too.

「I'm Kudou Michi. In this occasion...I'm in the lowest seat as Master's

servant」

Michi bows her head.

「My, is that so...?」

Nagisa looks at me.

「Un. Michi's Misuzu's guard but...she decided to turn Misuzu and me her master Somehow...this is hard to explain for some reason.

「Well fine. It's more fun to have more『little sisters』...there's no problem as long as you accept them. Welcome to『Sister's association』...!」

Right...Nagisa's also a member of『Sister's association』

「Hello, I'm Mao!」

Mao-chan greets Michi with a smiling face.

「I'm Michi...my best regards」

This warrior lady lowers her head politely to the little girl.

「Master...this child too will be master's...?」

Hey...Michi

Mao-chan's still three years old.

「That's the intention. I intend to have him give his love when she's around 10 years old...!」

Wait...Nagisa!?

「Therefore...Michi-chan...help out with Mao's education too!」

「...Certainly」

No no...if you let Michi give her education...

Mao-chan would join the combat faction...

「By the way, Minaho-san」

Nagisa speaks.

「You can't stay in the corner...!」

Nagisa smiles calmly.



「...What do you mean?」

「There are a lot of old guests in this venue right now. We have to greet everyone...」

Uhm...Nagisa.

True, we know that『Kuromori』guests are coming but...

Everyone's going to a place with their wife and family...they would hate to see someone from a brothel...

Therefore, we're stuck in the corner of the lobby.

「At such times...I think that we must treasure the relationship with people」

Nagisa said in a warm tone.

「Mao and I will be greeting them first...Minaho-san and Katsuko, come when I call you okay...!」

「...Nagisa?」

Leaving behind the surprised Minaho-neesan, Nagisa and Mao-chan...

「Let's go! Mao!」

「Okaay, Mama!」

「The old men in the suit coming from the entrance...let's start with that one!」

「...Un! Lock On!」

Then...the beautiful Mama and the Angelic daughter attacks!

「...My, Yamashiro-san, it's been a while!」

Nagisa speaks gently, softly.

「...Y-You?!」

The old woman looking like the wife and the secretary shows up a surprised expression.

「It's Katagai, excuse my long silence...this girl is my daughter...Mao, greet them...!」

「Hello! I'm Katagai Mao! Three years old! Nihihhi!」

Mao-chan smiles.

「...Who are you?」

The wife looks at Nagisa with a suspicious face.  
Nagisa-san smiles nonchalantly...

「I was a a secretary of Kuromori enterprise before...when I was a company employee, I've been indebt with president Yamashiro. I've retired after this child was born so I've been completely busy being a parent...it's been what, 3? Four years since we've last seen each other! So Nostalgic!」

Nagisa's pushes her high-tension...!

「U-Un...well, that's how it is」

The old man agrees with her story for the time being.

「You seem to be healthy. You're going to watch your grandchild, Yasue-san today...?」

It's been years since her prostitute age.

Nagisa seems to have memorized her customer's information.

「That's right...but why are you here?」

The old man is still puzzled...

It feels strange when a retired prostitute appears at today's celebrity children dance presentation.

「I've been invited by Kouzuki Misuzu-san...!」

Nagisa shows her card.

「...Kouzuki-san?」

「Yes. I am Misuzu-san's flower arrangement teacher」

Nagisa purposely speaks on loud voice...

Nagisa and Mao-chan are already attracting attention of the people around them.

Especially...some restless men who have visited『Kuromori』before.

「I've become independent after my retirement so I'm now running a flower shop. Kouzuki-san has been really helpful establishing the company」

She appeals strongly with her relationship with Kouzuki『Kakka』  
Then...the suspicion of the wife on her husband disappears.

Perhaps, she has recognized that Nagisa is one of Kouzuki『Kakka's』mistress. Under that impression...she believes that she's not related to her husband. She won't imagine that Nagisa was a prostitute...

「My...you are acquainted with Kouzuki-san?」

The wife's attitude changed immediately.

「You...I'll just have a talk with this person about Kouzuki-san」

The old man tells his wife

「Understood...I'll head to my seat first. Excuse me」

The old woman heads to the theater along with the secretary...

「Really...what a courageous girl」

Katsuko-nee mutters as she look at Nagisa.

「You do know that Nagisa and I were abducted by Shirasaka Sousuke during our first year in high school, don't you?」

「...Un」

That is Nagisa and Katsuko-nee's dark past./

「I'm a weak human so...if I wasn't with Nagisa who's mentally strong, I think I might've gotten mad. That girl's brightness and courage always saves me」

...Katsuko-nee.

「I'm no match against Nagisa. I've always thought of it...I want to be someone like Nagisa」

Katsuko-nee smiles sadly.

「That girl...her calmness and kindness, she quickly became the breadwinner among the『women』of the mansion. That girl is a woman truly loved by everyone」

Nagisa put the old man aside and called the surrounding men.

「It's been a while, Umemiya-sama!」

「Hello, I'm Mao!」

「My, Yasuoka-sensei! It's me, Nagisa!」

「Nice to meet you! I'm Mao!」

The beautiful Mama and toddler...

The elderly men gather together even more.

Nagisa's graceful smile without any evil...

Mao-chan's innocent smile...

The old guests were drawn by them...

「Even though her work period is only a year」

Katsuko-nee said.

「And yet...those famous people come to her side」

...Un

To be honest, I think it's amazing.

When I noticed, Nagisa's being surrounded by more than 15 elderly gentlemen.

Gathering this many...nobody would think that Nagisa's a former prostitute.

In such a place, a pair of mother and daughter are surrounded by celebrities.

It feels like she's a powerful woman coming from a famous family somewhere.

「After that girl was banished by Shirasaka Sousuke...I did all my best to be a substitute for Nagisa...But it was no good. She's the top earner of the mansion but she wasn't able to become a woman loved by everyone like Nagisa」

...Katsuko-nee.

「You no longer need to, Katsuko-nee...!」

I said.

「Katsuko-nee and Nagisa already have me. You don't need other men anymore...!」

「...Right」

Katsuko-nee smiles at me.

「...Just you staying with me will be enough. You do love us from the bottom of your heart...!」

「I also love Katsuko-nee and Nagisa. I love you both the same...!」

「Thank you...dear」

At that time...Nagisa turned this way.

「Minaho-san, Katsuko! Come here! Hurry up and greet everyone!」

At this stage...Nagisa calls Minaho-neesan.

「...Nagisa's got us」

Minaho-neesan mutters.

「Ojou-sama...let's go」

「Right...we can't just turn Nagisa's goodwill to waste」

Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee heads to the group surrounding Nagisa.  
As guard, Margo-san follows behind.

「Yo-chan...come here」

Nei-san calls me

「Here you go」

She gives me an earphone.

「Maru-chan's hiding a microphone in her...!」

Nei-san puts earphones on herself too .

I also put in the earphones in a hurry.

We eavesdrop the conversation of the group surrounding Nagisa.

『...It's been a while. Everyone』

This is Minaho-neesan's voice.

『...Is it okay for you to be here?』

A man's voice.

『Your organization is in a lot of trouble right now I think...』

Last night...the scandal of Shirasaka Sousuke is being heavily reported.

『Shirasaka Sousuke, was once a member of our organization but it's different now. We have banished Shirasaka Sousuke』

『...Unbeleivable』

『Umu. Wasn't he the representative of your organization?』

『No, Shirasaka Sousuke was only one of the co-operators...he's not the representative』

『But...for us, you and Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke are people of the same organization...』

The guests knows the relationship of Shirasaka Sousuke and『Kuromori』  
They can't be deceived easily.

『Then...why do you think our existence hasn't been revealed yet among the scandals of Shirasaka Sousuke reported?』

Minaho-neesan asks.

...That's right.

The crime Shirasaka Sousuke has committed have flowed to the internet and press one after another.

But...The organization『Kuromori』isn't exposed.

『Could this be Mr. Kouzuki's will?』

One of the gentlemen asks.

『Yes...as you know, our organization has stopped operating since last autumn.  
After that, we have entrusted the whole organization to Mr. Kouzuki』

『With that said...Mr. Shirasaka Sousuke's scandal now...?』

『Kouzuki-sama's aim is not Shirasaka Sousuke himself, but the parent house?』

Minaho-neesan bluffs.

『...Shirasaka house?』

『It means he's aiming at Shirasaka newspaper and TV station?』

The men's surprised.

『Even if the head of Shirasaka house...Shirasaka Moritsugu loses his influence in the world, I think it'll be convenient for Kouzuki-sama』

Minaho-neesan speaks to the gentlemen in one breath.

『He intends to crush Shirasaka Moritsugu?...』

『True, Mr. Moritsugu isn't on a friendly relationship with Kouzuki-san...』

『No, isn't he trying to get the newspaper and TV companies again?』

『Actually, with the blunder at yesterday's press conference...I heard that unifying power of Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu is decreasing』

『The Anti-Mr. Moritsugu group is planning a coup d'état』

『Either way, the newspaper company would be in bad condition』

The gentlemen speaks to each other.

As expected, most of them are business owners.

『Anyway...this is all related to Kouzuki-san?』

One of the men strongly asks Minaho-neesan

『Of course. Young women like Katsuko and myself can't think of such outrageous things, we don't have the power to carry it out either』

Minaho-neesan calmly spouts a big lie...

『Uhm...this is what I've heard』

One man speaks up.

『Shirasaka Sousuke...is trying to sell the customer list of your organization to a crime syndicate...thus, he was punished by Kouzuki-sama』

『...That is the truth』

Minaho-neesan speaks clearly.

『Shirasaka Sousuke, tried to sell everyone's name and other materials to the people on the underground society. Therefore...the organization sought Kouzuki-san's power and disposed of it. Kouzuki-sama's instructions is to thoroughly erase him from the society』

Minaho-neesan seems to be creating an image that『Kuromori』is a group of weak girls.

All of it were done with Kouzuki『Kakka's』power...she's thinking of hiding the power under the shadow of Kouzuki house.

『Wait...so where's the list of names and data』

『In the end, it hasn't fallen to Shirasaka Sousuke's hands, so please be relieved. We do keep the documents in the organization. All related materials that have been hidden by Shirasaka Sousuke has been burned together with the house yesterday』

『Then...last night's news, Shirasaka Sousuke's retreat burned down last night...?』

『Yes...Kouzuki-sama's force are behind it 』

...Well said.

Minaho-neesan, weren't you in the site and put fire on the documents?

『Then...we do not need to worry, do we?』

『Yes, there are currently no problems. Among the leaked information in the media, there won't be anything related to us nor the gusts, it's Kouzuki-sama's power』

Minaho-neesan's voice makes the men feel relieved.

『It's really okay, isn't it?』

『In that regard...Shirasaka house, especially Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu can't be said to be in good health. There's an analogy of the cornered mouse bites...we don't know what kind of thing a cornered person would do』

Minaho-neesan purposely fuels them.

『Understood...Though I was in the neutral faction, I'll stick with Kouzuki-san』

『Umu... we can't be at ease as long as we haven't taken the newspapers and television from Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu 』

『I will move as well. I have a decent stock on that newspaper company』

『If you have stocks with them, please dispose of them immediately...their prices would be falling down from now on』

『When the price falls...Kouzuki-san will be buying it』

『I see, then it's better to keep it for now』

『Pinching salt would cause your fall』

『Umu, it's Kouzuki-san so apart from television, he might intend to crush the newspaper company』

『Yes, his opinion is to reduce the number of Japanese newspaper companies』

The gentlemen's conversation turned lively.

For the time being...the doubts on『Kuromori』has disappeared.

『By the way...Kuromori-kun』

One of the gentlemen changes his tone and speaks.

『When will you resume your place?』

...Eh?



『People with social status like us...needs a place to keep secrets and play like yours. From what you talked about, you have used Kouzuki-san's power to protect our personal information from Shirasaka Sousuke's recklessness. We appreciate it』

『Yes...Shirasaka has always been a man you can't trust since before but...I do trust Kuromori-kun』

『You're just like your grandfather...that old man doesn't spare any sacrifice just for the trust』

Minaho-neesan's grandfather...Kuromori Kounosuke.  
The owner of the suit I'm borrowing now.  
I'm also borrowing his name too.

『I'm very sorry but...for now, it's unknown...』

Minaho-neesan speaks.

『I see, then it's up for Kouzuki-san to think too』

『Then, let's talk to Kouzuki-san』

『I will talk too』

『Then, should we sign a plea to everyone?』

『Sure. Kouzuki-san likes that』

『Either way, the rude man named Shirasaka Sousuke is now gone. With this, we can regain the place to relax like old days confidently』

...I see.

The elder gentlemen who have called out Nagisa...

These people are the guests of the old『Kuromori tower』era

And perhaps...they're the most important guests of『Kuromori』...

『In that case...I'd like to have Katsuko-kun accompany me again』

One of the old men said with a smile.

『Un...I'd would like to ask of it too』

『Me too』

Then...Katsuko-nee.

『I'm very sorry. Katsuko has already retired』

『...Why?』

Katsuko-nee looked at everyone.

『I would like to say that everyone in here is a really great guest but...Nagisa and I were kidnapped by Shirasaka Sousuke...turned to prostitutes』

The gentlemen fell silent.

『We were forcibly separated from our family...unable to go to school, subjected to violence and intimidation, raped multiple times...turned to prostitute.』

『...I never knew』

『Oh, we surely thought that you were prostitutes by will...』

Minaho-neesan speaks.

『That was the the operation when grandfather managed. Bringing beautiful ladies from parents with debt from the rural areas...after confirming that they're willing, they come out of the mansion. However...when Shirasaka Sousuke was involved in the management...everything turned to a mess...and the prostitutes weren't even paid properly』

『Then that makes them slaves...!』

『Yes...you do know that I was a prostitutes before, don't you?』

Minaho-neesan asks, several of the gentlement...

『I do know』

『Un, me too』

『I, in those days...your organization was in silence』

That's right.

There are a lot of people who hated the brothel turned to a mess when Shirasaka entered management.

After Minaho-neesan turned to an operator, they tried to call back the former guests but they never came back again.

『I'm also one of those kidnapped people. Yuuka-neesan protested to Kouzuki-sama about Shirasaka's villainy...I joined as an operator and Kouzuki-sama's auditor also came. Then, it has improved a lot...』

Kouzuki『Kakka's』auditor...Kyouko Dothnomechey-san.

『I...if it wasn't for Ojou-sama and Nagisa, I would've gotten crazy I think...!』

Katsuko-nee mutters.

『I'm the one who should say that...If Katsuko wasn't with me, I would've committed suicide!』

Nagisa shouts.

『I'm very timid...so I always go frivolous and smile forcibly right? But, Katsuko's strong...Katsuko is substantially stiff, I was able to endure it without despairing...!』

『What are you saying! Nagisa's way stronger! I was just getting cold feet... tremble in fear. Nagisa's always been smiling no matter how cruel they were with you...you took initiative protecting me...therefore...!!』

『I'm not that strong! It's all thanks to Katsuko!』

『It's not! If it wasn't for Nagisa, I would've been dead!』

That's when Mao-chan cuts in.

『Don't fight! Uuuuu!!』

Mao-chan scholded the two.

『...Mao』

『Mao-chan』

『...Mama and Katsuko-chan, get along...! Embrace! You two!』

Nagisa and Katsuko looked at each other.

『...Un, Katsuko.』

『...Yes, Nagisa』

The two embraced each other...

『...We hugged like this back then, didn't we?』

『Yes...we endured the frightening nights like this』

Mao-chan smiles.

『...With this, it's case closed! Nihihhi!』

One gentleman looks at Mao-chan.

『Nagisa-kun...this girl's father』

『Yes... it's unknown』

『You don't intend to investigate?』

『Yes...I didn't do DNA tests or any other methods』

『Why?』

『I think that the man who thinks that he wants to be this girl's father from the bottom of his heart then he'll be the『father』 The biological father is insignificant...』

Shirasaka Sousuke let Nagisa give birth to a child whose father is unknown. Even if the men who raped Nagisa were checked...there's no meaning. The man who took part in Shirasaka's bizarre plan raping Nagisa can't be a decent man...

『Understood...if anything happens to Nagisa-kun and Katsuko-kun...you can consult me. I won't do anything ill』

『No, I won't let only Tatsunami-san show a good face. I will help as much as possible too』

『I will cooperate too. If it's something I can do, you can ask me anything』

『Me too...as long as my wife doesn't find out...』

The gentlemen laughed.

『True...it's bad if your family discovers』

『But, we won't hold back helping out if it's something honest』

『Kuromori-san, the same is for you too』

『Yes...we are quite indebt with that mansion...!』

I discover Nagisa's amazingness again.

Nagisa chose the people with decent sense from among her guests.

The people who will help her and『Kuromori』in the future...!

We've gained strong『allies』again...

---

## 231. Value of clothes

---

「...Onii-chan, do you have a moment?」

Mana taps my shoulders as I listen along with Nei-san on the tapped microphone.

「Hm...what's wrong?」

When I turned to her...

「Megu-oneechan looks strange...」

...Whut?

Looking at Megu in panic, she looks like she's depressed.

Sitting on the sofa, she curls her head...

「Nei-san...excuse me」

I returned the earphone to Nei-san and go to Megu...

「What's wrong, Megu?」

I squat down and match our eyes.

Holding her head...it's horribly cold.

...Megu's nervous?

「Sorry...I've gotten scared」

Megu forces herself to smile with her gloomy face.

「...Is it Cesario Viola?」

Is she afraid that white Viola has sneaked into the theater?

「That's not it...it's the current situation」

Megu looked around the lobby

The spectators for tonight comes from the entrance.

It's not all old men like the ones Minaho-neesan and others are talking to right

now.

Of course...there are a lot of young girls who are friends with the performers.  
Their mothers, and grandmothers too...

「Is it okay for me to be here?」

...Megu

The majority of the people in the lobby are families of rich celebrities.

The rest are『guards』or『attendants』

Konpeki school secretariat and security guards of Kouzuki security service...

Then...there's us.

Thinking about it...Megu and I are the only ones who have lived a poor life.

Yukino and Mana were from Shirasaa family...

「Somehow...I suddenly got scared」

Hearing Megu...I once again looked at the hall.

Un...I'm also messed up, someone out of place.

It's strange for me to be in a world of rich.

This is a world unrelated to me.

Noticing that...I suddenly feel shivery.

「...Even though I had Yoshi-kun buy a cute dress for me...but I can't wear it beautifully like other girls, right?」

Megu looks at me with teary eyes.

...Right.

Megu's been unable to get dressed even at the Shirasaka family gatherings.

She's always been on her school uniform...driven at the corner of the room.

She's discriminated as the daughter of Yamamine house.

Megu has a deep-rooted inferiority complex in respect to『fine clothes』

「I'm not that cute. Wearing a dress doesn't suit me either...!」

...Seriously.

...You really are...

「Stop that, Megu. It's the dress we picked...!」

I tell Megu with a strong tone.

I'm also a bit nervous.

「It suits you. Isn't that obvious that it suits you!」

I embrace Megu tightly...!

「Yoshi-kun...this is embarrassing」

「Don't be...we love each other」

Megu's stiffness is being softened in my arms.

The girl's body softens, loosens.

As if she's melting from my body temperature...

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu embraces me too.

「...Did you calm down?」

「...Un」

I let go of her...

I look straight at Megu.

「I think that Megu's cute. I think you're beautiful. That's why, it's fine. It's okay for Megu to be here」

「...But」

「It'll be fine. If someone complains to Megu, I'll beat them up. If you want, I'll shout at everyone coming from the door. I'll shout『My Megu is cute』!」

Megu's eyes turned moist.

「...That dress. I can tell the reason why Minaho-neesan asks us to buy it. That's a reward given by Minaho-neesan to me who worked with my body. It's a dress I bought from my pay」

「...Un」

「The girls here right now might be wearing a much more expensive dress but that doesn't matter」

...I

「If Megu wears a luxurious dress now...I think perhaps, Minaho-neesan can easily prepare such a high-class dress for Megu」

And yet...She purposely made Megu and I buy a dress.

With the set amount of money provided...

「But...what would Megu think if she wears a high-class dressed that's just borrowed?」

「...Perhaps, I would be more embarrassed. I don't think I'm suited to wear a dress having a price I can't reach」

Megu answers.

「What do you think about the dress you're wearing now?」

When I asked her...Megu touches her own dress.

「I think that even this is too expensive for a girl like me. Really. But, this is the dress Yoshi-kun bought for me」

「That's right...it's the dress we both picked. You know the price don't you?」

「Un...I do. This dress is the most suitable『clothing』for me now」

「...That's right. That's why, puff out with pride and be dignified...Megu」

I hold Megu's hand.

「For me...for Megu herself. Minaho-neesan has thought a lot for Megu...!」

I kiss the back of Megu's hand.

「Thank you...Yoshi-kun」

I look at my suit.

「Even I just borrowed this clothes. I'm glad that it's borrowed. It's not mine. This is Minaho-neesan's grandfather's suit...then, Katsuko-nee adjusted the size, filling it with love. I'm really glad wearing such clothes」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

I wasn't given new quality goods.

No, if I'm told to buy a high-class suit...I would perhaps reject it.

Therefore...

Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee...planned to borrow the late Kuromori Kounosuke-san's clothes.

They thought that I would accept it if it's borrowed from the dead.

Furthermore, Katsuko-nee changed the size to fit me in secret.

If they didn't go that far...I might've gone to the theater on my usual student clothes.



「For now...I can only borrow clothes. That is my reality. Therefore...I accept that reality. Upon acceptance, I live dignified among the upper-class people...!」

Megu's wearing cheap dress...

I'm wearing a borrowed suit...

That is our reality.

Let's accept that.

Then...let's face the world of high-class aware of your own unbecoming.

「There's nothing to be afraid of...we're wearing clothes we deserve right now

「Un...you're right

Megu said...

「I grew up from a poor house. This is my first time wearing fine clothing... This is the dress Yoshi-kun bought for me. Right now, this is the only suitable dress  
Megu dearly slides her fingers on the fabric of the dress.

「I'm here right now...no. No matter how embarrassed I am, I am here, confidently. This is the best suited『fine clothes』for me now」

「That's right...Megu」

I'm thankful for Minaho-neesan's deep thought.

I thank Katsuko-nee's affection.

...This is fine.

...This should do.

Mana shows up smiling.

「Megu-oneechan's the only one Onii-chan bought a dress for...I'm jelly You even have a ring?」

Megu's finger has our engagement ring shining.

「I'll buy Mana some too...」

I promise.

「Eh...really?」

「Or rather...I've got to work hard to earn money. I'll be the one to shoulder out living expenses」

It's not on the same level as a dress or a ring.

Even socks and underwear...I have to buy those in the future.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana seems to have remembered it too.

She can no longer go back to Shirasaka house. She can no longer go to school.

Mana has no choice but to live with me.

That『reality』reappears to Mana's head again.

「Yoshi-kun, I'll also work part-time...so you only have to think about Mana」

Megu said but...

I'd like Megu to do her best in her club activities.

「Mana will also work part-time」

Mana's downhearted.

「Middle school girls can't get a job. For the time being, help out Katsuko-nee」

「...Un」

I spread my arms and embrace them.

「There's no need to worry that much. Let's think about the details once this commotion settles down. We have to consult Minaho-neesan about this too」

「You're right...Yoshi-kun」

「Got it...Onii-chan」

They replied.

「Therefore...forget about everything that makes you anxious and let's cheer for Misuzu. Misuzu's an Onee-san among『Sister's association』isn't she?」

Mana...

「Un! Mana will cheer hard!」

...Then

「...My?!」

A girl's voice can be heard from my back.

「...No way?」

「What's wrong, Sugawara-san?」

「No...isn't that Shirasaka Maika on that sofa over there?」

Mana.

「...Uu!」

Her complexion changed

「...Do you know them?」

I asked her whisperingly...

「They're Sugawara and Taki-san from the same class」

Mana is also a student of an Ojou-sama school.

There's a high possibility of her coming across with her classmates in this place.

We did imagine that situation but...

When you're in there...you don't know how to respond.

「No way...there's no way Maika-san would come」

「You're right...there's no way she would come to public like that after what happened to her father」

That is the perception of the people.

After all, the mass media exposed the scandals of Shirasaka Sousuke last night.

A crime of a famous family known as Shirasaka.

A sex scandal that involved the show business world.

Furthermore, kidnaping, rape, murder...

The sensational topic isn't lacking.

Mana is the daughter of the criminal, Shirasaka Sousuke...

「The people from Shirasaka house doesn't seem to be here today」

「Eh, Takako-san too?」

「Yes...isn't it embarrassing to be on the same family as Shirasaka?」

「Well, that might be the case」

「If Moritsugu-sama hasn't spoken in the press conference to protect Shirasaka Sousuke...wait, Takako-san was crying over the phone」

「She was looking forward to the symposium today」

Mana...

「Takako-san...sorry」

「...A relative?」

「A younger cousin. She's also doing Japanese dance. She's on a different school but...she was looking forward to watch today...」

Mana feels depressed.

「But still...doesn't that girl look like Maika-san?」

「Un, they do look alike but...」

「What?」

「Shirasaka Maika-san won't be coming in such clothes I think」

Mana's dress today is prepared by Katsuko-nee, it shows a lot of skin.  
Her make-up and hair style are both flashy.

You won't think it's vulgar but...

Katsuko-nee likes to go sexy route.

「You're right, after her father causing such a incident...she won't wear something stupid like that」

「She's someone else. The people next to her are wearing cheap dresses too. People from Shirasaka house would wear much more expensive clothes」

Hey hey...this time, they begin to criticize Megu's dress.  
But, the two rich ladies are really loud.

「From which house are they from?」

「Somehow...they feel like『commoner who forced themselves to come』」

「Aren't most of the dancers commoners?」

「You're right. They must be people who came by mistake because they had invitation tickets by chance」

「Today's symposium isn't that kind of party isn't it?」

Mana's classmates escalates further.  
Mana's face is pale, grabbing her knees with great effort  
...Then

「...Mana, get yourself together!」

Did she lost her cool from the young girl's impudent words? Megu speaks out loud.

「Even you are a daughter of Kuromori.」 Now, apologize to Onii-sama...」

I don't know why Mana has to apologize to me but...  
Anyway, Megu asks for such a plan from us.

「I'm sorry Onii-chan!...Mana's a bad girl!」

Mana apologizes to me in a loud voice.

「U-Un...as long as you understand. Apology accepted」

I have to say something that matches.

「Megu-oneechan too, I'm sorry!」

「Very well. You're also a member of the traditional Kuromori family. You should show a dignified attitude as the daughter of the Kuromori house at any time! Do you get it?」

「...Yes!」

Seeing our little act...the girls.

「...Look, it's different after all」

「She's not Shirasaka Maika-san」

「That's right, they did say Kuromori...」

「Speaking of which...Maika-san did have an older sister instead of a brother, right?」

「Her sister is different from that one too...I've seen her before」

「Eh, when?」

「During some party of some sort. It was on Metro Hotel」

「Then, it's really not her...!」

Were they convinced? The girls got away from us.  
...\*Sigh\*

「...Onii-chan, Oneechan」

Mana clings to us

「Let's stay as three together...if we're together, nobody would find us out」

If there's someone who thinks that it's strange and approached us, the three of us can just play a skit again.

「I was wrong」

Megu said.

「There's no time to be depressed... You have to prepare to fight and sharpen your senses, or else you will be beaten down」

「You're right, Megu-oneechan...this is our battlefield」

「Therefore...Mana, be confident. Be calm」

「Un...I've got to smile. Mana will fight!」

When alone...you'll only be swallowed by the place like Megu earlier.

Therefore, we stick together and fight.

Fair and square, so we won't lose to this celebrity space.

「You guys are really serious to the root」

Nei-san laughs.

「Nei-san...are you okay with this atmosphere?」

I ask her...

「Un, I'm fine! After all, I'm always out of place! I'm used to it...!」

Well...

She's a legendary delinquent girl known in the whole school...

She's not attending classes too...

「I'm fine with it too」

Michi said.

「『Kudou Style's』essence is to turn over other's qi after all...」

...No

「Michi...you should match with other's mind sometimes too」

I said.

「It's normal to match with the surrounding atmosphere. Purposely removing it makes『Kudou style』amazing right? But, in your case...aren't you not matching with them in the first place」

Hearing my explanation...Michi shows a blank face.

「Is matching the atmosphere that important?」

...Err

Before I can explain, Mana speaks up.

「Michi-san should try having sex with Onii-chan and you'll understand」

...Mana?

「You see...it feels the best when you cum together with Onii-chan.」

...Err

「...Cum?」

「Michi-san, you haven't climaxed yet?」

When Mana asks...

「...I don't know!」

Michi's face turned red.

This isn't because she really came and trying to gloss it over from embarrassment.

She doesn't have a clear experience of reaching true climax so she doesn't know.

「Anyway...I think it's better to have Onii-chan let you reach it」

Mana said...

「Right. I think that Michi-san would become stronger if you do have such experience...!」

Margo-san joins in from the back.

It seems their conversation with the old guests of『Kuromori』has ended  
Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee comes back too.

「...Sex with Master is training?」

Michi asks with a serious face.

「Kudou style can easily turn over the qi of the opponent, a technique to remove...it's better if you can pinpoint the qi that should match. Match...take away. Isn't it better if you can do it freely?」

「I see...I think there was such mystery written on the book of secrets father has hidden!」

Michi speaks to Margo-san somewhat excited.

「Furthermore...if possible, it would be amazing if you can learn the technique to instantly sharpen your qi like how the camera narrows down it's focus」  
「You can learn that through sex?」

Margo-san smiles.

「I don't know. I haven't done sex for the past seven years after all...」

Margo-san was raped in an Indian settlement when she was 12.  
Since then...she never had sex.

「But...I recall a document Kyouko-san holds. It's a report about training your mind through sex」

「...I'd like to see it」

「Un, I'll look for it」

Michi looks at me.

「Master...I'm very sorry but, now that it has come to this, please accompany me in my training」

...Does that mean?

Sex for Michi's mind training?

「I think that's good. I think it'll be good training for Yoshida-kun too...!」

Margo-san is grinning.

「M-Mana will train too!」

「Yoshi-kun, I'll be joining in too!」

Megu...Mana...

「Of course, I will be joining too!」

Katsuko-nee too.

「Eh, eh, eh?! Then me too!」

「Nei-sama, you've got to get yourself together or I'll get angry!」

Katsuko-nee glares at Nei-san...

「Geez! Katsun you bully」



「I'm not a bully! It's Nei-sama who doesn't have the courage!」

...Err

「...What's this about?」

Mana asks me with a curious face.

...Haa

When are we going to let her know that Nei-san's still a virgin?

...No

...Rather than taht.

「...Huh?! Speaking of which, where's Yukino?」

Mana's classmate came this way...

Yukino's acquaintance might come too.

「Kuroko-chan's there」

Katsuko-nee points.

「Kyahahahaah...Kuroko-chaaaan!」

「Gaooo! I'll catch you!」

「Mao won't be caught!」

「Pakupakupaku...I'll eat you!」

「Kufufu...I won't lose!」

...Yukino.

She's running around the nearby sofa.

...Along with Mao-chan.

「Hooray! I caught youuuu~」

「Kyaaaan! I got caught...Ehehe」

What's with this heartwarming spectacle?

「...Yukino-san's like that long ago」

Mana said.

「She's very kind to the children around. Playing a lot with the small children of relatives coming to visit, she's always like that」

Yukino likes children, I see.

「...She doesn't care about her little sister since long ago however」

Mana speaks in dissatisfaction.

「It's only for the surface. Since her sister is a relative, she doesn't need to take care of her. She's always being affectionate to other children...」

She's speaking politely.

This is『Maika』 Not Mana.

「No...Yukino's kind」

I said.

「Yukino's the first one to talk to me when I was alone during the entrance during high school...」

That's right...Shirasaka Yukino is.

「She's essentially a kind girl...!」

---

## 232. Yukino's heart

---

「Mao, don't make a fuss!」

Nagisa talks to her young daughter.

「Okaay, Mama!」

Mao-chan runs towards Nagisa.

She clings to Nagisa's foot.

「Kuroko-chan, you'll bother the people if you make a noise! Nihihi!」

Mao-chan speaks to Yukino, pretending to be the elder sister.

「I know! Let's do it later...!」

「Un, let's play again later! Kuroko-chan!」

...What?

That makes it look like Mao-chan's looking after Yukino.

No, that's true in a sense.

Yukino's life is targeted by Shirasaka head, she has to stay with us.

But...the seniors of『Kuromori』are basically cold towards Yukino...

Yukino herself isn't good with Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, and Nei-san.

On top of that, her real sister, Mana is the most cruel in responding towards Yukino...

Megu and Yukino have a complex with each other so they don't speak to each other.

In that case, Yukino doesn't have anyone to talk with apart from me...

Look...she avoided the other『women』and head straight towards me.

「...Do you like kids?」

It can't be helped, I'll talk to her

「I don't. They're troublesome...but, I thought I need to get used to them...」

「...Get used?」

Yukino looks at me through the thick black edge glasses.

「Look...I'll give birth to your child, don't I?」

...Yukino?

「I already gave up. If I'm abandoned by Shirasaka family, there's no place for me to return to. I don't have any other way to live but to stick with you, do I? Then it can't be helped. I'll give birth to your baby...」

Yukino owns a bottomless positive spirit.  
Her resolution is good.

Knowing that she can no longer live her peaceful life as『Shirasaka Yukino』...She chose to obey us.

「Besides...when Kenji attacked me...」

Yukino said.

「When Kenji touched me, it didn't feel good at all...he only does things forcefully, it only hurts...it's inevitably disgusting」

Yukino speaks her discomfort.

「Even my first time with you, it was disgusting at first...but I understand it when Kenji attacked me. When it's you...you're at least trying to make me feel good in your own way. You're a rapist who violated me but...you're not all bad...」

...I

「I hate a man like you. You don't look cool...you're not even intelligent...you're not from a good family either. There's no benefit going out with someone like you. I don't want the class to see me together with you」

「...Right」

「No matter how many times I'm reborn, I'll never come to love a man like you. You should understand at least that...!」

「...Yeah」

「Great...then, I'll give birth to your child」

「...Eh?」

「I don't like you but it can't be helped. I have no choice but to bear your child so I'll be sheltered by Yuzuki-sensei from now on」

「U-Un」

「I'm already fine with it. I don't like you but I think I can love my own child. I'll raise it with love. When that happens, I would have no other pleasure to live but that...!」

Yukino...she's been spoiled and raised, she's selfish and her pride is so high. But...she's not an idiot.

She looks at her own situation...she considers her path of living, without despairing.

Yukino's probably going to be satisfied raising my children for the rest of her life.

...But.

「My, you only need to give birth...!」

Minaho-neesan speaks to Yukino coldly.

「I will be the one to raise the child...Yukino-san will be farewell after giving birth」

Yukino glares at Minaho-neesan..

「Just leave the baby and you will be leaving. Let's see...if you're a good girl until then, I'll give you a bit of bonus when you leave. But, if you stay as a bad child!」

Minaho-neesan's mouth smiles.

『If you stay as a bad child』means...Minaho-neesan doesn't acknowledge Yukino at all.

「I'll have you work on the slums on the southeast Asia I guess...!」

She'll be sold to the brothels with worst environment...  
Such life would be harsher than death...

「No...I don't want that...!」

Yukino's eyes are burning in anger.

「Think about it...I think that you're already pregnant but it takes ten months

to give birth. You've got a negative evaluation since the start. If you don't make effort to recover, the plan to sell you overseas won't change...get ready for it」  
「...I won't forgive you. I'll never forgive you」

Yukino said.

「My, what a coincidence...I won't forgive you too as well. You...! I love looking at your face crying in frustration...Yukino-san」

Saying that, Minaho-neesan parted from Yukino.  
Tears accumulate in Yukino's eyes.

「...Yukino」

...I

「...What?!」

Yukino changes the subject of anger to me and she glares at me with teary eyes.

「I like you...」

「...Eh?」

Yukino's puzzled from what I say.

「Yukino's a woman who doesn't lie after all」

「...What?」

「You're really a woman who doesn't lie at all...!」

「W-What...?」

Yukino's puzzled.

「No...you're selfish, always looking down on me but...you only saying what you think from the bottom of your heart. When crying, angry...you only say what you truly think」

「Isn't that obvious?」

「No...you see, other people lie quite a lot」

Mana...when she was Maika's saying things she doesn't mean in order to improve her position.

Megu tried to deceive herself to accept the fate.

That's what normal humans are.

They desperately lie to be thought as a good person by others, be included in groups with power.

Even if you lie to your own heart...you're actually trying to compromise

That is the sense of balance to gain peace of mind.

It's never condemnation.

...But.

Shirasaka Yukino's different.

This woman...when it was exposed to the world that her parent is a criminal, her rape was broadcasted...she has the『ego』that won't yield to reality.

Living frankly according to her heart...she has the conviction, not needing to match her own world to the situation of reality.

Even if she lose her house, position, honor, friends, even family...Yukino will still have『Yukino』left in her.

Yukino believes in the woman ego named『Shirasaka Yukino』...

Therefore, Yukino's never pessimistic. She won't despair.

She won't waver no matter what, she'll only think how to survive positively.

Yukino will always be『Yukino』in her heart.

Yukino is a woman that won't be beaten by loneliness...

「I respect you. How you are. To be honest, I think you're amazing」

「W-What...what are you praising about, I don't get you at all.」

...Un., Yukino herself won't understand it.

She only thinks of it as normal.

「Besides...I won't come to like you even if you praise me!」

「Un...I know」

For Yukino who's heart is『Yukino』...Yoshida has been excluded as a『love interest』

Therefore...no matter how much the situation changes, Yukino will never love me.

Even if she have sex with me and give birth to my child...she'll won't think『It can't be helped, I'll love you』or『I'll make an effort to like you』

Yukino's『Yukino』won't take a step forward...

...Therefore

Yukino won't have a place in『Kuromori』

Here...Minaho-neesan is the leader of the organization.

Everyone trusts Minaho-neesan...it's an organization that mutually cooperates with each other.

But...Yukino.

Yukino's only a one woman team

Yukino will only live in a world where Yukino's the center and her own selfishness is the only thing allowed.

...Just like Shirasaka house yesterday.

「Yukino...what would you do?」

I asked unconsciously.

「...What?」

Yukino shows a nonchalant face.

「What will you do in the future?」

Yukino laughed.

「You're not in a position you can worry about other people are you?」

...Well yeah.

「Yuzuki sensei said those things but...I understood that she's fairly a sweet person these past few days. It'll be fine. She won't sell me away」

...No

I'm also watching Minaho-neesa's cruel revenge against Shirasaka Sousuke...

「I don't think she'll throw me out naked... I'll still be 16 after ten months. I can start over if I want. Even without Shirasaka house, if I rely on Ichikawa-ojiisama, I'll manage somehow...」

Yukino doesn't know that old man Ichikawa has abandoned Mana.

「After a year, I can enter high school again...I can change my name. I'll abandon my name『Shirasaka YUKino』 Then, I'll fall in love. This time...it'll be true love」

Yukio's positive no matter what.

On the contrary...it hurts my heart.



「Hey...how long are you going to talk to that person」

Megu sticks to me.

「That's right...you can just leave that person alone!」

Mana also brings her body to me.

「Yoshi-kun has us okay」

Megu's words are heavy.

I can't live for myself like Yukino.

I'm responsible for my women.

These『women』...I must make them happy.

「I wish we can know if you're already pregnant...when that happens, Onii-chan don't need to have sex with Yukino-san anymore」

Mana glares at her sister.

「...What's with that?」

Yukino opposes.

「Oh, Yukino-san...do you want to have sex with Onii-chan that much?」

Mana clings to my chest and provokes Yukino even more.

「...I want to」

Yukino answered calmly.

「Because, that man's skill in sex is his only worth. Maika, aren't you sticking to that guy because of that?!」

Mana rages

「I'm not!」

「Mana...stop that」

Megu holds back Mana...

「No matter how much you explain it, Yukino-san won't understand out『bonds』 She won't understand Yoshi-kun's charm no matter what you say...」

「I do know his charm you know」

Yukino smiles.

「...You do?」

「Un. First, he's a man below average from top to toe...even he himself knows that much so he's trying to devote himself to me and you guys. You all feel pleased being spoiled by this guy, right?」

...Yukino

「It's not...!」

「Maika and you didn't have a man to spoil you, so you feel ecstatic, aren't you? Well, isn't that great? This kind of man is just perfect for girls like you. Isn't that great? You found a man who loves you...!」

Yukino speaks with the most poisonous tongue against her sisters connected by blood.

「You don't get it at all. Yoshi-kun's charm is...」

「I don't know, I don't even want to know!」

Yukino rejects it thoroughly.

「The ones worth of my love are only good looking people with both standing and talent. This man...is really only just sex...!」

This can't continue.

Yukino, Megu, and Mana's conflict will only get worse.

「Hey, it's about time you end that talk soon」

Nei-san enters in between

「At first, I was listening because it's an interesting opinion but...what's ahead is only just parallel lines」

「It can't be helped...there's no way you can understand my feelings!」

Yukino who's emotions have fired up...exposes her hatred.

「You see...Kuroko-chan」

「What?」

「You're Kishima Kuroko-chan right now!」

Nei-san pierces Yukino's heart with sharp words!

It's been a long while since she stared at Yukino with her delinquent girl mode.

「...Y-Yes?」

「If you continue...I'll make you go around the imperial palace with a placard saying『I'm Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter』」

...Yukino.

「I-I'll shut up...I just have to stay silent don't I?」

As usual, she's weak to the pressure of the older ones like Nei-san.

「Megu-chan and Mana-chan too...you don't need to fight Kuroko-chan every single time」

「That's...we just」

「We're not fighting with her」

「What do you think, Yo-chan?」

Nei-san turned to me.

「Megu and Mana...I think they both hold too much negative emotions towards Yukino. Well, I can understand that it's due to the various things that happened before but...」

Megu's been bullied by Yukino since forever...  
Mana...she's her sister but she's hardly cares about.

「You're picking fault at Yukino at everything...!」

「But, Yoshi-kun」

「But...Onii-chan!」

The two doesn't agree.

「No...you pick on Yukino at everything more than you think. Try to ignore her for a bit. Yukino's a『Yukino』either way」

I said.

「Yukino's a...『Yukino』?」

Megu looks at me with a curious face.

「Yukino won't step outside the thought other than herself so it's『Yukino』 It's impossible to accompany her. Yukino's outlook of the world won't change

unless Yukino's own world is destroyed」

「But...isn't that just crazy?」

Mana tells me.

「Everything she says about Onii-chan is horrible. I won't forgive it」

「...Mana」

I embrace Mana.

「You don't need to forgive her...You just have to stop picking a fight with Yukino every single time」

「...But」

「What kind of man I am...what is our relationship, it's okay as long as we ourselves know, right? There's no need to explain it to other people and ask them to understand」

「...Onii-chan」

「No matter who we meet...whatever happens with us, and what are our relationship right now...they won't understand no matter how much you explain it in words」

「...Un」

「I love you...that's all there is to it」

「You're right...Got it」

Mana agrees.

「Megu too...do you feel uneasy if you don't pick on everything Yukino does?」

「...A bit」

「What are you uneasy about?」

「Yukino's much more beautiful than me. I feel like she'll steal Yoshi-kun away from me...」

「That's not true」

I said clearly.

「Yukino doesn't like me. No matter how many times she's reborn, she won't come to like me...didn't she just say that earlier?」

「But...Yoshi-kun likes Yukino, right?」

...Megu

「Didn't I say it a while ago?...」

...I

「I certainly like Yukino but...she's not as important as you」

「...Eh?」

「It's priority level...if we're on a sinking ship, I'll put Megu and Mana on the lifeboat first. I'll put Yukino as last...」

Hearing what I said...Yukino's face turned gloomy.

「Really...Yoshi-kun?」

「Yeah...did I ever lie to Megu?」

Megu...

「Got it...I won't bump with Yukino anymore. I'll ignore everything she says」

「Un, right. We'll just leave out Yukino-san. Ignore her」

Mana still doubts.

Well, it's better than them fighting upfront.

「...Very well, I don't care. I feel much more refreshed when I don't talk to you...!」

She said grumbling.

「Now...there's 15 minutes before the opening. Let's enter the theater soon」

Minaho-neesan call us out.

「Okay~」

Mao-chan speaks.

「Megu-chana nd Mana-chan, could you reserve the seats for our number? We don't need to seat on one lump, instead of lining up in a row, we should seat on three rows」

Margo-san said.

「Got it. Mana, let's go」

「Un!」

I look at Michi...

「We have Margo-san here...Michi, go with Megu and Mana」  
「Certainly」

Megu, Mana and Michi trio runs to the theater.

「...Yoshida-kun, it's about the priority level earlier」

Margo-san talks to me.

「Megumi-chan and Mana-chan would be on the lifeboat first and Yukino would be the last. I do understand that but...」

Margo-san looks at Yukino with a smile.

Yukino shows a『what』face and Margo-san averted her eyes.

「Where would be Yoshida-kun himself be at that time?」

...Eh?

「If you put Yukino-san on the lifeboat...is Yoshida-kun himself on the lifeboat already or he's still in the sinking ship?」

...I

「...On the sinking ship」

Margo-san laughs and speaks to Yukino.

「That's how it is...Yukino-san won't be abandoned by Yoshida-kun at least」

Yukino looks at me with an「Ah?!」surprised face.

「In my case...I'll get on the lifeboat at last...if there's a gap then I'll let Yukino-chan on board!」

Nei-san said.

「I'll never let her in the lifeboat. I'll be watching Yukino-sama sinking from the lifeboat. Oh well, I'll give her at least a floating wheel」

Nagisa said.

「I'll tie up Yukino-san on the bottom of the ship with a chain so Yukino-san can't run away, then I'll ride the lifeboat. I hate uncertain things」

Katsuko-nee said.

「What about Minaho」

Margo-san asks, Minaho-neesan...

「If it was me, I'll push down Yukino-san down the sea even if the ship isn't sinking. Let's see...I'll aim at the waters where the sharks lurk around」

Their assumptions are already different.

Hmmm.

Everyone's harsh towards Yukino.

「Very well! If you tie me up with chains, I'll get out of it. I'll desperately swim if I'm pushed on the sea. If sharks attack, then I'll go faster than them...! I'll definitely live! I'll never be killed by you people!

I think this unchaste vigor is really amazing.

「Before you think about that, you should take good care of Yoshida-kun...」

Margo-san said as she laugh.

「Eh?...What?!」

Yukino doesn't seem to get it.

「If you don't understand then it's fine. That is what Yukino-san makes herself...!」

Margo-san said.

Then, she pat my shoulder.

「Yoshida-kun's having a big problem too」

...I

「Should we go now?」

Minaho-neesan speaks and everybody leaves the lobby sofa.



「This way, Onii-chan!」

Mana waves her hand.

Around ten columns from the front of the first floor seat...Mana and others reserve the seats.

Huh...

Even though there's considerable number of audience coming in, the audience seats aren't filled that much.

I look around...

「There's not much people who would watch『symposiums』like today from start to end」

Minaho-neesan explained.

「Right, there's a lot of people who will only come to watch the dance of the『performer』they know」

...Is that so?

「Rather...it's more important to greet and interact with people from various famous families in the lobby」

Katsuko-nee said.,

I see...various famous people are coming.

After coming to watch their daughter or granddaughter's presentation...and interact with various people while they're at it.

「As expected, it'll become overcrowded when it's the dance of the headmaster」

Nagisa said.

「Konpeki Nadeshiko-sensei is a candidate for human national treasure」

I don't know why traditional Japanese dance is a national treasure but... I'm sure it's amazing.

「That's how it is...we'll stay in the theater」

Minaho-neesan said.

「Thanks to Nagisa, we were able to greet the old guests of the mansion... what's left is for them to spread out words」

「Un...we don't need to move any further than this」

Margo-san analyzes.

「We don't need to talk to the other side we don't have business with...it's



better not to talk to the individuals but just take a seat, it's easier to have them point at and say『That's Kuromori Minaho』」

Minaho-neesan seems to have been preparing to become a spectacle.

「Either way...for the top of the『Kuromori』organization to appear, it's showing that we're completely separate from Shirasaka Sousuke」

There's no way people related to Shirasaka Sousuke show up in such a public place.

「Besides, unless we have Kouzuki-sama's permission, we can't stay in this theater...everyone knows that」

Un...security's done by Kouzuki security service.

If we're related to Shirasaka Sousuke...then we would've been kicked out long time ago.

「With that said...we will be making a show in here, you should stay a bit away」

Minaho-neesan said.

Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa and Mao-chan sits side by side.

Margo-san and Nei-san seats behind them, pretending to be a『guard』 and『attendant』

Speaking of which...even at the sofa lobby.

Minaho-neesan and others are sitting apart from us『the young class』on purpose.

They only come close to us when they've got business with us.

「No way...let's sit together」

Minaho-neesan replies to Megu.

「You cant...if you sit together with us, they might misunderstand that you're a new『woman』in the brothel you know?」

Minaho-neesan calmly said.

「Megu, let's sit here」

A sit somewhat across the aisle...

「...But, Yoshi-kun」

At that time...cheers rose from outside the theater.

...What?

The entrance is making a noise.

「...Kouzuki『Kakka』has arrived」

Margo-san said.

---

## 233. Opening

---

Before long...it seems that Kouzuki『Kakka』has gone to the second floor.  
The entrance to the second floor seat becomes noisy.

「Why on the second floor seats?」  
「It's easier to guard there...besides, high places are identified as a noble status」

Michi taught me.  
We're already sitting apart from Minaho-neesan's『senior group』  
On my right is Mana and Megu is on the left.  
In the seat behind me, Michi's seating as Yukino's lookout.  
Therefore, Michi speaks from the back whispering to my ears.

「The nobles understand that while they're watching the stage, the other guests will be watching themselves as well」

Then...we see Kouzuki『Kakka』in our view.  
『Kakka』is wearing a light gray suit.  
His back is firmly stretched...and his gray hair is trimmed short.  
Was he doing sports when he was young?  
It's a solid physique you won't think he's past 80s.  
He looked around the theater with a pleasing smile...but his eyes aren't.  
He seems to be the person at front as the current manager...he has dignity and power.  
Ah...he's looking this way.  
Minaho-neesan and the ladies lower their heads to greet him.  
『Kakka』nods his head as if saying「umu」  
With that much...Minaho-neesan has conveyed to the audience that her presence is allowed by Kouzuki『Kakka』...  
...That's an amazing influence.  
『Kakka's』seat is in the front row of the second floor seats.  
Un...it's definitely the『King's seat』

「The three people in black suits around Kouzuki-sama are his escorts...」

Michi whispers to me.

I see, there's two men and one woman in black suit around『Kakka』

I see Chief Tanizawa behind.

These people are entrusted with『Kakka's』personal protection.

These three people are the strongest guards among Kouzuki security service.

「The males are Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san. The woman is Seki-san」

I follow Michi's line of sight. The tall man is Ootoku-san. Choumoto-san is the bearded macho type. Seki-san is a black haired beauty.

The hall quiets down.

「Is there no need for an applause?」

I ask Michi...

「Kouzuki-sama hates that kind of thing...」

I see...though he's a noble, he's not a royalty of a country or something...  
If you don't do the normal reaction, you should bend your stomach.

『Kakka』sits on the front seat on the second floor...

Next, a few young men comes in.

It's around 20 people in all.

They're all wearing expensive suits with flashy colors...they're well behaved and they have a smart looking faces.

That group of men occupied the seat behind『Kakka』

「Those are the people Kouzuki-sama favors quite a lot」

He's favoring men...?!

Eh...No way,『Kakka』is a homo?

He's someone who likes boys?

「Ah...I didn't mean it like that」

Michi blushed and corrects herself.

「Didn't mean it like that?」

I ask meanly on purpose...

「...Master, I have just imagined something I really shouldn't. Please punish Michi」

She begs me with her ears turning red.

「...What do you want?」

Michi answers.

「Please pinch my butt」

「...Michi likes to be done in her ass」

When I say that...

「I'm not...I'm just not confident with my chest...」

Michi's conscious about her being flat?

「...I'll massage it and make it large」

「...Yes, thank you very much」

Michi raised her ass from her seat.

「...Master, please」

「...Sure」

I stretched my hand from the gap of the seats and reached out for Michi's butt...After enjoying the feel of her ass, I pinched it once.

「...Ahn!」

Michi raised a painful voice.

「Gees...don't have fun all by yourselves!」

Mana tells me furiously.

「If you've got time to do that then touch Mana's butt too...!」

Mana forcibly pulls my left hand to her ass.

Geez...it can't be helped.

I listen to Michi's talk while massaging Mana's ass.

「Those young men are directly educated by Kouzuki-sama himself. There are those from the bloodline of Kouzuki house...there's also sons of the director of the company under the close associates of Kouzuki house mixed with them」

...In short.

「Misuzu's fiance is among them...!」

「Yes, I do not know who is it but...it's especially expected from the six people who are right behind Kouzuki-sama. Perhaps, Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama's fiance are in those」

I only know the given name.

After Misuzu lost her virginity, she told only me...

「...Do you know the names of those six?」

Michi answers.

「Yes...starting from left, Kouzuki Souji-sama, Kouzuki Satoshi-sama, Kouzuki Subaru-sama, Natsuki Makoto-sama, Shiba Takahiko-sama, and Kata Takashi-sama(奉孝 is read as Guo Jia in chinese tho, I dunno how Bing came up with Takashi)」

Takahiko...he's the second from the left?

So it's Shiba Takahiko...Misuzu's fiance.

Yup, he's at university student age.

Having silver rimmed glasses, standing tall...he looks the diligent type. He looks good too.

There's no element that I'm likely to win.

「...You don't have to worry. Misuzu-sama loves Master from the bottom of her heart」

Michi said as she look at my face.

「Un...thanks」

The hall that quiets down after『Kakka's』arrival becomes noisy again.

The audience seats today have a lot of small children so it's inevitable.

People who are trying to greet『Kakka』are making a line.

Guards in Kouzuki security service uniforms put a line together...

『Kakka』has the elite children and his guards sitting down so everyone's greeting him from four meters away.

『Kakka』nods at every person who greets him...

「Kouzuki-sama will be in that group, watching from the start of the『presentation』to the end」

Michi said.

「Why? He won't come to see Misuzu or Ruriko-san?」

「Having Kouzuki-sama watch over a performer is a status for them...as responsibility of the one with power, Kouzuki-sama will be watching the dance of everyone. Besides...today's performers may be candidates for fiancée for those in the group...」

The performers today are all girls who go to Konpeki school's classroom. Everyone's a daughter of a person with powerful position. Their blood and family are in good standing. They're suitable brides for the young men personally educated by Kouzuki『Kakka』

「Therefore...those men will be watching from the start to finish too?」

「Yes, it's unknown who will be nominated as their partner...they can't just break off from the dance even if they're going to marry someone there...」

Un...the performing child will continue their daily life. If they give birth to a child sometime...that child would also be going to Konpeki school. By doing so, entering the『headmaster's class』becomes a status of the powerful people.

「Being told『It's amazing to get through there』, it's only for the class of the headmaster of Konpeki school」

Mana said.

「Ballet or dance classes hasn't reached this high...『Konpeki style』is really an exception」

「...Why is that so?」

「It has a different history」

...History?

「The traditional dance headmaster's system has been there since Meiji-era, but...『Konpeki school』has students which are daughters of the politicians, and

people at the top of business since early stages. Besides, the first, second, third generation...the successive generations of the dancing master are all outstanding dancers...」

Michi explained.

「What do you mean by outstanding dancer?」

「For Japanese dance, the most important task is to entrust the choreography of the dance to the best Kabuki actor of that era. Konpeki school has been playing that position since Meiji era」

I see...that's easy to understand.

The school who's most popular and entrusted to dance the Kabuki actor... prospers.

That's how it is.

Misuzu and Ruriko-san...even if they're heirs of the Kouzuki house, of they're going to train in dancing, they better enter this class. There are no other options.

「I hate traditional Japanese dance...I'm not a Geisha. And when you dance wearing a kimono...it clamps your body. You're crazy if you're dancing in that state...your blood circulation will get bad」

Yukino said...

Megu, Mana and Michi ignores her.

She's completely neglected.

「...I'm talking to you!」

Yukino glares at me.

「M-Me?」

「That's right!...Either way, the others don't have the intention to talk to me!」

Yukino's puffing angrily.

「Michi-san...there's this story about the『Tongue cutting sparrow』, right?」

Mana said.

「Yes, that is right」

「If you cut Yukino-san's tongue, would she be more quiet?」



「...I think a gag would be enough」

「Michi-san...do you have a gag?」

「That kind of thing can be easily made as long as you have a rope. If you ask for it, I can prepare it immediately...」

Michi looks at me.

「...No, you don't need to. With Yukino's current look, a gag would turn this to a horror movie. That would be too bizarre」

「...it is as you say」

Yukino...

「I-I get it, I just have to shut up right?! What's with you! I'm only talking about why I personally don't like traditional Japanese dance!」

「...Yukino-san. Just shut up and maybe do your masturbation hobby?」

Yukino went silent after being told by Mana.

「Mana...that's bad manners」

I scolded Mana.

「Sorry」

「Didn't you say that you'll ignore Yukino?」

「...Un」

「...I'll punish you」

「You're going to punishme? Onii-chan?!」

Mana happily smiled.

「It's the opposite...I won't have sex with Mana for today」

「Ehhh!」

「It's a punishment so it's inevitable」

I look at Megu.

「In that respect, Megu's great. She's properly ignoring Yukino」

「...Isn't that obvious? It'll only get my mouth dirty if I talk to that person」

...Hmm

I wonder if the reconciliation of these『sisters』will be delayed eternally...

...Then.

Suddenly, the buzzer informing the curtain rise has rung.

「Yoshi-kun...it looks like it's starting」

Megu told me.

A clapping sound echoes...!

The thick stage curtain rises steadily.

Applause comes from the hall.

「...Cute!」

Yukino mutters.

There's ten elementary school girls lined up on the stage.

The 『symposium』seems to start from the joint dance of the youngest children.

The girls begin to dance, matching the tune of the three string lute.

「...Fuji-no-hana...Fuji-no-hana...」

As expected of the headmaster's class' dance.

It's not a recording but the three string lute and the song is sung on the spot by a professional.

Each of the ten girls are interesting.

There's a girl who's frozen solid from exerting herself.

There's a child dancing softly while smiling.

There's a girl who's timing is behind by a tempo as she's watching over the other girls.

On the other hand, there's a girl who's tempo is faster.

There's a girl who shouted「Ah」as she made a mistake in choreography.

But still, everyone's dancing earnestly.

There's no girl who's dancing negligently.

「All of them are cute」

Megu said.

「Yeah...you're right.」

「Yoshi-kun...do you want a child like that?」

Megu whispers to my ears.

「...Eh?」

I imagine.

A girl born with Megu and I as parents...

Then, watching my daughter's dance like this.

...It feels very happy.

「Yeah...I want one」

I answered

「Me too」

Megu holds my hand.

Mana sensed the good atmosphere between us...

「Geez...this hand is Mana's!」

Mana grabbed my other hand.

Both of them are snuggling close with me.

「Really...they're cute aren't they, Onii-chan」

Mana also said as she watch the children's dance.

「Mana also want Onii-chan to see」

「Mana's in a dance club too, right?」

If I recall...she's supposed to be in a creative dance club in middle school.

「Un. We're supposed to make a presentation at the school festival but...Mana can't go to the middle school anymore」

As Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter...she can't go back to the Ojou-sama school anymore.

「How about starting dance again on your new school?」

「Eh, there's no way you enter at such a half-complete period」

「But...Mana likes to dance, right?」

「Well...that's right but...ah, I don't like creative dances. That's a strange dance」

After saying...Mana looks at my face.

「It's strange...even though I won't make this kind of talk with Mama or Papa...」

...Mana?

「It feels like Onii-chan is the most『family』to me... I can talk about anything, consult about anything...」

「Sure, you can consult me about everything. No matter what it is, let's think about it together」

「...Un」

Mana holds my hand tightly.

「Ah, but...I won't do any love consultation!」

Mana said with her face turned red.

「I'm only for Onii-chan after all...」

Saying that...she lets my hand touch her bare legs.

「If you have someone else you like...you don't have to worry about me」

Mana got angry when I said that...

「Don't say that even as a joke!」

Mana's eyes are serious.

「My body and mind are all owned by Onii-chan. Onii-chan saved me, Mana has to serve onii-chan for the rest of her life! I am proud that Onii-chan made me his『sex slave』...!」

Mana has her pride.

As a woman...as a human.

「It's okay for Onii-chan to tell Mana that『I don't need you anymore』or『I'll give you to others』but...」

I embrace Mana.

「I won't do that. Never. Whatever happens, I won't abandon Mana...!」

「Then...order me to stay by your side forever.」 Order me not to like other men...!」

...Mana looks at me with her『woman』face

「I want to be bound by Onii-chan...I'm a『slave』after all」

...Seriously.

This『sex slave』is too demanding.

「Got it...stay by my side. Love me and only me. Don't ever speak to other men」

「Okay, Onii-chan!」

Mana's face turned red.

「Ah...what should I do?」

「...What's wrong, Mana?」

「Ehehe...Mana got wet」

...It seems that she has leaked love nectar just from my binding words alone.  
This 14 year old girl is very juicy

「Mana's a lewd girl」

「It's Onii-chan so I can be naughty...!」

Mana kisses behind my ears.

「...Mana, that's far enough!」

Megu warns her

「...I'm sorry」

「It's rude to those who are dancing earnestly don't you think?」

「...Yes」

While saying so, Mana whispers in my ears.

「Onii-chan...should we hide somewhere and have sex?」

It seems that Mana's body is on fire.

「It's impossible to do in the theater. There will be a guard no matter where」

「...How about the restrooms?」

「That's a strictly watched place...the security has strengthened because of white Viola's infiltration」

「Tsk...that's a disappointment」

「Besides...have you forgotten?」

Mana shows an「eh?」face as she look up at me.

「You're going to abstain for one time...」

That's right...I just said that a while ago

「Geez...Onii-chan you bully!」

Mana's angry.

「Therefore...endure it for now. I'll give you lots of love at night...」

I decided to offset Mana's one day rest to Mana's current desire to have sex.

「Really?...Then I'll endure」

Mana's mood is fixed.

...Night.

To tell the truth, I can't imagine what will happen to us tonight.

Once the symposium ends...we'll head to the hotel and negotiate with Shirasaka family.

I have to talk to Kouzuki『Kakka』as well.

Then...there's the confrontation with Cesario Viola.

We have to prepare for a long night.

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at me.

「Don't worry...I'm sure everything will go well」

She said as she has guessed my mind.

「Yeah...you're right」

I replied.

...This isn't good, me.

If I show a worried face, Megu and Mana's face will become gloomy.

I have to be calm...

Just like Minaho-neesan.

Under Minaho-neesan's usual cold smile...just how much emotion is being hidden there?

I'm thankful that I have a reliable『elder sister』close by me.

「Ah...it looks like it's done」

Then...the dance of the ten elementary school girls is over...

Lastly, they all lined up in sieza and greets the people.

This is the only part they're all precise.

Applause happens from the whole theater.

『Kakka』applauds with a satisfied face.

Misuzu's fiance, Shiba Takahiko too...

...Huh?

Men with bouquet show up from the hall and goes up the stage.

「Akiko-chan, here you go!」

「Kumi-chan...Here!」

Everyone seems to be acquainted with the performers.

The girls who finished dancing were handed bouquet from the stage below.

「In truth, it's not good manners but...recently it's been popular to bring bouquet after the dance after the broadcast of figure skating was seen...!」

Michi teaches me from the seat behind.

True, it's not pleasant to see that the ten children weren't able to accept flowers evenly...

There are some girls who have three to four bouquets by themselves and there's girls who didn't even get one.

In the first place, it differs to the house's opinion whether they would give flowers or not...

But, well, you can't tell them to stop.

This is quite a difficult problem.

At the end of the bouquet presentation...the girls bowed to the audience once again and exit...

「The next would be the dance of the third and fourth grade school girls. After that, the high school. The joint dance seems to be only elementary school girls. Starting middle school, they will dance alone. There seems to be a duo and trio dancing together though...」

Megu informs me as she look at the pamphlet  
Speaking of which...

「Even after the symposium started, the lights on the audience seat didn't get dark」

Usually, shouldn't the stage be brightened and the audience is darkened?

「In this kind of symposium, the traffic on the hall is violent...」

Michi explained.

I see, Even though the first dance is just over, there are a lot of people coming out of the hall.

They must be the families and acquaintances of the ten elementary school girls who just danced.

Are they going to meet them in the dressing room immediately?

On the contrary, there's family of those children from the next dancing group coming in.

「In the first place, Japanese dance is independent from Kabuki-dance...in Kabuki, the seats aren't darkened...」

Michi said.

「Why?」

「It's common for Kabuki to eat meals or drink...if you make it dark, it'll be troublesome for the guests because they can't see their hands」

Is that so?

「Therefore...they don't stop the lights on the audience seats except only when there's a special effect production...」

...Oh.

「Michi...you're quite knowledgeable here」

I thought that this girl only thinks about martial arts.

「This is because of Misuzu-sama's education」

...Misuzu's?

「As a guard...I attend to Misuzu-sama's theater-going... At that time, she teaches me various things...」

I see...

「Misuzu-sama educated me various things so I won't become someone who only knows martial arts...」



That part of Misuzu resembles Minaho-neesan.  
Both of them seem to like to plan their education.  
While thinking about it...  
The second set of dancers began...  
The dance of the third and fourth grade school girls are also cute.  
...Un.  
Just like that...the dance program progress one by one...  
Then...  
When the middle school girls started dancing...  
...An incident occurred.

---

## 234. ...Who?

---

When the two middle school girls finished their dance...  
The hall applause...and the dancers give thanks.  
When the friends of the girls give bouquet from under the stage...  
A middle aged fat man suddenly approaches Kouzuki『Kakka』...  
He shouted...

「...Kouzuki Shigetaka-san! I would like to have an audience with you in regards to my family!」

Gold rim glasses, the bald fat man wearing a suit has sweat flowing from his forehead.  
Trembling...I understood that it's not something trivial.  
Or rather, he looks like he's drunk.

「What? I won't ever put you to disadvantage!...I came here with a good proposal to you!」

The man with a strong accent is squeaking with a high pitch.  
His face is stiff and his eyes are bloodshot

「It'll profit you, it'll profit me...it'll be a WIN-WIN situation...do you get it? A WIN WIN!」

The hall fell silent from the sudden situation.  
The audience in the hall look at『Kakka』on the second floor seat.  
The fat middle aged man tries to approach『Kakka』somehow but...  
But『Kakka』has a layer of elite youths taught by『Kakka』  
Therefore that man desperately speaks to Kakka who's in the front seat of the second floor across the four rows of seats.

「...Who is that?」

「...From which house did he come from?」

「...Speaking rudely to Kouzuki-sama」

「...What does this mean?」

Finally...they whisper their doubts.

『Kakka's』showing an unpleasant face...he didn't face the man who came in.

「...Michi. Do you know that is?」

I asked Michi who should've seen her father's investigation files.

「No...even I don't know」

If Michi doesn't know him...who's that?

「Hmm...I know」

Yukino answered lightly.

「You do?」

...Why Yukino?

「...Un」

「Then...who's that?」

Yukino answered with a nonchalant face.

「Kaneko Nobuo-san」

Yukino said.

「Oh...is that so?」

「That's right...Kaneko Noboo-san」

...Kaneko Nobuo

...Hmm

Really, who's that guy...?

「So who's Kaneko-san...?」

I asked...

「Granduncle's aide. The director of the newspaper company...Kaneko-san」

Yukino's great uncle, it's Shirasaka Moritsugu the head of the household.

In short...it's a man serving Shirasaka family?

「When it comes to the aides...let's see, he's around the 20th in the rank.  
Kaneko-san is low-rank employee」  
「...Low rank?」  
「He's just a director. He doesn't have titles like managing director or executive director」  
「Then...what's his position?」

I don't get the order in a company...

「Well, he's a director so he's in a management team just for the names but.  
Kaneko-san is originally a reporter who worked his way up, he's a branch manager in the Chuugoku region for a long time. Last year, he finally was called back to the head office and he was promoted as a director」  
「Chuugoku...he was overseas?」

Somehow...I can't see him being international at all.

「Wrong...it's in Hiroshima」  
「...Hiroshima?」  
「Chuugoku region...he's always been in Hiroshima」

Oh...so that's why he has that accent

「You know a lot about him」  
「I remember him since he make fun of Papa during a party」  
He made fun of Shirasaka Sousuke?

「He's been the chief in the Chuugoku branch so he's gotten bossy but...him being a low-rank employee at his age, he had no choice but to bow his head to everyone at the main office. He looks successful but since it's decided that he'll retire at the end of his term, he's more of a downsized」

So that's his position.

「Then...why did Kaneko-san who's going to be downsized in here?」  
「There's no way I would know that you know?」

...As expected of Yukino.  
Even though she knows the power relations of Shirasaka family...  
She doesn't seem to be interested in what's happening outside the box.

「Perhaps, he came to negotiate with Kouzuki-sama」

Michi said.

「But...Kaneko-san shouldn't have that authority」

Yukino barks

「If this continues...Kouzuki-sama will have a direct confrontation with Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu so he must've felt danger in the current state. I think he approaches Kouzuki-sama to save himself」

「What does that mean...Michi?」

「For example...telling Kouzuki-sama confidential information in regards to Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu... Either way, I think he want to gain Kouzuki-sama's favor」

In short...betrayal?

Is Shirasaka Moritsugu's group that cornered?

「You see...I'd like to talk to you by all means! Hey, five minutes will be enough! No, just two minutes. Even if it's 30 seconds...could you listen to my sincere words...?!」

The excited man desperately screams at『Kakka』

「However...Kouzuki-sama won't listen to him」

Michi said.

「The information someone below the board of directors is probably not a big deal...this act of treachery might be Shirasaka Moritsugu's plan」

Sending a traitor on purpose?

Then it's likely that he's holding fake information...

「In the first place...Kouzuki-sama hates such impolite acts.」

Kouzuki『Kakka』...ignored the man and signaled the guards with his hand. His gesture is brushing the air.  
...It's a sign saying『Kick him off』

「...Excuse me sir」

Seki-san, the female guard stands up then approached Kaneko-san.  
Seki-san's poise is graceful and elegant.

She's showing a calm smile on her face...

If I wasn't told by Michi that she's a guard before this...I'd think that she's an exclusive secretary or a super beautiful companion.

That Seki-san is smiling gracefully.

「I'm very sorry but if you want to talk then I will listen to you over there!」

「That won't doooooo!!...I don't want to talk to you but Kouzuki Shigetaka-san, only the two of us! Nee-chan, please let me through!!!!」

Kaneko-san shouts hysterically...

...Then.

The man's posture suddenly becomes strange.

「...Mugi!」

「My, what happened?」

Seki-san is smiling.

Kaneko Nobuo suddenly blew foam from his mouth and fainted on the spot.

「My, what tragedy!...First aid, we need help here!」

Guards in Kouzuki security service uniform already appeared.

The guards immediately take out Kaneko Nobuo.

「What a surprise! Well, that person seems to be very agitated...he must've drunk a lot of alcohol...right?」

Seeing off the man carried outside the theater...Seki-san makes excuses.

「...Michi, that just now—」

「Yes...Seki-san throws her fist to the old man's body three times in just a moment」

Michi explains.

In the midst of the attention of the crowd...

Seki-san knocked out Kaneko Nobuo without anyone noticing.

「Seki-san is the most elegant among the people of Kouzuki security service. She blinded the audience with her right arm and punctured three vital points with her left fist...」

...Scaryyy

Seki-san, she's seriously scary.

Kaneko Nobuo was taken out of the hall and at the same time...Kouzuki『Kakka』stands up.

「...Everyone. I'm very sorry. This is a common thing in my daily life. Please do not worry...!」

Calmly...『Kakka』speaks with a dignified voice.

Then, he faced the girls who were on top of the stage, afraid of the sudden incident...

「...It's inexcusable for the dancers to be intruded by a strange person, Sanaka Kana-san. Ohata Marino-san But, I do remember your dance well. It was a good dance. You have practiced well...!」

『Kakka』calls the girls without checking their names from the pamphlet. The great Kouzuki『Kakka』called out their names personally...the girls had smiles on their faces.

「I'm looking forward to your next year's dance...please keep on studying from now on」

「Yes, Thank you very much...!」

The girls on stage thanked『Kakka』  
At that moment...the hall applauded.

『Kakka』also claps his hand.

Even though the audience is clapping at『Kakka's』speech...

『Kakka』also claps so it was changed to applause of praise for the girl's dance.

『Kakka』sits down while the people are clapping

The stage assistant comes from the stage and signed the girls to withdraw from the stage.

The girls bow to the audience once again and left.

...The progress resumes to normal.

As if Kaneko Nobuo's intrusion didn't happened.

「The responsible for the security today, director Yamaoka will have to make a written apology and his salary cut!」

Nei-san came to our seat and said.

「Hearing that Miss Cordelia and the white Viola infiltrated...I think it shook the security system a lot」

Michi said.

In short...as they're preoccupied by taking Viola countermeasures...  
They didn't notice someone from Shirasaka family entering?

「Perhaps they've put emphasis on checking those who are foreigners, or coming from the US commerce or embassy I guess? Well, they should've checked if they're a member of Shirasaka house either way...!」

...Kaneko-san was overlooked.

「They might've not checked someone who's below the board member of the newspaper company I guess? Either way, they must've thought that people related to Shirasaka house won't be coming here today...!」

Nei-san laughs.

Well...Kaneko Nobuo might have been not checked.

「That's a big failure」

Michi said coldly.

「Well, don't say that...even if the guards are overly serious, this kind of things happen」

Un...there's a lot of mistakes when you're tense.

Thinking that there's no way it would happen...you'd get a bit careless, and it'll turn to an unexpected situation.

「Rather, it helps that this kind of mistakes happen. The real thing would be tonight after all」

Nei-san said.

「Are you talking about Viola not attacking while we're in the theater?」

「Miss Cordelia promised that after all」

...But

「Can she even be trusted?」

「There's no way we can...That person is Cesario Viola's manager」



「...Then」

「Yo-chan...I'm telling you that we're fine. Even now, those people and us are still in prep time」

...Prep time?

「Watch the people around carefully...even the general guests and those who wear Kouzuki security service uniforms. Perhaps...a spy from Shirasaka family or someone under Viola has already infiltrated」

...Does that mean?

「But...it's not time for the uprising yet. It means that it takes time for the situation to boil down and explode」

Nei-san and others have already assumed the next situation.

「Look around, if there's someone strange...then report to Maru-chan immediately. Also...don't ever go alone. Even in toilet, go with everyone. Mii-chan, take care of them」

「...Certainly」

Michi nods at Nei-san's words.

「That's all...it was a message from Maru-chan and Sensei!」

...Minaho-neesan and Margo-san issued those instructions.

Both of them are already checking the『enemies』that are infiltrating.  
There's already『enemy』in this hall.

「Strange people...like that one and that one?」

Yukino calmly points at the man who's near the rear exit of the auditorium.

「...Yukino, you?」

「Well...I've seen him at the party at great-uncle's house」

At that moment...Kouzuki security service guards headed to the two people Yukino pointed at.

The two men were taken away in a blink of an eye.

...Hm?

Is someone watching at us?

Is there someone here know that the woman in yellow-black dress is Shirasaka

Yukino, observing us?

「...Master, above」

Michi said...I looked up at the second floor seat.

On the seat behind Kouzuki『Kakka』...Chief Tanizawa is looking at us.

He's grinning as he look at me.

...Is that how it is?

As expected of Chief Tanizawa

He's letting us free and using us to catch the『enemy』

「Yukino...if you find someone strange, don't point at them anymore」

I said.

「Eh, why?」

「If you continue doing that...the enemy sneaking in will pay attention to you.

Are you okay being found out that Shirasaka Yukino is here?」

...Yukino

「I-I get it」

She reluctantly consented



Now then...the schedule of the symposium has the middle school girls end with a trio dance.

Then...the organizer today, Konpeki's school head will be greeting.

「Why are they greeting when half has finished? Shouldn't they be doing that at the beginning?」

I asked...Michi;

「At the start of the event...the guests aren't ready yet」

「...What do you mean?」

「The people aren't watching from the first dancers...there are people who will come late as well. Everyone will be visiting according to the time of dance of their acquaintance」

I see...it's different from normal plays.

「After this greeting...the dancers will all be by themselves. They'll all be students who have their skills recognized in the headmaster's classroom...」

Speaking of which...the auditorium is suddenly full.

「Of course...everyone are ladies from famous houses...」

...I see

From here onwards, it'll be a competitive show for the marriageable age ladies of the famous houses.

It's also time for the elite young men lined up behind Kouzuki『Kakka』to look for their bride candidate.

The spirit of the viewers is different from the presentation of the elementary and middle school girls...

「...Our class is also able to do a presentation this year again. This is all thanks to everyone's support. Thank you very much」

The headmaster of the Japanese Konpeki-style dance...Konpeki Nadeshiko-sensei is a small lady.

Slim...her spine is stretched.

She's a very elegant and a gentle person.

「Konpeki school will also be reaching a hundred years next year. The fact that the school has developed so far, I think that the first generation will be very happy. We will also continue our study...we would like to inherit the tradition of Japanese dance for the next 200, 300 years to come...!」

The headmaster's greeting finished after a few minutes.  
After a big applause...the second half of the dance begins.  
The first performer is...

「...Kanako-san, she's so beautiful」

Megu mutters.

「Un...so beautiful」

Mana's speechless too.

Kanako-san who we just talked to in the lobby a while ago...  
her dance is very mature...and fascinating.

True...there's a wide difference in skill compared to the dancers on the first half.

But...Kanako-san's really sexy

How old is she?

When I saw her on the lobby and dressing room, she looks like a high school student but...

She's talking to Misuzu politely, she might be on the same age as me.

...Before long.

Kanako-san's dance is over.

A storm of applause resounded in the hall...

Oh...just like the first half, there's a guy with a bouquet comes to the stage.

...That is

...Eh?

Kanako-san's father...the movie actor Horaguchi Fumiya?!

He came to watch his daughter's dance...!

Un...as expected, a genuine actor is gorgeous.

His legs are long...his height reaches over 180cm

Handing a bouquet from under the stage...Kanako-san kisses her father on the cheek.

Then, applause occurs in the hall again.

「That's amazing...having your father come at such times」

Mana said.

Mana's father is going around hell in Australia

「If Mana does something...I'll definitely come to watch it. I'll also bring a bouquet」

「...Onii-chan, really?」

「Yeah...I promise」

Mana doesn't have anyone but me.

I have to do everything as Mana's『Family』...

「...Onii-chan, I love you」

Mana whispers to my ears.

Then...girls dance one after another...

Un, it's all splendid dances that's suitable as the students of the headmaster.

The performers are all girls in their late teens...all are beautiful girls.

「Is there nobody in their 20s showing up to dance?」

I ask Michi.

「When you're over 20 years old...you won't come to the classroom but on the stage of the headmaster's dance gathering」

Different from the children's classroom...there's also a dance gathering for the adult students?

「It's glamorous in another meaning」

「What's glamorous?」

I asked...Michi;

「The costume for the dance is different...in the adult gatherings, you can only wear what the master picks」

...Oh, I see.

The money compared to the symposium is already widely different...

Right, everyone's a lady from a rich family after all.

Watching this Japanese traditional dance class makes me smile but...

The adult gathering seems to be scary.

「Misuzu...has been having this daily life since forever」

I mutter.

「Yes. Misuzu-sama loves dancing after all...!」

But...

If Misuzu goes out with me, and gets banished from Kouzuki house...

She has to quit from Konpeki classroom as well.

Kouzuki『Kakka』has too much influence here.

Furthermore, from what I've heard...it seems that it costs money to continue dancing daily...

Can I earn that much money?

To a degree that Misuzu can continue her daily life without problems?

「...What's wrong, Yoshi-kun?」

Megu peeks to my face.

「No...nothing」

Let's not think economics now...

I look up at the second floor seat.

Misuzu's fiance...decided by 『Kakka』

...Shiba Takahiko.

He's looking at the stage while happily talking to the man next to him.

Yeah...he looks like a serious boy.

Good family, good face...tall, perhaps, his educational background is good too.

It's a high-level youth I can't compare.

This guy...anyway, I have to take his marriage rights with Misuzu

No matter what method I use...

If we can talk, then...

「Yoshi-kun...it's almost Misuzu-san's turn」

...Eh?

「Yes. Yoshiko-san, Ruriko-sama, and Misuzu-sama...they will dance in that order...」

While I was thinking of various things...

Misuzu's dance is coming...

...I wonder

Somehow...I feel my heart throbbing.

「It's something to look forward to...Onii-chan」

Mana smiles

...I

Rather than looking forward to it...

Anyway, I pray that Misuzu can dance safely without troubles

...Yeah

I'd like Misuzu to dance to her fullest without regret

「...Haa」

I instinctively sigh.

「What's wrong?」

「Hmm...somehow, I'm worried」

Misuzu...are you not nervous?

You won't be overwhelmed by this many audience, right?

Speaking of which...the audience seats are completely full.

Showing off her dance in this much people...

If it was me, I'd be scared.

Will you be fine...Misuzu?

「What's wrong...restless?」

Mana asked.

「Well...Misuzu's turn is about to come」

「Onii-chan has nothing to be worried about right?」

「...But」

「That's right, don't be an idiot」

Even Yukino's laughing at me.

...BUt

「...Master loves Misuzu-sama from the bottom of his heart after all」

Michi said

「...There's no need for worry, Master」

Michi touches my nape from behind

「Please take a deep breath...」

I breath in deeply and breath out just as Michi told me.

「There's no problem...」

Michi said

「It's Master's Misuzu」

My Misuzu

「Misuzu-sama has really gotten stronger」

---





## 235. Standing Ovation

---

There's a total of 50 performers coming from Konpeki school who will be dancing...it's approaching climax soon  
In the program, the last dancer would be Konpeki Nadeshiko-sensei's dance.  
Before that...Manami-san who's the granddaughter of the headmaster.  
Since Manami-san is a candidate for the successor of Konpeki-style, the dance of the two are treated as an exception.  
In the sense of the presentation of the disciples who go to the dance class itself...there will be three last dancers after this.  
Yoshiko-san, Ruriko-san...and Misuzu.  
In short...the granddaughters of Kouzuki house will be presented to the leaders of government and financial circles gathering in the hall today.

「Is Yoshiko-san a daughter from a noble family too?」

I asked Michi...

「Of course. She's the daughter of Komori-sama...one of Kouzuki-sama's aides」

...What?

「...There's a rumor that he's Kouzuki-sama's child」

『Kakka』has raised Misuzu and Ruriko-san crookedly for his own pleasure.  
From the time when they're born until the two year age difference, that's all instructed by 『Kakka』

Then...even the『retainer』Yoshiko-san who's been serving Ruriko-san since childhood must also have been born from『Kakka's』plan

Yoshiko-san's currently 18 years old, a third year high school student.

Misuzu's 17 years old, second year high school student.

Ruriko's 15 years old, third year middle school student.

「...It's starting」

Megu whispers to me.  
Then...first, Yoshiko-san's dance begins.  
Yoshiko-san's bathing in white light.  
The performance of the lute prosper the atmosphere

「Wow...so gorgeous」

Mana admires.  
A katsura attached to her red kimono...Yoshiko-san's face made white with make-up...  
The humble『attendant』of Ruriko-san until a while ago, is now a completely different person.  
So she has this much presence.  
Normally...she's trying to erase her presence in front of Ruriko-san as much as possible.  
That's not Yoshiko's deliberate behavior but...she has assumed it's natural since childhood...  
She has acquired it habitually...  
Therefore...when Yoshiko-san dances in the stage alone, her original charm is exposed at once.  
Beautiful, good style, honest and serious...the ideal girl shows up.

「...To dance is to act. If you act something, that person's original figure will come to surface」

Michi said.

「...If you have a delicate personality, you'll dance delicately. If you're usually deceiving, you'll only dance crudely in front of people A broad-minded one will dance greatly. Even if you have a good physique, if you're narrow-minded, you'll only make a small dance」

Dancing shows people's heart.

「The dance choreography is traditional so it hasn't changed from long ago... and yet, the reason why there's someone superior or inferior when dancing is because they have different minds」

Un...even though they're only making a set of movement tailored to the music...

Their individuality comes clear.

Yoshiko-san...you'd think that she'd have a generous and warm and comfortable personality just like her lord, Ruriko-san but...

Yoshiko-san's dance is very delicate...and detailed

You can tell that her fingertips of her hand and toes dances without distraction.

And yet...it doesn't feel oppressive.

Just like a big flower...glossy and gorgeous.

Yoshiko-san's a beauty that's matured for her age...

「...Haa」

The dance ended and Yoshiko-san thanked the audience.

Mana leaks a sigh.

「That's unfair...it's so beautiful and mature」

She has shown a dance with a very high level difference compared to the first elementary school girls...

Along with the big applause...people with bouquets come together in front of the stage.

There's 7, 8 young men.

「Yoshiko-san's very popular」

Michi said.

「Whenever she dances every year...there's that many men offering her flowers...」

But...Yoshiko-san only receives bouquet from the elementary girls, then bows to the hall again.

「Unlike Misuzu-sama...Yoshiko-san didn't have Kouzuki-sama recommend a『fiance』for her」

...I see

They're not men who just like Yoshiko-san...

If they marry Yoshiko-san...they can become acquainted with Kouzuki house through Ruriko-san.

With that plot in mind...there's a lot of them approaching her.

「Therefore...Yoshiko-san never accepts bouquet from men」

If you receive a bouquet from a man in such a public place...it'll be misunderstood in various ways.

To avoid that...Yoshiko-san rejects the men's flowers.

That's what happens every time and yet there's as much as 8 men carrying a bouquet of flower.

...That much

It must be really attractive to become friendly with Kouzuki house.

Yoshiko-san exits and the lights changed.

「It's Ruriko-san's turn this time!」

Mana looked at me with a smile.

Ruriko-san wearing white clothing appears in the darkness.

She sits facing down on the position on the stage.

Biiin, the lute sounds...

A strong light shines on Ruriko-san...!

Ruriko-san's costume is embroidered with silver.

The silver thread reflects the light and shine brightly.

Ruriko-san looks up.

...Then begins to dance.

..... ! ! !

The atmosphere of the audience changed instantly.

Ruriko-san's dance is beautiful.

It's like a beautiful flower blooming on top of the mountain where no one can reach.

It's a sacred flower that would shatter at the moment a person's hand touch it.

It's a clear and pure soul incompatible to the world where humans live.

Yoshiko-san's dance shows that she's an attractive girl who's maturing but...

Ruriko-san's a fairy. She's no human.

Pure...no,I can feel her soul that's just too pure.

「...That girl's so pitiful」

Yukino mutters

「Even though she's so alone...she only thinks that it's natural for her...」

I'm surprised from what Yukino said.,  
Ruriko-san's different from everyone.  
She's living on a different world.  
Even if she looks the same...she seems different from other people.  
Even with Yoshiko-san, her 『attendant』 has always been by her side...  
Ruriko-san, the successor of Kouzuki family is living on a different dimension.  
That's the extent...『Kakka』 has isolated Ruriko-san from this world.  
The audience see the girl on the stage as a pretty and pure fairy...  
I was the same...

Yukino's the only one...

She's the only one who saw Ruriko-san as a 15 year old human girl.

「...In that girl's world, there's no one but her」

Ruriko-san's dance continues...

...Un

Only the stage feels like a different world.

Ruriko-san's in a really far away place...

As if we're watching a satellite broadcast.

Yes...it's earth and moon away.

And yet...Ruriko-san is happily dancing in a sanctuary where she's alone.

She's waving at us from the other world.

She's sending a one way traffic.

What a sad dance.

The spectators misunderstands her dance...misunderstanding the feeling out of place as a wonderful power of expression, they're amazed by it.

「Ruriko-san looks very cold」

Mana's mutter expressed everything.

Ruriko-san has no one to warm up together.

「Even though it's so cold...she's smiling」

An innocent soul that doesn't notice that she's lonely.

She only knows her solitary world...

In her life, it's natural for her to be in solitude...

Ruriko-san smiles alone, plays alone in extreme solitude.

And yet...she's turning her face towards us...

She's smiling at our distant world

...That is.

The way of life Kouzuki『Kakka』forced into her...

As the daughter of Kouzuki house...

...Before long.

The communication from the distant world ended.

Ruriko-san's dance...

...Waaa!!!!

At the moment Ruriko-san bow to thank...!

The entire hall applauded loudly.

Everyone...what they saw just now...

They only think of it as a wonderful dance.

They haven't noticed Ruriko-san's expression of her solitary soul.

..... ! ! !

...Then.

I'm surprised.

Ruriko-san who finished dancing...

There's nobody coming with a bouquet...

「...What's going on?」

I ask Michi

「It's considered to be a vicious performance if you give flowers to Ruriko-sama...」

...Hmm

When you try to give the granddaughter of Kouzuki『Kakka』flowers in public... you'll likely to be resented and envied from the shadows.

Therefore...it has become an untold agreement that nobody would give Ruriko-san flowers.

...But.

Is this okay?

Will it benefit Ruriko-san to have such strange special treatment?

Even though Ruriko-san danced with all her best...

Not only applause from far away...shouldn't you deliver your feelings properly?  
...!!

「...Ruriko-chaaaaan! That was awesome!」

I stand up from my seat and shouted loudly.  
This might be vulgar...  
This might be foolish...  
But, I didn't think of those.

「Hey, stop that. That's disgraceful」

Yukino tries to stop me but...  
Like hell I care!

「...That was very beautifuuuul!」

I applaud Ruriko-san loudly while standing up.  
I might be picked up by the guards.  
But...I had to do something.  
Ruriko-san makes a surprised face...  
The audience also fell silent in an instant from my barbaric act.

「...Bravo! Bravoo! Ruriko-saaan!」

Nei-san followed me and stood up clapping her hands.  
She understands my feelings.

「...Ruriko-saaaaan! That was so coooooool!」

Following...Mana gets up and clapped her hands.

「...That was wonderful!!」

Megu stands up.

「...That was satisfying!!!」

Michi too...  
If I was alone, it would only look like a mischievous kid's prank but...  
When everyone stands up...it'll become a standing ovation.

「BRAVO ! ! !」

Margo-san stood up shouting in English...!

Minaho-neesan and others know that they can't move because there are the guests of『Kuromori』having eyes on them.

Yukino...she shows a face of giving up.

...then.

「OH ! BRAVO ! BRAVO ! BRAVO ! 」

A foreigner's voice comes from a place different from us.

Looking at it...in the middle of the seats where foreigners gather, one white man gives a standing ovation.

Perhaps...it's someone from American government who came to see today's performance.

It seems he responded to Margo-san's「BRAVO」

Immediately after...the surrounding Americans stood up and applauds too.

「.....BRAVO ! ! ! 」

After that, the atmosphere of the hall has changed.

The ordinary Japanese crowds stand up and give Ruriko-san an applause too.

Lastly...even Kouzuki『Kakka』

Of course, the elite group behind『Kakka』reads the atmosphere and stood up as well.

Finally...the whole venue storm up with a standing ovation.

Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa and Mao-chan too are also clapping their hands.

Yukino's the only one sitting.

Also...the three guards of『Kakka』...

Ruriko-san seems to be embarrassed at the start but she soon calmed down and expressed her gratitude.

「...Master, please seat down before others」

Michi told me.

「IN this case, the first one who sits down won't be noticed」

True...it would stand out if the guy who started the standing ovation is still standing.

I take a seat...Megu and Mana follows.

The clapping gradually subsided and the audience who stood up sits down.



Ruriko-san smiles and thanked the audience once again...then she left to the stage wing.

「...Misuzu-san will be in trouble after this」

Mana said

「It might be hard to dance after a standing ovation」

Shit...I didn't think of that

「It'll be fine」

Michi told me

「Misuzu-sama will rather fire up after this...!」

「...Is that so?」

「Yes...please trust Misuzu-sama」

Un...let's do that

Misuzu...do your best

...Then

Misuzu appears on the stage...

The hall quiets down.

Misuzu sits in the middle of the stage...

The atmosphere of the audience finally calms down...

The lute sounds quietly...

The lighting of the stage grows brighter.

...Bibiiiin!

Misuzu raises her face.

She's wearing a crimson clothing.

Face painted in white...

Scarlet lips.

...Beautiful.

My Misuzu's divinely beautiful.

..... !

A different air comes from the hall just like with Ruriko.  
Everyone's admiring Misuzu's beauty.

Misuzu stands up and opens up her fan.

Misuzu's dance is a dance of love.

A dance of a girl who just discovered love...

Growing up to be an adult...it's a suitable dance for the 17 years old Misuzu.

「...this is frustrating」

...Megu?

「Why, Misuzu-san who's a year older than me...that beautiful」

Megu envies Misuzu's beauty

「...I'm no match」

...Megu

「You don't have to」

I tell Megu

「Misuzu has hers...and Megu has her own charm too.」 There's no need to compete with each other」

「Un...I know that but」

Megu fell silent.

Misuzu on the stage is different from Ruriko-san.

Misuzu's on the same world as we are.

In the same space...knowing love, a girl writhes from it.

The shaking of her heart can be seen in Misuzu's dance.

A girl who's confused about love...

But still, the flames of affection burns passionately.

Burned by the passion...the girl dances violently...

I...

I remember having sex with Misuzu.

The first...the innocent losing her virginity.

Misuzu woke up as a woman bit by bit.

Now...Misuzu knows the pleasures of sex.

...Misuzu.

My Misuzu...

Misuzu on the stage...I see her having sex with me.

Misuzu has changed from girl to a woman...she's reproducing that in a dance...  
Inside my head...

Misuzu's luxurious clothes disappear...

Misuzu's dance...the soft body under her clothing has become transparent.

Even her white socks...the fingertips of her pink foot, I know that.

I know Misuzu's whole body.

Misuzu's body is an unknown place.

I know the feeling of her skin...her embrace...the flexibility of her body.

Only I who have ejaculated inside Misuzu many times knows how Misuzu trembles in pleasure.

I've seen, touched, embraced her...

The body expression of a woman who's loving is very mysterious.

Perhaps...I'm the only one who can see her different dance in this hall.

Every time Misuzu flutters...I remember her body.

No...not just her body.,

...Her heart.

I feel Misuzu's heart burning like a fire.

Even though her words are calm and polite...Misuzu's always passionate.

I can see her passion in the dance.

Un...this is Misuzu.

A dance only Misuzu can do.

It's very lovely...

This time...that body...that heart.

I want to embrace it tightly in my arms.

This girl's mine...I want to declare it to the world.

「Misuzu-sama today is at her peak」

Michi said.

「She's perfectly dancing with her mind and body...!」

Un...Misuzu's amazing.

The dancing figure of the girl in love takes the hall's breath away

Misuzu's dancing violently in the stage...seeking her loving partner.

...Then.

The passion remains dripping...her dance reached the climax.

Beyond the fan...looking up at the person she's in love with...

The hot dance of love ended.

Closing the fan...Misuzu bows to the audience.

...For a moment.

I didn't need to do anything anymore.

The audience voluntarily stormed a standing ovation...!

「...I'll polish myself even more」

Mana said.

「Mana won't lose to Misuzu-san. If this continues, she'll take Onii-chan away」

「Hey hey, don't make strange worries」

「It's fine! I'll do my best either way! I hate to lose against Misuzu-san!」

...Either way, it's good that they're positive.

「I also...I'll do my best in the next competition」

Megu also speaks frustrated.

「I only can do running but I won't lose. I'll enhance myself just like Misuzu-san」

The two seems to have seen Misuzu's dance as such.

「...Kuromori-sama」

A voice called me from the back.

Oh right, I'm Kuromori Kounosuke right now.

Turning back...Kanako-san's standing there.

Kanako-san's holding a big bouquet.

「...Misuzu-san asks Kuromori-san to bring this」

Kanako-san smiles at me.

...Does that mean?

Looking at the stage...Misuzu's looking at me with a serious face.

It's the same as Ruriko-san a while ago.

Though there's applause...There's nobody trying to give Misuzu flowers.

The act of giving flowers the daughters of Kouzuki house in public is a taboo as expected.

Misuzu's telling me to violate that taboo.

Giving her a bouquet of flowers in front of the famous people and her grandfather...Kouzuki『Kakka』

「...Yoshi-kun」

Megu looks at me.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana also looks up.

I...

If Misuzu wishes for it...then I'll accept everything

「Kanako-san...thank you」

I take the bouquet from Kanako-san

Misuzu has prepared herself for this beforehand

All of the flowers are red roses.

「...I'm going」

I begin to walk down the stage

...At that moment.

The surrounding audience were at unrest.

They're surprised that someone's breaking the taboo...

The waves of unrest spreads across the entire audience...

...Like hell I care.

I head straight towards the stage.

Misuzu's waiting.

Misuzu...I...

「...Misuzu!」

I hand Misuzu the bouquet from down the stage.

Misuzu...

「I believed that you would come!」

She happily accepted the bouquet...

At that moment...

「Eeeeh! W-w-w-w-w-whyyyyyyy!!!」

A scream comes from the second floor seat.  
The source of the voice is Misuzu's fiancé.  
Shiba Takahiko's mouth is opened wide in surprise.

「Geez...please look this way. Danna-sama」

I look back at Misuzu.  
Misuzu's face is beautiful.

「Misuzu...i loveyou」  
「Me too...I love you」

Misuzu reaches for me.  
I hold her hand.

「...Please get up the stage, Danna-sama」

...Misuzu?

「...Oh」

Pulled up by Misuzu...I got up the stage.  
The people's hot gaze gathered on the two of us.

「Danna-sama...I love you!」

Misuzu jumps to my chest...!

---

## 236. Naked heart

---

Misuzu holding a bouquet embraces me on the stage.  
The whole theater fell silent.  
Everyone doesn't know how to respond.  
The audience gaze concentrated on Kouzuki『Kakka』who's on the second floor seat./

「...Danna-sama, please embrace me tightly」

Misuzu whispers to me...  
Misuzu is widely announcing the『fiance』set by『Kakka』  
Nobody knows who the『fiance』before...  
Therefore...the audience are imagining two cases in this situation.

Case 1: I'm Misuzu's『fiance』...and this performance is to show me off  
Case 2: Misuzu's going against『Kakka's』will...and she tried to make it an established fact that she has a lover other than her『fiance』

But...Case 1 can't be true.  
There must be nobody among the spectators think that I'm Misuzu's『fiance』  
I'm not someone who has a good blood lineage that suits『Kakka's』eyes...  
I'm stupid...just a while ago, I did an act that disturbed the place  
Among the people in this hall...I'm someone who didn't follow the rule of the upper class people.  
Such a dangerous and stupid man...there's no way Kouzuki『Kakka』would entrust his treasured granddaughter to him.  
...Besides.

If Misuzu's『fiance』is in this place...he's supposed to be among the elite young men『Kakka』educates personally.  
Actually...the true『fiance』Shiba Takahiko is in there.

「...W-w-w-w-w-what's going on?!」

A shout coming from the second floor seats.  
The handsome boy with an intellectual looking glasses is stunned.  
Yup...as expected, elite people are weak to sudden accidents.  
He's named as Misuzu's『fiance』 he must be thinking that he's already a life winner by 20 years old.  
...Sorry but,  
Misuzu's mine.  
I'll never give her to you.  
I embraced Misuzu strongly.  
...The hall remains silent.  
Kouzuki『Kakka』is looking down at us expressionlessly.  
Nobody would react without knowing how『Kakka』will move.  
Far from booing or making a fuss...everyone's just paying attention to『Kakka』 holding their breath.  
Minaho-neesan too...they're not moving.  
If it's discovered that I'm a member of『Kuromori』here...it would be bad  
Megu and Mana are just silently watching the stage.  
...Then.  
Clap...a sound of applause.  
...It's not from the audience seat.  
The sound can be heard from the stage side.  
Ruriko-san who just finished her turn appeared on the stage.  
She's smiling...  
She's applauding Misuzu and me...  
Following...Yoshiko-san.  
The clapping sound became two.  
After that...from the audience seat as well.  
It's Nei-san.  
The world doesn't know that Nei-san's in『Kuromori』...she's applauding us with a full smile on her face.  
Joining the applause...Megu, Mana, and Michi.  
Margo-san too.  
Yukino's looking at us with a stunned expression.  
The other spectators are puzzled.



Ruriko-san walked towards us without hesitation.

「...Ruriko's impressed by Misuzu-oneesama's courage」

She told Misuzu.

I...

「...Misuzu」

「Yes, Danna-sama」

Misuzu looks up.

「Can you share your flower with Ruriko-san?」

When it comes to this...

What I want to do...No, I thought I'd do everything that I should do

Misuzu noticed my aim right away.

「Yes...Danna-sama」

Smiling...she presented the bouquet of roses to me

I pulled out a flower from that.

「Ruriko-san...here」

I offered a rose to Ruriko-san in front of the big crowd.

「Uhm...Me too?」

Ruriko-san's surprised.

「Ruriko-san practiced really hard...so you can dance on this stage today, didn't you?」

I said clearly.

「The elementary school girls got flowers from practicing hard...I think it would be strange if Ruriko-san doesn't get any flower from anyone...」

Misuzu follows up.

Misuzu also pulled one flower...

「Please take one from me too」

...Ruriko-san.

She received the two flowers from Misuzu and me.

「It's my first time in my life accepting flowers like this...」

Ruriko-san smiles.

「Thank you very much. Oneesama...Onii-sama...!」

Ruriko-san called me『Onii-sama』in front of the audience  
Kouzuki『Kakka's』granddaughters...the successors of Kouzuki house.  
The daughter of the eldest son...Ruriko-san.  
The daughter of the second son...Misuzu.  
There are no other successors of Kouzuki house.  
The two granddaughters who pretended to be fighting for succession because  
of『Kakka』is getting along well.  
Ruriko-san has also shown and accepted me as Misuzu's lover.  
The ripple of unrest spreads in the theater.

...Clap clap clap clap.

An applause occurs once again.  
It was『Kakka』  
『Kakka's』clapping at us  
His face is still expressionless.  
Perhaps...he's violently angry at Misuzu and me.  
But...for him to applause here...  
『Kakka』is thinking that he has to show the depth of his tolerance.  
The elite people around『Kakka』also joins in the applause.  
As expected, Shiba Takahiko's not joining in.  
Everyone's making a sour face.  
For them, I'm an outrageous outlaw.  
This man is making a move on Misuzu and Ruriko-san.  
Normally, it's an act absolutely unacceptable for a man with a status like me...  
But...just to smooth this atmosphere...  
In order to not be crushed by『Kakka』and Kouzuki house...they reluctantly clap  
their hands.  
That applause continued to the percent of the people in the venue.  
A mindless applause happens just to follow Kouzuki house.  
A percent of them are dumbfounded...  
The remaining people pretended they didn't see anything or think about the

future.

This is the adult's...the world of the upper-class?

In that situation...only Nei-san and Megu and girls are continuing their sincere applause.

「...Onii-sama, you really are a courageous one」

Ruriko-san said while looking at the two roses

「It's not...Ruriko-san. It's not courage」

Misuzu tells Ruriko-san.

「This is love」

Looking at her own bouquet...Misuzu speaks.

Ruriko-san shows a「？」face

「...Please return soon. The program will be hindered if you stay here」

Yoshiko-san tells us

Right...Manami-san and the headmaster has to dance...

「Un...you're right」

I tried to get off the stage in a hurry.

But...Misuzu doesn't let go of my hand.

「Danna-sama...don't go there」

I-I see...

It would be bad if I return back to the audience.

The spectators will notice Megu and others...

It'll become impossible to join back with Minaho-neesan., 「Let's go to the side together」

「Got it」

Misuzu pulled my hand and we went to the stage side.

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san too...

After we left, the stage assistants prepare for the next dance in panic.

The next dancer...the granddaughter of the headmaster, Manami-san's already in standby.

「I'm sorry, Manami-san...I've disturbed the atmosphere」

Misuzu apologizes to Manami-san.

「It's okay...please don't mind it」

Even though it's her turn...Manami-san smiled at us with a soft expression.

「Rather than that...I'm moved. Your beloved has come and you jumped on his chest. I envy you. Misuzu-san, please be happy...!」

...Manami-san?

「Manami also can't decide her own marriage partner on her own...」

...I see. Her too.

She's forced to marry against her will for the sake of Konpeki school?

「Don't assume that it is your fate...」

Misuzu said.

「I've always thought of the same thing. That I have no choice but to live in the condition set by my Grandfather... But, I'm mistaken」

Misuzu's seriousness is being conveyed to Manami-san.

On the side, Ruriko-san is listening to the conversation of the two.

「Then...I can't be happy」

Misuzu's happiness.

「Even if the house is peaceful...I...there's no meaning if I'm not happy. We are all born to be happy after all」

...Misuzu.

「Therefore...love and courage. If you have to see two, no matter what happens, you'll be able to live happily...!」

Manami-san's body trembles.

「You're right, Misuzu-san...I must not just arbitrarily decide that it's inevitable because it's my fate」

Manami-san smiles.

「Love and courage to be happy...Manami has learned something. Thank you very much」

Manami-san shows a refreshed look...Ruriko-san's face isn't clear.

「Manami-san...please」

The stage assistant talks to Manami-san.

「Yes...I'm coming right away!」

Manami-san turned back to Misuzu and Ruriko-san.

「I'm going...Manami will dance with her best. With love and courage...!」

Then...Manami-san heads to the stage.



We watch Manami-san's dance from the stage side.

Then...everything has gone away.

At the moment she started dancing...she grasped the hear of the audience.

After thirty seconds...everyone's concentrated on Manami-san's dance.

Nobody's thinking about Misuzu and me anymore.

No...they can't think.

The dance of the future head...is on a completely different level from the disciples of the class.

Until earlier, I thought that I can see the person's nature by watching their dance.

Every Japanese traditional dance has it's own story.

The dancer is playing the character in the story.

Even though they should be dancing as someone not themselves...

For some reason, you could see through the dancer.

Yoshiko-san's dance...and the current Yoshiko-san...

Ruriko-san and the current Ruriko-san

Misuzu's dance and the current Misuzu's mind and body...

They're exposed...

The more they perform...as if taking of their clothing piece by piece...

The mind and body of the dancer has become naked.

As for Misuzu's dance...I see a naked Misuzu.

Therefore...I thought that she's expressing her naked mind and body.

But...looking at Manami-san's dance...

That thought of mine is a mistake.

「Our dance only passes as an amateur's practice...」

Misuzu mutters.

「Manami-san will become a first class Japanese dancer...」

Manami-san on the stage.

She's completely nude at once...

After revealing Manami-san's nature...

She has dressed as the person in the story expressed by dancing.

「Everyone's wearing『clothes』on top of their true nature」

Misuzu said.

「On their naked self...they wear clothes that would『make them dominate socially』or『I'd like to look good in front of everyone』so they wear『clothes』to hide their heart. Dressing up that way...it's our usual appearance of concealing our true self」

...Un

「When trying to express something...the fake『clothes』get in the way.

Wearing those clothes for your daily life, you become a creature that must act one's expression on top of wearing『clothes』 But, just by wearing it...you can't express yourself freely anymore」

While Manami's dancing seriously...Ruriko-san's also listening to Misuzu's talk.

「Therefore...the headmaster told us『When you're dancing, you must release your mind and body first. You should take off all of the fake clothing you usually wear』」

You can see it well when you're watching from the stage side.

Manami-san's completely holding the atmosphere of the theater.

Manami-san's『Qi』...and all of the audience have their『Qi』concentrate and matches with Manami-san.

The weight of the stage is equal to the weight of the audience.

The dance of the girl swallows hearts of this many people.

「We're still inexperienced...our hands are already filled by just taking it off. But, Manami-san's a genuine dancer...she can take everything off, get naked...and wear the 『clothes』of the person she has to act...!」

That's right.

The dancing Manami-san right now can't be seen as Manami-san at all.

I can only think of her as a completely different person from the one we talked to just a while ago.

No...she's not a girl living in the modern day Japan...

The story of the dance...is a woman living in the ancient era.

A very attractive person from the first time you see her.

It's not Manami-san...it's a charming woman dancing on the stage.

「I also want to dance like that」

Ruriko-san said

「I want to become...not myself」

...Oh

As expected...

She's suffering from the life forced to be the daughter of Kouzuki house.

Just like the former Misuzu

「...It depends on Ruriko-san」

Misuzu said.

「I have changed. No...nothing has essentially changed. I have taken off my false『clothing』...and Danna-sama has accepted the naked Misuzu」

Misuzu said...Ruriko-san turns around

「I'm always naked in front of Danna-sama. It feels very pleasant. I won't let go...!」

Misuzu cuddles to me.

「And...Danna-sama as well. Danna-sama is someone who's always naked in front of anyone at anytime. I love that part of him...!」

Misuzu rubs her cheeks on my chest.  
Ruriko-san didn't reply...  
Her face shows she's thinking...  
After that, she returned her eyes to Manami-san's dance...  
Manami-san's expressive dance that goes beyond space and time continues  
...Before long.  
Just like the flow of water...  
Without any stagnation...Manami-san's dance ended.  
At the moment Manami-san bows to give thanks...  
The hall was filled with thunderous applause.  
...Un  
The event with Misuzu and me was completely blown away.  
Manami-san's has small children bringing her bouquet.  
Since young men didn't come...she's on the same situation as Misuzu and  
Ruriko-san, she's not allowed to freely mingle with men.  
Holding the bouquet, Manami-san once again thanked the audience.  
A big applause happens in the theater again.  
Pushed by the cheers...Manami-san comes back to the stage side.

「That was wonderful...Manami-san」

Misuzu praises Manami-san...

「It's love and courage...Misuzu-san's words has cut off something」

She said and laughed

「You danced carefree more than usual. It was a good dance but don't be  
conceited」

Turning back tot he voice...The headmaster of Konpeki school, Konpeki  
Nadeshiko-sensei stands wearing her costume.

Right, for the conclusion of today's event...

The head will be dancing after this

「Yes...grandmother」

Manami-san lowers her head to her grandmother

「...Nadeshiko-sensei. I'm very sorry for making a fuss」



Misuzu apologizes to the headmaster.

「My...did anything happen?」

Nadeshiko-sensei plays dumb

「I might not be able to attend the class anymore...」

...Misuzu

She's prepared to be chased out of Kouzuki house after invoking『Kakka's』  
wrath...

I hold Misuzu's hand softly

「Thank you for everything up until now. I won't forget Sensei's kindness」

Misuzu's not thinking about the possibility that I'll be forcibly separated from  
her by『Kakka』

Whatever happens...I know that she intends to be by my side.

Nadeshiko-sensei...

「Misuzu-san...the wafuku's kimono is structured to envelop the human body,  
isn't it?」

「...Yes?」

Misuzu's puzzled from the sudden words of the headmaster.

「When dancing, the dancer gets distracted by the state of their bodies but...  
the guests can only see the body line of the dancer wearing the Kimono」

The headmaster smiles.

「Therefore...try to devise and dance showing the kimono line clearly. Then...  
concentrate on the thumb of your foot when turning. Think of it as an axis...」

「...Nadeshiko-sensei」

「There's no need to stop...let's see. Suppose that happens, you can pay for the  
tuition when you succeed in life. From now on, come to practice like usual. You  
have danced so much already, it would be a waste to stop」

Nadeshiko-sensei said....

「T-Thank you very much」

Misuzu's moved...

Ruriko-san, Yoshiko-san...Manami-san too

「You...what's your name?」

The headmaster looks at me.

「...Kuromori」

I have no choice but to answer that

「Please help Misuzu-san okay...」

「Yes, I'll make her happy!」

At that moment...it seems that setting the stage has finished.

「Then...I'll be going」

Watching the young disciples...Nadeshiko-sensei heads to the stage...

---

**Epub/PDF generated by [inwnepubs.com/](http://inwnepubs.com/)**

---

**Translated by [Machine Sliced Bread](#)**

---

## 237. Curtain fall

---

「Nadishiko-sensei...has given me the oral tradition」

Misuzu's having tears in her eyes.

「What do you mean?」

I asked...

「In the Japanese traditional dance, there's no such thing as manual or instruction book. Everything that's important is taught by the master to her disciple...directly by word of mouth」

In the current situation where Misuzu might be chased out by Kouzuki house and have to quit the headmaster's class...

And yet, Nadeshiko-sensei gave Misuzu the oral tradition...

「Isn't that great...Onesama. Nadeshiko-sensei has recognized Onesama as her disciple」

Ruriko-san said.

Misuzu's no longer a student on the classroom for the children of political and business bigshots.

She's officially recognized as a disciple of Nadeshiko-sensei.

Therefore, she said that she can pay her tuition when she succeed in life.

She'll teach Misuzu after this regardless of her relation with Kouzuki house...

「Danna-sama...!...!」

Misuzu cries in my chest.

「It was conveyed to Nadeshiko-sensei that Misuzu worked her hardest」

Misuzu nods.

「To be honest...I'm a bit envious. Right, Yoshiko?」

「Yes...Ruriko-sama」

The master and the『attendant』three years older smiles at each other.  
Both of them are smiling for Misuzu.

「Here...don't cry. Nadeshiko-sensei's dance is starting」

Misuzu...

「Yes! Danna-sama!」

She looks up at me with her moist eyes  
...It seems that the stage is prepared  
Konpeki school headmaster – Konpeki Nadeshiko-sensei's dance begins...

「..... ! 」

From the moment the lute sounds...sensei lifts her face...  
I feel my body pierced...

No, it's not just me.'

The entire hall shook from every stroke of Nadeshiko-sensei.

...W-What's this?

Nadeshiko-sensei's dance changed to a young maiden's dance.

She looks like a teenage girl.

An innocent girl who doesn't know love.

Behavior...movement...and her heart.

It has become a young maiden.

The girl soon...discovers love

A shy gesture.

Eyes yearning for a man...

Then the girl is also stared by the man she loves.

From there, she immediately became a『mother』

From a small child to a young mother

That amorousness.

The glamour...and her affection for her child.

The love for her husband

The mind and body at the prime of womanhood dances beautifully.

Then light narrows from there.

In accordance to the change of light...the woman turns old.

The old lady staring at her grandchild dearly.

She would like to play with her grandchild but the old lady can't catch up the movement of the grandchild running around her.  
The old lady stops and puts her hand on her waist.  
She recollects her past days.  
When she was still young, a small girl.  
...Then.  
The old lady turns back to a girl again.  
Returning to the innocent bright girl, dancing...dancing.  
Then, climax...  
At the moment the lute's sound stopped...  
The girl returns to the old lady.  
She thanked the audience as an old lady...  
Nadeshiko-sensei's dance ends.  
The reverberation of the dance is too impressive...  
The hall was silent...

「BRAVO ! ! !」

The guest from US first stands up and gives a standing ovation!  
The other spectators back up that voice.  
The grand applause and cheer wrap the theater  
A lot of children...and adults alike.  
They show up under the stage holding a bouquet.  
Nadeshiko-sensei smiles and accept all of the bouquets.  
She entrusted the bouquet she can't hold to her disciples...  
Nadeshiko-sensei receives the flowers from each and every one personally.  
...It's the opposite of Misuzu and Ruriko-san.  
Nadeshiko-sensei receives the flowers from the guests equally...  
She accepted all of the flowers.

「Thank you...Makie-chan」  
「Thank you, Yoshikawa-san. It's been a while」  
「Thank you, Tano-san. Are you doing well?」  
「Thank you for every year. Kawasaki-san」

She surely say something with a smile.  
That is the person that stands on the school...the duty of the headmaster.

When the bouquet presentation was over...the stage assistant handed the headmaster a microphone.

「Everyone...thank you very much for watching till the very end」

Nadeshiko-sensei bows her head and another big applause occurs.

「This gathering is a presentation of my students. To be honest, for someone with my age, I'm no match against their young one's vigor and greatness」

Nadeshiko-sensei said with a smile.

「In a normal dance, an old woman like me forces to dress young and dance but, everyone's saying praises such as『the elders are always working very hard. It went well』however...this gathering is a place where genuine young girls work so hard to show their achievements to everyone, my usual『dressing younger』loses to them. Therefore, every year, we show off a dance with a different taste than usual」

「...We look forward for that every year!」

A voice of an elder comes from the second floor seat.

「Thank you for each and every year...」

The audience applauds at the headmaster's words.

「A year period seems long but it's over in an instant. The children are progressing very well. The children who performed their dance in front of everyone...next year, they'll practice even more and will become a dancer who'll make a big progress」

I look at Misuzu.

「Huh, the performers today won't go up the stage to make a greeting?」

Normally, isn't that how you end the show?

「Well...there are girls who have returned home already...」

...whut?

「The elementary school girls who came out first...when their turn is done, their family will pick them up and go out for a family dinner」

Not watching the other's dance at all...?!

「They're not interested in anyone but their own grandchild」

Oh...so the rich people in the upper class—  
are that kind of people.

「Of course, most of the girls remain in the end but there's also a party that  
doubles a social gathering」

But...if the performers are incomplete, the last greeting would be impossible.  
Rather『Why is this girl not in there?』...and it'll be discovered.  
Rumors like『That house is impolite』and it might develop into some strange  
opposition between houses.

「The headmaster's work is really hard」  
「Yes」

Misuzu answers.

「...Then, see you next year. Please look forward to the further growth of the  
children. Thank you for coming today...!」

Nadeshiko-sensei bows to the crowd...!  
Thunderous applause comes from the audience seats.  
The stage curtain comes down.  
The headmaster keeps her bow until the curtains close down completely.  
When the curtain closed and the applause quiets down...she raised her face.  
She speaks to the staff with a smiling face.

「Good job everyone」

Today's performers gather around the headmaster.  
Girls who are still in their costume and girls who have changed their clothes as  
well.  
There's also a girl who's halfway in changing her clothes...having only make-up  
on her face.

「Thanks for the hard work...Sensei」  
「Thank you very much...Sensei」

Diligent girls are in here as well.  
They're all not a child of an egoistic parent.

「Yes, cheers for today. The staff will be cleaning up in here. It's dangerous so let's go back to the dressing room so you won't get in the way of the men's work」

Saying that...the girls head to their dressing room.  
On the way, she turned to us and smiled.  
We bow our heads.

「She's really a good person」  
「She's our teacher after all...!」

...Now then  
Now that the curtains have fallen...the assistants comes to clean up things.  
Organizing props...removing the sleeve curtain.  
Extracting the color filter from the backdrop lights.  
We would just hinder them by staying here.  
For the time being...we go to the stage side where there's no people.

「...Thanks for the hard work today. Ruriko-san. Yoshiko-san」  
Misuzu thanks her cousin and it's『attendant』once again.

「Thanks for the hard work. Misuzu-oneesama」  
「Thanks for the hard work. Misuzu-sama」

Both of them returned their greetings.  
「Today's symposium was wonderful...I was able to get along with Oneesama」  
Ruriko-san said.

「Onii-sama...thanks for the flower」

She also smiled at me.  
There's two roses from Ruriko-san's hand...

「Yoshiko...I want to keep this flower as a dry flower」  
「That's a good idea」

I'm glad she's that pleased.  
...Now then,

「Misuzu...I should go back to the audience soon」



Misuzu and Ruriko-san's are still in their stage costumes...  
Their faces are still white with make-up  
They're going to fix in the dressing room...  
I'd be in the way.  
I'm worried about everyone in the audience too...

「Danna-sama...it's impossible right now」

Misuzu speaks strongly.

「That's right! Onii-sama!」

Ruriko-san too...

「Eh...why?」

Or rather...what impossible?

「There are still some guests remaining...if you go back to the audience seat right now, Danna-sama will gather a lot of attention...!」

...Right

I started the standing ovation on Ruriko-san's dance...

I even handed a bouquet on Misuzu who's not supposed to be given flowers...  
on top of that Misuzu embraced me and we disappeared on the side.

Everyone wants to know my true identity...

No, there would be some who'd like to kill me.

Especially Misuzu's fiancé.

「I think you should stay in our dressing room for a while」

Misuzu proposed...

「But...you three have to change, right?」

Misuzu aside...Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san must hate to have a man in their dressing room.

「My, I don't mind」

...Ruriko-san

「Kuromori-sama is Onii-sama...it's a bit embarrassing but I don't mind. Right, Yoshiko?」

「Yes. Kuromori-sama is someone Misuzu-sama trusts...so we do trust you」

I'd be troubled if you trust me like that...

Well, if they tell me to close my eyes, I'll just do that...

「Besides...we're heading to the shower room. Should we change clothes in there too?」

「Right, Ruriko-sama」

...Shower?

「There's make-up on my face...the light on the stage is hot. It's sticky sweaty under the Kimono」

Misuzu said.

「We'll take a shower right away so Danna-sama can wait in the dressing room」

「That's fine but...I have to contact Minaho-neesan」

「How about calling them using the phone in the dressing room? They should be able to receive radio waves in the lobby」

I guess...

「Yes...there's no need to return to the audience...!!!」

A sudden voice comes from the back.

I feel chills from my back.

That is bloodthirst.

「『Kakka』is waiting for both of you to come...!!!!」

Turning round...a smiling beauty is standing there.

That woman is...

One of Kouzuki『Kakka』three guards...

If I recall...it's Seki-san.

Earlier, she's the one who beat down the man who spoke to『Kakka』

「...What do you mean?」

Misuzu glares at Seki-san.

「It is as I just said. I've received an order from『Kakka』 He asked to bring the

two of you... If they resist...I can twist the neck of the man. I was ordered to bring him even if he's a corpse...」

Seki-san looks at me.

Bringing me even if I'm dead...?

「Then...what shall you do?」

Seki-san smiled beautifully

「Therefore...what?」

I asked...Seki-san;

「My, sadly...you're resisting aren't you?」

Seki-san's body approaches me!

...Shit

...I'll get killed!

At the moment I thought of it...!

「...Haa!」

A small figure jumps in between me and Seki-san.

「...That's far enough!」

...Michi!

「My...were you erasing your presence?」

Seki-san's mouth distorted from Michi's appearance.

「It's different. It's impossible for normal people to approach me without affecting me...you're a somewhat interesting child...!」

The heart of Kuodu style ancient martial arts is to turn over enemy's Qi and remove their concentration.

Seki-san has already grasped Kudou style already.

「...Michi, stop」

I said.

「Don't make any more move. She'll see through it」

Michi glares at Seki-san...

「However...If I don't confront her in full strength, I can't take her down!」

Michi's frightened by the blood thirst Seki-san emits 「You don't have to」

I said.

「...Master?」

Michi's surprised.

「That's her move. She emits blood thirst and lets the opponent attack. Thus, she'll be able to knock you down legitimately with self defense. If we attack, we lose」

Seki-san's surprised.

「My...for a man like you to see through, I must be losing my edge」

Seki-san's blood thirst disappears.

Michi also fixed her posture.

「Understood...I will report to『Kakka』」

Seki-san smiles.

「The boy didn't stop resisting by all means」

In a moment...while her blood thirst is gone, Seki-san jumps towards me!  
...I

...Don!!!!

The whole stage shook.

「W-What? Earthquake...?!」

I can hear the surprised voices of the people in the theater.

「Look, the stage light is shaking」

「But, it's too short for an earthquake...」

「Could it be that there's an explosion outside?」

No...that's not it.

In front of me...

There's a special metal cane...

The tip of the stick pokes the pillar of the stage side...

She pierced it with a hole.

「...You're overdoing it, Fujimiya-san」

Seki-san look at her colleague with a grumpy look.

Just to stop Seki-san from attacking me...

Fujimiya-san seems to have used her stick to the fullest...

...at Seki-san

Then, Seki-san barely avoided it...

The tip of the stick has pierced the pillar in the theater.

「If the blunt force hits me, what are you planning to do?」

Seki-san strongly protests to Fujimiya-san.

「I'll prepare a million roses at your funeral」

Fujimiya-san said calmly.

Pulling the cane from the pillar...she prepares it with welcoming eyes once again.

「Rather than that...you're the one who's overdoing it. Seki-san」

Fujimiya-san enters a guard pose in between Seki-san and I.

「Our duty as guards is to protect. Since when did you become an assassin?」

Fujimya-san said...Seki-san;

「It's a bonus. That's what『Kakka』wishes for after all...」

『Kakka』wishes for me to be dead?

「If not...he won't order a woman like me『if he resists, you can twist his neck』」

Fujimiya-san snorts.

「If he resists...but this boy isn't resisting at all, is he?」

「That's a difference in opinion...I can only see this man to be resisting however...」

Hey wait a moment...!

「I'm not resisting. Or rather, I don't feel like resisting at all!」

I said clearly.

「Is what he says」

Fujimiya-san said...Seki-san.

「That's all coming from his mouth...」

Oh...this person.

She'll forcibly attack me and if I try to shake even a bit...she intends to look at it as a『will to resist』

That's how she intends to kill me.

「Rather than that...why is someone unrelated to you interfering with me?」

Fujimiya-san...

「My...you haven't heard? I'm in charge of guarding Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama right now」

「That boy isn't related...」

「I wonder?」

Fujimiya-san asks Misuzu.

「Misuzu-sama...what about it?」

「Protect him. He's Misuzu's beloved 'Danna-sama'. Please, protect him...!」

...Misuzu

「If Seki-san kills this boy...Misuzu-sama's heart would be hurt. It's my pride as a guard to protect their hearts」

Fujimiya-san points the tip of the cane at Seki-san.

「You're thickheaded as usual...even though you're skilled, what a waste. If you were a bit more flexible, you could've been recommended as『Kakka's』 exclusive guard」

「I have my own resolution. A snob like you won't understand though...」

The two takes distance from each other.

Shit, this is bad...

I'm grateful that she's helping me but...

If Fujimiya-san and Seki-san tries to kill each other, we're putting the priorities

backwards.

If this goes wrong, Minaho-neesan and others will be bothered...

「...Fujimiya-san, please back down」

I prepared for the worst.

「What do you mean?」

Fujimiya-san's surprised.

「I promise...I won't resist」

I head towards Seki-san determinedly.

「...Danna-sama, that's dangerous!」

Misuzu shouts...

「It's fine...Seki-san's the top of Kouzuki security service. A first class guard」

I go in front of Fujimiya-san.

「I won't resist so...try me」

---

## 238. Two bad Friends

---

「Are you seriously saying that?...!」

Seki-san said sullenly.

「No matter who it is, their body cowers once they feel fear...once you're caught resisting, it'll be Master's ruin...」

Michi said.

「Believe me, Michi」

I look at Seki-san.

「I believe Seki-san after all...!」

Seki-san got startled.

「...Believe me?」

...I

「If you kill me who's not resisting in front of Misuzu, Ruriko-san and Fujimiya-san...won't you become a shameless person then?」

I slowly walk towards Seki-san.

Same pace...same speed.

「Wait...don't approach me」

Seki-san said but I will not stop walking.

「Why. I'm just surrendering to you. I'm not doing any martial arts...so you should know that I'm not someone dangerous 1、2、1、2.....。」

I repeat one-two rhythm in my head.

That's all I think about.

I don't have to think everything else.



「Don't come...don't come closer...!」

「Like I said...I'm not resisting」

Remember...

When you're a child...

When grandma just died...

When neither father nor mother took care of me.

My existence only dissatisfies them both...

Therefore, I...

I'm always erasing my presence in the house.

I'm not here...

I am nowhere...

Nobody can see me...

I am air...

Thinking so...I hid from my parents' gaze...that time.

I'll return to that time.

I'm not here.

I'm not a man who existed in this world from the beginning.

1、2、1、2.....。

I'm just counting the numbers 1, 2...

I carve the same rhythm and head towards Seki-san.

「...Don't come!」

Finally...I'm in a distance where Seki-san's attack can reach.

「...You!」

Seki-san lets out a fist to me who's approaching her without stop.

But...I know.

Seki-san's fist won't hit me.

I'm not here after all.

I feel wind on my cheeks coming from Seki-san's fist.

But still...I move forward

「...Hiii!」

I finally jumped into Seki-san's bosom.

Seki-san feels fear and she screams.

Now then...what to do?

If this continues, Seki-san will take me down.

But, brakes won't work now that I'm here.

...Okay

「...Excuse me!」

I just then...

Embraced Seki-san's body with both my arms.

I don't know why someone surrendering to her should hug her but...

...Anyway

If I don't do this, my energy moving forward can't stop...!

「..... ! ! !」

Monyuuuu...!

I bury my face into Seki-san's rich breasts.

Un...soft

「...Y-You!」

Seki-san's mature body stiffens in my arms.

「W-What are you doing?」

...Err?

「I didn't resist Seki-san...so I tried surrendering but...」

Seki-san's trembling with her face blushing.

「L-Let me go!」

「Does Seki-san understand that I have no intention to resist her?」

...Seki-san

「I-I get it...I already get it so let go!」

Seki-san said...I let go of her.

「...Sure」

Seki-san glares at me...

「You...hugged my body...」

Seki-san's right arm extends to my neck like a python...!

...But

Seki-san didn't grab my throat but...

A thick metal cane...

「I think you should stop there...Seki-san」

The beauty in British gentleman dress...informs her senior guard.

「If you hurt him here...Kouzuki『Kakka's』excellent guard named 《Seki Show》 will cry」

The beat to death swordswoman, Fujimiya-san smiles.

「...I get it」

Seki-san lowers her hand.

「It's my defeat this time」

Great, that helps.

Turning back, Misuzu and others seem to be relieved as well.

「But...what's going on. He's able to penetrate in between my attack smoothly」

Seki-san seems to be unconvinced by what just happened.

「I think it is as this boy said...」

Fujimiya-san look at me.

「...As he said?」

「Yes. This boy had no intention to resist Seki-san at all. And, he believed that Seki-san won't attack a helpless man...」

Seki-san looks at me too.

「...Why can you trust me who's an enemy?」

...Err

「In the first place...Seki-san's not the enemy」

How should I explain this?

「Seki-san...you only thought that this boy is a vulgar man who has tricked

Misuzu-sama?」

Fujimiya-san spoke in my place.

「But...it seems to be different.」

「...Different?」

「Misuzu-sama is also a talented woman who has received『Kakka's』education on a daily basis. She won't be fooled by just a delinquent boy」

Misuzu comes forward as Fujimiya-san speaks.

「Yes. Seki-san...I thank your loyalty to grandfather but, I'll have you fired if you go too far...!」

Ah...this is.

Minaho-neesan's behavior.

I can tell.

Misuzu has changed a lot after meeting various people from『Kuromori』  
She's gotten stronger.

「Misuzu-sama...!」

Seki-san kneels on the spot due to Misuzu's majesty.

「Grandfather only set you up to see how Fujimiya-san and I would respond. He purposely made you fight because it's interesting. He actually didn't order to take away Danna-sama's life here」

「...Yes」

Seki-san's getting smaller.

「That's enough already...it's absurd to have conflict among ourselves while heinous criminals from US are coming to Japan」

Ruriko-san...

「Onesama...is that true?」

「Yes. A criminal named Cesario Viola and his party is approaching our surroundings. Today's guards were alert because of that...」

「Well...indeed, I think that the security for this year's symposium is much more heavy compared to the usual...」

Yoshiko-san's surprised.

「...Seki-san, return to your original work」

Misuzu orders the senior guard  
Seki-san...

「I am ordered to bring Misuzu-sama and that boy before『Kakka』」  
「Then, let's go right away. Let's have this end soon...」

We should better prepare for Viola's attack.  
When I say that...

「Grandfather is going to leave the theater right away, isn't he?」

Misuzu asks Seki-san.

「Yes. He should be reaching the other exit soon」

I see...When it comes to VIP like『Kakka』  
He even came in barely before it started...  
He's also leaving the theater through a special route.

「Misuzu-sama's asked to meet up in the Imperial hotel」

Seki-san said.  
Right...we've got to negotiate with Shirasaka family at the Imperial hotel after  
this.  
Then...Cesario Viola would be raiding.

「I'm still dressed like this. It'll take a while before I leave the theater」

Misuzu's still on her stage costume.  
She's still wearing make-up.

「I understand...I will stand as a guard」

Seki-san said but...

「Wait. I am Misuzu-sama's guard」

Fujimiya-san said in dissatisfaction

「Why don't you just guard Ruriko-sama?」  
「Chief Tanizawa asked me to protect both Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama」  
「Then, I'll change the order...I'll protect Misuzu-sama You'll be guarding Ruriko-  
sama」

「Sorry but...Seki-san's not my boss」

「My...Fujimiya-san, you're not going to listen to your senior's order?」

「...I won't」

Fujimiya-san holds the steel cane with warm eyes.

Seki-san sets up her fist.

「Stop this already!」

...Ruriko-san's...angry?!

「Both of you...did you not hear what Oneesama said?!」

Ruriko-san who's usually docile and composed gives her honest opinion...the two elite guards fixed their stance.

「...I'm very sorry」

「We were being foolish」

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san bow their heads to Ruriko-san.

「I will meet up with grandfather along with Misuzu-oneesama. Therefore, Seki-san and Fujimiya-san will be guarding Oneesama and me...」

「...Certainly」

「...By your will」

Misuzu speaks to Ruriko-san.

「Ruriko-san...it's dangerous to meet with grandfather in the Imperial hotel. It's predicted that the foreign bad guys will raid there」

「There's no way a place where Misuzu-oneesama and grandfather stays in can be dangerous...!」

Ruriko-san said clearly.

「I also have to talk to grandfather」

Ruriko-san...?

「The bad rumors inside Kouzuki house...I'd like to shake off the lie about Misuzu-oneesama and me being hostile using grandfather's power. I adore Oneesama...Oneesama's kind to me. We're cousins, we get along well...!」

「...Ruriko-san」

Misuzu admires the speech.

「It's meaningless for people inside Kouzuki house to fight. I think that it shouldn't exist...!」

Ruriko-san said but...

『Kakka's』the ringleader who scattered the spark of conflict in Kouzuki house. Seki-san and Fujimiya-san was fighting earlier because『Kakka』purposely ordered them so they will fight...

Seriously...what a troublesome man

「Understood...anyway, let's hurry back to the dressing room and change clothes」

Misuzu replied.



「...Michi, why did you come here?」

I ask Michi while we walk in the hallway.

「Kuromori-sama has sent me to protect Master」

Minaho-neesan's worried about me so she sent Michi?

I see...just like Seki-san earlier.

Since I went up the stage as Misuzu's lover...she thought of the possibility of me being assassinated by『Kakka's』subordinate...

Really...Minaho-neesan's clever

「...You should call them」

Misuzu whispered to me

「Danna-sama...you're worried about them?」

「Y-Yeah...」

Margo-san's there to guard them...

Katsuko-nee's eyes are sharp too.

Of course, Minaho-neesan won't misunderstand the situation.

I can leave Megu and Mana to them in peace

...But

Yukino...

Minaho-neesan hates Yukino completely...

I don't think she'll be abandoned in the theater.

But still, I'm worried.

「...It'll be fine」

Misuzu guessed what I'm thinking.

「Mana-san and Yukino-san are important last resorts until the negotiation with the Shirasaka family is over」

「But...Shirasaka Moritsugu has abandoned those two. They're under Cesario Viola's hit list」

「Yes, therefore...they're an important card」

Misuzu answers.

「The head of the Shirasaka house tries to kill the minor daughters to protect the honor of the house. If such facts were made public, it'll be the end of Shirasaka house」

For now it's just a matter of trying to hush up the matter about the criminal, Shirasaka Sousuke using the power of their house.

Though it's a big scandal...it's not a big problem related to the root of Shirasaka house.

But...if the head of Shirasaka house made a deal with a foreign murder organization.

Furthermore, even trying to kill Yukino and Mana who's a member of their clan just to seal their mouths...

It'll exceed the level of a scandal.

The authority of the house itself will breakdown.

「Therefore...they should be bringing Yukino-san as well」

Misuzu's consideration is right...

But...

「If you're worried then call them while we're taking a shower」

Un...that would be better.

...We have returned to Misuzu's dressing room

Today's performers...Misuzu, Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are heading to the



shower immediately.

「Seki-san, please come with us in the shower room. Fujimiya-san and Michi, please stay in the dressing room and protect Danna-sama」

Misuzu said.

「Just like Seki-san earlier...there will be someone who intend to take Danna-sama's life thinking that it'll be a helpful move to Grandfather」

Misuzu speaks sarcastically against Seki-san, but...  
That possibility is certainly there.  
Thinking that I'm a bad guy who fools Misuzu...there might be other people who will try to assassinate me.  
There are a lot of people who will do anything to gain『Kakka's』favor  
Besides...guards from famous families are in here.  
Even if they're guards...there are some who are good at killing instead of protecting.  
They should have enough talent to be an assassin.

「I don't mind protecting this one though?」

Seki-san looks at me with suspicious eyes.

「I have promised that I will take you to『Kakka』, I won't make any moves on him」

Her fascinating eyes...smile.

「Besides...I have found this one to be interesting...」

Misuzu...

「That one is my 'Danna-sama' I won't allow any impoliteness」  
「I won't do anything as such」

Seki-san said but...

「No...as Misuzu-sama orders, I will stay in the dressing room. Seki-san, you can guard the two」

Fujimiya-san tells Seki-san.

「What?...are you intending to order me?」

...Seriously.

Why does these two in bad terms?

Knowing their bad chemistry,『Kakka』dispatched Seki-san...

「I don't have that intention...however, I think that it's better to use my notoriety in order for other guards not to come in this room」

Fujimiya-san's notoriety...

...The beat to death swordsman.

「You're right...that suits you better」

「Yes. Seki-san is the only one with a good reputation from the outside...」

「What do yo mean by that?」

「I'm only saying that your surface is very good...!」

The bewitching beauty and a crossdressing beauty...

The atmosphere between them becomes tense again.

「Now, let's go to the shower. Seki-san!」

Ruriko-san said strongly.

「Yes, let's go...Seki-san」

Yoshiko-san calmly enters in between them

「...Fujimiya-san, remember this」

「Well...we'll have to settle this someday」

Their faces are smiling but their eyes are scary.

「Then, Danna-sama...we'll be going」

To change the atmosphere of the place...

Misuzu leans close to me.

「I'll be back soon so please wait for me」

Saying that...she gave me a kiss.

「G-Gosh...!」

Seki-san's surprised.

「Ooh!」

Fujimiya-san's in wonder.

「...M-Misuzu-oneesama!」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are speechless.

「...It's the usual」

Michi said calmly.

「Usual?」

Seki-san asks Michi.

「Yes...the two of them are a couple that love each other after all」

Ruriko-san's ears are red.

「...I've read about lovers kissing however...it seems to be true. Yoshiko?」

「Yes...it's my first time seeing it as well」

The two who were not given any sexual knowledge are stunned.

「...Danna-samaaan~」

Misuzu sticks out her tongue.

I suck up that tongue.

Our tongues entwine.

「...Y-Yoshiko, what are they doing?」

「I-I wonder...I don't know」

Misuzu releases her lips way from my mouth...

「I'll be serving you a lot later okay?」

「Yeah...I'm looking forward to it」

Misuzu speaks the women who are puzzled except for Michi.

「Thanks for the wait! Let us go!」



Misuzu heads to the shower room...

「Then, I will be guarding outside the door.」

Fujimiya-san said.

「No, there's no need. I feel bad to make you stand in the hallway. Please stay here」

I said, but...

「If I don't show myself in the hallway...the demonstrative effect that I'm guarding you is none」

True...if she stays inside the dressing room, the people won't know that Fujimiya-san's here  
Well that's true but.

「...Besides」

...What?

「Won't Kuromori-sama be calling someone?」

Ah, she's listening to our conversation a while ago?

「I do not have a habit of eavesdropping so I will take my leave」

I-I see.

「...Sorry. Thank yo for the consideration」

Fujimiya-san stares at me.

「You really are peculiar...Kuromori-san」

...What?

「From what I see...it's as if you're not someone from the underworld」

...Underworld?

「I do know what kind of house『Kuromori』is」

Right...this person is an elite of the Kouzuki Security service.  
There's no way she's unaware of『Kuromori』

「However...I don't remember Kuromori having men with your age...」

...Yeah

The Kouzuki security service's『Kuormori』file...  
It doesn't have me existing on it.

「Well, that's fine. Whoever you are...I'll only protect you according to Misuzu-sama's orders」

Fujimiya-san laughs.

「Besides...Thanks to you, I had the privilege of feeling refreshed multiple times today」

Me...?

「First...you stood up and applauded for Ruriko-sama's sake. Second, you went and bring flowers for Misuzu-sama. Third, you also gave Ruriko-sama flowers...and lastly」

U-Un...?!

「You made Seki-san panic...plunged into her unarmed, and even embraced her...To be honest...I was bursting in laughter inside my mind...!」

...Really.

Fujimiya-san have a bad relationship with Seki-san...

---

## 239. Inside the dressing Room

---

「Then, I will take my leave...」

Saying that...Fujimiya-san stands up.

It's only me and Michi in the dressing room now

Misuzu left Michi hear means...

Even Fujimiya-san knows that the enemy won't come here.

For example...if chief Tanizawa comes by the order of Kouzuki『Kakka』

Then ordered Fujimiya-san to get rid of me...

For her, 『Kakka's』order is on higher priority than Misuzu...

Then...the possibility of me getting killed is high.

Therefore...Misuzu left Michi here in case of emergency.

Misuzu and Ruriko-san should be guarded by Seki-san perfectly.

「...Master?」

Michi looks at me anxiously.

...Haa

I'm a bit tired...

It's only been thirty minutes but it's all mentally hard.

「Michi, come here」

「...Yes?」

「Be my dakimakura」

Michi's surprised.

「Yes...certainly!」

Michi steps forward toddling then brings her small body to me.

I sat on the chair of the dressing room and hugged Michi's standing body.

「Don't be so nervous...relax」

「...Y-Yes」

Michi's body softens.

I rub my cheeks on her flat chest.

I put my hands behind Michi and rub her small butt.

「Haaaaaa...that was scary」

I leak out those words along with a sigh.

「Right...Seki-sama is a fearful one...」

Michi pats my head.

「Master did well」

「...Yeah」

I feel my heart calming down in Michi's arms.

I have to switch my mind or else...

I can't keep going on...

「...I'm very sorry」

Michi said...

「About what...?」

「My body lacks in feminine charm...master cannot feel relieved...are you dissatisfied?」

「...That's not true」

I answered immediately.

「If Michi's not here right now...I'd go crazy you know」

「...Why?」

「Michi's always so humble. If it's not necessary, you only stay on the side silently. What a gentle girl...」

「That's not true...」

Michi said bashfully.

「Imagine it...if it was Mana that's with me here. I'll have to keep desperately talking in order to release her anxiety」

Un...I need to move as Mana's guardian with all my strength.  
There's no time to rest my mind.

「If it was Megu...she'd try to be a bit more modest, but. Megu's mentally weak. She might've fainted during my confrontation with Seki-san earlier」

I'd like Megu to have a bit more nerve.  
She doesn't need to have as much nerve as Yukino.....

「Much worse...if I was here alone with Yukino...!」  
「...What will happen?」

Michi looks down at me from above.

「I don't want that. Taking care of her hysteria in here...!」

Michi's face loosens from my smile.

「Was I useful to master?」  
「Un...It's reassuring that Michi's here」  
「...I'm glad」

Michi said.

「This ass feels nice...!」

I enjoy the feeling of Michi's ass.

「Is that true...?!」  
「Yeah, it's trained well...it's tender like raw rubber. It feels better than anyone's ass I've touched until now」

I praise Michi's ass.

「...My everything is master's」

Michi answers with a blushing face.  
Her body that she had complex on is being praised...she's excited.  
Michi's M heart is on fire.  
...This is bad.

「Un...I'll give you love once we have time」

I have to hold back now...I told michi

「Yes...Michi can give her chastity whenever you want」

Michi said with her breathing turned rough.



「We're going to show it to Misuzu」

「...Yes」

Oh...what a cute creature Michi is

「Michi...kiss me」

「...EH?」

「Kiss me by yourself」

Michi...

「Excuse me then...」

Her nervous lips comes close to me.

「...Nn~」

Our lips overlap.

「...Un, well done. Good girl」

I pat the head of the embarrassed Michi.

「...Master」

Michi's ears are red.

「Sit on my lap」

「...Yes?」

「I'll massage your breasts while calling Minaho-neesan」

Mich sits on my lap.

「Flip your skirt...then place your raw ass against my knee」

「...Yes」

Michi's soft legs and ass can be felt in my legs.

I then embraced Michi from behind with my right hand...

I touch Michi's breasts...

「...Ahn」

What the...I thought that she's a wash board but.

I can tell that there's a small thin layer of fat under her skin.

There's a foundation for her breast done here.

Un...I'm sure that they'll grow when you rub this.

I grope and grind Michi's chest.

「Please don't be too rough」

「But it won't be stimulating if I just touch it lightly you know?」

I massage Michi's chest on top of her uniform.

「...Ah, it's embarrassing」

「You like being embarrassed right?」

「...Yes」

Our figures are reflected in the dressing room mirror.

「Look at yourself in the mirror」

「Aaaaah...it's embarrassing」

Michi who's a masochist...trembles.

「You love being embarrassed, right?」

「Yes...I love it...I love it a lot...Masteeeeer...!」

Really...Michi's a good girl.

She's able to make my heart completely relax.

「Try to stay quiet as I'll call Minaho-neesan」

「...Yes」

「Don't let out your voice...hold it back」

「...Certainly」

While groping Michi's chest with my right hand...

I take out my phone with my left hand.

There's two bars on the antenna.

Well, it'll do somehow

I pressed call on Minaho-neesan's name...

『Hello...Yoshida-kun?』

Minaho-neesan immediately answers.

「Un. I'm safe somehow... I'm with Misuzu and Ruriko-san. Michi's here too」

I reported briefly.

『...What's the situation?』

「Kouzuki『Kakka』ordered...I'll be heading to the Imperial hotel along with Misuzu. The guard will be chief Tanizawa's subordinates Seki-san and Fujimiya-san」

『The two elites of Kouzuki security service?』

Minaho-neesan's surprised.

The combination of the renowned guard of『Kakka』-Seki-san and the beat to death swordswoman-Fujimiya-san...is exceptional as expected.

「Then...Ruriko-san's also coming together. Ruriko-san had something to talk about with『Kakka』she said」

『...Is that so? Well, I don't think there's a need for worry if you're with the two top elite guards』

「Then...Where's Minaho-neesan and others right now?」

『We're at the parking lot. We're leaving now...we'll also be filing with Kouzuki-sama's convoy』

「...Convoy?」

『Kouzuki-sama's forming a line of a dozen cars...we're departing with the guidance of the patrol car, so we'll be sticking with that』

If they're going to move along with『Kakka』...they'll have enough guards. That would be safe.

『In exchange...one of our cars will be left in the theater』

...Car?

『Though we went in with three cars...if you and Michi and Misuzu-san will be heading to the hotel, then we'll only need two. Director Yamaoka from Kouzuki security service told us to reduce the number of cars if we want to join in』

『Kakka's』travel...is managed by Director Yamaoka.

「That's why...I'm driving the Benz, and Margo's on the passenger seat. Nei, Mana and Megu's on the back」

Normally...Minaho-neesan is Viola's target from Shirasaka Moritsugu's request so she should seat on the back.

But...it's better for Margo-san to move freely just in case something happens.

Therefore, Minaho-neesan's on the driver's seat and Margo-san's on the passenger seat.

...Ah, speaking of which.

「Uhm...Minaho-neesan」

『I know, it's about Yukino-san, right?』

...What happened to Yukino?

『She'll be on the Maserati along with Katsuko. It's fine. I won't throw her away while you're not watching』

Haa...with Katsuko-nee?

Well...it's much more peaceful than being with Megu or Mana.

『I feel sorry to Katsuko but...it's hard to deal with that hysteric girl』

My my...that's the same thing I said.

「Yukino's bad with Katsuko-nee so I think that combination is the correct answer.」

I answered.

『Anyway...don't worry here. Once we head outside the theater, Kudou-san's team will follow』

Kudou-papa's backup unit will also start moving to guard『Kakka』

Well...I can't imagine Viola attacking such a firm guard system.

This is Japan.

Viola doesn't have sense of locality in Tokyo

『Kakka's』convoy will only go through the main street.

It'll be difficult to attack from anywhere.

『Let's meet up at the hotel...okay?』

「Got it...Minaho-neesan」

『Ah...Mana-san and others also want to talk to you』

The person on the other side changes

『Onii-chan...you okay?』

「Yeah, I'm fine. I'm with Misuzu and Ruriko-san, we have the two strongest

guards of Kouzuki security service」

『I'm glad...we're going to the hotel first then』

「I'll follow right away」

『Un. I'll give the phone to Megu-oneechan』

I hear Megu's voice

『...Yoshi-kun』

「Don't make such a worried face. I'm fine here. I'll follow up right away」

『Un...I'll wait』

...Then

『Hello, Yo-chaaan?』

「Yes, I'm fine...Nei-san」

『Ehehe...that's great. I was worried』

「I'll meet you up in the hotel right away. Wait for me.」

『Hurry up and come! Get it?』

「Yes...I get it」

...Then

『...Hello, Yoshida-kun』

...Margo-san too

「Yes, I'm here」

『I don't intend to threaten you but perhaps the enemies may aim at you guys more than us』

...Margo-san?

『We have secured Shirasaka Sousuke, Yukino-san and Mana-san but the enemies might aim for Misuzu-san or Ruriko-san as well』

...Right

The two granddaughters are perfect as negotiation card with『Kakka』

「But, we'll be fine. We have Fujimiya-san and Seki-san...Michi's here as well」

I said to reassure Margo-san.

Margo-san knows the power of the elites of Kouzuki security service.

『I don't doubt their ability but if there's three people trying to escort you and Misuzu...then at least two of them can freely fight while there's only one sticking with you. I think that's slightly severe when it comes to war potential』

As a pro guard...Margo-san made a conclusion.

Me, Misuzu, Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san...there's two people needed to defend the four of us.

The only one remaining fights the enemy...that might be tough.

『We'll contact Kudou-san...we'll have him send someone around』

「...At Kudou-san's?」

『Yeah, Kudou-san have people specialized in combat only. We'll have those people surround you』

We've got enough guards here.

What we currently need is a combat only staff.

『Ah, don't tell Seki about this...those people are elite. I think they hate Kudou-san's team coming to help』

Un...Kudou-papa's behind the scenes team.

I think that it's incompatible with Seki-san and Fujimiya-san's elegance...

「Got it」

『...Anyway, be careful』

「...Yes, Margo-san. I'll leave Minaho-neesan and others to you」

『Leave this to...later then』

...Then, the call ends

I want to hear Katsuko-nee's voice...

...Yukino too.

I think that she'll only scream or complain.

「...Masteeeeeeeer」

Michi whispers with a bright red face.

「...Hm, what's wrong Michi?」

Michi...

「I've gotten wet...」

Putting back my phone on my pocket...I use my left hand to reach out inside Michi's skirt.

Michi's panty is wet.

「Michi...you're easy to get wet when aroused」

「...I'm very sorry」

I talk to Michi through the mirror of the dressing room.

Michi on top of my legs..

She's opening her legs widely right now and her wet crotch is clearly seen in the mirror.

「I might be lewd. Do you hate the lewd Michi?」

Michi looks at the mirror with moist eyes.

「...I like it. It's my Michi after all. You're cute, Michi」

I lick the back of Michi's ear from behind

「...Hyaaaan~!」

Michi trembles on top of my legs...

Her panty's overflowing with love nectar again

「...Let's kiss, Michi」

「Yes」

Michi turned her face to me.

I fixed my post a bit so it can be seen in the mirror properly...then I kiss Michi's lips.

Our tongues twine.

Michi's aroused as she look at her own foolishness in the mirror.

「...Master, I」

Michi speaks.

「More...I want to be treated like an object y Master. I want to be Master's possession」

「It's Misuzu and mine, right?」

「Yes...I want to be the toy of the two of you. I want to be played like a toy...!」

Michi passionately seeks my tongue.

...I

「...You already are. Michi is Misuzu and my toy」

「...Aaaahn. I'm happy」

「But...hold back for a bit more. We'll do it when Misuzu's with us」

「...Yes」

The playtime while Misuzu's gone is only limited until here.

It's about time they come back from the shower.

「Let's kiss once again...then we'll leave it as that」

Michi...

「Uhm...I don't mind」

「...Eh?」

「I can lick Master's thing and drink it」

...Michi

I caress Michi's cheeks gently.

Michi's 15 year old skin is slippery.

「We can postpone that for now. I want to stay strained until we reach the Hotel. I'll relax if I ejaculate here」

「...Yes」

「I'm glad that Michi says that...actually, I want to do Michi. But, we've got a situation...so understand」

...Michi

「Yes...Master」

Saying that...she rubs her cheeks on me.



The shower group came back after a few minutes.

They haven't seen Michi and my play.

Ruriko-san Yoshiko-san, Misuzu, and Seki-san comes to the dressing room...

Fujimiya-san still stands outside the corridor.

「Danna-sama, I'm back...Michi, have you taken care of Danna-sama?」



Misuzu asks Michi...

Michi...

「Yes...Rather than me taking care of him...Master has taken care of me」

「Well...that's another point increased on punishing Michi.」

「Yes...please punish me. Misuzu-sama...!」

「...Be prepared for tonight. I'll have you confess how were you taken care off」

「...Yes, Misuzu-sama」

Oh...these two masochists...

Does postponing sex increases the pleasure for them?

I somehow understand.

...By the way.

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san have completely changed their clothes in the shower room.

They're wearing the Ojou-sama school uniform Misuzu usually wears.

Un...changing their clothes to uniform...

Yoshiko-san's huge breasts can be seen.

Ruriko-san also have a good style for a 15 year old girl.

Or rather...this girl's legs is thin and long.

Leaving that aside...

Misuzu...why are you wearing a bathrobe?

「I'm sorry...I'll change right away」

Misuzu tells Ruriko-san and others.

She takes out her change of clothes from inside the bag.

Her underwear's there too.

Misuzu...no way?

You're naked under the bathrobe?

「Danna-sama...please」

Misuzu comes before me holding her new underwear like it's natural.

「...Here」

She handed the panty and bra to me.

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are surprised...

Misuzu...they want to show the two our relationship.

「...Got it」

I take the underwear like usual.

「Here...Danna-sama」

Misuzu opens her bathrobe.

Her fair naked skin...and cherry colored nipples.

Then, her hairless pussy becomes exposed.

Then...Misuzu dropped her bathrobe.

「Come here, I'll put on your panty」

「...Please」

Kneeling on Misuzu's feet...I put on one foot in the panty.

Then, I pull up Misuzu's soft legs...

Her firm ass is tightly wrapped by a thin cloth.

「Next is the bra」

「Okaay~!」

Misuzu smiles.

I put the bra on Misuzu's boobs and fit the meat on the cup.

Then, I attached the hook on the back.

「...Thank you. Danna-sama」

The naked Misuzu is sexy but it's also nice if she's wearing just underwear.

Misuzu wants a kiss from me.

I made our lips touch.

Misuzu doesn't like such light kisses so she clings to me and asked for a long kiss.

Our tongues entwine.

「Does Kuromori-sama always help out Misuzu-sama on changing clothes?」

Yoshiko-san has a blank face.

「When it's just the two of us...then always, right Danna-sama?」

It's not always but...Misuzu wants to brag her relationship with me.

「Well...she's right」

「...Do you not find helping a woman change clothes unpleasant?」

Ruriko-san asks.

「No, not at all. She's my Misuzu after all」

I answered clearly

「Is that so?」

Ruriko-san isn't satisfied with the answer.

It seems to be unthinkable on her past world view.

「Ruriko-san, you have Yoshiko-san helping you change clothes, don't you?」

Misuzu asked.

「She's a woman...and my『retainer』」

「Danna-sama and I have a very close relationship too. I hide no secret from Danna-sama and he has never lied to me before」

Misuzu in her underwear tells Ruriko-san with confidence.

「...Are you not ashamed even if you are naked?」

「Rather, I can't love Danna-sama if I'm not naked」

「...You can't love if you're not naked?」

Ruriko-san who doesn't have knowledge about sex doesn't understand what Misuzu is saying.

「Please stop the flirting for now...please hurry up and change」

Seki-san tells Misuzu.

「Yes, sorry. Seki-san. Danna-sama...please dress me」

Misuzu takes her uniform out of her bag.

「Sure got it」

I dress Misuzu as I speak.

In front of Ruriko-san...Misuzu's in good mood as she's being dressed up by me.

「Seki-san...is it common for a man intimate to you help you change clothes?」

Ruriko-san asks Seki-san.

Seki-san...

「The upper class people...all have different hobbies from each other...I don't know what's common!」

She answered with a red face.  
un...Seki-san has been guarding various people before she became『Kakka's』  
guard  
Well...she has seen various people.  
Therefore...she can't stop Misuzu's act.  
...It's only changing clothes.

「But...I find that Misuzu-sama really trusts Kurormori-sama from the bottom of her heart」

Yoshiko-san looks at us as she speak.

「You're right...Kruomori-sama's very devoted too...」

Ruriko-san said.  
It seems that she sees me helping out Misuzu change as『devoted』...

---

## 240. Pre-departure inspection

---

「No, this is a bit different from devotion...!」

Misuzu tells Ruriko-san.

「Danna-sama has helped me changed my clothes just now but I also do all I can to serve Danna-sama. It's my pleasure to serve Danna-sama. I think that I'm born to give this one a happy life」

Ruriko-san's surprised by Misuzu's answer.

「Misuzu-oneesama...does Onii-sama's existence that big for you?」

「Yes...I love him from the bottom of my heart」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「Love...I can understand family love and lord-retainer love but...I don't understand the love between men and women」

What Ruriko-san knows are only the depiction of love coming out of the novels she read.

That also had『Kakka』exclude all that has sexual notations...

She really doesn't know anything but fairy tale love story.

「I definitely call Danna-sama on morning when I wake up and at night before sleeping」

Could it be...Misuzu/

It's about the permission to pee?

Isn't that a bit too early to tell Ruriko-san...?

「Then...Just hearing Danna-sama's voice makes me feel relieved. I feel happy. Just knowing that Danna-sama's fine...it makes me happy」

...Misuzu?

「Meeting him in person makes me happier. Just by walking side by side, it makes my heart throb. Danna-sama always listens to whatever I say with all his best. Whatever I want, whatever I seek...he's always able to sense it. He's always doing all his best...that he was able to overcome the wall of my heart...!」

Misuzu smiles.

「...The wall of your heart?」

Ruriko-san asks with serious eyes.

「Yes...living the life as a daughter of Kouzuki house...I've made a wall surrounding my heart in regards to people. Everyone around me...the adults nor schoolmates aren't bad people but...they all feel like they only want to make contact with me for the power of『Kouzuki』house...」

「I can understand that」

Ruriko-san nods.

『Kakka's』two granddaughters lived having the same trouble.

「I...hate being raised up or being neglected so anyway...I just smile at everyone, then be calmly contact everyone gently. Then...not to make any particularly close relationship. If someone's too close with me, they'll be targeted with grudge and jealousy, they'll be having hardships...」

「Yes...I am the same as Oneesama. Try to be as proper as possible, always smiling...and yet, try not to be intimate with anyone」

「But...Ruriko-san has Yoshiko-san with her」

Misuzu smiles.

「Yes...I'm really saved by Yoshiko's existence」

Ruriko-san speaks her gratitude to the『retainer』girl who's three years older than her.

「I'm unworthy of those words...」

「No. Yoshiko is with me so I was able to stay well until to this day」

「...Ruriko-sama」

The master-retainer look at each other.

「That's enviable...but I didn't receive a『retainer』like Yoshiko-san」

Misuzu look at the two

「...To be honest...since when I entered high school, it feels very suffocating... my heart is completely worn out. Always alone...a life where I can't let my guard down to anyone」

Both Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are listening to Misuzu's talk seriously. Since they're in the same position...Misuzu's talk isn't somebody else's problem. Ah...Seki-san and Michi are listening interestingly too.

「Then...the suffering of my heart was understood. Grandfather has introduced someone to me. I was able to release my mind for a few hours a week in that place」

...That is.

The part time job at Nagisa's shop...

The lesbian play with Nagisa?...

Though it's a part time job, Nagisa seems to have put Misuzu on the back of the shop and not let her serve customers...

But still, doing work that has nothing to do with Kouzuki house or the Ojou-sama school...it's a nice change of pace.

「Is it a therapy or something?」

Yoshiko-san asks Misuzu.

「Well...that's the feeling」

Well, your heart will surely be healed if you're surrounded by the beautiful flowers in the shop...

Afterwards, I think that it's the lesbian play.

「That person has introduced Danna-sama to me」

Misuzu looks at me.

「Danna-sama has accepted me without knowing that I'm someone from the Kouzuki『house』... No, even if he knew the lineage of『Kouzuki』Danna-sama never changed his love at me. He's not concerned about the house, blood relations at all.」

「Then this means that he trully loves Misuzu-oneesama only...!」

Ruriko-san looks at me.

「Yes...even if I get banished from『Kouzuki』house, Danna-sama will continue to love me」

...I

「Whatever happens to Misuzu...I'll take responsibility for it. I'll make you happy」

「Why, Misuzu-sama? That will be going against『Kakka's』will. It's a suicidal act to do such things」

Seki-san opened her mouth without thinking.

「It's not a suicidal act. I will survive anything. I've got a lot of family that I have to keep happy...!」

That's right, I

「Misuzu's already my family. We're already family. That's why I'll protect her. I'll definitely make her happy」

「Are you an idiot?...Reality isn't that easy...!」

Seki-san said but...

「I know that reality is harsh...but she's already my 『family』 I won't turn back. I only have to go forward...!」

「Yes. Misuzu is Danna-sama's『family』」

Misuzu looks at me happily

「Michi...you're also『family』too」

Michi's eyes turn moist.

「Yes...Master! Misuzu-sama!」

Ruriko-san...

「Onesama...what kind of relationship is Onesama's『family』?」

Ruriko-san knows Kouzuki house, clan, it's bloodline.

But...she doesn't know『family』

The kind of『family』we are talking about...



「It's a relationship where you'd think of helping out no matter how hard it is, without thinking that it's troublesome...the want to make them happy...that kind of relationship」

That is my definition of『family』

「Yes, therefore...Danna-sama is always thinking of making me, Michi, and the other『family's』happiness Me too...I think about how to make Danna-sama, Michi and the『family's』happiness We don't depend on each other. We cooperate and consider the other party. That relationship makes me happy. I am grateful to God that Danna-sama made me his『family』」

...Misuzu.

「Do you prefer that family more than Kouzuki house?」

Yoshiko-san asks with a surprised face.

「Yes...there's only happiness Being Danna-sama's『family』...!」

Those words are heavy for me.

...I've got to work hard.

I've got to make Misuzu happier.

「I don't understand」

Ruriko-san said sadly.

「My...Ruriko-san, aren't you in a comfortable relationship with Yoshiko-san?」

「Yes...I feel easy when I'm with Yoshiko」

「That is the same. The only difference is that we don't have a master-slave relationship...but equal...we've got a lot of members in the family」

「...What is a lot?」

「『Sisters』!」

Misuzu answers.

「The me right now has a lot of『Little sisters』I adore, and『elder sisters』I respect. All of us have become family through Danna-sama. We're a family sharing a common destiny. Everyone understands that the individual happiness leads to the happiness of the『family』...we always trust and cooperate with each other」

That is『Kuromori』

「There's no blood relation in our family. People who have different birth and growth...they became『family』by their own will. It's a family that accepts each other.」

Hearing me, Seki-san...

「What secret society is that?」

Misuzu laughs.

「It's not something that big. Weak people not yielding to the strong, people who lend their shoulders at each other as they fight the fate, they became family by chance」

「Yes...Misuzu's right」

Ruriko-san...

「I don't understand. A relationship that's more important than the『Kouzuki』lineage...」

「But, Ruriko-san understands that Danna-sama is someone you can rely on, right?」

「Yes...I do. Looking at Kuromori-sama's actions...he has his own proper thoughts...he's a very courageous person」

「It's fine if you understand just that for now...」

Misuzu said in satisfaction.

Misuzu's dress up is over.

「Now...it's about time we go」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san thinks...

Seki-san too...

She must be doubting that『Kuromori』and me have a negative effect on Misuzu. Furthermore, she's wondering if this will expand to Ruriko-san.

「There's no need for you to worry so much」

Misuzu smiles at Seki-san.

「I will properly solve the problems in the Kouzuki house with Grandfather properly. Ruriko-san, you also allow my relationship with Danna-sama, don't

you?」

「That is...Misuzu-oneesama and Kuromori-sama really loves each other, I understand that...but」

Ruriko-san falters.

「『Kouzuki』house...」

「Therefore...I will be negotiating with grandfather. If so, you don't mind, do you?」

「Onesama...do you really intend to leave『Kouzuki』house?」

Ruriko-san...seems to be thinking that Misuzu will be eloping with me. Is this what means to be going against『Kakka's』will?...

「I am prepared for that. My life is being with Danna-sama」

Misuzu clearly said.

「If you have that resolution then...Ruriko won't say anything anymore. Misuzu-oneesama should go the way she believes」

Ruriko-san doesn't have the concept of deciding of her own fate. Therefore, she's confused from what Misuzu's saying.

Seki-san...she has her own clear opinion but she won't assert herself strongly. That's why, she's quiet for now.

Both of them are people who think that it's natural to obey『Kakka's』order For them, they can't do anything about Misuzu who said she'll talk directly to『Kakka』

「I'd like Ruriko-san to be there when I talk with Grandfather」

Misuzu said.

「Yes. That way's better...I also want to know the progress of the situation...」

Ruriko-san answers.



Leaving the dressing room.

Fujimiya-san's standing, holding on her cane.

「...You took quite some time」

「I'm very sorry. I talked to Ruriko-san for a while」

Misuzu answers

「Danna-sama...sorry」

I'm pushing the cart that's carrying Misuzu and Ruriko-san's costumes and luggage 「I don't mind. This is a man's job」

I'd like Michi and the two guards to watch around properly...  
It's also natural for me to carry the luggage of my『woman』

「I asked to have the car I'm using to be at the stage door but?」

At the exit of the dressing room...Seki-san asks the guard wearing Kouzuki security service uniform.

「Yes...it's parked in the front」

The security guard handed the key.

「...Thanks」

Seki-san takes the key.

「...It's a state of the art VIP guard car」

Looking at the car outside, Fujimiya-san gives her admiration.  
The car is a huge limousine.

「Yes, it's a car that got delivered this month. As my personal car」

Seki-san puffs her chest.  
So...this is Seki-san's private car?  
The body of the car is painted in pink.

「This is『Pink Cadillac』?」

Fujimiya-san smiles.

「It's only the exterior. The inside is different. The body and the engine are all specially made」

Seki-san speaks boastfully.

「The bulletproof glass and armor are all new tech...it's also designed to be strong against impacts」

Fujimiya-san taps the body of the car with her hands wrapped in leather gloves.

A sound that has the insides filled.

The unconventional American car look is a complete fake.

「The car's considerably heavier because of the armor, right?」

Fujimiya-san asks Seki-san

「Yes. Because of that, we've changed the engine to a high power one. It has a bad fuel cost but...that's inevitable. The suspension are all custom made too...」

「If you turn it to a high power engine, then the engine will also be heavy. The body is heavy, the engine is heavy...as expected, if the one using it is a heavy then the special car gets heavier too」

Fujimiya-san flips Seki-san's switch.

「I'm not that heavy!」

「My...I didn't mean it like that. Seki-san's been given by chief Tanizawa a heavy duty of protecting『Kakka』 That's what I mean by『heavy』」

「...Is that so?」

「But...if you react that much from what I said...could it be that Seki-san is recently worrying about her weight?」

「I don't! I'm not worrying about it!」

「Right...Seki-san is an elite top guard after all so she doesn't need to worry about the weight that increases every day...」

...These two, seriously.

Both of them are adults already and yet...their compatibility is bad.

「By the way...can I test this state of the art armor?」

Fujimiya-san smiles at Seki-san.

「Test...?」

「Yes, I'm interested in the effects of the new technology. I think I would like to test the robustness of this car body...how much can it endure my blow」

Fujimiya-san swings her special 3k metal cane.

「I'd like to know the strength of the armor of the fender here」

「S-Stop...!」

「It's fine. I will only strike with my full power. It'll only dent the armor. Even if a hole opens the armor, I'll stop to the degree where it would hinder driving the car」

Fujimiya-san exerts effort.

Power comes to the hand holding the stick.

「D-Don't! Fujimiya Reika!」

Seki-san shouted Fujimiya-san's name in panic.

Speaking of which, Fujimiya-san's name is Reika...

The beauty named Reika wears a gallant men's clothing...she looks like a Takarazuka male role.

「...That's enough playtime, Fujimiya-san」

Misuzu said.

「Neither Ruriko-san nor I want to ride a car with a dent on it」

Ruriko-san nods at Misuzu's back.

「By your will...I will do the armor test on a different location」

Fujimiya-san bows at the two...

「...Geez」

Seki-san opens the door in anger.[

「Now...please come in Misuzu-sama, Ruriko-sama」

The two of them try to step into the car...

「...Wait」

I stop the two

「What's wrong?」

Ruriko-san turned back to me looking surprised.

「This car is sent by someone from Kouzuki security service?」

I don't know who it is but one of the guards brought this from the parking lot

「...It is, what about it?」

Seki-san looks at me.

「I think we should check the car first」

「Are you saying that you can't trust the work of Kouzuki security service?」

Seki-san shows displeasure from what I said.

「That's not it...if I was the enemy, then I'll blend with the guards and set up something in this car」

A transmitter or a wiretap.

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san looks at each other.

「Obey Danna-sama's words...check it immediately」

The two guards jumped into the car

While they're checking through the sheets and interior...

「...There's one」

「...Here too」

The hidden equipment come out one after another

「Please wait a moment」

Fujimiya-san takes out a phone size machine from her pocket 「It's a machine to check if there's suspicious signals are being sent out...!」

She walks around the car with the machine while explaining to us.

「...It's okay now. There doesn't seem to be any other equipment installed in here」

Fujimiya-san said

「The『enemy』has already entered Kouzuki security service...」

Seki-san shows a bitter face.

「The enemy is a genuine pro. What should we do, should we report to director Yamaoka?」

Fujimiya-san asks Seki-san.

「Let's stop...we don't know who the enemy is, everyone wearing uniform would be just suspicious of each other」

「The site would be confused and just panic...」

「Perhaps...that's also the aim of the『enemy』」

Seki-san said.

「If it's now...even if the『enemy』enters, the command system of those in uniform is perfect. Though they have infiltrated...they shouldn't have penetrated the group leader class. The numbers of those are only few」

If the information is only that the enemy has blended in...the function of the uniform group will be paralyzed.

Actually, even though only a few of them can enter the bottom level...if they overreact, the entire organization will be damaged.

「We'll report to Chief Tanizawa through a private line. Let's ask chief to identify the sneaky agent」

「You're right...director Yamaoka will only confuse the site」

Seki-san contacts chief Tanizawa via mobile

Meanwhile, I load the luggage to the car...

Misuzu and Ruriko-san enters the car.

...Then.

Fujimiya-san goes on the passenger seat.

Michi and I take the second row of the limousine.

The back seat, Misuzu, Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san.

The limousine seats have the second row facing backwards, so we're facing with the people on the rear seats.

Yet, Michi and I are sitting to match with Ruriko-san's knee

Seki-san who finished the call opens the door and goes to the driver seat...

「Then...why are you in the passenger seat?」

She asks Fujimiya-san...

「This car is Seki-san's private car after all...!」

「I think that it's a rule in Kouzuki security service that the subordinate drives at such case...」

Err...Seki-san and Fujimiya-san are both top elites under chief Tanizawa of Kouzuki security service.



Seki-san is selected as『Kakka's』personal guard though...

Who's top and who's bottom?

「Therefore...I leave the driving to Seki-san」

Fujimiya-san said calmly.

「You're younger than me right?」

「However...I entered Kouzuki security service ahead of you. I was 16 years old when I was scouted by chief Tanizawa directly」

「You see...after I graduated from college, I studied in Europe! I joined in the company with advanced professional education...it has nothing to do with my age at joining!」

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san aren't bulging.

「Seki-san, if you want it by all means I don't mind driving but my driving is rough you know? I might end up scratching Seki-san's treasured car. Are you still okay with that?」

Seki-san...

「Geez! I get it already! I just have to drive, right?!」

She gets in the driver seat angrily.

---

## 241. The three together...!

---

「Everyone...have you put on your seatbelts?」

Seki-san checks us through the rear mirror

「It'll shake for a bit but please don't mind it」

The engine starts...

Torurururuunnnnn...!

The engine turns lightly...as expected of a custom car.

The sound of the engine is deep.

It's quite a high power engine.

「Then...we're going!」

...Then

The car began to move and suddenly shakes greatly.

Michi and I who are sitting facing the back bent forward.

On the contrary, Misuzu and the girls were strongly pressed against the seat...

Ah...true, this car is heavy.

Since we're forcibly moving a heavy car with a high power engine...the behavior is rough.

If not, it won't even move an inch.

「I prefer the quiet cars. If this was rolls Royce, then a glass of water won't spill when it starts...」

Fujimiya-san speaks sarcastically.

「Sorry but...I prefer the wild taste of the American cars...」

「I think that Cadillac has a very low degree of perfection as a car. Since before, American made luxury cars are synonymous to bad taste, isn't it?」

Seki-san's fighting spirit burns from what Fujimiya-san said.

「Fujimiya-san...what company owns Rolls-Royce right now?」

「...It's under the German company BMW's umbrella」

「Bentley?」

「Under the control of German Volkswagen group」

「Lotus?」

「It's acquired by a state-owned company in Malaysia!」

「Austin?」

「It's bought by a Chinese enterprise!」

「Jaguar and Land Rover?」

「It's under an Indian company right now!」

Fujimiya-san glares at Seki-san.

「Seki-san...you're well known with international companies so of course you know everything you have asked, am I right?」

「No~! Please do not overestimate me. I have fields that I am weak from too. Especially automobile industry...!」

Lies...it's obvious that she's well-informed.

「But, is that so? I understood it from Fujimiya-san's words. The UK car manufacturers who were proud of their great power now don't even have the shadow of their former selves. Is there no car manufacturer left in the UK anymore...?!」

「T-There's still Aston Martin there... !」

Fujimiya-san glares strongly.

「Oh, there's that company too. If I recall...it's under the Ford cars in US, it was somehow repurchased by David Richards using the capitalist money in the Middle East...but, was it sold?」

「...Kuh!」

「But still...there's at least one remaining in the UK, that's great. Fujimiya-san」

Seki-san shows a victorious smile.

「Well...I can't understand the nerve of the UK who's a country well known in automotive industry and even known for years just to sell their brands away to the other countries. Is this what they mean by『Poverty dulls the wit』?」

Fujimiya-san's enduring.

「In that respect...General motors is manufacturing and selling Cadillac, Buick, Corvette, and Camaro at the moment. When it comes to cars, the citizen's love is different」

「In the situation with continued deficit, they finally maintained by putting taxes on the government...are you talking about that American citizen love?」

「It's a very important national strategy to keep maintaining the automobile industry of the home country」

「I love UK, I don't want to speak badly of America's automobile industry but...」

Fujimiya-san's counterattack begins.

「When US economy is in good shape, they want a British prestigious brand, don't they? Lotus, Jaguar, and Land Rover were owned by an American companies at one time」

「You're right...there was that age」

「However...As soon as their economy got worse, the sold British automobile brand sold to the emerging countries were owned by America...!」

Fujimiya-san looks at Seki-san with eyes of hate.

「It can't be helped...for a British automobile brand with only their name left in them, only emerging countries with shallow history in automotive industry would buy those」

Seki-san smiles.

「They can't afford to sell their cherished American car brands. It's like selling the soul of their country...!」

「Even though they sold the IBM computer division to China...!」

「It's only the computer department! IBM is alive and well!」

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san's standoff continues...

...But

These two aren't even British or American and yet...why are they fighting this far?

While they're talking about that...the car has gone around the theater and arrived at the main gate.

It's already night...the vicinity is dark.

Kouzuki Security service security guard comes

「Request...S3」

Seki-san opens the window and tells the security guard.

「Roger. We'll add two units to the imperial hotel」

Looking at it...There are two cars with Kouzuki security service logo in front of the theater.

One normal size Sedan...and one big light van.

「Understood」

Seki-san gives her approval and the guard gave the drivers of the stopped car a sign.

The two cars lit up...

「...Let's go」

Seki-san starts the car.

Our car is sandwiched in between the two cars of the Kouzuki security service... it's a convoy.

The leading care is the Sedan.

The light van comes from behind.

If the three cars move this way...the risk going to the Imperial Hotel will decrease.

「...It'll be fine」

Misuzu smiles at Ruriko-san who's worried.

「The Imperial Hotel isn't that far」

「How far is it?」

I ask.

Sorry but I've never been to such a luxurious hotel...

I don't know where it is.

「It's in Odaiba. I think that we will arrive in about 15 minutes in this pace」

Oh, it's the landfill area in Tokyo Bay?...

Recently, there's a lot of luxury hotels made, so Imperial hotel is one of them

「...My」

Seki-san mutters in the driver seat.

「What's wrong?」

Fujimiya-san who's sullen from losing the car dispute a while ago...has her face returned to guard mode.

「The leading car is entering a different route than planned...」

A change of plans?

But...our car is crammed by Kouzuki security service car in front and behind. There's the light van following from behind...we can only turn our cars in accordance to the leading car.

「I wonder if something happened that changed the route?」

Seki-san tilts her head.

「Then, we should be contacted about it but...」

Fujimiya-san shows a strange face.

I...

Somehow feel uneasiness...

Margo-san told me to immediately respond when you feel that something's『weird』

If you feel『it's going well』then it may be wrong but...

Once you think it's『strange』or『odd』...then there's something absolutely wrong going on...

What's left is to find the cause of unease...

「...Seki-san, Fujimiya-san」

I speak up.

「How can I help you?」

Fujimiya-san looks at me.

「Does the car in front and behind have a lot of people?」

There's three people in the back seat of the leading car.

The van behind seems to be packed with people too.

「Since the place guarded will change from the theater to the Imperial Hotel... shouldn't the transport guards change as well?」

Seki-san says...

「...It's Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama's transport guard vehicles, that's impossible」

Fujimiya-san answers.

「The occupants of the guard vehicle for a VIP can only be guards who received special training. It's impossible to have a general guard ride together

...Then this means

「Earlier in the theater...you do know that the enemies have blended among the security guards, right?」

I said.

「Those guys...if Kouzuki『Kakka』and us leave the theater, they'll no longer be in the theater, right?」

Kouzuki『Kakka』and Minaho-neesan are already in a convoy heading to the Imperial Hotel.

We're heading to the Imperial Hotel late.

The targets of the『enemy』are no longer in the theater.

「The cars surrounding us were waiting in the street before we leave the theater...?」

Fujimiya-san speaks to Seki-san.

「...There's the possibility of the crew being replaced」

Seki-san mutters...

The two cars in our front and back are the the enemies who sneaked in the theater...?

「Seki-san...how many people do you think is inside...?」

「I can't see the back seat of the van but...it's going to be over ten people」

「That's quite a lot of them infiltrating」

「This...it's possible that we've been infiltrated for quite a while」

It's unrelated to the sudden visit of Cesario Viola to Japan...  
Even before...the『enemy』has already gotten to the Kouzuki security service?

「When it comes to it...the enemy's aim is the assassination of『Kakka』?」  
「It might be to kidnap Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama...」

When it comes to it...it's the Main event of the『enemy's』plan

「Either way...I think that it's not a good idea to follow the『enemy』car like this」

Fujimiya-san said.

「You're right...we'll only arrive at the『enemy's』nest. There's no choice but to escape by ourselves now...!」

Seki-san readies herself.

The car runs through the night office town.

Fortunately, there's no pedestrians.

Even if we make a noise here...the general people won't be inconvenienced.

「For better or for worse...we'll try to escape. Everyone, please hold into your seats. Please also close your mouth as you might bite your tongue...!」

Seki-san tells everyone in the car.

Soon...the cars enter the intersection.

The leading car goes straight.

Seki-san rotates the handle and try to turn left...

...Then.

The light van behind suddenly accelerates and hits the bumper of our car!

The car was thrown to a strange angle when bend...

Our car's pushed!

「...Kuh!」

I hold to my seat.

Misuzu and Ruriko-san close their eyes and desperately endure too.

...Doga!

the car stopped in the intersection at the sidewalk.



「If you're this bad then I should be the driver!」

Fujimiya-san shouts at Seki-san.

「Aaaah! There's scratches on the body!!!! Even though it's a new car!!!!!!!」

Seki-san turned her anger to the『enemy』

Meanwhile...the second car of Kouzuki security service blocks our back.  
We can't escape from the back.

「...Let's go across the sidewalk. There's no other way」

While Fujimiya-san proposes it...  
The security guards come off from the second car...  
Some of them have guns.  
The group of enemies quickly surround the car...

「Geez! This is because Seki-san's so careless!」  
「I wasn't careless1」

The two shout at each other.

「Geez, when it comes to this then I've got no choice...!」

Seki-san said.

「Fujimiya-san...please do something about it!」

...Do something?

「Me?」

「Please break the enemy with that『crushing cane』 Then we'll escape using that chance」

Seki-san said calmly

「What about me?」

「Please do something on your own. We're gonna do our best here to escape...!」

...Err

Fujimiya-san gets off the car and is going to fight over ten『enemies』who have guns...

When she gets out of the car, we're going to leave Fujimiya-san at full speed...?

「I'm better at fighting indoors however」

Un...Fujimiya-san's fighting style is basically Kendo...so it's not good to fight enemies with guns outdoors.

「That's not the time to say that you know?」

Seki-san retorts

「Then, I will be driving the car and let Seki-san disturb the enemy.」

「M-Me?」

「Please demonstrate the power of Seki-san who's elected as『Kakka's』personal guard!」

「I-I...!」

Seki-san clings to the steering wheel.

「This is my car!」

「So...what about it?」

「That's why you go!」

While the two female guards are fighting...

...Konkon

The window on Fujimiya-san's side was knocked.

A man with a gun speaks to Fujimiya-san.

「...Open this」

The enemy's already surrounding the car.

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are hugging each other, trembling.

Misuzu's still calm.

Michi's staring at the scene quietly.

「Hey...Fujimiya-san, he's calling you」

Seki-san smiles.

「Haa...it can't be helped」

Fujimiya-san unlocks the door.

「I'm coming out...」

At the moment she opens the door...  
Fujimiya-san's stick pokes the man's throat!

「...Gueeee!」

The man's blown away...!  
Fujimiya-san quickly gets out of the car.  
As soon as the door closes...Seki-san locks it again from the driver's seat.

「This car is armored so the enemy's bullet won't be able to penetrate. We're safe as long as we're inside the car!」

Seki-san shouts

「Taaaaaaaaa...!」

Meanwhile...Fujimiya-san's stick beats up the second guy.  
A man with a gun tries to aim at Fujimiya-san but...  
Fujimiya-san skillfully jumps inside the flock of the enemies...not letting them aim.  
Then, Fujimiya-san who has long weapon is stronger.  
She's taken down several people in a blink of an eye.

「Geez, if you attract the enemy to the right, then we can take the car to the left!」

Seki-san seems to be full of intention of leaving Fujimiya-san  
...But  
Fujimiya-san's stick slaughtered the fifth enemy...

Dadadadadadadada...!!!!

A rain of bullets on Fujimiya-san's foothold...  
Fujimiya-san jumped to the shade of the car...

...Kankankankan!

The car's body bounces the bullets back!  
As expected of a custom made car.  
Misuzu and Ruriko-san removed their seatbelts and lied down.  
Of course, Michi and me too  
We huddle ourselves into the limousine floor.

We know that it's bulletproof glass but being shot at is still scary.

「Aaaahn! My new car!!!!!!!」

Seki-san screams...

The continuous gunshot stops...

When I raise my face and look outside through the bulletproof glass...

A man comes out of the van and reloads the rifle's magazine.

They even brought something like that?...

Fujimiya-san can't move carelessly with this.

「Heyyyyy...! Give up and come out! We've got some business with the young ladies!!」

The man with a rifle shouts at us.

「...Ooh, Yoshiko」

「...R-Ruriko-sama」

Rurikok and Yoshiko are completely frightened and embracing each other's trembling body.

...I

「Ruriko-san...」

I call Ruriko-san.

「...Yes?」

Ruriko-san looks at me while frightened.

「...It'll be fine. I'm sure we'll be fine」

I hold Ruriko-san's hand firmly

「Yes...we'll be fine」

On top of that hand, Misuzu piles up hers.

「...We'll be fine」

Michi also piles up her hand.

「...Everyone」

Lastly, Yoshiko-san piles her hand.

Holding hands with the four people...we stare at each other.

「We'll absolutely be fine. The『enemy』needs Misuzu and Ruriko-san as hostage. They'll never do something reckless」

They won't blast the car...nor shoot us dead.

But...when we're caught by the『enemy』...

It's possible that Seki-san, me and others will be killed on the spot...

Misuzu, Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san won't be hurt I think.

Perhaps...Michi too.

Michi's wearing the same Ojou-sama uniform as Ruriko-san and others...

She also looks like a small cute girl.

She can only be seen as Ruriko-san's friend, a daughter of a good family.

「Michi...don't reveal your identity until the last minute. Focus on defending Misuzu and Ruriko」

I said...Michi;

「I know. But...the help will be coming before that」

「...Help?」

Ruriko-san asks while still frightened.

「Yes, my father should be sending reinforcements now」

Michi looks at Ruriko-san with strong eyes.

「Please trust my father...!」

...then

From afar, I hear a sound of a high pitched engine...

Something's approaching us

...Un

There's no doubt...help came.

What a great timing.

As expected of Kudou papa.

I look up and peep through the bulletproof glass.

「..... ??? ! ! !」

The one's coming in here from the other side of the road...

There's three 3-wheel bikes.

If I recall...it's called Trike?

There's three half-naked women riding the trikes...

There's a flag waving on the trike.

Each of the front of the trike handle is a buffalo horn attached, it's imitating the head of a tiger or a panda...

「...Move, Move. Move!」

「...Kyahooo!!!」

「...It's time to fight!」

Shouting incomprehensible things, the girls in trike intrudes.

「What's with you?!」

The man with a rifle shouts!

「What is what?!」

The rightmost half-naked woman shouts...

The tiger's mouth in front of the trike opens...

Then it blew fire.

...Bwuaaaaaaaaaaaaaaouuuuuuu!!!

...F-Flamethrower?!

I-It's my first time seeing one.

The darkness of the night is dyed into orange by the flames.

「...Uwawawawawa!」

The man drops the rifle from surprise of the sudden fire...!

No...Both enemy and allies are in surprise.

「Kyahahahahahaha!」

Only the three women are laughing out loudly in a situation where everyone's breath is taken away...

Everyone's in the second half of their twenties.

Long boots and hot pants.

Exposed thighs.

Exposed navel.

The leader-like woman in right is hiding her plump breasts with a black minimal bikini.

The middle woman wears the same bikini but there's nothing hidden.  
Her bikini string isn't tied up...her nipples are exposed.

The leftmost woman...is for some reason wearing a kendo torso directly on her naked body.

The three of them are having a flashy colored muffler on their neck...  
On their back, a Japanese sword tied with a string.

...Un

There's no doubt.

These are Kudou papa's subordinates.

「Sending those three out of everyone... Father's an idiot」

Michi mutters

「...My name's Barbie!」

The leader shouts.

「...My name's Ruby!」

The middle woman shouts.

「...I'm Banbayoon~」

The woman in kendo trunk shouts.

Why is it 「Barbie」 「Ruby」 then the last is 「Banba」?

No, it's meaningless to retort to the people around Kudou papa...

「...The three of us...『Banbarubie-3』」

The three ladies made a pose.

Look...they're helpless.

---

## 242. Fight Banbarubie 3

---

「Let's go!」

「Ooooh!」

Then『Banarubie-3』begins fighting...

「Ruby-chan!」

「Here you go!」

The lady with her breasts exposed called Ruby takes out a shotgun from the trike seat.

「It's rubber bullet for the riot suppression but this hurts you know!」

She shot at the enemy without hesitation!

...Bamyuuuun!

Dongashyaaa...!

...Bayuuuuun!!!

Dongashyaaaa...!

...Bayuuuuun!!

Ruby-san fires her shotgun successively prioritizing the enemy who have guns. The enemy can't respond to the speed of her rapid fire.

「Dohahahaha...!」

Going through that opportunity, Barbie-san, the leader jumps to the middle enemy.

Banba-san has a long metal rod with iron chains and steel ball on the tip.

Barbie-san, why bare-handed?

「Called California Dolls in Japan...take my multi-colored technique!!!」

Shouting, Barbie-san grapples the nearby enemy...!

Grabbed by the enemy with both hands...this is a pro wrestling technique.



On the other hand, Banba-san's swinging the steel bar with steel balls.

「That's a weapon called Flail」

Michi said

「After waving the stick, the steel ball strikes the enemy with one tempo delay. It's a weapon that's very difficult to avoid with that time difference. Furthermore, the steel ball connected to the chain spins around accelerated by the centrifugal force, if this hits the back of the enemy, the damage done will be big. In exchange, it's a very difficult weapon to be skilled with...」

Banba-san uses the difficult to use flail's handle skillfully.  
The enemies were knocked down one by one.  
While shouting out loudly...

「Hello everyone...I'm Banba~!」

Another enemy got knocked out of the iron ball of the flail.

「Of course...Banba is actually a code name! My real name is Kinoshita Ryouko! 24 years old! Aquarius!」

Banba/Kinoshita Ryouko-san beats down the enemies while introducing herself for some reason.

「It means an innocent child under the tree...my parents gave me such a wonderful name and yet...why is this beauty『Banba』?!」  
「It can't be helped! If you're not『Banba』then the team name won't be『Banbarubie 3』!」

The leader, Barbie-san shouted...she's still fighting the enemy she grappled first.

Or rather...She's now doing a cobra twist.

「Becauuuuuseeee, you two are『Barbie』and『Ruby』! Then, isn't it natural that mine would be『Bambi』?!」

Banba-san bursts her anger through the steel ball on the enemy head!

「If you're『Bambi』then the team name would become『Bambirubie3』you know!」

Ruby-san tries to overpower the enemy running away from her shotgun while speaking.

「The change from『Banbarubie』to『Bambirubie』isn't that big!」

Yeah...I think so too.

Or rather...why is there a need to bother for codenames and team name?

「Anyway! As long as you're in our team, you're Banba!『Banba Banko!』 That's already decided!」

Barbie-san is still fighting her first enemy while shouting.  
It's fighting, or rather...she's using her pro wrestling techniques onesidedly.

「Geez! You two are unfair!」

She swings around the flail's steel ball...!

「Yes who cares if we're mean...!」

Barbie-san has used three pro wrestling technique on the same enemy.  
Right now, she's mounting the enemy knocked on the ground...it's a camel clutch.

Tightening up the throat of the opponent...

「What were you doing this February 14??????」

「...Kuh, it hurts」

「Answer~!!!!!!!!!!」

Barbie-san strangles the enemy strongly.

「T-There's no way I remember that...!」

「It's valentines! there's no way you would forget that!」

「...I'm singleeeeeeee」

「I see! Then I've got no use for you now!!!」

Barbie-san twists the neck of the enemy.  
The man lost consciousness.

「...Who's next?!」

After finally defeating the first enemy, Barbie-san stands up.  
No...Ruby-san's rubber bullet shotgun...

And along with Banba-san's flail attack...there's nobody left anymore.  
Fujimiya-san knocked out at least 4 before they came.  
...Then.

...Gyuurururururun!

The enemy's engine van raised a roar.  
There's someone left inside...!  
They're going to escape if this continues...!

「...Leave this to me!」

Fujimiya-san who was behind the car to defend herself from the rifle jumps out.

「...Haaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!!!!!」

She aims her special metal『crushing cane』...then attacks the enemy's car behind diagonally.

「Cheriooooooooooooo!!!!!!」

...Zukooooo!!

Fujimiya-san's stick penetrates the door of the driver's seat and destroyed the driver inside!

「Gueeeeeeeee!!」

The van stopped along with the scream.  
Fujimiya-san pulls out the cane from the hole made in the door.

「...Hmmm」

Fujimiya-san shakes the walking cane two, three times.  
As expected of a special made cane...Even with the current impact, it didn't bend or deform.

「...You're quite good」

Barbie-san looks at Fujimiya-san.

「Un...you look good and your skills are great too. How about joining our team?」

...What?

You're going to scout her at this place?

「Let's see. Your code name would be...『ponta』 Let's have『ponta』 Then, we'll be ranking-up from『Banbarubie 3』to『BanbarubieDEpon 4』...!」

...Errr

「Barbie-san, then let's have her as『Banba』 I'm fine with just being『Ponta』 ...!」

Banba-san says with an excited face.  
She hates『Banba』that much.

「You're noisy, shut up, tiny tits...! You'll be『Banba』until you die!  
You're『Banba Banko』! Give it up already!」

Barbie-san is harsh on Banba-san.

「I'm not tiny tits! Well, I'm not as big as Barbie-san and Ruby-san but...I still have D-cup!」

Banba-san knocks on the Kendo trunk that's covering her breasts.

「In the first place, Barbie-san's wearing micro-bikini...I'm the only one hiding my bare skin with this kendo uniform. This is discrimination!」

「It's fine, your tits are not interesting, it's best for the world if you hide it with your armor. Either way, your areola's a red violet oval ring with 30cm in diameter!」

「I don't have such areolas!」

「In that respect, 『Ponta』has...hmm, your tits doesn't seem to be a problem. You seem to be suited to wear the same mico bikini as us...!」

Barbie-san stares at Fujimiya-san's chest with eyes like of an old perverted man.

Fujimiya-san who's been speechless this far.

「Sorry but I don't plan on joining up with anyone's team」

She speaks exposing her discomfort.

「Eeeeeeeeh, whyyyy?!」

Barbie-san's surprised.

「That's right, this is a big chance!」

Banba-san also urges Fujimiya-san.

「Well, it's impossible of course...leader」

Ruby-san who's watching the situation with a smile as she rides the trike...  
She speaks while cleaning her shotgun...

「Eh, why...Ruby-chan?」

「Isn't that woman Fujimiya Reika?...She's one of the elites of Kouzuki security service」

「Huh? Is that so...?」

「Ah, speaking of which, you're right...!」

Banba-san stares at Fujimiya-san.

Un...Barbie-san's doing it on purpose...

Banab-san's a natural airhead...

「Her salary seems to be higher than us」

Ruby-san laughs as she look at Fujimiya-san.

「Then, it can't be helped. Boss Kudou's a stingy one...!」

Barbie-san said.

「But...the difference won't go twice right? The company's big but guarding isn't such a decent business. Besides...I just can't give up. I have a dream of making the『Banbarubie』the strongest girl team Let's see, I want to gather around 48...!」

A 48 all girl team...what the hell's that

「...I am not interested in that kind of talk」

Fujimiya-san clearly rejects.

「Don't say that...Ponta-chaan」

Barbie tries to draw close to Fujimiya-san.

「...Please stop that!」

Michi gets off the car and speaks to Barbie-san

「My...the stingy's flatty daughter. You were here?」

...B-Barbie-san

「You seem to be skilled too but...that washboard's no good. Come back when you grew your tits a bit more. Then, I'll put you in my team」

「Gosh Barbie-san! It feels pitiful for Michi-chan if yo usay that<sup>1</sup> Michi-chan isn't flat because she likes it! In the first place, Michi-chan is still a child!」

The airhead Banba-san looks at Michi.

「Err...Michi-chan, you're in elementary, right?」

Michi glares at Banba-san.

「...I'm in third year middle school」

「...My?」

「When I was in third year middle school...I'm already D-cup」

Barbie-san said.

「I was F back then!」

Ruby-san.

「I'm sorry...when I was in third year middle school, I'm already C-cup」

Banba-san whispers.

「Then...what about Ponta-chan」

Fujimiya-san's not answering.

「It's true that I'm small and my father may be stingy...but, everyone's also father's subordinate so please moderate your behavior」

Michi said calmly.

「Moderation...what's Moderation, Barbie-san?」

「It's a licking marble that's dropped by mistake!」

「That's not moderation(setsudo)...that's Setsuko」

Barbie-san and Ruby-san laughs out loud.

「Our job's to smash. To be honest, we're not good with being formal. It's fun

to make money by hitting men. I don't want to do anything troublesome!」

I look at the disastrous scene around.

The enemy's all knocked out.

Normally...someone will be taking them and interrogate.

There's nobody thinking that.

They're just people who beat them up and think about nothing else.

「Looking at the washboard girl...I just remembered to report to boss Kudou」

Barbie-san takes out her phone.

「Geez, Barbie-san. If we returned home, drink beer and made a big fuss without reporting, won't Kudou-san get angry!」

「That time, one target was overlooked right?」

「Kudou-san was furious back then」

「It can't be helped. Leader jumped to the bar saying that the work is over already...」

Banba-san and Ruby-san are talking about something terrible.

「Hello? Boss Kudou? We're done here! We've knocked all of the enemies out! We'll leave the rest to you...! Then, what should we do from now on?」

Barbie-san's tone is so light.

「Eeeeh? Overtime??...Well fine. You're going to triple the allowance okay. Un...we're going to escort this car to the Imperial Hotel! Okay! See yah!」

...These three will be going to the Imperial hotel with us?

Kudou papa needs the fighting power of these three...

Barbie-san ends the call.

「Somehow...it seems that we're going to the Imperial hotel along with this car」

Barbie-san shows a grumpy face

「Imperial Hotel is a first class hotel right?...Is it okay for us to break in?」

「Boss Kudou just has to take responsibility on that part」

Ruby-san tells Banba-san

「Somehow, it seems that the entire hotel will become a huge battlefield」  
「Ah, that looks fun」  
「If you want to beat the enemy then you can damage the hotel's equipment as well」  
「Yup...interesting」

These people seems to be unrelated to Cesario Viola or Shirasaka house's assassins  
Anyway...they're fine fighting all their might and earn money.

「Of course...Ponta-chan will be going too?」

...asked, Fujimiya-san

「Let me tell you just in case...」

She stare at the three and said...

「My annual salary at Kouzuki security service is 36 million yen...」

...Hmmm

I can tell that she doesn't want to be treated like a friend but...  
Fujimiya-san went as far as saying her annual income.

「Barbie-chan! Ponta-chan's annual income is 20x my rate!!!!!!!」  
「Don't make a fuss Banba! I'm at least 10x closer!」  
「...Far from a few times, 10x is...we won't be a match even if the three of us gather together」  
「Dammit! I hate you Ponta-chan!」

Barbie-san heads to her trike.

「...Wait!」

「What?! What does the rich need with us!?!」

As soon as they discover that her earnings is more than 10x than her...Barbie-san gets cold to Fujimiya-san.

「Kudou-san has ordered you to go with us to the Imperial hotel, am I right?...」  
「That's right. We'll be running parallel so don't be late...!」  
「Okay...best regards, then」

Fujimiya-san bows her head to Barbie-san then heads back to our car



Michi also comes back

The two gets inside the car...

「...It's impossible for those to be guards...but as long as we're together, even if attackers appear, they'll be able to repel them on their own」

Fujimiya-san said.

True...Barbie-san and others doesn't have the『consideration and thoughtfulness』needed by guards.

Knowing that...Kudou papa ordered them to『Just go with them to the Imperial hotel』

「For the time being...thanks for the hard work」

Seki-san told Fujimiya-san.

「Next time, Seki-san will be going...who cares about fighting the enemy, I don't want to be talking with those people again」

「My, that's a coincidence...I'm also bad with those kind of people」

Seki-san smiles wryly

「By the way...Fujimiya-san...do you know?」

「What about...?!」

「My salary's 42 million yen」

Seki-san smiles

「As expected...the allowance of the personal guard of『Kakka』is different...!」

Fujimiya-san shows a 「Guh」face...

「In the assessment in the world of guards...money isn't everything...!」

「You're right. Then, how about transferring to that team?」

Seki-san laughs.

「Hey...Ponta-chan」

「...Please don't call me with that name」

「That's right, earlier, you opened up a hole in the car with a stick but...!」

...Seki-san?

「Even though it's stolen, that car is still an asset of Kouzuki security service...

that car's repair fees would be compensated from your salary!」

「...Please do so」

As usual...these two have a bad relationship

「...Let's depart」

Seki-san turns the car from the sidewalk to the driveway.

We left the fainted men and head to the night road.

Next to our pink Cadillac...

The three Trikes are driving...

The ladies of『Banbarubie 3』let the wind flutter their muffler...

The ladies' abundant breasts are shaking along with the engine.

Ruby-san's raw breasts is especially violent.

「Danna-sama...please stop looking at the breasts of those people. If you want then please take a look at Misuzu's breasts!」

Misuzu's angry.

「No, sorry...it's not that I'm watching their breasts...」

「Who are those people?」

Ruriko-san asks anxiously.

「They're people who are specialized only in fighting and attacking」

Michi said.

「They study the techniques of combat...they kept thinking about hitting the enemies on daily basis...so they've got some loose screws in their heads...!」

Michi, that's an exaggeration.

No, that's roughly correct but.

「My...poor souls」

Ruriko-san said.

「However...they're people with first-class fighting power. I think that we'll be able to reach the Imperial hotel safely」

Seki-san answers as she hold the steering wheel.

The three from『Banbarubie 3』aren't interested in Misuzu and Ruriko-san at all.

They never look into our car and just look ahead and dash with their trike.  
We head to Odaiba crossing the rainbow bridge at night



Afterwards...we arrived at the Imperial hotel without any problems nor attacks from the enemy.

「This building is a block apart from the other buildings. The route entering Odaiba is limited...so you can immediately tell if there's an enemy attack」

Seki-san explains  
It's night so there's no people around the hotel.

「We have moved all of the guests of the hotel to another affiliated hotel. The hotel employees were also made to take a rest except the minimum number of employees」

Un...we can't let unrelated people be involved with the fight against Viola.  
Our car and the three Trike slides into the front entrance of the hotel.  
Normally, there should be a doorman and a bellboy but only regular guards of Kouzuki security service are queued up.  
However...we were just attacked by men in the same uniform but...  
Ah, director Yamaoka is coming

「...Please come down here」

Seki-san stops the car

「Thank you very much」

Misuzu and Ruriko-san give their thanks  
First, Fujimiya-san gets off the passenger seat...  
Then she opens the door on the side of Ruriko-san.  
Ruriko-san gets off gracefully.  
Yoshiko-san follows.  
Then...Misuzu...  
Michi and I got off after

「...It's a mistake of my department. I'm very sorry」

Director Yamaoka apologizes to Misuzu and Ruriko-san.

The enemy has blended with the uniformed personnel...

The two escort cars sent with us have been hijacked by the『enemy』...

Director Yamaoka's responsibilities are heavy.

「Ruriko and I are safe...」

Misuzu answers

「Yamaoka-san's punishment will be given by grandfather later I think but... this is an emergency. You can't issue a letter of resignation on a situation where the enemy forces are still alive and well」

Misuzu gives director Yamaoka a warning.

「Yes...I will not abandon the site」

「Very well. We're expecting your efforts...Yamaoka-san」

I think that Misuzu's really a daughter of Kouzuki house at times like this. She's a strong noble girl.

「Hey, what's with you guys?!」

On the side...the ladies of『Banbarubie 3』are in trouble with the guards「」

「This is a first class hotel! You can't enter here dressed like that!」

「What's wrong with our clothes?!」

「What's with that sword!」

Right...the three of them have a Japanese sword on their back「Ah, this?」

Ruby-san takes her sword

「This is an umbrella」

「Umbrella?」

「Look...!」

Ruby-san spreads it

True, it's an umbrella...it imitates a Japanese sword when you close it.

「Mine's a back scratcher」

Barbie-san said.

「Back scratcher?」

「You use it for scrubbing when you enter the Sauna! It's a Takebera!

Takebera!」

Err...I feel like I've seen this scene before...

「Eeeh! Barbie-san and Ruby-san's wasn't real!?!」

Banba-san shouts

「Banba-chan...no way...」

「Yes...it's a real sword~」

Banba-san pulls out her sword

A silver colored sparkling blade...1

A real one...seriously.

The guards around her got surprised...

「What should we do?」

Banba-san runs around while holding the Japanese sword.

「Just put it down!」

Barbie-san said.

「Buuuut!」

「Just shut up! nobody knew that you were bringing a sword!」

No...everyone's just looking at her.

「You're right...」

Banba-san puts the sword on the sheath...

「Everyone, please forget what you saw just now...!」

Of all things, Banba-san said that while smiling in a place where director Yamaoka is.

「If those people didn't come we couldn't escape the enemy」

Misuzu tells director Yamaoka.

「Who are those?」

「...It's my father's subordinates」

Michi answers.

「Kudou's?...He's gathered quite a lot of strange people. It can't be helped.  
Hey, let them through」

Director Yamaoka instructs his security.

「But...director」

One of the security guard objects

「This is bad...」

The security guard points at Ruby-san's exposed nipple.

「Ruby-chan, I told you not to show your nipples」

Barbie-san said laughing

「Eh, why?! I prefer to be open-minded」

「Anyway...just hide at least your nipples」

「Okaay, nee-san」

Ruby-san takes out a adhesive nipple cover and puts it on her nipple.

But...the cover is pink colored for some reason.

You can see it as an areola.

「Somehow...it feels like I have sunken nipples」

Ruby-san said as she look at her own breasts

「Right, if it's this...」

Saying that...she puts something on the cover.

「What's that?」

Banba-san peeks.

「Great...that's nipples」

...Err

Covering the actual nipple...

Then putting a nipple on that cover...

...aren't we just back at the start?

「This is great! The real thing's hidden!」

Ruby-san said confidently.



## 243. In the hotel lobby.

---

Anyway...we've entered the hotel.

The bright and spacious lobby looks normal.

There's a hotel man standing at the reception...the surrounding shops are operating normally.

「The hotel lobby is a public space...we're having it on it's usual state as we don't know how the『enemy』will invade Director Yamaoka reports to Misuzu and Ruriko-san.

「What about the employees at the hotel and the store clerks?」

Misuzu asks.

「All of them are replaced with our guards. This hotel is often used by Kouzuki group for international conferences...so our security guards are blended with the employees of the hotel. They've been trained to do the hotel's counter work so you can buy at the shops without problems」

This hotel itself belongs to Kouzuki house's security separtment.

...But.

The lobby currently don't have guests.

Where is Minaho-neesan and others?

Well...I think it's dangerous for them to stay in the lobby that's just connected to the outside

...Should I call them?

...Hm?

That group on the corner of the lobby is—?

Somehow...they seem to be a group of flashy people eating lunch box at a fancy hotel...

Hmm...it seems I've seen that man in black hat and suit.

Ah, he's coming this way...



「Oh...well done guys coming here」

That's...Kudou-papa.

Kudou papa finished eating his lunch box, he calls out Barbie-san while holding a toothpick in his mouth.

「We came~! Stingy!」

Barbie-san replies to Kudou-san.

「...Hey, Kudou. What's with this poeple?」

Director Yamaoka immediately flares up at Kudou-papa...

「Yagyuu Mitsuko-san, Saionji Hiromi-san Kinoshita Ryouko-san」

Kudou-papa answers smoothly.

「Shut it, don't call us with our real names!」

「I prefer the real name though!」

「I don't care whether you call me Ruby or Hiromi...!」

The『Banbarubie 3』had varying reactions.

「Yagyuu Mitsuki...No way, that one?」

Director Yamaoka's surprised.

「I hate having my real name called because of guys like him making that kind of face!」

Barbie-san gets ill-humored.

「Well...I heard that you died」

「Yagyuu Mitsuko is dead. The one right here is...Code Name『Barbie of the phoenix』!」

Saying that, Barbie-san pokes director Yamaoka's chest.

「That's how it is...to be frank, just one of these three is ten times stronger than you. With three of them together, it's a hundred times」

Kudou papa said with a serious face.

「But...Yagyuu Mitsuko's the『Demolisher』isn't she?」

「Coming this far, we're far better with people who have pure fighting power.

You know that enemies are coming to this hotel right?」

「...Well」

Director Yamaoka fell silent.

「Well fine...anyway, come here. I've prepared a meal for you three」

Ah...the flashy group eating lunch boxes at the lobby are all people Kudou papa gathered...

Neko-san noticed us and waved her hands.

Michi and I gave a quick bow.

「Hmm...Neko-san, Happy-san, Rascal-san, Healthy-san. Carl-san and Masaru-san are here too...」

Barbie-san looked at the group of people eating lunch box and speaks.

「Nee-san...that's a hamburger sage and a crepe mami! The Koisen of the moon is also here!」

Banba-san makes a fuss

「You girls eat your lunch boxes faster. You can't work if you're hungry right?」  
「Could it be seaweed meal again?」

Barbie-san glares at Kudou-papa.

「Don't worry. We've got grilled meat and hamburger. It also has coleslaw salad. You can take two of the water and tea bottles too...」

「N-No way! What happened to you?! Is the Stingy Kudou-chan getting generous now?」

Barbie-san looks at Kudou-papa like she can't believe it.

「...That's how big is the case」

「Hmm...just how dangerous then?」

「Think of it as the highest grade...the pay will also be twice per head. It'll have one more digit than the usual」

「Phew!...That's a huge feast. The guys we just took down can't be compared to them?」

「Yeah...it'll be American monsters coming to attack」

The man named Viola does irregular things, we also know that he'll bring his

subordinates...

But, the woman Viola...

...We don't know her type.

Even the guards from Kouzuki security service a while ago...we don't know who's giving them instructions...

With Viola becoming a two team...we can't make any predictions.

「...I've got two conditions. One would be, I would doing Kudou-chan's request but I won't enter any commands. We will fight at our own discretion. We'd like you to send real-time information though」

「I don't care about that. I don't think that you'll obey me either way. On the other hand...I can't give you enough support. You're too free while the others are joining up. We can't let you just create a collateral injuries」

「I know Rather, if we've got an ally close to us, we can't break things as we want! We can destroy anything in this hotel, right?」

「『Kakka』is on the upper floor. Everything's okay as long as it won't put『Kakka』on risk」

「Even if we break the whole floor?」

「All okay...as long as the building doesn't collapse. Though, try to spare making fire」

「Roger...also, my other condition...」

「...What?」

「If it really becomes dangerous...we'd have Banba-chan withdraw from the scene. Kudou-chan, take good care of her」

「Eh, no wayyyyy, Barbie-saaaaan!」

Ruby-san...

「No, I think that Barbie's judgement is correct. You still don't have an experience fighting an enemy with the most evil level. If you think it's dangerous, then immediately withdraw. If you're just a hindrance then our lives would be at risk too...」

Banba-san's eyes are serious.

「I-I get iiiit...But, I'll do my beeest...please look at me with warm eyes!」  
「We'll have you as our center in the future so you'll be taken care of importantly. Don't push yourself!」

「Okaay~!」

In the previous fight, it looks like Banba-san was the only one fighting but...  
Was it training?

「Well then...let's eat the lunch box!」

「Ooh!」

The three ladies head to Neko-san and others.  
But ...『Banbarubie 3』are really on good terms.  
Compared to that...

「The enemy has infiltrated the integrated security department...director  
Yamaoka will be charged for the cost of my car's repair」

Seki-san is shouting at director Yamaoka.

「Y-Yes...I'll treat them all as my responsibility」

Director Yamaoka keeps bowing at Seki-san who's a top of the lite guards  
under Chief Tanizawa.  
An old man bowing on a 20 year old beauty.

「In the first place...since when had the enemy sneaked in?」

Seki-san asks.

「Yes, when I surveyed...in the autumn last year, three employees who joined  
midway were『infiltration agents』」

Director Yamaoka reported.

「With the introduction of those three...fifteen enemies have impersonated as  
our security guards」

Is that so?

「Those three are already detained. They're currently being interrogated on a  
different room」

「How about the security of this hotel?」

「The employees who have made contact with those three even once have  
already been removed from the site. As a result, only two-thirds of the planned  
personnel are guarding, but...」

「It's much better than having our colleagues show up as enemies」

Seki-san speaks ironically.

「But...if it's last autumn, then the hole is quite big」

Fujimiya-san said calmly.

「We should think that there's quite a lot of information leaked out from Integrated security department」

Seki-san thinks seriously...

...Currently, the actions of the moving Viola is...

They know information about Nei-san, if this didn't happen in the past several days then...

It's a serious situation.

The enemy has a long term plan prepared for today's attack.

「This is a challenge to Kouzuki security service...no, the enemy's aim might be Kouzuki family itself」

「Either way, 『Kakka』will take control」

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san looks at director Yamaoka 「Where's 『Kakka』right now?」

「I'll lead the way」

He's not saying which floor or which room he's in.

「Thanks...sorry for the wait, Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama. Let's go」

Fujimiya-san calls the two

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are a set so Yoshiko-san's going too.

Michi and I are trying to follow...

「Wait...who are these children?」

Director Yamaoka asks Seki-san...

「『Kakka's』orders are to take this boy with us...」

Misuzu turned around

「Michi's my guard...there's no problem」

「I-In that case...」

Director Yamaoka consents

「...Father」

Michi looks at Kudou-papa.

「I have defeated Aneue」

「Yeah...I've heard it from Etsuko. Etsuko's furious...she doesn't want to see our faces for a while」

「...I'm very sorry」

「Don't mind it...Either way, I know that this will happen. Haruka's decent as an athlete but she's not suited for actual combat. It's Etsuko's mistake to put Haruka to Kouzuki security service. It's not your fault」

「...Father」

「On the contrary...you're the only daughter that can do actual combat Etsuko's not a woman who don't understand that but her eyes are being clouded lately」

「I think that Mama-uesama hates me」

「...Michi」

「I wasn't obedient to Mama-uesama just like Aneue... Ever since childhood...」

Michi said.

「It can't be helped...there's affinity even between parents」

「...Yes」

Michi looks lonely

「...Danna-sama」

Misuzu looks at me

「Yeah」

I hold both of Michi's hands.

「...Ah!」

Michi looks up at my face

「Don't worry about your mother or sister...」

「Un...You have us with you」

...Michi

She holds my hand tightly.

...Then

「Father...I am now spending the most fulfilling time in my life. I've got a lord to protect with my life...Michi's happy...!」

Kudou-papa...

「...Is that so? Then fine...you push on your own road」

「...Yes, Father」

Michi swore to her father with passionate eyes...



Then...we left Kudou-papa in the lobby...

We then followed director Yamaoka to the elevator.

We get off from the 17th floor and entered another elevator.

...But still.

Though it's a big elevator...

Director Yamaoka + Seki-san + Fujimiya-san + Misuzu + Ruriko-san + Yoshiko-san  
+ me + Michi = It's narrow

Ah, Misuzu's clinging to me...

Michi's also sticking from my back...

...Geez

We went down to the eighth floor...we then changed to another elevator.

Eventually, we got off at the 23rd floor...

They're going this far just to not specify『Kakka's』whereabouts 「This way」

Director Yamaoka goes ahead after getting off the elevator.

We follow him...

「...Master, please observe the state of the elevator」

Michi whispers to me.

...Yeah

The red-wine colored carpet corridor...

The stairs are over there and the fire exit is there...

The toilet's here...

I put the floor's plan into my head.

...Before long.

「It's this room」

Director Yamaoka stops in front of『Room 2307』

He knocks the door

...Then

「Yes?」

The one who opened the door is...Nagisa?!

「Well...you took quite a lot of time. It made me worry!」

Then...Mao-chan shows up from the door

「Ehehehehe...we've been waiting!」

I-I...

「Why are you here?」

Nagisa smiles

「Isn't that obvious?...I'm worried about Misuzu and you!」

Nagisa...as my『woman』...

As Misuzu's『first owner』as well

「I thought of coming here with my own car but...I won't be allowed to enter.  
So I hitchhike on Kouzuki-sama's car」

『Kakka's』car...?!

...Err

Why did Nagisa not ride on Katsuko-nee's car then?

Even though it shouldn't have problems letting the two inside Katsuko-nee's car.

「My car's left in the theater so I'll go get it tomorrow morning」

「If you entrust us your keys then our men would have it delivered here however...」

Director Yamaoka offers.

「I'm grateful for your offer but...Kouzuki-sama said that he can't trust



Yamaoka-san's work...」

Hearing Nagisa's words...Yamaoka's blunder sinks in.

I get the situation.

Nagisa's making director Yamaoka think that she's『Kakka's』mistress

Only the old guests know that Nagisa belongs to the organization『Kuromori』

She purposely call Misuzu's first name in front of director Yamaoka...

She's showing to director Yamaoka that she has a special relationship with『Kakka』and Misuzu.

Therefore...she purposely rode on『Kakka's』car

「Should I sent my support unit instead of the Integrated Security Department?」

Seki-san proposes.

「My, that helps...then please」

Nagisa hands out her car keys.

「It's located at the back of the first floor of the parking lot. It's a red Peugeot so you'll know it right away」

「We'll take care of it...we'll be transferring the car to this hotel's underground parking lot」

「No...I'd be troubled if it's in here. This will become a battlefield soon right?

Since you're going to bring it, it would be troublesome if it gets destroyed.

Please park it at the Plaza hotel. I do work in there. Just say that it's the car of the manager of Katagai flowers and they'll know right away」

「...Certainly」

Seki-san takes the key from Nagisa.

Director Yamaoka's face is at complete loss...

「Hey Mama! Hurry up! Kouzuki-san says Hurry up!」

Mao-chan carries『Kakka's』message

「Oh, right! Sorry. Everyone...please come in...!」



The room is...like a special room used for conferences.

There's no bed or bathrooms in here.

It seems that『Kakka』is on the back room...

「Ehehehe! Hurry! hurry!」

Mao-chan hurries us while smiling.

Nagisa knocks at the door.

「...Yes?」

『Kakka's』voice...

「Everyone has arrived...」

『Kakka』...

「...Enter」

Nagisa opens the door...

On the other side is...

It's a room about the size of 20 tatami mats

It's really like a conference room.

There are chairs lined up on top of the gray punch carpet

There's a desk on the other side of the door...

『Kakka's』sitting in there.

Somehow...this looks like a high school interview hall.

Behind『Kakka』is chief Tanizawa.

On the side, sitting quietly...

...Oh

It's Misuzu's『fiance』...Shiba Takahiko

Shiba Takahiko is glaring at me with frightening eyes...

「Good work...Yamaoka-kun」

First,『Kakka』speaks to director Yamaoka.

「You can return to your work. I wish you don't disappoint me further than this...!」

「Yes...I'm very sorry」

Director Yamaoka bows his head.

「Humans are creatures that make mistakes. Therefore, I don't have any

complains about your failures in particular. However...I doubt humans who commit similar failures are suited for their job」

「Yes...I won't make the same mistake again!」

『Kakka』ignores director Yamaoka's gratitude...then looked at chief Tanizawa.

「...Tanizawa, follow him up」

「...Certainly」

Chief Tanizawa bows his head.

「We've got visitors tonight so don't be careless. Whoever it is, you must welcome them properly

「Yes...I will make preparations. Kudou has already gathered his members too」

「He's the kind of personnel for tonight...let him play an active part」

「...I will tell『Kakka's』words to them」

Chief Tanizawa answers his lord graciously like a butler serving for a long time

「Then, head to the field...it'll be fine to have Fujimiya-kun and Seki-kun as my guards」

「...Then『Kakka』excuse me」

「...Umu」

Chief Tanizawa then left the room without making any footstep sounds.

Then...『Kakka』looks at director Yamaoka like he's looking at something dirty

「You're still here Yamaoka-kun?! Go back to your work too」

「...Uhm, I!」

「...Hurry up and go. I can't get down to business with them if you stay here」

『Kakka』returns his glance to Misuzu.

「Yes...Excuse me! Uhm...I will do my best to fulfill my responsibility so please! Please have expectations on me!」

Director Yamaoka leaves the room freezing...

「People who are athletic don't think much with their heads. They do their best to live by just threatening and being cruel...!」

Kakka expresses his disgust.

「If it's people like you who try to read everything between the lines...the

conversation just gets tiring」

Looking at Seki-san and Fujimiya-san...『Kakka』speaks 「Well...enjoying an intellectual dialogue with beauties like you two is a way to prevent me from growing senile...take a seat」

『Kakka』advises to seat.

「Seki-san there. Fujimiya-san, goes there. Ruriko and Yoshiko-kun, that seat. Misuzu and you, there」

I'm the only one that's『You』  
Well fine.

「We're on the defendant's seat...grandfather?」

Misuzu asks.  
speaking of which...the order of the chairs are...

「If Grandfather is sitting on the seat of the judge...our seat would be the seat of the defendants...Seki-san is the prosecutor, Fujimiya-san is a lawyer, then that would make Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san witnesses?」

Misuzu asks uncomfortably.

「It's a bit different...」

『Kakka』answers

「Ruriko and Yoshiko-kun are audience. The two are unrelated to this trial」

As expected...it's a trial.

「Also, the two beauties will just be observers. The prosecutor...will be Takahiko-san here」

『Kakka』said.

「Misuzu...you don't have a lawyer...!」

...Does that mean?

---

## 244. Futile effort

---

「I should be on the defendant's seat as well, shouldn't I?」

Nagisa smiles at『Kakka』

「Yes, you're the first wrongdoer in this case」

『Kakka』answers with a faint laugh.

「Come Mao...let's go to Onii-chan's side」

Nagisa tells her three years old daughter.

「Okaaay~! Hey, Mama?」

「What?」

「What's『defendant』?」

「It's a person investigated whether he did something bad or not」

「Eh? Mao and Mama are going to be examined whether they did something bad?」

「That's right」

Nagisa smiles calmly...

「Well fine...Mao didn't do anything wrong!」

「That's right. That's why there's no problem even if we're investigated right?...!」

Then...the two come to my side.

Fujimiya-san and Seki-san in front...

Behind them is Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san...

They're looking at us with an anxious face.

Everyone's afraid that we're going to be disposed by『Kakka』

Everyone believes that『Kakka』is the absolute ruler of this place.

「It'll be fine...don't worry」

In such a tense air...Nagisa speaks to Misuzu and me.  
Nagisa's smile gives Misuzu courage.

「...Grandfather, I can't consent being subjected to such a trial」

...She tells her grandfather in the judge seat.

「I have done nothing to receive such accusation!」

『Kakka』counterattacks...

「Even though I have a『fiance』decided for you...isn't it a sin to exchange affection to another man?」

「Yes. Of course」

Misuzu answers immediately.

「...W-What part of me are you dissatisfied?! Misuzu-sama?!」

Unable to endure the tense air any longer... the『fiance』Shiba Takahiko speaks up.

「...That part」

「...What?」

「You're calling me who's four years younger than you with a『-Sama』...」

「However...that is...!」

Shiba Takahiko tries to speak up but...he looks at『Kakka's』face in surprise...

「...I'm very sorry. Uhm...I spoke without『Kakka's』permission」

Four years older than Misuzu...then he's college student?

Even though he's taller and has a better physique than『Kakka』...Shiba Takahiko's afraid of him.

『Kakka』then...

「I don't mind...let's have the prosecutor question the defendant first. Be sure to throw out all everything that's inside your heart...」

「T-That's...」

「Takahiko-kun, you're going to be Misuzu's husband aren't you? If you're no match against your wife...you won't be a leader of the Kouzuki group...!」

『Kakka』fuels Shiba Takahiko...

His mouth is smiling but...his eyes are serious.

「Y-Yes...I'll do my best. I'll endeavor myself seriously...!」

Shiba Takahiko is under『Kakka's』control...

「Let me tell you beforehand...」

Misuzu speaks to Shiba Takahiko...

「I'm very sorry for this selfish arrangement but...I would like to cancel grandfather's decision about my engagement with Takahiko-san. I'm sorry...!」

Misuzu bows her head to Shiba Takahiko.

For the time being...I'll bow together.

「Fortunately...it's still a private talk...it's not publicly announced that Takahiko-san is my『fiance』 I think that it won't hurt Takahiko-san's career」

Misuzu said clearly

「Is this the fault of that man over there?」

Shiba Takahiko opens up his mouth.

「That's right. I'm going out with this person」

「Isn't he just a brat?」

「He's only a year younger than me. A first year high school boy」

「Uhm...from which house are you? Which department in Kouzuki group is your father...?」

Shiba Takahiko thinks that I'm someone from a noble family somewhere.  
Inside Kouzuki group as well.

「This person isn't a member of any household」

「...What do you mean?」

...Err

「I'm just a commoner. Or rather, I may be poorer than a commoner」

Yeah...My father disappeared

「Commoner?...Why is that person...?」

It seems that Misuzu got annoyed at what Shiba Takahiko said.

「He's the man I'm in love with...it doesn't matter to you!」

「It does! I am your『fiance』!」

Shiba Takahiko's confused.

「Also...I'm the official『fiance』chosen by『Kakka』!」

「I just annulled that『engagement』just now!」

「You're born from Kouzuki house so your duty is to be married to a certain『fiance』decided by『Kakka』!？」

「Please don't decide my life without permission!」

Misuzu said clearly.

Shiba Takahiko trembles from Misuzu's thorough rejection...

But still, he tries to bring it on his own pace.

「M-Misuzu-sama...No, Misuzu-san...Uhm, is it okay to call you Misuzu-san?」

He's trying to build a friendly relationship?

...But

「Takahiko-kun...shouldn't you just call her Misuzu without any suffix?」

『Kakka』speaks with a sour expression.

「Yes, C-Certainly. 『Kakka』...」

Trembling...Shiba Takahiko looks at Misuzu.

「I'm very sorry but, according to『Kakka's』request...I will be calling you with only your first name...Mi—」

At the moment Shiba Takahiko tries to speak...

「I refuse...I don't want to be called by you as such!」

Misuzu clearly rejects...

「No but, that...『Kakka』asked me to call you...」

「It's wrong for grandfather to tell you how to call me」

Shiba Takahiko tries to use『Kakka's』authority to stand above Misuzu.  
Therefore, Misuzu denies『Kakka's』authority

「Err...that」



Shiba Takahiko looks at Misuzu and『Kakka』alternately.  
Looking troubled...

「...I-I've made so much effort all this itme!」

Eh...what are you talking about?

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san...the spectators of the room are all stunned.

「One year ago...when『Kakka』has nominated me as your fiance...I've always been working so hard!」

...Hmmm

What is he talking about?

「Just what on earth is the effort you're talking about...?」

Misuzu asked interestingly.

「...T-That is...everything and anything」

Shiba Takahiko speaks desperately.

「I-I'm going to become your husband...the center of the Kouzuki group. I've studied about business administration desperately more than ever. I'll graduate at the top of the university. Definitely...I promise. I'll make an effort. Next year, I'll study in US abroad, taking MBA qualification, I'll make connections with the economic people of each country. I'll do that. That's my plan...!」

「That's got nothing to do with me at all」

Misuzu answered coldly.

「Takahiko-san...your father is a director in the Kouzук group. Even if you haven't talked to me...you should be able to join Kouzuki group with your own will and with Takahiko-san's power, you can be on the top of the management department...there's no meaning in marrying me, is there?」

Shiba Takahiko...

「Yes...I'm confident reaching a director with my own effort」

「However...more than being a director...you're aiming to be at the top of the group, I need to be married with you」

This man...

He's not feeling any love towards Misuzu...?

Since the start, he admitted that this『engagement』is just a『political marriage』

「By becoming a member of Kouzuki family...my success in life would become 120% certain. On the contrary...If I can't marry you, my probability in winning in life would be halved」

「...Takahiko-san, what is victory in life?」

Misuzu asks.

「Isn't that obvious?」

「Is it becoming the president of the Kouzuki group...becoming the chairman?」

「...It is to become a wonderful economy man like『Kakka』!」

Shiba Takahiko declares.

「I want to be a powerful economic man like『Kakka』who can move Japan...no, the whole world's economy...!」

Misuzu...

「You're free to dream whatever you want. But, I will never be happy in that dream of yours」

「Therefore...I'm doing all my best!」

Shiba Takahiko hits the desk!

「Even I don't think that I can accept you easily. Either way, I...!」

He glares at me for a moment.

「...There's no way a man like me can be liked by a lady like you! Therefore I have no choice but to make an effort. No, I have nothing but confidence in my own effort. Ever since I was born, I have always lived to do effort, effort, effort, effort. I'm using all of my effort to become a man you will accept!」

...Err

「...Effort, what kind of effort?」

Misuzu asks.

Un...I also want to know.

「For example...I...you have enjoyed dinner with me at the French Restaurant

last night!」

Eh...the two of them?

「Well...your family and mine were having dinner」

Misuzu corrects.

What?...It's a family dinner?

「At that time...you looked at me with disappointed eyes when I left the vegetables and carrot on the plate...」

「I didn't make eyes like that」

「No, you did! You did that! You were looking at me with eyes like I'm such a pitiful person!」

Isn't that just paranoia?

「Therefore...I have doctors and psychotherapist help me create a program to help me eat carrots now!」

「...What?」

「It'll be a two year long tem program...I'll be able to eat carrots! I'll definitely will! You won't look at me with those kind of eyes again! Never...after two years」

No...

I feel like—

Misuzu's looking at Shiba Takahiko with eyes worse than that time...

「A-Also...I'm studying about you seriously」

「Study about me?」

「Yes, I love studying after all!」

「I don't get it」

「In short...I've been looking information about what you like...what's your food preference, music preference, everything about you!」

Shiba Takahiko takes out a thick report.

He then puts it on the desk.

「Like this...I always carry it around and take a look when I have time! I memorize all of it! For example...what I learned today...You prefer Minami-Aoyama's『L'radige headquarters』chocolate!」

Shiba Takahiko said with a smile.

「Yes...that's certainly right but」

Misuzu answers...

「Look, I'm right. That's written on the top of the page 32 of the report. The investigation agency I asked is excellent! I have investigated a lot about you...I really know anything!」

Shiba Takahiko gives a victorious smile

「Then...Takahiko-san, have you eaten『L'radige's』chocolate?」

Misuzu asks...

「No! Mother told me that I'll get tooth decay when I eat sweets!」

...Hmm

It was a wonderful smile but...

「Even though you haven't eaten my favorite『L'radige』chocolate and yet...you say that you know everything I like」

Shiba Takahiko points at the report with his fingertips...

「Well...your favorite food are listen in here. If I memorize this, isn't it equal to knowing your taste? Look, I'm making so much effort for you!」

Now then...what should I do?

「Takahiko-san...you do know that I like Mendelssohn's piano, don't you?」  
「Of course. If I recall, it's an information listed on the upper right column of page 24 in this report」

「But...I never want to go to a piano concert with you」

Shiba Takahiko...

「No problem. I don't have time to go for a concert...I'm not interested in piano in the first place」

What's going on?

Then...Shiba Takahiko looks at me.

「...You there!」

...What?!

「That's right...you now understand from our talk just now. I make so much effort to understand this person. By the way...what do you know? There's no way I would lose when it comes to knowledge about her! That's how much effort I've done!」

...I

Right...thinking about it.

I don't know anything about Misuzu.

What does she like.

「...Sorry, Misuzu」

I apologized to Misuzu.

「I don't know anything about Misuzu」

Shiba Takahiko snorts.

「Look, how's that! I'm making an effort!」

Right...I

Have I ever made effort for Misuzu?

「...Misuzu. I」

Misuzu's warm hand holds my hand tightly.

Then she smiled.

「Danna-sama's always doing his best for me」

...Misuzu

「Please have some confidence...besides」

...Eh?

「Isn't it obvious that we don't know each other that well?」

Misuzu smiles

「We just have met...that's why we can just take our time to understand each other」

「...Un」

「Next time, let's go eat 『L'radige's』chocolate. Let's go to a piano concert too.  
Danna-sama, do you know the composer Mendelssohn?」

「...Only the name」

I feel like I've learned about it during music classes...  
I don't know what kind of songs they make however.

「Then, let's go listen together. Ufufu...I'm looking forward to it」

Misuzu said.

「I will teach Danna-sama what I like...delicious food, amazing things, beautiful things... Let's watch, listen, eat...with the two of us. Right, Danna-sama」

「Yeah...you're right」

「Please teach me about Danna-sama's favorites too」

「I don't have those kind of things」

「Then, please teach me when you have one. When you think『This song's good』  
or『I like this taste』, Then I'll understand Danna-sama's preference」

「Haha...it'll take a lot of time」

「It's better if it is. We'll be together for always...!」

...I see.

There's no need to hurry.

There's no need to memorize Misuzu's favorites in hurry...

We can just take our time and know little by little.

That way is fun for sure.

For Misuzu and for me...

「There's a lot to look forward to...Danna-sama!」

Misuzu clings to me.

「H-Hey...M-Misuzu-sama! Get away...you, get away from Misuzu-sama!」

Shiba Takahiko says in panic but...Misuzu clings further to me.  
Or rather...he's back to calling her『Misuzu-sama』  
He'll stay being Kouzuki house's vassal for the rest of her life.

「Sorry, Takahiko-san...I can't accept you at all. I want to live with this person. I  
do love this person after all...!」

Shiba Takahiko...

「I-I...I made so much effort! I tried so hard!」

「That effort is just unbearably disgusting」

Misuzu answers.

「I hate human relationships where it's nothing but effort」

「However...in the business world...you build connection with the customers by effort...!」

「What?」

「Like I said...if the customer's hobby is fishing then I'll fish...if it's golf, then make him win by all means...!」

「Please don't link men-women relationship with business!」

Hearing Misuzu's voice...Shiba Takahiko looks at『Kakka』

While I'm embraced...

『Kakka's』grinning.

He's enjoying Misuzu and Shiba Takahiko's confrontation.

「No, it's no different! In our world...marrying a woman is an important business!」

「That's something I won't accept. I have someone I love from the bottom of my heart right now!」

Shiba Takahiko's enraged.

「Isn't that obvious that man just wants to get into Misuzu-sama's family! He's just a bad guy who approached Misuzu-sama! That's right! That's obvious! Because he's a commoner!」

The『fiance』screams loudly.

「...Isn't that just you? Shiba Takahiko-san?」

Shiba Takahiko's frozen.

「Even your house...is just an ordinary house until your father became an executive of the Kouzuki group. If I'm going to borrow your words...you're a『commoner』aren't you?」

Shiba Takahiko rejects the cold words.

「The past is different from now! My father's currently a director in the Kouzuki group! Besides, I'm enrolled in a prestigious university, I'm smart! I've got the talent! Above all, I make effort! I make effort more than anyone! I'm a special human!」

Shiba Takahiko who's snapped off exposes his heart one after another.

「A high spec human with high academic background is enduring this much! All of this is to marry you and become the top of the Kouzuki group! If you're not a daughter of Kouzuki house then I'll never do this badly! In the first place... no matter how you look at me, I'm popular!」

Oh...I don't get what he's saying anymore.

「...You're right」

「That's right! My father's a director...I go to a top-rated university, my car's Porsche. A Cayenne Porsche. It's the fourth generation. It's on a different level! That alone makes women at college come near me! Everyone wants to take the passenger seat! They look forward to going to a fine restaurant I'll pay up. But, I never dated anyone...I had no special relationship! Do you know why?!」

There's no way we would.

「If I go out with some strange woman...my future will be damaged! I've been told by father and mother ever since I was a child! If I made a child by mistake... then I would have to marry such an idiot and talentless woman! That's why I make an effort to shake them off!」

Shiba Takahiko screams with his eyes bloodshot.

「Yes, that's right! I'm a virgin! But I'm not a virgin because I'm not goo with women! I'm making an effort myself to protect my virginity! I chose my own destiny as a virgin and I'm a proud virgin! It's a honor virgin! A virgin gentleman! I made effort to be thorough on that!!!」

Shiba Takahiko puffs his chest in pride appealing his virginity.

...But

In the end, this man...

...Isn't interested in anyone but himself.

Therefore, he hasn't been in a proper relationship with people...



Perhaps...that will be the same even in the future.

「This virgin me is trying so hard and yet why are you not accepting me!」

He glares at me with eyes of hatred.

「There's no way this no-value commoner high school boy would win against me who made so much effort!」

Misuzu answers.

「Takahiko-san...this person has a charm nobody else has...!」

Shiba Takahiko shouts angrily...!

「There's no way I would lose to a commoner! Say it, what on earth is he better than me?!」

...Misuzu

「...Sex」

Shiba Takahiko froze

No, everyone in the room...

「...Mama, what's sex?」

Mao-chan asks Nagisa.

「It's a very pleasant thing!」

「Eh? Is that so? Mao wants that!」

「When you grow bigger okay?」

Nagisa pats Mao-chan's head.

「Did you hear it...Yoshiko?」

「Yes. It seems that person knows about sex」

Un...

The people who doesn't know the meaning of sex in this room...

The three year old Mao-chan, and Ruriko-san—Yoshiko-san pair...

Ah...Seki-san and Fujimiya-san have a bright red face.

The two of them are unexpectedly pure.

Misuzu kisses my cheek...

「Sex with this person is very wonderful. This person, as a man...he uses his mind and body to love me. I also serve him to the utmost as a woman. Whenever we have sex...we're both naked...using my own body to please this one makes me really happy. This person's living body makes me feel my body. When I embrace him naked...I feel I'm glad to be born. I'm glad that I'm a woman...」

Nagisa...

「Yes, I also know that feeling」

Misuzu and Nagisa look at each other.

「It makes me feel easy when I'm with him. This person never lies in front of me. Rather than that...he doesn't have that concept. Therefore...I can be naked. Not as a daughter of Kouzuki house or anything...but as a woman」

Misuzu looks at Ruriko-san.

「I've lived as a daughter of Kouzuki house...it's always painful. I have to worry about the public eye anytime and anywhere...I thought that I shouldn't disobey my grandfather and parent's expectations. Even with friends...I can't be jealous nor I can't adore so I have to take a subtle distance. Always smiling...I had to be a bright and cheerful girl. Outside...and even inside the house」

「...I'm the same」

Ruriko-san mutters.

「But, I have Yoshiko with me...Misuzu-oneesama who doesn't have a『retainer』, I think that it's very painful」

Ruriko-san shows a gloomy face...Yoshiko-san stays quiet 「The me before shows a smiling face but my heart's always clouded. But, it's different now!」

Misuzu hugs me.

「I finally found a man I can show my naked mind and body. I'll never let go of him! Even if I am going to disobey grandfather...I will remain with this man...!」

「...That's what I know about Misuzu that you don't」

Shiba Takahiko glares at me.

「There's no way! There's no way my effort can be beaten by an ordinary man like yo!」

I point at Misuzu's back.

「Misuzu has a mole in here」

「...Danna-sama?!」

「Also...here in her stomach」

Shiba Takahiko's frozen.

「There's no place in Misuzu's body I don't know...」

Un...I've seen Misuzu's naked body again and again.

Her whole body...all over.

No matter what kind of clothes she wear...I can recall Misuzu's naked body in detail.

「Also, whenever Misuzu kisses...she brings her face close to my right side. She likes rubbing her nose against my cheek」

I look straight at Shiba Takahiko.

「It's not a long time since I've become acquainted with Misuzu...our time together might be shorter than you but...I know; The things Misuzu likes, the cute parts of Misuzu...only I know that...!」

Keeping her embrace...Misuzu speaks.

「Yes. I'm already this man's『woman』...!」

---

## 245. Psychological Game / Bluff vs Bluff

---

「...Fuahahahahahaha!」

Suddenly...『Kakka』laughs out.

The head of one of the Japan's leading names, an elderly with power...laughs at me and his granddaughter.

「Interesting...very interesting. Just how far are you going to betray my expectations...!」

『Kakka』...his voice and mouth seem to be happy but his eyes are sharp.  
...He's angry.

A human who's laughing when angry is scary.

「...Takahiko-kun」

『Kakka』calls the elite young man he's educating directly.

「Y-Yes...『Kakka』」

Timidly...Shiba Takahiko turned to the charismatic old man.

「I'm sorry...but please give up on Misuzu」

Shiba Takahiko...

「But...then what about me? W-What's going to happen to me?」

Coming this far...Shiba Takahiko's only interested in himself.

「Chose a suitable woman for you. Therefore, forget about Misuzu...」

『Kakka's』eyes pierce through Shiba Takahiko's mind.

「I think it's better not to be involved with Misuzu any further. If you marry Misuzu as is...you will be in an disadvantageous spot in the Kouzuki group」

That's in short...

『Kakka's』going to impose a penalty on Misuzu...?!

...Or

「You don't want to marry such a shameless woman who has been defiled by another man already?! Don't you think that this lady over there is a disgrace to Kouzuki house?」

『Kakka』smiles maliciously.

Far from punishing Misuzu...『Kakka's』going to expel Misuzu from Kouzuki house?

Either way...if he marries Misuzu who's abandoned by『Kakka』, he won't have success in Kouzuki group.

Rather...being Misuzu's husband would become a hindrance...

「U-Understood...I-If that's the case. I will leave everything to『Kakka』」

Shiba Takahiko accepts『Kakka's』proposal easily.

In the end...this man doesn't see Misuzu as anything but a tool to becoming a relative of the Kouzuki house...

「It's my fault to raise such a delinquent girl like Misuzu. I'm very sorry」

「No...that's not, 『Kakka』」

「Therefore...if Takahiko-kun finds a daughter of a house you find interest in then you can talk to me」

『Kakka』smiles

If『Kakka』creates the engagement directly...any house under Kouzuki house can't refuse.

「...T-Thank you very much!」

Knowing that he'll be given a special favor...Shiba Takahiko's face brightens.

「Oh...is there a girl you're interested in?」

『Kakka』asks, Shiba Takahiko...

「Uhm...『Kakka』well you see, for example...Ruriko-san, would that be okay?」

Shiba Takahiko shows a grin.

Ruriko-san got frightened from what he said.

「I-I...」

Next moment...『Kakka』makes an angry face...

「You should know your limits!」

「Ha...Uhm, I'm very sorry!」

Shiba Takahiko's surprised from『Kakka's』sudden boiling of anger.

「Ruriko is the eldest daughter of Kouzuki family! She's the legitimate successor of Kouzuki family! There's no reason for an outsider's son like you to be married to her! What blasphemy for a subject...!!」

「...I-I'm very sorry, I-I was impolite!!」

Shiba Takahiko gets off from the chair and kneels on the floor!

「I'm sorry! I'm sorry! I'm very sorry!」

Rubbing his forehead on the carpet on the floor...Shiba Takahiko desperately apologizes.

「Enough! You can retire...I'm disappointed in you! I never thought that you forgot who you are that much...!」

『Kakka』forcibly holds back his anger...

「Anyway...I'm cancelling your engagement with Misuzu. Fortunately, this matter hasn't been leaked outside so there's no problem in cancelling the engagement. I will talk to your father myself...okay?」

「Y-Yes」

「Then...return to the room and wait with your friends. I will forget about your disrespectful remark just now. I expect you to study more...very well」

「...Yes. 『Kakka』」

Shiba Takahiko drops crestfallen.

「What are you doing?!...I'm telling you to get out of this room!」

「Yes...right away」

Limply, Shiba Takahiko stands up then heads to the door leading outside.

「...Continue your loyalty to Kouzuki house from now on. That's your way to live」

『Kakka』told Shiba Takahiko.

「...I-I'll keep that in mind. E-Excuse me!」

Shiba Takahiko opens the door and went out...  
His whole body's trembling...and his waist is limp.  
It's an unstable footstep you can only see as running away.

...Thud.

When the door closes...Misuzu asks me.

「Danna-sama...what's your evaluation with that person?」

...Eh?

「My evaluation?」

「Anything will do...please tell me what you think about Takahiko-san」

...I

「I can't trust someone who says『I'm making efforts』」

I gave my honest impressions.

「...What do you mean?」

「That's because they're not making any effort...」

My bad memories from before revives.

「My mother's like that. 『I'm making so much effort』『I'm always working so hard』A nature where she just screams to anyone...」

Ah...I don't want to remember this.

But...it can't be helped.

「My mother owns two stores...well, it might be hard for a woman to be the owner but...the『effort』my mother speaks about is『A complaint came from the guest』or『The worker's job is bad』or『the part timers aren't gathering as scheduled』...she'll complain to the management of the shop...then it's natural for the management for them to resolve them one by one...that's not『effort』at all It's the job she chose」

As I thought...I hate her.

As the owner...she insists the『work she has to do』...as『effort』...

Then she finds it hard to deal with it...she never did anything as a wife, as a mother...

She never tried to fulfil her role in the family...that woman just continued to blame me, my father, and grandma...

「That person's the same. He's the one who decided that he'll reach the top on the Kouzuki group? Then, it's normal that you should work hard for your dreams. And yet, he shouldn't be saying that『I'm making so much effort』...!」

That's what I think.

「I hate those kind of people...I never trust them」

Misuzu...

「I agree with you Danna-sama!」

Then, she smiled

「Since when have you thought of that?」

『Kakka』asks me.

Since when...?

「Uhm...perhaps ever since I met Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee」

Yeah...that's right.

「Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Margo-san...even though there's things『they have to do』they never complain. Always smiling...they deal with it without saying a complaint. Everyone understands. If it's something that must be done then they won't say it's troublesome」

I learned by looking at the back of my『elder sisters』

「Hmm...true, the girls over there are hardworking」

『Kakka』looks at me...no, he's looking down at me.

He's trying to analyze what kind of human am I...a cold, sharp glance...

「Grandfather...why did you make such a fragile person my『fiance』?」

Misuzu asks her grandfather.

「What do you think?」

The grandfather answered the question with another.

「Takahiko-san's father...Shiba-san has grown greatly over the last few years



on the division in Kouzuki group he's in charged with, he currently holds a huge influence in the current group. In any case, he may be the top of the management team of the corporate group. Therefore...I can understand the story why Shiba-san's son and a daughter of Kouzuki clan—me would be married...

「What...you already know the reason」

『Kakka』snorts

「Takahiko-san's father...Shiba Okitachi-kun is a competent person. I've never met such a talented person in my entrepreneur life. Though his son is a little unreliable as you can see...if we leave it to him then Kouzuki group would be at peace. Therefore, your engagement with Takahiko-kun was necessary」

『Kakka』purposely speaks in past tense.

Because of Misuzu and me...that『engagement』is broken, and it's said to be serious damage.

「But...Shiba-san isn't from a distinguished family. Shiba-san has succeeded his position with his own power. For Kouzuki house, he's a newbie...a outsider vassal. People who came from Kouzuki family, branch family lineage will never like him Misuzu said.

「If Takahiko-san and I got married...Shiba-san's power will be strengthened, and it'll become a full war against the old-fashioned lineage. Kouzuki group will be split into two.」

『Kakka』doesn't answer.

He's just looking at Misuzu with a grumpy face.

「Also...there's a rumor that Shiba-san's ambitious. He can't continue enduring as the vassal of Kouzuki house」

『Kakka』interrupts

「I don't care about the results. Either way, I will be dead when the conflict occurs. No...Everyone's waiting for me to die. They're thinking that they shouldn't stir a conflict in the house while I'm still healthy...」

『Kakka's』bad temper grows stronger.

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san on the side feels restless.

They seem to have not seen such displeasure.

「Do you know what will happen after my death? The living group will be destroying, killing each other...」

Is that『Kakka's』real intent?

「...Understood, I!」

Suddenly...Ruriko-san opens her mouth.

「IN short...grandfather is giving us a『trial』? We would be saving Kouzuki house's predicament with our own hands!」

...Err

There's that in a sense but...

This old man's behavior feels more reckless.

「I don't want to do such『trial』」

Misuzu tells her grandfather.

「What grandfather's doing is only increasing the trouble for the next generation. I don't want to have such pointless hardships. I don't want to exhaust my important lifetime just to restore the human relations and the trust grandfather had broken...!」

...Misuzu.

「I want to be happy. I want to spend my time being happy with Danna-sama. I don't want to waste my time on such a stupid thing...!」

Misuzu and『Kakka』glares at each other...

「Then...get out of Kouzuki house」

『Kakka』answers.

「Yes... understood」

Misuzu responds immediately...Ruriko-san...

「Misuzu-oneesama...what have you done!」

Misuzu turns to Ruriko-san...

「It's fine...I was ready for this long ago」

Though she say that...Misuzu's body is trembling.  
I hold her hand tightly.  
Misuzu grasps it back strongly...

「Kouzuki house...and Kouzuki group is mine. I've raised it and made it big. It's mine so I'm free to overturn it and break it」

『Kakka』looks down on Misuzu coldly.

「But...you're going against my will. That's inexcusable...Misuzu!」

Misuzu's trembling stopped.

「Therefore...I will leave Kouzuki house. Grandfather can keep playing in his own little world」

Misuzu retaliate calmly.

「What will you do after leaving Kouzuki house? How would you live? You won't be able to continue school」

Misuzu...

「I will be depending on Kuromori Minaho for a while」

...Minaho-neesan?

『Kakka』laugh.

「The owner of a prostitution organization!? It's easy for me to put pressure on Minaho-kun and make the『Kuromori』unable to stand by themselves you know? If it's with my power...」

...This is bad.

Misuzu's going to bother Minaho-neesan and『Kuromori』

Nagisa gently whispers to my worried ears.

「It'll be fine...so make a calm face...!」

...Eh!?

「You're a『Man』aren't you? Believe us...!」

Nagisa smiles.

Un...got it.

I also prepare myself.

「Grandfather is someone who doesn't understand anything」

Misuzu tells her grandfather

「...What do you mean?」

「Kuromori Minaho is determined and strong」

Minaho-neesan...

「I've understood it from Kuromori-san's actions these past few days.」 Even if grandfather uses all of his power...Kuromori will never be crushed. If you rampage so much then we'll just flee of the country for a while. Perhaps, Kuromori-san has already pooled money overseas that even grandfather can't discover」

Un...Minaho-neesan should have done that much.

「But before that, I'll use the power of the state and arrest Minaho-kun. I won't let you leave the country」

『Kakka』opens a card in his hand.

「If grandfather moves the police officials...then we will take action. You don't seem to understand even though you're watching Shirasaka family's incident... Kuromori-san's judgement and ability to get things done is wonderful」

Un...if it's Minaho-neesan.

She can move the public opinion over the internet.

She can manipulate the media.

We can escape overseas in the middle of the disorder.

「The, I will use the underground power as well. Wherever you try to escape... Kouzuki security service people will chase you」

『Kakka』opens his next card.

「Father...we have Margo-san...Michi as well. We'll be able to repel whoever you send」

Misuzu says so but...if a number of people on the same group as Seki-san and Fujimiya-san follows...

On the contrary, if Kudou papa is the one to chase...then we've got no chance of winning.

「Ufufufu...speaking of which, Misuzu doesn't know」

Nagisa smiles.

「Kouzuki-sama, have you forgotten? Kyouko-san is our ally...!」

Nagisa laughs at『Kakka』

「Kyouko...is a woman I sent over. Her being on your side is...」

『Kakka』says in panic but...

「Kyouko-san is our ally...! Right, Mao!」

「Un. Mao loves Kyouko-chan!」

Mao-chan happily shouts when she heard Kyouko-san's name.

「...Kyouko-san, no way」

Fujimiya-san mutters.

「Yes...if I say『Kyouko Messer』you'll know right away, don't you?」

Fujimiya-san and Seki-san are in shock from Nagisa's smile.

「.....Kyouko Dothnomechey」

「...She's a leader of a Brazilian underground organization isn't she?」

「No, the whole world's underground organization cooperates with her」

「If it's overseas...Kouzuki security service's power won't be able to reach」

The two top elite responds this much just after hearing her name...  
Kyouko-san's really an amazing person「」

「...Well, there's no actual need for Kyouko-san's help thought. Minaho-san doesn't even need to flee abroad!」

Nagisa looks at us with a smile

「You can just come to my house with Misuzu!」

...Nagisa?

「Our shop still have vacant rooms...you can stay there and go to school. You'll help out with the shop too. Also, Misuzu will do housework. I will be training her the general things」

No...you see

『Kakka』has such a tremendous power...

It's a power that Minaho-neesan must think of fleeing abroad and『Kuromori』can be instantly killed...

Nagisa's flower shop would be gone in a blink of an eye...

「Kouzuki-sama...there's no way you would try to crush my flower shop, would you?」

「...You won't, right?! Ihihhihi!」

Mago-chan covers Nagisa's words.

「In the theater a while ago, I know it very well but...it seems that my old fans love me. If ever『Kakka』tries to destroy my shop...what would everyone do...?」

...I see

『Kuromori』is an illegal criminal organization...

If『Kakka』applied pressure...then we won't be able to maintain our internal activities.

That's why we have to run away overseas.

...But.

Nagisa now is a retired prostitute, she's now just a florist.

If he applies pressure to a commoner Nagisa who's working hard raising her small daughter...

Nagisa's old guests won't stay silent.

Everyone might not be as powerful as『Kakka』but...

They have decent power in political and business circles.

If they become a group...『Kakka』won't be able to ignore it.

「Besides, I'm a talkative woman...I might tell everyone that Kouzuki-sama has driven Misuzu out of the house and treated her badly!」

With this...『Kakka』won't be able to make a sound.

For the time being, if we run to Nagisa's house...then『Kakka』won't be able to intervene 「In case of Misuzu's school, she can just transfer to Minaho-san's school. Katsuko's a director so there's no problem」

Nagisa continues to talk.

「I can secure your safety at the time of going and leaving school」

Michi said naturally.

「Right, of course, Margo-chan and Kyouko-san will also help out...!」

Misuzu looks at her grandfather.

「I will live thanks to everyone's help. Goodbye, grandfather」

「W-Wait...Misuzu-oneesama! You should discuss this further with grandfather!」

Ruriko-san tries to detain her but

「No. I think that father won't understand whatever I say. Don't worry...It'll only take a while. Let's see...wait for ten years. Ruriko-san」

Misuzu tells her beautiful younger cousin.

「...Ten years?」

Ruriko-san doesn't understand what it means.

「Yes. Today, grandfather has expelled me from Kouzuki house...nothing will change in my life plan. It'll only be delayed for ten years」

...Misuzu?

「...What do you mean?」

The silent old man asks...

「I will advance to Tokyo University. Then, I'll follow my father as a national government employee...pass the senior examination and become a high class bureaucrat. Then, I'll make connections with the political and business world. I'll show that I can crawl up with my own strength. Even if I'm chased by Kouzuki house, it won't be any hindrance」

Misuzu's eyes are filled with strength.

True...she doesn't need Kouzuki house's name to go to Tokyo University. Even when taking examination as a government official...

「In ten years...Grandfather will be 92. Even if he's alive, he won't be the front of the management. At that time...If I stand out as a competent person of the government, Kouzuki house will be the one to approach me」

Un...when『Kakka's』prestige wanes down...

Kouzuki house will try to accept Misuzu again.

「I will do my best so I can become that」

Misuzu smiles at Ruriko-san.

「Therefore...we'll be apart for ten years. I'm sure that I will be back...!」

Misuzu approaches Ruriko-san.

「Misuzu-oneesama...!」

「Ruriko-san...!」

The two embrace each other.

「I'm not someone strong like Misuzu-oneesama」

Ruriko-san says sadly.

「That's why I'm sure to marry the man grandfather choses, I think that I will live as that person says. Eventually, even if a conflict occurs in Kouzuki house...I won't be able to do anything...I can't do anything!」

「Are you choosing that kind of life?」

Misuzu asks.

「I...!」

「Ruriko-san, if you're accepting such life from the bottom of your heart then I won't say anything. But, if you hate that life...」

「...If I hate it?」

Ruriko-san's frantic eyes look up at Misuzu.

「...Rebel」

「...Against grandfather?」

Misuzu laughs...

「No...against your own weak mind that's swept away by the fate...!」

「...Onesama」

Ruriko-san hangs her head.

「Now, our talk with『Kakka』has ended so let's go! Minaho-san's waiting」

Nagisa smiles.



「Un, let's go!」

Mao-chan's energetic

「...Yoshiko-san, please take care of Ruriko-san」

Misuzu entrusts Ruriko-san to Yoshiko-san...

「There's no need to answer immediately but...please think about what I just said」

Then...she turned to her grandfather

「Then, grandfather...」

She smiles refreshed.

「...Farewell!」

...Misuzu

「Let's go, Danna-sama」

...No

Is this okay?...

Misuzu and『Kakka』will part like this.

Leaving Ruriko-san behind...

...Then

「...Wait」

『Kakka』speaks with a sharp voice.

「...What is it? Kouzuki-sama?」

Misuzu calls her grandfather『Kouzuki-sama』

「You're not banished by me but you chose to leave the house by yourself...」

「Yes. It is as you say」

Misuzu glares at her grandfather strongly...

「Then...leave everything that's given by Kouzuki house to you...!」

...Does that mean?

「Take off everything you're wearing from this room and leave naked...!!!」

---



## 246. The oath of love

---

「You're right! Sorry about that!」

Misuzu then reached out for the buttons of her uniform.

Eh...no way?

She's getting naked as『Kakka』tells her?

She's going out of this room naked?

The women in the room had their faces turned pale.

「Grandfather, that's too unreasonable!」

Ruriko-san says but...

「No...Misuzu will leave everything given to her by Kouzuki house」

...『Kakka』replies with a strong expression.

That alone made Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san frightened...they look down.

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san are puzzled but...

They can't complain to their lord,『Kakka』

Michi glares at『Kakka』

Nagisa and Mao-chan are smiling for some reason...

They seem to be happily watching Misuzu's strip show.

「Danna-sama...please hide me」

Misuzu tells me as she unbuttons herself.

「...Eh?」

「I don't want to show my naked body to grandfather...」

Misuzu looks at my eyes.

These are eyes filled with determination...

「S-Sure...」

I stand in front of Misuzu and prevent Kakka from seeing Misuzu's body.

I spread my suit and cover her up.

「We'll help covering Misuzu too!」

Nagisa tells Mao-chan.

「Okay, Mama」

Nagisa and Mao-chan helped out to hide Misuzu.

Michi as well, she enters a covering position.,

「Danna-sama...please listen」

Tossing off her uniform...Misuzu on her underwear speaks.

「U-Un」

「Once I'm naked...please lend me your jacket」

「Got it」

This is a men's wear so I can somehow wrap up Misuzu's naked body.

But, the hem would barely hide Misuzu's ass.

When she walks...her ass and secret parts would be exposed.

「Once I put it on...I will hide in the girls' restroom in the hallway when we leave this room」

...Restroom?

「There's a shop for women's clothing on the first floor of the hotel. Danna-sama saw that, right...?」

「...Yeah, there's definitely one」

Director Yamaoka said that the shops on the first floor are open as usual.

The clerk might be from Kouzuki security service but...

I should be able to buy clothes from there.

「Then...please buy me clothes and footwear. It doesn't matter if it's souvenir T-shirts and shorts. As for footwear, cheap sandals will do. For the time being, clothes to get out from here will do」

Un...we can just buy underwear later.

For now, just some clothes and footwear to hide Misuzu's naked body...

「I see...I just have to buy it!」

「...Do you have money?」

「Minaho-neesan gave me 100k yen so it'll be fine」

「For the T-shirt, it'll be seen through if it's white so please choose a dark colored one. Size is M. For shorts you can pick an adjustable rubber...if there's none, then M. As for sandals, you can buy even just beach sandals...!」

「...Got it」

Misuzu in her underwear takes off her leather shoes...then she goes for her socks.

「Should I go too? It would be easier to buy that way right?」

「Mao can come too!」

「It's embarrassing to buy women's clothes isn't it?」

Nagisa and Mao-chan offers, but...

「No...It's dangerous to go to the first floor」

It's still not 8 o'clock just as Miss Cordelia promised but...  
Viola's followers might've already invaded.  
I can't bring Nagisa and Mao-chan.

「I'll do this alone. Nagisa and Mao-chan, stay with Misuzu...!」

「...Understood, Dear」

Nagisa smiles

「Michi...please protect Misuzu, Nagisa and Mao-chan while I'm not here」

Michi...

「Certainly...!」

She takes out a red whip and electric baton from under her skirt and makes a big stance.

Michi takes out a weapon, Seki-san and Fujimiya-san stands up.  
They're preparing so they can move anytime.

「Seki-san, Fujimiya-san...Michi won't make a move unless Misuzu and others are in a dangerous situation...right, Michi?」

「Yes. It is as Master says...!」

「Therefore...don't approach Misuzu while I'm not here」

I look at the two guards.

「...If it's the two of us, then we can easily fight that child」

Seki-san said, but...

「Even if I throw my life away...I will only protect Misuzu-sama until Master returns...」

Michi's fighting spirit flares up.

「...Just protecting you say」

Fujimiya-san tells Michi.

「Yes. That's only the order given to me. I will never attack anyone. I swear that in honor of Kudou style martial arts」

Fujimiya-san takes a seat after listening to that.

「I'll trust what you say...」

「Wait...Fujimiya-san/」

Seki-san looks at her colleague in surprise.

「I also think that the duty of a guard is to protect. If that girl has no intent of attacking then I don't think there's a problem...?」

「But...what if『Kakka』wishes for it, what would you do?」

If he orders to go at Misuzu with all their strength while I'm away...

「I'm working as a『guard』under Kouzuki security service. I'm no『Kakka's』private soldier...!」

「Geez...why are you so hard-headed!」

「What about you Seki-san...I think that you don't have any honor at all...!」

The two glare at each other.

「If I decide to fight that girl then don't hinder me」

Seki-san said filled with sarcasm.

「Sure. Go on...I am here to protect『Kakka』」

fujimiya-san laughs.

「Normally...I'd like Danna-sama to take off my underwear, but」

Misuzu who's barefooted turned her hands on the bra hook this time as she speak.

「Yeah, too bad」

I'm spreading my suit to hide Misuzu's naked body...  
So there's no way I can take off Misuzu's underwear.

「Next time...I'll leave it to Danna-sama」

「Yeah, got it」

「Then...please take a look. At Misuzu's naked body」

「...Yeah」

At the same time when the hook comes off...Misuzu's well shaped boobs spills off.

Her pink nipples touches the air.

「It's beautiful...Misuzu」

「My body's all for Danna-sama...」

Then...she speaks to her grandfather.

「I won't show it to grandfather...!」

Then, she puts her hands on her panty...  
Then lowers it...

Misuzu's pussy...

A woman's crotch...is very beautiful I think

No matter how many times I see it...

「...Danna-sama」

Misuzu turns to me.

「...Sure」

I put on my coat to Misuzu.  
Naked Misuzu under a suit is very sexy.

「Oh...Danna-sama」

She then jumps to my chest.

「I love you...」

She clings to me and asks for a kiss.  
We piled our lips while I feel her pure skin.

「Waaaao!」

Mao-chan raises a cheer.

「At this rate, my chest will feel chilly so please give me your necktie too...!」  
「...Sure」

I remove my necktie and put it on Misuzu's naked neck.  
Misuzu ties it herself dexterously...

「Then, let's go?」

First, let's get off the room and head to the restroom in the hallway.

「You're right, let's go」

Nagisa said.

「I ask Master to be the vanguard...I will serve as the rear guard」

Michi holds Seki-san back.

「Un, let's go everyone」

「Okaay~!」

Mao-chan replies loudly.

「Then...excuse me grandfather. Ruriko-san, stay healthy...!」

「Misuzu-oneesama...!」

Ruriko-san looks at Misuzu with a face of a puppy about to be abandoned.

「We'll only be apart for a while so don't worry」

Misuzu said.

「Danna-sama and I will never abandon you and Yoshiko-san」

「..... ! ? 」

Ruriko-san doesn't seem to understand what it meant

「Let's go...Danna-sama」

At the moment I tried to hold the doorknob...



「Wait...」

『Kakka』stops our exit.

「Grandfather...is there anything you still need from me/」

『Kakka』...

「Though you can hide in the toilet...the hotel corridor is the same as the public road...it's unknown whether someone can see you」

「I am prepared for that」

「Are you not embarrassed?」

「Isn't it grandfather who gave an instruction?」

「I don't want the world to see your shameless appearance. If that man's going to buy your clothes...then isn't it better to wait in this room?」

「...I don't want that」

Misuzu looks at her grandfather with cold eyes.

「...What?」

「I don't want to breathe the same air as my grandfather! I don't want to exchange words with someone with a cold heart like grandfather」

「...Misuzu」

Kouzuki old man's speechless.

...Hm?

Nagisa's tapping my back.

「...Is this okay?」

She whispers to my ear.

...I

「Misuzu...Accept『Kakka's』offer」

「...Danna-sama?!」

「It's safer to wait in here than the restroom in the corridor」

Fujimiya-san promises that she won't make a move unless Michi does.

Seki-san...won't attack Michi while defending『Kakka』

Rather, as long as Michi and Seki-san's restrain continues...

Misuzu, Nagisa, and Mao-chan's safety is guaranteed.

「I'll be right back immediately」

「You're right, then let's wait in this room...Misuzu」

Nagisa tells Misuzu.

「You may hate it but...for me and Mao, it's safer here than in the corridor restroom」

「...Nagisa-sama」

「It's『Kakka』after all...so there might be guards from Kouzuki security service waiting outside the corridor」

They might restrain all of us as soon as we leave the room?!

「How about this, 『Kakka』?! As you said...Misuzu and us will wait for his return. Therefore...could you not hinder him going to the first floor to buy Misuzu's clothes?」

Nagisa tells『Kakka』smilingly.

「I won't do anything weird」

「Do you swear?」

「I swear...I promise that」

Hearing that...Nagisa speaks to Misuzu...

「What would you do?『Kakka』says that but...?」

...Misuzu

「Understood...I will wait for Danna-sama's return in here」

「...I'll be back, Misuzu」

「...Yes, Danna-sama」

I left the room alone.



Running through the corridor...I rush towards the elevator.

Anyway...I can't let Misuzu stay like that for long.

When I reached the elevator, I noticed it.

Right...it's dangerous to board from this floor.

I jumped down the stairs and run down four floors as fast as possible.

I take that elevator then head to the first floor.

On the first floor...there's Kudou papa's subordinates and people with Kouzuki security service uniform.

But still...they're operating the shops somehow.

I look for a shop selling clothes.

Ah, there's two close by.

A decent clothes shop...

And a souvenir shop...

I dive to the souvenir shop without hesitation.

In the T-shirt corner...I grabbed a black shirt with『TOKYO』and Asakusa lantern printed on it.

I also found a rubber waist adjustable shorts.

There's Vinyl sports sandals too...

I bring those to the cashier in a hurry...

「Please punch this! ASAP!」

The clerk is actually a person from Kouzuki security service but...he's surprised that a shopper comes in such a situation.

But...he sold it anyway.

The three items costs 7850 yen.

I don't know if it's expensive or not.

Well, it's a shop on a luxury hotel so it's higher than the market price though.

「Thank you very much!」

I give thanks and take the good before the clerk could even say「Thank you very much」

I immediately dashed out of the store and head to the elevator again.

「My...what's wrong?」

On the corridor, I suddenly met Neko-san

「Sorry, I'm in a hurry right now...!」

I said and run the corridor at full speed.

「I don't get it but...do your best!」

Neko-san cheers me from the back

「Thanks! Neko-san stay safe as well!」

I shouted...

I arrived in front of the elevator.

Hurry...hurry up and come...!

I jump into the arriving elevator...

Now...what to do?>

Should I go to the same floor as before?

Or...should I go to a floor above and get down the stairs?

I don't know which would be the best camouflage.

What was the first route director Yamaoka took?

If I recall...we took the elevator three times.

On each floor...we purposely transfer to a different elevator a bit further...

...Then

I first go to the 10th floor from the elevator.

Then, I run up two floors by stairs...

Then, I head to the 28th floor using a different elevator.

Then, I lowered 5 floors...

I don't know if it's a good camouflage though.

Anyway, I just did the best I can...!

...Knock!

I knock on the door.

「...I came back! Open this!」

My body's sweaty all over.

There's sweat dripping from my forehead.

「Welcome back」

The one who opened the door...is Nagisa as expected.

I jumped into the room.

I go to the room where everyone is.

「Misuzu...I'm back!」

When I enter the room...

...Hm?

「Welcome back! Danna-sama!」

Misuzu happily welcomes me.

The room is dark.

It's a room originally built as a conference room for major corporations.

There's an image projected on the screen.

My face is reflected on it.

There are also small images of the shops and the corridor on the first floor.

...Is this?

The surveillance cameras in the hotel observed all of my actions from this room?

...Nagisa's smiling.

I know what's this about.

...Misuzu

She stares at her grandfather as she cling to me.

「Don't worry about it...『Kakka』and Misuzu are only competing with their obstinancy」

Nagisa said.

「Really...their character is so similar...!」

Similar?...Misuzu and『Kakka』?

Speaking of which...true, their eyes staring at each other are similar...

「...11 minutes and 36 seconds」

Seki-san tells『Kakka』

「It's earlier than expected or late?」

『Kakka』asks Seki-san

「He's faster than expected until the purchase, but after that...it's unexpected that he did such thorough actions to go back in this room」

「...Umu Right」

Somehow, I don't get what's going on but...

「Misuzu, wear this for the time being...!」

I hand the shopping bag to Misuzu.

「If you stay like that, you'll catch a cold」

Even if this is a『test』...

I don't want her to wear clothes『Kakka』told her to take off...

「Yes, thank you very much!」

「You're sweating so much」

Nagisa takes out a handkerchief and wipes my sweat...

「...Sorry. I kept this a secret from you」

「It's fine...just Nagisa's thought counts. Thanks」

I thank Nagisa...

「...Danna-sama, please」

Misuzu turns her back on me...

...UN

I took off the suit I put on Misuzu...

Then I guarded Misuzu from『Kakka's』eyes

Misuzu puts on the T-shirt right away...

She then wear the shorts without any panty.

Sandals on her bare feet...

Un...she'll be able to go out with this

「...But, that's quite some bad clothing choice」

『Kakka』said as he look at Misuzu's change of clothes.

「There's a store in the hotel that sells clothes with a better sense, isn't there?」

『Kakka』tells me

「I just bought something as soon as possible...and something that's cheap」

I tell『Kakka』

「Cheap?...what, aren't you quite a stingy man...?」

『Kakka』snorts...

I know that he's provoking me.

「Yes...I've got to leave some money even just a bit...」

「Is this your wisdom to survive?」

「...It's not」

I look at Misuzu.

「...It's for Misuzu's sake」

Misuzu's eyes open wide.

「...What do you mean?」

『Kakka』looks at me.

「I don't know about girl's clothing. Either way, we've got to buy underwear later so...I kept money so Misuzu can buy the clothes she like.」

There's still over 90k yen left.

If I have this much...I'll be able to buy clothes Misuzu likes somehow.

「What faithfulness...!」

Fujimiya-san comments.

「It's wrong...Fujimiya-san」

Misuzu...smiles and looks at me.

「Danna-sama always loves me from the bottom of his heart...!」

She touch her clothes lovingly...

「I like this clothes. It's the first time Danna-sama clothes bought me clothes...  
I'll treasure this for the rest of my life」

Nagisa smiles.

「You're right...our relationship isn't a master-slave. He's always so kind to us...!」

「Yes...Misuzu loves Danna-sama as much as he loves me...」

Misuzu said.

「Now then『Kakka』...what will you do? Their bond is as you can see. Have you understood what kind of man he is?」

Naigsa tells『Kakka』

...This is?

Me going out to buy Misuzu's clothes...  
Is all just a test to evaluate me as a man?

『Kakka』...

「I understand his judgement and ability to act... In this situation...I recognize that he didn't go straight down to the shop, and maneuvered so our position won't be known immediately. A wonderful concern. Afterward, he also bought cheap clothes suitable for the condition so Misuzu can freely choose her clothing. But...!」

『Kakka』looks at me...

「You're not a man suited to be Misuzu's husband for Kouzuki house」

He looks at me with cold eyes.

「You would be a perfect lover for Misuzu but...your honesty is a problem if you want to live in Kouzuki house. Business owners should be more dull. A man who stands on the top is needed to be egoistic...!」

He evaluates me.

「Got it. Very well...I will accept Misuzu having this man as her lover. However, it would be trouble unless you accept an official husband that's suitable for Kouzuki house. I don't care if it's a fake couple...there are a lot of men who wants to be Misuzu's husband even just in paper. Well...as for the heir, it would be troublesome if you don't bear the official husband's child...」

『Kakka』says that.

In exchange of acknowledging my relationship with her...she'll marry another man?!

Furthermore, she'll give birth to that man's child...!

「Don't give me that bullshit! Misuzu's my『woman』 I don't intend to let any other men embrace her...she won't bear any child other than mine!」

I told『Kakka』clearly

「...Danna-sama」

Misuzu clings to me.

The women in the room pays attention to me.



「She's already mine! She's not your toy!」

『Kakka』glares at me with cold eyes.

...I won't lose.

...Like hell I'll lose.

...I'll never lose!!!

「Grandfather...you seem to be misunderstanding something...」

Misuzu said.

「...Misunderstanding?」

「My Danna-sama won't enter Kouzuki house in whatever form」

「I know...I'll place him in a suitable company and give him a reasonable salary.

Is that okay?」

「I don't mean that...!」

...Dammit!

...Making a fool out of me

「I'll make a bakery!」

「...Bakery?」

「Yes. Therefore I won't accept your offer!」

Nagisa looks at me.

「Dear...what about my flower shop?」

...Err

「I'll work hard on both the bakery and flower shop Either way...I don't need help from the Kouzuki group」

I strongly reject it...!

「yes...Danna-sama does his best on his work」

Misuzu informs her grandfather.

「Therefore...please be relieved. I will be the one to steer Kouzuki house...!」

...Eh?!

「What foolish thing are you saying? What can a woman do?」

『Kakka』tries to laugh at Misuzu but...

「How can grandfather say that I can't do what he can?」

『Kakka』takes on Misuzu's provocation.

「...Are you mocking me?」

「What grandfather does is only managing talented people and adjusting the interests within the inside and outside of the group. The people doing the real creative work are the people of each of the company in the group, not Grandfather. Grandfather adjusts the problems in the group...select talented people, and eliminate the problematic ones...isn't that all of it?」

「Are you saying that you can do that?」

「I don't have to...either way...grandfather will be gone soon...!」

Misuzu conflicts with her grandfather.

「Ruriko-san's gentle and honest so that kind of role is impossible for her. However, it's obvious that the『fiance』grandfather has chosen would be the coordinator and will be the one to run the group. Even if each of the company's management is entrusted to a capable person...the group's whole coordination would be in Kouzuki bloodline...I think that I'm the only one who has grandfather's blood that can do that...!」

...Misuzu.

「As I mentioned earlier...I will enter Tokyo University and become a national bureaucrat. Then, I'll make a pipe in the central political financial circles...and I'll return to Kouzuki group when I'm 30 years old. Not belonging to any faction in Kouzuki group...if I have my own route to the countries political and financial world, the people in the group will silently grand my return. Everyone should know that it's more stable having a person coming from the original top Kouzuki bloodline...」

「But...that would be grave for you. Being the top of Kouzuki will always be followed by very ambitious people...!」

「Therefore...I need Danna-sama!」

Misuzu embraces me.

「As long as I have him...I can overcome any difficulties. Just being held by him

calms my mind...I love him!」

...Misuzu

Misuzu thought about the whole Kouzuki house...

She worries about her and Ruriko-san's future...

She's suffering all this time.

What can I do—

To relieve Misuzu?

「Got it...Misuzu. I'll never let you go. I'll always be by your side...!」

「...Danna-sama!!!」

Then...Misuzu

She kneels in front of me.

「...Your hand」

Misuzu holds my hand and kisses it.

「I, Kouzuki Misuzu...in rainy or sunny day...in sickness or in health...for richer, for poorer...I'll be your『woman』...I swear to God to dedicate my constant love only to you...!」

Smiling, Misuzu looks up at me.

There's tears of joy shining in Misuzu's eyes.

「Misuzu...is yours. I'll never, ever let go!」

Saying that, Misuzu stands up and gives me a passionate kiss...!

「Misuzu-oneesama...!」

「Misuzu-sama!」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san's impressed by our hug.

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san are stunned.

「Nowadays...if you ask, it's something a man should do to a woman, right?」

「Well, that's true in most of the cases. Misuzu-sama's just too leading...!」

「D-Does this mean...T-They got married?」

Fujimiya-san asks Seki-san...

「I don't know! Marriage...even though there's no priest, is it okay for them to

make the vow themselves?」

「But, Misuzu-sama...has sworn to God...!」

...Hmm

Legally...I'm still a first year high school, this isn't good at all...perhaps.

Not caring about the realism...Seki-san and Fujimiya-san are『Maidens』who sticks to the『Swearing love in front of God』

...But,『Kakka』

---

## 247. Successor Declaration!

---

「Misuzu...I won't allow that!」

Misuzu...

「Yes. You don't have to. I will leave this house and will live with Danna-sama after all...!」

「Then...what do you intend to do?」

「As discussed earlier...I will live with Danna-sama at Nagisa-sama's house. I will enter Tokyo University and become a national bureaucrat. When grandfather's no longer healthy...then everyone from Kouzuki clan will need me. I only have to endure for ten years. I will leave Kouzuki house for ten years. Then, I can be with Ruriko-san again...!」

「Are you saying that you'll just wait for me to age?!」

「...Grandfather, you seem to not understand, do you?」

Misuzu glares at her grandfather with strong eyes.

「Grandfather's already old enough」

「Misuzu...do you understand what you're saying...!」

Nagisa whispers to Mao-chan.

「Look, Mao...do that!」

「Okaay~」

Mao-chan goes in between the two and shouts!

「Noo! Fighting is a no-go...!!!」

The two were dumbfounded by the intrusion of the cute little girl.

「Really...your personalities are alike」

Nagisa looks at the grandfather-granddaughter and said.

「Strongly obstinate...always trying to stand in the superior position...yet, both

of you are quick-witted...so it becomes an endless argument...!」

『Kakka』looks at Nagisa.

「Misuzu wasn't a child like that before. She's bright, gentle, and a docile child. This is because she went to your place. She has turned to such a audacious daughter...!」

Misuzu protests against her grandfather.

「I'm a girl like this since a long time! I can't show the real me to anyone until I went to Nagisa-sama's place! Nagisa-sama and Danna-sama has accepted me as I am」

The last phrase was in tearful voice.

「I was finally able to say what I think freely!...I'm already tired playing the『good girl』just to please grandfather and the whole clan...!」

...Misuzu

Misuzu embraces me tightly.

「This man has accepted me as I am. I'm able to expose everything in front of him. No matter what I do...as long as Misuzu is Misuzu, he will smile and embrace me! I'll never let go of him!」

I rub Misuzu's back.

「...Calm down...I'm here with you. It'll be fine...」

「...Danna-sama」

Nagisa speaks to『Kakka』

「Misuzu's heart is too gentle, and she's too smart...she's always been acting as the daughter Kouzuki-sama and everyone around wants. Always holding down her emotions, enduring. You did well...Misuzu」

「...Nagisa-sama」

「But...Kouzuki-sama knows that he's forcing Misuzu that much. Therefore...you let her come to me」

『Kakka』speaks

「Yes...I thought that you could heal Misuzu's broken heart. I trusted your

power. And yet...you betrayed my expectations and handed her to a man...!」

Nagisa laughs.

「Oh...after she met him, Misuzu's worry in her heart have all been resolved. What Misuzu really needs isn't a『woman』like me but a『man』like him...!」

Nagisa looks at me.

「That man is just deceiving her. Furthermore, isn't that man a『Kuromori』...!」  
「Though he's a『Kuromori』...he has joined in just recently, he's not involved in any business of Kuromori, Kouzuki-sama has already investigated that, have you not...?」

「...Ugu」

It seems that it's a bull's-eye  
Just as Nagisa said...I am not related to do with any of the main business of『Kuromori』at all.  
Of course, I'm no male prostitute either.

「He's just a normal high school student A normal boy...!」  
「That 'normal' is a problem...for Kouzuki house...!」

Misuzu shouts at grandfather.

「Misuzu needs this man!」

Oh, we're going back in circles.  
If this continues, we can't make any progress...

「...Kouzuki-sama」

Nagisa speaks with a suppressed voice.

「Does it feel that frustrating that this boy has stolen Misuzu...?」

...Eh?

「"For Kouzuki house"...it's all an excuse isn't it? 『Kakka』just wants to have his granddaughter under his control forever, right? And yet, Misuzu found a man you don't know, and she'll become independent, that's why『Kakka's』in panic...!」

Nagisa smiles.

「...Am I such a small guy?」

「Humans are obsessed when it comes to their blood relative...especially when it's their dear granddaughter...!」

Misuzu opens her eyes wide.

「...Grandfather?」

Nagisa talks to Misuzu.

「Think about Kouzuki-sama's feelings too...Misuzu has seen only one side of『Kakka』」

「...Nagisa-sama, what do you mean by that?」

「I've been entertaining various famous family heads you know? That's why I know them well. When it's just the two of us, those kind of people speak their grumble to me...」

Nagisa was once the most popular prostitute of『Kuromori』

「Of course...I've heard a lot of Kouzuki-sama's grumble too」

「Hey, you...!」

『Kakka's』in panic...

「Do not worry. It's not that I will speak it from my mouth...but, Misuzu, try imagining it for a bit」

Nagisa gently looks at Misuzu's eyes...

「Earlier...you said that you've always been in pain to keep acting as a『good girl』to meet the expectations of your surroundings, didn't you?」

「...Yes」

「Do you think you're the only one who feel that pain?」

Misuzu looks at Ruriko-san

「...No. I'm sure that Ruriko-san feels the same. Everyone in the Kouzuki house's bloodline...!」

Ruriko-san nods at what Misuzu said.

「...Is it only Ruriko-san?」

「...Eh?」



Misuzu's surprised.

Nagisa laughs.

「Kouzuki-sama as well...he's making such a gallant face but...he also had a childhood. The eldest son of Kouzuki head house...when he was a child」

Misuzu's taken aback.

「When Kouzuki-sama was young, the society is also different from now...I think that he grew up in a much harsher environment than what you have experienced...」

「...Grandfather?」

The two granddaughters look at their grandfather  
『Kakka』...

「When I was young...there were still many old customs from the feudal period. I was born as the eldest under the Kouzuki head family. I had two younger brothers and three younger sisters...I've always been eating on the same dining room with only my father. My mother and younger siblings are eating in another room. I never had a good conversation with my siblings... The eldest son, the heir son is a special existence at that time...」

『Kakka』...keeps talking with a bitter expression.

「Even when the relatives gather...I am the only one sitting next to my father. Everyone around me are adults.

I had to keep quiet so I don't get in the way of the adults. Despite all that, I should be dignified and majestic. 『You must never laugh. You must never show your expressions. You must not show what's in your mind』...My father often tells me. 『If you show a gap, there will be a lot of people who will try to rob Kouzuki house. The owner must be strong to be able to protect the house from such evil』...」

I don't get that kind of life.

But...I understand that『Kakka』has spent his boyhood in solitude.

「The work of the famous house's head doesn't change since the old times. It's adjusting the interests inside and outside the house. Making the vassals be relieved, gaining absolute trust from your allies...be a ruthless and formidable

opponent to the enemy. Above all, fairness is required. An unfair leader will be killed by the vassals. The head who's not meeting the expectations is pushed into confinement and is made to die in resentment. There's a lot of them in the long history of Kouzuki family. The vassal judge those whose mind and body is weak, those who are egoistic, those who are negligent and they're banished in the darkness. Because of that system...『Kouzuki』house has remained until the present age. A thousand years...is a very long time you see...」

From the aristocracy dynasty in Kyoto...a noble after Meiji Era...a leading family surviving the post war disturbance.

『Kouzuki house』...has preserved themselves like that?

「Do you know what is the『Fairness』wanted by the vassals? It's not just merely giving a suitable reward for those who do good at work. It is to give a thorough punishment to a traitor. And...If there's a weakened enemy in front of you...you have to mercilessly slaughter. The vassals are greedy...therefore the head must show more greed than the vassals. It's ruthless greed. Their head is an aggressive one therefore it's possible to satisfy the greediness of the vassals...」

...That means

『Kakka』has to act such a personality to be the owner of Kouzuki family?

No, it's not...in case of『Kakka』

『Kakka』needed to have a personality of a person requested by the surroundings.

「In a sense...I've lived to suit my own convenience as I wanted. Lives of people have changed for better or for worse. To make the world and the vassal think as such...」

Misuzu and Ruriko-san listen to their grandfather's talk seriously.

Of course, me too...

Seki-san and Fujimiya-san as well...

「However, in a different sense...I wasn't allowed to do as I like. Even if it looks selfish...all of my actions are a norm of Kouzuki house's head's『fairness』 To influence the lives of people...I have to continue living for the best of the『house』 I keep『adjusting』in『fairness』as my vassals seek. I have to put a

ruthless, and cruel, fearful『man of power』... !」

『Kakka』laughs wryly.

「No. I enjoyed it. I had fun with this living. Living as the head of Kouzuki house...this solitude...!」

『Kakka』looks at Misuzu.

「Just like Shiba's son earlier...I've gathered the children of the subordinates and the clan to『educate』... The parents offer their children to me as hostages. In exchange...they all think that someday they can get a important position in Kouzuki group. It's an outrageous story. To be honest...I think that it's unbearable for those young men to take my precious time...」

「Then, why have you gathered them?」

Misuzu asks.

「it can't be helped...That's what Kouzuki house seeks」

『Kakka』answers.

「Ruriko's father...though he's supposed to be my successor, he doesn't have a strong personality. If he becomes the head, the house will be divided. The current Kouzuki house is divided into the branch family and vassals from old groups, someone who's a rising power becoming a new vassal since the last 30 years...in short, it's divided into Shiba-kun's group. Ruriko's father can't resolve the conflict in between the two groups. Rather...both groups will use him and destroy the authority of Kouzuki head family」

『Kakka』briefly speaks about the problem inside the Kouzuki house  
「Therefore...I cannot retire and stay as a strong leader. I have gathered the children from both groups under the pretext of education...I know that whatever shape of the issue is, it can be cancelled anyway. If it's the level of their sons, the old faction and the emerging factions are already gone. The friends they can talk easily exceeds the framework of their parent's generation. Of course...the first topic of the youngsters are their complaints about me. Even that can be a motive for their interaction. The mix of the children will be spreading to the parents soon. That's what I'm aiming for...!」

Misuzu looks at her grandfather.

「Therefore...you engaged me with Shiba-san's son, the top of the emerging rising group. And perhaps...Ruriko-san's fiancé is chosen from among the old faction...!

The grandfather answers.

「There's no other way...that's the only measure that can be done for Kouzuki clan's harmony」

To save face of both groups...he engaged his two granddaughters with the sons of each factions.

Misuzu's 『fiancé』is Shiba Takahiko...their age are close, and it's considered that Shiba would be the face of the rising group.

Ruriko-san is the eldest son's daughter so she'll be the face of the old faction.

It was intended to wait until the two were adults until he announces Ruriko-san and Misuzu's 『fiancé』

「Do you think that will happen?」

Misuzu asks.

「Even if we gain time for now...don't you think that Ruriko-san and my 『fiancé's』 can be used as a flag to intensify the conflict in between the two groups?」

「It may be. It may be not...that will depend on the steer of the future」

『Kakka』answers

「No...Shiba Okitachi-san is ambitious so he'll aim to rule the entire Kouzuki family...the harmony grandfather wants is impossible」

Misuzu analyzes.

True...if the head of the conflicting group is going to resist to the bitter end...then it's useless on whatever conciliation policy used.

「Then...what would you do?」

Misuzu answers

「It's easy...I'll make Shiba-san's group independent from Kouzuki house」  
「...What?」

「The two factions on conflict wants to grab the leadership of all Kouzuki house's

companies, don't they? Then we divide the Kouzuki house into two. Shiba-san's just a stockholder in Kouzuki house so isn't it better to leave all the management to Shiba-san?」

「Then...Shiba-kun will increase his stocks someday and lower the Kouzuki house's shareholding ratio. The companies would be robbed by Shiba-kun」

The grandfather responds.

「That won't happen. If Shiba-kun and Kouzuki house's relationship is good... then there's no need to bother to weaken the power of the good shareholders and attract another investor. Shiba-san himself doesn't have the financial strength to buy the stocks... Shiba-san should hate to have a new ambitious investor pin down majority of the stock」

「But...if the Kouzuki enterprise is divided into two, an external force...」

「Since it's ruled by the shares held...an external evaluation won't change it. Grandfather said that you don't want the Kouzuki group you have brought up and raised to become small even for just a bit, right? You just can't agree that the extent of your influence will increase. In short, you're just obsessed...!」

Misuzu's words are harsh.

「Even if we make Shiba-san independent...the owner will remain as Kouzuki house. We'll leave all of the management to Shiba-san but the profit are of course ours. If Shiba-san fails then he just have to resign as a matter of taking responsibility...he should have that resolution to become the manager of an enterprise」

Misuzu talks indifferently.

「Kouzuki house should stop the method of directly managing all of the companies under them. Let's leave each of the company to the talented ones... we should change to that method」

「You...don't understand. Business management is...」

「It's already different from when grandfather was young...!」

Nagisa interrupts the debate of the grandfather and granddaughter.

「Okay~! That's enough!」

The tense air in the room snaps off.

「You should keep debating about economy with your grandfather more!」

Nagisa tells Misuzu.

「Kouzuki-sama as well...you do now understand that Misuzu's suitable as a successor, don't you?」

I see...Nagisa's purpose is...

To create a place where Misuzu and 『Kakka』 can talk with each other frankly...

「You're a disappointment as a woman...Misuzu. If you were a man...then I can retire at ease」

「Grandfather...in modern times, being a man or a woman doesn't matter. There are a lot of women in the world's political and economic world...!」

Misuzu objects her grandfather...

「Hmph!...Is there a female head in this current era? That's right. I might've been thinking of the old standards of Japan...!」

「...Grandfather」

「But...your current insight in economics and corporate management still have ways to go...I will thoroughly teach you those...!」

...Does that mean?

「...Nagisa-kun is right. Misuzu's personality is really similar to me」

Misuzu's going to succeed Kouzuki house...?!

「Misuzu-oneesama...I will support Oneesama!」

Ruriko-san said loudly.

「Oneesama is the most suited to be grandfather's successor...!」

「Thank you...Ruriko-san」

Misuzu faces her grandfather.

「Then, grandfather...please withdraw your nomination on Ruriko-san and my 『fiance』...!」

She holds my hand tightly.

「I'm already this man's 『woman』...Ruriko-san should marry the man she likes as well...!」

『Kakka』...

「The concept of 『Close kin』is the strongest strategy in group formation in the past and even in the present.」

「But...we won't happy with that」

Misuzu said clearly.

The strength of her grip increases.

「I see...then it can't be helped. I'll let you free...」

He looks at Misuzu...

Finally...『Kakka』yields to Misuzu.

「To be honest...I don't understand what's good with that man... It's true that he changed Misuzu to『just a doll』to such a lively girl. I can tell his sincerity to Misuzu. It must be good for you to have a gentle and docile husband...」

Gentle and docile husband...me?

Does he see me that way?

「Thank you very much grandfather」

「However...you have to do a proper wedding ceremony. If you plan to take over Kouzuki house, then you have to do that. I will attend it. I don't mind if the political and financial parties line up...」

「Yes...of course」

I'm startled.

I promised to marry Megu though...

Eh?!...Marriage with Misuzu too?!

Also...the political and business world...???

「I'm looking forward to it! Danna-sama...!」

「U...Un」

What's going to happen to me?

「Congratulations! Misuzu-oneesama!」

「Congratulations! Misuzu-sama! Kuromori-sama!」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san immediately gives their blessing.

「Congratulations...Misuzu, Dear」

「...Congratulations!」

Nagisa and Mao-chan...

Or rather...is this okay for you Nagisa?

「Seki-san, Fujimiya-san...I think you two already know but do not leak this matter outside. I know your abilities and your loyalty to Kouzuki house. I'll give you two my best regards in the future」

Misuzu speaks to them as the successor of the next generation of Kouzuki 「C-Certainly...」

Fujimiya-san answers immediately.

Seki-san...

「M-M-M-Me too...I understand. I get it already...」

Seki-san's confused by the fact that the next『successor』of Kouzuki house is decided in front of her eyes.

「I've always wanted the two of you to work under me. I would like you to be guards of Kouzuki family without any relation to the Kouzuki security service company...」

Misuzu wants the two of them to report directly to her?

「...Misuzu-sama」

Michi who's silent all this time looks at Misuzu with lonely eyes.

「Don't worry. It's not that I'm dissatisfied with Michi's work. We've got to grow our family, right? Michi will always be on our side so we have to increase our guards as well」

Misuzu smiles...

Michi seems to be relieved...

「You don't need to make a reply right away. We are currently being targeted by a criminal named Cesario Viola... After that matter has resolved...let's talk again...is this favorable for grandfather as well?」

「Umu...it's painful for the two to be taken out but...Misuzu's guards in the future needs to have the skill. We can't let something happen to the future head of Kouzuki family. I'll ask you two as well...take a leave from Kouzuki



security service for a while」

『Kakka』tells the two...

「Thank you for appointing me...!」

「Ah, me too...!」

Then, Fujimiya-san and Seki-san became Misuzu's full time guards.  
The formal appointment will be later though...

「Now then...I feel sorry to ask but, could the two of you play with my child on the neighboring room?」

Nagisa tells Seki-san and Fujimiya-san

「...Nagisa-kun, what do you mean by that?」

『Kakka』asks, Nagisa...

「We'll have a little ceremony with just the『family』!」

...Eh, ceremony?

「Mama? Mao's not family?」

Mao-chan asks...

「Mao-chan's of course『family』but...Mao-chan is still small, and I think that Onii-chan would feel shy if Mao-chan is here. Therefore, please play with those ladies for now okay?」

「Eeeh~!」

「If you've grown bigger than I'll also let Mao in too...I promise that」

「...Really?」

「Have mama ever lied to Mao?」

「...Never」

「Then it's fine isn't it? Believe your Mama」

「...Got it」

Nagisa looks at Seki-san.

「With that said...please go to the next room with this child」

「U-Uhm...what's going on?」

Nagisa answers Seki-san's question...

「It's about the noble house, Kouzuki family...and a lot of other things」

Nagisa smiles.

「No...Uhm...what is your involvement?」

Seki-san doesn't know what's Nagisa's relationship with Kouzuki house.  
Well, you won't understand usually.

「...I'm Misuzu and this man's『family』」

Nagisa answers.

「...What are you planning to do?」

Even『Kakka』is asking Nagisa feeling strange.

「Therefore...it's a family ceremony!」

Misuzu looks at Seki-san and Fujimiya-san...

「Anyway...please take a leave. I'll leave this girl to you」

「My best regards!」

Mao-chan heads towards the two in trotting steps.

「...I get it. Let's go, Seki-san

「O-Okay...」

「Later then!」

Seki-san, Fujimiya-san, and Mao-chan goes to the door to the next room

「Now then!」

Nagisa looks at Misuzu and me.

「You two know it right?」

...What?

「Have sex in front of Kouzuki-sama...!」

---

## 248. Kouzuki Shigetaka's other side

---

「Err...what do you mean?」

I asked Nagisa instinctively...

Why are we going to have sex in front of『Kakka』...?

Nagisa...

「Humans are multifaceted. Their hearts have a surface and a back...well, isn't it often said that your upper and lower body thinks differently...?」

Hmm...I don't get it though

「Kouzuki-sama gladly acknowledged you with Misuzu but that's only on the surface of his mind...or rather, that's just his upper body's thought. The lower body still hasn't accepted you yet」

...Lower body?

「This is very important. If you don't solve this problem now...Kouzuki-sama will continue to hold ill feelings against you all the time. He may be smiling but he's hating you from the bottom of his heart...」

「What do you mean...Nagisa-sama?」

Misuzu asks Nagisa with a serious face.

「Well...it's very painful for men to have their precious granddaughter be taken away by a guy. That's true even for normal people. But...Kouzuki-sama holds special feelings for Misuzu and Ruriko-san...」

...Special feelings?!

「Hey, what are you saying!」

『Kakka's』in panic

「My...isn't that fine already? There's no one here but close『family』...Isn't it about time Kouzuki-sama lets go of his heart?」

Nagisa speaks smilingly.

「I...」

『Kakka's』completely confused

「I know everything. After all...five years ago, Kouzuki-sama has told me everything by himself...!」

Five years ago...that's when Nagisa's an active prostitute from『Kuromori』  
『Kakka』is also one of Nagisa's guests...

With only the two of them in a private room...Did『Kakka』tell Nagisa anything?

「...Isn't it work ethics not to leak what we talked about inside that mansion...?!」

A bit of anger...『Kakka』glares at Nagisa with strong eyes.I 「That's why confess it yourself! Shige-chan!」

S-Shige-chan...?!

「Sensei knows that's why she's asking...! Shige-chan!」

「...Y-Yees!! Senseiiii...!」

Kouzuki Shigetaka – Age 82, the head of Kouzuki house replies to Nagisa's scolding with a high voice...!

It's like an elementary school boy being scolded by a beautiful teacher, his body bends small.

「Sensei hates dishonest boys!」

「...I-I'm sorry...Sensei」

『Kakka』...what kind of play did you do with Nagisa...?

Misuzu's mouth is open wide in surprise.

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are surprised at their dignified grandfather's sudden change.

「Uhm...are you grandfather's teacher?」

Ruriko-san asks Nagisa.

「Let's see...back then...I'm something like a personal psychology counselor, a therapist of some kind to leaders of political and business world just like

Kouzuki-sama」

「...Therapist?」

「Yes, I mainly do therapy where you sweat with your whole body」

...Isn't that just sex?

Nagisa's saying that her prostitution act with the elderly in『Kuromori』is psychotherapy 「Therefore...I've listened to Kouzuki-sama's true heart personally...!」

Nagisa looks at『Kakka』

「Now...speak about yourself. Shige-chan」

『Kakka』looks down and mutters

「I-I can't...Sensei」

「Why, Shige-chan?」

「If I talk...my granddaughters will hate me...!」

Misuzu speaks up.

「Grandfather...whatever happens, Misuzu won't hate grandfather!」

「Me too...grandfather...!」

Ruriko-san and Misuzu stares at their grandfather's face.

「But...I」

『Kakka』hesitates

「Grandfather...Misuzu is sexually masochist...!」

Misuzu informs her grandfather.

「...Misuzu?!」

「Yes, I'm a masochist. Let me tell grandfather my story...」

「What are you saying?」

I'm also puzzled from what Misuzu's saying

But, Misuzu's serious.

「As a masochist...I'm a woman who prefers abnormal sex. However...I'll never have sex with anyone but Danna-sama This person has accepted my fetishes with a smile...!」

The grandfather's surprised to the confession of his 17 years old daughter.

「That is Misuzu's secret. It's a secret I'll never tell anyone but my『family』  
Now that I've revealed my secret...Grandfather has to tell us his...!」

『Kakka's』hesitating...

「...I-I'm a masochist too!」

Suddenly, Michi speaks out loudly.

「I'm still inexperienced but...it's my dream to have an abnormal sex while  
Misuzu-sama's watching!」

For some unknown reason...Misuzu's confession burns up Michi's heart.  
Her face is red...she's definitely aroused.

「U-Uhm...Misuzu-oneesama?」

On the contrary...Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are making a vacant face.

「What does『sexually masochist』and『abnormal sex』mean?」

The two who weren't given any knowledge about sex...doesn't understand  
Misuzu and Michi's confession at all 「It's okay, we'll be explaining it slowly so  
the two of you can understand...!」

Nagisa smiles at the two.

「My...I'm sorry to trouble you」

Ruriko-san bows to Nagisa.

「But before that...we would like Kouzuki-sama to talk about the events 20  
years ago」

...20 years ago?

『Kakka』looks down silently...

「Please...grandfather...!」

『Kakka』looks up to Misuzu's voice.

「...Misuzu, Ruriko. Listen carefully...I have another son in addition to your  
fathers...」

「...Eh?」

「That's my first time hearing it...grandfather」

Misuzu and Ruriko-san are surprised.

「No wonder...I insisted that you shouldn't know about this」

『Kakka』looks at his granddaughters.

「Ruriko's father, Shigeaki...Misuzu's father, Shigefuyu...and the eldest son's name is Shigeharu」

「That one is Kouzuki-sama's real『Heir son』...」

Nagisa said...

「That's right...I intended to make Shigeharu, my eldest son the successor, second son, Shigeaki as a politician and my third son, Shigefuyu a national bureaucrat...」

『Kakka』speaks bitterly

「Shigeharu...is ten years older than his two brothers. Twenty years ago, he surpassed 40 years old, his position in Kouzuki group is firm. Shigeharu's succession of power from me has already began but...」

『Kakka』sighs.

「Twenty years ago...Shigeharu was killed in Los Angeles during his family trip. Shigeharu, his wife and his three children」

...Killed?

「It's said to be armed robbery but I don't know the details. Shigeharu's bodyguards were also killed. That's when I've expanded the security department of Kouzuki family and have Kouzuki security service gather excellent guards...

When he lost his eldest son in US...Kouzuki security service developed as a security company specializing in VIP protection...?!

「But...the problem is what to do with the successor of Kouzuki house. Shigeaki and Shigefuyu are still around their 30s...they can change their future path. However...they're too old to be educated to become the owner of Kouzuki house which is a great responsibility. Even though Shigeharu just died...groups

who try to bring up Shigeaki and Shigefuyu appears...the framework of Kouzuki group is creaking greatly」

So that thing happened...

「That said...it's over when the bureaucrat quits. I decided to leave Shigefuyu in the government. To begin with, the youngest son has an introvert personality who likes sitting on a small desk. He's good as a national bureaucrat but he's not suitable to be a head of a distinguished family」

That is Misuzu's father.

「But...the second son, Shigeaki. He has received education to become a politician since childhood, he learned the reality of politics by becoming a secretary of the leading party...he was planned to run for the next house of Representatives election. He's greatly refusing to return home this late and become the successor instead of his dead brother」

Misuzu and Ruriko-san shows a serious face as they listen to the story of their father for the first time.

「I endured it... Losing my son after sixties. Furthermore, I must retrain my second son who's at a good age to be a successor starting from square one No... Shigeaki has the power to be liked by the masses as a politician but he's lacking the imprudence as a business owner」

『Kakka』speaks with a face of anguish...

「In order to settle down the minds of the restless vassals, I have to appoint Shigeaki, my second son to be the successor...but, Shigeaki has no talent to be a head. Therefore...I nominated Shigeaki as the head...for twenty years. In the end, I can't give up the position to Shigeaki...」

Until present, the 82 years old『Kakka』can't retire.

「Somewhat...I've hated it too. No, I hated everything. The fact that my eldest son raised seriously and his family has died on a foreign soil... Without showing any condolences to the first son, the vassals get into a succession dispute. The second and third son have no quality of a family head. But, it was me who educated them as such. ...In order to make the eldest son the absolute successor, I brought up the younger brothers differently. Just like how I myself



was raised...」

People pass the education they receive to the next generation...『Kakka』...as the eldest of Kouzuki family, is raised isolated from his younger brothers.

Therefore,『Kakka』 also tried to give the eldest son specialized education and have given the younger siblings a different path. Yet...the first son died.

「At that time...I was desperate on everything. And it seems that Kouzuki house...and my life until now has become suddenly empty. I wanted to destroy everything... Continuing the life of the head that must protect and nurture the family for the future generation...at the same time, I was driven by the urge to destroy all of the old Kouzuki houses completely. The me 20 years ago, just entering my 60s...my mind and body isn't declining yet. I've build a firm position as a businessman. There's nobody in Kouzuki house who goes against my will. No, I've buried all of my enemies. It was the climax of my life. Therefore...I succumbed to temptation」

...Succumb?

「My two remaining sons were still unmarried...I've given them beautiful daughters from a suitable house coming from Kouzuki family. Then...I ordered them to give birth to only one girl. I strictly ordered not to give birth other than that. The age gap as well...I planned to have the third son's wife give birth first and the second son's wife two years later」

That is Misuzu and her two year younger cousin, Ruriko-san 「...Why? Grandfather?」

Misuzu asks

「My mind back then, have my both sides separated completely. My reason on the surface...I felt like I have no more time left to educate the successor of the next generation in order to protect Kouzuki family. If the head of the famous house isn't past thirties...he'll just be underestimated by other houses. I was already 60 at that time...even if a boy is born, I would be over 90 when my grandchild succeeds. I don't think I can sustain my power that far...」

...『Kakka』speaks his honest feeling back then.

「Therefore...I let my sons give birth to a daughter. They can only give birth to a daughter. Then, if there's a competent son from the branch family and the vassals...then I can marry them to my granddaughter. If my granddaughter's married at their 20s, then a man on his 30s would somehow balance it. Then...I can have him inherit the ownership while I'm still barely alive. I want to decide the next『successor』with my own hands」

What obsession.

『Kakka』...is trapped with the owner status and his own authority.

「If it was two daughters...if Shigeharu's incident happens, then there's still one remaining. I've learned from the death of my eldest son」

Therefore...the second and third sons both gave birth to only one daughter.

「That's the official reason?」

Then...what's the hidden reason?

「The hidden reason is...I'd like to make to mess up Kouzuki house. Confusing and bothering the vassals and their sons... I want them to be completely on their wits end by pressing all of my responsibilities to them. So, I want to know how far they can take with my high pressured demands」

『Kakka』keeps talking.

「To be honest...I didn't expect Shigeaki and Shigefuyu to follow my orders. If they make a boy first...then he would automatically be the successor. I thought that my sons won't be able to endure the temptation to make their son the owner of Kouzuki family. Actually, I intended to allow them to make a second child, going beyond my orders. If that was a boy, then I was willing to accept it as a successor But...!」

『Kakka』sighs

「Both of them were afraid of me. I am too much of a threat for them. Both of them didn't make any children other than the two of you...they used contraception so they absolutely won't have a child with even women from the outside」

Instead of being tempted to make a son to be the head...they're more afraid

to anger their father?!

「...Above all, what I can't forgive on my sons...the two of them blindly believed me, and leave all of the decision making on you girl's education to me. 『I'm sure that father has some deep thought...I will leave that child to father』... one of my sons told me so. I won't say which son it is however. It is as if they're presenting me a tribute...!」

With their father as the owner...the second son and third son were in a deep trench.

As ordered by their father...they produced a daughter.

They never tried to make any more children than that...

Without asking the reason...they entrusted the future of their daughters to the head...

Everything is just leaving all the decision making to him.

「In the end...neither my sons nor my vassals got confused. They think of me as Superman. In the end, they believe I'll do something about it. Therefore... they'll obey no matter how unreasonable my command is. No, I can't blame them. All of it are my responsibility. I was such a father, such a leader... therefore my sons and vassals have become like that...」

『Kakka』...is too competent as a leader.

The image of the vassals...the result of his work all over the hears as a reliable and mighty leader...

Everyone stopped thinking.

They believe that there's no problem as long as they do as『Kakka』says 「To be honest...my fight with Misuzu earlier is fresh for me. When it's about business or anything else...there's nobody who wants to argue with me directly anymore. The people below just comes up with various plans from watching my complexion. I examine and evaluate it...then I decide whether to adopt or reject it. In case the person rejected can't throw away the plan, they overcome the problem I point out and submit to me again. It feels like a teacher in a school... though there's proposals, it doesn't become a discussion」

『Kakka』whos revered as an『absolute person』...has always been alone.

「Now then...it's about time I prepare to be hated by you. There's another

reason why I had my sons give birth to girls. It's the dark reason in my heart」

『Kakka』stares at his two granddaughters...then looked down.

「If I wasn't able to find a suitable son in law for the two of you...I intended to make you pregnant with my own」

...『Kakka』?!

「I don't care if you despise me...I've been looking at you with evil eyes all this time...」

『Kakka』bows to his granddaughters...

「I'm a man who lost his way. I thought of violating you two and have you give birth to my child. I thought of wanting to raise that child as my successor as well. Both of them. I've thoroughly isolated the two of you so you won't make contact with any men. This is all because I wanted to violate the two of you...!

『Kakka's』frank confession...turned the room quiet.

「Okay, Shige-chan! You're finally able to confess all of it!」

Nagisa who's in elementary teacher mode smiles at『Kakka』

「I...am the worst」

Nagisa goes to『Kakka's』side and pats his head.

「Geez! Shige-chan...don't belittle yourself that much!」

Then, she turned to us...

「Okay, everyone pay attention to Sensei! Listen carefully to Sensei's story!」

Nagisa-sensei's story begins.

「In the old times...Jesus Christ has said...『if you have considered doing wicked things, it's the same as committing that sin. Sinful!』Misuzu, do you know it?」

Misuzu answers.

「It's the 5th chapter from『the Gospel according to Mathew』...『Whoever looked at a woman lustfully then have already committed adultery in his heart』!」

「That's right. ...Let's see. That might be a sin for Christianity but...I don't think

so!」

Nagisa smiles at『Kakka』

「...Nagisa-kun?」

「There's actually a big distance on things you thought of doing and what you actually do. Humans have impulses spring up in their heart...society is build by enduring that. Isn't that right...Shige-chan?!」

『Kakka』...

「That is certainly correct」

「It's too late to be a virtuous person because you're in front of your granddaughters! Even though Shige-chan demanded to do a lot of lewd things with me」

「T-That...it was on a place and time that allowed such things...」

『Kakka』is just a small boy in front of his favorite former prostitute.

「Anyway...even if you hold such wicked emotions...Shige-chan has never made a move on his granddaughters...so he's innocent!」

「Even if I'm innocent...it's just unpleasant for my granddaughters. I have controlled the lives of these children because of that. To make sure they'll never be taken away by other men...!」

Misuzu speaks up.

「Right now...I'm in gratitude. Thanks to grandfather...I'm able to devote all my important things to Danna-sama...!」

...Misuzu

「My respect for grandfather doesn't change. However...since I already belong to Danna-sama, I can't entertain grandfather...!」

『Kakka』

「Sorry...I'm sorry...Misuzu...!」

Misuzu's life is manipulated so she'll fear men...

『Kakka』apologized.

「Uhm...I don't understand what is grandfather's『wicked feelings』but...」

Ruriko-san who has no knowledge about sex at all speaks up.

「Ruriko...will gladly make grandfather's child if that's his wish. I think it's the best after hearing grandfather's story. Ruriko isn't good with any other men but grandfather...」

Ruriko-san said something outrageous.

「Uhm...how do you bear a child? Ruriko will do it right away so, grandfather...let's raise a baby together」

Yoshiko-san then...

「Ruriko-sama, if I recall, you aren't able to deliver immediately...there's a time period where the child exists in the mother's belly...

「You're right, I've seen pregnant women with big stomach. Just how long do they have to be in the stomach?」

「I don't know it as well but perhaps half a year is necessary, is it not?」

「My, that long...?! Can't we make it shorter?」

...Err

「Uhm...It should take around ten months though...」

I tell them sneakily.

「My classmate during middle school has his birthday on October 10...he was nicknamed『New year's aftermath』」

「...What does that mean?」

Ruriko-san's making a dumbfounded face.

「After the woman's fertilized...it takes ten months and ten days until the baby's born」

「What's fertilization...?」

「That...it means when a woman accepting the baby's seed of a man in her belly」

「A man's baby seed...?」

「Ah...I mean sperm」

「Is it a scientific term?」

「I think the later is but...it's used as a general term」

「My...I didn't know it at all」

...Err

Should I go back to elementary school science?...

「Uhm...Ruriko-san...do you know about plant's stamen and pistil?」

「Yes...I've learned about it」

「The pollen flies from the stamen, attached to the pistil...it becomes fertilized」

「Yes...I know that mechanism」

Yoshiko-san listens interestingly from behind.

「There's that kind of mechanism for humans as well」

「Humans as well...?!」

「Men...they bring out sperm instead of pollen. Then it's poured into the woman's stomach」

「Eh...how?」

「Well, that is...I'll explain later」

「...Ah, yes. Thank you in advance」

「Then...there's a place in the stomach that makes a baby called womb, the sperm of the man will meet the woman's ovum...an ovum is the origin of a woman's baby...inside the womb, the sperm unites with the ovum. That's what they call fertilization」

「...Unite?...fertilization?」

「Yes...sperm and ovum, each is specific to each gender. Therefore, the child born resembles the mother and father's face」

「I see...the sperm contain the information on the father's side, and the ovum contains information on the mother side」

「That's how it is...then, when the union goes well, it'll take months to become a baby inside the womb. When it's complete, that's when the child is born」

「I see...that's how it is!」

Ruriko-san's convinced and on her back—  
Yoshiko-san is impressed.

「Kuromori-sama, you're such a well informed person...!」

No, that's not the case...

It's just that you two weren't taught anything about it...

「Then, Ruriko will be fertilized in a hurry...please give me grandfather's sperm!」

Ruriko-san tells her grandfather seriously.

「Shige-chan...isn't that great? Ruriko-san will give birth to Shige-chan's child...!」

Nagisa laughs...

『Kakka』makes a dark face...

「But, sadly...it's already impossible for Shige-chan!」

...Eh?!

「Shige-chan is already 82 years old...even five years ago, when I was his partner, he only gets an erection one out of five times!」

『Kakka』looks up at Nagisa feebly.

「Even at that time...it only got erect because it was Nagisa-kun. It didn't happen with other women...」

...Does that mean?

It's impossible due to his age...?

「...When I was in my 60s, planning with wicked feelings...I never thought that I'd die away in the future. In those days...just as I said earlier, my mind and body was at peak. I was overconfident that my sexual ability won't fail whatever happens...but」

『Kakka』sighs greatly.

「Human body...becomes weak...」

Nagisa looks at Misuzu.

「With that said...Kouzuki-sama is no longer capable to have sex by the time your bodies became feminine. He won't look with evil eyes so rest assured...!」

「No, even if I'm watching with those kind of eyes...it's not getting erect, even if I get one, I can't do any strenuous movement. The doctors told me to stop. But... as long as you live, libido won't be exhausted. Even now, I'm still interested in Nagisa-kun's breast and butt...Misuzu and Ruriko's body makes my eye go as



well」

『Kakka』confessed

「Kouzuki-sama...with that body of yours, could you endure with just watching?」

Nagisa said.

「...What do you mean?」

「Kouzuki-sama...you're not convinced that he has stolen Misuzu's purity and body you were aiming for, are you?」

『Kakka』looks at me.

「Yes, I'm not convinced...Even if I pardon Misuzu, that one's different. I don't like that kid...!」

『Kakka's』not willing to accept that  
I am Misuzu's『man』...

「Please change the way you're thinking...」

Nagisa tells『Kakka』

「There's no way『Kakka's』body would be able to embrace a woman's body.  
Therefore, starting today...」

Nagisa smiles bewitchingly.

「Think of his penis as your own...and watch over his sex」

Misuzu notices it.

「Understood! Nagisa-sama!」

Misuzu smiles at her grandfather!

「If that is what grandfather wishes...then I will have sex with grandfather in  
front of grandfather!」

...Does that mean?

「Even if your body deteriorates...you can't possibly release your libido. Then...  
please watch over our sex and have grandfather's libido released...!!!!!」

---



## 249. Sex study meeting for Ruriko-san 1

---

「Sex in front of me you say...!」

『Kakka's』confused at his granddaughter's offer.

「What?...Shige-chan doesn't want to see...?」

Nagisa skillfully uses her『Teacher Character』to stir『Kakka's mind』...

「Grandfather...Misuzu graduated from her virginity just four days ago. After being loved by Danna-sama every day...I'm finally able to reach climax...!」

Misuzu reports to her grandfather...

「Perhaps...I might be able to have sex that would please grandfather!」

Misuzu smiles.

『Kakka』...is stunned

「You...are you sure? Showing such a disgraceful figure...!」

「If it's grandfather, then I'd gladly show it. Besides...Misuzu's a masochist, I'm aroused when I'm being watched!」

With such a frank remark, Misuzu continues.

「Danna-sama...is this okay for you as well?」

...I

「Sure...if Misuzu's fine with it then I don't mind」

Responding like this...I realized that I'm completely abnormal.  
Thinking about it...it's not even a week since my first experience.  
And yet...I had sex dozens of times already...  
All of it are seen by others, even multiple plays.  
I never had sex with a single girl in a place where there are no surveillance cameras.

There's always someone watching...

No matter how you think about it, it's abnormal

The abnormal has turned usual.

It's too late for me to be concerned if『Kakka's』watching 「B-But...」

Nagisa speaks to the confused『Kakka』

「Shige-chan, stop hesitating and be honest! Do you want to watch Misuzu's sex or not?!」

『Kakka』...

「Well...I want to. I want to but...!」

「Then watch! He and Misuzu said that it's fine...this chance might not appear again!」

「...But」

「Shige-chan, you already can't have sex so be satisfied with just watching! It can't be helped!」

「That...well you're right but...」

『Kakka』...looks at Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san

「...Are those two going to watch as well...?」

Those two weren't taught any information about sex at all due to『Kakka's』command...

Both of them are stunned by the course of things.

「...Of course we'll show it! Sensei thinks that there's no better sex education than this!」

Nagisa smiles.

「But...these children...」

『Kakka』...is puzzled on what to do

「Shige-chan...do you intend to leave these children without knowing anything about sex? Shige-chan started this, right?」

It was『Kakka』that completely isolated any information about sex on Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san.

「Shige-chan can no longer teach sex on the spot...it's already impossible to push down using Shige-chan's body Give up and let the girls free」

「That is, I think that you're certainly right...I've always thought that I had to do something about it as well...」

「They're already at the age to know sensuality」

Ruriko-san's 15 years old.

Yoshiko-san's 18 years old.

They're at the age where they should experience love.

Of course, they should know about sex already.

「...But」

Is it okay to just show my sex with Misuzu so suddenly to these girls who have no knowledge about sex?

I feel sorry if this becomes a bad trauma instead.

「I will be properly explaining it to them」

Misuzu tells her grandfather dignified.

She turned to Ruriko-san...

「Ruriko-san, Yoshiko-san...then, Danna-sama and I will be doing actual sex. Please observe it thoroughly」

「Y-Yes...」

「M-My best regards」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are tensed.

Both of them don't know what's going to happen after this current conversation.

「You see, sex is...simply put the『act of making babies』itself」

Misuzu said

「Earlier, Danna-sama has explained to Ruriko-san...this is the act of the man pouring in his semen on the woman's womb making the sperm meet the egg」

「Then...Misuzu-oneesama is going to make babies with Kuromori-sama?」

Ruriko-san asks surprised.

「Someday...I'll definitely give birth to Danna-sama's baby. But, Misuzu's still in

second year high school...it's too early to give birth to a baby」

Misuzu answers with a gentle smile.

「Therefore...Misuzu's taking in a medicine that won't allow a child be made after sex」

Ruriko-san shows a strange face?

「Why are you doing the act if you're not going to make a baby?」

「That is because sex is an act of love」

「...Love?」

Ruriko-san's staring blankly.

She and Yoshiko-san look at each other.

「God...has blessed humans the act of making babies. Sex is a very pleasant act」

「...Pleasant?」

Ruriko-san has never come in contact with any other person but Yoshiko-san. She can't comprehend the thought of physical contact with others.

「Ruriko-san...you feel unpleasant when an unknown man touches your skin, don't you?」

「That is...they're scary. I feel horrified」

Ruriko-san's body trembles.

「But...you don't hate being touched by Yoshiko-san or your mother, do you?」

「You're right...when I hold hands with Yoshiko, I feel safe. It relieves me often」

Misuzu's guiding Ruriko-san.

「That's the same...when touched by a man you love dearly, your heart will be satisfied. It feels happy. Sex is the ultimate skin-to-skin contact, a physical embrace...it's the greatest happiness」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san listens to Misuzu interestingly.

「Therefore...sex won't feel good unless you're doing it with a man you love from the bottom of your heart」

「Or rather...you should only have sex with only the one you love!」

Nagisa supplements Misuzu...

First, it seems that they're putting an ethical barrier in Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san's mind.

If they do this, even after waking up to the pleasures of sex...they won't drown in having sex without minding who it is.

「Sex is essentially a sacred act to make a baby. Unless it's the person you love...the person you'd like to bear your child with, sex won't feel good!」

Nagisa said.

「But...is it okay to do the act of making babies just because it feels good? Furthermore, I think that it's not late to do such act even after getting married」

Ruriko-san's making a just argument

「Well, that is right but...when the young ones don't have proper sex, they'll be troubled to have babies in the future」

Nagisa spits out a huge lie

「...Why?」

Ruriko-san asks...

「Do you know the old nursery rhyme... 『My sister marries at 15』...?」  
「Yes, I know」

Ruriko-san answers.

「She's 15 years old but...with the old counting, she'd be at 14 years of age. Until a hundred years ago, it was common for girls to be married at 14, 15 years old. They have experienced childbirth at Misuzu's age already!」

Nagisa takes out a ridiculous card.

「Even though the average life expectancy is lower than now...the women before were fertile you know? Why can they make five to six children? It's because they gave birth when they were young」

「True...I think you are right」

Ruriko-san's convinced.

「Even now, it's not unusual for girls to be married at 14-15 years old in

developing countries in Asia and Africa. In other words, biologically...human females who get married by 14-15 years old are able to give birth」

Nagisa expands her forced logic.

「But...that won't go in modern Japan. You have to learn to be an adult... because the things you can't learn increases rapidly. During Meiji era, most of the people come to work as soon as they leave elementary school. If you weren't a wealthy family, you weren't allowed to enter middle school. After the war, the compulsory education reaches middle school...now it's normal to graduate from high school isn't it? Even universities, only rich children were able to enter it 50 years ago...!」

Nagisa smiles.

「Since the education period until adulthood has increased...the average age for marriage has also increased. Of course, that's not all of the reason. The intellectually mature modern society has changed to late marriage. In the 19th century, Europe's upper class have their marriageable age over 25 years old. Even though common people are married at age 14-15...the wealthier, culturally advanced and intellectual class were late」

Still...Nagisa knows a lot.

「Ah...I've heard it from a university professor which was a former customer of mine. That person loves giving me that kind of lecture」

Nagisa says as she look at my face.

Why lecture?

「He likes the play where I have the role of a female college student attending a seminar」

Oh...so that's how it is.

「Then...that professor always tells me. As a living being, a 14-15 year old human girl in her marriageable age...they won't be able to safely bear a child unless they properly have sex during their growth period. He said that if you experience sex after becoming a fully mature body...your body would be surprised and it's not good...!」



No...isn't your university professor just a pedophile?  
Because, he's a guy that went to the mansion to embrace Nagisa who was 16 around that time...  
He's just mixing his fetish with convenient reasoning...  
...But

「Is that so?」

Ruriko-san says worriedly.

「Well of course...if you have sex regularly during your growth period, your body will grow to accept sex won't it? If you become adult without any experience in sex, your body won't be able to adjust to it in time...!」

Logically, it sounds right but...  
I've never heard of a story where someone's body got broken because of being a virgin for more than 20 years old.  
Much more...what about men?  
If they remain a virgin until 30 years old...would they die?  
Is he going to be reborn in the underworld?

「That's right...that's why Misuzu is having sex with Danna-sama!」

Misuzu rides on Nagisa's mysterious theory.

「But...that's not the only beauty of sex」

Misuzu looks at me.

「Danna-sama...does it feel good to have sex with Misuzu?」

...I

「Yeah...it always feels good」

「Misuzu as well. Thank you for making me feel good always」

Smiling...Misuzu returns her glance to Ruriko-san.

「Regardless of status, honor, nor money...with sex, I can make Danna-sama feel pleasure with this naked body of mine. Danna-sama...also makes me feel good with only his living body. At times when Danna-sama gives me his love... there's no Kouzuki house or any other ties...Misuzu becomes naked. That is a very pleasant emotion」

Misuzu smiles bewitchingly.

「Misuzu-oneesama...!」

Ruriko-san's breath is taken away by Misuzu's beauty., 「Then, we will be doing it in front of you...please feast upon your eyes」

「Y-Yes」

Then...My sex with Misuzu begins



「Danna-sama...strip me off」

Misuzu snuggles to me.

「Sure」

I take off the cheap T-shirt Misuzu's wearing.  
She's naked under this shirt.

Her pink nipples appear.

Misuzu's well shaped breasts...

Misuzu's fair naked skin.

The 17 year old wet skin...

「Down there as well」

I kneel and take off Misuzu's shorts.  
Her hairless slit is already dripping wet.  
Sliding her shorts through her soft thighs...I take it off her one foot.  
Removing her sandals as well...Misuzu becomes naked.

「Misuzu...you're beautiful」

「Thank you very much...Danna-sama」

Misuzu blushed red.

The naked body I hid earlier...is now being shown to her grandfather dignified.

「Whenever you have sex, you need to be naked as much as possible...Ah, though if you suddenly want to do it outside then you don't need to take them all off...」

Misuzu doesn't forget to lecture Ruriko-san.

「Shige-chan...lend me your necktie」

Nagisa removes『Kakka's』necktie

「What are you going to use it for?」

『Kakka』asks Nagisa...

「Though we're currently doing Ruriko-san's『sex observation study』...this will be a proof so we won't forget about Shige-chan」

Nagisa said and then she tied『Kakka's』silver necktie to Misuzu's neck  
A naked necktie...what a lewd figure.

The tie sways in the valley between her breasts.

「Ooh, am I going to participate too?」

『Kakka』looks happy

「...Danna-samaaaa」

Misuzu clings to me wanting to be spoiled.

We hug...and kiss.

Our tongues twine.

We show that appearance to Ruriko-san and others.

「You see...I love having our tongues lick each other!」

Misuzu tells Ruriko-san.

I go to Misuzu's back and massage her breasts in a way Ruriko-san can see.

I knead her nipples.

「Aah...it feels good」

Misuzu pants lightly.

「Having the man you love tease your breasts, really feels good...! Massage it a lot...do it as you like...please fiddle Misuzu's body as you want Danna-samaaaa...!」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san watches us intently.

Michi...she's massaging her own breasts.

It seems that the fire has been lit up inside Michi as well.

「Misuzu...I'll suck your nipples...!」

「Go on...please lick Misuzu's breasts as much as you want...!」

I stand on my knees before Misuzu...

I embrace Misuzu's waist with one hand and crawl my tongue on Misuzu's left nipple.

「Ah...Aaahn...it feels good...!」

I suck and roll my tongue on her nipples.

Misuzu embraced my head gently.

「Nnnuuu...! When Danna-sama sucks my nipples...It makes me feel really glad that I was born a woman...aaahn!!」

Misuzu's body shakes from the pleasure...

「If I bear a baby and produce milk in the future...please drink it everyday. I'll have Danna-sama drink Misuzu's breast milk along with the babyyy...!」

I suck her nipple powerfully.

「Aaah...soo good...It feels goood...Danna-sama...Danna-samaaaaaan」

Misuzu's face begins to melt in arousal.

「Misuzu...I」

「Yes, I know...」

Misuzu smiles gently

「Misuzu will take this off」

Then, Misuzu speaks to Michi...

「Michi...help me out」

Michi's holding her chest with one hand...and the other is already digging her crotch.

She got startled when Misuzu called her out.

「Yes...Misuzu-sama...!」

...I

Misuzu and Michi takes off my clothes.

Ruriko-san's eyes are fiery...She's watching me being stripped by Misuzu and

Michi.

It must be her first time to see a man's naked body.

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san are staring at me blushing to their ears.

Nagisa talks to the two of them.

「Ruriko-san...you do know the story about Izanagi and Izanami's 『Birth of country』don't you?」

「Yes...I've read about it」

Ruriko-san answers while having an excited red face.

「Izanami asks...『How's your body?』Izanami answers『It lacks in my body』  
Then, Izanagi says『There's some excess XXX in my body』... Then, he said『Let  
me put my excess XXX in your lacking XXX』and thus...a country was born」

Nagisa says...

「Yes, I think it had such content...isn't that right, Yoshiko?」

「Yes, Ruriko-sama」

The two avid readers know it as expected.

「That means sex. It means the gods were having sex」

Nagisa looks at Misuzu.

「Misuzu...come here」

「Yes...Michi, please」

「Certainly」

Leaving Michi alone to undress me...Misuzu goes before Nagisa.

「Take a seat...spread your legs and show your female genital to Ruriko-san  
and Yoshiko-san...!」

Nagisa orders...

「...Yes」

Misuzu squats on the carpet and makes an M legs.  
She exposes her genital to Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san.

「This is part Izanami mentions『Lacking』 Women use this hole to accept  
men...!」

Misuzu's slit is leaking love nectar.

Ruriko-san swallows her saliva.

「U-Uhm...that's the hole for peeing though...」

Ruriko-san asks Nagisa feeling tense.

「Well, this little hole does that. This is the hole where you pee. The lower, bigger hole below is used for sex. Deep inside...is where a woman makes a baby...the womb...!」

Nagisa explains

「Uhm...there's some transparent liquid dripping from Misuzu-oneesama's hole...」

Ruriko-san said.

「This is called『Love nectar』...this overflows from the woman's body as a lubricant for the sake of accepting a man...」

Misuzu explains while showing her vagina.

「...Love nectar?」

Misuzu suspects.

「Could it be that Ruriko-san is also having warm juice coming out from the same part as me?」

Ruriko-san turned red...

「Y-yes...earlier, since I saw Misuzu-oneesama and Kuromori-sama embracing, kissing...it felt hot around here in my belly...and it went out of my crotch like sweat」

Ruriko-san's wet?

「M-Me too...」

Yoshiko-san too...?!

「My, that's touch...could you show it to me?」

Nagisa said.

「...Eh?」

The two are confused.

「Perhaps...I think that Misuzu's sexual feelings have transmitted to the two. That's often the case. But...it's not good if it's caused by something different. We should confirm it!」

Nagisa says smoothly.

「That's right...both of you, raise your skirt and show your crotch to Nagisa-sama...!」

Misuzu tells the two.

「Lift your skirt up to your waist and be on the same posture as Misuzu」

Yoshiko-san looks at her master.

「...Ruriko-sama」

「Let's do as Misuzu-oneesama says...it's not good to have some problem in our bodies...」

Perhaps...the two doesn't know masturbation either. They're surprised at the situation where love nectar comes from deep in their body.

「Understood...Ruriko-sama」

「Take that chair...and do the same pose as Misuzu...!」

Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san stand from their seat and lift up their skirt. Their faces are red...embarrassed.

「Uhm...Kuromori-sama, please don't look」

Ruriko-san says but...

「No...let him see it as well. This kind of things need a lot of people's opinions」

Nagisa says.

「Yes...it's Danna-sama. Isn't she already Ruriko-san's relative?」

Misuzu speaks as she keep her M shaped legs open.

「Rather, I think that Ruriko-san should tell『Please take a look』to Danna-sama...」

Ruriko-san speaks to me with her face turned red in embarrassment.

「Please take a look...Kuromori-sama...!」

---



## 250. Sex Study meeting for Ruriko-san 2

---

On top of the chair...Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san lift their skirt and make an M shaped legs.

Both of them are red to their ears.

Matching pair of pure white panties.

It is damp wet in the crotch part.

Err, this is...a string tied on the side...

Is this what they call himopan?

「My, both of you are wearing silk panties!」

Nagisa smiles.

「Sorry...it's because the fabric feels pleasant」

Ruriko-san says bashfully.

「Excuse me for a bit...I will be examining it」

Nagisa touches Ruriko-san's crotch with her thin and long finger.

「Ah...Aaahn...!」

Ruriko-san leaks out her voice.

Her love nectar spreads out through the wet cloth in her crotch.

「Somehow...I feel strange. It feels hot here...!」

Ruriko-san is puzzled by the change in her body 「It's okay...women are all like this」

Nagisa says

Then, she look at me...

「I will inspect Yoshiko-san so you can touch Ruriko-san」

Ruriko-san got frightened.

「Kuromori-sama will...?!」

「Don't be scared...Ruriko-san. It's fine, she's my Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu speaks as she keeps her legs open on top of the floor carpet.  
Smiling...she recommends me to Ruriko-san with confidence.

「Ruriko-san...I'll touch you」

I said, Ruriko-san...

「Y-Yes...please」

She answered while spilling hot tears from her eyes.  
I let my fingers crawl.  
I first gently caress the slit from top of her silk cloth.

「Aah...Kuromori-sama's fingers...!」

Ruriko-san trembles.  
She never got on a crowded train ever since she was born...  
A completely sheltered girl thoroughly isolated from men.  
It must be her first time having a man touch her private part.

「I'll strengthen it」

I caress on top of the slit.

「Ha...aaaahn!」

I grind around her clitoris...

「Iyaan! What is this?」

The first pleasure attacks Ruriko-san.  
The love nectar makes a splashing sound.

「How is my Danna-sama's fingers, Ruriko-san. It feels good doesn't it?」

Misuzu smiles gently.

「...Pleasant?」

Ruriko-san doesn't seem to know how to express the pleasure she felt for the first time.

「...Does it feel good?」

When I asked...Ruriko-san leaks out a hot sigh, looked up...

「I-It feels good...!」

「...I'm glad」

「Aaah...K-Kuromori-sama...Ruriko's feeling good...my heart's beating so fast! It's hot...!」

Teary eyed, Ruriko-san talks about the heat wave rising up her body.  
Misuzu...

「That's the taste of love. It's the feeling of love...!」

As if being hypnotized...Misuzu's words sink into Ruriko-san.

「This is...the taste of love? The feeling of love...?」

「That's right. Danna-sama loves Ruriko-san from the bottom of his heart. That's why his touch feels so good」

「It's because it's Kuromori-sama that's why it feels this good?」

「If it's not Danna-sama...then it won't be this gentle and kind」

Misuzu smiles

「L-Love...Is this love?」

...I

「Ruriko-san...excuse me」

Groping Ruriko-san's crotch with my right hand...I embrace her body with my left 「U-Uhm...What are you doing?!」

Ruriko-san's surprised.

Ruriko-san's body stiffens in my arms.

「Don't be surprised...loosen up. Entrust your body to me...」

I whisper to Ruriko-san's ears.

「U-Uhm...Kuromori-sama」

「Ruriko-san is very cute...」

「Me...cute?」

「Yes...you feel so dear to me」

「That's...but, Kuromori-sama has Misuzu-oneesama...」

Ruriko-san's ethical thought defends her spirit...  
Therefore...Misuzu speaks.

「Yes. Therefore, Danna-sama is Ruriko-san's Oni-sama...!」  
「...Onii-sama」  
「There's no need to be shy about being loved by your Onii-sama...」

I already know what to do at this kind of situation.  
「That's right...Ruriko」  
I call her『Ruriko』  
I blow away the barrier between us.

「Ruriko's my little sister. That will be for forever」  
「...Forever?」  
「Yes, you can rely on me...I'll do anything for Ruriko's sake」

While saying so...  
I prepare myself to shoulder Ruriko's life.

「But...I'm...Kouzuki's...Kouzuki's」  
Ruriko is in my arms.

「That doesn't matter...!」  
「...Doesn't matter?」  
「Just shut up and by my little sister...!」

I look into her eyes and strongly order her.  
「You'll be my little sister. That's what I decided. You don't have to think about anything and just follow me!」

Ruriko...  
「Y-Yes...! Onii-sama!!!!」

Ruriko's never been ordered by anyone but her grandfather since she was born.  
Even her grandfather, he probably never ordered Ruriko with strong words.  
Therefore...I dominate Ruriko.

「Relax your body...entrust it to me...」

I whisper to Ruriko.

「But, won't I be burdening Onii-sama?」

I smile at her.

「It's fine. I can withstand Ruriko's weight without any difficulty Or rather...  
Ruriko's light」

「...Really?」

「Yes you do...so just lean on me」

「...Y-Yes」

Ruriko relaxes herself in my arms.  
I firmly hug her soft body.  
Un...a 15 year old slender girl is light.

「Here...I'm completely fine」  
「Yes...Onii-sama」

Ruriko puts her cheeks on my chest.  
Her embarrassed face is cute.

「How does it feel being embraced by Danna-sama, Ruriko-san?」  
Misuzu asks Ruriko-san.

「Yes...it feels very reassuring. It feels calm. It makes me want to be embraced  
like this forever...」  
「If you want to be embraced then I can always do that...that's why whenever I  
want to embrace Ruriko, I will」

I said.

「Want to embrace?...Does Onii-sama think of wanting to embrace Ruriko?」  
「With such a cute little sister...I'd want to embrace you every day」  
「Then, please embrace me everyday...Ruriko also wants to embrace Onii-sama  
every day...!」

Saying that...this time, Ruriko's the one embracing me.

「You'll be Ruriko's Onii-sama, right?」  
「Yeah...I made you my little sister. That's already forever」  
「Yes...Onii-sama」

Misuzu's watching Ruriko.

「I am the same Ruriko-san」

「...Misuzu-oneesama」

「I also had my present and past blown away...and became Danna-sama's『woman』 I'm very happy. As a woman, as a person...to be wanted by Danna-sama」

...Misuzu

「Kouzuki house's daughter is only being bound. Your school friends, the dancing friends...they talk with having in mind that I'm a daughter of Kouzuki house first. Misuzu was unable to escape the binds of Kouzuki house」

「That is the same for Ruriko」

「But...Misuzu has become Danna-sama's thing. I have obtained something my own without any relation to Kouzuki family for the first time in my life. He's my Danna-sama. The one I'll be devoting myself for the rest of my life. Danna-sama has accepted this naked me...and we have made a bond of trust」

Misuzu tells her beautiful cousin.

「My Danna-sama..."Mine"...what a wonderful word. Ruriko-san can understand the satisfying feeling I have right now, don't you?」

Ruriko...

「Yes, Oneesama...!」

Then, she looks into my face.

「My Onii-sama...mine...!!!」

The three of us stare at each other and smile.

「Isn't that great...Ruriko-san?」

「Yes...Oneesama」

...Then

「Aua...don't be reckless...aaaahn! Aaaah!」

I can hear Yoshiko-san's panting voice from the side.  
Looking at it...Nagisa's attacking Yoshiko-san.

Yoshiko-san has become half-naked before we noticed...

Her breasts and croch are being attacked from top of her underwear at the same time.

「This isn't reckless! It's pelasure isn't it?」

Hmm! Hmm! Nagisa's fingers give fine vibrations to her clitoris through the thin cloth.

Ah, there's that technique too.

Let's try copying it.

「Aah...Onii-sama, what are you doing?!」

「I'm copying Nagisa」

「Aaaaah...aaaaaaaahn!」

「How is it, Ruriko...does it feel good?」

「I-It isssss...it feels goooooood!!!」

「You're cute...Ruriko-san」

Misuzu's touching the same spots with her own.

「Uhm...Master」

Michi speaks to me embarrassed

「Can Michi also comfort herself?」

「Yeah, do what you want」

「...Thank you very much!」

Michi also thrusts her hand to her own skirt.

「Aaaah...Masteeer...Misuzu-samaaa」

She looks at us with a pained face.

Yoshiko-san's attacked with Nagisa's fingers.

I'm teasing Ruriko's crotch.

Ruriko embraces me.

Misuzu and Michi masturbates.

The room is filled with women's lovely voices.

「...Aaah, this is outrageous...touching that place!」

「Is that so? You like it here?...Here?!」

「Ruriko...what about here?」

「Onii-sama...Onii-sama...it feels goood...」

「Ahn...Danna-sama and Ruriko-san are so cute...so cuteeee...!」

「...Masteeer...Me too...aaah」

This silliness continued for a while...

「Okay okay, we'll stop for now...~!」

Like a bright elementary school teacher, Nagisa stops us.

「Eh...Nagisa-sama?」

Misuzu looks at Nagisa.

「...You won't let us do it until we cum?」

「No. This is Ruriko-san and Yoshiko-san's first time. They won't have the stamina to continue if they cum!」

Nagisa says.

「Rather than that...you first have to show your sex with him!」

「Ah...Yes!」

Misuzu happily smiles.

Nagisa speaks to『Kakka』

「How is it, Shige-chan...are you enjoying?」

『Kakka』sighs lightly.

「This is the time where I hate my old body If I was 20 years younger...then I want to join in together...」

「...It's impossible I wonder?」

「My body can't get an erection in the first place. It's stroke before I die on my belly」

『Kakka』says frustratingly.

「But...my eyes are amused. No matter how old your body is...your perverted heart won't die」

「Then, have fun watching okay?」

Nagisa tells『Kakka』...



「Nagisa-kun...what are you plotting? Did Minaho-kun suggest something?」

「No, this is my own decision」

Nagisa answers.

「You intend to take away not only Misuzu but also Ruriko away from me?」

「We'll do it under Kouzuki-sama's hand properly...where you can see it」

Nagisa smiles.

「Besides...I think this way makes Ruriko-san and others happier」

「...What do you mean?」

「Kouzuki-sama...do you wish for Ruriko-san who has no sexual knowledge to be politically married to a noble's idiot son like this?」

「I won't let that happen as long as my eyes are black」

Kakka says in a grumpy mood.

「Then...how long will Kouzuki-sama's eyes stay black?」

Nagisa counterattacks with a smile.

「Kouzuki-sama's already 82. You might suddenly collapse even tomorrow. I'm aware that this is imprudent of me. Bedridden in the hospital...unable to speak a word or write a thing. Who will protect your grandchildren when that happens?」

Nagisa's words pierce『Kakka』

「The executives of Kouzuki house will start doing selfish things when the influence of『Kakka』is gone. Ruriko-san's father has no power to stop them. Then...the executives will try to marry Misuzu-sana nd Ruriko-san with a convenient partner for them. Who would be able to stop that movement?」

『Kakka』...

「...T-Tanizawa is here」

「Please keep your jokes for later. Tanizawa-san is the chief of the guards. Even if he can protect your grandchildren from the enemy...he won't deal with the problems inside the Kouzuki house. Political marriage...is still a marriage. Tanizawa-san can't break it and just say "Congratulations"」

True...it is as she say.

「Therefore...Kouzuki-sama has decided their『fiance's』, right? Besides, you purposely didn't announce their『fiance』until they're adults to prevent the subordinates from being reckless, didn't you?」

「Yes...it is as you say」

「But, if this continues...who will teach sex education to Ruriko-san? If Kouzuki-sama can't do it himself...then someone has to do it in his stead, am I wrong?」

「I understand that...that's why I've been watching silently until now. But...!」

『Kakka』looks at me.

「Looking at this boy's behavior...I have doubts that you are seducing Misuzu and Ruriko, and trying to take over Kouzuki house!!」

Me...Kouzuki house?

「Uhm...what are you talking about?」

I answered.

「I'm just a normal high school student. I'm not interested in Kouzuki house」

Yeah...I don't even understand it.

「Instead of your house...I'd rather have Misuzu and Ruriko. They're cute」

Misuzu laughs.

Ruriko-san's dumbfounded.

Ah...no good

「Of course, I also think that Yoshiko-san's cute too」

I add Ruriko's two years older『retainer』

I can't abandon Yoshiko-san if I'm accepting Ruriko.

...Also.

「Michi...of course, you're cute too」

Michi smiles like a puppy wagging her tail.

「I also love Nagisa」

「Thank you...dear」

Nagisa smiles.

「What's with this boy?」

『Kakka』asks Nagisa.

「It is as you see. He's very simple and easy to understand. He's abysmally honest. He'll never lie to his『family』」

Misuzu adds to what Nagisa said.

「Yes, Danna-sama has never lied to me. He listens to Misuzu's talk seriously at any time...I definitely keeps his promises. He never does anything that I dislike... he never press his own desire. Rather, he'll do anything, no matter how troublesome it is just to please me...!」

「My...that's wonderful! Onii-sama」

Ruriko-san's impressed.

「It's Misuzu's first time to have met such a trustworthy person. Therefore...I decided to devote my lifetime to this one」

「I also trust Onii-sama! Onii-sama has always been so kind with me...」

「It's hard to find a man like this. Ruriko-san, you're not afraid of Danna-sama at all, are you?」

「Yes! Misuzu-oneesama! Ruriko has come to love being embraced by Onii-sama! Listen Yoshiko...I am now his little sister」

「...I-Is that so?」

Yoshiko-san who's been attacked by Nagisa continuously...seems to have not heard Ruriko's conversation with me.

「That's right! Yoshiko, be careful not to be rude to Onii-sama okay?」

「Yes...Ruriko-sama」

Nagisa looks at『Kakka』

「In the end...he's a bit broken」

「...Broken?」

「He grew up in solitude, unable to rely on anyone, neither his parents nor relatives...that's why he never betrays the expectations of the people that trust him」

Nagisa explains who I am

「Therefore...us adults trust him...we'll never betray him. Minaho-san is the

same. This boy is the conscience itself we threw away a long time ago. We treasure him」

『Kakka』

「I've understood what kind of man he is...I trust you. But...I can't wipe the suspicion that Minaho-kun is trying to get Kouzuki house using him. I know her very well.」

Nagisa laughs out.

「What's funny?」

『Kakka』glares at Nagisa.

「Kouzuki-sama...you only see at your own point of view!」

「...My point of view?」

「Yes...you look down from the topmost pyramid called Kouzuki family」

「Well of course...I'm the current head of Kouzuki house」

「I think that the future owner of Kouzuki house is Misuzu」

Nagisa looks at Misuzu

「And Misuzu...is our family through him. We think of her as a『relative』」

Un...we're a family

「Therefore...Minaho and I are supporting Misuzu, our『family』with all our best. We don't think of taking over Kouzuki house. Kouzuki house already belongs to Misuzu, our『family』...!」

Right

Misuzu's our『family』so there's no need to take over.

「Also...Ruriko-san also now belongs to his『family』 We will continue to help Kouzuki house, unrelated to Kouzuki-sama. It's the house of our『family』after all」

「...Uumu」

『Kakka』moans

「I feel like I'm being deceived logically but...I'll trust you」

Misuzu...

「We don't need grandfather's trust」

「...W-What?」

「My bonds with my『family』isn't related to grandfather...! Whatever grandfather thinks...I am Danna-sama's『woman』, Ruriko-san is Danna-sama's『little sister』 We're already a『family』 Therefore, it's natural that we help each other for living!」

Misuzu looks at Ruriko-san.

「Isn't that right, Ruriko-san?!」

「Yes! Oneesama!」

Misuzu smiles at her『little sister』

「We've derailed because of grandfather but...」

Misuzu speaks.

「Your Oneesama and Onii-sama will show you real sex」

Misuzu snuggles to me.

「We'll teach Ruriko-san how does a man and a woman love each other」

「Yes...thank you in advance」

The『Little sister』answers smilingly.

---

## 251. Sex Study meeting for Ruriko-san 3

---

「Danna-sama, please come here...」

The naked Misuzu invites me.

「...I'll strip it off」

Misuzu removes the buttons of my shirt one by one 「Ufufu」

Misuzu laughs.

「...What's the matter, Misuzu?」

「No...when I think that I'm doing things that's very wife-like, it makes me happy」

Misuzu looks up and said.

「Please give me a lot of orders...Misuzu loves being ordered by Danna-sama...」

Misuzu who's strongly masochistic says so.

「But...I don't know what to order Misuzu」

...Misuzu

「Even perverted orders are okay...Misuzu will do anything Danna-sama desires...」

「...Misuzu, what do you want to do?」

I asked her in response.

「...Eh?」

「I order you...what kind of sex Misuzu wants to try」

Misuzu answered with her red face.

「...I'd like a 'toilet in the station' play」

「Toilet?」

「Yes...I'd like Danna-sama to me in the station's restroom...I will then go to school with Danna-sama's semen poured inside me...」

「Got it, let's do that next time. Is that all?」

Hmm, there's the problem about safety but...

I'll consult Katsuko-nee about this.

I'm sure she'll tell me a good way to get through this.

It's likely that Katsuko-nee will participate too but...

Well, let's think about it at that time...

「No...you see」

「Go on...say anything you want」

Misuzu answers.

「I'd like to have sex in school!」

The super Ojou-sama school in Japan...that's Misuzu's school...

Can we do that?

「At the school festival...we can invite outsiders inside the campus so I'll make the opportunity Michi...help me out by then」

Misuzu orders Michi.

「Certainly...Misuzu-sama」

I see...if Michi's helping out then I've got no choice but to do it.

「Okay...then I'll embrace you in school」

I promised

「Thank you very much! Danna-sama!」

Misuzu smiles happily.

「I love you...you really accept everything I want!」

Saying that, she kisses my lips.

...Now then

I take off my shirt...

My shoes and socks are taken off as well...

Misuzu's hand removes my pants' belt...

By pants go down...

And the penis under my underwear is already erect.

「...My?」

Misuzu makes a curious face.

「What's wrong?」

「it's a different underwear than the usual...」

...Err

I can't lie.

Let's answer honestly.

「Megu picked my underwear for today」

「...Is that so?」

Misuzu's eyes are a bit scary

「So...Megu's underwear is my choice too」

Misuzu...

「As expected of Megumi-san...she knows a good underwear that suits Danna-sama」

Then...she looks at me.

「Next time...please go shopping with Misuzu too. Please choose Misuzu's underwear. I'll wear any underwear you prefer...」

I...

「The naked necktie Misuzu's more beautiful」

「...Danna-sama」

Misuzu opens her eyes wide.

「Danna-sama...why do you understand me so much?」

「...What?」

「I love being embraced by Danna-sama when I'm naked wearing only a necktie. You said it thinking that it would please Misuzu, did you?」



「...No. I really like it」

I answer honestly.

「Misuzu's naked body is so cute, sexy, I love it. Besides, when you add a collar...it feels like you're really my『woman』...it makes me love it irresistibly」

「...Me too」

Misuzu said.

「I'm better being Danna-sama's pet for the rest of my life. I want to be loved as a pet...I want to be dominated...1」

「Sure...I will」

I pat Misuzu's head.

「Where's the collar today...?」

「We have a dance today so I left it at home. It's safety first for today. 」

Misuzu said regrettably.

I see...we even left the luggage in the dressing room...

When Ruriko and Yoshiko-san too...the dressing room's unattended when their turn was close.

Suppose someone tried to laid waste on the dressing room...it'll be a big problem.

There are also girls among the performers today that are hostile to the Kouzuki family.

If there's an SM use collar found on Misuzu's bag...it'll be a big scandal.

「That's a regret」

「...I'm sorry」

「It's fine...we can do it again」

...Besides

「This necktie is sexy too」

Misuzu's wearing『Kakka's』necktie

Naked with only a silver necktie...what sexiness.

The necktie swaying in the middle of Misuzu's plump breasts are amazing.

「Yes. Danna-sama...please love me a lot...!」

Misuzu's white thin fingers goes to my underwear.

「Ruriko-san...don't be surprised」

Misuzu turns to Ruriko-san.

「...What about?」

Ruriko-san makes a strange look.

「You'll understand once you see it...!」

Misuzu lowers my underwear...

My angry penis jumps out in front of Misuzu's face.

「Kyaa!」

「My...what is going on!?!」

Ruriko screams.

Yoshiko-san's surprised.

「This is the male organ used for sex」

Misuzu says while stroking the penis with her fingers.

「Uhm...it's so swollen, is it okay?」

Yoshiko-san asks.

「Err...it's normal」

Somehow...I answered something stupid.

「Does it swell that much all the time?」

Ah, Yoshiko-san misunderstood when I said『Normal』

「No...it only happens when having sex」

「Danna-sama...becomes like this when he feels so much love towards me. It's the same as our crotch getting wet」

Misuzu explained.

「Now now...Ruriko-san, don't be scared and take a look. It may look a bit grotesque but it's a part of Danna-sama's body」

Ruriko opens her eyes.

「...It's swelling so much, does it not hurt?」

Timidly...Ruriko asks while looking at my penis.

「It's not painful in particular」

It feels strange to have innocent girls stare my erect penis.

「That is...isn't it the organ usually used for peeing?>」

As expected of Ruriko-san, she knows what wee-wee is it seems.

「My, Ruriko-san...this is your first time seeing man's organ isn't it?」

Nagisa asks.

「When my aunt Tomoko replaces the baby's diaper...I have seen it」

She hasn't seen anything but a baby's penis?

Un...she's been isolated from men since she was small...

She's been raised in an all girl's school...there's no wonder 「That's right. It also serves as an excrement organ for peeing...God rationally designed the human body」

Misuzu answers.

「Our crotch as well...they're an organ to accept men and also an excretory organ」

Right, earlier, Misuzu exposed her own genital...  
She taught Ruriko the vagina and uterus.

「Danna-sama...what should I do?」

Misuzu looks up at me with a pleading eye.

「...Misuzu」

「Yes, Danna-sama」

「Suck it」

「...Certainly」

Misuzu puts both hands to my penis...then licks it with her tongue 「...M-Misuzu-sama?!」

Yoshiko-san raises a surprised voice.

Ruriko...there's no voice coming out.

Misuzu covers my glans in her mouth...and wet it with her saliva.

Making a wet sound, she sucks my penis.

The necktie sways around matching the movement of her head...

「M-Misuzu-oneesama...that's an organ where pee comes out you know?!」

Before long, Ruriko asks Misuzu...

Misuzu...

「Yes. Therefore, if you really don't love each other, you can't do such acts...!」

Misuzu rubs my glans on her nipples.

「Danna-sama...does this feel good?」

「Yeah, it feels good」

Misuzu answers.

「Misuzu...you've improved」

Nagisa praises Misuzu.

「Yes...Danna-sama has taught me a lot!」

No, I didn't...

I thought you nothing...

I don't have that experience.

「Misuzu...try licking around with your tongue」

Look...Nagisa's the coach here

「Yes...like this?」

Misuzu attacks the back of the glans...

...uuu

「Look, he looks he's feeling good. While doing that, stroke the bottom of his testicles with your palm」

「Ufufu...Danna-sama, I'll make you feel even better!」

Nagisa learns techniques according to Nagisa's coachinc.

「...Does doing such things feel good?」

The surprised Ruriko asks Nagisa.

Nagisa...

「Both of you imagine...don't you think it would feel good to have your own wet place be licked with a tongue right now?」

「But...to lick such a place...!」

「My...it's okay to lick it isn't it?!」

Nagisa looks at me with a smile...

Right, it's my turn this time

「Misuzu...let me lick you」

「Yes...Danna-sama」

Misuzu lies supine on the carpet.

「Spread your legs wide...so Ruriko and Yoshiko-san can see」

「...Yes」

Misuzu opens her legs.

Her vagina's already wet...

「...I'm licking it」

「...Please」

I open her slit with my fingers and insert my tongue 「...Aaaaaaahn!」

At the moment my tongue touched...Misuzu writhes.

「...Ah...Aaah...it feels goooood!!!」

I move my tongue rapidly.

「H-He's really licking it...!」

Ruriko and Yoshiko-san are astonished.

「My...it's normal if there's love. The two who love each other stimulates each other's pleasant places. That is the act of love... !」

Nagisa says.

「R-Ruriko-san...Y-You see...Misuzu, loves being licked here by Danna-sama!」

Misuzu shouts at her『little sister』while rubbing her clitoris 「Misuzu...do you

want me to lick it?」

「Aahn! Lick it! Lick it!!!! Danna-samaaaa...~!」

Misuzu pleads with moist eyes

...I

Suddenly, I lick up her clitoris!

「Good! It feels good! I love this! I love youuuu! Danna-samaaa!」

Sucking it up...I roll my tongue around her small bean again.

「Aaah! It feels good...It feels goooooood!!!!」

Misuzu grabs my head with both her hands.

Holding her body firmly...I caress her with my tongue.

「Look, it looks like it feels good doesn't it? All girls love it when this part is licked up」

Nagisa tells Ruriko and Yoshiko-san.

「This kind of thing...does everyone do this?」

Ruriko, asks while squirming her body...

「What's wrong, Ruriko-san? Do you want to be licked too?」

「N-No」

The 15 year old sheltered girl's face is red.

「You're a woman too so you can understand, right? Just how pleasant it would feel if you're licked down here」

Nagisa speaks to Ruriko who's holding down her crotch.

「Aaah! I'd like to be licked up too! I want to be violated by Danna-sama!」

Michi shouts

Michi puts her hand to her skirt and masturbates completely.

She's comforting herself.

「But...this is an act you can't do unless it's with a person you love and loves you back. Take a look...he's really devoted to Misuzu isn't he?」

Nagisa says...Ruriko...

「Truly...Onii-sama loves Misuzu-oneesama...I feel envious」

「My...he also loves Ruriko-san you know」

Nagisa said.

「...Yes?」

「You're his treasured『little sister』...If Ruriko-san asks for it, then he'll lick it. Isn't that right, dear...?!」

...I

「Yeah, I'll lick it anytime you want」

I answered with a smile.

My body's hot...it's completely sweaty

「O-Onii-sama...!」

Ruriko's surprised.

「Geez...please leave Ruriko-san for later! Please take a look at Misuzu for now!」

Saying that, Misuzu pushes my head against her crotch.

Ah...sorry, sorry.

「Aaah...aaaahn...So good! It feels good there...!」

Misuzu's whole body trembles as her clitoris is licked.

「D-Danna-samaaaaa...!」

Misuzu looks at me with a pained face.

「...I want it...!」

Misuzu begs.

「Please violate Misuzuuu...!!」

I nod.

I separate my face from Misuzu's crotch and get up.

I also want to enter Misuzu.

「What does『violate』mean?」

Ruriko asks Nagisa.

「Sex is in English...in Japanese, it means『violate』」

Nagisa teaches another lie.

「Therefore, when Ruriko-san will have sex with a man, you ask by saying『Please violate me』」

「My...is that so?」

...Err

I'll try to summarize the correction of that erroneous knowledge.

Right now...I want to fuck Misuzu so much I can't help it.

「Ruriko-san...you have read Plato's『Feast』have you not?」

Nagisa asks.

「Yes...I've read it」

Of course...I don't.

「Do you remember reading this line in the story? Since ancient times... Humans are perfect creatures when a man and a woman combines. That is, God's punishment...separating man and a woman. Therefore, men and women keep seeking their broken half」

「Yes, I remember reading that passage」

Misuzu who's listening to the two...speaks to Ruriko.

「Then...we'll show a complete human, where a man and a woman unites...!」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「...Come」

I press my erection to Misuzu's hole.

「I'm coming in...Misuzu」

「Hurrrrrrry...Hurry up and come...Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu twists her body and waits for my insertion 「...Could it be, no way?」

Yoshiko-san imagines our act and raised her voice.

「That's right...the man's big thing, will be accepted in this part of the woman. That's sex...!」



Nagisa tells the two.

...I

I pierce her vagina while pushing out the love nectar.

「Aah...it's coming in...Danna-sama's hot thing is coming in...!!」

Slowly...we deeply connect...

「I-It's coming in so deeeeeep」

Misuzu pleads with her moist eyes.

「Please poke me on my deepest part...!」

「Sure」

I throw it down to the base right away!

Misuzu shouts「Aaaah...!」and curved her body...!

Her wet pussy is hot and sticky.

The folds of meat tightens around my penis.

The glans hits a bumpy wall of flesh.

That's her womb.

「Aah...it poked it just now」

Misuzu smiles from below.

「A-Amazing...that fat thing went in all at once...!」

Yoshiko-san's surprised.

「Misuzu-oneesama...does it hurt? Are you in pain?」

Ruriko asks Misuzu

「It did hurt at first but now...it feels really good...!」

Misuzu answers while she's connected with me.

「...Feels good?」

「Danna-sama comes into the empty part of my heart...it feels like everything's filled up...it makes me happy!」

Misuzu twines her hand with mine.

「I am born to be violated by Danna-sama...!」

Then...she looks at her grandfather.

「Grandfather...please take a look! Misuzu's very happy right now!」

『Kakka』...

「Misuzu...my Misuzu...」

He's captured in a complicated emotion he can't speak 「Geez, Shige-chan, don't make that kind of face! It's inevitable for women to become adults!」

Nagisa speaks laughingly.

「Now...enjoy watching the woman and man's climax!」

「...Yes, Nagisa-sama!」

Misuzu looks at me.

「Move...Danna-sama」

...Misuzu

「Please violate Misuzu's body as much as you want. Then, please release a lot of Danna-sama's child seed inside Misuzu...!」

I...!

Zun! Zun!...I move rhythmically.

「Aaahn...good...rub...please rub it!」

Misuzu turbs her hand on my back.

Embracing me by herself...she asks for deeper and deeper.

The connecting part makes a watery sound.

I strengthen the piston gradually.

Misuzu's breasts...and her necktie are shaking.

「W-What are the two of them doing?」

Ruriko asks Nagisa.

「They're rubbing each other's pleasant parts...stimulating each other. When the pleasure rises...the man's part will be pouring in the baby seed into the woman's stomach」

Nagisa explains to the two.

「You two as well, you have to do this act in order to give birth to a baby in the future!」

「Me...doing like this?」

Ruriko is puzzled as she watch our sex.

「That's right. You want a child, don't you?」

「I want to make a child but...something like this...」

Ruriko looks down.

「...Are you scared of men?」

Nagisa asks

「...Yes」

「Well, if you're going to get married...you'll be separated from Yoshiko-san, and have to do this with a man alone」

「I can't do that...」

Ruriko's not immune to men at all

Being naked in front of a man alone...accepting the man's organ by spreading her legs, it must be frightening for her.

「But...if you don't do this, then you won't make a baby」

Nagisa attacks Ruriko's heart.

「Don't be scared...this feels really good!」

Misuzu shouts while accepting my thrusts.

「Look...this is the act of love! I'm naked right now...I'm not a Kouzuki's daughter! I'm just a naked woman! I'm being loved by Danna-sama...I'm devoting my whole body! Danna-sama is also loving me...this naked me! I'm happy! I'm so happy!!」

Misuzu shouts while pilling hot tears.

Her body shakes from my thrusts...

Misuzu's cute breasts are swinging up and down.

Her pointing aroused pink nipples dances to the rhythm of our waist.

「...Misuzu...my Misuzu...!」

「It's all yours...! I'm dedicating it all to you! Do as you want with Misuzu's bodyyy! Make a mess out of it!!!」

I ask for Misuzu's tongue.

Misuzu twines our tongues.

I massage Misuzu's breasts strongly.

Sandwiching it in between my fingers, holding it tightly.

「...I love it! I love it! I love you! I love youuuu!!!」

Aaah...the hot lump comes from the bottom rises up...

「Misuzu...I...」

「Are you cumming? Is Danna-sama going to let out his baby seed inside Misuzu's stomach...!?」

「Yeah...I...」

Misuzu looks at my enduring face...

「Cute...I love your all-out face!」

「...Misuzu...Misuzu...!」

「Ah...wait...I'm about to cum too...I'm going to cum!」

Misuzu's shows a pained face as well...

「Look...take a look as Misuzu cums...Please cum inside while you watch Misuzu's most embarrassing faceee...!」

「Yeah...got it」

We're completely sticky with sweat.

「...the gentle you...Misuzu's Danna-sama...Aaaaahn!」

Misuzu rises up...

「...Misuzu's cummiiiiing...I'm cumming! Cum, cum, cumiiiiing...!」

Twisting her body...Misuzu goes to climax...!

「M-Me too...I'm going to cum too...!」

「Cuuuum...please pour it in Misuzu's belly! Please call Misuzu's nameee...!!!」

...I

「...Misuzuuuuuuu!!!」

...Dopu!

...Dopu, dobu, dopudobu...!!

「H-Hot!」

Misuzu feels the burning hot white liquid deep in her body...

「It's reaching...Danna-sama's entering Misuzu's baby room!!!!!!」

Misuzu's body convulses.

My penis is being squeezed.

「I'm still coming...still letting it out...Misuzu...!」

「Aaah...I can tell! I can tell it's coming!...Danna-sama...!!」

I pour it inside Misuzu until the last drop...

---

## 252. Family portrait

---

Haa...Haa...haa...

As if I've done multiple sprints...  
Our sweaty bodies are intertwined.  
Misuzu and I look at each other.  
Her eyes are moist...

「...It felt good」  
「Me too...It felt really good」

Feeling gratitude...I kiss Misuzu.  
I massaged her breasts gently.  
Her 17 year old sweaty skin is burning.

「Afu...it feels good when you touch it that way...!」

Re enjoy the relaxation time after ejaculation.

「...Ufufufu」

Misuzu smiles.

「What's wrong?」  
「...I'm happy」

Misuzu said.

「Being embraced by you naked...your thing is still inside me...it makes me happy...!」

「...Misuzu」

「Ufufu...Danna-samaaaan! My Danna-sama!」

Misuzu embraces me tightly and licks my nose.

「Ahn...Danna-sama's nose tastes like salty sweat」  
「...Sorry」

「There's nothing Danna-sama needs to apologize for...you did your whole best for Misuzu...you've sweat this much」

「Misuzu's sweaty too」

I lick the bead of sweat on Misuzu's face.

「...Is it delicious?」

「Yeah...it is」

It's the『sweat』of my woman

「Ufu...I love you!」

Misuzu smiles at me with sparkling eyes.

「I...when Danna-sama embraces me, I get even more naked...!」

「...What?」

「Misuzu normally have a thick clothing in her heart. But, when I'm with Danna-sama, I can be naked at ease. Right now, Misuzu's heart is completely naked!」

Misuzu smiles like an innocent child.

「Do you like this Misuzu?」

「I like all of Misuzu...it's all you after all」

I answer.

「Me too...I love all of Danna-sama!」

This time...Misuzu kisses me from below.

「Both of you...it's about time you remember us too!」

Nagisa smiles wryly.

「We didn't forget about anything...!」

Misuzu answered cheerfully.

「I'm showing it off to Nagisa-sama after all...!」

Misuzu laughs.

「My...remember this!」

Nagisa's mouth pretends to be angry but her face is smiling.

「In the men's world...there are people who think that sex is a way to escape evil...」

『Kakka』speaks as he look at us intertwined.

「You really make a refreshed face Misuzu, as if the demons have been repelled」

「Because, I'm really happy!」

Misuzu answers her grandfather while hugging me.

「I...I'm fine with this person only. I don't need anything else!」

Misuzu sticks to my body.

「Hey, if you move too much I'll get big inside」

When I say that...

「Then, you can just cum inside Misuzu again!...I'll make you feel good as much as you want...!」

The eyes of a woman who just received a man's semen...is sexy.

「Making Misuzu fall that far... Certainly, instead of marrying Misuzu to a worthless son of a famous family, this Kuromori boy having sex with Misuzu might be better for her」

『Kakka』...still doesn't understand Misuzu and me.  
He's looking at us from the standpoint of『Kouzuki house』only 「Misuzu...please part from him at least once」

Nagisa orders.

「...I'd like to stay like this for a bit longer though」

Misuzu said as she move her waist while I'm still inside her.  
Hey...it's really getting hard...

「You can't...you were showing sex to Ruriko-san aren't you? You have to make them confirm that the sperm is inside you...」

「Yes, understood」

Misuzu answers Nagisa.



「...Misuzu, I'm pulling it out」  
「It feels lonely to be separated from Danna-sama...!」  
「We can just do it later again」  
「...Yes」

I pull out my penis painted in love nectar and semen.  
My penis is still in half-erect state.

「Ruriko-san...take a look」

Misuzu opens her legs wide to Ruriko.

「Danna-sama's semen overflows now...!」

Then...she puts power in her stomach.  
Misuzu's thin waist...her butt that's not yet filled with meat tightens.  
...Then  
White liquid drips from her vagina.

「This is sperm It's Danna-sama's baby seed., It's also called semen」

Ruriko...her eyes are stiffened completely from the beastly situation in front of her.

「This...goes deep in Misuzu's stomach...called womb, and will unite with the ovum, that makes the babies」

Misuzu wipes the spilled sperm with her index and middle finger.  
Then...she licks it up.

「Un...delicious...!」

Ruriko watches that appearance nervously.

「...Is it okay to lick it?」

Yoshiko-san asks Misuzu.

「It's the baby seed Danna-sama has given to me...it's not dirty. Rather, it's sacred. It's a waste to leave it spilling...

Misuzu answers with a smile.  
Then, she puts her fingers in her vagina and take out more semen 「Ruriko-san, try licking it as well...!」

Misuzu says.

「M-me, lick it?」

Ruriko's afraid

「Yes. It's Misuzu's Danna-sama's sperm...please lick it」

Misuzu presents her finger filled with semen

「...」

Ruriko's waist isn't raising from the chair

「...Michi」

Misuzu calls her loyal retainer

「Yes...excuse me」

Michi comes in front...transfer the sperm from Misuzu's finger to her fingers.  
Then...she presents it to Ruriko's face...

「Please lick...!」

Ruriko's trembling in tension

「Hey...Misuzu...!」

『Kakka』interrupts but...

「My...Shige-chan, you don't want to see it? Ruriko-san licks a man's sperm for the first time」

Nagisa holds him back in her Sensei mode

「I-I...」

『Kakka』withdraws

「Danna-sama also wants Ruriko-san to taste it, don't you?」

Misuzu turns to me.

...」

「If Ruriko really don't want it then there's no need to force her. ...But, I want her to lick it」

I speak my honest feelings

I'd like this innocent beauty to lick my sperm.

My half-erect penis strengthens again.

「If that's what Onii-sama wishes for...」

Ruriko sticks out her tongue to Michi's fingers while feeling afraid.  
...She licks up the cloudy liquid.

「...I-It's bitter」

Frowning...Ruriko speaks.

「That's the taste of baby's seed. You'll be tasting it from now on so get used to it」

Nagisa said.

「I've come to love it already. I want to lick it everyday!」

Misuzu says

「You see...sperm has their taste change according to the man's physical condition. Therefore, if you check the taste every day...you'll be able to understand his health condition!」

Nagisa says.

「Then, I'll lick it everyday...please let Misuzu drink it, Danna-sama!」

...Err

If I recall, Mana also said that she'd like to drink it everyday...

「I won't give Yoshiko-san some」

Misuzu said

「Yoshiko-san...you still have the road to be free left for you...!」

...That's?!

What do you mean?

Before I ask...Michi

「Uhm...Misuzu-sama」

She kneels down in front of her master with a pained face...

「I know...you also want it don't you?」

「...Yes」

Michi answers bashfully.

「Michi...ask Danna-sama directly」

Misuzu orders.

「Michi's mouth and tongue will clean up Danna-sama's thing. Clean up the remaining sperm inside too...!」

Michi's going to do clean up fellatio...?!

「...Certainly」

Michi goes in front of me.

「Master...I'll clean this up」

Going in between my crotch...Michi touches my penis.

「Michi...wait a moment」

Michi looks up at me

「...What is it?」

...Err

「Y-You're not going to resist? If you don't want it then there's no need to do it you know?」

Michi...

「Michi...is Master's. A possession. I'd like to be used as a tool...!」

This masochist...she's got some quite a distorted fetish.

「...It would be boring if you're a tool though」

I said

「...Master?」

「At least...you have to become my favorite priced treasure...!」

「A beloved toy?」

Michi trembles.

「That's good. That's amazing...I'd like to be Master's toy...!」

It seems that the『beloved toy』image is a bull's eye.  
Her face is red...trembling in joy

「Then, whatever we do, let's start with a kiss...kiss will always be first」  
「Yes...Master」

Michi kisses me.  
I push my tongue in Michi's mouth.  
Michi accepts and twines her tongue.  
I embrace her petite body  
...Enjoying it to the fullest  
I release my lips from Michi...

「Then, I'll clean it up...!」  
「Yeah...please」

Michi kneels in front of me again...  
Putting her hands on my penis...  
Putting it in her mouth...  
The semen and love nectar sticking to my penis...  
Is melting in Michi's saliva.  
Michi's cute lips...  
Brushing my glans gently...

「Ooh...that feels good」

Looking at us, 『Kakka』...

「Misuzu made Kudou's daughter a servant...well fine. You were originally a lesbian after all...」

Inside『Kakka's』brain...Misuzu's just making Michi fellate...  
He only thinks of her as someone under Misuzu and I'm a man from『Kuromori』  
『Kakka's』will doesn't change.  
In short...people that's under『Kouzuki』...  
With that composition...he won't be able to understand all of the situation.  
He won't understand my relationship with Misuzu and Michi.

「Master...it's my first time to do this, so...」

Michi whispers embarrassed.

「I can't do it well...I'm sorry」

「That's not true...it feels good」

I gently stroke Michi's hair.

「I'll definitely improve...I'll get better...!」

Michi said

「Please do not abandon me...!」

...I

「It's okay...I'll treasure you forever...I'll love you a lot」

「...Master」

Michi's fellatio is much more careful than Misuzu.

Misuzu's fellatio has the solidarity feeling to enjoy my pleasure...

Michi, her service spirit is strong.

She's looking up at me with inquisitive eyes.

Both of them are charming, and the pleasure aren't different but...

That strong Michi gazing at me like a small animal...is cute

Michi sucks up the tip of the glans.

She's sucking up the semen remaining in the urethra...

Oh...my half erect penis—

Is regaining strength...

「Michi is still in her『apprentice period』」

Misuzu tells Ruriko and others.

「What is『apprentice』period?」

Yoshiko-san asks.

Ruriko's completely concentrating on Michi who's fellating my penis.

「It is to become Danna-sama's『woman』...!」

Misuzu said calmly

「Kuromori house is polygamous...Danna-sama can receive multiple 『wives』  
...!」

...Eh!?

That's my first time hearing this?

Or rather...I'm not really a Kuromori

I'd like to correct Michi but...

Michi's fellatio is too good that I can't speak.

「Polygamous?...Isn't it supposed to be banned under Japanese Law/」

Yoshiko-san asks in surprise.

「That may be on the legal side...that doesn't matter. It's only a problem on paper, on the family register」

Misuzu answers.

「Then...Kuromori-sama, are you a Muslim?」

Err...Yoshiko-san

Why did you get that idea?

「No...religion doesn't matter. Kuromori house has decided to be polygamous, centered around the husband...!」

I don't know about that but...

「Then...there are other women who will be Kuromori-sama's wife other than Misuzu-sama?!」

Ruriko who's distracted by watching the fellatio got surprised from what Yoshiko-san said.

「...Misuzu-oneesama?!」

Misuzu answers.

「Yes...I am one of Danna-sama's wives. I'm not just alone...!」

Ruriko, Yoshiko-san...and『Kakka』are surprised...!

「Hey, what does that mean?」

『Kakka』tries to interrupt but Nagisa...

「Shige-chan, just shut up for a while」

「Hey...!」

「Are you not going to follow Sensei?!」

『Kakka』is silenced by the power of her Sensei mode.

「Uhm...Misuzu-oneesama...」

Instead of her silenced grandfather, Ruriko asks Misuzu 「Is that okay with you, Oneesama?!」

「Yes...I've given my consent on it」

「But...Oneesama is Kouzuki house's daughter...being only one of the wives is...!」

Ruriko also has the pride of Kouzuki house, a famous Japanese family.

「My...why not?」

Misuzu answers with a laugh.

「Ruriko-san already knows Danna-sama's other『women』」

「I know?」

「Yes...you just saw them in the theater a while ago」

Ruriko thinks.

「Are they among Kouzuki family? Or are they from other families?」

「...It's not」

Misuzu smiles.

「Megumi-san and Mana-san...!」

「Megumi-san and Mana-san...?」

「That's right...didn't they visit our dressing room earlier this evening?」

Ruriko's surprised.

「However...Mana-san, isn't she younger than me...?!」

Misuzu answers.

「Age doesn't matter if you decide with your life. Aren't you the same, even though you're 15 years old, weren't you prepared to marry the fiance grandfather picked for you?」

Misuzu scolds her younger cousin

「Yes...you're right」



Ruriko bows her head.

「We're not just daughters of Kouzuki house who live in a harsh fate You must think on how to live alone in a painful life」

「...Yes」

「Megumi-san, and Mana-san too...both of them faced a painful fate. Danna-sama has accepted them...」

「Kuromori-sama did...?!」

...I

「Michi...you can now stop」

Michi stops moving her tongue

I should speak from now on.

Even though it's an important talk...I can't just remain being fellated.

「Megu...has been abandoned by her real father, she's on the verge of being sold off...」

The words sex slave or prostitute probably won't make sense for Ruriko.

「Mana as well...she's been abandoned by her family. I'm the only one protecting her...」

Nagisa laughs.

「I'm also his『woman』 I'll be his wife! I'm also a woman who can't return to her real family. Then...he promised to make me his『family』!」

...Nagisa

Ruriko and Yoshiko-san,『Kakka』is also surprised at Nagisa's confession.

Me who looks like an ordinary high school student, makes Nagisa an older lady my『woman』...even『Kakka』can't imagine it 「I'm the same. I may be the daughter of Kouzuki house but...I don't have any family bonds with Kouzuki family. I can't trust neither the head or branch family. Using each other, bargaining about loss and gain...isn't that the kind of relationship they have? To be honest, I can't even trust my own father. They don't think of me as anything but a tool to protect their position in Kouzuki house...」

「...Onesama」

Ruriko mutters.

「Me too...my real family's empty. Therefore...『Kurmori's』...I entered Danna-sama's『family』...!」

Misuzu looks at me.

「This person is my『Danna-sama』 Even if the world abandons me, Danna-sama will definitely come to save me...that's what I believe, he's my one and only『family』...!」

「I'm the same...if I want someone to stay by my side if I'm going to die. That would be him... He's my husband. He's my family...!」

...Misuzu, Nagisa!

「I am a guard that will protect Master and Misuzu-sama. I'll definitely protect the happiness of them two」

Michi said.

「You're not a guard...come to our『house』」

Misuzu tells Michi.

「Michi...you're already our『family』」

「I-I」

I interrupt.

「Misuzu...you should speak to Michi that way!」

I look at Michi.

「Michi...it's an order. Come to my『family』...!」

Michi looks at me.

「I'm a servant. A faithful dog. A tool. Master's toy...entering the『family』is outrageous...」

「It's not outrageous!」

I say clearly.

「Even if you're a servant or a toy, who cares...just come in our『house』 If you're in our『house』, even if you're a dog, cat, or a toy, everyone's『family』 If

Michi doesn't feel happy then we won't. Think of that and be happy with all your best...!」

「...Master...!」

Michi's body trembles.

「That's too much for me!」

「That's not!」

...Geez

I embrace Michi who's in front of me.

「Don't go anywhere...stay with me forever!」

「...Yes...yes...certainly」

Michi's trembling in my arms.

「It's an order...Michi, enter my『family』」

「Yes...I'll be『family』! I'll join in the『family』...!」

Looking at us...Nagisa speaks to Ruriko.

「That's our relationship. He accepts the women who are unable to do anything with their real family」

「That's right. Besides...Danna-sama doesn't just accept anyone indiscriminately. To be Danna-sama's『family』...you have to be a girl with a beautiful heart yet hurt...」

Misuzu says.

「Among the people Ruriko-san has met...Danna-sama doesn't accept Kuroko-san」

Eh...Misuzu?

...I

I'm not accepting Yukino?

「Kuroko-san...her circumstances isn't widely different from the other girls」

No, Misuzu...Yukino is Mana's older sister...

Far from their situation『not widely different』...it's dangerously similar.

Shirasaka house has issued an order to eliminate Yukino.

「But...Danna-sama isn't accepting such a vulgar woman into his『family』」

...Err

That funny clothing and funny make up...isn't Yukino's hobby...

Isn't it just pitiful if you say that far...?

Or rather...I

Am I putting that much difference between Yukino and other women...?

No, Misuzu said it confidently.

Nagisa and Michi are nodding as well...

Everyone sees it that way...

I didn't notice it at all.

「I feel relieved after hearing that just now...Kuromori-sama has eyes that can see women's essence properly...!」

...R-Ruriko?!

...Eh?

Just what kind of woman does other people see Yukino as?!

I'd like to ask carefully when we have some time...

「But...I still can't agree with it. Misuzu-oneesama...don't you want to monopolize Kuromori-sama?」

Ruriko's question is reasonable.

「...Sometimes, I want to monopolize him」

Misuzu said.

「But...I have to become a『woman』suitable for Danna-sama...!」

「...Suitable?」

Ruriko's surprised from Misuzu's answer.

「Yes. There are things that I must do. If I don't work hard, then I won't become a woman suitable for Danna-sama's love...」

...Misuzu

「I'm the same. Right now, I own a flower shop...I'll work hard at my shop... then, my daughter...the one that's playing on the other room. I have to raise her happily too... That is my reality that I have to do. When I'm alone...I felt

hopeless and cried on the bed at night. But, I'm fine now. I have him after all... I know that he will comfort me when my heart feels pained...that's why I'm able to live doing my best everyday...!」

...Nagisa.

「I...I still cannot escape from being Kouzuki's daughter. That is my reality. Therefore I will fight. I will blow away all of the hate, jealousy, and scheming related to Kouzuki house so everyone can be happy. That is my dream」

「...Oneesama」

「I won't be swept away by the fate of being born as a daughter of Kouzuki house. Like I'd lose to fate obediently. I will fight. And I'll make an effort to make not just me but all of Kouzuki to be happy. I'm no longer scared of anyone anymore. When it's really painful or sad...then I'll be pampered by Danna-sama a lot...! And with the energy I get from Danna-sama, I will fight!」

Misuzu smiles.

「Therefore...I will never forsake Ruriko-san. Danna-sama and I will definitely make you happy. We've already decided so...!」

Ruriko...

「Misuzu-oneesama...can you really change Kouzuki house?」

Misuzu answers.

「I can...I'm not fighting alone. I have Danna-sama. Danna-sama has his family too...everyone will help me...!」

Nagisa continues.

「Yes...we'll help with anything. We're Misuzu's『family』through him. We're not tied by blood but we help with our lives at stake. She's our important『family』after all」

Michi continues.

「Yes...I will follow any orders. We already have an unwavering『bond』...!」

Ruriko's outlook of the world from the top of Kouzuki family collapses.

「So there's that kind of『family』in this world...!」

「That's right. His other『woman』...will be starting a bakery in the future. Of course we will all back her up」

Nagisa smiles.

「Even today...Everyone from the『family』came to support my dance! Megumi-san does her best in the athletics club...next time I will support here! Mana-san wants to be a super model she said...that's why I have to find a good teacher for her...」

Misuzu speaks.

「We're『family』after all! We've got to do everything!」  
「Yes! Therefore...We do not monopolize Danna-sama...everyone feels the same. We're already a『family』! Danna-sama gives energy to those who need Danna-sama at that time. We face our own dream...then we have our『family』support us so we can push forward to our dream!」

Misuzu said, Michi nods.  
Really...all my『women』are good people...  
Intelligent...straightforward...kind...  
They're too good for me.

「Sorry...Everyone, I...」  
「What's wrong, Danna-sama?」  
「I'm going to do my best. I'll be a man suitable for everyone...!」

Misuzu and Nagisa looks at each other.  
Then, both of them look at Michi...

「Idiot...」

Nagisa kisses me...

「That's right...Danna-sama just needs to stay as he is」

Misuzu kisses me.

「Please trust us」

Michi also kisses me

「...I'm envious」

Ruriko said.

「Everyone...really trust each other...that's what a real『family』is, isn't it?...」

Ruriko speaks lonely.

「...Then, Ruriko-san should come here too!」

...Misuzu

「That's right...come in『Kuromori's』family too!」

...N-Nagisa?

「...Uhm, Nagisa...Kuromori family?」

I whisper to Nagisa...

I'm Yoshida.

I'm using『Kuromori Kounosuke』as false name now but...

I'm not『Kuromori』

「You should notice it already...」

Nagisa whispers to my ears.

「You already are a『Kuromori』...!」

---

## 253. Show → Skill

---

「You yourself is a boy abandoned by your real family...!」

Nagisa speaks in a slightly louder voice so Ruriko and others can hear.

「Therefore we became『family』!」

...Right. Me too.

Yuzuki...No, I was a child picked up by Kuromori Minaho

「Therefore...you should let us pamper you a lot」

Nagisa's plump body embraces me.

「That's right...Danna-sama, it's fine to depend on us more...!」

But...I

「Am I a suitable man to be loved by everyone?」

I don't have confidence.

...I feel horrified.

Suddenly...anxiety attacks me

「Geez, baka, baka, baka...!」

Nagisa tells me.

「You're always thinking too much...!」

I think too much?!

「First...we need you...when we feel sad, when our heart gets weak, we want you to be on our side...you do know that don't you?」

Nagisa speaks to me in her Sensei mode.

「Un...Of course」

I know that.



「Whenever we want you, you always come to us. When we want to be embraced, you always have sex with us...!」

「Un...that's absolute...I'll do anything Nagisa wants...!」

「...Really?」

「...Yeah」

Nagisa smiles.

「Then...try to depend on me when you feel lonely...!」

...Eh?

「You're going to listen to my request aren't you?」

Nagisa kisses me...

An adult...passionate kiss.

「I don't want to just keep clinging to you. There are times where I want to pamper you a lot too...!」

...Nagisa

「Danna-sama...Misuzu too」

Sitting naked on the carpet, Misuzu looks up at me.

「Please depend on Misuzu as well」

...I

「But...I don't know what to do」

How should I depend on my『women』

「My, it's easy...you should just be more upfront!」

...Upfront?

「If you want to embrace me then you can hug me anytime, anywhere. If you want to kiss then kiss me at that moment...there's no need to refrain. I am your『woman』...!」

「That's right...please remove the wall in your heart. Danna-sama, you're still being hesitant with us...!」

Both of them tells me.

「...Well, that's」

「What is it?」

Nagisa presses me.

...I

「Because...everyone's too beautiful...cute...gentle...you're all people better than I am...too good for me」

The emotions accumulated inside me begins to overflow.

「I'm the one wondering if I'm a suitable man for everyone...I've always thought of it...I wonder if I really can stand up to help everyone...」

The wall of my heart breaks.

The fear attacks me.

「I...wonder if I can really make everyone happy...!」

I'm uncertain.

「I've got to earn living expenses for Megu and Mana...but, can I do it? Can a man like me earn as much so they can live happily?...!」

The worries in my mind were released at once.

「Can I save Nei-san from the darkness of her heart? Can I be useful to Minaho-neesan? Won't I just be a drag to Margo-san?」

That's not all...

「Can I become the boyfriend Megu could be proud of? Can I become a good big brother to Mana? A good little brother to Nei-san?...As Katsuko-nee's brother?...As Nagisa's husband?...As Michi's master?...Can I be a good father to Mao-chan?」

「...Even Mao, you」

Nagisa holds her breath

「Can I be a partner Misuzu won't be ashamed of...?!」

No good, no good, no good.

I can't be more timid than this.

My mind's ringing the『danger』signal...

...Dammit

Like hell I'd lose here!

「No...I will. I have to. I'll be a respectable man Misuzu can introduce without being ashamed...!」

...That's right, I  
I can see the light in my heart.  
...It's no good to stay as Yoshida.  
I'll become『Kuromori』...  
I'll abandon Yoshida's miserable life...  
I'll be a『Kuromori』

「I will. I'll be Megu's best boyfriend. Mana's wonderful big brother. Nei-san's little brother. Katsuko-nee's little brother. Nagisa's husband. Michi's master. As Mao-chan's Papa...I'll definitely make it work...absolutely!

That's right...I...

「I already have a『family』...It's『Kuromori Family』! I'll never let it break...!」

I cannot lose.

「...Dear...!」

Nagisa embraces me.

「Sorry...we didn't understand how you feel...!」

「I'm very sorry...Danna-sama!」

The naked Misuzu stands up and embraces me from behind

「Thinking about us seriously with all your might...I never knew」

「...You accumulated it too much...!」

...Nagisa

...Misuzu

The two's words sink into my heart.

「...You're right...you're also just a lonely boy...a boy who's been alone, in solitude...suddenly dragged into this...you've been overworking all this time...!」

It's soaking in my heart...

I don't know why but tears come out.

「I...I...Nagisaaa...!」

The tears fell off.

「Even though you were also suffering...you accepted us who are hurt...  
desperately loving us...sorry」

I cry in Nagisa's arms  
Misuzu's hugging me from the back.  
It hurts I can't speak.  
I cried quietly without making any noise.

「It's okay...we're here for you...you'll never be alone anymore...we'll never let  
you be...!」

Nagisa embraces me strongly.

「...Danna-sama」

The naked Misuzu licks my tears from the back.

「...Misuzu?」

Misuzu smiled to the surprised me.

「Danna-sama's tears belong to Misuzu. Therefore...I will drink all of Danna-  
sama's tears. Just like how Danna-sama drinks my tears...!」

My tears stopped from what Misuzu said.

「Please don't think of everything heavily What I want is Danna-sama. It's no  
good unless it's Danna-sama. You just have to be by my side. Don't think about  
the public...if anyone speaks badly of Danna-sama, Misuzu will crush them...!」

Misuzu smiles gently.

「I'll beat up anyone who does that!」

Michi shouts

「Master...you're my only master for my lifetime. Please, punish me when I  
make a mistake...I want to be spanked by Master!」

No...spanking punishment you see...

That's just your fetish.

「It's no good unless it's Master...!」

...Michi

I see...then, I've got to punish her.

「But...I'm glad」

Nagisa smiles.

「You've opened up your heart to us」

...Eh?

「Yes...Danna-sama has shown us his true heart」

「Next time, when no one else is present...you can cry in my chest all you want. I will cry with you as well...!」

Nagisa says

「Ah, Nagisa-sama, that's unfair. Misuzu also wants to lick Danna-sama's tears...!」

Misuzu smiles.

「First...you don't have to think about money until you're an adult. You can just leave it to Minaho-san, Katsuko and me」

Nagisa said.

「...But」

「No Buts...Megumi-chana nd Mana-chan's living expenses will be taken care by us. You can just return the favor when you're grown up. For now, you just have to enjoy your high school life as much as you can」

「However...」

「I said no buts. Depend on your『women』 Besides...didn't we tell you this before but Katsuko and I stopped high school on the way, did we? That's why we want you to enjoy your high school life for our share as well. No...enjoy it. You should enjoy what you can for now...!」

「...Nagisa」

「Don't make that face...it's my happiness to spoil you. We're『family』after all...!」

...『Family』

「Danna-sama...you really will become a man suitable for Misuzu?」

Misuzu whispers behind my ears.

「Yeah...I'll do anything to be a man that can satisfy Misuzu」

「You already are filling me up with satisfaction...but if Danna-sama says so, then...!」

Misuzu smiles.

「Join Misuzu to the first class world」

...First class world?

「Yes...let's go to a prestigious restaurant and learn the finest cuisines. Learn the first class manners and behavior. Wearing first class clothing. Let's learn first rate music and arts together. Learn the first class culture. If not...you won't be recognized as a first class human by the first class people」

...I

「You'll do your best for Misuzu's sake, won't you?」

「Yeah...if it's for Misuzu」

Then I'll do anything

No matter what it is...

「Ufufu...Danna-sama!」

Misuzu rubs her cheeks on me

「I'm looking forward to it...Aah, I'll become even happier. Together with Danna-sama, we'll be even happier...!」

Why is me learning how to be first class『Misuzu's happiness』...I don't know  
But...It's fine as long as she's happy.

「What do you think, Ruriko-san?!」

Misuzu turns to Ruriko.

「My Danna-sama is like this. Truly pure, gentle, honest, has a sense of responsibility...he'll never betray those who he have accepted. He's like this

that's why I decided to be with him forever...!」

「Yes...I think so as well」

「M-Me too...」

Michi...that's a bit different.

But, I must be the only one who can be a serious master of this girl with a difficult personality.

I think I've got to take care of her for the rest of my life.

「Michi」

「...Yes」

Michi comes close

I pat Michi's head

「What's wrong? Master?」

「Nah...Michi's just so cute」

「...Yes?」

「Just let me pat your head」

「T-Then...please go on」

Michi said bashfully...

「Then...what about you Ruriko-san? Do you want to join in our『family』?」

Misuzu invites Ruriko.

「But...I」

Ruriko looks at her grandfather.

『Kakka's』looking at us with a gloomy face.,

「I must live as grandfather desires...」

Ruriko still think that she's under『Kakka's』control

It's not unreasonable.

She has been raised thinking that it's the natural thing to do.

「I was the same. Born as the daughter of Kouzuki house...I have always thought that I must devote this body to Kouzuki house, that i must follow Grandfather's will」

Misuzu speaks to her cousin.

「But...I was mistaken. My life isn't in Kouzuki...but with Kuromori『family』」

Ruriko-san listens to Misuzu's talk seriously.,  
『Kakka's』not moving, like he's overwhelmed.

「Of course...I still can't escape the curse that I was born in Kouzuki family.  
But...this『family』is with me, therefore I have the power to fight my fate」

...Misuzu

「Ruriko-san, come to us. Danna-sama and I...a lot of『sisters』are waiting for you  
The bond of our『family』is thicker than blood. Our『family』will never abandon you,  
Never betray you, We will help you no matter what happens. You no longer need to be alone」

Misuzu desperately solicits, but Ruriko.

「B-But...I have Yoshiko」

Yoshiko-san looks at Ruriko with a sad face.  
Misuzu...

「...Yoshiko-san can be free anytime after this. Yoshiko-san isn't under Kouzuki  
bloodline after all」

Ruriko's surprised.

「Yoshiko-san...if Ruriko-san gives her freedom, she can fall in love with  
someone she truly loves, even have a normal marriage...she's different from us」

Yoshiko-san is Ruriko's『retainer』in the end.  
She's not tied by the curse of Kouzuki house.  
If Ruriko releases her from her『Retainer』role...Yoshiko can freely love.

「But...I want to be by Ruriko-san's side all the time」

Yoshiko-san mutters in pain.

「I can understand Yoshiko-san's feelings but, reality...if Ruriko-san marries to  
a noble family, then you have to break apart」

If she becomes a bride on a house that's not Kouzuki...  
That house won't pick up Yoshiko-san, her attendant.  
In order to block the contact between Ruriko and the Kouzuki family...



The man who will be Ruriko's husband will try to lick her up in his house. Afraid that their house's private information would be flowing into Kouzuki house...

Moreover, Ruriko's husband will corner her so she can't rely on anyone but himself.

Later...he'll try to use Ruriko, his wife as a card to bargain with Kouzuki family.

「Of course...there are foolish men who will propose to Yoshiko-san only to gain connection with Ruriko-sa . However, Yoshiko-san can decide her own life. No...Ruriko-san must let Yoshiko-san freely live her own life...!

Ruriko looks at Yoshiko-san.

「...She's right. I have to free Yoshiko sooner or later...」

「Ruriko-sama...!!」

Ruriko interrupts Yoshiko-san...

「Yoshiko...I'm grateful for your loyalty. But, you're not from the Kouzuki lineage so you'll never be happy if you go along with my fate. I do not wish for that...!」

Ruriko's words made Yoshiko-san fall silent.

「We...just by living, will be used for the power relationship between Kouzuki family and other famous families. Therefore...I was unable to make a best friend since I was born. I wasn't even allowed to talk to men」

「Yes...That is the fate of the Kouzuki house's daughter」

「But, if this continues...we can't be happy」

Misuzu said.

「Therefore...I entered Kuromori family. I'm happy right now. I have someone I love. I have a family I can trust. I've got a lot of elder and little sisters. Everyone will be happy. In order to be happy, we're a『family』with one mind...!」

「...I'm envious of Misuzu-oneesama」

Ruriko said.

「Oneesama's courage...and a wonderful gentleman named Kuromori-sama... Kind people you can call your family...I'm really envious」

But...Ruriko rejects.

「I am the eldest daughter of Kouzuki house. I'm the head family's blood daughter. I can't possibly live like Oneesama...!」

...Ruriko

「I have already dedicated this body to Kouzuki house. I will live as grandfather tells me. I'll marry the man grandfather desires...and after marriage, I'll live as my husband tells me...!」

「Ruriko-san...then, that just makes you a doll!」

Misuzu shouts.

「Yes...a doll. I don't mind living as a doll」

Ruriko smiles sadly.

「In that doll-like life...Yoshiko and Oneesama has given me some human like emotions. I am grateful. Ruriko can live with that memory alone...!」

Ruriko...you

You're that willing to devote your life to Kouzuki family?

Throwing all of your human emotions...

「Are you okay with this...Shige-chan?」

Nagisa tells『Kakka』

「Is Kouzuki house that important? Even though you say it's a『house』...you don't have a『family』...!」

『Kakka』...

「That's right...Kouzuki house is different from an ordinary『house』 Although it's a huge system of complicated interpersonal relationship...we're not a『family』 Even if we're connected by blood, we never trust them truly. We're in a relationship where you don't know when you'll be betrayed. What binds Kouzuki house is『profit』...not the『trust』among kin」

Gloomy eyes...

「Therefore...Shige-chan picked up Misuzu and Ruriko-san from your sons, right? To make them your own『family』...!」

『Kakka's』eyes opened wide from what Nagisa said.

「...!」

「Ever since as a kid...until you owned Kouzuki house, you were always alone, aren't you? Shige-chan. You never had any friends to laugh together, right? Not even someone you can fully trust... Therefore, Shige-chan wants to be friends with his granddaughters...!」

Everyone in the room pays attention to『Kakka』

「When I lost my eldest son...when I lost the successor I raised with great care...everything became empty...」

『Kakka』mutters

「I see...it might be as Nagisa-kun says. I might be seeking『family』through Misuzu and Ruriko」

『Kakka』laughs.

「I see...that's why I wanted a girl not a boy. If it's a boy...then I'd just re-do the successor making again. My heart won't feel at ease. I've isolated them from other men because I want to make them『family』with only me. ...fufufu, fuahahahaha」

『Kakka』laughs at himself.

「What a foolish thing...Kouzuki Shigetaka is such a small caliber...!」  
「...I wonder?」

Nagisa asks.

「Seeing Shige-chan's human side...it makes Sensei very happy...!」

Then... Nagisa uses her last trump card.

「Hey...Shige-chan. Won't you enter our『family』...?!」

The air stiffens.

「How about becoming the grandfather of Kuromori『family』?...You can have a lot of cute granddaughters right now...!」

『Kakka』looks at Nagisa.

「You're intending to entice me?」

「Shige-chan...there's no enticing in our relationship is there? Sensei have seen Shige-chan's anus after all」

Nagisa smiles.

「Let me tell you beforehand...what we're only recruiting is only a grandfather role in our family. It's already decided that he'll be the husband」

『Kakka』glares at me

「But, it can't be helped you know? Shige-chan can't make it stand anymore... you can't be the『man』anymore. Actually, he's having it hard. He has to take care all of us」

「I know that. I saw it a while ago. This one really does his best...」

Though it's a word of praise...when『Kakka』says it, it's dangerous.

「In that respect, the grandfather's role is virtue. All you have to do is to cherish your granddaughters...!」

Nagisa continues her solicitation.

「We'll become Shige-chan's granddaughters. We'll depend on Shige-chan...be kind to you. Just imagine it...Shige-chan accepted in the『family』」

Nagisa smiles.

「Kuromori Minaho, Takanashi Katsuko, Katagai Nagisa will be Shige-chan's granddaughter. We'll yearn for Shige-chan without relation to gain or loss, we'll work for Shige-chan. Of course, he'll be the number one but we'll take care of Shige-chan second. Margo Starkweather, and Natou Nei will become Shige-chan's granddaughter. Yoshida Megumi, Yoshida Mana, Kudou Michi, Katagai Mao, all of the cute girls will be calling Shige-chan『Ojii-chan, Ojii-chan』...!」  
「...There's an uncute man going to be my grandson though?」

『Kakka』looks at me.

「There's no helping for that, he's the core after all. Besides...Shige-chan. Your cute Kouzuki Misuzu will come back as your granddaughter...!」

「Yes! If grandfather enters our family, then Misuzu will gladly welcome you!」

Misuzu also joins the solicitation.

「All of the granddaughters are welcoming Shige-chan」  
「Isn't that right...Michi?!」

Misuzu turns to Michi.

「Yes! I'm not that cute though」

『Kakka』speaks to Michi

「No, you're cute...as long as you're silent」

Michi turns red.

It seems she's happy that she's praised.  
She ignored the『as long as you're silent』part.

「Now then? What would you do...Shige-chan? We've almost forgotten about it」

Nagisa speaks.

「We'll show you all of our sex with him! All the videos」  
「There's also a video of Misuzu's virginity loss. Nagisa-sama has recorded it!」

Ah...speaking of which, that was recorded

「Afterwards...Misuzu will show all of the places where she feels it to grandfather!」

Misuzu said...『Kakka』...

「Somehow...I feel like I'm being deceived...hmm. It's certainly not a bad offer」

『Kakka's』mouth loosens.

「I know well what kind of people you are. It's a gathering of people that are trustworthy...above all, everyone's a beauty. Very well, I'll accept all of you as my『grandchildren』」

Nagisa rejects.

「That's not it, Ojii-chan! Ojii-chan is entering our『family』! We don't care about Kouzuki house!」

『Kakka』smiles wryly.

「...I get it, okay...then, please let me in『Kuromori』family」

「Yes, welcome...Ojii-chan!」

Nagisa replies smilingly

「Welcome...grandfather!」

Misuzu too...

「M-My best regards...G-Grandfather」

Michi also accepts『Kakka』

「My best regards」

I bow to『Kakka』

「No...I'm the newcomer here. I'm the one who should say that」

『kakka』tells me

Thus...『Kakka』has become a member of our『family』

「Then...Ojii-chan. You know what your grandchildren requests grandfather, don't you?」

Nagisa tells『Kakka』

「Ruriko-san...you said that you'll do anything grandfather orders...didn't you?」

Misuzu looks at Ruriko.

「...Hmm. Right」

『Kakka』looks at Ruriko.

「Ruriko...you too, join in the Kuromori『family』」

Ruriko's surprised.

「...But, grandfather」

「You're misunderstanding it...」

The grandfather calmly speaks.

「The future of Kouzuki house is trivial matter. I don't mind if I crush it. A house that's not functioning as a family...isn't a home」

Ruriko listens to her grandfather.

「But...the curse of Kouzuki house has been repeatedly put on you. You can no longer have a normal marriage. Even ordinary romance」

「However...I」

「If there is an option for Ruriko to be happy...it won't be in Kouzuki but jumping in Kuromori『family』 At least, you will be loved here, and there are people that accept you」

「Then...what will happen to Kouzuki house?」

『Kakka』looks at Misuzu when Ruriko asked.

「What do you intend to do? Either way...you've thought up of something haven't you?」

「Yes, we'll have Ruriko-san a『virgin queen』」

Misuzu answers.

「『Virgin Queen』is the nickname of Elizabeth I of united kingdom...」

「Yes...Queen Elizabeth of the 17th century didn't marry through her lifetime. However, she's been confined in the Tower of London when she was young, and there were a lot of gossips where she had a lot of favored retainers...There's no one that thinks that Elizabeth I is really a virgin」

「Elizabeth I didn't get married...it's purpose is an international strategy」

「Yes, Grandfather. They have shown consideration of marrying to the head of another nation multiple times...they have skillfully strengthened the position of UK within Europe」

「Just making marriage smell around...they built a dominance while keeping a sense of tension...」

「Yes...I think that strategy will be effective with Ruriko-san」

Originally...Ruriko is supposed to have a fiance decided by『Kakka』

But...nobody knows who it is

He himself doesn't know.

「Hmm...by just suggesting and rejecting who's Ruriko's fiance among them...we can stand in dominance」

「Then...we can buy some time」

Misuzu looks at Ruriko.

「I will hold the whole power of Kouzuki house. 30 years...if I can't, then 35 years. Late marriage is common nowadays so even if Ruriko-san marries until that age, nobody would make a complain. Until then, I will crush all of the fiance candidates severely...!」

Then...Misuzu will be the head of Kouzuki house...  
Ruriko will be freed from the curse of Kouzuki family.

「That's a good plan...I'll help you out」

『Kakka』said

「We will also help with all our power」

Nagisa said.

「Then...that's already done. Ruriko-san」

Misuzu corners Ruriko.

「Oh right. Ruriko-san, if you join in our family...you have to promise that you'll love only Danna-sama and bear only Danna-sama's child but...of course, you don't mind it do you...?」

Ruriko...

---



## 254. Ruriko opens up her heart

---

「I only follow what grandfather desires...」

Ruriko answers.

Her whole body's nervous...

That's not her sincere words.

「Un, a good answer. Then, you're with our『family』...!」

Nagisa says, but.

「Ruriko. I'm already old...I don't have much time ahead...!」

『Kakka』tells Ruriko

「...Grandfather, what are you talking about?!」

「It's the truth. I'm on an age where it's not strange if I collapse tomorrow...」

『Kakka』stands up and walks to Ruriko...

「You and Misuzu...your lives were twisted due to my selfishness. Forgive me」

「...Please don't say that」

Ruriko looks down sadly.

「I'm only worried about your futures after I die. But...I think that entrusting you to Minaho-kun is a good choice. She protects her relatives with her life. I'm sure she'll protect you two...」

Fufufu,『Kakka』laughs.

「Thinking about it...I've enjoyed going to Kuromori's mansion, I forget that I'm the head of Kouzuki when they entertain me. Nagisa-kun...Katsuko-kun...the women of Kuromori I've encountered a decade ago...everyone has accepted me only as an Erojiji」

「That is the founder, Kuromori Kounosuke's dying instructions」

Nagisa answers.

Minaho-neesan's grandfather...the founder of the high class prostitution mansion『Kuromori tower』, Kuromori Kounosuke 「We must never make a difference to the customers who come to the mansion. No matter what status they have, when they come to the mansion, they're only our『guests』...」  
「Umu...the world Kounosuke made was wonderful. That imbecile and the Shirasaka boy has destroyed everything...Minaho-kun did well in restoring it」  
「That is all thanks to Kouzuki-sama's help」

When Shirasaka Sousuke instigated Minaho-neesan's father...they caused a coup d'état on『Kuromori tower』and banished Kuromori Kounosuke  
After that, they did as they wanted...turning the mansion into a mess.  
Most of the old guests didn't come back to the mansion...it seems that Shirasaka Sousuke's perverted friends have hanged out for a while.  
What saved it was the intervention of『Kakka』  
『Kakka』calls back Morimoto-san who's the clerk of Kuromori Kounosuke that was driven away, sent in Kyouko Dothnomechey as the guard of the women... and selected Kuromori Minaho as one of the operators.  
Since then...the mansion managed by Shirasaka Sousuke's perverted route and Minaho-neesan's high-class restoration route.

「But...I never thought that I would be entrusting my own grandchildren to you」

Kakka laughs in self-ridicule.

「Please do not worry. Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama will never be a woman of the mansion...these girls are his『women』 My『little sisters』...」

Nagisa promises that Misuzu and Ruriko won't be a prostitute.

「I trust you. All of you aren't women who accepted their fate」  
「Yes We have fallen into a harsh situation because of fate...but we'll be happy. With him...!」

Nagisa looks at me.

Misuzu holds my hand and smiles.

Michi...I'm patting her long black hair.

「This kid...is the foundation of『Kuromori』?」

「Yes...he's the starting point of our happiness...and the end point」

I don't get what Nagisa and『Kakka』are talking about 「...Kuromori-sama」

Ruriko, gets off her chair and puts her hand on the floor having a gloomy face.

「I may be inexperienced but my best regards」

Her voice and hand are trembling.

It feels like she's being sold by her grandfather.

Suddenly entering the Kuromori family, and got sentenced to become my woman.

「...Ruriko」

I said.

「Yes...Kuromori-sama」

Ruriko looks up afraid.

「It's not Kuromori-sama...it's Onii-sama. I'm your elder brother」

Ruriko looks up at me.

「If that's what you wish...then I will call you that way...」

...That's not it

「I don't want you to be a female slave!」

I speak to Ruriko with a bit of anger.

「Y-Yes...I'm sorry. Onii-sama」

Ruriko's completely closing her mind

This can't go on

「Ruriko...stand」

I ordered.

「Y-Yes...」

Ruriko stands up timidly...

This 15 year old girl is still small.

Her beautiful skin is very fair.

But, she's got some parts swelling unlike the flat Michi.

Michi's like a Japanese doll beauty but...

Ruriko...

「Ruriko...you're beautiful」

I decided to just throw the words that come up in my mind.

「...Yes?」

Ruriko's surprised.

「Ruriko's like a shrine maiden. A sacred beauty with divine feeling」

Yeah...Ruriko's innocence is...

It shows a beauty of a shrine maiden.

「I am not a beauty」

Ruriko humbly speaks.

「I can only see you as a beauty in my eyes. You're really beautiful」

Ruriko's cheeks blush.

「...I'm hugging you」

「Eh?」

Before Ruriko could answer...I embrace her body.

Ruriko's body stiffens

「Are you scared of me?」

「...I am」

Ruriko murmurs.

「It's okay...Misuzu and Nagisa are watching. You have your grandfather...  
Yoshiko-san's here too. Michi's here. I won't do anything unreasonable」

Saying so...I pat Ruriko's black hair as I hug her.

Her smooth silky hair...I stroke her strained back.

「I decided to first hug Ruriko」

「...Onii-sama」

「Ruriko's beautiful...cute, that's why I want to embrace you」

I'm not doing anything but hugging and stroking her hair and back...  
Now.

If I try to kiss or touch her chest or butt...a strong rejection will come out.

「I'm jealous of Ruriko-san. I'd like to be embraced like that too」

Nagisa says.

「I'll do it anytime you want...Nagisa」

「Ufu...I know that you'll say that!」

「Ah. Me too...Danna-sama!」

Misuzu says

「I know...Misuzu」

Michi's staring this way

「Michi...you too!」

Michi smiles.

She's smiling like a puppy waving her tail.

「U-Uhm...Onii-sama」

Ruriko speaks to me.

「...What?」

「I-I'm already fine so please give it to the others」

I...

「Don't be ridiculous...Ruriko」

「...Yes?」

「It's your time right now」

I embrace Ruriko tighter

「But...how long will you hug me?」

Ruriko asks anxiously.

「Until Ruriko's convinced」

「...About what?」

「That I really think that Ruriko's cute...!」

Ruriko's surprised.

「To tell you frankly...I'm a man ignorant of the world. I'm not that smart. That's why I don't even know how amazing Kouzuki house is at all」

Or rather...I didn't even know it's existence until one week ago.

「Therefore...I can tell that the old man over there is an amazing person because everyone around him says that he is, but...I don't even know what he's amazing about specifically...」

Un...why is everyone listening to『Kakka』?  
Where does man of power's power come from?  
Is it『money』? Or『connections』?  
But, I don't get why you can use a lot of money as your power.  
Minaho-neesan should be familiar with it but...

「In short...I mean. I won't obey that old man's instructions」

I say clearly.

「If Jii-san has a point in what he's talking...if I think that's better then I might do as he say but. But, I'll never obey him just because he gave an order without even giving a chance to ask. Because...I'm unrelated to Kouzuki house」  
「...Unrelated to Kouzuki house?」

Ruriko's surprised.

「Un. I'm just an ordinary high school boy you can find anywhere. It's not that I'm thinking of entering a noble family or something. That's just stupid」  
「But...Onii-sama, Misuzu-oneesama's...」  
「I like Misuzu. I didn't like Misuzu from Kouzuki house...I like Misuzu, it just happened that she's a daughter of Kouzuki family. Of course, I'll support Misuzu but...I've got nothing to do with Kouzuki house you know?」  
「You don't think of ruling Kouzuki house as Misuzu-oneesama's husband?」

Ruriko asks in my arms.

「I've been telling you since earlier. I'm not that smart...I'm not suitable for it, I'm not even interested in it」  
「Then...what is Onii-sama's interests?」

Well...uhm

「How can I make everyone happy...or something like that」

「...What?」

「You see...I've been a loner until just a few days ago. My parents abandoned me. Thinking that I'm alone...I felt that everything and anything doesn't matter anymore. That's why I never made an effort to be happy when I was alone...」

...At that time.

In the dark house where no one else comes back...

I've been living in the sofa alone...

It hasn't even been a week yet it's so far in the past.

「It's different now. I have my『family』 I've got to work hard to make them happy. I can't be lost. I'm no longer alone. I've got a『family』I must make happy」

「...『Family』?」

I stare at Ruriko in my arms.

Once again...I look at this girl firmly.

Don't be swept away...do it properly.

If not...I'll be mistaken.

「W-What are you looking at?」

Ruriko says bashfully

「I'm just checking」

I answer

「—If I really do like you or not」

「...Onii-sama?!」

「I will be looking after Ruriko for the rest of my life. It's not because Kouzuki-san tells me. It's not because it was recommended by Misuzu or Nagisa...I've got to accept and like Ruriko by my own will...or it'll be rude to Ruriko you know?」

Un...Ruriko is—

Ruriko's cute.

Seriously cute.

Or rather.

「Ruriko...you're an amazingly good woman!」

Looking at her once again...No, even without looking at her again...  
Ruriko's really a beauty among beauties

「M-Me...a good woman?」

「Yeah...when it comes to beauties, Misuzu and Michi are also one but...Misuzu's pure and clean, you're really cute!」

「Y-Yes...thank you very much」

Ruriko's ears went red.

「You're also smart, kind...there's nothing bad at you at all」

「T-That's not true...there are dirty parts in my heart」

Ruriko says.

「I got it. Then, show me those next time」

「...Eh?」

「Ruriko's heart...includes that so I'll like it as well」

Ruriko's eyes open wide.

「O-Onii-sama...?!」

I embrace Ruriko's head.

「Yeah...it'll be fine. It seems that I really like Ruriko. I'll be able to do anything just to make you happy...!」

Finally...the『conviction』springs up in my mind  
Then, at the same time...I can feel the love from my other『family』members.  
The feeling of love causes an explosive chain reaction...!

「Misuzu...I love you! I'll make you happy!」

「Yes! Danna-sama!」

Misuzu replies immediately.

「Nagisa...I love you! I also love Mao-chan! I'll make you two happy!」

「We're already happy!」

Nagisa smiles.

「Michi! I love you! Make a lot of failures! I'll punish you until you're



satisfied!」

「Yes! I also yearn for Master!」

The puppy girl wags her tail.

Then...

「Kouzuki-san...to be honest, I don't know about nobles, bloodline, successor or anything! I'm not interested. But...I understand that you trully love Misuzu and Ruriko!」

I look at『Kakka』

「Therefore...I welcome you. Welcome! You're also now my『family』...!」

Once again...accepting Ruriko...

Everything seems to be objective.

Un...I can accept all of this situation.

All of it are okay.

「Hm ! I see...then I'll be your Jii-san...!」

『Kakka』answers

「Though your head works slow, you don't forget who you are. You don't neglect the effort to confirm your mind without being swayed by the situation. You're a man who can judge if you will give your consent to on the very limit」

「Yes, it's my Danna-sama after all...」

Misuzu answers her grandfather.

I look at Ruriko.

「Then...what about Ruriko?」

「M-Me...?」

Ruriko's puzzled.

「Ruriko...think about it and give me an answer. Is Ruriko fine with me? Do you want to enter our『family』?」

Ruriko looks up at me.

「You can't say that it's Kouzuki-san's order. Tell me Ruriko's real feelings」

「If, I...say that I don't want it...what will Onii-sama do?」

「Sadly...I'll give up at that time. That is Ruriko's choice. Ruriko should decide on how she should live her life...」

「Even if I become unhappy as a result?」

If Ruriko doesn't enter our『family』...

Ruriko's would be in mess in the middle of the succession struggle in Kouzuki family...

...I

「I'll do as much as I can...it won't change that I like Ruriko. I'll cooperate with Misuzu and others with all my best ...But」

「...But?」

「You're not in my『family』...so I won't risk my life for Ruriko's sake. I must first protect my 『family』before anything...」

I answered honestly.

「I feel relieved hearing that...Onii-sama is really an honest one...」

Ruriko tells me.

「Once again, I will ask...does Onii-sama like Ruriko?」

「Yeah...I like Ruriko」

Without any hesitation...I answered clearly.

「Ruriko...how about it? Do you like me?」

Ruriko...

「I don't understand it well. It's Ruriko's first time to talk with a man...」

I-I see.

She lived a life where love is unrelated.

「But my life...I'm convinced that I will be together with Onii-sama...!」

Ruriko...!

「Please stay by my side...I will enter Onii-sama's『family』...!」

This time...Ruriko embraces me.

「...You'll bear my child」

「...Yes, gladly」

I kiss Ruriko.

Trembling...Ruriko accepted my kiss.

「I...it's my first time doing this」

Ruriko said blushing.

The genuine innocent pure girl...

She'll be dyed to my color from now on.

「You'll have to challenge a lot of firsts from now on」

「Yes...my best regards, Onii-sama」

With this, Ruriko's become my『woman』too

「P-Please wait...!」

Yoshiko-san speaks up as she's unable to endure.

「P-Please...let me enter Kuromori-sama's『family』」

...Yoshiko-san

「Please take me as well」

...Err

What should I do with this?

「Yoshiko...take your time and think about it. You mustn't say something like that easily」

Ruriko speaks from my arms.

「Right now, you're being swept away by the situation」

「..... ! 」

That's right...Yoshiko-san.

Feeling that she'll be left alone...

Thus, she merely said that instinctively.

「Yoshiko...you're not longing for Onii-sama are you?」

「...That is...I will」

「Don't force yourself. You have a different option unlike Misuzu-oneesama and I...」

「There's no meaning to a future if I'm not by Ruriko-sama's side...!」

Yoshiko answered clearly.

「I'm thankful you say that but...as expected, you should think about it」

「...Ruriko-sama」

「It'll only be rude to Onii-sama if you say it as you are right now」

Ruriko's words pierce her『retainer』

「Yes...I'm sorry」

...I

「Let's stop deciding things in a hurry...Yoshiko-san」

I tell Yoshiko with a smile.

「Everything takes time to mature」

「...『Time-Enough-Love』」

『Kakka』mutters

「What is that, grandfather?」

Misuzu asks.

「It means『The time of love』」

The old man laughs.

「Now then...now that we've become『family』...Ruriko-san!」

Nagisa speaks to Ruriko.

「Y-Yes...Nagisa, Oneesama」

Ruriko immediately recognizes Nagisa as her『sister』...

「Yup, cute! I'll cherish you a lot!」

「...Thank you very much」

Embarrassed, Ruriko twists her body.

「Therefore...Ruriko-san, take off your panties!」

...What?

「Ah, I won't tell you to have sex right away so don't worry...let's keep the important parts when we have a better opportunity. We don't have everyone

gathered yet...」

Err

Then...why asking her to take off her panties?

「Since you've become his『woman』...I feel sorry if we don't teach you a bit about the women's pleasure」

Right...I only touched Ruriko's crotch on top of her underwear...  
She hasn't cummed yet.

「Dear...lick up Ruriko-san's pussy!」

Nagisa smiles at me.

「This time...make her reach climax!」

Un...that one.

「Ruriko-san's brave enough to enter our『family』...as her man, you have to properly reward her」

...That's how it is

「Shige-chan, you want to watch too, don't you?」

「Yeah, of course」

I order Ruriko

「Ruriko...flip your skirt. I'll take off your underwear」

「...U-Uhm」

Ruriko's white skin turned red until her ears.

「It's fine...trust me, I'll take care of your body」

I said

「...I'll make you feel good!」

Ruriko's frightened yet blushing...!i

---

## 255. Ruriko opens up her body.

---

「Uhm...L-Like this...?」

Ruriko raises up her skirt bashfully.

Ruriko's fair white legs becomes exposed.

「Ruriko's legs are so beautiful...」

I speak up my impressions...

「...That's not true」

Ruriko's cheeks blush again.

「...Even I feel that it's beautiful that's why I'm saying it, it's really beautiful...!」

I said...Ruriko

「Uhm...Sorry, Onii-sama」

「...About what?」

「For...taking consideration...」

Seriously...this one

「Ruriko...you don't know how cute you are...!」

「...What?」

As expected...she doesn't know it at all

「Ruriko...I think that your big eyes are cute. Your nose is well shaped too.  
Your small mouth is very beautiful... The shape of your ears too...!」

「Uhm...what are you talking about?」

Ruriko's puzzled.

「Your smooth black hair is also amazing. Ruriko's skin is so fair. Oh right...  
also」

I continue.

「I love Ruriko's voice. Your manner of talking as well...I like how you speak politely. On top of that, Ruriko's a girl who's firm to the core. Ruriko's personality is also very good...!」

Ruriko's looking down at me with her ears turned red.

「Why are you saying that far? Ruriko's embarrassed」

「I want you to have more confidence in yourself ...」

I tell her clearly.

「In my eyes, Ruriko's definitely beautiful, cute, and charming...!」

「...Onii-sama」

「You've got a lot of good parts you haven't noticed yet. From now on...every time I find one, I'll tell you...!」

Anyway...I'll just speak out all of Ruriko's good points and praise her. I'll make that policy.

Ruriko is shunned away the people around her for just being a daughter of Kouzuki house...

She's not even praised for her own merits.

I understood that during today's dance.

Therefore, first...I've got to praise Ruriko's good points.

「Please point out the bad places too」

Ruriko who's born as the daughter of Kouzuki family who's drawing attention from the world...she's been trained to have a low-profile attitude.

That's a merit on it's own but...

She's humbling herself too much even with the time with her『family』

「Of course, I'll say if you've got some bad parts too. But...there's nothing but good points in you now」

I want her to open up her heart more.

「I like the woman named Ruriko...!」

Rurko...

「...Thank you very much」

She answered in a small voice.

「Un...this legs are also the best」

I poke her raw legs with my fingers.

「Ah...W-What are you doing?」

「I'm just touching it...it's a really beautiful leg...」

「O-Onii-sama...ahn!」

I enjoy her squishy thighs...

「Hey...pull up your skirt more」

「Ah...Yes」

She pulls up her skirt timidly

Before long...a white cloth comes to view.

Ruriko's pure white silk panties...

With it receiving stimulation a while ago, it has a huge stain...

「Now...let's take off your underwear」

「...Eh?」

Ruriko looks at me anxiously

「It's fine. I know that this part of Ruriko's definitely beautiful...!」

「...That's not, true」

「It's fine... just take it off」

I take off Ruriko's panties.

Ruriko trembles.

「G-Go on...Onii-sama」

The 15 year old ass isn't yet meaty.

I pull down her panty beyond her ass.

I can see her pussy.

「Ruriko has some hair growing」

There's a thin pubic hair on top of her slit.

「Y-Yes」

Un...it's just a small bush but...

Ruriko doesn't need it.



「Ruriko...shave off this hair」

「S-Shave...?」

「Yeah, it's cuter if this part of Ruriko's slippery...」

I trace Ruriko's pubic hair with my fingers.

「Y-Yes」

「I'll shave it cleanly everyday」

「U-Understood...then please」

Ruriko...agrees.

Then...I look at her genital.

There's warm syrup dripping out.

「Ruriko, you're already this wet...」

「U-Uhm...I don't know why but...my stomach feels tight and hot...」

「It's fine...woman's body are made to be like this」

「Is that so?」

「Yeah...Ruriko might have an easier to wet constitution than other girls」

「Am I strange?」

「That's not true...rather, it's better if you're easier to get wet. It means that you're very sensitive...」

「...Yes」

「...Ruriko」

I look at the embarrassed Ruriko.

「What is it? Onii-sama」

「Your body's the best...I guarantee it」

「...The best?」

「It means that you're the best girl...here too」

I let my fingers crawl on Ruriko's slit.

「...Ah, ahn!」

There's love nectar dripping out from her slit again.

「Does it feel good...Ruriko?」

「I don't know」

Ruriko answered with her eyes turned hot.

「Then we'll do it thoroughly until you understand...」

I order her.

「Take a seat and spread your legs widely」

「...Y-Yes」

Ruriko takes a seat.

「Hurry up and spread your legs」

「No...Uhm...」

She's scared?...Ruriko's fidgeting

「Then, I'll open it up」

I stand in front of Ruriko...

Grabbed her thin and soft legs.

「O-Onii-sama...!」

「Here...I'm opening it」

I open Ruriko's body in front of me.

「...aah」

She turned her face away from too much embarrassment 「Look at me Ruriko」

「Y-Yes...Onii-sama」

Enduring the shame...Ruriko looks down at me with her legs spread open

「Then...I'll be licking this part of you」 You've got to look properly where I'm looking」

「...D-Do I really have to watch?」

「I want to carve it in your mind and body that nobody else but me would be licking it」

I said

「You're already my『woman』」

「...Y-Yes」

Ruriko's trembling

「Misuzu...hold Ruriko's hands」

「Yes...Danna-sama」

Misuzu holds Ruriko's right hand

「Misuzu-oneesama...」

「It's fine...I'll be here with you There's nothing to be afraid of. Danna-sama will just teach you the pleasures of being a woman

「...The pleasures of being a woman?」

「That's right. He'll make you feel with your whole body the happiness of being born a woman Misuzu smiles

「Yoshiko-san...hold Ruriko-san's left hand」

Misuzu tells Yoshiko-san

「Y-Yes... !」

Stunned as she watch Ruriko and I, Yoshiko holds Ruriko's left hand with both her hands.

「Here...I'm with you. Yoshiko-san's here with you too. Grandfather is watching over. There's nothing to be scared of...!」

Misuzu tells Ruriko kindly.

「Danna-sama as well...he'll never do anything that can hurt Ruriko-san's body. Drown in Danna-sama's love...!」

「Drown in love?」

「Danna-sama's love is that deep and big...!」

...Now, let's begin

「...I'm licking it, Ruriko」

「...Yes」

First, I place my lips in between her thighs.

「Hyaaan!...I-It tickles...!」

Ruriko's thighs are soft.

I wonder if women's feet have lower temperature than men...?

It feels chilly...it feels soft and pleasant on my tongue.

My tongue heads from her thighs to her genital.

I lick drawing a circle around the slit.

The pubic hair sticks on the tongue...

「I feel like I'm doing something very wrong...It's embarrassing」

Looking at her own secret part being licked...Ruriko speaks words of shame.

「Doesn't it feel good to do something you mustn't?」

「...Onii-sama?」

「It's fine to do a lot of bad things as long as it's with me. It's okay to be filled with shame...」

「That's...!」

「Being embarrassed feels good doesn't it?」

「But...but, god won't allow this...!」

Ruriko's body trembles.

「That's why let's keep it a secret to God」

I said.

「A secret with just the two of us...it'll feel good...!」

「...But」

Ruriko's reason is still resisting.

「Ruriko-san...God's love and human's love are different」

Misuzu said.

「...Human's love?」

「That's right. God won't lick parts where Ruriko-san would feel it, would he?」

Misuzu smiles.

「The love of flesh...the only one who can make Ruriko-san's body feel pleasure in this world is Danna-sama...!」

「Love of flesh?」

「Look, he'll fill you up with so much love...!」

...Now.

I jump into Ruriko's slit.

「Ah...aaaaah...!」

Ruriko's body curved.

She tries to close her thighs in reflex.

I suppress Ruriko's legs with both my hands.

My tongue is locked on Ruriko's secret part.

「Ruriko's juice is delicious」

My tongue tastes Ruriko's love nectar.

A sour taste...

「T-That's dirty...Onii-sama」

「It's coming out of Ruriko's body, there's no way it's dirty...!」

I crawl up my tongue in a way Ruriko could see.

「...T-That's not」

「Ruriko's body is sacred after all」

Un...Ruriko has the amorousness of a saintess.

A pure atmosphere of a shrine maiden.

「I'm not sacred...」

「I know...that's why, fall」

Ruriko's a girl who's been isolated for a long time.

As Kouzuki's daughter...on a height nobody could approach.

「Let me hold on your mind and body completely...!」

I turn my hand on Ruriko's ass.

I grabbed her soft butt tightly...and push her pussy to my face.

I can smell Ruriko's lewd scent in my nose.

「You're just a woman...a very beautiful and cute...you're my『woman』...!」

I peel her clitoris with my tongue.

「Hii...W-What?!」

Ruriko's puzzled from the shivering pleasure.

「...What a cute sound」

I attack Ruriko's small ruby colored nucleus with my tongue.

「Ah...aaaaah...what's this...?」

She must have never masturbated before.

Her pure flesh is being taught womanly pleasure.

I lick up, kiss, suck her clitoris.

「Iyaa...Onii-sama...please stop...stop this...!」

There's no way I would stop.

I use my tongue even more violently.

「Aaah...aaah...what's this...I'm scared...I'm scared...!」

Ruriko twists her body.

「...Misuzu-sama!?」

Yoshiko-san who's holding Ruriko's left hand looks at Misuzu anxiously.

「It's fine...there's no problem. Danna-sama is doing it gently」

Misuzu smiles at Yoshiko-san...showing that there's no problem.

「Aaah...aaah...please stop...please...Onii-sama...stop this alreadyyyy...!」

Like I'd give up that easily...!

「How does it feel Ruriko-san?」

Misuzu asks the third year middle school girl cousin.

「...I don't know...I don't know...my body feels so hot...it's twitching a lot...  
aaahn...Ruriko's becoming weiiiiird...!!!」

「It's fine to feel that way. That's what feels good after all...!」

Misuzu whispers on Ruriko's ears.

「Ruriko-san...say that it feels good」

「...T-That's...aaahn...aaah」

「It feels good doesn't it?...Being licked by Danna-sama...」

「...Ah...Ah...that's...aaahn...!」

「Admit it...say that it feels good」

Ruriko writhes in shame and pleasure.

Her bright red face leaks hot sighs...sweat beads leak out of her forehead...

「Look at Danna-sama. Danna-sama does his best to make Ruriko-san feels good...so speak your gratitude properly. Tell him, it feels good...!」

Ruriko's passionate eyes look at m,e.

「Aaahn...O-Onii-sama...I-It feels goooooood...!」

I begin to spurt when she said that.

「Aaaaaaaah...!」

Ruriko who's unable to endure it stiffens her whole body...  
Power enters the hands held by Misuzu and Yoshiko-san.  
It's soon...  
Her climax is close.

「...It feels good...! It feels goooooood!...Ruri-chan's feeling goooooood...!」

Ruriko degrades to infancy due to her first sexual pleasure...  
The grown up holy girl...is hiding a cute small girl behind her heart...!  
Dammit, so cute...Ruri-chan

「Aaaaah...aaaaaahn...Ruriko-chan's becoming strange...I'm scared, I'm scared...aaaaahn」

「There's nothing to be scared of...your beloved Onii-sama's doing it...leave everything to Onii-sama. It'll feel even better...!」

Misuzu's words sink into Ruriko's heart

「Aaahn...Onii-samaan...Ruri-chan's feeling strange...a white thing...a white light...it's coming...!!」

That's the premonition before climax...  
Squeezing the last amount of strength...I attack Ruriko's secret part.  
My tongue on her clitoris...  
Hands rubbing her thighs and ass...

「Aaahn...Aaahn! The white thing...the white thing is comiing!! ah...  
Aaaaaaaah! Iyaaaaa! Iyaaaaaahn~! Aaaaaaaaah!!!」

Her whole body convulses...

Ruriko's fluttering to her first ever climax!!!

I paint my face with her love nectar...

Embracing Ruriko's body drowning in ecstasy tightly.

I'm not stopping caressing her with my tongue.

「...Aaah...aaaah...Ruri-chan's flying...it feels goood!」

A woman's climax is unlike man's ejaculation, it'll continue for a while  
That's why...I continue the caressing for a while.

「Aaah...aaaah...aaaaahn!」

Before long...Ruriko's body that skyrockets brightly, falls down in the dark sea.  
The pleasure from the climax still goes on.

「...Haa, haa...haa」

Her heart must be beating fast.

Ruriko's breathing heavily...

Her eyes are melting...

Ruriko who's melting in pleasure...has been taken away from the solitude of not  
letting anyone come close to her.

Un...she's just a 15 year old girl.

A beautiful girl that's barely leaping.

「Ruriko-san...look at Danna-sama」

Urged by Misuzu...Ruriko's eyes look at me.

「...Does it feel good?」

「Y-Yees...O-Onii-samaaan...」

Ruriko seems to be unable to put on any strength on her body.  
She's sitting on the chair limply.  
The half of her heart is still drowning in pleasure.

「Michi...bring me a bucket」

Misuzu tells Michi

Michi's hands are inside her skirt...

She's still masturbating

She looks a bit tired out, did Michi cum?



「I think there's on one the basket over there...hurry up」

「Y-Yes...!」

Michi stands in surprise.

This room is originally a conference room for rent.

In the corner of the room, there's a hot water supply for making tea.

There's a container on the wall over there.

Surely, it should be for some cleaning tools.

Michi opens the doors where the cleaning tools are in.

「There's one!」

「Then bring it here...」

Michu hurriedly brings the bucket.

「...Danna-sama!」

I immediately understood Misuzu's intentions.

Ruriko's Misuzu's cousin.

They should have a similar constitution.

I take the bucket from Michi...

Then I enter in between Ruriko's legs.

「...O-Onii-sama...what?」

Ruriko who's still enchanted is staring at me absentmindedly.

「Here, Ruri-chan...it's peepee time」

I tell Ruriko like speaking to a small girl.

「Ruro-chan's about to cum right?」

When I say that...Ruriko...

「Un...you see, Ruri-chan's stomach feels throbbing...!」

As expected...she's still on infant regression.

The pleasure on her female genital for the first time since she was born...has changed to desire to excrete.

「I see...Then, let all of your pee out in here」

I tell Ruriko.

「Eh...Ruri-chan's embarrassed...!」

「It's okay. I've got a bucket with me...」

I hold the bucket firmly with my left leg and hand.

My right hand fixes Ruriko's posture...and I gently pat her stomach.

「Here...come out. It'll feel good...」

Ruriko who's in half-dreamy state...Is attracted to the word『feel good』

「Un...Ruri-chan will pee. My pee's coming out...!」

...Joro, jorororo.

The hot jet draws an arc from Ruriko's crotch, it hits the bottom of the bucket...

「Look...it feels good doesn't it, Ruri-chan?」

Ruriko...

「Un...Onii-sama, it feels good...Ruri-chan feels good when peeing...!」

At that moment...

The old man Kouzuki calls out his granddaughters with a deep voice.

「Hey, Ruriko...!」

Called out by her grandfather, Ruriko comes back to her senses.

「What...Ah, I...?!」

Then...

She noticed what she's doing...

「Iyaaaaa! D-Don't look! Please don't look!」

But still...her urination doesn't stop.

「No...show it until the end」

I order Ruriko.

「That's right...Look, Onii-sama's watching you over...!」

Misuzu smiles at Ruriko.

「That's...I...」

Ruriko looks at me.

「I can't be a bride anymore...」

She's trembling in shame...but her peeing doesn't stop.

「You don't need to be a wife. Ruriko's already mine...」

I tell Ruriko.

「It feels good doesn't it, Ruriko-san? I also always pee in front of Danna-sama」

Ruriko's surprised from what Misuzu said.

「...Misuzu-oneesama?」

「There's no secret with Danna-sama, not even your mind and body. No matter how embarrassing it is, shameful it is...our Danna-sama will be accepting it calmly. He truly loves us」

「...Love」

「If not...he won't have a bucket for Ruriko-san to pee on...!」

Right...Ruriko right now.

Is urinating on the bucket I'm holding out.

「...Onii-sama」

「Therefore, you can expose everything to Danna-sama. Now...Say honestly. Doesn't it feel good to have Danna-sama watch you pee?」

...Ruriko's looking at me.,

The urination...turns small...and stopped.

I've received it with the bucket until the last drop.

「...It feels good

Ruriko admits the pleasure in herself.

「Ruriko...does it feel good to be licked by me?」

「...It felt good」

「How about peeing?」

「...Yes, Onii-sama」

Ruriko's cheeks dyed red in shame.

「Let's do it again...I'll lick you anytime. I'll always watch you pee too.  
Everyday」

「That's right. Misuzu shows it to Danna-sama every time. Even sex, whenever I want it, he'll do it until I'm satisfied!」

Misuzu smiles.

「Sex hurts until you get used to it but...it'll feel a hundred times better than being licked!」

Ruriko's breath is taken away by what Misuzu said.

「But...everyday? I'd be troubled if it becomes a habit」

Ruriko answered shyly.

「It's fine if it becomes a habit...I'll be with you forever after all」

Ruriko looks at me seriously.

「Is that really true?」

「I promise...Ruri-chan」

Ruriko's back trembles from what I said.

「Aah...I...it feels my back shivers when Onii-sama calls me Ruri-chan...」

「When I'm with you...you're Ruri-chan. Okay, Ruri-chan?」

Ruriko raised her body.

Then, she kissed me herself.

「Yes...Ruri-chan wants to be loved by Onii-sama!」

...Un

This young lady's mind...is Ruriko's real hidden figure.

「...By the way」

I look at the bucket I'm holding

「What should we do with this?」

The bucket contains a lot of Ruriko's pee.

It made a plop sound.

「Hyaan, so embarrassing...!」

Ruriko twists her body.

「Un...Ruriko's pee smells...!」

---

## 256. Yoshiko's secret

---

「Here, Dear...wipe your face with this」

Nagisa hands me a small hand towel smilingly.

I put away the bucket on the floor for the time being and take the towel.  
Before I wipe off the love nectar and sweat on my face...

「Here, Ruri-chan...I'm wiping it off」

I put the towel on Ruriko's crotch.

「That's...Onii-sama, I can do it myself!」

Ruriko's embarrassed but...

「It's fine...let me do it」

「...Onii-sama」

「I'll be taking care of Ruri-chan from now on」

Without saying...I open up Ruriko's legs again and wipe her wet crotch.  
Gently...

「That towel is for Ruri-chan. Dear can use this one」

Nagisa handed me another towel

「Nagisa, how many towels do you have?」

When I asked, Nagisa...

「It's necessary when you have a small child. I always carry around three to four sheets」

...Right

「Got it...I'll do that as well」

「...Eh?」

「I'm Mao-chan's papa after all」

Un...Mao-chan's a clever child even if she's just three.  
It won't be a problem even if I bring her around.

「I'll also help out dropping and picking her up at the nursery. Or playing with her on the park. Nagisa has a shop to manage so just say when you need me」

Nagisa's moved.

「If there's something I need to do when I take care of a small child then just tell me...I don't have any younger siblings so I don't get it well」

I myself was neglected by my parents...  
Since childhood...I never had my parents play with me 「Un, un...thank you, dear」

Nagisa answers.  
Now then...I drop my eyes on the bucket.  
What should we do with this bucket filled with pee?  
The smelly liquid in the tin container is making splashing sounds.

「Should I throw it away...?」

Michi asks...

「No...it's fine. I can do it myself」

I lift up the bucket.  
Un...let's dispose it on that sink over there  
I carry it to the hot water installation...

「...There we go」

I throw away the pee in the sink.  
I twist the faucet and rinse the urine away.  
I also scrubbed the bucket.  
I also washed the sink properly...  
Yeah, that's good.  
It's clean now.

I washed my hands and wiped it with the towel Nagisa gave me.

「Ruriko-san...you see, I love that part of Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu tells Ruriko.

「Yes...Onii-sama's someone I respect from the bottom of my heart」

Hey hey, Ruriko...

「...You're praising me too much I just disposed the pee from the bucket and washed it off」

I put back the bucket on it's original place and go back to everyone.

「No, not everyone does that. If it was me, I won't clean it myself...」

Even『Kakka』says that.

「That's why Shige-chan's not popular with girls!」

Nagisa smiles at『Kakka』

「It probably is...he's much more human than me」

『Kakka』also tries to praise me.

「Stop that. Kouzuki-san has a lot of subordinates that do what you want, right? I am only doing what I can do by myself」

「...What you can?」

Ruriko's surprised.

「Isn't that obvious? Ruriko's already my 『family』」

It's normal to take care of your『Family』

「For him, that's normal」

Nagisa laughs.

「I am really being loved」

Ruriko said emotionally.

「Then...what do you think Ruriko-san?...Apart from your peeing, what's your impression on your first climax?」

Nagisa asks Ruriko smilingly.

「...Climax?」

「When he was licking your place...something inside your head exploded, didn't it?」



Ruriko's crotch is still exposed.  
...She's sitting on the chair limply.

「Yes. Somehow, I felt like my body's being wrapped in white light. It felt really good...but I'm a bit tired now」

Ruriko smiles.

「But, you feel refreshed don't you? After Danna-sama made you feel good, it feels like you can concentrate so much more whatever you do afterwards...!」

Misuzu says

「Ah, I can tell... Somehow, I feel calm...that I can do my best at anything right now...!」

Ruriko answers radiantly.

「That is the power of Danna-sama's love. For now, it was just licking...but try real sex soon」

「...Sex?」

「That's right, taking in Danna-sama inside you...and pouring in a lot of semen. That feels very good」

Misuzu smiles

「It'll hurt for a bit at first but you'll get used to it. Then, it'll feel good afterwards...Danna-sama's sperm being poured into your womb creates a very fulfilling emotion」

「Uhm...how often does sex needs to be done?」

「I...am doing it at least once everyday now. After Danna-sama embraces me, my skin becomes moist, I sleep at night well and feel refreshed waking up every morning. I feel like my body's getting more womanly...it's all good things!」

Misuzu said.

True...Misuzu's becoming more and more charming

「Can I do it too?」

Ruriko looks at my half erect penis.  
Well, I'm also naked all this time  
I've gotten used to be naked in front of my『family』

「It's fine. Ruriko-chan looks like she has a body that's easy to get wet...I don't think there will be a problem」

Nagisa said.

「But...I'm still just 15 years old...」

「My, Mana-chan's 14 years old but she's already having sex with him. Right?」

Nagisa looks at me...

「Un...Mana's going more than once a day. Since yesterday, she's the one that's asking for it」

The first was a forced rape and three consecutive creampie's...  
Before I noticed it, Mana seems to be the one that's leading.

「I'm envious...Misuzu also want to live with Danna-sama too. Then, we would be able to do it anytime...!」

Err...

Will my body be able to hold on?  
...If that happens.

「Ruriko-san, sex is something you do only when you want... Try to get used to it. Then, your body will continue to grow to an attractive figure worthy of giving birth to a baby...!」

Nagisa gives Ruriko another false knowledge.

「Ah...of course, you're only going to do it with him. You should never do it with anyone but him...」

「...I can't think of any other man but Onii-sama」

Ruriko answers with her cheeks blushing.

「I decided. I won't ever speak to men other than Onii-sama」

...Ruriko!?

「I am Onii-sama's property. Ruriko will devote her all to Onii-sama...!」

She looks up at me.

Ah...I get it.

Ruriko has the same blood as Misuzu...

She's also a masochist.

「Hey hey, are you saying you won't talk to me anymore?」

『Kakka』speaks in panic

Ruriko didn't reply to her grandfather but instead looked at me.

「Onii-sama...would you allow me to talk with granfather?」

She's already entrusting everything to me.

「Yeah, of course. She's our Ojii-san so it's fine to talk to him」

「Thank you very much」

『Kakka』feels a bit grumpy...

「Am I supposed to thank you here?」

「Shige-chan, don't be so jealous! Your granddaughter's favorability will go down you know!」

「Oops, that's not good!」

Old man Kouzuki closes his mouth.

「Also...when you need to talk to people you need to, like school teachers, or shop clerk, then it's okay to talk to other men」

If I don't tell her this...Ruriko's life might be hindered.

「Thank you very much. Our class only have elderly male teachers who are married and have children so please be at ease」

Un...I feel like Misuzu said that before.

The Japan's largest Ojou-sama school is thorough when it comes to that.

「Besides, I only shop on locations where there are only female staff. At school, I'm using a private car...I'll absolutely live in a way I don't have to talk to men. Onii-sama...I'll do my best to make you feel relieved」

...Well

Ruriko's originally been completely isolated from men thanks to『Kakka』

There's nothing much changed in her lifestyle this late.

「Yeah, got it」

「Ruriko will be living for Onii-sama's sake from now on...」

I need to fix the orbit just a bit.

「Then...become a more charming woman for me」

I order Ruriko.

「Ruriko...what do you think is a charming woman?」

「Yes, Onii-sama...let's see, always beautiful, always having a good sense of clothing, good at cooking and sewing...always kind to her friends...」

Ruriko's enumerating the elements of her own『ideal girl』

「Then, aim to be that girl. Think how you can be that kind of girl...do your best. For me...」

At start...it's fine to say『for me』

Surely, it'll benefit Ruriko.

「Yes, Ruriko will do her best for Onii-sama!」

Ruriko smiles cutely to me...

「...Please do not go ahead alone!」

Hearing a voice from the side, everyone got startled.

The source of the sorrowful voice is Yoshiko-san.

「Ruriko-sama...please do not leave Yoshiko!」

Yoshiko's completely crying.

「Yoshiko...I don't intend to abandon you」

Ruriko approaches her older『retainer』in panic

She holds Yoshiko-san's hand...

「Yoshiko will be staying by my side for a while longer」

「A while longer...?」

Yoshiko-san's surprised.

「Yoshiko's already at third year high school...in 18 years of age. It's about time you part from me and prepare to be a bride」

Ruriko seems to have made up her mind to be my 『family』

She'll release Yoshiko-san.

「I don't want that. I don't want to be married to some other house. I'd like to serve Ruriko-sama until I die」

Yoshiko-san desperately pleads.

「I'm really grateful for what Yoshiko said but, you're someone in a different standpoint than myself. From now on, Misuzu-oneesama and I...have to fight in Kouzuki house. I don't want to involve Yoshiko who's not in the same bloodline to fight...」

Yeah...Ruriko's become our『family』and yet...

The problem on the succession competition in Kouzuki family is greatly involved.

Misuzu and Ruriko...are being targeted by the clans and executives who are aiming to be the successor of『Kakka』

Everyone are trying to marry their sons and kins to Misuzu and Ruriko.

That's why...in order to evade their expectations, Misuzu and Ruriko collaborates...and becomes Kuromori's『family』

But...Yoshiko's not a relative of Kouzuki.

There will be someone who will try to aim to connect with Ruriko through her but...

She's allowed to marry the person she likes and try to build a happy family.

「Please don't say that...Yoshiko, Yoshiko is...」

Yoshiko-san cries like an abandoned puppy.

「Grandfather...I have something I'd like to ask」

Misuzu looks at her grandfather

「...What is it?」

「It's about Yoshiko-san's birth」

...Misuzu?

「There are rumors that Yoshiko-san is grandfather's illegitimate child」

Right.

There's that rumor...

「Please tell us the truth...」

If Yoshiko-san has a Kouzuki blood in her as well...then it'll be a different story  
「...Misuzu, Ruriko...and Yoshiko」

The old man Kouzuki looks at the three girls.

「Let me tell you the truth...that rumor is false. Yoshiko isn't my daughter」  
「...Oh」

Yoshiko-san suddenly falls discouraged.

「Yoshiko...is the daughter of the secretary of my eldest son, Shigeharu...!」  
...Does that mean?

Then, Yoshiko-san is Misuzu and Ruriko's cousin?

「As I said earlier...Shigeharu and his family were killed in US. Yoshiko was in her mother's womb back then. Shigeharu made a move on his young secretary. If Shigeharu had lived...I might've ordered her to abort you. But, I want to leave the last child Shigeharu left behind in this world. Therefore...I let Yoshiko's mother be taken care of my trusted subordinate, Komori Youzo, and register her as the daughter of that family」

「Then...who's my real mother?」

「The person Yoshiko thinks her nanny is her real mother」

「Hiromi-san is my mother...?!」

Yoshiko-san's surprised.

「That's right. Yoshiko...you're definitely my granddaughter. I've done DNA tests after you were born. It proved that you're Shigeharu's daughter」

Ruriko holds Yoshiko-san's shoulder.

「Yoshiko's also my sister!」

「Yoshiko-san... !」

Misuzu's also pleased with the truth.

「But...if the third successor candidate appears, it would confuse the Kouzuki house. Furthermore, Yoshiko's an illegitimate son of the deceased. If the truth comes to light, I don't know how she'll be seen by the public」

『Kakka』said bitterly

Do illegitimate children have such a weak standpoint?

The father that could protect her is already gone from this world...the possibility of the power game inside Kouzuki house turning to a mess is very high.

「Fortunately...Yoshiko's adoptive father is a loyal man. No matter how someone investigates thoroughly, it'll become an unmovable fact that Yoshiko is Komori's daughter...it worked thoroughly. Therefore, Yoshiko's not bound in Kouzuki house」

Even if it's true that she's the illegitimate child of Kouzuki Shigeharu...it'll not be known by the public...

Yoshiko-san can choose her own life freely.

「You can live as you want. If it's money, I'll give you no matter how much it is. If you want to study I can let you even study abroad. If you find a man you like, then you can buy him out and marry him...」

Kouzuki old man tells his third granddaughter.

「I...I just want to stay this way」

Yoshiko answers.

「I'd like to serve Ruriko-sama as her『attendant』...! That's the destiny established on me」

...I

「Yoshiko-san...you shouldn't set your heart like that」

Yoshiko-san looks at me

「"This is absolute"..."It must be so"...or "it's fate"...that's just a mere belief」  
「...What do you know?!」

「Yoshiko-san throws her anger at me」

「All of it...I just had that philosophy in life turned over just recently...」

I look at Yoshiko-san with serious eyes.

「I...just a week ago, I've been convinced that my life is already gone, that I am nothing」

That's right.

In that dark and cold house where nobody comes back...

Alone in the sofa, waiting for the morning to come.

「Therefore, calm down...you should take your time to think about it reasonably」

I look at Misuzu and Ruriko.

「Both of you, give Yoshiko-san some time to think. Don't push your own opinions to Yoshiko-san Even if you think that it's for her, that will only bother her」

「Yes, Danna-sama」

「I'll do as Onii-sama says」

Both of them approved my prompt decision

「Kouzuki-san too...please don't continue the topic any further Even your rational suggestions are just confusing Yoshiko-san right now」

「...Got it」

『Kakka』consents

「Yoshiko-san too...no matter what future you chose is your own freedom, please think about it with calmly. It'll be fine. No matter what kind of conclusion Yoshiko-san makes, Ruriko will never forsake Yoshiko-san. Ruriko and Yoshiko-san's bonds are the same as ever. I promise you that...」

「...Kuromori-sama」

Yoshiko-san calms down a bit, she looks at me.

「I don't intend to take Ruriko away from Yoshiko-san. Ruriko won't abandon Yoshiko-san just to go to my place. My relation with Ruriko and your relationship with her are completely different things. Be at ease...!」

「Yes...I'm sorry for losing my composure」

Yoshiko-san bows her head to everyone.

「Then, let's keep this case on hold for a while」

『Kakka』tries to conclude the talk.

「But, even though you look like a normal kid, you can make a perfect judgement as a『coordinator』」



Old man Kouzuki tells me.

「I'm trained everyday after all」

I said laughing

「...I see」

『Kaka』smiles

「Then, let's leave it as that...for the time being, there's no other problem that needs to be solved now, is thee?」

Nagisa confirms.

The conflict between『Kakka』and Misuzu have already been resolved.

My relationship with Misuzu is already allowed...or rather, Ruriko and『Kakka』have entered Kuromori『family』

The problem of Yoshiko-san, well, she'll take time for it so we'll put it on hold.

Umu...there's no urgent problems.

「Ah, there's one urgent problem...!」

Misuzu tells Nagisa.

「Eh, what is it?」

I ask Misuzu...

「...Michi!」

「Yes, Ojou-sama...!」

Michi erased her presence and heads to the door to the next room  
...What is she doing?

「..... !」

Michi suddenly opens the door.

...Wait?!

Clinging on the other side of the door is...Seki-san, Fujimiya-san and Mao-chan...  
They rolled down to this room.

「...Uwa!」

「...Arara」

「...Arerere?!」

The three of them rolled on the floor.

「...Were the three of you listening?」

Misuzu smiles

...Eh?

...S-Since when?

「...Ehehehehe!」

Mao-chan laughs rubbing her head

「I-I...」

Fujimiya-san is shaken as it's known she's eavesdropping.

「I'm not listening as attentively as Fujimiya-san...!」

Seki-san tries to put the blame on Fujimiya-san

「Seki-san is the one who put her ears on the door!」

Fujimiya-san desperately tries to impose the crimes on Seki-san 「Sorry, Mao did it...」

...Mao-chan?

「You see, Mao said that Onii-chan and others are definitely doing lewd things, so I asked them to listen secretly!」

So it was Mao-chan's idea.

Instigated by a little girls...the ladies joined in the eavesdropping?

「My...Seki-sana nf Fujimiya-san are interested in lewd things that much?」

Misuzu blames the two guards

「That...you see」

「It's not that I'm interested...Fujimiya-san...」

「Isn't Seki-san the one listening excitedly...?!」

...These two

Are they on good terms or bad terms?

「Then...where did you hear this from?」

Misuzu asks

「Just now, in this room we are talking a very important and confidential topic that would decide the future of Kouzuki family」

The two are tense

「That's you see」

「Oh, if I recall, it's around where Yoshiko-sama is Kouzuki Shigeharu's memento. Isn't that right, Fujimiya-san...!」

Seki-san...that's a lie

Besides, isn't that just the conversation from a few minutes ago?

「You see...it's when Mama calls Kouzuki-san『Shige-chan』...」

...Mao-chan

Isn't that quite a long time ago?

「Also, Onii-chan and Misuzu-san's lewd voices...and that Onee-chan's lewd voice, we've been listening all this time! Ehehe1」

My sex with Misuzu too...

Ruriko's climax as well...they've heard everything

「...I-It's embarrassing」

Ruriko's face is dyed red.

「Uhihi...Hey, Ruri-chan!」

Mao-chan smiles at Ruriko

「Can Mao call Onee-san Ruri-chan as well?」

Ruriko looks at me.

I nod..

Mao-chan is our family too...

「You can...!」

「Get along with Mao-chan okay」

「Yes...my best regards」

「I also became Mao-chan's Ojii-san...!」

『Kakka』approaches Mao

「Here, let me carry you」

Kouzuki old man tries to carry Mao-chan but...

「Ojii-chan, your mouth stinks!」

Mao-chan runs away from『Kakka』and head towards me.

「Onii-chan, carry me!」

Having no choice, I carry Mao-chan.

Ah...『Kakka's』frozen

Fight...do your best.

「Sorry. I'll find some good deodorant for dentures for Kouzuki-sama!」

Nagisa says but...『Kakka's』not coming back

The damage of the young girl is deep...

「Now then...Seki-san, Fujimiya-san. You two knows a secret you shouldn't know about...!」

Misuzu tells the two.

「The two of you can't go back」

The two look at Misuzu in surprise.

「We'll accept any punishments...」

Fujimiya-san bows her head

「Hey...Fujimiya-san」

Seki-san panics

「Forgetting our duty as a guard...we've eavesdropped the secret of our lord because for our own interest. We no longer have a choice but to apologize by dying...」

No...why do you have to die?!

「No way, I don't want to die like this!」

「Then, I will assist you」

Fujimiya-san grips her beat to death stick...

Seki-san has also entered a repelling stance...

「I'd prefer not to get killed by you! My beauty would just be crushed by that

stupid stick1」

「Then, I'll destroy it to the extent you can't keep your original form!」

The two of them stare at each other...

「Stop that...I didn't order anything of that sort...!」

Misuzu speaks with the dignity of the successor of Kouzuki house.

「Ha, I'm sorry」

Fujimiya-san prostrates.

「S-Sorry. I'm sorry」

Seki-san lowers her head.

「By the way...let me ask you two」

Misuzu said

「Both of you...are still virgins, aren't you?」

---

## 257. You did it, Reika-chan! The family's increasing!

---

「W-What?

Seki-san's puzzled as Misuzu suddenly asked if they're a 「virgin」

Fujimiya-san looks up at Misuzu silently

「...I'm asking if the two of you are still virgins...!」

Misuzu asks again with her absolute ruler's dignity

「U-Uhmwell...I think that Fujimiya-san's a virgin anyway but...I-I...!」

Seki-san says in a squeaking voice...

What's with this strange tension...

「Oh, as expected, Seki-san's a virgin as well」

Misuzu smiles...

「I've been raised on an all girl's school all this time so my nose is effective on this kind of thing. Seki-san never had any relationship with a man before...!」

「Eh...that's...you see」

Seki-san becomes flustered.

「Seki-san...is too excellent and she has the『person who missed the opportunity to love men』atmosphere」

So she can tell that?

「...Ahahaha, ufufufu...ehehehehe...!」

Seki-san tries to gloss it over by laughing.

Her beauty is messed up.

「Seki-san...you left the university and studied abroad, you never had any experience do you?」

Fujimiya-san laughs at her colleague.

「...Well, men are just idiots...all of them are just avoiding me...!」

Seki-san answers angrily

「Even though they're inviting other girls to a date...nobody called me out...!」

Is that so?...Well, in Seki-san's case, she's too intelligent and her martial arts is strong as well.

No matter how beautiful she is...she's an existence men keep their distance away.

「That's because Seki-san learned in a school with all smart people」

Fujimiya-san said coolly.

「Fujimiya-san...what do you mean by that!?」

「If you were in a school with boys on lower degree...they would definitely attack a beauty like Seki-san without any pretense」

Instead of fujimiya-san...Nagisa answers.

「Those boys knows from the beginning that they won't match Seki-san in studies and in athletics. There's a lot who think that those who yearn for Seki-san are those who don't have anything to lose」

「On the contrary...there would be some bastards who will try to obtain an unobtainable flower like Seki-san even if fooling her」

Fujimiya-san adds.

「But...Seki-san's university, and abroad are only filled with the top elites. For men in those places...Seki-san is more like a pain in the butt than a rival」

Fujimiya-san laughs.

「The elites with promising future are men with ability...they've got pride. Seki-san is an existence that hurts their pride...」

「Even after joining in Kouzuki security service, there wasn't anyone coming for you, was there? Is there any man in the company more capable than Seki-san?」

Nagisa asks

「Seki-san is on the top three best security guards of Kouzuki security service, one of the three personal guards of Kouzuki-sama」

Fujimiya-san answers.

In other words...everyone else are in a lower position than Seki-san

「Furthermore...Seki-san has climbed up to that position in only half a year after joining in」

Oh, Seki-san's ability is outstanding.

Looking at her like this, she's an interesting lady.

The changes of her facial expressions are very pleasing.

「What about the two other guards...?」

「Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san...only likes men」

Fujimiya-san answers Nagisa's question

...Homo? They're Homo?

「Both of them are deeply in love with each other. The two of them are always teamed up...the men in the company tries not to get close to Seki-san as much as possible」

Seki-san explodes from Fujimiya-san's explanation.

「Aaah, enough! Either way, I'm a woman that's not popular!」

Seki-san gets angry at someone who should be the one that's angry.

「Who cares about me! What about you Fujimiya-san!」

...Fujimiya-san

「...I am a woman with a sword all this time」

That's why she's a virgin?

Or rather...that's somewhat cool

「That's not a sword! You beat up woman!」

「That's rude! This is a sword for me!」

Fujimiya-san holds her cane.

「For the line of swords...Men are only opponents!」

「As for me, I try to keep the men away from me!」

「My, you say it! That's why you're always wearing that strange outfit?」

「British hobby is the main theme of my life!」



Anyway...Fujimiya-san seems to be also the type that's avoided by men.  
Even if men tries to invite her to a date...  
Fujimiya-san appears to be a gallant English gentleman...  
A woman who dresses better as a man than men...  
Un...it's hard to walk with her.  
But...

Both of them are amazing beauties...

What a waste of a combination

「Yes yes, don't fight...it'll become troublesome」

Nagisa stops the two

Yeah, these two won't be handled well if it's not Nagisa whose on the same age.

「Right...I shouldn't be dealing with her right now」

Fujimiya-san looks at Misuzu

「Misuzu-sama...what does it mean to ask if we're virgins? Surely...」

Fujimiya-san's glance turns from Misuzu to me.

「Are you going to order us to be Kuromori-sama's『women』too?」

Seki-san's surprised.

「Eh...W-W-What's that?!」

Misuzu smiles.

「I won't tell you two to suddenly just join our『family』 We don't even know if Danna-sama loves the two of you...we also respect your will. However...could you become our ally? Not our subordinate or vassal...our ally」

Misuzu solicits the two

「...Ally?」

Seki-san doesn't seem to understand what it meant.

「Yes. Both of you were eavesdropping so you already know but...I will be fooling all of the executives of Kouzuki family...and will have to put all of Kouzuki house into my control. Of course, grandfather will be cooperating with us but...we still don't have enough allies」

「If Kouzuki-sama orders...then I will follow Misuzu-sama though?」

Fujimiya-san tells『Kakka』

Fujimiya-san's a samurai at heart.

She'll definitely follow her lord's order.

「No, what I need is not a vassal. An ally. I'd like the two of you to be our allies by your own will」

「Why?...I am the same as Fujimiya-san, I'll follow if I'm ordered」

Seki-san asks Misuzu curiously.

Even though they'd obey when ordered...why purposely ask them to be an『ally』?

「It seems that I'm lacking in words...sorry. I...no, our『family』doesn't need vassals. Our family shares the same destiny. Therefore we all cooperate to become happy」

「Happy?」

Fujimiya-san speaks muttering.

「Yes...me taking over the Kouzuki family isn't a manly ambition. That's what's needed for Ruriko-san and I to become happy...so we'll do it. Of course, when I become the owner of the Kouzuki group, I'll try to work hard to make everyone involved with the Kouzuki group to be happy. I promise that」

Misuzu speaks with a serious face.

「What we seek is only a happy life. We want to be living where we can trust each other, laugh, and live in peace with our family. There's no vassal in there. If those people accompany us...we have to be always careful」

Un...I feel like I can understand

「Misuzu...you knew they were eavesdropping from the start」

『Kakka』smiles

「The lord must always observe their subjects. However...at the same time, it means that your subjects keep watching you as well. That's the basic of master-slave relationship. Inside this room, there is a conversation related to the secret of Kouzuki family...even without Mao-chan's instigation, the two of them will

try to eavesdrop. If you're a guard, it's a matter of course...

I see, in the confidential talk...『Kakka's』priority in of Misuzu and Ruriko have changed...

It'll affect the『Guard's stance』in the future.

The priority level of subjects to guard in case of emergency might change...

There's a possibility that a new subject for guarding to increase.

Seki-san's an elite top that's already anticipating『Kakka's』will, taking the initiative and taking the most optimal guard stance.

Before『Kakka』orders her...she must know...she must act.

She can do the best at her job that's why she's a top elite.

That's why...it's normal for her to eavesdrop in the conversation in secret.

「Knowing that they're eavesdropping...on top of that, they're just guards, they knew something that they shouldn't. Everything was all in your plan」

Misuzu intends to bring these two as our allies from the start 「Yes... grandfather. What the two have learned are only serious matters concerning the Kouzuki family. They know things far beyond just a vassal, just a guard knows」

Un...My relationship with Misuzu.  
With Ruriko.

The plan to hold Ruriko as the Virgin Queen and Misuzu holding the full authority of Kouzuki family.

Old man Kouzuki entering the Kuromori『family』

Yoshiko-san's secret.

All of them are confidential topics that must not be leaked outside.

「Misuzu-sama...you have deliberately let us listen to all of the secrets?」

Seki-san asks.

「Yes. I believe in you two after all...!」

Misuzu smiles

「...Thank you very much. Misuzu-sama」

Fujimiya-san thanks Misuzu...  
Then, she sends Seki-san a glance...

「I don't know about Seki-san but...」

Fujimiya-san looks up at Misuzu.

「I will become Misuzu-sama's ally. I don't know if my power will be useful but, I will work all my best」

The swordswoman smiles.

「Hey, Fujimiya-san...are you sure with that?」

Seki-san's puzzled.

「There's nothing bad about it. Misuzu's plan is in the end...change the Kouzuki house into an『empire of women』isn't it interesting? It's got some romance in it」

Fujimiya-san tells her colleague.

「To be honest...I'm somewhat bored recently. Even if I make my way up in the martial arts road, there's no other road beyond the Japan's top elite guards from Kouzuki security service. However, I don't want to be a self-defense officer nor a police officer bound by the state...Since I don't want to commit murder, I can't come to military affairs in another country. Because my body knows the tension of actual combat, I have no intention of coming back as an athlete anymore, I'm not suited as a leader. I'm worrying about how should I live my life in the future」

Seki-san's surprised from what Fujimiya-san said.

「You were thinking about that?」

「...Yes」

「That's...even though you're not on the top elite guards, saying something so arrogantly!」

「Seki-san...so you think that being the top elite guard is the highest point?」

Fujimiya-san asks unexpectedly.

「Isn't that obvious?! It's the role where you protect Kouzuki-sama the closest!」

「Then...do you think that the people suited for that mission are chosen?」

「Don't say stupid things!」

Seki-san seems to have a pride on being a personal bodyguard 「Sorry...Seki-kun」

『Kakka』speals up

「...What?」

「It's about the reason why I chose you as my personal guard...」

W-What?

「The guard in the company before you arrived was a young man」

「...Yes. I've heard about it. It's said that he resigned due to a problem」

Seki-san answered.

「That young man didn't have the problem...the problem lies with Ootoku-kun and Choumoto-kun」

「...Ha?」

Look...both of them are homosexuals you see? Both of them are paying attention that young man...」

...W-What?

「Then, that young man was unable to endure...he resigned 『I can't endure having my ass be touched while on duty』...he said」

A homo's sexual harassment?

「But...Ootoku-kun and Choumoto-kun are big names as guards, in fact, their ability is very high. On top of that, because their homo...they're not ogling on women I favor... No, there was an incident in the past. An incident where my guards talked to a mistress of mine...that guard went to the bottom of Okhotsk sea. Since then, I've chosen either a Homo or a female guard as much as possible. In cases I can't pick a homo, I try to pick a man with ugly looks as much as possible. But...I never thought that Ootoku-kun would still have his eyes on such an ugly man」

Seki-san's eyes turned to a dot.

「Then...I was chosen next to him?」

「Un. Although there's the opinion that you just joined in half a year ago...I never found any woman who could deal well with Ootoku-kun and co. If it was

Fujimiya-san, they'd absolutely fight...!」

Yeah. The two homo and a my pace English crossdresser...they're not matching.

「Besides, you're beautiful, skilled in French and German as well. It always helps me out」

『Kakka』says, Seki-san...

「Hahaha...T-Thank you very much...」

Seki-san's pride is beaten up...she's heartbroken

「Of course...your skill is highly appreciated. I do」

No『Kakka』...It's too late to give a follow up

「Uhm grandfather?」

Ruriko asks.

「What does Homosexual mean?」

...Err

「Ruri-chan...I'll teach you that later」

「Yes, Onii-sama Then, please teach me later...!」

Ruriko smiles purely.

...Is this okay?

Should I teach this child that?

「Ah, I know more so I'll teach you properly!」

Nagisa nominates herself...

I'm sure she'll be teaching another false knowledge...

It's better than clouding this pure eyes...

If I explain it, it'll become harsh

「Then, please do, Nagisa」

「Yes, Dear」

That's when Mao-chan comes in...

「Mama, teach Mao too...!」

「Not now Mao-chan...I'll teach you it when you get bigger」

「Eh, why?」

「It would be troubling if you awaken to a strange hobby at this age! For now you can't!」

「Mumuu! Mama's stingy!」

...Err

「...Mao-sama, come here」

Michi embraces Mao and pats her head

「You'll grow up soon...」

Yeah...somehow

Michi feels like she'll be a good mother.

「Now then...let's go back to our topic」

Fujimiya-san said...the attention of this place returns to her.

「...I will become everyone's ally. No, please let me be your ally. I would like to participate in Misuzu-sama's plans」

Fujimiya-san said clearly.

「There's only one condition for me...please do not associate with men that's not our ally. Women...especially virgin are weak to men who tries to associate with them. We would like to avoid the crisis of our secret leaking out」

Misuzu said.

「I don't mind...I never met a man who I would like to devote this body of mine... I think there will be none in the future」

Fujimiya-san answers.

「Also...you can always enter the『family』from being an ally. Fujiiya-san, if you wish for it then—」

Miuszu smiles gently.

「That's...if I recall it has a condition to have sex with Kuromori-sama and bear his child isn't it?」

「Yes...it's a rule to become Danna-sama's『woman』 To promise that you won't

love any other man in your life」

Fujimiya-san looks at me.

「But...should you not only ask me but also Kuromori-sama's feelings?  
Kuromori-sama probably doesn't like a violent woman like me?」

Misuzu answers.

「That's not true. Danna-sama likes people with straight personality like  
Fujimiya-san」

...What?

「Isn't that right...Danna-sama?」

...I

「U-Uhm...I think that Fujimiya-san is a very beautiful lady. I don't think of you  
as a violent woman」

Can't be helped, let's just answer honestly.

「...Is that true?」

「I won't lie about this」

Fujimiya-san looks at me.

She thought for a bit...then said.

「Very well...I'll become Kuromori-sama's『woman』 I'll join in everyone's  
family...!」

Fujimiya-san answered with a serious face.

「H-Hey, Fujimiya-san!?!」

Seki-san's stunned.

「There's a turning point in your life. Right now...It's the point where I bet my  
life. This『family』with everyone...seems to be more fun than being a guard...」

「But...you'll be having sex with that boy! Are you going to bear his child?!」

Seki-san speaks in panic.

「Seki-san...you don't get anything, do you?」

Fujimiya-san laughs.



「W-What?」

「This『family』is the next『royal family』of Kouzuki group...!」

Right...my『family』have『Kakka』and his two granddaughters in it.

「The child I'll give birth to will become siblings with Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama's child...!」

Our『family』is Kuromori...not Kouzuki

But...Misuzu and Ruriko won't abandon my children.

「Misuzu-sama's invitation isn't to become a vassal...but to be an ally...to join the『family』from being an ally...does Seki-san not understand how much of a privilege that offer has?」

Fujimiya-san looks at me.

「I'll become your『woman』 I will offer you my virginity. Is that all right... Lord?」

Fujimiya-san calls me『Lord』

Her eyes...have no hesitation in it.

She's originally a person with a simple personality.

Once she promised it...she'll definitely defend it forever.

「...I accept you, Fujimiya-san」

I look at her eyes, and swore

「Please call me Reika」

Yeah...Reika.

「Un, then my best regards with you, Reika...!」

I turn to everyone.

「Ruriko, Michi, Mao-chan...Reika's your Oneechan from now on...!」

「...Reika-oneesama」

「...You're beautiful. Oneesama」

「Reika-oneechan! Ufufu!」

The littler sisters are pleased,

「Can I call you Reika-san?」

Misuzu asks

「Yes, I don't mind...I will be calling Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama as usual in official locations」

「...Then what's for usual?」

I ask.

「What should we do for the usual?」

...Hmm

「Reika...do you not have any siblings?」

「Yes, I am an only child. Since I lost my parents early...I grew up with my grandfather since childhood Hm...if she had siblings then she won't be like this

This firm character was because she lived with her grandfather?

This person also grew up without knowing family that well

「Then, normally...call them Misuzu-chan and Ruriko-chan」

「...Chan?」

Reika's surprised.

「Also...Michi-chan, and Mao-chan. Everyone's Reika's『little sister』after all...!」

「Y-Yes」

Reika's puzzled

「Everyone's a 『family』...so isn't that obvious?」

「Y-Yes...!」

「Ah, I'll call you Reika-chan too!」

Nagisa smiles

「Speaking of which, how old is Reika-chan?」

「...22 years old」

「Eh, you're older than me? Then, should I go with『Reika-oneechan』?

「That's...please, I don't mind if you call me Reika」

Reika felt embarrassed from what Nagisa said.

「No, we must not let that! Reika-oneechan!」

Nagisa's also happy.

She's always been the elder sister of the『family』along with Katsuko-nee...  
She must be happy that an elder sister joins in.

「Um...I'm also a member of the『family』 Call me Ojii-chan...!」

『Kakka』approaches Reika with a strong spirit

「Not『grandfather』...『Ojii-chan』」

「That's...Kouzuki-sama, but...!」

As expected, Reika's panicking too

「Reika...He's『family』too」

I said.

「Try calling him...」

「...Yes」

Reika looks at『Kakka』

「...O-Ojii-chan」

Reika said with her face turning red.

Wow...what's this?

That crossdressing lady...what's with this cuteness...!

「...Ou」

For some reason...『Kakka's』face is also red

...Un

Having an adult beauty call you『Ojii-chan』...it would make you blush 「Then...  
everyone's family now」

Misuzu tells Reika.

「Yes...family's very amazing...Misuzu-sama」

Reika replies

「It's Misuzu-chan isn't it?」

Nagisa said laughing.

「Ah, right...Misuzu-chan Somehow...I feel very happy right now」

Obtaining a new『family』...Fujimiya-san felt like something is about to change

in her...

「Now...by the way」

Nagisa looks at Seki-san

「What about you?」

---

## 258. The talent of love

---

「I...let me think for a while longer」

Seki-san answers.

「Or rather...since I knew the secrets of Kouzuki family, I can no longer slip out...!」

Seki-san looks up at『Kakka』

「That's obvious. Don't think that I'm someone who overlooks information leak...!」

The current owner of Kouzuki house stares at her with stern eyes.

「As expected...of course it is...」

Seki-san makes a boo-hoo face

「Then...what would you do, Seki-san?」

Misuzu asked calmly.,

「No...Uhm...for now, I'll become an ally. Of course, I also know that this is a good idea to become an ally of Kouzuki-sama, Misuzu-sama, and Ruriko-sama...」

She answers limply.

「Oh, I'm glad...I was worried what I should do if Seki-san speaks absurdity like she doesn't understand...!」

Reika who entered the『family』first grins.

Seki-san glares back at Reika...

「But...I don't want to decide my life easily like Fujimiya-san!...That『family』looks like it's a serious thing」

「Umu, I understand your feelings...」

『Kakka』answers

Well, yeah.

Reika's changing her decision promptly.

Well, Reika's personality is honest so it's like this but...

An ordinary woman would worry about it a lot.

「...Besides」

Seki-san stares at me.

「Doing...a reproductive act...with this one...getting pregnant with his child...」

Seki-san blushes looking at me.

「Got it...then for the time being, Seki-san will become an ally of our『family』  
The matter of entering the『family』will be put on hold」

Seki-san feels relieved.

「Since you're now an『ally』, you'll be paid more than what you had before...  
we'll also guarantee your future position as well. Grandfather, is that good?」

Misuzu confirms it with her grandfather.

「Yes...I don't mind. Seki-san is no longer my vassal...but an ally that has the  
same goal. In exchange...we will take care of your life」

If she's just a vassal or an employee...even if the lord changes, her status and  
position will be guaranteed.

『Kakka』and Misuzu will be breaking the power struggle in Kouzuki family, even  
if someone takes over the control...as long as she's a vassal, Seki-san's position  
won't shake.

But...now that she's an ally, even if『Kakka』is overthrown and Misuzu expelled  
from the house...Seki-san will also share the same fate.

On the contrary...

If she stays a vassal, Even if Misuzu takes full control of the authority to Kouzuki  
family, she can't hope for a promotion...

If she becomes an ally...then she'll be involved in the as an existence close to  
Misuzu.

「I am prepared...I will entrust my life on it...!」

Seki-san answers with a dignified face...

...But

「...Seki-san is really a diligent one」

I speak out my impressions unintentionally.

「...What? Me...diligent?」

Seki-san's making a blank face.

「A truly diligent one...her diligence is like an iron wall」

『Kakka』tells me

「Uhm...I do think that it's normal though?」

Seki-san seems to be unconvinced that she's『diligent』

「No, well...Seki-san thinks seriously, saying that you'll be an『ally』for the time being, you put the thought of entering the『family』on hold, didn't you...?」

I asked.

「Yes...I think that's an ordinary general judgement」

Sending a glance towards Reika...

「I'm not someone cheap like Fujimiya-san!」

...No

...You see

「Seki-san...I don't think that your judgement is common but...」

「...What?」

Seki-san shows a surprised face.

「Well, look...in this situation, you can just promise that『I'll become an ally, I'll join the family too』...and depending on the situation afterwards, you can change your future course, right?」

When Mana was still Maika, she was like that.

Though she behaves and speaks like our ally...she was actually considering of escaping from us.

I've got an experience with Maika at that time so I can tell.

「There's no way I would do such a cowardly behavior...!」

Seki-san speaks angrily.

「No...but you see, normal people will. Everyone's scared of Kouzuki-san after all. Normal people would have thought of just becoming an『ally』and entering the『family』just to please Kouzuki-san and then watch over the situation」

「Fufufufuun...well you see, it's a bit different...!」

Nagisa interrupts the conversation.

「What you said just now is about a person in a specific group confident in his ability thus creating cunning behavior. Those kind of people are afraid to offend Shige-chan so they'll just say yes to everything. Only words yet no actions. There's always that one or two troublemaker in a group. But, that's not a lot of people...!」

Nagisa smiles at me.

「Most people who belong to a group like a company are not confident at themselves, a virtuous person That's why, even if someone in a position like Shige-chan says『be our ally, join our family』...almost all of them will decline」

...Decline?

「『I can't do it』or 『I don't have the talent』or『I can't bear the responsibility』  
You see...becoming Shige-chan's『ally』is too frightening for normal people」  
「...What's frightening?」

Misuzu asks

「If you're in a standpoint being used by someone, you only have to fulfil the jobs and responsibility ordered. Then, you get paid and can support your family. That's enough for them. Of course...everyone wants to succeed in their career. But...being involved in the huge power struggle in a huge family like Kouzuki house, instead of a success in career... There's not a lot of people who would want to bother with such hardships...!」

...I see

Is that how it is?

I myself don't know any other group but the『school』so I don't understand it



well 「For normal people, becoming an『ally』of『Kakka』is too heavy of a burden. Much more, if asked to join the『family』, they'd faint...」

Nagisa smiles.

「Or rather...they can't imagine themselves in it...!」

...Can't imagine?

「Do you know? Humans definitely imagine themselves behaving that way before they do something. Unless a concrete images comes up...people can't act on their own will」

...Un

I don't get it.

「Most people...can't imagine themselves in that even if Shige-chan tells them to『Join in the family』 They can't imagine...so they can't act. Even if it's an outrageously big chance...they will decline」

That's the reaction of normal people

「Then...Nagisa-sama, what do you think of Seki-san's judgement?」

Misuzu asks

Right. Seki-san...what kind of type of person is she?

「Seki-san is an extraordinary rare case. She's a person confident in herself and is also a good natured one...!」

「...G-Good natured? Me?」

The person talked about speaks in stuttered voice.

「That's right...that's why you are seriously troubled at the thought of joining in our『family』...!」

Not answering immediately...even if it displeases『Kakka』her confidences comes as it's not a problem of her own values changing.

And...she's seriously troubled...

I see, Seki-san right now is ...

There's a possibility of her joining in our『family』...

How many percent it is, it's unknown but...

She can imagine herself joining our『family』...

That's why she's seriously worried.

「Not making fun or trying to lie in this situation...seriously worrying about it, I don't think that a person like that is not a good person」

Nagisa said.

Seki-san's mouth is wide open.

It must be her first time being evaluated as such

「Rather than that...I think」

Reika-san looks at Seki-san

「Seki-san's probably a heavy woman」

Seki-san's expression changed radically

「I'm not that heavy!」

「It's not...I'm not talking about the weight」

Reika speaks in a low voice.

「Seki-san...if a guy invites you for a tea, do you think『this person likes me』...?」

「...What?」

「Just walking around the corridor with a man...you'd think『What happens if this becomes a rumor』...」

「...Ugu」

Ah...she has memories of it

「Ah...you're the type that sees everything as a fuse of love」

Nagisa agrees.

「After you were chosen as the personal guard...you were sticky with Choumoto-san for a while」

Reika looks at Seki-san.

「Trying to match the color of the clothes...ordering the same menu on the employee cafeteria, trying to match the departure time from office」

「Why do you know that!」

「...There's no one in the company I don't know」

「Ugugugugu...!」

「Hmmm, so she has a crush on a colleague」

Nagisa makes fun of her.

「Because...I never thought that he's gay!」

Seki-san beats the desk

「It's different from usual! That was the the first time I hit on a homo!」

「...Usual? But, Seki-san...you never had a relationship with a man, have you?」

Misuzu asks

「That's right, never! Nobody ever comes close to me! That's why I'm the one who's making the effort to approach but...when I do that, men try to move away further than myself!」

Effort to approach...

Matching the color of clothing...asking for the same menu...

That's hard to understand.

Also...it's just a behavior you'd find hard to react once you know it...

「I see...Seki-san's a damsel in love. Inside her head...」

Reika said.

Seki-san's surprisingly a romanticist.

And yet, no men approaches her...

She's making an incomprehensible appeal.

Then, the men pulls away.

Yeah...she's certainly a heavy woman

I understand why she's a virgin at this age.

「Whaaat!? I don't want to be told by you! Aren't you a virgin as well!」

Seki-san's angry at Reika.

「That is because I never had interest in that kind of thing」

Reika laughs

「Besides...I will be experiencing it soon...」

Reika looks at me.

She's already decided to have sex and bear my child.

Reika's too good at making decisions

...But

「...Wait, stop!」

I tell Reika.

「Reika, you're already my『family』...that won't change but. I'll put it on hold whether you'll have sex with me or not」

「...Why is that? Lord?!」

Reika shows a surprised face...

「Reika...Seki-san as well, you haven't experienced a proper love relationship yet」

I answer.

「It's not good to have only sex even though you haven't experienced love yet」

「I...don't mind」

Reika says.

「I've already sworn to give my body to my lord...!」

...Hmm

I compare Reika and Seki-san.

Reika's too good at making decisions...

Reika-san's thinking too much...

Both of them have extreme characters.

But...both of them became adult women without knowing love.

「Reika, I feel happy on your feelings, I respect it...but, try to watch over for a bit」

「...Lord」

「I understand well that what Reika needs now is a『family』 That's why, concentrate on blending with the『family』...and let's postpone sex for later」

What Reika seeks now is『family love』

Let's first fill that up.

Let's have my fill later.

「But, I...」

「I've got some people I regret having sex without any love」

...Yukino

My relationship with Yukino has gotten messed up...

It was because of the first rape.

I was desperate...I've violated Yukino because of my carnal desires not because of love.

Our relationship has stumbled from the beginning...

I shouldn't do that again.

「I'll like Reika more...that's why, Reika should look at various parts of me. Then...when our hearts fit properly, we embrace each other at that time. Not forcibly but naturally...」

I said...

「If that is Lord's orders...then I'll obey it」

Reika answers

...Hmm

That's not it.

「Earlier...Reika-san have heard only my and Danna-sama's voice during our sex, haven't you?」

Misuzu asks Reika

「...Yes」

「Then...watch Danna-sama and I have sex. It's better to watch a sex of love in close proximity」

Yeah, she's right

That might be right.

「Misuzu! It's unfair that it's only you! I'm the next one you know...1」

Nagisa speaks huffily.

Err...

I'll be squeezed dry if this continues.

「No, let's meet the『family』for now. Let's have her watch sex later」

I said.

I haven't seen Minaho-neesan and co for a while...

Anyway, Reika should get in touch with the『family』as soon as possible.

Seki-san too...I think she'll get along with Katsuko-nee and Margo-san than these people

...But

「...Kouzuki-san」

I turn to『Kakka』

「Of course you do know that Reika and Seki-san are like this?」

Old man Kouzuki laughs.

「Now then...I wonder what you mean by that?」

『Kakka』have thoroughly isolated Ruriko and Yoshiko-san from men.  
She's done something similar to Misuzu.

With Misuzu and Ruriko being on such a policy...the two of these who have no experience in romance is no coincidence.

Of course...this is『Kakka's』intervention

「These two having no romantic experience...and yet owning such a good personality... Thus, you made them guards of Misuzu and Ruriko, haven't you?」

『Kakka』

「That's not all. Both of them are outstanding. They're even the top of Kouzuki security service. Their body and skill are outstanding. Mentally, they're still immature but...I want you to tolerate that as there's still room for development. Well, there's some promise as they're elite, their character is too good and too serious but...Minaho-kun can control that point very well」

Saying that, the old man laughs

「Either way...our『family』needs more people...what do you think?」

...I

「I think so too. Kouzuki-san's eyes for people is right」

Right.

Reika and Seki-san have been certified by『Kakka』from the start.

If not, they can't make contact with his treasured granddaughters.

There's no way they're people with dirty hearts...

Their love experience deficiency is a small problem though.

「Now then...it's about time we see Minaho-kun's face? I'm sure she'll be surprised」

Kakka speaks like a naughty boy



We dressed up in a hurry...

All of us left the room.

Ahead, Reika and Seki-san.

Misuzu and I follows.

Ruriko and Yoshiko-san...

Nagisa and Mao-chan are with『Kakka』...

Michi's defending the back.

Once again, we changed elevators multiple times.

We go up and down repeatedly on different elevators...

We get off the 27th floor.

「This is usually a wedding hall」

『Kakka』tells everyone

「Minaho-kun and co. are waiting in here. We've prepared meals so you should eat as well」

That helps...speaking of which, I'm a bit hungry

...But

There's no guard wearing Kouzuki security service uniform at all 「...The 20th to 30th floor is all reserved by me today. I am somewhere on those floors.

Yamaoka's subordinates aren't allowed to enter here」

『Kakka』explained as he guessed what I'm thinking.

「The enemy wearing a job uniform can't go up to my private area...!」

So that's the reason.

「Uhm...Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san?」

Seki-san asks『Kakka』

「They'll come right away once I call them. For now, it's my time to enjoy with my wonderful granddaughters. I don't want to see the face of those two right now...」

Well...they're gay after all.

「It's there...『Between the heron』 Open up the door」

Reika and Seki-san opens the door.

...Then

Nei-san's the only one in the middle of the wide wedding hall

I can't see anyone else...

「Hm? What what, what's wrong?」

Nei-san turned to us and speaks with a charming face...

...This is Margo-san's usual strat.

Nei-san's a decoy...

And she'll aim for the chance of break out...

...Shit!

「...Margo-san, it's us.」 It's okay! There's no problem!!!!」

I shout loudly.

「...Yoshi-kun!」

「...Onii-chan!」

Megu and Mana shows up under the round table near the door we entered in.

「The negotiation with Kouzuki-san went well. It's all okay!!!!」

「Really, it's not a lie! Grandfather has accepted me and Danna-sama!」

Misuzu shouts as well.

「Minaho-san...there's really no problem」

When Nagisa calls them out...the others finally show up



Everyone's hiding themselves behind desks and platforms Katsuko-nee...  
Minaho-neesan...Yukino too  
Margo-san...  
...She's on top.

She shows herself in between the iron pipes hanging the lights.  
Using a rope, she comes down.

「...Everyone's gathered it seems」

Minaho-neesan looks at me, Misuzu, Nagisa and Mao-chan, and shows a relieved look.

「Umu...I brought it properly」

『Kakka』looks at Minaho-neesan with a smile

「Thank you very much...Kouzuki-sama」

Minaho-neesan bows respectfully  
Nei-san and others are still showing an uneasy face.  
They don't know the results of our negotiation with『Kakka』...

「Then...what happened?」

Minaho-neesan asks Kakka.

「I've heard that you have given him and Misuzu san your permission...!」  
「Umu...actually, on that regard」

『Kakka』speaks pompously

「I've got some things I've got to ask you...」

Minaho-neesan gasps.

「This will have a very serious influence in the future of Kouzuki house and you as well...!」

「What do you need?」

Minaho-neesan asks with a serious face.

「Yes...listen very closely...!」

The head of Kouzuki house...Kouzuki Shigetaka speaks.

「Call me...『Ojii-chan』...!」

---

## 259. 『Family』gathering .

---

From『Kakka's』sudden「Ojii-chan」...

Katsuko-nee and Nei-san are both showing a mouth agape face.

Megu and Mana are showing up a ??? face.

「...What does that mean?」

Minaho-neesan inquires『Kakka』expressionlessly.

Minaho-neesan's strength is having her poker face whatever happens.

「It is as I said...I also decided to join in the『Kuromori family』 As the grandfather...!」

『Kakka』happily smiles

「...Nagisa, was it you?」

Minaho-neesan looks at Nagisa...

「Ufufu...everything went well!」

Nagisa smiled satisfied.

「Katsuko-kun knows it well but currently...I don't have any manly functions at all. No, I'm very grateful to Katsuko-kun... In the last few years...Katsuko-kun has continued to play as my favorite woman...」

『Kakka』said, Katsuko-nee smiled lonely...

Right now, inside this room...the prostitute that was entertaining『Kakka』until recently, is only Katsuko-nee...

Katsuko-nee probably never told anyone that Kouzuki old man's body can't have sex anymore.

To not hurt『Kakka's』self esteem and to not let the vassals know that his reproductive ability has withered, he goes to the mansion continually as a must.

Katsuko-nee understood『Kakka's』feelings...so she continued to pretend to be having sex with『Kakka』all the time.

「Tanizawa doesn't know that my body can't embrace a woman anymore. It's one of my important secrets」

「I also didn't know about it」

Minaho-neesan said.

「I'm sorry, Ojou-sama...」

Katsuko-nee bows her head to Minaho-neesan.

「It's fine...it's the correct response as the『woman of the mansion』」

Minaho-neesan answers calmly

「Because of your honesty...I made a judgement that you people are worth trusting. Don't blame Katsuko-kun」

「I'm not...Rather, I'm praising her」

Minaho-neesan said laughing

「As a matter of fact...I can't even do it even forced. There are good medicines these days. But...it's not good to put burden on the heart now that I'm 82 years old. I want to live long by all means...for Misuzu and Ruriko, and for your sakes...!」

『Kakka』looks at us with kind eyes.

「That's why, I feel regretful but...I decided to accept this one as the master of『Kuromori』family I understand that『Kuromori family』is established with the need of this one...」

Saying that...he looks at me.

Though he says『this one』...his glance has a sense of familiarity.

「This one...my grandson, the one who won over Misuzu's heart. But, he's not too clever...nor ambitious. Being the groom means being the owner of the Kouzuki family, he should be disqualified when it comes to intelligence, dignity, and pedigree...but this one isn't intending to enter Kouzuki house at all」

『Kakka』explains what he thinks to Minaho-neesan and co.

「Thus...I Misuzu will shoulder the future of Kouzuki house. If Misuzu, a woman reigns as the head...it's better for the husband to have a gentle nature like this one. This one is moderate to the core...he listens to Misuzu and Ruriko talk. And despite that, he's not afraid to speak if he thinks it's necessary. Above all, it seems that he's more pleased to meet the desires of his women than to fill his own desires. I think that he's a man suited to be Misuzu's back-up. Because of the bloodline and my own biased education...a decent marriage can't be hoped for. In that case, I think that it's not the wrong choice to leave this to him...」

Misuzu continues what『Kakka's』speaking

「Misuzu is Danna-sama's『woman』 Therefore, I already am a member of『Kuromori』 From now on, as a member of『Kuromori』we will live as a『family』 As a member of『Kuromori』...I will aim to be the head of Kouzuki house」

Misuzu's priority level is has the『Kuromori family』clearly on a higher level than Kouzuki house.

「When Misuzu said that, I felt surprised. I have always been the center of Kouzuki house since I was born. I thought that Kouzuki house is much more important than anything else. But...now that I've seen Misuzu's relationship with this one, it seems that『Kuromori family』is more fun than Kouzuki house. You are united. Accepting each other. Blending in...it made me feel very envious. Then, Nagisa-kun...

『Kakka』turns to Nagisa.

「Yes ...I invited Shige-chan. Isn't it better if we just transfer Shige-chan from Kouzuki to『Kuromori』?...I asked!」

Nagisa smiles.

「With that said. I am still the owner of Kouzuki house and still shouldering all of it but...I will become your『family』while in that position. As your『grandfather』...I will protect you with all the authority I have. I promise that...!」

Minaho-neesan looks at『Kakka』...

「It's a very appealing offer but...what does Kouzuki-sama gain from that?」

The careful Minaho-neesan still doubts the words of old man Kouzuki.

「That's...『family』」

I answered.

「Kouzuki house is a huge house and yet they're not established as a『family』  
Suspecting each other, they're people they can't forgive in their hearts. That's  
why...we can just become Kouzuki-san's『family』who he can open up his  
heart...!」

Minaho-neesan looks at me.

Staring at my eyes.

Then...at『Kakka』

「In the first place...I'm the one who made this boy my『little brother』」

...Minaho-neesan.

「Now...I allow him to call me『Neesan』 From the bottom of my heart...he's my  
dear『little brother』. I'd like to raise him healthily...」

「That's why you allowed him to introduce himself as『Kuromori』?」

『Kakka』asks

「Yes...he's my treasured brother after all」

At that moment...I understood a lot of things

Why did Minaho-neesan lend me the suit of Kuromori Kounosuke who's already  
dead...

Since going to the theater...the situation where I can't help but introducing  
myself as Kuromori

I...am recognized as the man of『Kuromori』

Everything's according to Minaho-neesan's will

I'm no longer Yoshida...to become Minaho-neesan's brother, I became  
Kuromori...

「Therefore...Kouzuki-sama understands his relationship with his『women』and  
『family』 Also feeling of wanting to participate...!」

Minaho-neesan looks at『Kakka』

「Very well...Kouzuki-sama, we accept you in our『family』」

「Umu...I'm grateful」

『Kakka』laughs satisfied.

「With that said, Megu and Mana, you can depend on Kouzuki-san Think of him as your own Ojii-san...!」

The two of them are still stunned.  
Well, it can't be helped though.

「Yes...I'm your Ojii-chan. Let me spoil you a lot. I'll buy you anything you want...!」

Said『Kakka』, Nagisa...

「Shige-chan...you mustn't spoil them too much! We're『family』after all」  
「Nagisa-kun an co. can be the strict one...I specialize in spoiling my granddaughtrs. I'm the『Ojii-chan』after all...!」

『Kakka』speaks like a mischievous boy

「No way, can we really ask for anything!？」

Nei-san bites...  
No, Nei-san's purposely joking to soften Megu and Mana who's confused.  
This is Nei-san's kindness.

「Yes...You're already my『family』starting today. You can depend on me...!」  
「Un! Then you see...buy me a condo!!」

N-Nei-san...  
Well, I know that it's a joke though

「Sure. Next time, let's sightsee Tokyo with my car. Point out on a condo you like and I'll buy the building...!」

Err...  
The owner of the Japan's most known family...

「No, you see...I don't need the building itself...」

As expected, Nei-san's also confused by the scale of the talk 「Then...Katsuko-kun, show the list of my real estate to that child. I'll give you any property you like. Even the luxurious condominiums in the central area, or even the high rise

condominium in the bay area will do」

「Could it be that there are villas too?」

Nei-san's eyes are sparkling

「Of course」

「A hot spring and a place with delicious fishes...!」

「Then, a villa on Izu will be good」

『Kakka』answers

「Uwaaa, Yo-chan, let's go there! It's hot springs and fishes you know!」

Nei-san's delighted.

「The others as well...you can use any of my belongings as you want」

「Uwaa, yaaaaaaay!」

Nei-san's pleased but...Megu and Mana are still stunned.

「However...the minors should ask for Minaho-kun's permission. Then...try calling me Ojii-chan from time to time!」

「Un un~! Bring me! Bring me!...Ojii-chaaan~!」

Nei-san snuggles to『Kakka』smiling

「By the way...what's your name?」

The old man asks.

「Eeh?! You know it don't you?...!?!」

...Un

Old man Kouzuki should have already investigated us beforehand.

Furthermore, Nei-san is the central figure of Cesario Viola's raid tonight.

「Even if I know...you've got to tell me your name properly」

『Kakka』said

「Ah, right! Sorry, Ojii-chan! You see, I'm Nei! Natou Nei!」

「Kouzuki Shiegetaka...my best regards, Nei」

「Okaaay~!」

「Everyone, you can call him『Ojii-chan』or『Shige-chan』!」



Nagisa said.

「Then, I'll call you Shige-chan too!」

Nufufufufu, Nei-san laughs.

I see...we've got to introduce him to the family.

But, Megu and Mana are still off...

...Then first

「Also, it's not just Kouzuki-san who has entered our『family』 Here, Ruriko and Michi, come here!」

First...I should introduce those Megu and Mana know.

「Ruriko has become my『woman』as well」

Hearing that...Mana reacted.

「Eh, really?!」

「...Yes」

Ruriko answered blushing.

Then...she bowed to everyone

「...I'm Kouzuki Ruriko. I have also decided to devote my all to Kuromori-sama. I may be inexperienced but, I will do all my best as everyone's『little sister』 Please take care of me...!」

Ruriko bows her head politely.

「Yay! Mana thought that it would be nice if a beauty like Ruriko-san becomes my Onee-san!」

Mana said...Nei-san

「Arere?! Then, that makes us not beautiful!」

「Ah...uhm, that's not what I meant!」

Seriously, Mana...

「Mana...naked dogeza」

I ordered her.

「Eh, Onii-chan, again?!」

Mana pouts

「Hurry up and do it!」

「Un...I get it」

Mana takes off her clothes.

Ruriko's surprised.

「Mana has the habit of getting carried away so...if Ruriko notices something, you should scold her right away. Mana's Ruriko's『Little sister』after all」

「...『Little sister』?」

「That's right. Ruriko's on third year middle school, Mana's still in second year...」

「My...『little sister』...!」

「That's why, if Mana shows a rude attitude so someone, then scold her right away. That's your job as her elder sister」

「Y-Yes...understood!」

Ruriko's moved as she's not only everyone's『little sister』but also an『elder sister』...

「Uhm...dear?」

Katsuko-nee asks me

「Not just Misuzu but also Ruriko-san?」

「Yeah, that's how it is」

I can do nothing but answer.

Everyone's surprised...well of course.

「Then...both of Kouzuki-sama's grandchildren?」

「Yes, I thought that Ruriko would be happier if I hand her to him」

『Kakka』answers Katsuko-nee.

「Misuzu doesn't mind it at all...I'm also happy that Ruriko-san will be with me to love Danna-sama!」

「Yes...Ruriko's very happy too...!」

Both of them shows everyone that they're satisfied...

Then, Minaho-neesan and the ladies seems to have consented for the time being but...

Megu's showing a gloomy face.

...Oops

While we're talking...Mana got naked.

「Hohou...even though she's still young, she's well developed. You'll surely have a wonderful proportion when you grow up...!」

『Kakka』said happily as he look at the naked Mana.

Mana hides her chest and crotch with both hands...

When she's with me, recently, she completely lost her shame...

This reaction is fresh

「Here, hurry up and apologize to everyone!」

「Yes, Onii-chan!」

Mana hurried and prostrates...

「Mana's so thoughtless...I have spoken as if the ladies weren't beautiful. I'm sorry. Mana's Onee-san are all beautiful...!」

「...Beautiful, kind, and elegant, right?」

Nei-san retorts laughing.

「Yes...Mana's elder sisters are all beautiful, gentle and elegant!」

Mana rubs her head against the carpet.

「Un...I forgive you. But, you'll stay like that for a while as punishment」

I order Mana.

「Eh, but...Onii-chan...」

Mana who's prostrating on the floor raised her face and looked at『Kakka』

「That's why I'll allow you to hide it with your hands. Hide it yourself」  
「...Okay」

Mana hides her chest and crotch with her hand...  
Now then...

「Also...Michi, she's officially my『woman』too」

Michi comes in front.

「Kudou Michi...I'm Master and Misuzu-sama's faithful watchdog...!」

This one also has a troublesome character.

「Michi...you're not just a watchdog you know?」

I asked...Michi...

「Not just a watchdog...but also a toy that can satisfy MAster anytime...a toy...  
I'm a toy...!」

Michi's blushing...

Just saying it makes her feel aroused...

「Ah, don't mind it...Michi's also a masochist like me. She's just saying that she likes Danna-sama...!」

Misuzu tries to interpret Michi's words but...

「Uhm...Misuzu-oneesama」

Ruriko asks her cousin

「...What's Masochist?」

Oh...this one's lack of sexual knowledge is also a big trouble.

「You see...it means seeking Danna-sama's affection in a different way」

「...What?」

「The attitude where『you make Danna-sama pleased aggressively』is being a Sadist...the『I want to make Danna-sama feel good by accepting him』is being a masochist」

「Is it an academic term?」

「Hmm...it's not a technical term. It's not a generally used word so you must not use it in front of other people but us」

「Yes...Oneesama」

「Ruriko-san...what do you think is your type?」

Ruriko thinks for a bit...

「Ruriko thinks she's also a type that's comparatively passive, so I think it's masochist type」

「Then, tell Danna-sama this」

「Understood」

The lovely Ruriko tells me smiling

「Onii-sama...Ruriko's a masochist!」

「Un...I see」

「Please guide me well!」

「G-Got it...!」

Is this okay for this cute 15 year old girl being done like this?

No, I will

I'll definitely do it...Ruriko...!

「Y-Yoshi-kun...」

Megu speaks up suddenly.

She's looking at me with a gloomy face.

「Uhm does that mean...you've already...」

Megu asks timidly.

「You've already done it with Ruriko-san and Michi-san?」

Megu seems to be worried about it.

「Not yet. For the time being, they promised to be my『woman』...having them as my『family』 We'll do it after this」

「Oh, I see...!」

Megu feels relieved.

As expected, she doesn't like me making『women』while she doesn't know  
Actually...among my『women』Megu's the most greedy.

That's because she's still mentally weak and is also bad at self assertion.

The emotions run around inside Megu's head and she gets addicted to sex right away.

Somehow, I've got to think of a good solution...

「Yes, I will show my loss of virginity to Misuzu-sama and everyone else! My best regards with everyone!」

And Michi's also a troublesome one.

Well, I've gotten used to it though

「Well, everyone already knows Michi already...she's a bit of a strange girl but, she's honest, and straightforward girl so I'd like everyone to love her as their『little sister』」

I ask everyone while patting Michi's hair.  
Anyway, she just need to be loved like a puppy...

「Roger...leave her to me」

Margo-san said.  
Margo-san would be the best to ask when it comes to guiding this warrior girl.

「Yes, thank you in advance」  
「Michi-chan...from now on, we'll be real siblings. I'll train you with that in mind」  
「Thank you very much, Margo-sama...!」

Ruriko looks at me.

「Uhm, Onii-sama...」  
「What is it, Ruriko?」  
「Please introduce me to our family members」

...Right  
Ruriko hasn't met Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee at the theater right?

「Grandfather seems to know them already but Ruriko doesn't」  
「Ah, sorry」  
「I've heard that『Kuromori』house practices polygamy...is everyone Onii-sama's『wife』?」

I look at each of my『family's』face

「It's not...what we have here are both my『elder sisters』and『women』」

First...I'll show Minaho-neesan.

「This lady is Minaho-neesan. She's our Nee-san」  
「...Kuromori Minaho. Welcome, Ruriko-san」

Ruriko bows to Minaho-neesan.

「Ruriko. Please to meet you」

「Also, that's Margo-san. She's my nee-san...!」

Margo-san smiles.

「Are you sure with me being a nee-san too?」

「Yes...you're smart and strong, a very reliable Nee-san」

「...Please to meet you」

「Yes, here as well. Welcome」

「Next...Nei-san. She's my Nee-san」

When I say that...Mana

「Wait a moment...Nei-san is also Onii-chan's『woman』right?!」

...Hmm

「Mana...I can see it」

Her pink nipples.

「Iyaan~!」

Mana hides her chest feeling『Kakka's』gaze.

This time, her crotch is exposed.

「Stay kneeling for a while」

「Eeeh!」

「Just do it」

「Okaay」

Staying prostrated, she thinks that her embarrassing parts won't be seen by old man Kouzuki.

Mana goes back to prostrated pose again...

「Ufufu! I'm Nei! Yo-chan's Oneechan!」

Nei-san said really happy.

Being called『elder sister』seems to make her unberably happy.

「...RUriko」

「Hmm, 『Ruu-chan』 Will『Ruu-chan』do?」

「...What?」

「Nei-san likes making nicknames only she can call with her『family』」

「Well, is that so...」

「That's why, I'll call you Ruu-chan!」

「Yes, my best regards...!」

Now then...now that the『elder sisters』are done

「Following...my『women』」

I introduce Katusko-nee

「This one's Katsuko-nee...」

「Please to meet you...Ruriko-san」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「Katsuko-nee's a very good cook」

「My...please teach Ruriko sometimes」

「Sure! Let's make a lot of delicious things!」

「...Yes」

...Following

「Nagisa, of course you know her already」

「Yes, my best regards」

「Same here, my best regards」

Nagisa smiles.

Huh, where's Mao-chan

「Nufufufu! I found Kuroko-chan~!」

「Shhh! Don't come here!」

Mao-chan turned over the white tablecloth hung on the round table.

Inside...I can see the ass of a woman wearing a yellow and black dress.

...Ah, she thinks we can't see her.

You were hiding in that place?...Yukino!

「Kuroko-chan! Kuroko-chan! Kuroko-chaaan!」

Mao-chan's sticking with Yukino.

「Don't make a nose, I'm hiding!」

No...you're no longer hiding



「That small one there is my daughter, Mao...that girl's your『little sister』could you take care of her?」

Nagisa tells Ruriko.

「Yes...understood」

Ruriko speaks obediently

「By the way...Onii-sama」

「What?」

「Kishima Kuroko-san...is unrelated to Onii-sama, right?」

As Mao-chan beats her, Yukino's moving around in confusion under the table  
Somehow...you look like an idiot.

「It's not that we don't have any relationship but she's not my『woman』」

「Then, what's your relationship?」

Ruriko tilts her head.

「Hmm, that's a long story so let's do it next time... The introduction of my『family』hasn't ended yet...」

「Yes, you're right」

I point at Megu and Mana.

「Then, this is Megu and Mana...both of them are also my『women』」

「Please to meet you...!」

Matching Ruriko who's bowing her head...Megu also bows.

Mana's still prostrated.

Megu's still showing a gloomy face.

「It's fine...Megumi-oneesama」

Ruriko said, Megu shows a ??? face.

「I don't intend to take away Onii-sama from Megumi-oneesama Onii-sama's love is poured into everyone in the『family』...!」

Ruriko smiles.

「Therefore...Megumi-oneesama, please don't monopolize Onii-sama as well」

Right

Ruriko's sexual knowledge is almost none so...

Her sensitivity when it comes to people is high.

She's a woman who's gentle, dignified, and also understands people's feelings.

It seems she immediately noticed Megu's dissatisfaction.

「I am Megumi-oneesma's『little sister』 Please take care of me...!」

Ruriko shows that she's under Megu...

「Y-Yes...here as well」

Megu straightens her posture and bows to Ruriko.

「Me too, please to meet you!」

Mana says while still prostrating

「I'd like you to teach her how to be elegant...」

I tell Ruriko.

「You're right...Mana-san will become a more attractive woman if she gains dignity」

Ruriko said.

「Eh, really! Ruriko-oneechan!?!」

Mana raises her head.

「Yes, it's true. That's why...learn a lot from Ruriko, Mana!」

「Un, got it...Onii-chan!」

Mana smiles.

「Hey...I can see it」

Since she raised her body...her pink nipple and pussy are visible to me.

「I'm showing it...it's Onii-chan after all!」

True...Ruriko and I are in front so『Kakka』can't see

「Then, I will be teaching Ruriko a lot about lewd things」

「...Lewd things?」

Ruriko seems to not know what's the meaning of lewd things.

「...It's about sex」

Ruriko blushes.

「Hey! Mana-chan! You're also still learning you know!」

Katsuko-nee retorts to Mana.

「Those kind of things are left for me and Nagisa to teach!」

Katsuko-nee says while puffing her chest.

「That's right...I'll also teach you as well」

Hey hey, Nei-san...

You're still a virgin though...

「Now then...I've introduced everyone」

「Yes...Onii-sama」

Ruriko's smiling.

「Everyone has become my『family』, Ruriko's truly happy!」

It makes me happy when a beauty like you say that.

Everyone's also making a happy face.

Megu's the only one having a complicated look

「Umu...I'm also happy!」

『Kakka』looks like he's having fun as well

「By the way...Yo-chan!」

Nei-san speaks.

「It's okay now that you've introduced Ruu-chan to us but...」

...What?

「It's about time you introduce those people to us?」

I turned back when Nei-san says that

...There's

Reika who's waiting for her turn to be introduced, smiling...

Yoshiko-san with a completely gloomy face.  
In addition, Seki-san who's showing a dull face...

---

## 260. 『Family』time 1 (The combat team)

---

「Err, these two are...」

Smiling...Reika comes forward

「Kouzuki security service's...Fujimiya-san, right?」

Mana said

I see...Megu and Mana were at the dressing room.

「No...now, I'm not just a guard!」

Reika says triumphantly.

「I...Fujimiya Reika, has entered the『family』! From now on, please call me『Reika-oneechan』without reserve」

...The room went silent

...Hmm, yeah

Reika...she's really happy.

She wanted a『family』

I can understand that feeling

...But

「Uhm...what's going on?」

Among the speechless people, Minaho-neesan asks me.

Now then...how should I explain this?

「I solicited her. I asked...would you like to join our『family』?」

Misuzu answers instead of me.

「Yes...then, I decided to accept the invitation. I'll join the『family』 Everyone will be my『little sister』 I will work for my『family』with my whole body spirit!」

Minaho-neesan

「I'm older than you...!」

「I know...Kuromori Minaho-sama Please call me『Onesama』...!」

Reika bows her head

The top elite guard...is familiar with the file about『Kuromori』

「She's a person that has an honest and straight personality. As she said in that way, she'll never betray us...!」

I believe in Reika.

「I also guarantee her. People with combat power are rare. Therefore, she'll be a valuable resource for us in the future」

『Kakka』also speaks

「But...her entering the『family』means that she's also his『woman』?」

Katsuko-nee asks...Megu reacts.

「Yes, I don't mind. I dedicate my purity for him and I can bear as many child as he wants!」

Hmm...Reika

「Reika...has something lacking with her though」

When I try to explain it to everyone...Megu

「...Reika?」

...Geez

Don't react to everything...!

「Reika's already our『family』...That's decided. However, Reika...is someone that only wants a『family』 A man and woman relationship, romance...she doesn't understand it at all. She's lived alone as an indifferent one...!」

I did my hardest to explain it.

「Therefore...making children with Reika or even embracing her is put on hold for now. That's what I thought we'd do」

「I don't mind it at all but...more than being in the『family』I have already dedicated my life to my Lord...」

Reika says calmly  
...Awawa  
Megu's gloominess is increasing...  
A crossdressing lady, Reika's also a beautiful woman  
Furthermore, she's got the adult charm.

「I see...I understand what you meant with her lacking something」

Margo-san speaks up

「In short...she doesn't think of the sex between man and woman as anything but a reproductive act...」

Un...that's how it is  
Thinking that it's just accepting man's seed.  
Or...she only recognizes it as an act of releasing man's sexual desires.  
That's why...she easily accepted to become my『sex partner』lightheartedly  
「Reika-san...what do you think about him?」

Katsuko-nee asks

「What?... Well, I think that he's a wonderful Lord. He's the core of the『family』...I think that he's someone deserving of respect」  
「Do you like him?」

Katsuko-nee asks, Reika thinks for a while.

「I'm an ignorant woman when it comes to relationship with men but...to be honest, I don't know. However, having met like this...I feel like it's fate」  
「...Well, this is deeply rooted」

Margo-san smiles

「You don't know whether you like Yo-chan or not and yet...you're dedicating your mind and body to him?!」  
「Yes...samurai don't take back their words」

No...you're not a samurai  
You're a manly swordsman addicted to British culture.  
...Reika.

「Therefore...until Reika comes to like me properly...I don't intend to do her」

I tell everyone

「If not...I feel like I won't be able to do it well with Reika」

Reika...

「Lord, is a naive man...I'm saying that I don't mind, that you can do what you want」

...I

...Can't let that happen

「I...think that it's better if you have sex with her soon...!」

...Margo-san?!

「No...but」

「I think that it's rude but...Reika-san, how old are you?」

Margo-san asks

「22 years old...what about you?」

「I'm 19 years old」

「Then, it's not Reika-san but Reika-oneechan!」

...Hmm

「Okay, Reika-oneesan I don't mind if you call me just Margo...」

「Got it, Margo-chan」

...You don't get it. Reika!

「Anyway...Reika-oneesan's already 22 years old. I think that it's too late and impossible for her to begin the middle school『male and female love』」

Margo-san said.

「You're right, I think so as well. She has an amazing proportion like this...I think that she should experience actual sex and understand the splendor of sexual love in between men and women sooner」

Katsuko-nee said.

「But, won't she just drown in sex and be biased on it?...」

...Yukino



「It's you after all...it'll be fine...!」

Katsuko-nee smiles.

「...Me? No, I can't do that」

I'm not confident.

「What are you saying...have you forgotten what you did to me?」

...Katsuko-nee

「I was turned to a prostitute, fell into despair...wasn't it you who rescued me from drowning in pleasure of sex?」

...Me?

「That's right. You wrapped me in kind and gentle sex...that's why I was able to get out of that dark sea...」

Katsuko-nee gently smiles

「Have more confidence in yourself...!」

「That's right, isn't it Onii-chan who saved me through a lot of sex!」

The naked Mana raises her face and tells me.

「Even Mana, the first time you raped me...even though I had horrible fear when it comes to sex...Onii-chan did all his best again and again so now I love sex! Of course, I won't do it with anyone with Onii-chan...if it's not Onii-chan then it won't feel good!」

...Mana

「Therefore...You should just do it with Reika-oneechan. It'll be fine, if you cum inside her around 30 times, I'm sure that Oneesan will come to love Onii-chan too...!」

Mana said laughing

「Un un, Yo-chan, you should just put it to practice!」

Nei-san too...

「I see...that idea has a point」

Misuzu nods in agreement

「Then, let's do it...Lord!」

Nonono...Reika

「Wait...let me think for a bit」

I'd like some time to think too.

Or rather, Megu's face is getting gloomier...

「Anyway...there are still some people I haven't introduced to everyone yet...!」

Un...Seki-san and Yoshiko-san are the one's remaining

「Oh...you're right」

Reika has a refreshing character so she's not forcing it.

...That part of her helps me a lot

「Err...This one is Seki-san」

「Ah...hello. I'm Sekiiiiiii」

Seki-san is completely clouded.

「There's no way she'll be joining in our『family』」

Minaho-neesan stares at me

「Yeah...Seki-san's not in our『family』yet」

「...Yet」

Ah...Megu reacted

「Uhm...Misuzu also invited Seki-san, it's put on hold for now whether she'll join the family or not. For the time being...she'll be our ally」

「Yes...an allyyyy...!」

Seki-san answers with a half-crying face.

「If I recall...you were one of Kouzuki-san's personal guards, weren't you?」

Margo-san remembers the gallant Seki-san

「Yes, Seki-san is one of the three personal guards of grandfather」

Misuzu explained

「So we can expect you as our strength?」

MArgo-san asks, Seki-san...

「Yes, now that I'm this far I'll do it! Now that I'm your『ally』I'll assure you that you'll gain a reliable power」

Seki-san shouts in a half-crying face.

「Un...that helps. Reika-oneesan and Seki-san...in short, two of the elite members of Kouzuki security service has joined our camp」

Margo-san looks happy...

「This will save us in fights...if we have four combat personnel then we can have a various formation on hand」

Margo-san...Michi...Rekia...Seki-san  
I see...the combat experts became four

「Then, should we check our cooperation right away?」

Margo-san tells Reika and co.

「Wait a moment...there's no way you're taking command right?」

Seki-san who's gloomy...has turned to her former, energetic woman when it comes to combat.

「That's right...do you have a problem with that?」

Margo-san answered calmly.

「Didn't you say that you were just 19? Furthermore, an amateur! I'm a pro you know! There's no way a pro would follow an amateurs command」

「Hmm, by the way, Seki-san how old are you?」

「...24」

「Then...I've got to call Seki-san『Oneechan』then」

「Please stop fooling around!」

Seki-san turns her anger to Margo-san

「I will obey my Lord's judgement. Should I follow Margo-chan's command?」

Reika asks me

...Now then

「That's...I'll leave it to Reika's judgement」

Reika should judge whether Margo-san is a reliable commander or not with her own eyes 「Is it okay?」

「If not...you won't create any mutual trust」

You won't be able to fight along with a person you can't truly trust 「I don't mind who it is though」

Reika said and looked at Margo-san  
I feel negligence in her eyes...  
I'll scold Reika

「Reika...you're still planning to fight alone...」  
「...Lord?!」

「You thought that you can do something with your own power somehow whatever predicament it is?」

That's why she's saying that she's fine whoever the commander is.  
If it becomes really painful...then Reika's planning to fight with her own individual power.  
Still, she thinks that she can win against her enemy...  
Reika is confident in her combat strength...

「It's true that Reika alone can get through but. You see...Reika already has a『family』 Don't you think that you need cooperation among the other guards to protect all your younger sisters?」

Reika's face turned serious as well  
Her frivolous appearance disappears and she returns to the former cool beauty Reika 「...I've been mistaken Please forgive me」

Reika bows her head to me  
Then...she looks at Margo-san once again

「Margo-chan...do you have experience in commanding?」  
「Somehow...I've seen master do most of the details though」  
「...Master? Could that be?」  
「Yes...Kyouko Dothnomechey is my master」

Reika and Seki got surprised.

「...Kyouko Messer!」

Seki-san mutters Kyouko-san's alias.

「Is that the operation『Marandro』that Kyouko Messer strategized?」

「Yes...I have commanded one platoon in the assault on the Columbian drug cartel『Malandro』」

Margo-san answers Seki-san's question clearly

『Malandro』is, if I recall...the criminal organization in Brazil Kyouko-san belongs to 「You were also involved in the『Till Dawn Operation』three years ago?」

「Yes. I was 16 back then but Kyouko-san said that it's a good opportunity to experience real combat...!」

「...I can't believe this!」

「...Yeah」

Seki-san and Reika shows surprise in their faces.

「Kyouko-san said that Margo-san has the capability to view the battlefield as a commanding officer」

『Kakka』tells the two pro guards

「It's the ability you two lack the most」

The eyes of the head of Kouzuki household looks at the two.

「You two...have an outstanding fighting ability but you lack the ability to objectively analyze the situation. You can't make a precise judgement at a moment of situation...I've received such reports from Tanizawa...」

True...from the theater to the hotel...

The two didn't notice the bugs planted in the car.

They didn't even know that the leading cars were replaced with the『enemies』...

「No, it's not that I'm blaming you. People have things they're not good with. In short...you two are purely combat personnel. You're working under a commander, your ability can be demonstrated properly...!」

「You mean that we can't think of anything else?」

Seki-san replies dissatisfied from what『Kakka』said

「I'm not saying that. But, as said earlier, Seki-kun has the tendency to think too much」

Yeah...Seki-san's the type that explodes from overthinking 「In that respect... Reika-kun has the courage to jump into the enemies without thinking but lacks the judgement」

Right...in the fight with the fake guards, Reika jumped from our car carelessly. If it wasn't for the Banbarubie coming to help...we wouldn't be able to divide the enemies.

Though Reika who isolated herself might have escape from the siege of the enemy on her own...

Us trapped in the car are just out.

「True...we admit that we need a commander. But...whether this child has the ability or not...」

Margo-san laughs from what Reika said

「Reika-oneesan...is that heavy stick your main weapon?」

「Yes...I will crush everything with this cane...!」

Reika answers.

「Could you try making up a stance...!」

As told by Margo...Reika holds up her beat up stick  
In Kendo terms...she's doing a Chudan no Kamae

「Understood...Reika-oneesan seems to be good at attacking the enemies at front left」

「...You can tell my habit?」

「I can tell once you take a stance If it was me, I would attack Oneesan from the front right side...」

In short...she has a blind spot on the right?

「Especially...in this angle」

Margo-san moves her body fast.

「..... ! 」

She jumped into the bosom of Reika who's unable to move.

「...Margo-chan, you!?!」

「Look...at this angle, if you rush matched with timing...Oneesan's reaction won't be able to catch up, right?」

Margo-san smiles

「Reika-oneesan, you've been training by yourself for a long time. The balance of your left and right muscles of your limbs...especially here and here aren't good Therefore, even if you turn to front, you twist your whole body. You'll be late to react from an unexpected angle...!」

Margo-san explains

「I-Is that so...I never noticed」

「Yes, it's something you won't understand even if you look at yourself in the mirror. Kyouko-san and I always check up our body state...」

「When Kyouko-san wasn't there, I'll be the one in her stead! I was taught by Kyouko-san how and where to check in the body!」

Nei-san answered laughing.

「Okay, we can't easily do balancing your muscles so...I'll be following up Oneesan's right side for today」

「U-Un...please」

Reika's completely under Margo-san's palm now

「Next...Seki-san」

「W-What?」

Margo-san's smile shoot at Seki-san

「I've seen Seki-san's power in the theater」

Right

In the theater, Seki-san was the one who had beaten down the guy who tried to approach『Kakka』

「Seki-san, your speed is amazing but...you're lacking in power, aren't you?」

「I-I...」

「Therefore...you precisely hit the enemy's vital point to take them down...?」

Laughing...Margo-san looks at Seki-san

「T-That's right」

「However...the opponent tonight are professionals. Even with Seki-san's speed, it might not be able to hit the enemy's vital point for sure. If Seki-san can't take down the opponent with a single blow, then you'll be taken down. Please avoid close combat for tonight」

「Then how should I fight?!」

Seki-san glares at Margo-san angrily.

「Seki-san...you're actually good at shooting, aren't you?」

Seki-san fell silent as Margo-san smiles.

「That's right...she thoroughly trained at shooting during her study abroad」  
「...『Kakka』!」

「You're already our『ally』...it's better to avoid secrets you know」

Old man Kouzuki said...Seki-san

「Yes...understood」

「...Do you have a preferred gun?」

「I have it. In here...!」

Seki-san pats her coat.

It seems that there's a gun under it

「Then, please back us up with a gun. Please try to keep distance from the enemies however, don't ever leave our position

「I only have two spare magazines!!」

「That's enough...it'll be effective even if just to intimidate the enemy」

Margo-san smiles at Seki-san

「Margo-oneesama...what about me?」

Michi comes in front.

「When it comes to this...Reika-oneesan's gonna be the close combat vanguard. Michi and I will only be as follow up in formation though... Michi-san, I'd like you to play dead until the end」

「...Play dead?」



「Yes...since you're wearing the same uniform as Misuzu-san...a small and cute child too, the『enemy』won't notice that Michi-san is a guard. Therefore, stay with everyone and I'd like you to play as the last trump card whenever we fall into the very limit」

「...Last resort?」

「Michi-san, I know your desire to fight with all your power but...for now, it's more important to secure the whole『family』...」

「...Certainly」

Michi agrees.

「In exchange...I want you to let us know the enemy approach. Michi-san, I think that you're the most perceptive among us. I'd like you to watch out for enemies especially those from behind」

「...Roger」

Amazing...Margo-san

She's divided the three combat personnel in a flash

「I will be giving follow up to everyone...so the three of you should check my position all the time. If we're too solid then we'll be destroyed in one attack but if we're too far apart, we'd be taken down one by one Don't go anywhere I can't see...and try to defend with that in mind」

Margo-san said calmly

「...Haa, I get it. You're the commander then」

Seki-san accepts Margo-san

「Me too...I'll follow Margo-chan's command」

Reika too...

「I will protect Master and co. with this body of mine...!」

Michi also speaks

Yeah...the combat group is safe now

「Then, let's try to move our body for a bit... !」

Margo-san looks at me.

「Sorry but, could you and Nei play as the『enemy』?」

「...Sure」

I accepted it lightly

「Then, go in that open space...」

At the moment Margo-san said...

Misuzu speaks in a loud voice.

「Please wait a moment...!」

...Eh?

「There's still someone who hasn't been introduced yet!」

Ah...that's bad!

I was distracted with the relationship of Margo-san, Reika, and Seki-san, I've completely forgotten about it...

Turning around...Yoshiko-san is...

Looking down with a gloomy face.

「S-Sorry...we've got caught engrossed with the talk...!」

When I say that...Yoshiko-san...

「It's fine...I'm just a luggage to everyone...!」

...Shit

...What should I do?!!

---

## 261.『Family』 Time 2 (Buffet party)

---

### 261. 『Family』 Time 2 (Buffet party)

...Haa

Margo-san, Reika-san and Seki-san, it went well with them...

I've incidentally forgotten about Yoshiko-san 「Err...Ruriko's『retainer』Komori Yoshiko-san」

Timidly...I introduced Yoshiko to everyone 「...Komori Yohsiko. I'll be in everyone's care」

Yoshiko-san greets everyone with a gloomy face.

「Huh?! Yoshiko-san won't enter the『family』?!」

Mana said something unnecessary

「Yes...that is...」

Yoshiko-san said that she wants to enter the『family』

But, I think that it's just because she doesn't want to leave Ruriko.

She's not accepting me or the『Kuromori』family Therefore, Ruriko and Misuzu also puts Yoshiko-san entering the『family』on hold In Seki-san's case, it's just put on hold due to her will but...

In Yoshiko-san's case...it's put on hold regardless of her will Therefore...this problem is very delicate 「Why? Yoshiko-san should enter the『family』too! It would make Mana very happy if Yoshiko-san also becomes my Oneesan!」

...Yareyare

「...Mana」

I interrupt her

「You just shut up and stay prostrated for a while longer」

「Eh, why!? Onii-chan!?...Is there some reason for it!? If there is then tell Mana too!」

Mana, read the atmosphere

Notice the secret from Yoshiko-san's gloominess and Ruriko's troubled look ...  
Hmm

Let's not say that Yoshiko-san's actually a granddaughter of old man Kouzuki... that she's Misuzu and Ruriko's cousin.

It's not something I should say with my own mouth to my『family』

If I do that...Yoshiko-san will lose her trust in me.

Right now, Yoshiko-san can still live normally as the『retainer』of Ruriko, a vassal of the daughter of Kouzuki family.

If her Kouzuki bloodline is exposed...then she'll be caught up in the successor dispute just like Misuzu and Ruriko Therefore『Kakka』, Misuzu, Ruriko as well are trying to give chance to Yoshiko-san to choose the future of her own.

It's not something I should say for now.

「I won't tell Mana if she has that attitude」

I said clearly

「Why?...We're family aren't we?」

Mana looks at me.

「Didn't I say that Yoshiko-san isn't in the『family』yet?! Besides...!」

「...What is it Onii-chan?」

「People need to have time to think by their self and give out an answer. If someone in my family is having problems and want to consult me then I'd gladly listen. We'll think no matter how long it is...but, I won't force a consultation saying『Talk what you're worrying about to me』 That's just wrong...!」

「Whywhy?!...If it was Mana then I'll talk more to the person that's suffering you know!! There are those who are find it hard to speak by themselves! Isn't it better to talk to them positively!」

Mana said

「Mana-chan...that won't do」

Margo-san tells Mana.

「...Why?」

「If that happens...then the one Mana's talking to won't get stronger. They'll stay as a weak child that's only clinging to Mana-chan's kindness」

「Isn't that fine...we're『family』」

「We're family that's why it's no good」

Margo-san tells clearly.

「Reika-oneesan too, listen here...it's because you're likely to pamper the『little sisters』the most」

「...Yes, tell me」

She must've accepted Margo-san in the process of forming the combat team.

Reika listens to Margo-san obediently.

「Family...is a gathering of people. Then, you want to be gathering a bunch of strong people if possible, don't you? A gathering of weak people is just miserable. Especially groups of people who are weak at heart just only becomes a nuisance to others...!」

Margo-san speaks calmly

「Mana-chan...you see, people need to decide things themselves. There's a lot of things you've got to do on your own. You mustn't let other people decide, or let them do it instead. If you do that, you'll never become independent...」

「But...We're『family』 If there's something that's worrying them then shouldn't we help them?...」

Mana said lonely.

Margo-san smiles...

「Katsuko-san...if someone's in the『family's』suffering, what would you do?」

「...I'll make a delicious food. Then, we'll eat together」

Katsuko-nee answers.

「What about Nei?」

「For the time being...I'll make them laugh. I'll make them laugh even by tickling. It'll feel easier when you laugh!」

Nei-san answers.

「If it was me then I'll do sports...or drive together!」

Margo-san looks at Mana smiling.

「Us family...can always close up together. Or rather...we can only draw closer. But, that's what's important」

...Un

It's enough just to stay by the side during difficult times There's nothing needed more than that

「...I」

Mana looks down

「We're a『family』that stays together...but each of the member of the『family』has to decide their own life. Do you understand...?」

「...Un」

Mana nods lightly

「...Mana」

I squat down and match with Mana's eyes.

「Saying what you think right away is a bad part of you. It's okay to speak your opinion without hesitation but, you're speaking without even knowing the feelings of the other person yet. That's rude to them you know...」

I tell clearly while looking at Mana's eyes.

「That's right. Even Yo-chan doesn't say anything unneeded. He's listening to us talk really well...and he's only saying his opinion when we really need it」

Nei-san said that but...

「No...that's because I'm an idiot. Even if you want to tell something, words don't come out right away. Somehow, if I feel something's wrong with the other...I don't know the reason right away. That's why I'll try to watch over the situation until I understand...」

「That's fine. The useless people just try to carry out the talk with his emotions, pushing away the discomfort. Otherwise, you'd just repel the discomfort and say unnecessary things. It's right to see the situation of the other properly until you can understand what's exactly the problem」

Minaho-neesan said

「...Got it. I've said something unnecessary Onii-chan」

Mana looks at me

「That's right...apologize to Yoshiko-san」

「...Yes」

Mana heads to Yoshiko-san.

「...I'm sorry Yoshiko-san」

It was a naked dogeza filled with sincerity 「I-I...!」

Yoshiko-san's perplexed.

「Yoshiko-san...forgive Mana」

「Even if you say that...I don't mind it」

Yoshiko-san said but...

「No...Mana-san has spoken rudely to Yoshiko-san. It's bad to invade other people's heart thoughtlessly. She has to be punished properly」

Misuzu said

「...Let's see. How about slapping her butt three times?」

Misuzu smiles looking at me.

...Could this be

「...I'm doing it?」

「...please, Danna-sama」

...Err

「...If you don't mind, then should I do it?」

Michi takes out a red whip

No, if you hit her with that, Mana's ass would be destroyed!

「...Lord, can I do it?」

Hmm...with Reika's power, the bones would break...

「No, I got this...I'll do it」

I turn to Mana's back

「Get on all fours...I'm slapping your butt」

「...Okay」

The naked 14 year old girl sticks out her butt I can see her pussy and anus in this angle.

「It's a punishment so hit her with all your strength」

Amused,『Kakka』tells me

...Seriously

If you tell me that, I won't hold back anymore I'll hit her with all my strength...!

「Here I go...Mana!」

「Okay...Onii-chan...!」

First...Bashii!!

「...nnn!!!」

Mana endures!

Second...Bashii!

「...Fuuuu!」

Third...Bashiii!!!!



「...Auuuu!!!!」

「Here, that's done...!」

I rub Mana's red butt

「You okay?...Does it hurt?」

Mana...

「I'm fine...thanks, Onii-chan」

Mana looks up at me blushing

「...EH?」

「If Onii-chan doesn't hit men...Mana feels like she's abandoned, it feels sad...」

「...I-I see」

「You weren't even holding back...you were thinking about Mana weren't you?」

「No, I didn't in particular but...」

「No way...Mana felt a lot of Onii-chan's love」

You can feel love from having your ass slapped?

「Mana-chan...he loves Mana-chan deeply on usual so no matter when, he'll make a choice filled with affection」

Margo-san said

But...is that so?

「Dear, you should be kind after punishing them That's a rule after all」

Nagisa tells me.

Yeah...I can tell the reason

「Here, Mana」

I embrace Mana's body...

I pat her back

「Onii-chan...kiss me」

「...Un」

Piling up our lips...Mana seeks my tongue by herself 「...I-I'm envious」

Who muttered that...Michi?

Envious...on which, the kiss or the ass slapping?

...I guess it's both When it comes to Michi.

「Now then...Mana-san's punishment is done」

Misuzu looks at Yoshiko-san

「Yoshiko-san...you're not in our『family』yet but...」

「Misuzu-oneesama...I will be the one to speak from there」

Ruriko interripts Misuzu

「...Yoshiko」

Ruriko reaches out for Yoshiko-san

「Yes...Ruriko-sama」

She holds Yoshiko-san's hand.

The two girls are holding hands

「I have decided to give my heart and body to Kuromori-sama However...that doesn't mean that our bonds will be gone」

The 15 year old beauty...tells her 18 year old『retainer』

「Please continue to serve me from now on」

「That is...of course I will. However...」

Yoshiko-san is puzzled as she doesn't know her master's true intention Ruriko raises her face and looks at everyone.

「Everyone...that's how it is, sorry but Yoshiko will be like Seki-san, she'll be our『family's ally』...could you accept her?」

The room quiets down.

「...I don't mind」

First...Minaho-neesan said

「Un...It's fine having her an『ally』right?」

Margo-san smiles

「Yes, we welcome you」

Katsuko-nee

「Hmm, I think it's okay」

Nagisa

「Ufufun! Well, that's how it is for now!」

Nei-san

「...I think it's okay」

Megu...cheer up

「I approve...!」

Michi's having her firm expression as usual 「I welcome you as well」

Reika

「Eh, I...I'm on hold for now so I think I'm okay with it」

Seki-san

「There's no way I would object you know? I will obey your decisions」

『Kakka』...what's left is

「Hey, Mana...what do you think?」

「Mana...thinks of Yoshiko-san as an『ally』from the beginning It would be strange for me to say that she's not a friend this late...!」

Even after I slapped her ass...she doesn't stop speaking her own thoughts.

Well, that's Mana's good point.

Now then...I

「I think so too...Yoshiko-san's a friend」

...Yoshiko-san

「Thank you very much...everyone」

Holding Ruriko's hand tightly...she happily answered.

「Huh...have we forgotten one?」

Nei-san said

「Huh, where's my child?」

Nagisa panics

Speaking of which, I can't see where Mao-chan is Or rather...Yukino too

Are they still playing hide and seek under the table?

「Hey hey, everyone...here here!」

Looking at it, Mao's on the door at the end of the spacious room.

「Mao, don't go entering places without permission...!」

Nagisa tells Mao-chan

「Ehehe! There's food in this room!」

...Food?

「That's right! It's ready for a buffet partyb but...I wonder if it's okay to eat here?」

Yukino shows up and shouts from the door Mao-chan opened.

...You

What are you doing?

「Seriously...what a vulgar person!」

Mana insults her real sister

Well...because of Yukino's current look and make up, she can only be seen as a comedian...

It feels like everything she does will be forgiven...

「Oh...I had them prepare meals. Everyone, let's go to the other room」

『Kakka』said

Speaking of which, he said that he prepared for snacks right?

「...Everyone should be hungry by now, I guess」

『Kakka』laughs



The room next door is a party room.

True, there's meals prepared.

But...this is too luxurious for a snack...

There's various kinds of food, and their quantity is huge.

We can't eat this all just by ourselves right?

「We've already evacuated the chefs and the waiters...sorry if it's all just appetizers for party. Forgive me for there's no warm food prepared. As for drinks, you can pour it yourself」

Kakka tells us.

「Okaay, then first...everyone take a drink...!」

When it comes to meals...Katsuko-nee partitions everyone.

Her and Nagisa gives glasses to everyone.

「Pour in the drinks you want yourself...Shige-chan, what do you want?」

「I think we better keep away from alcohol」

『Kakka』answers Nagisa.

「A cup won't hurt would it? We're not combat personnel, I'll drink only one cup. Nei-chan, have you decided which wine to open?」

「Un, Nagisa...I'll take this one!」

Nei-san uncorks a wine bottle skillfully.

「Then...I'll take a drink as well」

The wine group...『Kakka』Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Nei-san.

The Fresh Orange Juice team...Margo-san, Reika, Seki-san, Michi. The combat team.

The Oolong tea team are...Mana, Megu, Ruriko and Yoshiko-san.

Ice tea...me and Misuzu.

Iced Coffee...Yukino and Mao-chan...?!

「Mao-chan, you drink coffee?」

I asked...

「Only with lots of milk!」

「...You prefer café au lait?」

「...Kafeore?」

Mao-chan tilts her head.

「Dear...put only little coffee on the milk. And put plenty of sugar」

Nagisa tells me from the side.

「Oh, I see...」

With that said, I made coffee milk for Mao-chan 「Uhihi...coffee, coffee!」

This is coffee for Mao-chan

「This child tries to imitate adults」

Nagisa says as she look at her beloved daughter 「Okay, then everyone, raise your glasses」

Katsuko-nee confirms.

「Then, before the toast...does『Kakka』want to say anything?」

「You don't have to mind me Katsuko-kun...I'm only allowed to join in the『family』out of mercy. Not an『Ojii-chan』like me should speak but the true head of household=」

Saying so...he looked at Minaho-neesan.

Yeah...the top if this『family』is Minaho-neesan.

「Then, Ojou-sama...please」

「Eh...me?」

Minaho-neesan looks at everyone with a troubled face.

「Well fine...this will be the first meal with this『family』 Everyone, let's deepen our relationship. Be sure to talk to everyone...and enjoy the conversation」

Then...Minaho-neesan looked at me.

「I'll leave the toast to you...!」

「Eh...Me?!」

「That's right...I'm the head of this『family』but you're the core, aren't you?」

The eyes of the『family』concentrates on me.

「...Danna-sama, please!」

「Onii-chan, hurry up!」

「...Master, please」

「Yo-chan, go!」

Haa...can't be helped.

「Then, everyone, raise your glasses...!」

Then, everyone raised their glasses.

I thought of saying something witty but I didn't come up with anything.

Let's just go with simple.

「Then...cheers!」

「...Cheers!」

Then...the『family』buffet party begins.

We drink...eat.

Ah...Seki-san and Yoshiko-san's not yet opening up to everyone.

But, Katsuko-nee and Mana are talking to them positively.

On the contrary...Reika's in high spirits.

They have Margo-san, Nei-san and Michi taking care of her.

I'm worried that Megu's still gloomy but...

Besides, the younger sister's hurt without even the people around knowing...

Yukino's behind the gloomy Megu, sticking...

「...It's okay, I'll there」

Nagisa whispers to me.

「I think that it's better for the elder sisters to take care of such times...!」

Un...I'll just gather everyone's attention if I give a follow up...

Megu will also be wary of it.

「Then I'll leave her to you, Nagisa」

「Yes, it's left to me!...Mao, let's go!」

「Chargeeeee!!!」

Mao-chan...where did you learn that?

「Danna-sama...a chair for grandfather」

Misuzu whispers to me.

Right...it would be bad for the old man『Kakka』to stay standing.

「Got it!」

There are chairs lined up on the wall of the room...

I take one in a hurry.

「Here...Kouzuki-san」

「Oh, thank you」

『Kakka』looks at me after taking a seat...

「Isn't it about time you stop calling me『Kouzuki-san?』」

...Err

「We're family, aren't we? The public doesn't matter but in this place, it's too formal. Besides...」

「...What?」

「If you stay too formal with me...the other girls will stay formal with me as



well...」

True...

Even now, everyone other than Misuzu aren't coming to『Kakka』at all 「Then... Can I call you Jiichan?」

「...Jiichan?」

「My real grandfather on my mother's side isn't a very good person.」 He's already dead but...when I say Ojii-san, I remember him...」

「...Hmm」

「Besides, I love my grandma on my father's side. I haven't met my grandfather on father side so...I thought that Jiichan would be good...!」

『Kakka』stares at me.

「You're really an honest to fault...you're not even trying to please me at any way」

Ah...true

Calling the owner of Kouzuki family Jiichan.

「...Sorry」

「No, it's fine. That's good. Stay foolish in the future. That's what's good about you」

Kouzuki-jiichan laughs and drinks the wine 「Grandfather...do you want to drink more wine?」

「No, I'm good...Misuzu, bring me ice tea. Also, bring me some suitable food to eat」

「Yes...grandfather」

Misuzu parts from us

...I

「...I, is this okay」

「Hm...what are you worried about?」

「Uhm...I wonder if It's okay for me to be the core of this『family』...」

The『family's』eating happily...

To be honest...I'm not confident

Jiichan looks at my face...

「Do you have a 10k yen note?」

...Eh?

I check my pocket.

I take out a 10k yen note from my wallet 「I do...what about it?」

「Let me borrow it」

I handed the bill to Jiichan

「Let me ask you...is this 10k yen bill really worth 10 yen?」

「...What?」

I don't get it

「In truth...it costs less than 10 yen to print a 10k yen note. It's just a paper. On the contrary, a single yen costs a lot more. It's because it's aluminum」

Speaking of which...that's true.

「Then who has decided that this piece of paper is worth 10k yen? Why do people all over the world believe that this is worth 10k yen?」

...Well

「Everyone trusts the state named Japan in issuing this bill.」 They trust Japan so this piece of paper is valued 10k yen. The rules of the financial economy approves it. And if Japan collapses...this paper will still have 10k yen written on it but its value will disappear」

...Yeah

「Us in the『family』system...in the end, everyone trusts and approves you」

「Me?...Minaho-neesan's power is stronger though?!」

「If it was Minaho-kun only...then I won't be joining in the group. Misuzu and

Ruriko themselves trusts because the other party is you, do you understand that?」

「...Yes」

「You're honest at fault so we believe you. Furthermore, you're honest at fault yet you're never a fool. You avoid people with malicious intent properly...you never get swept away by the river. In the meantime, if you think that someone would be safe even if you're with them...you believe them」

「That's...not everyone trust me that much」

Jiichan laughs at me saying「You don't get it」

「If you weren't the core then I won't participate this『family』...likewise, Minaho-kun won't accept me if you haven't brought me...!」

...Does that mean?

「Minaho-kun and I have survived in this world by doubting the other party. If it wasn't for you, it was impossible for this『family』development to happen...!」

「I think so too」

Turning around...Minaho-neesan was there 「Here, grandfather, drinks and meals」

Misuzu comes back as well

「Just in time...then, should we have a somewhat complicated talk...?!」

Misuzu smiles at her grandfather and Minaho-neesan...!

Misuzu, what complicated story?!

---

## 262.『Family』time 3 (Kouzuki Shigetaka)

---

「Hm...what is it about?」

Kouzuki-jiichan looks at his granddaughter with a sour face.

「Yes...grandfather. You like sour cream salmon don't you?」

Misuzu hands the dish to her grandfather smiling.

「You remember my favorite food well」

「It's my beloved grandfather after all...!」

「Even if you flatter me nothing will come out」

「No, I just love taking care of grandfather. Please stay by our side from now on」

Misuzu looks at Jiichan's face.

「Therefore...please don't push yourself so much」

Jiichan ignores what Misuzu sad and eats the salmon on the plate with a fork

「...Delicious. The cook's skill hasn't fallen」

「Grandfather...please take a look at Misuzu's face properly」

Jiichan looks at Misuzu.

「...What are you worried about? I've already accepted your relationship with this boy. I myself became a member of the『family』and promised to back-up Minaho-kun's activities. Far from that, I also guaranteed that you'll be the owner of Kouzuki house in the future. Misuzu, isn't everything you could wish for granted?」

...Misuzu speaks with a serious look.

「It's too good of a result...I didn't expect grandfather to concede to us」

「...Are you dissatisfied that it's too good?」

「I'm not dissatisfied...I'm uneasy」

Uneasy?...Misuzu is?!

「Minaho-kun came over for the same reason I presume?」

Jiichan looks at Minaho-neesan's face.

「Yes. I do trust what Kouzuki-sama has said. Kouzuki-sama is a person that never turns back once he makes a promise...however」

Minaho-neesan stares at Jiichan's eyes...

「I can only see Kouzuki-sama as rushing」

「Oh...Minaho-kun. Could you tell me why you have reached that conclusion?」

Jiichan said smiling.

「Sure...first, Kouzuki-sama is trying to invite the『enemy』to this hotel, making himself a target as well. I think that it's an action that's unlikely for Kouzuki-sama who's usually careful」

「What...It'll be just an inspection for Kouzuki security service. How will they function in case of emergencies」

「...If it's just to test the security company's ability... then I think that it'll be a problem to let them deal with Cesario Viola」

...Right

Cesario Viola is a boss of a huge criminal group in US.

He won't hesitate to take other people's lives.

On top of that, the organization is filled with mysteries...

It's too dangerous to take them on.

「...The guards who lead us from the theater were replaced by Viola's minions. It's true that the enemy have infiltrated Kouzuki security service.」

Misuzu says

「I can only think of this as Viola making progress before Nei-san discovers Viola in US」

「Yes. It may look like that Viola came to Japan because of the information leak about Nei but...I think that the root of this case is deeper」

Jiichan...

「Kukuku...you people are really sharp. What a wonderful judgement...!」

He takes the wine of glass and drink it.

「Grandfather, please tell me your true intentions」

Jiichan smiles from what Misuzu said

「I don't have any. I just wanted to make the man named Cesario Viola to come here...」

Just to summon Viola?

「This is the bay area...the outskirts of Tokyo. Even if we make a big fuss over here, uninvolved people won't be dragged in. Those in the hotel are only those from Kouzuki security service and the professionals hired by Kudou. We'll be fighting Cesario Viola and his party directly」

「It's not only fighters that are in this hotel」

Misuzu said

「Yes. I feel sorry but you will take the special spectator seats with me...that's the only way to attract the『enemy』 Once again, sorry」

「No...I think that we'll be attacked by Viola someday anyway. We can't be hiding ourselves forever...」

Minaho-neesan said.

Yeah...even if we hide ourselves in the school...

We'll return to normal classes after golden week...

If we were attacked by Viola during the days where the students are present... it'll only cause serious damage on normal students.

「I appreciate being at the center of guard together with Kouzuki-sama」

「It makes me happy that you say that」

Jiichan laughs.

「However...grandfather」

Misuzu stares at her grandfather

「It's not only us you brought here...true?」

...It's not just us?

「The amount of food prepared in this room is just too many」

...Speaking of which

The amount is too much that even if we increase the number of people by three times we still won't be able to finish it.

「Besides...there's a possibility that the negotiations between us could've been broken. I don't think that grandfather has prepared the dishes for us from the beginning」

Misuzu speaks what she felt.

「No...if the negotiations didn't work out, I intended to offer you a meal. I don't want to see women at their age feeling hungry...」

Jiichan answers.

「But, it is as Misuzu says. The meals aren't prepared only for you all」  
「...As expected, your students are also with you?」

Misuzu asks

「Students?」

I asked, Misuzu...

「It's the gathering of the children of the executives of Kouzuki branch families」

Oh...those sitting behind Jiichan in the theater.  
...The elite youth?

「It wasn't only Shiba Takahiko-san that you took in here, is it?」  
「Yes...out of 21 people, the people I didn't have much expectations from were sent home. With Shiba Takahiko returning as well, the remaining would be 15 people」

15 of those elites?

「Why did you bring those people to this hotel?」  
「I'd like to see how much guts they have...!」  
「Please stop the jokes. Misuzu's asking seriously」

Misuzu's angry

「...Let's see. To tell the truth. It's not just the 15 young men but also their parents were called」

...Eh?!

「There are some siblings among the 15 as well, there are 9 parents who came. All of them are leaders in Kouzuki group. Takahiko's brother, and Shiba Okitachi-kun is also here...」

Shiba Okitachi...Isn't he the boss of the new faction in Kouzuki group 「The pretext is negotiations with Shirasaka family. The representatives of Shirasaka house will be coming here and negotiate with us. I only told the executives to dismantle the television and news company of Shirasaka house and swallow it to Kouzuki group in this occasion. As for the young ones, I told them to watch the negotiations to study...!」

In short...nobody in them knows about Cesario Viola's assault.  
I see, that's why...

The lobby and the shops on the first floor are business as usual.

The hotel man and shop clerks were all Kouzuki security service guards...

Just so the nine executives under Jiichan and the 15 sons of the executives can't notice...

「The security system seems strict but if you say that it's a countermeasure against media, they'll be convinced. Either way, the Shirasaka house is in trouble thanks to Minaho-kun」

The scandal of Shirasaka Sousuke and Shirasaka house is making a big fuss on the internet and television.

It won't be strange to think that in the midst of deciding the future of Shirasaka house, the security's going to be strict.

「But...isn't there an individual in contact with Kouzuki security service among the executives? The information about the foreign crime syndicate attacking might've leaked already」

Misuzu said worriedly.

「There's no problem. I am here. Whether an assault is expected, me being here means that the enemy's going to be repelled without fail. Even so, if there's an executive who fears the enemy and goes against my summon...he'll be fired. Besides」



Jiichan leaks out a sigh and looks at us.

「Those who won't come will just show that they are『traitors』...」

...I see

The accomplice on Japan side that's already been connected with Viola and sent down the minions to Kouzuki security service...

Jiichan is thinking that it's among the nine executives.

「Everyone will come no matter what...they don't want to be known as the『traitor』this early...」

Finally...I could see Jiichan's whole plan.

Jiichan intends to take out the traitors inside Kouzuki group at once.

For that reason...he's trying to gather all of the people involved at this hotel and making himself a decoy.

「It's also the same reason why I brought the young ones. Their sons are hostages. If they think about their child, even if they know that there's a raid then they will have no choice but to come」

That's Jiichan's plan.

「...Sorry but I decided to use your revenge」

Jiichan tells Minaho-neesan

「I don't mind...we are also using Kouzuki-sama's plan too」

Minaho-neesan answers

「I finally understood what grandfather is thinking」

Misuzu stares at her grandfather

「But...I still feel that you only gave half of the answer」

...Half?

「I won't say any further than this」

Jiichan answers.

Therefore, Misuzu...

「Danna-sama, I've got a request...!」

Misuzu looks at me.

「... What is it?」

「Could you do Ruriko-san's first experience in grandfather's preferred situation?」

「Hey...Misuzu?」

Jiichan's surprised.

I...

「Sure...let's do it in a place, situation and costume Jiichan prefers. Ruriko, come here!」

I call Ruriko...

Ruriko's talking to Yoshiko-san and Margo-san.

Ah...the ring circling around Megu's getting bigger.

In addition to Nagisa and Mao-chan...Katsuko-nee, Nei-san, Reika, and Seki-san are there too.

Megu, even though everyone's worried about her...

She doesn't realize it herself

「What's wrong, Onii-sama?」

Ruriko comes right away

Her posture is too elegant

「Well you see」

「...Yes?」

I can't bear to say such a thing to this cute and elegant girl...

「It's about Ruriko and my first sex...Jiichan's thinking about it a lot」

「...Jiichan?」

「Oh, I feel slightly awkward to call him grandfather you see...」

Ruriko smiles

「Onii-sama, you seem to be getting along with grandfather!」

She said happily

「Yeah...then, could we leave it all to Jiichan?」

「It's fine. Don't worry. I'm sure that grandfather will make it a romantic

experience」

Misuzu follows it up.

Ruriko looks at me and Jiichan...

「It's my first time having sex...I will leave it all to Onii-sama and grandfather...!」

「...Ruriko」

Jiichan's deeply moved.

「Misuzu would also like to have grandfather watch us having sex as he prefers. Danna-sama, is that okay?」

「Sure, it'll be troublesome to do everyday though...so just once a while」

「...You people」

...Also

「Misuzu, Ruriko...I thought of making Jiichan name our child...what do you think?」

「Agreed!」

「Me too...Onii-sama!」

The two answered smiling.

「Misuzu...how old do you want to give birth?」

「It would be best after graduating from college but...no, it's okay anytime after entering college」

Misuzu changed her opinion in the middle of speaking...

She must be thinking about Jiichan's age.

Jiichan's already 82 years old so if we want him to see the face of his great-grandchildren, the earlier is better.

「Then, let's do it when I'm 20 years old. Do your best to live in the next four years!」

I tell Jiichan

「Ruriko, doesn't mind bearing right away」

Ruriko who doesn't know about sex or pregnancy calmly says that.

「That's no good」

「Why, Onii-sama...?」

「You've got to enjoy your student life until you graduate in high school...that's decided. It's hard to take care if a baby's born」

That's our rule

「You're right...then, I will leave it to Onii-sama when I can bear a baby」

Ruriko smiles with an innocent angelic smile.

「Ruriko is already Onii-sama's...!」

「Y-Yeah」

Is this really okay?...Making such a pure child mine?

No, I won't hand her to anyone else though

「With that said...grandfather, please take care of your life」

Misuzu tells her grandfather smiling

Her mouth's smiling but her eyes are serious.

「Got it...I won't be unreasonable. I promise that」

Jiichan promises.

「...Minaho-oneesama」

Suddenly...Misuzu calls Minaho-neesan『Oneesama』

「I will be calling you Oneesama from now on. Therefore...Oneesama, please stop calling him『Kouzuki-sama』but『Grandfather』instead」

「...Misuzu-san」

「Family united as a『family』...that's how we win. I think that there are a lot of complicated feelings but...please treat us well」

I see...Minaho-neesan's true grandfather is Kuromori Kounosuke.

She may feel resisting about calling Jiichan『Ojii-san』

「Uhm...Minaho-neesan. I also have a real grandfather...furthermore, he's someone I don't like that much...so I can't call him『Ojii-san』 Thus...I decided to call him『Jiichan』」

I tell Minaho-neesan

「Therefore, how about Minaho-neesan try to call him in a different way?」

Minaho-neesan smiles...

「Thank you. But, because I was an illegitimate child...I've never seen Kuromori Kounosuke alive Therefore I don't feel resistance like you」

Oh...I see.

She's just purely resistant to call『Kouzuki Shietaka』who's a customer until now as『Ojii-san』

「But...it is as Misuzu-san said. We've got to unite more...grandfather, my best regards」

Minaho-neesan bows to Jiichan

「Umu...same here, best regards Minaho」

Jiichan stopped adding『Kun』

「We can break each other's walls even with such trivial things We may be a『pseudo family』, a『pretend family』but...we'll eventually have a strong『bond』」

「Yes...I will work for it as well」

Minaho-neesan answers

「Minaho-oneesama, this way...I'd like to consult you about something」

Misuzu tells Minaho-neesan.

「Yes...I also want to talk about with you」

「Grandfather, excuse us」

「Umu」

Misuzu and Minaho-neesan get off their seats.

The two of them head to the wall side...started to talk seriously.

What's left is Jiichan, me, and Ruriko.

「The two of them aren't satisfied with my explanation」

Jiichan smiles wryly.

「The two of them have sharp senses...no, they're too sharp」

True...Minaho-neesan and Misuzu are both smart. Their intuition is also sharp. When they find a problem, they come up with a countermeasure and carry it out with leverage.

「Compared to that...Ruriko and you are slightly slow」

Jiichan looks at me.

「Sorry」

「No...it's not a bad thing. A human that's too sharp will do unnecessary wounds to others. Your and Ruriko's dullness may break the sharpness of the two. I think that's a needed power on itself」

「Is that so?」

「Yes, a group of humans with only sharp people will self-destruct. With a dull one becoming a weight, the group functions. That's when Michi shows up with dishes」

「Hm...what's wrong?」

「Is the conversation done?」

Oh. Misuzu, Minaho-neesan and Jiichan have been talking all this time... She tried keeping away from me.

「Yeah, it's done already」

「...I've chosen those that seem delicious」

Michi brought me dishes

「Thanks...Michi」

I receive the plate thanking her  
Speaking of which, I haven't eaten yet

「Itadakimasu!」

I stab the fish with a fork, and eat it  
...Delicious

Well, this is a hotel dish after all  
...Huh?

Michi's standing in front of me...?

「Hm...what's wrong?」

Michi...

「U-Uhm...Master」

She kneels in front of me and looked up.

「Could it be that you want me to pat your head?」

「...Yes」

「Do you like me patting your head?」

「...Yes」

Err...this puppy girl

「At such times, you should properly say『please pat my head』」

Michi speaks embarrassed...

「Please pat Michi's head...Master...!」

Dammit...so cute

This 15 year old third year middle school girl.

「Come here...I'll pat your head」

I put the plate aside and embrace the squatting Michi

Then, I pat her long black hair

「...It feels good」

「If you want something from me then say it right away. I'll do it as long as it's not unreasonable」

「Thank you very much. Master...!」

Ruriko watches over us smiling.

「Isn't that great...Michi-san?」

Michi and Ruriko are of the same age so neither of them are the『elder sister』

「Does Ruriko want patting too?」

「Yes, later...I'll ask a pat from Onii-sama after his meal」

Michi recalls that I'm in the middle of the meal after hearing what Ruriko said

「Ah...please continue eating!」

Michi parted from me

「You don't have to panic that much...I'll give Michi some patting later too」  
「Yes, thank you!」

Now then...let's go back to our meal  
When I take the plate back...Mana comes

「Mana also brought some! If you're done with that, eat Mana's dish too!」  
No...that's helpful but

「Mana...why are you still naked?」  
「Well...it's just troublesome to get dressed again」

Mana's no longer her pussy.  
Her cute breast and crotch are all visible.

「Err...are you sure? I can see it」  
Even though she hated being seen by Jiichan earlier  
Right now, she's calm in front of Jiichan

「Yeah...I stopped worrying about it. Thinking that she's Mana's grandfather...I stopped caring」

This one's also fast at deciding things.  
「Ojii-chan can look at Mana with lewd eyes but he can't do anything. If that's the case, then I thought of giving him some freebie」  
「Hm, I think that's a good idea」

Jiichan says happily.  
「Besides...I've got to appeal even at this time!」  
Mana rubs her skin to me.  
「There's a lot of fascinating ladies...Mana won't lose!」  
Mana seems to be appealing to me that she's sexy.

「Mana...I'm eating a meal right now. Don't flick your nipples in front of my eyes」  
「You can just eat Mana along with the rice!」

Now then...what to do?



「Rather than thta...if you don't put on your clothes, you'll get in trouble」

「Eh, why?」

「Don't you think that there's too much food if it's just us?」

Mana looks at the table.

「Speaking of which...that might be true」

「It seems that there are other people coming to ear here too」

「Other people?」

「Look, those wearing expensive looking suits lined up behind Jiichan in the theater...」

「Eh, those men well be coming?」

Mana's surprised

「Let's see...It's about time I call them too」

Jiichan said feigning ignorance.

「Eh, No way!」

「It's true...so hurry up and get dressed」

「Okay~!」

Mana rushed to the place where she took off her clothes 「Hmm, what an interesting lass」

「There's some untact in her so Ruriko, don't copy her」

「Yes, Onii-sama」

「It's no good to wander around naked too」

「Yes. Ruriko won't show it to anyone but Onii-sama...!」

...Yeah

Ruriko's elegant so it feels a bit too stiff.

Well, that's very much like her so that's fine.

「Geez! Yoshi-kun no Baka! Baka! Ochinchin!」

...Huh?

Megu...what's wrong?

Your face is so red...

「You like that girl that much!? Sure! Either way, I'm not an Ojou-sama! I'm

not as beautiful as the other girls!」

Who let Megu drink alcohol!

Ah...Nei-san's standing with a bottle of wine from behind.

She's bowing her head saying『Sorry』towards me...

...Nei-san

Yeah...she made her drink

「...You already hate me don't you?!」

Megu shouts half-crying

---

## 263. 『Family』time 4 (Megumi and Misuzu)

---

「...Megu?」

The drunk Megu's different from usual.

「Geez, Yoshi-kun no Baka! Baka, Baka...uwaaan!」

Megu shouts loudly and burst into tears.

Then she squat down.

「Hey...are you okay?」

I squat down and peek on the crying Megu.

「Don't get close to me...bakaa...!」

...Eh?

「No, no...Come, come here...embrace me...Yoshi-kun!」

This time she's embracing me.

「Let's kiss, I want a kiss...Kiss meeee!」

Megu's blocking my lips with hers.

Megu's breath smells like wine.

The tongue put in my mouth tastes like wine too.

...Just how much have you drunk?

「I love you...I love you so muuuuch.... Megu loves Yoshi-kun the moooost ...!」

She tells me with glazed eyes.

「Megu...wants to confine Yoshi-kun. I want to bind you with a rope so you won't go anywhere. Even the meals or toilet, Megu will take care all of it. Megu will be embracing you at night. Yoshi-kun is Megu's dakimakura...!」

Err...

Just how far is this drunk woman going to be reckless?

「I won't let you go! I'll never give you to anyone. Yoshi-kun is Megu's. Just look at Megu...!」

Megu kisses my lips passionately again.

「Puha...Megu loves kissing Yoshi-kun! I want to do it forever!!」

...Seriously.

Megu, just how much have you piled up?

Her stagnated feelings are being released all at once.

Oh...I see.

Megu actually hasn't drank that much.

It's impossible to get dead drunk in such short time...

In the first place, Nei-san won't give her such a huge amount of wine.

Actually, it around three to four cups only.

But, Megu...

She's demanding under the pretext of being drunk.

She's making an excuse that if she's drunk then I'll spoil her.

Thus she feels drunk after just a couple of glasses of wine.

「...Megu」

「Whaat!?!」

Megu looks at me.

「...You're cute, Megu」

「Geez, that's what you're telling everyone, don't you? Megu's not cute! There are other girls that are much more cuter...!」

Megu's inferiority complex is deeply rooted.

It's not just a simple matter of appearance.

Megu grew up as a commoner of Yamamine family.

Her house was old, never a wealthy one.

On top of that, it's been bullied by the rich Shirasaka family which is their relative.

She's got an inferiority complex when it comes to good families.

「What's with you being chummy with Misuzu-san and Ruriko-san...who cares. I'm not a princess. Yoshi-kun should just go to the princesses!」

Furthermore...with Ruriko joining in the『family』the circumstances has changed.

The『Kuromori』so far...were Minaho-neesan and the people from the mansion formerly, Misuzu, Megu, Mana and I were just added in.

With Misuzu and Mana becoming my『women』...they're supposedly to be added to『Kuromori』as special

Megu's born in the『mansion』 so she's been close with Minaho-neesan and co. from the beginning.

However, with Ruriko's participation...now there's now three groups among women in here.

1. The former members of『Kuromori』, Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, Nagisa, Margo-san, Nei-san

2. Those linked in Shirasaka family, Megu, Mana, and Yukino—Though, she's not in the family.

3. Those linked in Kouzuki house, Misuzu, Ruriko, Michi, Reika...and Seki-san and Yoshiko-san—though they're not in the『family』yet Before, Misuzu was one of my『woman』through Nagisa's connection...then Kouzuki family were brought in and she became the head of a huge faction in a dash.

Misuzu doesn't intend that however...that's how Megu sees it.

Furthermore, even Jii-chan entered the『family』...

The Kouzuki faction is undoubtedly the major faction of『Kuromori』

As for Megu...she feels like she's losing her position.

「Even Megu's a princess...for me」

「Lies...I'm not cute!」

「You're cute...Megu」

I rub Megu's back.

「Don't talk to me like I'm a child...I'm not Michi-san!」

...Hmm

Megu's hard.

「...Sorry」

「What?」

「If you were younger or older...then I'd know what to do somehow but...」

I look at Megu's eyes.  
Beautiful narrow eyes.

「We're classmates, same age...there are times I don't know what to do」  
Should I pamper her or just accept her?  
It's somewhat hard.  
Megu then look at me with a aloof face...

「Yoshi-kun should just do what he wants!」  
Even if you tell me that...if I do as I like, Megu will just be dissatisfied.  
Even now, she's been saving up so much emotions.  
How can I satisfy Megu?

「Enough, if Megu-oneechan keep whining that much then just have sex with Onii-chan on the other room...!」

Mana who wore her dress in a hurry came back  
As expected, she's also worried about Megu.  
Megu's been taking care of Mana up until now so this time, Mana's the one worried about Megu.  
Or rather...Mana  
You didn't wear your underwear, just your dress?

「If you have sex, most of those feelings of frustration would be blown away!」  
Megu looks at me as Mana speaks.

「I'm okay with it...Yoshi-kun, want to go to the other room?」  
...Err

「...I won't」  
「Why?!」  
「Even if we get rid of your bad mood with sex...Megu will just drown in sex」  
「Isn't it fine to drown?」

Megu looks at me with passionate eyes.  
「I don't want to have such pessimistic kind of sex」  
「...Yoshi-kun」  
「I'd like to have sex with Megu having a bright smile...not escaping from reality」

「...But」

「Megu, you're my wife aren't you?」

「Isn't Misuzu-san much better as Yoshi-kun's wife than Megu?」

...Megu

「Megu...do you want to be my wife?」

「...I want to. But」

Megu's being crushed by her inferiority complex towards Misuzu.

「Then do your best. Don't give up」

「Because...I don't have anything I could win against Misuzu-san」

Megu looks down.

「I'm not beautiful. I'm not an Ojou-sama. I can't even do Japanese dance...」

「Bu...Megu can run, right?」

I said.

「The figure of Megu running on the field is so cool, I love it. I think that Megu's running figure is beautiful」

「Want to have sex on the field?」

「Idiot...I don't mean it like that. Megu has her own charms」

Yeah...I've got to fix this properly

「Misuzu...come here」

I call out Misuzu.

Misuzu who's talking to Minaho-neesan comes to my side.

「Yes, what is it Danna-sama?」

I speak to Misuzu while embracing Megu

「Megu seems to have inferiority complex towards Misuzu. She said that Misuzu's a beautiful ojou-sama」

「Yoshi-kun...wait a moment!」

With the person herself being told...Megu panics but...

I hold Megu with both of my hands and didn't let her go.

「Therefore, I'd like to make it clear in this case...Misuzu also has an inferiority

complex towards Megu, right?」

I tried asking for better or for worse.

No...if it's Misuzu, she'll understand.

「Yes. Misuzu also has an inferiority complex towards Megumi-san」

...Look

「...Misuzu-san, why?」

Megu's surprised.

「I'm just a girl. From a normal house」

「Yes...therefore, there are a lot of things I can't beat Megumi-san with」

Misuzu smiles at Megu.

「Misuzu has always lived in an all girl's school...I never rode a train or a bus. I don't know anything done by a normal high school girl」

Misuzu's going to a prestigious Ojou-sama school.

「Therefore...I am very worried if I can live well with Danna-sama. Danna-sama is taking care of me and trying to match with my lifestyle...it makes me feel sorry」

Megu's listening to what Misuzu's saying.

「Perhaps, Megumi-san's relationship with Danna-sama is a normal high school romance. Misuzu can't ever leave Kouzuki house. I can never experience romance of ordinary high school students with Danna-sama. That's why I'm very envious of Megumi-san...!」

「...Misuzu-san」

「I can't become Danna-sama's classmate. Even at school or sports festival... even in school trips, won't Megumi-san be able to accompany Danna-sama?」

Right, there's those events.

「Have you come home on the way from school eating ice cream? Misuzu's envious of that. A daughter of Kouzuki house can't buy-eat while in her uniform...!」

Misuzu smiles sadly.



「Megumi-san, please do what Misuzu can't with Danna-sama. Please」  
「Misuzu-san...Sorry, I...!」

Megu cries.  
I...

「Misuzu...I'll be going to watch during your school and sports festival. I'll support you」  
「Yes, I'll prepare a family ticket for that」  
「Even in school trips...it's impossible to do it all but I'll try to follow you at least one day. There should be a day where you're free to go anywhere」

Yeah...I'd like to go for Misuzu even if that means skipping classes for a day  
「Danna-sama...! Thank you very much...But」  
「No, I'll go anywhere. Where's Misuzu's school trip? Kyoto, or could it be Okinawa?」  
「...Italy」

...I-Italy?  
「...Isn't Italy a whole day travel?」  
「A direct flight will take 12 hours」  
「Hmm, you're going for a school trip at least for a week, right?」  
「Yes」  
「Then, if it's Sunday...then I can somehow come in and out」  
「Then you can't stay in Italy for hours」  
「It's fine, I just want to walk with Misuzu on the same destination」  
「...Danna-sama!」

The crying Megu looks up.  
「Misuzu-san, sorry. I won't say selfish things anymore」  
「No, Megu, you can speak selfishly. In Megu's case, it'll just be troublesome if you hold it up」  
「That's right, Megumi-san. Danna-sama will listen to all of our selfishness!」  
...Err  
All is a bit troublesome but...well fine.  
「Misuzu-san...no, Misuzu-oneesan」

Megu calls Misuzu an『elder sister』

「No, Megumi-san. Please don't add『Oneesan』on me」

Misuzu said smiling gently

「Misuzu wants to be a rival equal to Megumi-san...!」

「...Rival?」

「Yes. A rival for being Danna-sama's wife」

7Misuzu smiles.

「Megumi-san is a very touch opponent but...Misuzu won't lose!」

「...!」

Megu seems to have no confidence in herself.

「Misuzu can't stay with Danna-sama all day long. But, Megumi-san is on the same school, class with him...having such a normal romantic life with Danna-sama as high school students...it's a very big handicap but I'll never lose. Misuzu will do her best...!」

Misuzu's saying that Megu's normal high school life with me is much better than herself being a daughter of a noble family.

Megu's much closer to me.

「Understood...I won't lose either!」

Megu's clouded heart is finally clearing up from what Misuzu said.  
Misuzu swears with strong eyes.

「That's expected from Megumi-san, my rival!」

Misuzu presents her hand to Megu.  
The two girls shake hands.



「Hmm...that's youth for you」

Jii-chan said as he look at us  
Megu's taken by Misuzu.

Once again, they're talking to Ruriko and Reika and co.

Misuzu who's gloomy a while ago...is now opening her heart through Misuzu.

「That saved us. It's thanks to Misuzu」

「I wonder? I think that it's your own power」

「No, I didn't do anything though?」

「Well...if that's what you think then that's fine」

Reika comes to us.

「『Kakka』, I never knew that a『family』is this fun!」

「Stop with the『Kakka』...call me『Ojii-chan』」

「Okay...『Ojii-chan』...!」

Reika said embarrassed.

「Hmm. Being told by a beauty like Reika-kun, it makes my body shiver.」

Jii-chan said satisfied.

「Then I'll do it more. Ojii-chan!」

「I already had enough...hurry up and be『family』with this boy too」

「...What?」

Reika looks at me dumbfounded

「Lord...why?」

「You don't get it...Reika-kun, you feel so pleased about having a lot of『little sisters』, but this one is what's essential to the『family』」

「...is that so?」

「Yes. In the first place, would Reika become his『wife』, or『sister』...pick one」

Reika...

「Let's see...the other members have their position clearly decided」

Right. Everyone has decided their own relationship with me.

「But, Michi calls Lord as『Master』」

「That girl's a masochist. She wants to be treated like she's owned like a dog, so that's fine」

Jii-chan said

「Then, what should I do?...What does Lord hope for?」

To be honest, I'm in trouble

Reika is older than Katsuko-nee and Nagisa but...

She's not『Nee-san』like at all

That said, she doesn't have the『wife』feel in her too

No, with this person's frank and simple personality, it's unthinkable of her as a lover...

She's not regretting having entered our『family』

However...her relationship with me isn't coming that nicely.

I've got to fix this...

I feel like I can't have sex with her.

「Hey hey, it's pitiful if you ask him. Reika-kun, decide it by yourself and suggest it to him」

Jii-chan said so.

「That may be right but...I don't have any experience with men at all」

Reika's troubled.

「Then take your time and let's build mutual trust bit by bit」

I tell Reika.

「I do trust you but. Lord isn't a person that will forsake us and run away from the battlefield」

「Uhm...it's not trust in the battlefield but trust in between man and woman」

I'm trying to explain it but I can't think of a good example.

「Reika-kun...you have agreed to have sex with him, have you not?」

Instead of me, Jii-chan asks Reika.

「Yes...anytime will do」

「But, it'll be the first time a man touches your body...won't there be resistance?」

「I will endure it. I'll think of it as going to a dentist...」

...Dentist?

For Reika, having sex with me is on the same level as the dentist treatment?

「You can't say that as a relationship of mutual trust...Hey, Nei, come here」

Jii-chan calls out Nei-san

「What's wrong? Ah, sorry Yo-chan! I never thought that Megu-chan would get so drunk...I didn't intend to let her drink that much」

No, in that case, Megu herself is the one that wants to be drunk.  
Even a glass of wine would be enough for her.

「Instead of an apology...let him massage your big breasts. He looks like he wants to touch Nei's breast so much」

Hey hey...Jii-chan?!

「Eh, is that so Yo-chan? If you wanted to touch it then you can do it anytime!」

Nei-san comes to me

「...U-Uhm!」

「What's wrong, embarrassed?」

「...Yes」

「Then, I'll give you a hug first!」

Nei-san embraces me tightly  
My face is buried in Nei-san's plump breasts.

「Ufufu...so cute!」

Nei-san pats my head, showing a gentle smile.

「Reika-kun...this is mutual trust between men and women」

Jii-chan said

「Take a look...at him and her, there's no rejection to physical contact at all」  
「True, it is as you say...!」

Reika's looking at us curiously

「Geez, Yo-chan...if you're hugging Oneechan then concentrate on hugging!」

Nei-san scolds me.

「...right」

「Good! Want to massage my breasts?」

「Ah...yeah」

「Here, go on」

I put my hand on Nei-san's breast and massage it.

Huge...soft

It's on a different level compared to Misuzu and Megu.

It's on a different dimension compared to Michi's flat chest.

Michi's breast is 2D...Nei-san's breast is Hyper3D.

No, what am I talking about?

「Want to touch it directly? Should I strip?」

Nei-san said but...

「No...I'm fine like this」

It looks stupid but I'm massaging Nei-san's breast while being embraced by her...

「Ufufun!」

「What's wrong?」

「...I'm happy」

「...Eh?」

「Yo-chan's in my arms...wanting my body. You see...!...!」

Nei-san whispers in my ears.

「...that part's wet right now!」

...Err

「I see...I've got to reach this stage as well」

Reika...what stage?

「Yes...Reika-kun, the wall in your heart is still too many. That wall is useless in front of the『family』 Especially, your wall against this guy is big」

「...Understood. Thank you for your guidance」

For Reika, sex and romance is some kind of『road』? Training?

Haa...this one's a huge problem too.

I've got to do something about the『family』...

「Geez, you're thinking about something else again!」

Nei-san's angry.

「Ah, sorry」

「Geez, I'll kiss you!」

Then, Nei-san kisses me.

「AH, Nei-san and Onii-chan are kissing!」

「Uha, true!」

Mana and Mao-chan comes over.

「Me too, Me too...!」

「Mao too!」

You children...

No, they're really children though

14 and 3 years old.

「Can't be helped...here」

Nei-san's weak to『little sisters』

She let me go.

「Here, Onii-chan!」

Mana kisses me

She puts in her tongue like it's natural.

She's being developed sexually even more...

Is this okay?

「Aaahn, Mao too, Mao too...!」

For Mao-chan...I gave her a kiss on the cheek.

「Eh, you won't kiss Mao in the mouth?!」

Mao-chan says that but...

「Didn't you do it before?」

Yeah...I kissed Mao-chan in the bathroom in the mansion's bathrom.

But, my decision is different from before.

I'll become Mao-chan's papa.

I can't do any further.

「Mao...a kiss in the mouth are for adults」

Nagisa tells her daughter.

「Then it's okay once I'm 4...?」

「Let's see...around 12 years old?」

「Mao-chan's already a grandma by then!!!」

Mao-chan turned everyone in the room to her enemy.

「Cute, so cute!」

Reika smiles and embraces Mao-chan angrily.

「Don't make that face, Reika-oneesan will kiss you!」

...Ah

Reika kisses Mao-chan.

「Hey...Reika-oneesan?」

Nagisa panics.

「...we're family anyway」

Reika shows with a straight face.

...Seriously

...Then

Suddenly, the door from the other room opens...

「...As expected, they were here!」

「...『Kakka』!」

A group of young men dressed in luxurious suit comes in.

It's Jii-chan's『students』

「Yareyare...they found us」

Jii-chan shows a sour face.

「What?!...Ain't there a meal prepared?」

「Do you not mind us partaking in this as well?!」



「Somehow, isn't it all beautiful ladies in here?」

「As expected...『Kakka's』hobby is wonderful!」

The men enter without even asking for permission.  
What's with these guys?

## 264. The private students.

---

Misuzu comes to my side.

「Please don't worry about those who made noise just now. It was purposely done by the people behind」

She whispers behind my ears.

「The tallest man on the back, Kouzuki Souji-san...he's grandfather's brother's grandson」

True, there's a man observing us with a calm appearance.

「Next to him is Souji-san's brother, Subaru-san. The one in the middle of those making noise right now is Kouzuki Satoshi-san. That person is on the lineage of grandfather's younger brother. On Satoshi-san's side, Natsuko Makoto-san. It's grandfather's sister's grandson. Those four are the princes of Kouzuki house...」

...I see

「The people around Souji-san are on his faction. Next to Makoto-san is Tsunoda Fumikazu-san. Behind Souji-san is Torada Chitoku-san, Koku Rakujin-san, Oohari Ryou-san, Kata Takashi-san...everyone of them are sons of old executives of Kouzuki group」

With the princes of Kouzuki family as center...they form a faction 「Then... those comig from the corridor」

Yeah, there's another faction solidified near the entrance, apart from Kouzuki Souji's faction...

There's another group that can be seen from outside the door.

「Those are the sons of the new emerging force in Kouzuki group. Shiba Akira-

san...Takahiko-san's brother. Hanaoka Shinsuke-san, Koumori Akira-san, Kawafuji Akishi-san, Kouzuki Kenshi-san...Kenshi-san's origin is a branch family of Kouzuki family however, he's in this faction as he hates Souji-san. Then, that's Takagi Fuuta-san」

Jii-chan's students are divided into the prince faction (9) and the rising group (6)

Just like their parents, the children are also having a conflict as a faction...

「Who told you to come in?」

Jii-chan glares at the young men with strong eyes.

「G-Grandfather...that is, you see」

Kouzuki Satoshi panics.

「You're the grandson of my brother...not mine

Jii-chan said coldly

「No...I admire『Kakka』like my real grandfather...」

「If it's not the eldest son, then the relatives are also vassal...that's the law in Kouzuki family... I'm not so low to need『respect』from a young man like you」

Jii-chan said...Kouzuki Satoshi fell silent.

「...Satoshi, apologize to『Kakka』」

Kouzuki Souji speaks from behind.

「...I will also apologize. We're sorry for being impolite.」

Kouzuki Souji bows his head...

With that pose, I can't think of him apologizing sincerely.

This guy's disgusting.

「I-I'm very sorry. 『Kakka』...!」

Kouzuki Satoshi also bows his head.

「No, it's not just Satoshi. We also have been impolite. We're sorry. We reflect on this」

The one who said that is...Natsuki Makoto?

That person seems to be the oldest...I guess he's in the first half of twenties.

Natsuki Makoto's apology seems to be sincere.

He's properly apologizing and reflecting on it.

「Who brought you here?」

Jii-chan asks the young men.

「...It's me」

A woman's voice comes from the corridor.

Then, a woman wearing tight skirt and glasses comes in the room in the middle of the young men.

「You...Sudou-kun」

Jii-chan said hatefully.

「Yes...as president Kouzuki's secretary, I have guided them」

「...Why did you not confirm it with me first?」

「I just acted according to the time schedule prepared...!」

The glasses secretary said in a aloof attitude.,

「Time shifts are trivial」

Jii-chan said but.

「The schedule has already exceeded 20 minutes. In professional ethics, 20 minutes isn't a trivial gap of time. It'll have a huge impact on the future schedule progress」

This woman's giving priority to the time schedule over Jii-chan, the owner of Kouzuki house's will?

「Let me ask you just in case...what is the current time in your schedule?」

The secretary replied.

「It's supposed to be the meal and social gathering of the『students』」

「Hmm. Therefore you brought them here?」

「Yes...it's set to be 45 minutes but it's already over by 20 minutes. If they don't dine in the remaining 25 minutes, it'll affect the next schedule」

The secretary said.

Jii-chan looks at Misuzu.

「Misuzu...remember this. Being a secretary of a big company, people who makes misunderstandings like her will appear. Although...there is a lot of insensitive old men among the executives who just leave their schedule to someone else...」

The secretary gets angry.

The feelings of grudge shows up in her face completely.

「it's the president who approved the schedule I have made...!」

「Yes, I certainly approved of it...therefore I also have the authority to change the schedule as I please」

Jii-chan said calmly

「Sudou-kun...you just became my secretary this April」

「Yes. I became president Kouzuki's secretary since April first」

「The one who recommended you is...Torada-kun, secretary in chief...he's a man that's too stiff...」

「...What do you mean?」

The secretary speaks aloof.

「You're dismissed...return to your headquarters」

Jii-chan said with cold eyes.

「...Are you making an unjustified dismissal?」

「What, is your hearing bad...?! I'm saying that I'm dismissing you as my secretary. I'm not saying that you're fired. Go back to the head office and become a secretary of some incapable executive. You're not fit to be my secretary」

Jii-chan tells the secretary...

「Yes, I also felt the same way. A selfish person like president don't need a secretary's work! You don't tell me your destination and you don't try to stay by the time schedule. Cancelling the schedule of dining together with the executives of other companies multipole times...Just how many times do you think I contacted them to apologize...!」

You're snapping on this...hey

「All of the elaborate schedules I have made for president were all thrown to the bin! I'm the one who can't endure this!」

Jii-chan snorts his nose.

「...I changed my mind. You're fired」

「This is tyranny! I'll sue you!」

Jii-chan...

「Let me tell you beforehand...the one who recommended you, your boss, and your guarantor will all be given a penalty. Your parents in Nagano...weren't they managing a manufacturing company?」

「...Why do you know that?」

Jii-chan laughs

「I always read the details about my subordinates...your little sister is still a college student. Your brother should be playing softball in high school」

The secretary fell silent.

「I'll put pressure on your father's company. I'll make all the customers cut off their connection. Your father won't get the materials to make a product. I'll instruct the banks to collect their loans...by the end of the month, your father's company will be crushed, but there's no other choice」

「W-What are you talking about!?!」

The secretary's frightened.

「I will let you know what it means to make Kouzuki Shigetaka angry」

「I-Isn't that threatening?」

「It's not...this is how I do things. It can be smoothly executed」

Jii-chan smiles.

「I-I will appeal to the police! Listen to this. I have acquaintance in media!」

「Even I do have acquaintances in media. In the first place, most of the major media outlets are under my control. I'm a major shareholder after all」

「T-That's!」

「It's my first time to deal with a secretary that forgets who she is you see...I had

fun playing with you but it's already a month. I'm getting bored now. I'll ask for the next secretary who can do a bit more work and knows what she's working on」

Then, Jii-chan looks at the secretary like she's a garbage.

「Go back home already. Go to the head office and pack your stuff. Then, consult the people around you what happens if you make Kouzuki Shigetaka angry. You'll gradually understand what's going to happen to you. The scary part starts from that...!」

「I won't lose!」

Secretary Sudou stares at Jii-chan.

「What are you talking about, there's nothing to win or lose. There's not a match happening between us after all」

「Whatever president tries to do with me, I'll absolutely succeed. I'll win someday!」

Jii-chan laughs loudly.

He's sneering at her.

「Then...because of you, those who recommended you and your family will become unfortunate, you don't mind that do you?」

「...T-That's unfair President」

「What's unfair is you looking at others from the high place without thinking about your actual position. Aren't you just treasuring your so small pride?」

「I am different from president...!」

But still, the secretary doesn't yield to Jii-chan.

「Well fine. I probably won't remember you tomorrow anymore. After a while, I'll only just read the reports. When you and your father fall down...I'll read that and remember. 『Oh, there was this stupid secretary that acted against me. There's quite a lot of humans sacrificed from that』...」

「...I」

Jii-chan ignores what the secretary said and takes out his phone.

「...Tanizawa. Sorry but I just fired my secretary. Have someone send her back to the head office. Right away. I don't want to see her face again. Then...come

here at once. Either way, you've got the important information about the secretary right? I'd like to hear the explanation of the situation directly from you」

The secretary trembles in disgrace as she listens to the contents of the call. Jii-chan hangs up the phone then speaks to her.

「Director Yamaoka of Kouzuki security service will be at the front desk on the first floor. If you speak to him, he'll arrange you a car. Get out of this hotel within 5 minutes...」

Jii-chan's words were cold however you look at it.

「Yes, understood. Excuse me...!」

The female secretary glared at Jii-chan until the end then left the room.

「Thinking what's going to happen to this hotel from now on...I let her out while it's not too late. She probably won't understand it」

Jii-chan said whisperingly.

「Minaho-kun...what do you think of that woman?」

「She's a strong one. She kept glaring until the end」

Minaho-neesan answers.

「She's excellent however...she's not suitable for secretary work when it comes to behind the scenes. Her personality is to show herself forward to make an appeal」

「Yeah...if she becomes an entrepreneur then she'll have a decent success. However, with her personality, she'll make a lot of enemies and won't work with the subordinate that's not a yes-man」

Jii-chan analyzes.

「Do you want me to do something?」

Minaho-neesan asks Jii-chan

「Don't you think she's suitable on your side?」

「...That one?」

「She has that personality but she looks good. Even the style. She's confident in



herself and seeks for people that spoil her. Well, if it's her then she'll be slightly frustrated」

Jii-chan is recommending that female secretary to become a prostitute of『Kuromori』...!?

「True, there are guests who like that kind of girl but...」

「Right. If I was younger then I would be a guest of hers too. To be honest...it was fun having arguments with her for a month」

「...You like her?」

「My schedule's completely managed by Tanizawa. The female secretary just needs to sit down. And yet, she takes it seriously...it was really enjoyable making fun of her」

「Therefore you evacuated her」

「Yes...it feels pitiful to get her involved」

Jii-chan said lonely.

「Understood...please leave that child to me...!」

Minaho-neesan...?

No way you're really making her a prostitute...?!

「Can you use her on your place?」

「She won't become a『woman』 in the mansion. With that personality...we can only make her a woman that takes care of Kouzuki-sama...!」

...Eh?

「Please look forward to it...!」

「Minaho-neesan didn't end what she's speaking about on purpose」

However, I can understand it from the movement of her mouth

Minaho-neesan said『Ojii-chan』

「Shige-chan loves beauties with strong personality. He liked that girl you see」

Nagisa whispers in my ears.

「Anyway...there's a lot to look forward for in the future. I've got to survive now...!」

...I see

Jii-chan entrusted the fate of the secretary to Minaho-neesan.

I don't think that it's a good thing to become a prostitute but...

Jii-chan's also distorted...so he thinks『If she won't be a woman only for me then make her a prostitute』

But then...the relationship of Jii-chan and that woman remains broken.

Therefore, Minaho-neesan shows the possibility of Jii-chan's relationship with that secretary to continue.

With that...she's adding fuel to Jii-chan's energy to survive.

「Now then. We need a secretary for negotiations with Shirasaka house. If there's no flower then it'll just be brutal...Minaho-kun, could you lend me Katsuko-kun? Well she only needs to operate machines and make tea」

Jii-chan tells Minaho-neesan.

「I don't mind...Katsuko」

「Yes, Ojou-sama」

Katsuko-nee stands up.

「Well then, Minaho-kun and I will pack up the arrangements. The room next to this will do. Katsuko-kun, come too. Also, I will bring Seki-san as a guard...is that okay, Misuzu? I'll leave Fujimiya-kun to guard you all」

「Yes, grandfather」

Misuzu answers with a clear face.

「...I think you understand but if you can't rule this place then you don't have a future」

There's fifteen students in this place.

The children of Kouzuki family's branch house and executives.

If she can't control these people...then it'll be hard for Misuzu to become the head of Kouzuki house.

It's bad if they smell Misuzu's ambition now...

She has to show that she's a formidable opponent for them.

Therefore, Jii-chan purposely gets off from the seat.

「...Thank you for waiting,『Kakka』」

Chief Tanizawa comes in the room.

「Oh, I've been waiting. Let's talk in that room...!」

Jii-chan speaks to Chief Tanizawa.

「You people can eat here. Don't drink alcohol. Your parents will be coming on the negotiating table with the Shirasaka family. Having the parents working seriously watch their children drink. Is just bad」

Jii-chan tells the prince group.

「Yes, understood!」

Kouzuki Satoshi answered lightly.

「Then...the ladies over here are Misuzu and Ruriko's friends. My girlfriend is also here. Try to not make any blunder...!」

The young men stares at us.

As expected...they seem to be interested in the『women』

「Roger! Everyone, understands!」

Again, Kouzuki Satoshi answers in their behalf.

「Hey, those in the hallway...come with us」

Jii-chan calls out the six members of the rising faction 「Yes...excuse us」

The six people enter bowing their heads.

「They were holding back from entering the room until they get permission」

One among the group said.

「...Takagi Fuuta-san. He's the spokesman of that group」

Misuzu tells me in secret.

I see.

Both factions have someone in charge.

The prince faction...Kouzuki Satoshi who's overfamiliar.

On the rising faction...Takagi Fuuta.

With their faction boss taking a stance...they don't come out directly.

「...Who's the boss of that group?」

From Misuzu's talk earlier...the prince group has Kouzuki Souji.

The rising faction...

「Originally, it's Takahiko-san but...Takahiko-san isn't here.」

Right, Misuzu's fiance, Shiba Takahiko...

Since their engagement is annulled, he came back from the hotel.

Well, even if he remained...it'll be hard to keep face with all the other members.

「However, perhaps...it'll be Shiba Akira-san, the younger brother」

The younger if the elder isn't present...

In short, in the rising faction, the power of the father of the two is standing out.

「Who?」

「The one on the back...man wearing a blue tie」

Misuzu tells me in a small voice.

「Isn't his age that much different from me?」

「...He's on the same age as Misuzu」

Shiba Akira is on second year high school.

「Then, I'll leave the place to young ones to talk to...」

Jii-chan said and left the room.

Chief Tanizawa, Minaho-neesan, Katsuko-nee, and Seki-san follows.

When Jii-chan and others were gone...

「Oh, aren't you cute? From where are they? Which acquaintance are you, Misuzu-san or Ruriko-san?」

Suddenly...one of the young men calls out to Nei-san.

Err...it's the guy from the prince faction.

「I'm Tsunoda Fumikazu. Or rather, you know about me already don't you?」

The seducer smiles at Nei-san...

「Sorry, your mouth stinks, could you go somewhere else?」

Tsunoda gets angry.

「What's with you bitch...!」

「...Hey, Tsunoda, stop that」

Kouzuki Satoshi calls out from behind.

「You're the one who's rude」

「But...Satoshi-san」

「『Kakka』told us not to be rude with the women...!」

Kouzuki Satoshi tells Tsunoda.

「...I apologize for his actions. I'm very sorry, Ojou-sama」

...Nei-san

Laughs out loud.

「..... ? ! 」

Kouzuki Satoshi looks at Nei-san.

「...You guys have good teamwork. Just how many women have you taken with that technique?!」

Nei-san said while laughing.

「The one will seduce arrogantly, then the other guy will pretend to help out the girl...what a strategy to attract. So idiotic, there's no one in here that would be caught by that technique!」

Nei-san smiles.

「Bitch...making fun of us!」

Tsunoda presses closer to Nei-san.

「If you think so...then don't do something as stupid as that」

Margo-san comes in front

「What's with you. Whose house are you guarding? It's a rule that guards can't be brought here!」

Tsunoda screams.

「That's just the rules for the『students』right? I think that we're unrelated to that...!」

Margo-san smiles.

「I-I'm doing boxing!」

Tsunoda pretends to be tough against Margo-san.

「Is that so?...Then, you're resilient? Could you be my sandbag just for a moment?」

Margo-san comes in forward holding her fist with her palm.

「Hey, do something about this...aren't you a guard from Kouzuki security service?! I know that!」

Kouzuki Satoshi tells Reika.

Reika's hugging Mao-chan's knee...the two of them are eating sweets.

「Yes I am but...Why do I have to do something?」

Reika seems to be unable to help but cherish Mao-chan.  
She answers while putting sweets on Mao-chan's mouth.  
She's not even turning to Kouzuki Satoshi.

「Because...my father's an executive of Kouzuki group. Isn't it your job to protect us!?!」

Kouzuki Satoshi shouts...  
...But

「My current duty is to protect Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama...therefore」  
「Therefore what?!」  
「If you're hostile to me then...you'll be taken down」

Reika glares at the men.

「Yes. If you are impolite to my close friends...I can order Fujimiya-san to dispose of you」

Misuzu said clearly

「...Tsunoda, Satoshi, it's your loss」

The boss of the prince group, Kouzuki Souji...speaks to the two members.

「...Misuzu-sama, I'm sorry I apologize for their rudeness」

Kouzuki Souji bows his head.  
This one's also quite a cunning guy.  
Even though it was Tsunoda and Kouzuki Satoshi's fault...

He looks like he's unrelated to this.

---

## 265. Prince faction

---

Tsunoda approaches Nei-san overly familiar...  
Pretending to help Nei-san, Kouzuki Satoshi comes over.  
Perhaps...this is the kind of act they use to call out girls.  
「Sorry, sorry...this guy doesn't mean to do anything bad」saying something like that...  
That's their strategy to attract girls.  
However, Nei-san easily read that strategy...  
Margo-san, Reika and Misuzu insulted them...  
The boss, Kouzuki Souji comes in.  
In the end...they repeated the same pattern.

「The lady over there is just too beautiful that they've tried to call out in a friendly attitude. Let them apologize to you」

Look...it's the same.

「...Tsunoda, Satoshi」

Kouzuki Souji glares at the two.

「...Y-Yes, Souji-sama」

「Understood...Souji-san」

The two bow their heads to Nei-san

「...Sorry」

「...Yeah」

Kouzuki Souji smiles

「Therefore, Misuzu-sama...could we just forgive and forget?」

Then, he looks at us...no, the women in order...

「Though there was a small trouble...please don't mind it. How about it? It's a



rare opportunity so we would like to know Misuzu-san and Ruriko-san's friends. We will also introduce ourselves. If we do a step by step process, we won't have such troubles like earlier...」

Is that your aim?

Kouzuki Souji's trying to make Misuzu introduce us officially.

Once the introduction is over...they can freely interact with us.

They're probably trying to find out the information of each of the『women』

「I refuse」

Misuzu said clearly

「Why? Aren't we relatives? If it's your anr Ruriko-sama's friends then we would like be friends with them too...earlier, that's what『Kakka』has ordered. To get along with Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama's friends...!」

Kouzuki Souji says with a fresh smile.

If it's a normal girl then they'll be deceived by this confident expression.

But...My Misuzu isn't a normal girl.

「My...what Grandfather has said is only for Souji-san and the other『students』 to not make any blunders towards us... There's no『get along』from what he said...!」

Right...Jii-chan didn't say like that

「Although he didn't say it directly...once you read the context, you'll understand it somehow」

...Context

What context?

I don't get it.

「As the two successors of Kouzuki family...to bear the future of Kouzuki group, we... Since it's a great opportunity, I guess that『Kakka』thought that he wants us to deepen our understanding with each other」

Kouzuki Souji tries to push his opinion.

「Isn't that just Souji-san's selfish inference?」

Misuzu said.

「I wonder?...I think that Souji-sama's guess is right」

Calmly...Kata Takashi, one of the prince faction speaks up.

「Umu, I think so too. With the food and room being well...『Kakka』is ordering us to be friendly with Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama」

Natsuko Makoto speaks confidently

「I think Makoto-nii is right」

Kouzuki Satoshi nods

「...That's right. 『Kakka』never does anything useless. His orders definitely had meaning」

「...Unless you understand the back of each of his words, you'll never understand『Kakka's』heart」

Oohari Ryou and Koku Rakujin tries to add.

「Rather than that...I'm hungry!」

Torada Chitoku said.

The prince faction laughs out loud.

「Well, just wait...first, let's introduce each other and share a toast. It won't be long. Torada...don't go running to the food」

Natsuko Makoto said loudly.

「Misuzu-sama...that's how it is, please introduce everyone. Please」

Lastly, Kouzuki Subaru speaks to Misuzu with a friendly smile.

The boss of the prince faction, Kouzuki Souji's brother I think he's the youngest among them.

「Right, it's fine isn't it? Please...Misuzu-sama!」

The teamwork of the prince faction is too good.

Knowing their own position...they try to take over the situation in the direction Kouzuki Souji wants.

Misuzu...

「I've already refused...please don't make me say it twice」

「M-Misuzu-sama...why? We just want to get along with Misuzu-sama and co.!」

With their strong strategy failing, the younger Kouzuki Subaru comes in modestly.

That's their formation.

「There's no need for me to get along with you people」

Misuzu's smiling but her eyes are serious 「...Are you seriously saying that?」

Kouzuki Souji says

「Yes. Grandfather has said it a while ago. Even if you're blood related to Kouzuki, those who aren't in the lineage are just vassals. As long as you don't give us proper vassal homage...I will not accept you」

Misuzu said...the prince faction look at each other.  
The eye contact gathers at Kata Takashi.

「However...Isn't Misuzu-sama the son of『Kakka's』second child? In other words, a daughter of the branch family. You're not a legitimate heir in Kouzuki house...」

Kata attacks logically.  
This must be the planner of the prince faction.

「Shut up...!」

Ruriko who's been silent all this time speaks up suddenly.

「Misuzu-oneesama speaks in behalf of my thoughts. Think of Misuzu-oneesama's words as my own words...!」

Jii-chan's eldest son's daughter...Ruriko, the legitimate successor of Kouzuki family...

Actually, Misuzu and Ruriko's father has an elder brother that was killed but...it seems that they don't know his existence.

「Ha...I'm sorry」

Kata bows his head and retreats.

「Since when did you two get along so well? I was sure that the relationship of the two of you weren't that good...!?」

Kouzuki Souji asks suspiciously.

Right. Inside Kouzuki house, Misuzu and Ruriko's been set up to be against each other.

「We've been getting along since before! I've always adored Misuzu-oneesama since I was born...!」

Ruriko's a bit angry as she's told that her relationship with Misuzu is bad 「... Ruriko-san」

Misuzu calls her out.

「Yes, Oneesama?」

「You don't need to answer each of Souji-san's questions. That's his plan」

「...I'm sorry」

Yeah...He's letting her become emotional to make them speak a lot 「In the first place, they only apologized for formalities, without even confirming Nei-san's feelings, they just try to『sweep everything under the rug』」

Right...

These guys tries to pack it up but...

They didn't mind about the feeling of the other side at all.

「Nei-sama...are you going to forgive these people?」

Misuzu asks Nei-san.

「Not at all. These guys are making fool of women so much...!」

「If they apologize again?」

「Same. Even they bow their heads, they're laughing in their minds...I know! I hate these kind of men!」

Nei-san said clearly.

「...With that said, please don't talk to us again」

---

## 266. Laughing 『Women』

---

「...Very well. If that's what Misuzu-sama thinks then we will not force it either」

Kouzuki Souji stares at Misuzu.

「However...I'd like at least an explanation of the current situation. I'm a member of the branch family of Kouzuki house...my friends here are a group of talented people who are responsible for the future of the Kouzuki group. Naturally...we also have the right to know, don't you think?」

As usual, Kouzuki Souji doesn't break his calm composure. He seriously think that what he's saying is right, and that it's Misuzu's duty to explain to their expectations.

「What do you want to know...?」

Misuzu answers showing investigative eyes.

「During the presentation of Konpeki school, the political performance you made...the mysterious man over there come up to the stage」

No...I went up the stage on my own will  
However, Kouzuki Souji thinks that Misuzu's the same as her, a schemer with ambition to Kouzuki house.  
That's why she thinks our love is『political』

「With Shiba Takahiko's reaction afterwards...and after we moved to this hotel, with the fact that only Shiba Takahiko was called by『Kakka』... Kata...what do you think?」

Kouzuki Souji does the team play.  
He's probably thinking that it would put more pressure to Misuzu doing it as a group instead of an individual.

「Yes...first, it's definitely Shiba Takahiko who's secretly nominated as『Misuzu's fiancée』by『Kakka』」

Kata bows down to his boss and answers.

「Then...Shiba Takahiko was very upset when he came back to our waiting room from『Kakka's』summon. For some reason, he looks very mentally shocked」

「Oh...indeed, he looks like that. He's in a state of panic and nothing else. He didn't come in contact with us at all...and he shows a bare expression of hate to our group. He only muttered to his brother, Shiba Akira...and said that he feels sick so he's coming home...

Kouzuki Souji ridicules Shiba Takahiko.

I see...Shiba Takahiko having his『fiancée』status stripped out of him...

He definitely don't want to have the『prince group』his enemy to investigate the circumstances...

He ran away alone.

Well...it's these elites who make that kind of laugh.

「He's definitely looked miserable! Hahaha!」

Natsuko Makoto of the prince faction laughs lively.

Following, Kouzuki Satoshi, Torada Chitoku, Koku Rakujin, Tsunoda Fumikazu, Oohari Ryou also laughs.

They're not laughing because it's funny.

They're just laughing to damage the members of the『rising faction』who are solidified in the entrance of the room, especially Shiba Akira.

It's intentional...malicious

「Akira-kun...what did your brother tell you at that time?」

Then again...Natsuko asks with an attitude that it's natural to report to him. However, Natsuki has the dignity to push it through.

If Tsunoda purposely shows a frivolous and rude attitude...

Natsuko approaches the other's heart with a bossy atmosphere.

「...That's only a family talk. That's not something I can tell everyone」

Shiba Akira answered calmly.

「Don't say that Akira-kun! Aren't we all the same『students』」

Kouzuki Subrau...the youngest speaks brightly

「If you can't tell everyone...then tell only me later in secret! Aren't we both the youngest among the『students』 You can consult me on anything!」

Uwaa...Kouzuki Subaru smiles like a male idol

『Strong』next『soft』...they take each step after the other attentively.

「Subaru...don't push it. Akira-kun has his own circumstances as well. Being able to guess from that is what true friendship means」

「Yes...Souji-niisama Akira-kun, sorry, I didn't think of your feelings. I've said something unneeded. But, I'm really worried about you. I'd like you to understand at least that...!」

Aah...so annoying.

What's with that annoying smile!

「Now then...on the other hand, we must infer the current situation from what we know. Kata, state your inference」

「...Ha, Souji-sama. I'll present my findings. This is only my selfish inference but it may be different from the actual situation...」

Kata is making an excuse that this is only his own inference.

In short...what he's going to say won't be the official view of『Prince faction』... It's only an individual reasoning it can't be helped if it's somewhat disrespectful.

「The secretly nominated『Misuzu-sama's fiancée』is Mr. Shiba Takahiko...『Kakka's』two granddaughters, Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama's fiancée...will be two among our group, thinking that we'll become harmonious in the future」

「Kata-san, could you make it easier to understand for me?」

『Prince faction's』Torada said loudly.

「Sure, in short...perhaps, 『Ruriko-sama's fiancée』will be among us, the sons of the vassals who supported the framework of Kouzuki house for many years. Ruriko-sama is the legitimate successor of Kouzuki house. I think that he won't be able to accept a new faction's son as his grandson-in-law」

「I see, in exchange...the next in line, Misuzu-sama is thought to be matched with Shiba Takahiko」

Natsuko adds in Kata's explanation.

「Yes. Shiba Takahiko is the eldest among the members among us...If you make Mr. Shiba Okitachi the top of the Kouzuki group's『rising faction』as a vent, then it'll be a very effective plan」

Kata expresses Misuzu and Takahiko's engagement as『venting』

「Oh...Making the old men satisfied by marrying Misuzu-sama with the『rising faction』 No, those people have to be satisfied with that alone...!

Natsuki said.

「Umu...there's no need to concede to the『rising faction』any further」

Koku Rakujin nods seriously.

「No... let's change the tracks a bit. If he marries with Misuzu-sama, then Shiba house will become relative to Kouzuki house too. Then that means...Shiba house will be transferring from『rising faction』to the『aged vassals』goup」

Kata speaks his opinion.

「I see, Kakka thought of accepting Shiba house as a vassal afterwards!」  
「Well...Mr. Shiba Okitachi has merits to be recognized」  
「Rather than that...if Shiba Okitachi comes away, the『rising power』within Kouzuki group will collapse. Isn't that『Kakka's』aim instead?」

Kouzuki Satoshi, Oohari, Natsuki speaks selfishly in order.  
In the end...it seems that they believe that their『Traditional vassal in Kouzuki group』is superior and the『rising faction』is inferior  
...Or rather  
You guys are sons of branch family executives!  
Even though they're not working in the Kouzuki group themselves...how dare they speak bossy like that.

「...However, with that man's appearance, it seems that『Kakka's』plan have changed...!」

Kata points at me.

「Kata...what do you mean by that?」



Kouzuki Souji smiles.

「Yes...Misuzu-sama has introduced that man to the audience at the theater today. As it's a presentation of Konpeki school family...the people in the audience seats were people of political and business world. Making such a performance in that gathering, means, it's made known that this man is Misuzu-sama's partner」

「However...『Kakka』should've named Shiba Takahiko as the『fiance』 His attitude afterwards have shown it」

「Yes, Souji-sama...what Misuzu-sama did is an obvious act of going against『Kakka's』will A person not belonging to the Kouzuki family...a first class act of rebellion!」

Kata criticizes Misuzu.

「But...Kakka's been smiling in here a while ago」

Kouzuki Souji mutters.

「His conversation with Misuzu-sama is as usual...nothing has changed. On the contrary, he also allowed this man on the same room」

The『prince faction's』eyes gather at me

「Looking at Shiba Takahiko's state...it's certain that he has taken down Misuzu's fiance. Then that means that『Kakka』has accepted this man and Misuzu-sama's relationship...!」

Kouzuki Souji makes his inference.

「Hey...who are you?」

...I

「Umu...I've never seen him before!」

「Hey, you, which family did you come from?」

「...Isn't he the son from the『rising faction』? If only us don't know him」

「Umu...that's my only guess」

「No, it's possible that he might be someone from another corporate group」

「True...then, I can understand why『Kakka』kicked Shiba Takahiko for this guy to replace...」

Seriously...speaking all those selfish things.  
Do you guys think that the world is centered around『Kouzuki group』?  
...Eh?!

「Hey, hurry up and answer! Kouzuki Souji-san is asking you...!」

Tsunoda orders me bossily...!  
...Dammit!

「...It's Kuromori!」

Nei-san answers instead of me.

「We're all from Kuromori house!」

Nei-san smiles

「That's right, we're from Kuromori...right, Mao?」

Nagisa follows up.

「Yes, Mama!」

Mao-chan smiles.

「Yeah...right. I'm a guard that's serving Kuromori house...!」

Margo-san answers with a smile.

「Ah, we're from Kuromori house too!」

Mana said.

「Hey, Megu-oneechan too...!」

「M-Me too...I'm from Kuromori」

Michi remains silent...

Surely, someone among these guys knows Kudou papa.

of course, Reika who's from Kouzuki security service is also silent.

Yukino...she's hiding behind Reika.

Misuzu opposes the『prince faction』head on...

Ruriko is holding Yoshiko-san's hand, taking a seat...staring at the whole room.

「...Kuromori?」

「...Have you heard about it?」

「...No?」

「What about Kata?」

「I'm very sorry...!」

The prince faction people look at each other.  
The eldest among them is still in their early twenties.  
They probably haven't heard about the high class prostitution mansion『Kuromori』from their parents  
No...with『Kuromori』on a horrible state because of Shirasaka Sousuke...  
The gathering of political and business heads in Former Japan, the glory days of『Kuromori tower』...They won't know it from anyone but their grandfathers  
「...I know about it」

Shiba Akira speaks up from the entrance.

「Oh...you do, Akira-kun?」

Kouzuki Souji look at Shiba Akira.  
His words were composed but there's a self-important wind in his voice.

「Yes...I've heard it from my father」

Shiba Okitachi...knows about『Kuromori』and told his son about it?  
If so...then that would be a countermeasure against Jii-chan.  
Jii-chan sent Kyouko-san and returned Morimoto-san to support Minahoneesan...backing up『Kuromori』somehow  
However, at the same time...Jii-chan is also involved in the management of a high class prostitution mansion...  
Isn't that a card of Shiba Okitachi to kick off Jii-chan?  
Such suspicion whirls inside me.

「Oh, Akira-kun knows?! If you don't mind then do tell us!」

Kouzuki Subaru talks to Shiba Akira with that flimsy smile again.

「From what I've heard...it's a house that knows all of the secrets of political and business world since postwar Japan」

The『Prince faction』holds their breath from what Shiba Akira said 「...What the hell?」

「There's no way a manga-like house exists you know?」

「Umu...your father might be just joking」

Kouzuki Satoshi, Tsunoda and Oohari speaks their impression...

「Well of course they exist!」

Nei-san laughs

「Nei...you mustn't laugh at naive children!」

Aren't you laughing too, Margo-san

「Ah, sorry! But you see, these guys are just too funny!」

Nei-san laughs out loud

「You're right...they're so stupid it makes me laugh」

Nagisa laughs too.

「Eh, what's wrong...Mama?」

Mao-chan asks Nagisa.

「Take a look at them Mao...those men have been speaking a lot of stupid things showing a serious face since a while ago, right?」

「Yeah...they look so bossy!」

「Right? Let's laugh. That's why, let's laugh!」

「Nyahahahaha! Yeah, they're funny!」

Mao-chan laughs.

「Really...they don't have anything with their own power, what a really funny bunch」

Ruriko also seems to really can't forgive their rudeness to them.

「Yoshiko, let's laugh too...!」

「Ruriko-sama?!」

「These idiots here are our relatives...we must at least laugh or won't it be pitiful for them?...Fufufu」

Ruriko laughs at the『prince faction』

「R-Ruriko-sama?」

Kouzuki Souji's surprised.

No, it's not just the『prince faction』but also the『rising group』are all surprised.  
Shiba Akira as well...

「You don't know that you're just dolls obedient to grandfather? But, we're humans. For people we can only evaluate by ridiculing, we can only laugh from the bottom of our hearts...!」

Misuzu laughs.

「Ahahahahaa! yeah! This is certainly funny! It's so funny!」

Reika laughs too.

「Nufufufu, gufufufu」

...Michi, if you're not good at laughing then you don't need to force yourself  
「Megu-oneechan, let's laugh too」

「...But, I can't just laugh out suddenly」

「That's just easy! Just go『Wahahaha』loudly! One two! Wahahahahahaha!」

「Wa, wahahahaha!」

「We'll let you Kuroko-chan join us only for now, so hey...Laugh!」

「Uwahahaha!」

Urged by Mana, even Yukino starts laughing.

Somehow...my『women』feels very chaotic

...Is this okay?

「...Ruriko-san」

Misuzu smiles at Ruriko

「Yes...Misuzu-oneesama?」

Ruriko smiles back

「...As the rightful successor of Kouzuki house, you should tell your vassals」

Ruriko stands up.

「I will decide who is my partner. Grandfather has given be plenty of advice but I will be the one to decide」

...Ruriko

「I won't become a tool for your own selfish conflicts. If you want to get me

then abandon that miserable group and make efforts to polish yourselves...!」

The『prince faction』 is clearly underestimating Ruriko.  
Everyone's surprised from her strong words.

「Misuzu-oneesama should be clear with these people as well」

Ruriko passes the baton to Misuzu.

「We are grandfather...Kouzuki Shietaka's granddaughters. We're born, and raised differently from weak humans like you...!」

Misuzu closes up to Ruriko.  
Putting her hand on Yoshiko-san's shoulder...  
She's sending a message to Yoshiko-san that「you're also Kouzuki Shigetaka's granddaughter」in a way they won't notice.

「We were born with the Kouzuki house on our shoulders」

Misuzu's eyes are shining powerfully.

「...If you're shouldering the house then why are you pulling such a strange man?」

Kouzuki Souji tries to provoke Misuzu, but...

「I will marry this man. That is already accepted by grandfather. Surely you won't challenge the decision of Kouzuki Shigetaka, the owner of Kouzuki house, would you?」

Misuzu looks down on the『students』

「Grandfather has accepted my relationship with him with a condition not to pull him in the Kouzuki family」

Shiba Akira's surprised.

「Why is that?」

Misuzu...

「This one...Kuromori-sama, even if he marries me, he won't enter any related group in Kouzuki house. He's completely separate from the Kouzuki group」  
「Then that means that Misuzu-sama will be leaving Kouzuki house?」

Shiba Akira asks...Misuzu laughs

「Kuromori-sama and I are different personalities...I will stay as a member of Kouzuki family. Why do you think I can leave Kouzuki house this late?」

Ruriko adds on Misuzu's words.

「Yes...Misuzu-oneesama will assist me in Kouzuki house along with Yoshiko...!」

Yoshiko-san looks up.

「...Ruriko-sama?」

「Let's be together forever...Yoshiko」

Yoshiko-san...

「Yes...Yes」

She nods to Ruriko with tears on her eyes.

「In short...the man over there won't take any position in Kouzuki house...and Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama will be involved in the management of Kouzuki group by themselves?」

Shiba Akira says, Misuzu...

「That's what we've just said. Akira-san...I thought that you were a bit more understanding but...」

「No...I'm very sorry!」

Misuzu smiles fearlessly

「We don't like trivial men like you messing up our treasured Kouzuki group. If you all can't meet our expectations then we'll do it ourselves」

「You're right, Oneesama...Ruriko's been disillusioned by the way these people behave」

The two most beautiful girls on Kouzuki house insults the elites.

「Just because your fathers are executives, you've been mistaken to think that you'll be able to enter the Kouzuki group like that」

「However...Misuzu-sama, we have served Kouzuki house for generations...!」

Tsunoda shouts.

「Why do we have to hire you just because your ancestors were loyal?」

Misuzu cuts it down.

「Frankly speaking...I can't endure your attitude since a while ago. We've clearly understood that you're not loyal to Kouzuki family whoever your fathers may be」

Ruriko said

「No...we...」

Kouzuki Souji speaks but...

「You people only think of Kouzuki group as your playground. I'm sorry but I don't want to accept you players」

Misuzu said...Kouzuki Satoshi

「Don't fuck with me! Just what can you women do!?!」

「That's right, making a fool out of us! Don't underestimate us just because you're『Kakka's』granddaughters!」

Tsunoda also screams.

「That's right...the current head is『Kakka』 And『Kakka』acknowledges our talent!」

Kata desperately shouts

「That's right! You're unrelated at all! It's all for『Kakka』to decide!」

Kouzuki Satoshi's excitement won't go away.

「Souji-sama...now that it comes to this, then let's make it clear who'll become Ruriko-san's husband!」

Tsunoda fuels further.

「That's right, I can't think of anyone be married to Ruriko-sama and become the next head of Kouzuki family but Souji-sama」

Oohari said.

「Yeah, I second that」

「Me too!」



Koku and Torada too...

Seriously...this pattern again?

Shouting their opinion on the same direction...forcibly developing it to a majority vote.

「...I definitely don't want Souji-san!」

Ruriko said

「I hate narrow minded people like you...!」

Ruriko's words pierces Kouzuki Souji's heart but...!

「Souji-sama...Ruriko-sama's opinion doesn't matter!」

「That's right, that's right...『Kakka』just needs to accept Souji-sama!」

「Yeah, either way, 『Kakka』will order for Souji-sama and Ruriko-sama to marry. That's absolute!」

「I'm looking forward for that time to come...!」

How dare they to say that hopeful prediction.

「Wow...could it be that you guys are idiots?」

Nei-san said amazed.

「What the hell? What do you mean?!」

Tsunoda glares at Nei-san

「...You guys don't think that Kouzuki old man is monitoring this room?」

---

## 267. Fool ship

---

「...What did you say?」

The『prince faction』guys fell silent from what Nei-san said 「Don't you think that old man that can't help but cherish and love his two granddaughters leave you in the same room as them and don't do anything?」

Nei-san smiles

「Isn't this that old man's hotel? He seems to be using it on his conferences... naturally, this should also be equipped with wiretap and surveillance cameras!」  
「Yes...that's right」

Reika answers

「This hotel is the business base of Kouzuki group...!」  
「You're right, as far as I can see...that ceiling and that wall over there, and under the decoration of that pillar over there is also a surveillance camera」

Margo-san participates.

「The mics are there, there, and there? Yeah, usually, you'd put it like that. However, in such a facility, everything that you can obviously point out is a fake and the cameras and microphones are set up in a separate location though...!」

Oh. The『prince faction's』face are going pale  
Well of course.

Even though Jii-chan told them to not make any blunders towards the women... Their disrespect has become a lump of blunders.

「In the end...you can't see reality at all」

Nei-san ridicules the men.

「Listen...! That old man, the fiance Kouzuki Shietaka has decided have been rejected and yet...Mii-chan and this guy's relationship were accepted! Do you

get it?!」

Err...Nei-san?

What do you mean by that?!

「That's right...Grandfather has approved of this man to be my husband」

Misuzu declares once again.

「That's right! You calling Mii-chan『Misuzu-sama』means that in Kouzuki house's rules, your grandfather's blood is close yet lower than Mii-chan?」

With their rules...that's how it is

「This guy was accepted as Mii-chan's partner. It was Kouzuki Shietaka-san's decision. Then...you know what that means don't you!?!」

Nei-san said sadistically.

「You all are in a lower position than this guy! If he's Mii-chan's husband then, he's Ojii-chan's grandson-in-law! He's on a position above yours already!」

No...that's not true.

Misuzu's my『woman』but...

I'm not interested in Kouzuki house at all

...But

For the『prince faction』who sticks to the rule of their bloodline...

Nei-san's remark seems to be grave...

「Everyone, emergency meeting...!」

Suddenly...Kouzuki Souji tells his faction

「Y-Yes...Souji-sama」

「Umu...let's go!」

The nine members of『Prince faction』gather around Kouzuki Souji.

Looking at each other, they seem to be consulting each other whisperingly...

Really...even though they seem bossy...

These guys are just small.

「Akira-san. Please don't stay there and come in. Everyone else must be hungry too. Why don't you eat?」

Misuzu ignores the『prince』faction and speaks to Shiba Akira and the『rising faction』guys  
They've always been pressured by『prince faction』...frozen in the front of the entrance.

「Yes...thank you very much. I will depend on your words」

Shiba Akira thanks Misuzu on behalf of the group.

「However...please stop trying to talk to my friends. You men shouldn't come from that table over there. Could you promise me that?」

「...Certainly」

Shiba Akira accepts Misuzu's orders.

「Come everyone...we've been given permission by Misuzu-sama. Let's eat」  
「...Yes」

「...Umu」

「...Let's do so」

The『rising faction』heads to the table timidly  
They only speak a few words.  
They're not talking to each other.  
Calmly...they walk slowly, trying not to take over someone...  
They all eat scattered around.  
Nobody's trying to talk to Shiba Akira...  
Huh...?!

It's not that Shiba Akira is the leader of the group.  
As expected...with the elder brother, Shiba Takahiro leaving, they were damaged?

「...Those people aren't as united as a group as Souji-san and others」

Misuzu whispers to me.

「Souji-san and his group were children of the vassals who served Kouzuki house for generations so they've known each other since childhood」

Therefore...their teamwork is that good.  
In Kouzuki family, bloodline is everything.  
Therefore...with Kouzuki Souji who's closes to the head, Jii-chan, has been

decided to be the boss of the group from the beginning.

「Inside the group...Souji-san's the first grandson of grandfather's brother, the second is Subaru-san. The third is Satoshi-san who belongs on the branch family. Then next ones don't belong to Kouzuki house but Natsuko-san who's a relative...is decided to be the first among the list」

Since the list has been decided from the beginning with the bloodline...the other people doesn't try to overcome Kouzuki Souji.  
However...each and one of them play a role they're given in the group.  
Well...if they're aware of it then it's fine, but.  
I can't understand them pushing their own『rules』of their narrow world to us.  
They can just continue their『pretend friends』in their own closed world forever.

「Then...as for Akira-san's group」

Misuzu whispers.

「These group's fathers have gained career in the company of Kouzuki only for a generation...their rise is accepted in business, invited by the Kouzuki group」

Oh I see.

If their parents gained power in Kouzuki group just recently...  
Then they never had any childhood friendship.

「That group isn't as united as Souji-san's group」

Yeah...they're just gathering somehow to oppose『prince faction』...  
Shiba Takahiko and Shiba Akira aren't the leaders of the faction 「Rather...the people in that group are competing with each other」

In short...everyone is targetting Ruriko's father...the head of Kouzuki house...?!

「In reality...Only Shiba Okitachi has the real ability to stand up against the old vassals of Kouzuki house」

The other guys don't have that much individual power.  
That's why they have no choice but to gather.  
However, with that said...they don't plan to become followers of Shiba Okitachi, who has the most power.

...Hmmm

This one's also a troublesome bunch too.

「Wait a moment...earlier, there was the talk about Shiba Takahiko being Misuzu's『fiance』, then the old vassals of Kouzuki family accepting Shiba house to their group right?」

Instead of becoming a relative of the Kouzuki family by marrying Misuzu...it'll be them taking in the rising power of Shiba Okitachi...

「That is just a selfish interpretation of Souji-san and co」

Misuzu said

「I think that grandfather's aim is still to make harmony in between the old group and the rising group. However...it seems that Akira-san and others are soured by that talk」

Oh...If Shiba Takahiko was made『fiance』of Misuzu with the reason the『prince faction』has said...

Then Shiba Okitachi has betrayed the rising group and it means that he'll change into the old group.

Therefore...the youth of『rising faction』are eating far from Shiba Akira 「Please be careful...Danna-sama」

Misuzu tells me anxiously

「Eh...what about?」

「The next thing those people will think is to take in Danna-sama」

To take me in?

「Yes, their faction will dominate if they are able to take in Danna-sma to their side」

「No, but...I've got nothing to do with Kouzuki group」

Misuzu has declared a while ago that I won't be entering the Kouzuki group.

「Those people won't be convinced with what I said...everyone of them thinks that Kouzuki group is everything」

Really...what a troublesome bunch

「Please brace yourself...Danna-sama is the man recognized by Kouzuki Shigetaka!」

Misuzu smiles.

「Ah, Maru-chan and I will bring the drinks and sandwiches in here!」

Nei-san said.

「When we don't let them come close to us...then we'd lose another refill of food and drinks. Let's take some while it's not late!」

Yeah...it's better to bring it while the『prince faction』is talking 「Ah, I'm going too」

It's better to do it all with lots of people.

「Then, I will be going too!」

Reika stands up.

「Reika-oneechan...I want another orange juice!」

Mao-chan smiles.

「Well...so cute! Yeah, so cute!」

Reika seems to have completely liked Mao-chan.  
She pats Mao-chan's head.

「Children are amazing aren't they?」

Nagisa smiles at Reika.

「Yes...!」

「Reika-oneesan want to give birth soon too? Having your own child is good too」

Reika speaks while holding Mao-chan.

「I currently am on the time where my energy and physical strength are the best. I want to fulfill my work as a guard for now」

If she gets pregnant, give birth...Reika can't think of her keeping her current state.

「Is that so? That's a regret」

「It's not. I'll be affectionate with Mao-chan a lot...!」

Reika pokes Mao-chan's soft looking cheeks.  
Mao-chan happily laughs...

「...You need apron dress don't you?」  
「Apron dress?」

Nagisa's surprised from what Reika said.

「Yes, as expected...if you're raising a little girl with a British hobby, I think then you shouldn't take off apron dresses」

Hey...Reika...?!

「I'll teach the language of『alice in the wonderland』 and『song of mother goose』 If she grows bigger then『Sherlock Holmes』 Mufufu...I'm looking forward to it!」

Reika seems to want to make Mao-chan into the same British hobby as herself...

Err...

Well fine.

Nagisa seems to be only smiling wryly...

If it becomes a problem, Minaho-neesan and Katsuko-nee will stop it so it's fine.

「Then, let's go...!」

Margo-san calls us out  
...Then

「Wait...Onii-chan」

Mana comes to me.

「What's wrong? Is there anything you want to get?」

Drinks or food...

「Yeah! My panties!」

...Panty?

「You see...Mana left her panties on that chair!」



Mana...you  
I even told you to wear a dress in a hurry after your prostrating naked...  
You didn't put on your underwear.

「...There?」  
「...Yup」

Wow...by the way, it's just on the right side where the『prince faction』is making a conference.  
Those guys are in the middle of a discussion so they haven't noticed the panty on the chair.

「Sorry! You can punish me later so please pick it up for now...!」

Mana holds my hand.  
...Seriously.  
But, I can't let those men come close to Mana.  
She's having no panties right now after all

「I get it...I'm going」  
「Thanks Onii-chan...!」

Mana whispers to my ear...

「...I'll be serving you a lot later so please feel a lot good in Mana's stomach!」

The 14 year old beauty smiles at me.  
...Haa  
Anyway...I'm going  
Along with Margo-san, Nei-san and Reika...  
I invade the men's zone.  
Okay...let's get close to Mana's panty casually  
Pretending that it's not the panty...  
But looking at the dish on the table...

.....3、2、1、0 !

Okay...GET!  
I shove the panty I picked up into my pocket.  
...Then

「Hey, bastard1」

I got shocked

The voice who called me out is『prince faction's』Natsuki Makoto 「Souji-sama wants to talk with you. Come here...!」

Err...

For the time being, it's not exposed that I took Mana's panty.

「Hey, hurry up!」

Speaking in a commanding tone makes me a bit angry.

In the first place...My position isn't that far from Kouzuki Souji

Won't our voices reach if we speak loudly?

「I don't intend to go there...if you've got something to talk about then how about coming here!」

I strongly rejected it

「What?...You're cocky!」

Kouzuki Satoshi insults me.

「Well fine. I'll allow it just this case...!

「...Souji-sama?!」

「We can't have a constructive conversation with a coercive attitude...right, Satoshi?」

「Yes, Souji-sama」

「Hey, bastard...be thankful for Souji-sama's generous heart!」

「Yeah, as expected of Souji-sama!」

...That kind of development again?

They're trying to make a show where Kouzuki Souji is a huge vessel, but...

They've done it multiple times that their childishness is emphasized.

Anyway, they're just idiots.'

Each of them are smart elites but...

From the moment they think that they're the chosen ones...they became a group of idiots.

「Then...what do you want to talk about?」

I asked.

I make sure the paths to exit while talking.  
It'll be hard to escape when I'm surrounded.  
I don't think that they'd attack me so suddenly but...  
No...don't neglect caution.  
If I die...then Misuzu will be free again.  
It'll create a situation as Kouzuki Souji desires...  
For better or for worse, they might try to kill me.  
If I don't make such assumptions...  
I won't be able to survive.  
...Oh I wish I had my beat up stick.  
If it is Cesario Viola then it's dangerous to be armed...so I left the beat up stick  
on the school 「Then...let me get straight to the point」

Kouzuki Souji tells me.

「Join us」

...What?

「As special appreciation, Souji-sama is saying that you bastard can join our  
faction!」

Natsuko Makoto says loudly

「In exchange, you promise your loyalty to Souji-sama. Our leader is Souji-  
sama...okay?!」

...Err

What's with this triumphant face, these people look down on me...  
Are all your brains rotten?

「To become our ally is to become the central being that moves the next  
generation of Kouzuki...it's not a bad deal for a bastard like you」

Natsuko Makoto tells me with most dignity

「Misuzu-sama said that you don't intend to enter the Kouzuki group but...  
you've got ambitions too right? No, there's no need to answer. I know」

Kata says with a ridiculous attitude.

「Uhm...I'm going to start a bakery though」

「Bread? Aiming for the Kouzuki General Foods Generation?!」

Oohari shouts.

「No, you're wrong, It's just a normal bakery. One that's selling bread in the town...」

「No way...a Franchise business?」

「Kata. How many restaurant and bread chains inside Kouzuki group?」

「18 companies and 26 brands...!」

Hey guys...

Listen to me.

「Souji-sama, isn't that great? Since we all desire for finance and mass communication companies in Kouzuki group. If this guy says he wants to engage in food, then there's no problem letting him do it」

Tsunoda says something frivolous again.

「Right. We intend to push the industries we're not interested in to Shiba Takahiko and others...so it's fine? We'll let you take in the food industry so you can come under me」

Kouzuki Souji said calmly

Ah...these guys are no good

If these guys succeed the parents and become the executives of Kouzuki group...

Kouzuki group will be crushed.

「Sorry to tell you but I don't want to be your allies you know?」

I said clearly

「Why? Why are you refusing even on such favorable conditions」

「That's right, the goddess of fortune don't give second chances you know. Take it right now if you can!」

「You see...Souji-sama's giving you an opportunity so it's foolish not to get on it!」

Yeah

「That's right...I'm foolish. Sorry」

I'll try to get away from this spot right away.  
Margo-san, Nei-san, and Reika seems to have carried the food and drinks needed.  
Like hell I can stay with this flock of idiots!

「...Sorry」

I try to go back to Misuzu.

「Hey, wait a moment! I'm not done talking!」

Natsuki Makoto, Oohari Ryou, Koku Rakujin tries to catch me.  
Shit, they're moving fast.  
I'd be surrounded if this continues...!

「...Master!」

Michi jumps in to help me!

「Don't approach them」

Kouzuki Souji orders

「That one's Kudou's daughter!」

「...Kudou? The guard kept by『Kakka』?」

「The daughter should be using the same strange techniques as her father!」

「Do you know about it, Kata!?」

「Yes. She's my little sister's classmate!」

Haa...Kata's little sister is the young lady over there?  
While they were talking...Michi comes into my front in a blink of an eye.

「Master, your hand!」

「Yeah」

I hold Michi's hand.

「Let's go, please follow me!」

「Michi...don't let them hurt you!」

「...Certainly」

We slipped away from the『prince faction』as Michi and I hold hands.

「W-What's with her...her movement's strange!」

Kudou style's secrets is to completely bend the enemy's Ki.  
Outwitting the enemy's expectations...we returned back to Misuzu and others.

「...Stop! I forbid you from going further than that!」

Misuzu rules the men

「Any more than that and we won't hold back from using force!」

Margo-san and Reika comes to Misuzu's side.  
With the two tall beauties by her side...it has become threatening 「Now then...  
what will you do?」

Reika holds up her cane...Kouzuki Souji

「Let's back off...」

He orders showing an unpleasant face.  
...Fuu

The situation didn't explode.

Well, it turns to a brawl...

Then Margo-san, Reika and Michi would just beat those guys thoroughly.  
I'm glad nobody got hurt.

「Huh...Satoshi-san, that woman...!?」

Tsunoda looked at us and noticed something.

「Hm, Tsunoda?!」

Kouzuki Satoshi comes to Tsunoda

「...As expected she is! There's no mistake!」

「Like I said, what!?」

「That woman's Shirasaka Yukino!」

Tsunoda noticed Yukino.

「What?!」

「No, I'm sure. She may be disguised but she can't fool my eyes! I've seen her on  
Yoshinaga house's party before! Hey, Satoshi-san, weren't you with me...?!」

He met Yukino on a party?!

「Ah, that's right...! There's no mistake! That's Shirasaka Yukino!」

Kouzuki Satoshi cries out

「...Shirasaka Yukino?」

「Yes, he's the daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke who's in trouble right now!」

「Didn't the media say that she's missing?」

「Therefore she's here!」

The『prince faction』says one after another

「Eh, wait a moment...everyone!」

Kouzuki Subaru who's the youngest took over Tsunoda and Kouzuki Satoshi and speaks 「Is that person really Shirasaka Yukino-san...?」

The gazes of the men gather around Yukino.

Shiba Akira and others of the『rising faction』are also looking interestingly  
...This is bad.

Kouzuki Subaru asks Misuzu.

「Why is Shirasaka Yukino-san with Misuzu-sama?!」

---

## 268. Vassal's manners

---

The gaze of the room is concentrated on Yukino who's wearing a yellow and black striped dress and a funny make-up.

「I-I...」

Yukino speaks

「...I'm not Shirasaka Yukino-san nari!」

...Nari?

「No, there's no doubt. I've checked all of the women coming from noble families at that party! You're disguised strangely but you're definitely Shirasaka Yukino!」

Kouzuki Satoshi shouts!

「...I'm not Nariiiii! I'm Kashima Kuroko Nariiiii!」

...Errr

You're sticking with that character, Yukino?...

「What's with Kashima Kuroko! 」

「I'm wearing a yellow and black stripe dress so it's Kishima Kuroko Nariiiiiii!!!!」

Yukino...you're just exposing your own disguise you know 「The fuck? Then...if you were wearing red and white clothes you're Akai Shirako?!」

「...M-Maybe」

「Maybe?」

「...M-Maybe...Narii!」

Kouzuki Satoshi and Yukino...

You guys are a good comedy duo.

「...Or rather, you're Shirasaka Yukino-san aren't you?!」



Kouzuki Subaru asks showing an amazed expression.

「That's right...you're Shirasaka Yukino!」

Kouzuki satoshi pushes on Yukino once again.

Yukino...

「...Chaunen!」

.....o

「...I'm a woman born from Osaka, not Shirasaka Yukino-han dosu」

.....Dosu?

「Are you really not her?!」

「I-Indeed!」

.....Sayou?

「It's wrong woo, it's wrong gowasu. I'm not Yukino-san degozaru, nin nin...!」

...Aah

...We

We might be witnessing to a birth of a new talent.

「I-In the first place...a stylish person like Shirasaka Yukino-san don't dress funnily like me. Yukino-san's so stylish, fashionable, makes fuss about dresses more than anyone else...」

Yukino's eyes are becoming teary.

「This...making me look like a comedian...being taken around in this appearance...such humiliation...! I'll never agree to this! I'll never forgive you all! Never!!!」

Glaring at us...Yukino's heating up.

「...Does that mean that you're admitting that you're Shirasaka Yukino?」

Mana asks.

「...Hoe?!」

「Well, aren't you? Saying that you're humiliated being made to look like a comedian...then, who are you?」

Mana shows a sadistic smile.  
Really, she's harsh against her sister.  
I think that it's distorted affection though...

「I-I...!」

Yukino's mouth flap widely, confused.  
The identity of Yukino is shaking loose.

「I'm Kishima Kuroko Narii!」  
「...You've already done that!」

Mana won't allow Yukino to go back from the start.

「I-I...!」

Tears accumulate in Yukino's eyes...  
「I...this isn't me! I don't want this! This is...wrong! This isn't me!」  
「Therefore...if you're saying it's not you then who are you?」

Mana asks while snorting at her sister.

「You should quit before you anger me! Maika!」

Yukino snapped.

「Are you happy making a fool out of me? Is it fun? Becoming friend with that group of people!」

Hearing that...『Prince faction's』Kata...

「No way...Shirasaka Maika?」  
「Unu?...What do you mean, Kata?」

Oohari Ryou asks Kata.

「No, if I recall, Shirasaka Sousuke has a daughter named Shirasaka Maika other than Shirasaka Yukino...!」  
「...Do you know her, Satoshi?」

Kouzuki Souji asks Kouzuki Satoshi.

「No...I've never met her at the party」

Mana's body was weak so until a few years ago...she's been living with her

relatives in Shizuoka away from her family in Tokyo.

Therefore, she shouldn't have shown her face as much as Yukino on noble parties.

Also, Mana has an inferiority complex towards her sister who likes to go the limelight on flashy clothing.

Even after coming back from Tokyo, Mana hardly came to party with Yukino.

「I'm Mana. I'm Onii-chan's little sister...I'm completely unrelated to someone like you!」

...Mana

After knowing that her father's evil...abandoned by her mother and grandfather.

Above all, raped by me...

The identity of the girl named Shirasaka Maika collapsed and reconstructed to another character named Yoshida Mana.

Shirasaka house's daughter...Yukino's little sister, Shirasaka Maika is no longer here.

Maika has gone far away.

The woman here is my little sister, my sex slave...

Mana preserves her sanity by seeking me, becoming my『woman』

I intend to take responsibility for Mana for the rest of my life.

This one doesn't have any one left but me.

「Don't screw with me! You're Shirasaka Maika! You're my little sister!」

Yukino doesn't know the change inside Mana.

She really became a different person.

The one here right now is Mana...not Maika

「Hmmm, then that means that you're admitting that you're Shirasaka Yukino?」

Mana tells Yukino.

「...I-I」

「Isn't that great, Yukino-san? You're letting the public know that you're suitable to become a comedian...!」

Mana laughs.

...I see.

For Mana, Yukino is one of the『past』who have abandoned her.

Therefore...she's responding cruelly.

This is also another work caused by Mana's inferiority complex...

「...Unforgivable, I'll never forgive you all」

Yukino mutters in a small voice.

Her anger and hatred is probably boiling like magma inside her heart.

However...with Yukino unable to admit that she's『Shirasaka Yukino』in public...

It's impossible for her to release all of her negative emotions outside.

She'll only confine it inside...

...That's bad

Yukino's heart will break if this continues.

「Hey...Yukino」

I call out Yukino

She twitched.

「You're Shirasaka Yukino. I'm the one who forced you to wear that strange apprarance. I just forced to you against your will...!」

Yukino looks at me.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana shows an「eh?」face and look at me...

「Just shut up!」

I hold off Mana.

Then, Yukino.

「I just ordered everyone to make you look stupid. It's not you...I'm the one who forced it」

Yukino's face changed.

Yukino jumped into the『logical escape』I created.

「...That's right, it's your fault! It's all your fault I've having this horrible experiences!」

Yukino turns her inner hatred at me.  
She throw out all of her accumulated feelings at once.

「It's your fault! I did nothing wrong! You made me suffer this much!」

Yeah...that's fine.  
With this, Yukino's identity won't collapse.  
Yukino...can protect her own personality as Shirasaka Yukino.

「Unforgivable...I'll never forgive you!」

Yukino looks at me with eyes of hatred.  
...This is fine.  
This is the right thing.  
Me...and Yukino

「Yeah...you don't have to」

I said.

「Either way...I'm going to do more horrible things on you...!」

Megu looks at me silently.

「Yoshi-kun...you don't have to do that. Just throw Yukino away already!」  
「That's right, Onii-chan...you don't need someone like Yukino-san!」

I...

「Girls...If I do that then Yukino will die. Are you okay with that?」

Hearing that...Yukino got startled

「...I-I!」

Yukino may have high pride and is selfish but she's not an idiot.  
The current Yukino who lost her home and parent's shield...if she's abandoned  
by me...

She'll only die.

Will she be erased by Cesario Viola who accepted the kill request from  
Shirasaka head home...

Or will she be sold away by Minaho-neesan on a slums on a foreign land...?

「It's fine if she dies」

...Mana

「You mustn't say that」

I embrace Mana's body

Mana also embraces me.

Mana's body is slightly cold...trembling.

「Mana...aren't you my『family』?」

「...Yeah」

「But, Yukino doesn't have anyone」

Yukino's face distorts in fear.

「Uhm...Misuzu-sama?」

Kouzuki Subaru asks in behalf of the『prince faction』

They thought that the young ones should ask instead of the high pressure members.

Since they're only doing that with eye contacts...their group's team work is amazing.

「...What is it?」

Misuzu answers with a cold attitude.

「Isn't it about time you tell us? Why is the daughter of Shirasaka Sousuke, the one who's causing problems in here...?」

Kouzuki Subaru shows a disgusting smile.

On his back the 8 members of『prince faction』 shows a bossy look.

Of course, Shiba Akira and the six members of『rising faction』

They're waiting for Misuzu's response curiously.

「I won't tell you people...」

Misuzu said calmly

「Why? I think that we have the right to know...!」

Kouzuki Subaru still doesn't back down...!

「Right?...Are you seriously saying that?」

Misuzu rejects.

Ah...this pattern is Minaho-neesan's.

Misuzu's imitating Minaho-neesan's tone.

「Because...we are...」

Kouzuki Subaru falters.

「We are members of『Kakka's』private tutoring. We're the people who will support Kouzuki group in the future...!」

Kouzuki Souji tells Misuzu on behalf of his brother.

「Grandfather has only made you his students because your fathers asked him to. It's a big mistake to think that you can get a key position in Kouzuki group in the future just because you're his student」

Misuzu said laughing.

「Much more...the fact that you're registered in the Kouzuki group means that you're prepared to be our vassals. As a vassal, fulfill your obligation. I don't need vassals who insist their rights without respecting their lord」

Misuzu said then looked at Ruriko.

「It is as Misuzu-oneesama said...I'm amazed from your behavior so far. I'm sure that grandfather thinks the same. I will ask grandfather to dismiss the『private school』so grandfather can spend more of his time meaningfully」  
「Please wait a moment...Ruriko-sama」

At the moment Kouzuki Souji said that...!

「How dare vassal order one's lord!!!」

Reika's sharp voice pierces the『prince faction』!

「You bastards don't have the attitude as a vassal! Have some shame! Shame on you!」

I see...Reika's someone who's disciplined as a swordswoman...  
She's loud when it comes to vassal and lords.

「Mumu...Reika-chan, too loud」

Mao-chan on Reika's knee is closing her ears.

「Ah, sorry. I won't shout anymore...!」

Reika smiles at Mao-chan.

「Okay, forgiven!」

Mao-chan and Reika are completely friendly.

「Uhm...Misuzu-sama, may I speak?」

Shiba Akira said

「...You can, Akira-san」

Misuzu answers.

「I can understand what Misuzu-sama's saying...however, the idea of vassal and lords is quite old-fashioned in the modern Japan?」

Shiba Akira said dignified.

「The business managers and employees should be on equal relationship. I think that confusing employee relationship to master-servant one is bad...」

Misuzu...

「Akira-san, how long have you been under grandfather's private school?」

「Twice a week since two years ago with my brother...from 8 to 11 o'clock evening. I'm receiving guidance under『Kakka』at the head office of Kouzuki Holdings. Other than that, like today...we're brought to sociable places and we also watch actual business within the company」

The sociable places must be the presentation of Konpeki school.  
Therefore...these guys were taken into the negotiations with the head house of Shirasaka to observe the negotiations.

「Akira-san Do you think that the『private school』is meaningful?...Are you not thinking that you're just attending to an elderly's selfishness?」

「No, I...I've been given the privilege to learn something useful every time. Each of『Kakka's』story is very stimulating, and it's very exciting to see various fields of work...」

「Then...Akira-san, grandfather pays you a monthly fee?」

「...what?」



「...Are you not paid monthly fee?」

Misuzu shows a cold smile like Minaho-neesan's

「Y-Yes...in particular. No, rather...『Kakka』is treating us with a feast every time」

Shiba Akira becomes flustered.

「But, that is...『Kakka』is always just caring for us...that」

「If grandfather really cares about you then do you think that it's natural to receive a feast?」

Misuzu laughs.

「Know your position before talking about equal partners. If you can't understand what you're talking about and who you're talking to then close your mouth. Everyone can say a common opinion...!」

Misuzu's words are harsh.

「If the relationship of grandfather and your father is employee relation then grandfather will not let you in the private school. You are here because your father is grandfather's vassal. Your father understands that. If not, then a respectable person like Shiba Okitachi-san will not let you come into grandfather's private school」

Yeah...it's not normal for it to be free.

Jii-chan is giving his『private school』a free service because he thinks of them as the family of his own vassals.

「Grandfather is clearly distinguishing vassals from employees.」

Misuzu said clearly

「Besides...grandfather only considers only your fathers as his vassals. You're children of the vassals, in reality, you're not grandfather's vassals. Grandfather is treating and receiving you as customers...!」

Misuzu's words stunned the members of the private school.

「If ever Akira-san wants to be in an equal partner employee relationship, then quit grandfather's『private school』 If Akira-san becomes an adult...and is able to

gain power by himself that grandfather accepts it...then Akira-san wants to work on Kouzuki group then they may employe you. But, right now, you're just a boy with no talent worth hiring for...」

Misuzu said, Shiba Akira...

「Understood, then I'll be quitting the private school as of today. I don't feel like entering Kouzuki group in the future...」

A stir creates in the『private school』from what he said.

「Are you serious...Akira-kun?」

「I think you shouldn't rush up to a conclusion」

The『rising faction's』...Hanaoka Shinsuke and Koumori Akira speaks.

「It's fine. There's a job I'd like to do on my own. Rather than becoming a member of a big company...I'll start my own business and make a company move on my will」

Shiba Akira said.

「Is that so...then do your best」

Misuzu speaks coldly.

「If the company made by Akira-san profits Kouzuki group then we'll contact you as an『equal partner』 However, if it becomes disadvantageous to Kouzuki group then it'll be crushed thoroughly. You don't mind if there would be a conflict between our company and yours...!」

Shiba Akira is at loss from Misuzu's strong attitude.

「Akira-kun...excuse my meddling but let me tell you」

Said Kouzuki Kenshi who's on the side of the『rising faction』though he's under the branch family of Kouzuki house.

「Apologize to Misuzu-san and stay in the『private school』 I think that it's wonderful that you don't want to be a vassal of someone and you desire to be the kind of the hill but, you're currently only a child of『Kakka's』vassal. Your rude behavior will cause trouble to your father... !」

Shiba Akira...

「Father understand my feelings. Besides...father will become independent from Kouzuki group someday!」

「...『Someday』? Shiba Okitachi-san shouldn't be able to do it right now」

Kouzuki Kenshi said

「Who owns the company? If it's a corporation then it's a shareholder. More than half of the Kouzuki group companies are held by the Kouzuki head house. In short『Kakka』 No matter how competent your father is...he can't be independent from the Kouzuki group」

「Then...we'll look for investors. A person unrelated to Kouzuki group...if there's someone who invest in my and father's business...」

「There's nobody in Japan who'll invest in you or your father to oppose Kouzuki house,『Kakka』himself」

「Then...we'll look for foreign investors」

「American and European investors are vultures. You understand it don't you? Or could it be that you'll look for underground resource in emerging countries? Impossible. There's no way they would lend money to a Japanese who doesn't have a solid ground in Japan you know?」

Kouzuki Kenshi said calmly.

「It's good to have a big dream but in order to make your dream come true, you have to surrender to reality. Therefore even your father is such a talented man...he's consenting himself to be a vassal of another」

「My father won't stay as a vassal forever!」

「That might be...someday. However, he's『Kakka's』vassal now. A faithful one」

Kouzuki Kenshi calms down Shiba Akira.

「『Kakka's』a very large vessel...Mr. Shiba Okitachi has been allowed to have an ambition. Therefore, Mr. Okitachi...as a vassal, he gained power in Kouzuki group...『Kakka』is aiming at independence of the group and harmony. If you oppose『Kakka』glaring while showing an independent stance...it's not only Kouzuki group but also the rivals will attack. Therefore...A company that's independent and doesn't have strength is just crushed in a moment. For your father to succeed independently...he has to maintain a friendly relationship with『Kakka』and the Kouzuki group...!」

「Are you saying that I should just give up being Kouzuki house's vassal?」

Misuzu...

「I don't wish for you to be a vassal from the bottom of your heart. It's your freedom what to think from the bottom of your heart. However...a human who can't do a correct attitude as a vassal despite being one even on surface are just incompetent. We don't need that kind of people...we'll kick you out of Kouzuki group」

Shiba Akira glares at Misuzu.

「You've been speaking so bossy since earlier but Misuzu-sama's not『Kakka』! You're just『Kakka's』granddaughter! You have no right to be telling us this!」

Certainly...that's true but...

「You don't understand? Ruriko-san and I are being tested by grandfather right now...!」

Misuzu answers.

「Grandfather is listening to our discussion and laughing on the other room. Grandfather is testing if you are suitable people as vassals... And Ruriko-san and I are also being tested whether or not we're qualified as the head and the one who'll be on the side of the head of Kouzuki family」

Ruriko nods at Misuzu's words.

「That's right...Kouzuki house, Kouzuki group has a lot of people. We must protect the lives of those people. From those direct vassal...to those who signed an employment contract...in addition, the people who buy products and services of Kouzuki group, all the business partners...we must meet the expectations of all」

「Therefore...I think that we should treat our people and vassal with a strong attitude. If you spoil your vassal the whole house will fall」

The two girls look down on the elite『private school』.

「Therefore...you should all decide your own position now」

Misuzu said

「You're not with grandfather...you all are on the same generation as us. If you really plan to participate in Kouzuki group's future...then become our vassals」

Ruriko also speaks.

「That's right...those who don't want to show manners of a vassal to us then you can leave from here now. Oneesama and I are the successors of Kouzuki house. If you can't accept it then you'll be evicted from the house...!」

The students stopped breathing.  
Faster than anyone...Kouzuki Kenshi kneels

「...I recognize the two as my lord」

Then, he turned to his allies...the members of『rising faction』

「What about you guys?」

The young men look at each other.

「I submit myself」

Kawafuji Akishi of the『rising faction』is the one to kneel next.

「I feel glad that the future heads of Kouzuki house will be this bright and strong willed...」

「M-Me too...!」

「Same...!」

The members of『rising faction』becomes Misuzu and Ruriko's vassal one after another

Shiba Akira remains...

「I-I won't!」

Shiba Akira said

「I'm no one's vassal. I am the captain of my ship! Father surely understands my feelings...!」

「Akira-kun! Show manners as a vassal even if just in formalities! You'll regret it if you don't!」

Kouzuki Kenshi said, Akira...

「I won't regret! I hate things I hate!」

Misuzu...

「Is that so...then, please do your best alone」

「Goodbye, Akira-san」

Ruriko also said expressionlessly.

「What about you people?」

Misuzu looks at Kouzuki Souji's『prince faction』

「W-We...that」

Kouzuki Souji becomes evasive.

Kouzuki Souji who's the closest to the head in the branch family, is a man who's giving out incomprehensible reasons arrogantly.

If he gives in to Misuzu and Ruriko...then he'll lose his position.

The faction called『prince faction』will lose it's existential meaning

It's because they're prince that's born from the lineage of Kouzuki family

Once they acknowledge that they're a vassal...then the prince will be nothing.

However...

If they're expelled from Kouzuki house because Misuzu and Ruriko were angered...

Then they won't have anything left...

「What should we do, Souji-sama!」

「Souji-sama!」

The members who's grouping to raise Kouzuki Souji's flag asks him.

「I-I...」

...Then

『That's enough. You must not settle everything in one go, Misuzu, Ruriko』

I hear Jii-chan's voice from a speaker...

---

## 269. Jii-chan's grading

---

『...Do you understand why a corporation made from an old house like Kouzuki is much stronger than companies that are just starting up?』

Jii-chan's voice coming out from the speaker asks.

『A long lasting name are special existences. They have connection with other famous houses...and have power as well. For over a hundred years, Kouzuki has contributed progress to the nation named Japan. On surface and on the other side as well... The Japanese nor the US can no longer crush the Kouzuki family. If Kouzuki house declares that they'll shoulder the political and economic activities...then the country will be overthrown. A house nobody can harm...that is Kouzuki house. Just being a company dealing with the Kouzuki house, you can get absolute trust in the business world』

That is a noble family

『Well...I have been steering the Kouzuki group for many years. The activities of Kouzuki house is wide...!』

Misuzu and Ruriko...Kouzuki Souji and the『prince faction』...Shiba Akira, Kouzuki Kenshi and the『rising faction』are seriously listening to Jii-chan's voice.

『There's two large flows divided into two...that is to protect the『house』...and to develop the『house』』

To protect and to develop.

『Without the will to protect, the tradition and the pride as an old family will be lost in the course of time. Everything will be trampled by the rising power. However...if only you keep protecting, the weakening can't be stopped. To maintain status quo, the house will be exposed to the flow of time and will be ruined. At the moment it stopped growing, it'll die. People...house...even

companies』

Jii-chan's words have weight in them.

『Therefore...we must constantly change and grow our house to maintain what we protect. This is originally a contradiction. However, it can coexist...no, they have to unless the house will perish』

The voice in the speaker laughs.

『Then, what to do?...It's easy. I divided the company into two. A company that emphasizes on protecting and a company that focuses on developing』

Misuzu looks at the students in surprise.

『Prince faction』and the『Rising faction』...

『Misuzu, Ruriko...from your perspective, you can only see my students as foolish people. Acquaintance since teenage...it's good to have people who know each other's nature. The two groups are divided now but they'll mix together after a while. Those who fight are more likely to get along』

Jii-chan...are you managing your students on a long-term perspective?

『First...Kouzuki Souji』

「Y-Yes...!」

Jii-chan called his name...Kouzuki Souji answers nervously 『You're suited to protect』

「M-Me?」

『Yes, however...you're not suited in financial affairs. You don't have the sensibility to quickly judge and deal with a new situation one after another』

「...Y-Yes」

『However...what you can do is to protect what's now and convey it to the next generation』

Jii-chan said.

『You don't have the talent to stand on top of Kouzuki family. However, it's possible for you to come on top five. That's your limit』

「...!」

Kouzuki Souji's shocked as Jii-chan said it clearly.



『No...you have united your group well. I recognize that power. Perhaps...your group's unity won't change even 20, 30 years later. It's an important foundation for Kouzuki group』

True...these guys have an amazing teamwork.

『However, your unity is too inward oriented. Furthermore, you don't accept someone from the outside. For now, I can entrust leaving the job of protecting to you all』

Jii-chan's eyes moved from Kouzuki Souji to the other members of『Prince faction』...

『Kouzuki Satoshi, Natsuki Makoto...why did you make Souji your leader? Why aren't you taking the initiative to become the leader?』

「T-That's...」

「We put our trust in Souji-sama's talent」

Kouzuki Satoshi falters and Natsuki Makoto responded clearly.

『That's a lie. You just wanted to take it easy. You'd rather become the number two and three than becoming the leader, exposed to heavy exposure』

「...No, that's」

「That's not true. Souji-sama's lineage is superior than mine...!」

『If you comment about lineage then blindly worship Ruriko. Ruriko's the direct lineage of Kouzuki!』

Jii-chan strictly questions.

「That is...」

『Souji who has a somewhat good blood took the initiative of becoming a leader. Then, those who serve have it easy...as a matter of fact, that's what you're thinking right?』

「No, we never had such thought! We really do believe in Souji-sama's wonderfulness! Souji-sama is a great man that would last a hundred years」

Natsuki Makoto still hangs on.

『Kata Takashi, Torada Chitoku, Koku Rakujin, Tsunoda Fumikazu, Oohari Ryou...and Kouzuki Subaru. Are you on the same page?』

Jii-chan asks the other members.

「Y-Yes...it is as Natsuki said」

「I believe in Souji-sama」

「...Same」

「No, really...he's a great man that would last a hundred years. That's what I seriously think」

「Yes...I'm sure」

「Onii-sama's wonderful. Even I can't reach his feet」

Jii-chan...

『I see...it seems that I've educated you badly』

...Then

『Hey, you guys...if Souji's a talent of a hundred years, then what am I?』

「...Ha?」

『Prince faction』opens their mouthj widely

『I'm asking how many years my talent would last...!!!』

「T-That's...that」

「I-It's around a thousand years?」

「No, if you look at『Kakka's』achievements, it'll be ten thousand years」

「More. He can't be compared to anyone else!」

Jii-chan sighs

『Light...you people are so easy!』

Yeah...I think so too

『I'm nothing but an ordinary man. Souji's the same』

「B-But...『Kakka』」

『...You don't know what a real genius is!』

Jii-chan said.

『A talented person in ten years is just a dime a dozen. I have encountered people with a talent lasting a thousand years. A real genius comes out only every thousand years and I know someone who'll last ten thousand...!』

The head of Kouzuki family, Jii-chan who had lived for decades...had exchange with such people.

『Know what's real. And be more humble. If you realize how ordinary human, a stone on the side of the road...your view of the world changes』

「I am a stone?」

Kouzuki Souji mutters.

『Yes, a stone. Furthermore, a stone that causes quite a trouble You're not round, only having sharp edges...that's what kind of a stone you are!』

Jii-chan's voice is laughing as he speak harshly.  
Nevertheless, this person has a lot of affection to his students.

「Am I that incompetent」

Kouzuki Souji's shocked.

『Souji...do you know John Jacobs, the president of American x company?』

「...He's the one called the god of financial company」

『That's right. I've met him multiple times. Can you defeat Jacobs in financial investment?』

「No way...the opponent is a God! There's no way I could beat him!」

Jii-chan snorts,

『Right now, I have 2 wins and 8 loses. Though I've lost a lot, the wound's small. If he didn't think of Japan's Kouzui as a tough opponent...the entire Japan would've been devoured by him』

Not only the『prince faction』but also the『rising faction』are listening to Jii-chan's words seriously.

『Listen...being involved in Kouzuki house's management means that you'll continue fighting on the same field as the ferocious genius like Jacobs. Furthermore...the fights aren't fair. Often, you must compete on under their rules, their judgement. Sometimes, they lose strategically. What's important is to show that there's an extraordinary fighting spirit and Kouzuki never intends to be ruled by them. If you show a chance, if you know that the opponent would come for your throat then they won't attack carelessly...』

The room quiets down.

『Having both the financial power and ability more than oneself...you must continue your fighting pose against those who are tied to state power. There's a lot of people who owns intelligence similar to Jacobs. Investors, corporate managers, politicians...and even scammers. Just because they're more capable than I am, I never allow myself to run away from a fight. Kouzuki group is behind my back...and behind them is the nation called Japan...!』

Jii-chan said.

『Souji, the others as well...you have decent ability. You've got the lineage. You've got connections. And that may certainly be your power. However...that were just power just given to you by chance...it's not a power you have gained yourselves. And yet...what are you doing looking down on people not luckier than yourselves?』

That's right...these guys only look down.  
Even though they think that people more powerful than themselves are unbeatable from the start.  
They don't even feel like fighting.

「There are a number of people who have much more terrific ability, blood, and even connections than you. And those people...even they show wanting to have allegiance, those vultures won't overlook you」

Jii-chan's words made the students tremble.  
It's likely the first time they became conscious the fear of standing in the center of a company.

『Even I had an inferior ability, I desperately bit into him...the people you're looking down too will desperately peel their fangs on you. This world isn't a simple survival of the fittest. The weak risk their life to beat the strong people that is a daily experience in real business world』

Jii-chan said calmly

『Become more humble. On people inferior, and to those who are superior to yourselves...you must pay careful attention equally. We're ordinary people. You should keep it in mind at all times. If you underestimate your opponent, they'll

bite at your back horribly』

Jii-chan's gaze shifts to Shiba Akira now.

『Now then...Shiba Akira』

「...Yes」

『I praise that you have the ambition but life is finite』

「...What does that mean?」

『For example, if I want to start a new business...I can do it tomorrow. I have the funds...I also can gather the necessary personnel. I can head hunt for competent people. If you think the country's regulations are severe then I also know who to speak in the government. I can even formulate a new law and have it resolve in the national assembly...!』

「...Yes」

『I don't know what kind of corporate plan you have right now but how many years do you think will it take to realize that? Even if you were fortunate enough to go through...it'll take 15 years to establish the company. If unlucky, then it won't happen even after 30 years. No...in the face of success, there's a possibility of you losing everything by someone pulling your feet』

「...But, I」

Shiba Akira doesn't bend his will of independence.

『For what purpose do you want to achieve this plan?』

「...purpose?」

『If you simply want to succeed as an entrepreneur only in pursuit of romance, then I will not stop it. Do it on your own. There's no need for me to take care of that』

Jii-chan said.

『However...if I find a social significance in your plan and want to make it happen by all means...then I think that you should use everything you can』

「Use...?」

『Yes...if you really want to achieve it then shouldn't you think of using every method possible to realize it as soon as possible?』

「...That is?」

『Oh well...you still have time before debuting in the society. For now, stay as

my student. And, try to look for anything that can be used from me with your own eyes. Ask me a question if you want...if I feel that your proposal is valid then you can use anything』

「『Kakka』...!」

Shiba Akira is amazed.

『It's the same for the others. Hanaoka Shinsuke, Koumori Akira, Kawafuji AKishi, Kouzuki Kenshi, Takagi Fuuta, and the one not here, Shiba Takahiko... Except for Kouzuki Kenshi, you don't know the tradition of Kouzuki family You won't be able to defend it. I know that you are only interested in development. Therefore, let me tell you If you have a plan of some sort then show it to me before the classes are over. If it's a good plan then I'll cooperate towards realization of it. First, a plan. If I can see a plan then I can see how serious you are and how you think about the world. I'll just burn down any spoiled plan, an underestimating plan, a irresponsible plan. You must be prepared to be evaluated when you bring your plan. Is that understood...』

「Y-Yes...」

The members of『rising faction』answered all at once.

Shiba Akira hasn't responded yet...

「Akira-kun...we're still no match against『Kakka』 Let us have him guide us. There's still a lot to learn」

Kouzuki Kenshi tells Shiba Akira.

「Yes, you're right...Kenshi-san. 『Kakka』I'm sorry for saying rude things. Please let me study under『Kakka』for a while longer...!」

Shiba Akira submits to Jii-chan.

『Then, lastly...Misuzu, Ruriko』

Jii-chan speaks to his two granddaughters.

『Don't abandon people that easily. You should value relationships of people. If you cast away the current talents, you may be able to find better ones. However...what if you didn't come across such talent? It's common that only people with poor abilities and don't have perseverance are the ones employed』  
「...Grandfather」

Misuzu shows a pained look

『Don't make that face. What's important is the right person in the right place. Always think about the people with talent. How can you use that resource well. Most of the human resources fit together like puzzle pieces』

「Understood, grandfather」

「I also was thoughtless」

Misuzu and Ruriko apologizes to their grandfather.

『Don't mind it. You two can fail even more at the current moment』

Jii-chan's voice was kind.

『Let me tell you all my students. The future of Kouzuki house will be centered on Ruriko and Misuzu. Kouzuki house can't escape from the lineage. Ruriko will be the successor and Misuzu will support. I want you all to help them by all means. That is a request from me. I'm counting on you』

Kouzuki Souji

「Please wait...then...who will be Rurko-sama's partner?」

Kouzuki Souji and others think that the man who'll be Ruriko's husband would be the head of Kouzuki family.

『Who knows...for the time being, Ruriko won't marry to anyone from you people』

Jii-chan said.

『If someone among you becomes Ruriko's husband...Kouzuki house will be split. It'll never do good. Ruriko's husband is for her to decide. Then...That person will not be involved with Kouzuki house's administration』

「...T-That's」

『I have made such decision on Misuzu's partner. The person himself and Misuzu also consented. Then, Ruriko won't mind having the same rule apply to her. If they know that they can't become the head of Kouzuki family even if they become Ruriko's husband...the suitors aiming for fortune will be gone』

「Then...who'll be the head of Kouzuki house?」

Kouzuki Souji asks...Jii-chan

『I don't mind if it's either Ruriko or Misuzu. These children have the ability to become the head of the house. That's what I have judged.』

「However...both of them are women!」

『In the long history of Kouzuki house...there were some women who became heads. Besides, it's the 21st century now. It's the era where it doesn't need to be a man to become a leader, right?』

Jii-chan said clearly.

『With that said...gentlemen, I would like you to serve the two from now on』

The students look at each other.

「No, I think it's a good idea. I think that a female head is acceptable in the future generation. Above all, the successor dispute on the current Kouzuki wife will disappear...I think it's amazing」

Kouzuki Kenshi said

True, it would be appreciated if there will be none who aim to become Ruriko and Misuzu's husband.

「I-Is that so...I can't become a marriage partner?!」

Kouzuki Souji who's convinced that he'll be Ruriko's husband has received quite a shock.

「Yes...you're our vassal. You heard that?」

Misuzu tells the students showing a powerful eye.

「Yes...I vow to be under Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama」

Kouzuki Kenshi speaks as representative.

「What about you gentlemen?」

The『rising faction』nodded

「True...if the ladies are on the top, the unity of the group will increase」

Shiba Akira seems to be convinced.

「You all...don't mind it do you?」

Kouzuki Kenshi...asks his relatives, Kouzuki Satoshi and Natsuki Makoto, and



the『prince faction』

「Well...true, it seems that Souji-sama marrying with Ruriko-sama isn't a very good plan」

Kata admits lose easily

「Hey, Kata...you bastard!」

Kouzuki Souji glares but...

「There's no other choice now that it has come to this. 『Kakka's』will has been made clear. As a family that has sworn allegiance to Kouzuki family, there's no other choice but to support Ruriko-sama and Misuzu-sama」

Oohari Ryou said

The families of the old fashioned vassals are more likely to accept than the branch families of Kouzuki house.

「Please wait...if Souji-nii won't marry Ruriko-sama, then...is it possible that for me to be the husband?」

Kouzuki Satoshi tries to say that but...

「No way」

Ruriko answered with a smile.

「Eh...not at all?」

「Yes」

「Even on an atomic level?」

「Never with Satoshi-san」

Satoshi fell depressed.

「What about me?」

Kouzuki Subaru tries to nominate himself with a smile but...

「Subaru-san is even worse than Satoshi-san!」

Ruriko rejects with a smile.

---

## 270. The media industry

---

「Satoshi-san...even if you were in a branch family, you still hold the family name of Kouzuki」

Misuzu said

「Your reputation is going to be related to Kouzuki house. Please be careful not to do anything ludicrous」

Then, Misuzu looked at the other members of『prince faction』

「Everyone else is the same. More than a vassal, everyone's our relatives. Everyone, please think that you're always carrying the name of Kouzuki house. Ruriko and I won't forsake you anymore. However...please understand that if you have done something to hurt the name of our house, you'll be given a severe punishment」

「...What severe punishment?」

Kouzuki Subaru asks

「...We'll have you killed」

It's not Misuzu but Reika who said that.

「Eh?」The students face show.

「That is why Kouzuki security service is here」

「W-Weren't it your job to protect us!?!」

Kouzuki Satoshi screams at Reika

「Our top priority is to protect Kouzuki house. Even if you have a blood of Kouzuki, a child of a vassal, if you're someone who don't benefit the house... you'll disappear」

Reika smiles.

「With that said...Satoshi-san, please keep a distinct relationship with women」

Misuzu said

「Souji-san...please supervise them. By all means please」

Misuzu orders mainly Kouzuki Souji

Souji can no longer do anything but admit that he's a vassal.

「Understood...I will oversee my group so they won't do any carelessness」

「Of course...if it's a normal romance then you can do as you please. However, if you play with girls and hurt them...and caused some shameful scandal...you already know what will happen, don't you?」

At that time, they even won't be allowed to be banished from Kouzuki house.  
...Misuzu's saying that they're dead

「...Misuzu, you finally understood it. The head must never abandon his blood and vassals. If you just kicked out the dishonor from the house then he'll still carry the name of Kouzuki in public. With relatives of course...even the children of the old vassals, their misconduct will be Kouzuki house's responsibility. The person who can correct it by all means and erase it at will is the lord's work. For example, I have punished vassals and even relatives for making false charges」

Jii-chan said.

「Gentlement...if possible, I don't want Misuzu and Ruriko to have such painful experience. I want you to protect the name of the family」

「Certainly」Kakka「...!」

「By your orders...!」

「I'll bear it in mind」

In the「prince faction」Oohari Ryou, Koku Rakujin, and Torada Chitoku who has strong loyalty replied first.

「...Sacrifices can't be stopped in order to protect the house」

Kata Takashi accepts the role given as well.

「Understood...I will supervise Satoshi-san and Tsunoda」

Natsuki Makoto said.

Tsunoda shows a「geh!」face

「I know guys that you hang out on a delinquent's party. The organizer there is familiar with Yakuza. You do know that」

「But, we were just guests」

Tsunoda tries to make an excuse but...

「You guys offered funds to the party, right?」

Natsuki Makoto said.

「Is that true, Satoshi, Tsunoda?!」

Kouzuki Souji...questions the two.

「No you see...hey, Tsunoda!」

「It's said that sponsoring makes you popular with women」

「We've made various countermeasures too...」

The two becomes incoherent.

『That's how they do it...making themselves surrounded』

Jii-chan said.

「...Aren't they covering it as a party and do illegal acts such as buying and selling illegal drugs and prostitution on the back?」

Kata predicts.

「No way they're that horrible!」

「Because, if that's what happened...then we would get caught too」

Ah, these two are idiots.

Because they think they're lucky and a special person...

They don't notice that they're being used by bad guys.

「Either way, if people of Kouzuki house participates such a doubtful party... much more sponsored by them, it'll never be allowed」

Kouzuki Souji's idea is thorough maintenance.

He can't overlook anything that could hurt the name of the family

「Buy...you see...Souji-san」

「Uhm...this really is dangerous」

「Those guys aren't normal!」

What, Kouzuki Satoshi and Tsunoda recognizes the danger of the other party.  
Yet they're already in it.

No, they were pinned by the bad guys

『...Fujimiya-kun』

Jii-chan said

「Yes, please leave it to me」

Reika answers

「We'll be contacting the『special division』」

So there's that kind of division.

「I think that some of your friends will be travelling to a distant place so...the two of you must not make contact with them...!」

Reika looks at Satoshi and Tsunoda with cold eyes.

「If you contact the target before the『special division』makes a move...the two of you will be accomplices and will have to go to a far away place」

「...Reika-chan, a far away place?」

Mao-chan asks with a smile.

「It's a very warm place where flowers are blooming...!」

「Uwaa, it's like heaven!」

Satoshi and Tsunoda feel horrified.

「They're going that far to protect the『house』」

Shiba Akira mutters

「That's obvious...when you're a long lasting family, the branches will also increase. There's a lot of vassals. If so, there will be those who keep bad company or voluntarily becoming members of criminal organizations. If you don't have a thorough defense system, you'll just be eaten」

Jii-chan said

『Kouzuki house is a leading family in Japan. It's not like the upstart Shirasaka family』

That's right...Shirasaka house.

A bad guy like Shirasaka Sousuke was allowed to come out of their house.

On the contrary, even after Shirasaka Sousuke's deeds were exposed to the public...

The head, Shirasaka Moritsugu...was trying to protect Shirasaka Sousuke on a TV interview.

When it didn't go well, he's now asking a criminal organization to eliminate him.

If it was Jii-chan who have united the house for many years...it'll never be able to pass through the『defense system』

Kouzuki house has a special department in Kouzuki security service that eliminates internal stains.

If you ask an outsider organization...you'll only give a blackmail material to them.

『Pardon the lip service...this is to protect the house. If you are going to establish a company, it is the same. A company is a house. You have a family called employees』

Jii-chan talks to the『rising faction』this time

『If your business succeed...no, even if you don't succeed, as long as they think they can make money from you...scoundrels will approach. They're sensitive to the smell of money. Always watch your surroundings carefully and make sure you have some countermeasures or else you'll be devoured in one go』

The members of『rising faction』becomes silent.

『Up until now I've taught you the front side of corporate management...from now on, it'll be the other side. Power that can only be competed by power. There's a lot of criminal organizations connected with politicians and police. Then, you must have influence over the government. There's no fair fights. We are always in a world of survival...!』

...Survival

『From the book I read recently...there was a certain educational critic that said 『Children shouldn't be educated to compete for survival』...I would like to

despise that critic. Humans need to survive as long as they live. If you want to survive and protect the happiness of yourself and your family...then you must not lose the will to continue fighting. Once you lose it...you'll be taken down anytime. The children should be taught the skills to survive』

Jii-chan said.

『Of course...it's not only people. A company, a house as well...there's a need for survival』

In order to fight criminals, Kouzuki Security service is organized by them...

『Kouzuki Satoshi, Tsunoda Fumikazu...don't worry. Your concerns will be erased cleanly. You guys are my students after all...!』

Jii-chan made the two shudder.

From now on...these two will never act carelessly.

If some other bad guy comes closer...

Kouzuki Souji and Natsuki Makoto are being monitored.

In case it's a bad guy...Kouzuki Security Service will repel them.

This way, Kouzuki house is protected.

Even if a careless person among the blood relatives appear, it won't become a serious situation...

『Now then...there's one program I have prepared for you all』

Jii-chan said

『You may already know but we will be holding a meeting with the people of Shirasaka house. Is there anyone familiar with Shirasaka Hiromitsu?』

Jii-chan starts his lecture.

It seems he'll be showing us the usual state of the students

「I've heard that he's not in the main faction of Shirasaka house」

Koumori Akira from the『rising faction』replied

『That's right...he's the representative director on Osaka TV station』

...Osaka?

『Japanese media industry has an interesting history you see...originally,

there's a lot of cases founded in Osaka became nationwide scale and opened a headquarters in Tokyo. In Shirasaka house's case, it's even more complicated. Shirasaka house founded a newspaper company in Tokyo...bought small newspaper companies in each region and accomplished nationwide development. In case of Osaka, they have acquired local newspaper companies. The only sports newspaper selling in Osaka still have the name of their newspaper remaining』

Right.

I haven't been to Osaka so I don't know though

『Furthermore...when it came to TV business, they first made a TV station in Osaka and invested in there. Shirasaka house can't afford to stand in TV business alone. After six years in Osaka station, they made a series of TV stations in Tokyo. It is a hundred percent subsidiary of Shirasaka house's newspaper company...do you know what that means?』

Jii-chan asks.

「Unlike Tokyo's TV and newspaper companies...Shirasaka house's control on Osaka station is weak?」

Again, from『Rising faction』 Hanaoka Shinsuke answers.  
Yeah...the people on this group have a business sense.

『That's how it is. Shirasaka house's share is less than 30% in the TV station on Osaka. The rest are local company's stocks. Therefore, though it's an affiliate... it's not completely dominated by Shirasaka house. Especially the news program refuses transmitting from Tokyo station, they're making their own in Osaka. They're not able to report in line with the intention of Shirasaka house.』

I see, so that's how it is

『The current head of Shirasaka house, Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu hates that situation have been intending to turn the Osaka station to a wholly owned subsidiary many times so far. However, all of the local companies rejected that he received backlash. Osaka hates to have the information sent to Tokyo be on grasp』

Jii-chan said.



『Shirasaka house's baseball team too...they're not popular on Osaka only』  
「However...isn't Shirasaka Hiromitsu, the representative of Osaka station a member of the family?」

Shiba Akira asks.

『Shirasaka Hiromitsu is a collateral family from Shirasaka house. His parents moved in Osaka and his father worked in the newspaper company in Osaka. Horimitsu himself have been working since the creation of the TV station.. He may have a name of Shirasaka but he has been raised in Osaka for his lifetime』

That person will becoming to negotiate tonight?

『The current Shirasaka house's newspaper and television network...has in intense confrontation in Tokyo head office and the provinces. It's no longer an age where you can increase the viewers by the popularity of the newspaper's baseball team』

「Is it that serious?」

Kata asks.

『Yes...they're pushing the bills to the provinces that's not able to cope with the change of times』

...Pushing?

『The newspaper and TV stations...just a news agency has too many things to do. A series of publishers and recording companies now also buy up shares on a major talent office...if this happens, they can't manage it anymore』

Jii-chan snorts his nose.

『To sell the artist belonging to a recording company...it takes up the music program of the own station. To make the publisher gain profit...they dramatize the story of that company. In order not to lower the stock price of the talent investment...they aggressively appoint a talent. Everything is just selfish convenience for the Tokyo office』

...I see

『Finally...they make movies that don't sell. This is a massive bulldozing to all of the affiliates. The publisher's original work will be pushed, the talent office

forces the actor to appear and the theme song will be sold to an affiliate company. Advertisement, TV stations, newspaper companies, radio, publishers, all of the affiliated companies. And...the affiliate company buys a lot of movie tickets. Though there's profit...there's no actual customers. Using all the bills to take part in advertising, then come to the local affiliate to force them to buy tickets』

Oh...it's that kind of system.

『15 years ago, when it still made sense...the ordinary people could only receive information from the TV, radio, newspaper and magazines. If you fuel then...the customers will come in. It was able to produce fashion trends and booms. It was easy to suppress major media and not write criticism articles』  
「Oh...there was no internet back then」

Kouzuki Subaru mutters.

『That's right...now, interesting or not, it's conveyed immediately. No matter how stealthy the propaganda you made...it can't change the public opinion. The sensibility of Japanese people are sharp. They can easily find out what's real or fake』

Everyone nods at Jii-chan's explanation.

『As a result...during the past decade, the media has greatly reduced influence on the public. Nowadays, it doesn't boom as much as before if media pours in fuel. If the publicity effect is small then the sponsors will also decrease. In spite of that, the media companies in Tokyo can't forget the old days. There was an era when if you set fire in the television, it explodes...!』

I see...

I'm still a kid so I don't know things on the old days but...

『The current media companies had become organizations that only sell their products to the viewers in partnership of advertising agencies. Instead of sending information...they're just a merchant. As a result that made TV and newspapers avoided by the commoners』

Yeah. I don't watch TV so I won't get be troubled.

I can live without knowing singers or talents.

『The Tokyo office is currently unable to take any effective measures...the local affiliates are even worse. Since the recession in the rural areas are more severe, the sponsors also decrease...owing various bills from Tokyo. And yet... they're forced to broadcast only the contents from the Tokyo office...on top of that, they're not allowed to report their own opinions』

That's the confrontation of Tokyo and the provinces.

『Shirasaka Hiromitsu's TV station in Osaka isn't a wholly owned affiliate so they can do their own broadcast without following the intention of Shirasaka house in Tokyo. Because there's a separate sponsor company in Kansai, Tokyo can only complain. As there's an affiliate in each region, there's only one that can compete with Tokyo office

That person's coming here.

『My aim is to dismantle the news network in Tokyo that's controlled by the Shirasaka house. The other news organization will be spreading based on the current situation. Then, I want to reorganize the Japanese media』

Jii-chan said.

「...Onii-chan」

Mana comes to me.

「Hm...what's wrong?」

Mana takes my hand.

She puts it on her own ass...

A naked butt not wearing any panties.

「...Touch me」

...Mana?

「...I'm scared」

...I see

Mana's also a daughter of Shirasaka house.

With the talk of her own clan collapsing...

Mana's afraid...

「...Yeah, Mana」

I pinched Mana's ass tightly.

「Ahn...it hurts」

Mana whispers in my ears.

「Sorry...it just feels very good」

This time, I knead her ass gently.

「Un...please be kind. I...」

Mana's eyes are becoming wet

「...I'm Onii-chan's『woman』」

「Yeah, you're my Mana. Don't worry」

「...Un」

Having her ass massaged...Mana feels relieved

「Mana is Onii-chan's『sex slave』 I will devote my whole life to you...」

「Even if you don't say that...I'll take care of you」

I embrace Mana's waist

「Un...Onii-chan...my Onii-chan」

The students are so absorbed in Jii-chan's talk that they don't notice our situation.

In a sense...I think they're very serious people

Ah, Jii-chan said that he let five people go home...

Then this means...

Even a frivolous person like Kouzuki Satoshi and Tsunoda have a point worthy...

That's what Jii-chan thinks.

Un...I understand now, don't judge too easily.

It's not just the bad points...but also the good points.

「...Geez, what are you two doing!」

Nei-san comes close.

「...Onii-chan's teasing my ass!」

Mana answers with a red face.

「Is that so?...You're spoiled!」

Nei-san smiles.

「But, please keep it moderate...everyone's staring at Mana-chan!」

...Eh?

Looking around...

Megu's looking at us with a scary face.

Misuzu's also showing a cold look.

「Mana...everyone's watching so it's about time」

I tell Mana.

「Eh, isn't that fine! Let's show it off...!」

The small devil smiles.

「...Mana's happy you know」

---

## 271. Complex (part 1)

---

「Then...Shirasaka Hiromitsu will be coming to negotiate?」

Kouzuki Souji asks Jii-chan.

『The situation isn't that simple...with the blunder in the press conference broadcast of the head of Shirasaka house, Shirasaka Moritsugu, the local affiliates have a sense of crisis. Who will trust a news broadcasting organization that has it's head protecting a relative that's a criminal? The key stations in Tokyo and the headquarters for the newspaper company are of course flooded with calls and emails from the protesters...』

I see, the local people protests on local branch offices...local TV and radio stations...

『Furthermore, Shirasaka house's newspaper company and television stations has a lot of affiliated companies, foundations, and research institutes. With that said, the ripples of the scandal has began to spread even to those not directly related to the press』

Shirasaka Sousuke, is a member of Shirasaka house but...  
The person himself is an employee of an advertising agency, not a person on Shirasaka house's enterprise.

If the business is blown with protest calls in response to the scandal caused by some guy, or if their company were boycotted...then the affiliate company won't endure it.

『Now that it had come to this...if it was a normal company then Shirasaka Moritsugu would just retire. After all, he defended the criminal himself and had gone to a press interview to hide the fact of the crime. However...Shirasaka house, is managed by only a single man, Shirasaka Moritsugu for 25 years. Shirasaka Moritsugu will never accept retiring for such a trivial thing』

「However...if Shirasaka Moritsugu won't resign, the protests against Shirasaka house's affiliates won't end, would they?」

Kouzuki Kenshi asks.

『Therefore...Shirasaka Miromitsu from Osaka who's independent from the Tokyo office, centered on the local television stations and newspaper was nominated. Hiromitsu may be an affiliate but is also a member of Shirasaka house...I know who to join hands in the main house in order to drag down Shirasaka Moritsugu』

A screen comes down on the wall of the room.  
This room is originally made as a wedding hall.  
This screen is intended to reflect images at the wedding reception.  
On the white screen...first, a person is projected.

『First, this is Shirasaka Hiromitsu』

Yeah...it's a bald glassed old man past his 60s.  
His mouth is smiling.  
Somehow, he has that schemer atmosphere.  
Then the image changed...now it's an old lady past 60s.  
Somehow, her mouth is big.

『Next, Shirasaka Ayako. She's Tokyo's Shirasaka head house's...let's see, she's on the number six. She's an executive director in Shirasaka Holdings. The head of Shirasaka international political research institute, president of Shirasaka Peace foundation, board chair on Japan and Asian children dance circle...well, she's the group's boss on those opposing against Shirasaka Moritsugu』

In addition, another image...  
It's a fat man over his 40s with perm.

『Shirasaka Fukushi, Ayako's son. He's currently the head of cultural department on the newspaper head office...though he hasn't done anything noticeable, Mrs. Ayako brought him here. Well, as someone who knows the internal affairs in the newspaper company, it's a good selection』

Then...a small old man.

『Lastly, Yamada Hisashi. He's one of the vice presidents on the newspaper

company. Though he's someone who stands by Shirasaka Moritsugu's side, he was persuaded with Shirasaka Hiromitsu and decided to participate in the downfall plan. He's supposed to suppress the middle class who begin to abandon Shirasaka Moritsugu』

I see...there's a coup prepared inside the Shirasaka house.

『Tonight, these four people will be talking with us in the table of negotiations. They seek support for their plan from us』

Jii-chan explained to his students...

Actually, it's a bit different.

They're actually coming to make a deal with Minaho-neesan.

As long as Minaho-neesan keeps leaking out information about Shirasaka Sousuke's wrongdoings...

The flames of this scandal will never end.

On the contrary, Minaho-neesan still holds a lot of『fire』

They are afraid of that spill.

Though the head, Shirasaka Moritsugu's policy is to『resist to the bitter end』...if they do that, there would be an enormous damage given to the entire group of company.

The local and affiliated companies are hoping for an immediate『extinguishment』

Therefore...they must『make an agreement』with Minaho-neesan.

Jii-chan not telling his student means that...

He doesn't want to tell them about the underground organization『Kuromori』 and Kuromori Minaho.

「What advantages would it give to Kouzuki house if we give them support?」

Shiba Akira asks

『Rather than being a merit to Kouzuki family...it is a matter of national interest』

Jii-chan answers.

『After the scandal created by Shirasaka Sousuke is revealed...Shirasaka house's related company shares have been dropping across the board. There's information of foreign investors targeting the stocks that have become



cheaper』

「However...if foreigners buy shares of Japanese media...I think that they'll receive a strong opposition」

Kata said.

『They can just ask a Japanese representative with an investment fund. They're fine as long as they can control even indirectly. However, it's not good for foreigners to hold control of Japan's media outlets. They can just give arbitrary reports that's convenient to them』

「I see...if the one moving from behind the scenes are American investors, they're just vultures for gold swarming together...in case of people in other countries, they'll use it for political purposes.」

Kouzuki Kenshi explained.

『For the time being...in return for our aid, Shirasaka house will give out shares they have. We won't be able to take all away but we'll suppress around 30% of them. If so, we can send an executive officer. If Shirasaka Moritsugu loses power, the next top of the television and newspaper station won't be Shirasaka family anymore. If Shirasaka house just does a baton pass on another Shirasaka...the public won't be satisfied. With the new representative we will send...we'll be wiping out the Shirasaka house's influence from within』

「In short...Shirasaka household can no longer touch the management?」

Kouzuki Souji speaks in surprise.

『Yes...we'll have them accept the position as one of the major shareholders on the newspaper and television company. Of course...even if someone from Shirasaka family is a competent man gains a position, he'll never take the top. In the first place, a situation of a single house taking a huge news enterprise group is abnormal. We will correct that with this opportunity』

Jii-chan said.

『While at it...we will also arrange the affiliate companies. We'll let all companies that can be independent do it...we'll make newspaper and television only do business as a news organization. I won't let them do any other foolish business』

Jii-chan intends to completely disassemble the Shirasaka house's group of company.

Well, true...it's strange that a newspaper and television station operate under record and entertainment companies.

『It's past eight in the evening. We're a bit late in the schedule but...Shiraska Hiromitsu should be arriving soon』

Miss Cordelia who's together with the white Viola's promised not to attack until 8PM when they came to the theater.

It's already past that time.

Did they keep their word...?

No, the enemy might've already infiltrated close to us...

They might even waiting the signal for combat.

Actually, I can't see anything.

『Well, the colleagues I have called in were also delayed in arrival...』

Right

Jii-chan called the parents of the students for negotiation.

And someone among them...

Is doubted as a traitor.

To think that the enemy was able to enter Kouzuki security service...

Then it's assumed that there's someone from the same organization that's an enemy other than Cesario Viola.

『Please take your meal for a while now...I will make contact again later』

Then, Jii-chan's voice ends.

The image of the screen switches on the first floor of the hotel.

Ah...Someone came in the hotel by car.

「Ah, that's our dad」

Tsunoda said.

A man wearing an expensive looking suit comes out of the black car.

Thus, the people on the negotiation table will be gathering at the table one by one.

...Now then.

「Girls, are you not hungry?」

I call out to my women.

「Eh, what's wrong, Yo-chan?」

Nei-san asks me in surprise.

「Let's eat properly while we have time」

The students invaded in while we were in the middle of a meal earlier...

「Besides...it would be a waste to leave food」

...There's still quite a lot of meals left.

「...Danna-sama, you're right」

Misuzu smiles at me.

「Let's try to eat a bit more while we have time...!」

Un...we don't know when our next meal will be if Viola's attack happens.  
It's possible that we might be isolated in the hotel.

「Right...I'm eating!」

Mana said.

「You all as well, eat as much as you want...!」

Misuzu orders the students...



Now then, the room has become strange.

Misuzu's orders are working...so the students aren't coming close to us.  
Instead...

The『prince faction』and the『rising faction』are interacting 「I wanted to talk to you once」

Shiba Akira talks to Kata Takashi, the planner of the『prince faction』  
On the other side, Kouzuki Kenshi and Torada Chitoku from『rising faction』are talking to Oohari Ryou and Koku Rakujin, members of the『prince faction』that aren't member of Kouzuki house.  
Hanaoka Shinsuke, Koumori Akira also join the circle.

Kouzuki Souji, the leader of『prince faction』who had the densest blood broke down...it seems that the power balance of the『private faction』starts changing right away.

The『prince faction』was bound by the relationship of their family and parent's generation...

The『rising faction』were indebt children of those who have entered later.

That's another inferiority complex.

That complex was removed at once and the air has gotten better.

However...there seems to be a person who have decided to be isolated on the contrary.

Kwafuji Akishi and Takagi Fuuta are looking at the whole state from far away.

Then, Kouzuki Souji, Subaru and Satoshi gathered together and eat quietly.

There's also a small change in us.

Yoshiko-san who's been gloomy until a while ago is now eating with Ruriko with a bright face.

It seems that she feels a bit relieved now that Ruriko's fiance problem have been cleared up.

Misuzu and Nagisa are taking charge of the place.

Reika's playing with Mao-chan as usual

Megu and Mana are eating with the two of them stuck together.

I've got to break this combo somehow.

I feel like Megu and Mana's combination isn't very good.

Yukino, she's limping alone.

However, because Kouzuki Satoshi who knows her true identity is here...she can't leave our side 「Hey, are you eating properly?」

I ask Yukino...

「Just leave me alone...」

「I took a sandwich and a drink」

「Anyway...eat. You don't know when you need the strength to go」

「It's fine...who cares if I die anyway」

Yukino said showing a gloomy face.

「If Moritsugu-ojisama loses power...nobody will come to help us anymore」

Yukino said「Us」

「Papa's abandoned...Mama can just go back to Ichikawa house...Maika, well, it seems you saved her」

Yukino has her own family

That terrible father and mother that abandoned her...that's still Family for Yukino 「What will happen to me?」

I...

「For the time being...you'll stay with us for a year」

「...A year?」

Yukino shows a suspicious face

「You'll give birth to a child after all」

Surprised...Yukino touches her own stomach

「I wonder if I'm already pregnant...」

「Even if we don't do it now, I'll definitely make you pregnant...that's Minaho-neesan's will」

Minaho-neesan is trying to make Yukino give birth to a substitute to her dead sister.

If a baby isn't born...Minaho-neesan's revenge won't be complete.

Minaho-neesan was made to never make a child again anymore by Shirasaka Sousuke 「...You're right, I don't think you're gonna give up」

Yukino mutters, expressing her disgust.

「Then just rape me as you wish...you coward」

Mana then approaches Yukino.

「Onii-chan...want me to give birth instead?」

...Hey, Mana

「It's not just Yukino-san...I'm also a subject of Kuromori-san's revenge right? I'm fine with it. Either way, someday I'll give birth to Onii-chan's child...it's fine to get pregnant even now. Mana can't go back to her school anyway...!」

Mana won't be able to go back to the prestigious all girl middle school.

「Mana will take a year break and give birth. Then, you can just throw Yukino-san away right...!」

「E-Even I am fine with it」

Megu comes close.

「I also am Shirasaka Sousuke's daughter」

「It's fine Megu-oneechan...Mana will do it. Megu-oneechan still has her school...I want you to do your best in your club activities too...!」

「Mana's the one who shouldn't...it's not good for a 14 year old girl to give birth. Besides, you're aiming to become a super model, right? Your body line would change if you get pregnant. You know that don't you?」

Megu tells Mana.

「But...a dream is a dream. I'd rather have a bond with Onii-chan than reach my dream」

...Bond?

「If I make a baby...then I'll be able to feel that should never leave Onii-chan's side」

I see...Mana's

Uneasy

「Besides...I'm scared of Yukino-san giving birth to Onii-chan's child」

「...Eh, about what?」

「Like...Yukino-san might take away Onii-chan from us」

...Mana?

「Yoshi-kun...I'm the same. I'm scared of Yukino」

...Megu

These two...

Yukino's younger sister and half sister...

They've always lived having inferiority complex towards Yukino.

The wound still remains in their heart

「I hate this guy so much...!」

Yukino tells her sisters.

「But, this man seems to like me by all means!」

Yukino whispers, showing a nasty smile.

「We know...that's why we're scared」

Megu said.

「Ooh, now that I see your depressed face...it made me hungry」

Yukino eats the sandwich I brought

「Right...if it's going to make you suffer then I think I'll bear this man's child!」

Yukino also holds inferiority complex towards Megu.

That ill feeling makes Yukino go reckless.

「I'll do anything if it's to see your crying face」

...I

「Yukino...you don't understand anything」

「...What?」

Yukino glares at me.

「Have you ever thought of wanting to have sex with me?」

「There's no way I would. I hate people like you! You've been forcibly raping me all the time!」

Yukino who has high pride answers as such.

「Right. You're always forcibly raped. Even now, you're forced to look funny... forcibly dragged around. It has nothing to do against your will...!」

「That's right! I'm the victim here!」

Yukino barks at me with angry eyes.

「That's how it is. Even getting pregnant, giving birth to a child...it's all forced. Your will is ignored...!」

I said

「If there's someone who should cry, it's you. Your life has been made a mess by me... !」

Tears accumulate in Yukino's eyes.

「W-What, what's with you, what's with you! Unforgivable...I'll never forgive you!」

Again, tears drop from Yukino's cheeks.

「Yeah, you don't have to...I don't think you will」

I look at Megu and Mana.

「You girls too...whatever happens, don't ever get jealous of Yukino...!」

「...Yoshi-kun?」

「...Onii-chan?」

「I'll make Megu and Mana happy. Therefore, you should be」

...But

「Yukino will never become happy...you two are different」

There's no way for us to understand each other.

We're incompatible.

「Believe me, be proud...okay?」

「...But」

Megu's still gloomy

「You two don't believe Master? Then please excuse yourself from being Master's『woman』」

Michi comes in.

「Michi-san...does that mean?」

「Misuzu-sama and I...believe that Master will make us happy...we also swear to make Master happy」

Michi reports

「If you always just want to be pampered by Master and doesn't intend to support him...then you two should be eliminated!」

「Hey, wait...Michi」

It would be troublesome if you attack Megu or Mana with your Kudou style ancient martial arts...!

「Hai hai hai hai! That's enough!」



Nei-san appears smiling.

「Megu-chan and Mana-chan too...it's about time you've got to reassess. You two have been overly relying on Yo-chan since last night...!」

「...Over relying? We?」

Megu looks down.

「It's fine to be spoiled! We're『family』! But, are you okay with just being the one being pampered?」

「...I don't think it is」

Mana answers

「...What should we do?」

Megu mutters.

「Before I noticed...Misuzu-san has overtaken me... Misuzu-san is becoming even more attractive as Yoshi-kun's partner and yet...I'm becoming a burden. I... I...!」

...Megu.

---

## 272. Complex (Part 2)

---

「Hmm...It can't be helped you know?」

Nei-san speaks to the gloomy Megu with a lively voice.

「Megu-chan wants Yo-chan to be by her side all the time right?」

...Megu

「Well, that's true...but」

「But what?」

「I don't think I deserve to stand beside Yoshi-kun」

Nei-san smiles.

「You want to be needed by Yoshi-kun?」

「Because...right now, I need Yoshi-kun. Therefore I also want Yoshi-kun to need me...but, Yoshi-kun got Misuzu-san and Nei-san, there are much more stronger, much more beautiful onesan than me...I think that I'm just becoming a drag...」

Megu's having a gloomy face.

「Even earlier...Misuzu-san went all the way to comfort me...Misuzu-san's so composed...caring so much for me...I'm losing. I'm completely defeated...!」

...AH

...I see. Oops.

Earlier, when Misuzu comforts the depressed Megu...

Then Megu was crying...

I was sure that Megu's feelings had settled down but...

It did the opposite.

Megu's feeling a strong inferiority towards Misuzu...

She's holding a sense of rivalry for being with me...

And with the rival, Misuzu being gentle to her...she cried miserably. I just strengthened the inferiority complex.

「Do you hate losing?」

Nei-san asks Megu

「...I hate it」

「Then, what do you intend to do?」

「...I don't know. I'm not an amazing woman like Misuzu-san...I'm can't be kind to everyone like Misuzu-san...no courage, no strength either...!」

Megu's body trembles.

「Megu-chan...you're making a big misunderstanding」

Nei-san said.

「Mii-chan isn't as compost as Megu-chan thinks」

「But...Misuzu-san's strong. Much more than me」

「Then...are you just going to leave Yo-chan too Mii-chan?」

Megu raised her face.

「I can't let that happen」

Nei-san smiles

「Then...there's no other way but to struggle!」

...Struggle

「You see...I also used to think of this. I want to be needed by the one I love. When Kei-chan was alive...I've been clinging to Kei-chan, and it saved me」

Nei-san recalls her past.

「But you see...there was nothing I did for Kei-chan. As a sister, as a woman...I couldn't do anything. I was really a nuisance for Kei-chan」

Nei-san's lost twin brother.

He was continuously violated by Cesario Viola so he can protect Nei-san. In the end, he killed Viola's sister and got killed by her.

「But you see...Recently, I've been thinking. As long as you're alive, that's good

enough. 『I've got to do something』or『I want to be needed』...are just your own desires. Just blow away those thoughts...there's no need to like me, I don't care if I'm hated... I just want to live」

Nei-san laughs lonely.

「Kei-chan was Christian you see...did I talk about it already?」

Nei-san looks at me.

「Yes...I've heard about the story of him praying at night with Nei-san when you were confined by Viola」

Nei-san back then tried to give her body to her brother.  
However the Christian brother refused to have sex...  
The two of them prayed to God and let the night pass.

「You see, I hate to pray to a God that doesn't help no matter how hard you try, but...Kei-chan said『God is always by our side』 Yeah...just beside us. He won't come to help」

Megu and Mana are listening to Nei-san's talk.

「You see, in Christian churches in the US...you often see『GOD IS LOVE』on walls. When you translate it in Japanese, it says『神は愛なり』... Those words often come to my mind...!」

.....神は愛

「If the God's love means staying beside us and not helping...then『love』is just an act of snuggling together. Being needed by the other, helping them out...isn't that just useless? Just staying by the side...existing...just living...I think that's enough」

Kei-chan's no longer here

「Nei-san...I'll stay by Nei-san's side forever」

I...I promised to be Nei-san's brother in substitute for Kei-san.

「I know! I'll stay with Yo-chan forever too!」

Nei-san smiles.

「Megu-oneechan is overthinking...I know how it feels though」

Mana said.

「Mana also keep troubling Onii-chan. Mana's the one who's a luggage to Onii-chan. If Onii-chan hates me and abandons me someday, I won't make any complains...!」

Mana leans her body on me  
She's putting my head on my chest...

「...There's no other place for Mana to live other than Onii-chan's side」

...Mana

「Therefore, when I give birth to Onii-chan's child...then I feel like I can have a passport to stay by his side」

The wound in her heart is deeply rooted...

「Megumi-oneesama and Michi-imouto is worrying too much!」

Michi who's been silently listening to the two speaks up.

...However

『Megumi-oneesama』is fine but...『Mana-imouto』what?

「Master is like a big tree. We should just enter the shade of Master and take a rest...that's good enough...!」

...Michi?

「I think so too. Just being by Yo-chan's side heals us. That alone is fine」

Nei-san too...

「No, but...I can to anything...」

In reality...I'm not confident that I'm useful to everyone.

「Why? Yo-chan is always listening to us seriously you know? You always think with all your best...you even say that you like me right?!」

「Y-Yes」

「I love Yo-chan! Also...Yo-chan likes Megu-chan, Mana-chan, Mii-chan...Katsun, Nagisa-san, Mii-chan, Ruri-chan, Reika-san...Sensei and Maru-chan, Shige-ojii-chan, Seki-san and Yoshiko-san right?」

「Yes...I do」

「Yeah. Everything Yo-chan thinks comes out of his face...he's someone who doesn't lie. He's kind to everyone he really likes...he makes a thorough wall for people he hates」

「Is that so?」

「That's right...Yo-chan you hate that elitist guys over there right?」

「Well...yeah」

More than hate...I'm not good at dealing with them

「Those people are basically rejecting Yo-chan but Yo-chan's also shutting out his heart from them. Really...that's so easy to understand」

Nei-san smiles at me.

「With that said...if Yo-chan's not rejecting us then we can just stay by Yo-chan's side. We can stay under the shade of the great tree called Yo-chan. Then, if Yo-chan stops accepting us someday...then that will definitely be shown in Yo-chan's face...then, you can just go away from him」

Nei-san tells Megu and Mana.

「But...I want to be helpful to Yo-chan」

Megu speaks in pain.

「I've said it earlier. There's no choice but to struggle desperately. Bet with your life」

「...Life?」

Megu's surprised from what Nei-san said.

「That's right. When Yo-chan dies...and he said『I'm really glad I have you, thank you』then it'll be Megu-chan's win. You just have to stay with him for a long, very long time. Isn't that the only way?」

Nei-san smiles.

「I don't want to have regrets like I did with Kei-chan before. Therefore, I'll do anything I wasn't able to do to Kei-chan for Yo-chan. I already know that Yo-chan will accept whatever trouble I give him...! So I just have to spend a long life with him!」

...Nei-san

「If you think you want to do something then do it...Yo-chan will accept whatever it is anyway. If you can't do it right now then don't force yourself. Don't rush, don't panic...life is long after all」

Nei-san promised her virginity to me.  
But...that is only until Cesario Viola's case is resolved...  
Kei-san's memorial service isn't over yet for Nei-san...  
We won't be able to embrace each other.  
Nei-san and I know that.  
Therefore we don't rush.  
We can just take our time slowly

「Really...Yo-chan's a big and splendid big tree. He's rooted firmly, unmoving. I love you...Yo-chan」  
「Me too...Nei-san」

I look at Megu and Mana and Michi  
「I love you all girls」  
Michi and Mana smiles  
「I know...Master」  
「Mana also loves Onii-chan!」

...Megu  
「Yoshi-kun...do you love Yukino?」  
Yukino who's been listening to our conversation endlessly turned over here.  
「Hmm, I like Yukino but look...Yukino doesn't like me」  
Yukino's looking at me.

「Therefore...the distance between us won't shrink anymore. No matter how many times we have sex, even if Yukino gets pregnant with my child...I don't think it'll change」

Yukino's the same as during the entrance ceremony  
Just the same...woman from far away  
Back then...everyday, I thought that I could just look at Yukino from a distance...  
The distance between our hearts, I noticed that it'll never approach.

「...You're right」

Yukino speaks

「You see...I don't understand what you're talking about at all. Why are you so obsessed with this man? Isn't he just a disgusting man you don't understand what he's thinking...!」

Yeah

Someone like Yukino will never understand me.

Rather than understanding...she doesn't want to, she feels disgusted.

「True, this guy's good at sex but...that's not all. He's head is completely empty, he's just a stud who's dick is always erect...!」

So that's Yukino's evaluation of me?

「Got it, then Yukino-san shouldn't have sex with Onii-chan anymore...!」

Mana said

「...Eh?」

Yukino panics.

「If you feel disgusted then you don't have to right? Yukino-san won't have him anymore. Ah...but it would be a problem if you don't get pregnant」

「In that case, we can just put Yo-chan's semen in a syringe or something...We just need to pour it into her womb! If you ask Katsun, then she'll take out some syringe from the mansion」

There should be some kind of instrument like that used on Shirasaka Sousuke's perverted plays.

「Yeah, Nei-san, let's do that!」

Mana smiles!

「Then, Mana will do the pouring of semen inside Yukino-san!」

Mana's sadistic blood boils up.

「With that settled, Onii-chan has to ejaculate inside Mana with twice the amount! Mana will put the semen released into a syringe then we'll use that to fertilize Yukino-san...!」



...Err...

「...Michi-san, could you come over here?!」

While I was troubled how to reply...Margo-san calls Michi.  
Reika, Nagisa and Mao-chan are surrounding Margo-san.  
Everyone's watching over the image on the first floor lobby projected on the screen.

「Yes, I'm coming right now...!」

Michi replies

「Let's go too」

I try to go to Margo-san's side  
...Then

「Yoshi-kun...I'll do my best」

Megu whispers.

「I don't know what I should do but...I'll do my best」

With Nei-san talking sense to her...Megu seems to have recovered her thoughts a bit

「You don't have to do your best...Just stay by my side」

I also whisper on Megu's years.

「Just staying by my side is good enough」

「...Yoshi-kun, thank you」

Megu mutters.



The first floor lobby has the security guards of Kouzuki security service and the free people brought by Kudou-papa.  
The image on the screen is from a surveillance camera?

「Reika-oneesan taught us how to use the surveillance systems」

Margo-san pulled out a device on the wall and pushed a switch one after another.

Reika is one of the elite members of the Kouzuki security service.

As this is a property of Kouzuki house, she seems to be familiar with this hotel which have been used many times on important meetings.

「However...Kudou-san's really amazing. Didn't he gather most of the people working in Tokyo underground」

Margo-san said.

Ah, I see the Banbarubie 3 ladies.

「Ah, that woman's nipple is exposed!」

When he saw Ruby's nipples on the screen, Tsunoda shouted...!

The students stopped talking and focused on the video.

MArgo-san then switches the camera quickly.

「However...it's really filled with unique people」

Nagisa said amazed.

Kudou-papa's colleagues are truly flashy people.

Most have a solid figure...wearing a leather jacket but.

There's a lot of people wearing strange clothes.

There's a mohawk guy with a huge thorns on his shoulder protector...

A fuke monk having a braided hair...what kind of person is he?

There's another guy who's dressed like a pilot of a jet fighter(there's an oxygen mask on the pilot helmet)...and a F1 Racing person(with a proper sponsor logo, covering his whole face with helmet)

Even though it's a hotel lobby, there's one wearing a wet suit, SCUBA, and even has a flipper...I can't understand the aim.

With this, Kudou-papa and Neko-san who can be seen as a middle school girl even though she's a mother becomes the ordinary people...

Banbarubie have their triangular bikini, hotpants, and a Japanese sword...

I can see a lady wearing pink nurse clothes and have a huge syringe, like she's cosplaying for some anime or manga...

Or rather, there's a group of nine wearing white scarf and red clothes...what's that?

Red, yellow, or green, or group wearing colorful Japanese clothing.

A gentlemen wearing a pure white suit and having a glass of brandy on one

hand.

「Hey hey...is the first floor having a cosplay competition?」

Kouzuki Satoshi mutters.

「Oh, Ito Shiro, Komatsu Masao, Minami Shinsuke, and Yamada Takao are also here」

Margo-san speaks.

I wonder if all of them are known figures in the underground community?

「Yes, father is well known after all」

Michi speaks proudly

Knowing such people...I wonder?

Well, Kudou-papa is also a strange guy.

「Michi-san...is that『Mars Doug Ram』and『Uchuu Gyaos』?」

Margo-san asks

Looking at it...there's a pair of men wearing a silver suit on the screen.

One is a white guy and the other is Japanese.

Both of them are wearing dark sunglasses.

「Yes, that's right. Both of them have have been requested by father for work several times」

Michi answers.

「Oh, I've seen then only on files but...aren't they quite a combination of skills?」

Margo-san speaks laughing.

「What is that『Mars』and 『Uchuu』」

Mana asks

「It's their code names」

Reika answers

「The white guy is Douglas Ramsay...he's originally from the American Special Forces, his codename back then was『Mars』 Then he lived in Japan's

underground society, his name was shortened...thus『Mars Doug Ram』

「Eh, why? Won't『Mars』just do?」

Yeah. I think that Mana's right.

「Well...the codename『mars』is more familiar to the Japanese underground society since a long time...」

「To be accurate, it's『Getter Mars』-san」

Michi supplements Reika's explanation

Oh, because the code name overlaps...he changed his name after coming.

「What about『Universe Gyaos』?」

「『Universe Gyaos』-san's real name is 『Naito Uchuuta』-san」

Michi answers Mana.

「Uchuuta, so『Uchuu』?」

「...Yes」

「...Then what about『Gyaos』?」

「...Because he's Naito」

Michi speaks confidently but...I don't get it.

「However, not only『Mars Doug Ram』...there's quite a few foreigners」

Margo-san said

「...Kudou-san's so drastic」

...Does that mean?

「Someone among them should be communicating with Cesario Viola...!」

Margo-san smiles.

---

**EPUB/PDF generated by [Inwnepubs.com/](http://Inwnepubs.com/)**

---

**Translated by [Machine Sliced Bread](#)**

---

## 273. Second Negotiation — 1

---

「Kudou-san seems to have called out each and every person in the underground society. Actually...most named people are in here」

The image reflected on the screen is the scenery of the first floor.  
Reika speaks looking at the free people in the underground society wearing strange clothing.

「He must've presented quite a considerable amount of reward. In addition, the fight in this hotel is organized by『Kakka』 If you play an active part in here, 『Kakka』might recognize them. It's possible that you can be a regular of Kouzuki security service...they can also become an agent that reports directly to『Kakka』 like Kudou-san」

I see...if they're free men then today's work has a big meaning.

「Well...it's a full confrontation between the Kouzuki family and the famous American criminal organization. Those lacking in ability would just cower and hide...on the other hand, those people who have a name in the underground society will lose their face unless they participate in the『fight』tonight. Kudou-san distributed the information on the underground society and made it such a big event...!」

Margo-san said.

「Yes...they got no other choice but to come to Kudou-san's request tonight to protect their own reputation in the underground society. If they don't come then they'll be a laughingstock...for the free people, they're most afraid of their own reputation being hurt」

Reika explains.

「Therefore...do they intend to be our『ally』?...do they intend to be

our『enemy』?...we still don't know at this stage which side they will take」

...Does that mean?

「Yeah...there's a lot of devil's advocate among the free people in the underground society. Especially the strong ones have that tendency. 『It's not fun to be Kouzuki-san's ally』...then they'll take Viola's side and decide to fight against us. They just want to make a mess around a big organization like Kouzuki Security service...!」

Margo-san said smiling.

「Anyway, those who will change to Viola's side will be presented with a decent guarantee...they might think that this could be their chance to join with Viola and move to Los Angeles base. Those people without roots will flow anywhere they want」

I see...

「...Then that means that there's Viola's men in there?」

When I asked, Margo-san...

「Not his minions though. In the end...they're just『local employee』hired by Viola for tonight. Look, those foreigners that attacked before are like those」

...Is that so?

Kudou-papa was on the side of the grounds...then suddenly a group of foreigners come to attack.

「Viola has an absolutely limited number of people moving in Japan... If he want to build up troops, then he can only hire local people」

Margo-san said.

「We don't know how many Viola's men were brought from the US but...well, now that it came to this, we can consider that he brought a quite a number of soldiers with him」

We can no longer trust that Viola brought a small number of people to Japan. The information of the group that seems to be Viola in the airport was all fake. The real Viola entered Japan from a different place.  
Miss Cordelia and the other set of white Viola is also here...

It should be considered that certain number of criminals have infiltrated.

「But still...I guess the limit is around 30 people at max? It's impossible to go any further than that. Kouzuki-san had checked all of the immigration status of all airports across the country」

Margo-san analyzes.

「Therefore...due to the padding of forces, some of them are locally hired by Viola!」

Nei-san said.

「The free people in the underground money will do anything for money! They're especially dry when it comes to foreign business. If they can earn properly then they'd only think of getting away from their home country...!」

I see...if it's a foreigner, they don't mind the power of Kouzuki family. No, even Japanese people...if you're living in the underground society, you can calmly oppose Kouzuki house.

...Anyway

Everyone's supposed to be gathered in this hotel lobby according to Kudou-papa's request today...

As soon as it turns to battle, that's when those who will become『enemies』 show up.

With that said now...it looks like all of the strange looking people in the screen are『enemies』

「...Do you two assume that a percent of the people father have gathered are『enemies』?」

Michi asks Reika and Margo who's leading the road.

「In this case...the number doesn't matter」

Margo-san smiles wryly.

「That's right...it depends on the level of the fighting ability of the opponent」

Reika answers.

No matter how many weak fries gathered...they can't fight someone with an A-class combat ability.

「And to trouble us...those who have a perverse personality is quite strong...!」

Haa...well, that's bad.

「Take a look...even the people in the lobby are aware of it. Look, everyone's checking each other...!」

Just as Margo-san points out...the members of the underground society in the lobby are united per teams...and trying to distance from the other teams. They make conversations sometime but they seem to be suspicious of each other.

They're keeping each other, prepared anytime someone attacks.

「It's fine to be tense but...I don't want to stay in that place. Your mind's just going to be grinded, I can't bear that」

Margo-san said.

「But...that」

There's a doubt that spring inside me.

「Kudou-san knows that the situation comes to this right?」

...That old man who's prepared for everything...

There's no way he won't assume this situation.

「Well, that's of course!」

Margo-san smiles.

「Really...Kudou-san's a good man」

「...What does that mean?」

I don't know why he would bother to make such a tense place.

「...Eh, Yo-chan, you don't get it?」

Nei-san makes a surprised face.

「Ah, Nei-san...Mana doesn't understand too」

Mana confesses smiling.

...Then, from behind

「Maika, are you an idiot? Isn't it obvious to determine who's the enemy and



ally if you gather them in one place?」

...Y-Yukino?

You were listening?

Or rather...since when did you join in our circle?

「Everyone's glaring at each other...the real『enemy』can't make any actions if you're in such a tension filled situation you know?」

Yukino begins to chatter facing us.

「Besides, they come this far making a promise『I'll be Kouzuki-san's ally』...but actually, some action happened, they missed the timing to refuse, and they'll just stay as an ally to the end」

Yukino explains to us showing a triumphant face.

「The people who intends to『be Kouzuki-san's ally』from the start are those who don't have any hesitation in their heart but you see...those people who thinks of『changing sides with the enemy』will be hesitating until the final moment. I think there's quite a lot of people who will wait and see and think『I'll stay on Kouzuki-san's side after all』」

Yukino's guess is sharp,

I recognize that.

Yukino's not an idiot.

...But

It would've been cool if she only doesn't dress and make-up this strange.

Even though she's not an idiot...

She looks like an idiot...

...Well fine.

Yukino herself has completely forgotten how she looks as she speak...

「Correct...it is as Yukino-san said」

Margo-san answered smiling.

「It's very dangerous to invite people who are possibly『enemies』inside the hotel but you see, we can reduce the number of people who would double-cross at the last second. Kouzuki security service in the hotel is completely fortified...it'll take quite a lot of courage to change sides in this situation...!」

Once again, looking at the screen...  
The uniformed personnel stationed are about four times the size of the odd group.  
With this number difference...those who『will try to change sides』will be pressured.

「Besides...father has Neko-san and Banbarubie 3 on his side by all means. If you put those people in place, they can reliably deal with those who will『change sides』quickly」

Michi said confidently.

「Well...I guess Kudou-san made this decision after agonizing. If you leave them outside, we would only be attacked from multiple sides... It would be troubling if they cooperate with Viola's main force」

As long as they're trapped in the lobby...they can suppress those who will『change sides』

「Ah, it seems someone's coming again...!」

Nei-san said  
There's a black luxury car stopping at the entrance of the hotel...  
While we are talking...  
The members of the dissident group in Shirasaka house coming to negotiate and...  
The fathers of the students in Kouzuki house...are coming in the hotel one after another.  
Those who arrived were lead directly to the upper floor making sure they won't make contact with Kudou-papa's people  
...Before long.  
The image of the screen was forcibly switched to a big conference room.



『Both Shirasaka-san and ours didn't arrive on schedule however, we can't wait any longer. Let's begin』

Jii-chan who's sitting dignified on the table speaks up heavily.  
On Jii-chan's side, Minaho-neesan.

Then, Seki-san stands behind as guard.

In the seats behind...the Kouzuki group's executives.

Surrounding them is Chief Tanizawa of Kouzuki security service, and Ootoku-san and Choumoto-san as guards.

『...I'm really sorry! Just what happened to Fukushi-chan!』

The old lady speaks on the other side of the table facing Jii-chan and others...  
Shirasaka house's branch family's, Shirasaka Ayako.

Next to her is Shirasaka Hiromitsu who's the representative of the local  
Shirasaka house's company, and...

Yamada Hisashi, the vice president at Shirasaka house's newspaper company  
Tokyo Head office.

It seems that Ayako's son, Shirasaka Fukushi is late.

『Hmm...we also are lacking two people in here...!』

Jii-chan said as he looked at the executives behind 「...Reika-oneesan? Who's  
the executive that didn't come?」

Margo-san asks.

Reika's one of the top at Kouzuki security service.

She knows the names and faces of the executives on Kouzuki group.

「Shiba Okitachi and Kouzuki Noboru」

「Kouzuki Noboru...whose father is he?」

There's four men from Kouzuki branch family among Jii-chan's students,  
Kouzuki Souji and Subaru, Kouzuki Satoshi, and Kouzuki Kenshi.

In short, that's three Kouzuki executive surnames...

「He's Kouzuki Kenshi-san's father...!」

Reika answers.

Although Jii-chan, who's the head of Kouzuki house had imposed an『urgent  
summon』to them, they didn't come...

It's possible that the two are『traitors』

Misuzu and Ruriko...they were attacked by the『enemies』disguising Kouzuki  
security service during our departure from the theater.

Those people have stolen the uniform of a man who joined in the Kouzuki

security service several months ago.

These kind of things can't be planned by Cesario Viola who belongs to a foreign criminal organization.

There is definitely a『traitor』among the Kouzuki group.

Then...those people might've worked with Cesario Viola.

If they don't appear tonight.

Then, they know that this will become a battlefield later.

If Viola's attack succeeds...Jii-chan's life would be at stake.

There's also a possibility of the executives being killed.

Therefore...they refuse to come to the hotel, reluctant to die by themselves.

...Isn't that how it is?

『Shiba will be heading here from Haneda』

One of the executives answered Jii-chan

『Oh, he went to inspect a factory on the China?』

Jii-chan turned to that executive.

『Yes...the arrival of the plane seems to have been delayed a bit so I received a message from the International Terminal a while ago. He should be heading here by car. He will be arriving soon』

『Umu...what about Noboru?』

Jii-chan asks, the executive...

『I can't contact him...his phone is unavailable. His secretary and driver also doesn't know his whereabouts...!』

Suspicious... that's too suspicious

『Well fine...let's begin our talk anyway』

Jii-chan faces front

『First...I want to hear your proposal』

『...Proposal?』

Vice president Yamada makes a suspicious face.

『That's right...let me tell you beforehand, I think that the scandal of Shirasaka family is just deserts. Even if the Shirasaka newspaper or television station

would go down from this...I won't have any trouble whatsoever』

Hearing that, vice president Yamada...

『What are you talking about...our company is a traditional newspaper established since 75 years. We had a history of fighting to keep the freedom of the press!』

『...Who do you think you're talking to?』

Jii-chan speaks coldly.

『It just lasted for 75 years at most, to say that is a history, a tradition...!』

Jii-chan laughs sarcastically.

『You know the traditional house named Kouzuki don't you? If I go back to my ancestors, it'll be names written in the oldest chronicles of Japan...!』

-Kouzuki house is one of the leading historical names in Japan.

『Our ancestors that can be confirmed to be real and existing are from Heian period(794-1185) 『Kouzuki』is a family name that's from Muromachi era(1333-1573)...! If you want to talk about history or tradition then at least speak on ones that last for a hundred years or more』

Jii-chan would be the only one in Japan who could say such sarcasm.

『...This year would be your 75th year founding anniversary isn't it?』

『Yes...we did a commemorative ceremony in April』

Frightened from Jii-chan's attitude, vice president Yamada answers.

『Then, isn't that a great opportunity...to be crushed』

Jii-chan smiles

Vice president Yamada trembles.

『Uhm...Kouzuki-sama, allow me to speak』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu raises his hand.

『...Very well. What is it about?』

『Ha...Thank you very much』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu seems to be a man that's modest.

『Uhm...this is our first time meeting so let me introduce myself. I'm Shirasaka Hiromitsu from Osaka...!』

『Umu, I know. I've heard that you're a capable man』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu's forehead is already shining with sweat.

『I...there is something I would like to request from Kouzuki-sama by all means so I hastened coming from Osaka』

『No need for introductions...what do you want?』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu took a deep breath then...said

『...I don't know anything about the Tokyo office's newspaper, television and radio station companies. Please consult about it on Shirasaka Ayako-san and vice president Yamada about that』

『Umu...I've heard that you're in Tokyo in behalf of the local affiliates』

『...Yes 』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu look straight at Jii-chan.

『On behalf of the branch office for the television, radio, and newspaper companies...I would like to say. Kouzuki-sama...would you please buy all of our companies?』

The Shirasaka house who's dominating the media...their local companies want to be bought?

---

## 274. Second negotiation — 2

---

『...Are you saying you want me to buy the local television and radio stations only?』

The president of the television station from Osaka, Shirasaka Hiromitsu shows a bitter look from Jii-chan's remark 『Hiromitsu-kun, what are you suggesting!?』

Shirasaka house's Tokyou office vice president...Yamada Hisashi shouts aghast.

『If you do that...our television and newspaper network would collapse』

On the other hand...Shirasaka Hiromitsu from Osaka...

『I don't mind...let it collapse. Currently, the network is concentrated on Tokyo too much. Most of the information is sent from Tokyo, people living in the rurals are watching it welcome...this situation is distorted. We must correct it』

『That's not true, we're covering all of the local topics adequately!』

Vice president Yamada doesn't seem to be convinced.

『I don't think that's enough. No, the problem isn't whether the local topics are reported or not. ...The big problem is that the Tokyo topics take up the television and newspaper more than necessary!』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu won't give in.

『For example...a light night show is sent out from the Tokyo station. Since it's a news program, it only has to give out news, but there's also extra corner. Why do you have to show the rural areas about the famous confectionery that's in limited production under the department stores in Tokyo, the popular ramen shops in Tokyo, special features about a lunch store where you can eat for only 500 yen at Tokyo!? If you don't live in Tokyo then isn't that all useless information?!』

Oh...So those kind of programs show on rural areas too?  
True...it's just troublesome for the local people far away from Tokyo to have such broadcast.  
It's not somewhere they go on their daily life.

『That's just letting the local people know the current trends in Tokyo too!』

Vice president Yamada says so but...

『That's none of our business. You think that all of sources of information are in Tokyo. The local provinces have their own news too. We would like to increase the coverage that's appropriate for each region without being bound by information control by Tokyo』

『You don't get it Hiromitsu-kun...the political and economic center of Japan is Tokyo. Isn't it obvious that all of the information dissemination should be centered at Tokyo?』

『Yes, therefore we will be broadcasting the congress and the stocks information from Tokyo. However, it's just wrong to produce all other information contents in Tokyo and distribute it nationwide. The local stations need more privilege...!』

『...You're just saying that so you can sell program made in Osaka and other provinces don't you...!』

The representative of TV station in Osaka...and the vice president of Tokyo newspaper office.

Their opinions don't match at all.

『Well, fine. If Shirasaka Hiromitsu wants me to buy the local companies...and ultimately, you want to get out of the control of Shirasaka Moritsugu who's the representative』

Jii-chan concludes.

『Yes...we can never freely report if we're under Shirasaka Moritsugu's powerful ruling』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu look at Jii-chan's eye as he answer.

『However...if you change the ruler from Shiraska Moritsugu to me...do you really think that you can report freely? I might aspire to make a more biased coverage than Shirasaka Moritsugu you know?』



Jii-chan laughs.

『That is...we do believe in Kouzuki-sama』

『Well said... What do you know about me then?』

Jii-chan pressures Shirasaka Hiromitsu.

『Either way, I already know what you were thinking coming here...next』

Jii-chan's eyes turned from Shirasaka Hiromitsu to Shirasaka Ayako.

『I'll listen to you. What do you want to ask from me?』

Shirasaka Ayako...

『I'm someone that's closer in the head house of Shirasaka than Shirasaka Hiromitsu』

『I know. You're the daughter of Shirasaka Moritsugu's older brother aren't you?』

『Yes...if father didn't die young, then Uncle Moritsugu won't become the head of Shiraska house. I am the rightful lineage of Shirasaka head family』

I see, because she can assert her legitimacy in the bloodline...Shirasaka Ayako can be the boss of the forcer against Shirasaka Moritsugu, the head of Shirasaka house.

『With the last night's blunder...I have decided that it would be better if Uncle Moritsugu isn't the head of the house anymore. Uncle Moritsugu will retire. And the next head's seat will be inherited by my son, Shirasaka Fukushima』

...Err

In short, this old lady wants his son to be the next head.

『As expected, the Shirasaka house must be lead by the right blood. My son, if Fukushima becomes the head, then Shirasaka house will return to it's rightful lineage. Both the newspaper and television stations...should be proud of Fukushima』

Isn't that just Obasan's personal delusions?

『Therefore...Kouzuki-sama, please support Fukushima from the back. Of course, Fukushima and I swear absolute obedience to Kouzuki-sama. All of Shirasaka family will move by Kouzuki-sama's will...!』

Shirasaka Ayako shows a vulgar smile.

『I think that it's not a bad deal for Kouzuki-sama...』

...This Obsasan doesn't care about anything else as long as her son is the owner of Shirasaka family.

She intends to pass the rights to Shirasaka house's newspaper and television companies.

She just want the honor of being the owner of Shirasaka family.

『Do you have the same opinion?』

Jii-chan looks at vice president Yamada.

『N-Not at all!』

Vice president Yamada answers in a loud voice.

『I...for one, would like all of the management team from Shirasaka house's television and newspaper companies to resign』

『Yamada-san, what do you mean by that』

Shirasaka Ayako's provoked

『Are you saying that you've forgotten all of the kindness and gratitude you had from Shirasaka house and want to banish Shirasaka from the company?!』

『Don't be absurd...!』

Vice president Yamada answers.

『For one...Let me speak. Currently, with Shiraska Sousuke's problem coming to light...it has become a national concern. And last night...Head Chairman Shirasaka Moritsugu spoke at the press conference as if he's protecting Shirasaka Sousuke'. With this, it can't be helped if they think that the whole Shirasaka family is concealing the crime of the family』

『What are you saying! You're just an employee of the newspaper company, you're rude!』

Shirasaka Ayako shouts.

『I'm the vice president! An executive! I don't resemble anything that can be called an employee!』

Vice president Yamada flares up at Shirasaka Ayako

『Either way...the trust on the television and newspaper company is ruined because of the problems caused by the people of Shirasaka house. Yesterday, all of the affiliates were flooded with protest calls and faxes! Now that it has come to this, if all the members of Shirasaka house don't leave their office...the people won't be convinced!』

『Saying that, you just intend to take control of the newspaper and television companies!』

『I don't have such ulterior motives. I'm saying that there's no other options in order to stabilize the newspaper and television companies!』

『F-Fukushi...what about Fukushi?!』

『Fukushi-kun isn't an executive. If Shirasaka house is only among employees, then the people will allow it!』

『Saying that...you're thinking of driving Fukushi out someday don't you! That's right...of course you do!』

『Both of you, stop this already!』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu scolds them.

『Kouzui-sama...this is the inside of the Tokyo office. They only think about their own power struggle...they're not thinking about us in the local areas!』

『That's not true...I believe that it's important to cover the whole country with the coverage network!』

『Yamada-san...we're not a property of Tokyo office! We're independent from Tokyo! I've already had enough to see only the color of Tokyo!』

Yeah...

What's this

「Do those people not get what situation they're in?」

Kouzuki Satoshi speaks as he look at the screen.

「Shirasaka Hiromitsu wants backup on the local companies becoming independent...Shirasaka Ayako wants her son to be supported becoming the head...vice president Yamada from the Tokyo office wants Shirasaka house's people to step down, each of them request『Kakka』their own wishes...」

Kata Takashi, the brain of the students put it together.

「In the end...the three's opinion match only about 『Shirasaka Moritsugu losing his position as the head』」

Shiba Akira mutters showing an amazed face.

「However...they only think of their own self afterwards...!」

Should I say as expected of Shirasaka house.

They're only evaluated as egoistic criminals like Shirasaka Sousuke.

『All of you are people not worth negotiating with me』

Jii-chan said

『Shirasaka Hiromitsu-kun...you'll stay in Osaka forever. It seems that you don't have any intention to oppose the whole of Japan even the world.』

『That is not true! First of all...I just thought of accumulating all of the small things』

『Therefore you should go back to your province and pile it up. I'll deal with the Shirasaka newspaper and television companies' regional affiliate even without you』

『That's...what will happen to us in the rural areas?!』

『If you're saying that far then why don't you stop working on a major affiliate company, capitalize, and build an independent company in the province?』

『The local recession is terrible. My station in Osaka is capable of becoming independent but the other provinces, it's impossible for them to create a new company』

『If they can't survive without their connection with Tokyo then it's unavoidable for them to be dominated by Tokyo office』

『That's...couldn't Kouzui-sama invest funds with his power somehow?』

『You want money but you don't say it yourself...isn't that just selfish?』

Jii-chan snorts.

『I understand that the local companies are dissatisfied with Tokyo...however, it's just a bad idea to ask for my help...』

Next, Jii-chan looks at Shirasaka Ayako.

『Then...I'm not interested on who will be the next owner of Shirasaka house. Shirasaka house can decide that on their own...』

『Please don't say that...If Fukushi becomes the head, he'll do his best to support Kouzuki-sama! He'll never forget your kindness! Please support Fukushi!』

Shirasaka Ayako desperately appeals.

『You see...I prefer those smart yet not loyal than a foolish yet loyal. A smart person understands what he profits and act according to it. As long as I guarantee profit, they will absolutely not betray me. On the other hand, a foolish person...will show me loyalty and don't do anything that's selfish, as a result, they often cause terrible damage to me』

『Fukushi...my son is a smart man. He finished politics and Economics on Waseda...!』

『...If he's really a smart person then he shouldn't be late. This is a critical turning point that must not be missed in his life』

Jii-chan said.

『I can't trust the person named Shirasaka Fukushi as he's not here』

『...Kouzuki-sama! Please wait for a bit longer. This must be a mistake! Surely the road is crowded!』

『In addition...I just don't think well of mothers who excessively interfere with their son's future』

Jii-chan's words are cold.

『By the way...how old is your son, Fukushi-kun?』

『...38 years old』

Yeah...that's just no good

A really bad idea

『Now then...lastly, vice president Yamada. Your proposal is reasonable. At the same time Shiraska Moritsugu resigns as the newspaper company's representative...the entire directors should be reelected』

『Y-Yes...thank you for your praise!』

Vice president Yamada shows an expression of joy when his proposal is accepted.

『Of course...you will have to resign as well』

『...What?』

Vice president Yamada's face turned pale in an instant...

『You have worked under Shirasaka Moritsugu for a long time haven't you? He should have recognize your ability. If not, you won't be able to get the position of being the vice president』

『That's certainly true however』

『Then...don't you think you should retire along with Shirasaka Moritsugu as well?』

Vice president Yamada fell silent.

『Negotiations are deals. You exchange valuable with valuables. However...all of the conditions you have presented aren't worthy for me』

Jii-chan speaks coldly.

『Therefore...from now on, I will do as I want. ...Katsuko-kun』

Jii-chan calls Katsuko-nee

『Yes...Kakka』

Katsuko-nee appears from outside the screen.

She can only be seen as a beautiful secretary Jii-chan has employed.

『Present the material for these people to see』

『...Certainly』

Katsuko-nee operates the terminal.

It seems that there's a screen that reflects an image in the conference room where Jii-chan is.

Then...the document is shown.

Of course, the document is also synchronized to the screen we're looking up to.

『This is the situation of the stocks of your company. 51 percent is held by Shirasaka house. The remaining 49 percent is owned by various companies and individual shareholders...』

Oh...I see

『Even if you say that Shirasaka house owns 51 percent, the head, Shirasaka Moritsugu holds only 28 percent. The others are divided to the people of the clan』

『I also hold 6 percent』

Shirasaka Ayako said

『Right, you have 6 percent of the stock... There's shareholders of the Shirasaka bloodline that are opposed to Moritsugu. I've gotten 2 percent of the share from that person』

...2 percent.

『In short...Shirasaka house's current share's owned is 49 percent. Do you know what that means?』

...That's.

The shareholding ratio of non-Shirasaka shareholders is 51%?

『In stocks, if you hold more than half of the shares, you can move that company freely. Now then, once the holidays are over...I will announce TOB... take over bidding to purchase your newspaper company. The stock price of your newspaper company is crashing very low since the case yesterday. I've been buying cheap stocks already but...TOB means buying shares with a higher price than the market price...everyone will be selling me their shares』

The three people are listening to Jii-chan's story trembling.

『I'm sure that everyone would be willing to sell me especially the stocks for each company. I'm Kouzuki Shigetaka you see. They want to sell me a favor and don't want to be glared at』

『H-However...if I buy a 2 percent stock from the market...Shirasaka house should be able to dominate and won't be lost』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu wipes his head with a handkerchief...and said 『Buy?... From who? How?』

Jii-chan laughs.

『I've already directed the Shirasaka house's main financing bank. No bank will be lending money to Shiraska house. Because the possession of share is an individual asset...you can't possibly misappropriate it to company's assets. The only one with personal funds on hand...Shiraska Moritsugu, how far do you think he can go?』

Jii-chan has already prepared his attack?

『What, if you know how serious I am...then I can have all of the shareholders apart from Shirasaka house stick to me. They know that Shirasaka Moritsugu has no future. There's no way you'd come to suicide along with a man that's falling down』

True...in this situation.

Even the other people from Shirasaka house will immediately surrender to Jii-chan.

『I will obtain the management rights to your newspaper company. The affiliate companies' stocks will follow. Ultimately...I will secure all of your news networks』

Jii-chan smiles.

『I don't need cooperation from the three of you...Sorry I troubled you to come here today. Now, go home...!』

The three non-mainstream faction members of Shirasaka house look at each other...

『P-Please wait...Kouzuki-san!』

---



## 275. Second Negotiation — 3

---

「As expected of『Kakka』...For him to be prepared this far!」

Kouzuki Souji said as he look at the image of Jii-chan overwhelming the anti-mainstream faction of Shirasaka house.

「No...Actually, In wonder? If Shirasaka head house doesn't follow『Kakka's will』...for example, if they loan from a foreign financial institution, isn't it still possible for Shirasaka house to suppress the majority of the shares?」

Kata answers with a serious face.

「Won't『Kakka』also have a measure for that?」

Natsuki Makoto join in.

「『Kakka』should have a close relationship even with the foreign financial institutions on US and Europe. Even if Shirasaka house borrows money they will only be able to use financial institutions from rising countries」

Shiba Akira analyzes.

「However...won't there be an investment fund buying all of the stocks because they noticed the conflict between『Kakka』and Shirasaka house? If they can hold shares even under 10% won't they be able to influence the fight between『Kakka』and Shirasaka house?」

Kouzuki Kenshi states his concern.

「To begin with...how many of the stocks are in the market? How much shares is there inside the Shirasaka house who's against the head family?」

Koumori Akira said but...

「No, even in the anti-mainstream faction of Shirasaka house, they won't want

Shirasaka house to lose their influence on the newspaper company right? I think that the whole Shiraska house will gather the stocks on their whole family and try to keep the majority of the stocks」

Kouzuki Subaru states his opinion.

「However...would they entrust their own shares to Shirasaka Moritsugu this late? Everyone knows that Shiraska Moritsugu's already gone as the head of the house. Even if Shirasaka house unites and defend...it would be after they decide on the new leader」

Hanaoka Shinsuke said.

「However, Shirasaka Moritsugu will argue to have a succession struggle. In the first place, Shirasaka Moritsugu isn't willing to retire. While the house is at mess because of him, won't『Kakka』be able to do as he will?」

Oohari Ryou said

「Umu...There's no mistake in『Kakka's』work...!」

Koku Rakujin nods greatly.

The students continue their conversation in loud voice.

Listening to the conversation...Margo-san asks me.

「...What do you think?」

I...

「That's all just bluff!」

The eyes of the students gather around me.

「I also think that he's lying about already holding 2 percent of the stocks」

「Hey, you, what do you mean by that!?!」

Torada Chitoku asks me shouting.

「Well...doesn't it cost money to buy stocks? He won't spend money for such a foolish thing you know」

Yukino reacts from what I said.

「Are you saying that it's foolish to take the newspaper company from Shirasaka house?! The newspaper company is the cornerstone of Shirasaka

house! That newspaper has been ours since it was created!」

...Errr

「...I'm not talking about that」

I answered.

「He's talking to those three right now...in short, he only needs to make those three follow what he say right?」

The students doesn't seem to be able to understand what I'm talking about. These guys are only looking for good results of『Stealing』or『Taking』  
But...Jii-chan thinks differently.

That person will avoid using money and effort for something trivial 「Shirasaka Hiromitsu-san, Ayako-san, and vice president Yamada...all want to drive away Shirasaka Moritsugu, the head, but they seem to have different opinions about it」

Mr. Hiromitsu wants to make the local companies independent from the influence of the Shirasaka family. He doesn't care about the newspaper company in Tokyo which is the main body.

Mrs. Ayako wants to make her son the head of Shirasaka family. She thinks it's fine to leave the management rights to Jii-chan.

Vice president Yamada wants Shirasaka house to step down from managing the newspaper company. He's thinking of ruling all of the local companies under Tokyo like before.

...He's not compromising the relationship at all.

「Each of them has a different purpose...it's known that their opinion are different. Therefore...everyone's making a『request』to Kouzuki-san. It won't become a 50-50『negotiation』 If those three unite for a consistent aim, then they could become a strong force competing Kouzuki-san and yet...everyone of them are just weak representatives of their own 『Local company』『anti-mainstream faction in Shirasaka fhouse』and 『Employee in Tokyo office』」

It would be hard to maintain their own power if Jii-chan doesn't back them up.

「Kouzuki-san felt their『weakness』so he judged that threatening them with a

bluff would be enough」

「...Threaten only?」

Tsunoda seems to not understand...

Well, those who're always bossy and elite won't know...

This method is close to『Kuromori』after all

「...You don't get it? Grandfather judged that he only need to make the other party think that『They might lose』」

Misuzu smiles.

「The newspaper company stock held by Shirasaka house is divided in majority. Changing 51 to 49%...just saying that it makes them worry. Actually, even though grandfather hasn't taken the management rights of the newspaper company yet...those three will fall down from thinking『it's possible it can be taken over』 They know that Kouzuki house has enough financial strength and influence in the nation. However...grandfather won't actually do the『takeover bid』on Shirasaka house's newspaper company. It's not that you can obtain the newspaper company only by paying a lot of money...as mentioned earlier, it's known that foreign investment funding comes in and gets rid of the money」  
「However...nothing will move if he only threatens?」

Oohari Ryou asks Misuzu.

「Why? Shirasaka Ayako-san has 6% of the stock of the newspaper company. If Ayako-san surrenders, that alone will make the majority of the ownership from Shirasaka house...!

Right. There's no need to take out money and actually take 2% f the stock from the stockholder from inside Shirasaka house.

「It's the same on the TOB. It's enough for grandfather to let them know that there might be a TOB. What's left is as you said...the investors both inside and outside will attack Shirasaka house's newspaper company. With the Shirasaka house currently divided into the head, Moritsugu and the anti-mainstream faction, they can't defend themselves. When Shirasaka house is completely out of strength, exhausted...then Grandfather will begin to help I think. That is how grandfather will take the newspaper company easily」

Misuzu laughs.

「Help...what does that mean?」

Kouzuki Subaru asks Misuzu

「Making a move on Shirasaka house's main bank...grandfather will use his name to buy the shares of Shirasaka house. He'll takeover pretending to be the white knight. For buying it...at first, he'll show a pretense of lending money from collateral banks. With the investment fund turned to a defensive battle, Shirasaka house as a whole will still hold majority of the shares. There will be no more assets left Shirasaka house can use...if they're going to loan to a bank they know for a long time, then they won't doubt, especially if it's Shiraska Moritsugu-san」

The students are seriously listening on Misuzu's talk.

「Then...when the stocks become collateral, another company will cause trouble with Shirasaka house. Anything will do. As long as they can clog the repay of Shirasaka house. As a result, the share of the newspaper that became collateral will be owned by the bank...then will become Grandfather's...! We can get a lot of stocks at a much cheaper price than buying it on the stock market」  
「Eh, please wait a moment. In that case...what happens to the investors who have been buying the shares on the newspaper company?」

Kata asks Misuzu.

「If grandfather controls the majority then there's no more share necessary. Investors who compete with Shiraska family and buy it at high price will make a lot of loss」

Misuzu laughs.

「However...that's a dirty trick. It's not fair letting the bank mediate」

Shiba Akira who's an idealist, said.

「If you think so then Akira-san shouldn't enter the business world...!」

Misuzu said clearly

「There's no rule about not letting the bank mediate」

「However, this sour『mutual killing』is...!」

「...Excuse me though」

I speak up

「Kouzuki-san's not doing any『mutual killing』 This maybe a『brain game』to to survive...but he's not trying to kill the other party at all」

「...What do you mean? I can't understand」

Shiba Akira glares at me.

「Well...you'll understand once you see how grandfather acts after this...!」

We turned back to Jii-chan on the video once again.



『Now then...no matter how much you worry, you won't come up with a conclusion. I'm busy so could you return home quickly?』

As Jii-chan declares that『I can take over the Shirasaka house's newspaper company by myself without your cooperation』...the three became small  
『Kouzuki-sama...uhm, I』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu speaks up.

『I am the representative of the local companies. We can't come back like this. If this continues...Shirasaka house's scandal will involve us and all of the affiliated companies will be damaged』

『M-Me too...!』

Shirasaka Ayako too...

『I think that it's already been conveyed to Mr. Moritsugu that I am having a meeting with Kouzuki-sama If things don't change, Fukushi and I would be exiled from Shirasaka house. Fukushi may also be forced to retire from the newspaper company...』

『Me too. If I return without anything, I will lose my position. I also believe in Kouzuki-sama's power...I came here on behalf of the employees of the newspaper company...』

Vice president Yamada also limps.

All of them will be crushed by the power of the head, Shirasaka Moritsugu if Jii-chan doesn't help them 『Please help us』

『Please』

『We're very sorry...!』

The three bow their heads to Jii-chan.

『I wonder why didn't you take that attitude at first?』

Jii-chan answers with a troubled face.

「True. Why didn't those people bow their heads at『Kakka』from the start?」

Kouzuki Satoshi asks.

「Well...Kouzuki-san made them think that he want the Shirasaka house's newspaper company by all means」

I answered.

「Then...they thought that Kouzuki-san wants their cooperation so they came here with such a cocky attitude」

「Oh...is that so? What idiots」

Tsunoda said as he smiles.

「That's not it...Kouzuki-san purposely made those three take that attitude」

「Eh, why!？」

Tsunoda glares at me.

「Tsunoda-san...I won't allow such impolite attitude towards Danna-sama」

Misuzu scolds Tsunoda

「...S-Sorry」

「Danna-sama...please tell them why」

Misuzu urges me with a smile.

「Those three took an impolite attitude at start that's why...now they're that docile」

The three people on the screen prostrates themselves to Jii-chan pale-faced.

「Now...those people will be accepting anything Kouzuki-san suggests」

「...He purposely shown the opportunity to the other party in order to make the negotiations advantageous to him!」

Shiba Akira asks me in surprise.

「That's obvious」

『Kuromori』always uses this kind of negotiation technique.

Now then...let's focus on the video again.

Jii-chan speaks to the three.

『Then...I would like to hear your thoughts again』

Jii-chan smiles.

『Shirasaka Hiromitsu-kun...in short, you're okay as long as the local affiliate companies have their own authority? You're not aiming for complete independence from the corporate group from making the Tokyo office weak?』

『Y-Yes...it is as you say. I think that the network of the news company should be maintained as is If we reduce the power of Tokyo office...』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu answers.

『Next, Shirasaka Ayako-kun. You're fine as long as your son becomes the next head of Shirasaka house. You don't wish to rule the television and newspaper company of Shirasaka house For example, an honorary position...you don't mind him being presented as the honorary president of the entire group?』

『Y-Yes...as long as Fukushi becomes the head. To be honest, neither Fukushi nor I knows about business management... Even if it's only an honorary name and it has no real power...we don't mind』

Shirasaka Ayako answers while showing a abject smile.

『Lastly, Yamada-kun...you're okay as long as Shirasaka Moritsugu's influence and the Shirasaka house's executives are gone from the newspaper company? Independence of the local companies is also a trend in the current times. The age where Tokyo manages the provinces isn't forever. Give it up』

『Y-Yes』

Vice president Yamada bows his head.

『Then, let's do this. Either way, Shirasaka Moritsugu will lose power. The next head of Shirasaka house will become Shirasaka Fukushi...afterwards, the head of Shirasaka house won't be the representative of the news company. As an



honorary chariman, he has to abandon real power. The Tokyo office will be directed by someone not from Shirasaka family. The local affiliates will be free from command. However, they aren't allowed to separate from the group. Is this good?』

『...Yes』

『Katsuko-kun, summarize what I said just now in paper』

『Certainly』

I can't see her on screen but Katsuko-nee seems to be writing up on the PC.

『Then...you three will move for Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu's downfall under these conditions. Of course, I will also spare the greatest effort. I will cooperate with you』

Jii-chan laughs.

『What, your newspaper will be mine so it's not a big deal if I think of this as a prior investment』

Misuzu turns to Shiba Akira.

「What do you think Akira-san? Grandfather asked for the wishes of the three...gave them a compromise and brought it together to the best shape. This is Kouzuki Shigetaka's『tuning』 Instead of killing the other party in order to carry his opinion...he finds a way to coexist and take advantage of it...!」

「...Is the threatening and intimidation just a technique for that?」

「If everyone's happy in the end, isn't that okay to do?」

Misuzu said

「It's foolish for someone to act only to satisfy one's temporary personal feeling. It's good to be liked by people but...you should not have excessive expectations from the other party. Rather, those who are feared can act as a『coordinator』」

Therefore, Jii-chan purposely threatens, intimidates people.

Then, he forcibly let them listen to what he says...

In fact, he's presenting the best solution for them.

Actually, it is very disadvantageous for Jii-chan.

But, he's willing to be disliked, hated by others...so Jii-chan can『tune』

「Since the ancient times...『tuning』is a noble man's work. Kouzuki house has worked for hundreds of years as Japan's coordinator. We both have the power and wealth...everything is for『tuning』 There's a lot of problems in this world that can be『tuned』by the law of this country...」

That is why Kouzuki house has continued as Japan's most famous house.

『...Here's the contract』

In a blink of an eye, Katsuko-nee finished preparing the document...printed, and brought it.

『Thanks...then, please sign this memorandum』

Jii-chan signs himself first.

Katsuko-nee then handed the paper to Shirasaka Hiromitsu...  
Then the three signed in order.

『I will be holding onto this memorandum. Normally, I will be handing a same document with our signatures on it but...we have a situation. We'll have to keep only a document for confidentiality』

Jii-chan doesn't allow evidence to be handed to the three.  
On the contrary...if those three betrayed Jii-chan, he'll make use of the document.

The documents that were signed are collected by Katsuko-nee...  
Then she returns to Jii-chan once again.  
Jii-chan confirms the signature of the three...

『Now you three can't go back anymore...』

Jii-chan smiles.

『We're now in the same boat...your actions in the future will be directed by me. Do you understand?』

The three could only nod in front of Jii-chan

『Did you know by the way?』

Jii-chan goes to his next card.

『Shirasaka Moritsugu has already hired guns on you who are traitors』

『...G-Guns?』

Shirasaka Ayako doesn't seem to understand.

『Shirasaka Moritsugu hired a killer』

The three are shocked.

Jii-chan turned to his vassals at back.

『I would like to ask you people too...』

Jii-chan's eyes shine.

『...Does anyone of you recognize the name Cesario Viola?』

The vassals didn't react.

『Umu...I see. It's good if you don't know』

Once again, Jii-chan turns to face the three anti-mainstream factions of Shirasaka house.

『He's a man of a criminal organization at US. Shirasaka Moritsugu hired him and is planning to make you guys dead』

『N-No way...!』

Vice president Yamada is surprised.

『No, it's exactly that...!』

Jii-chan laughs.

『My private guard unit is already alert in this hotel. Have you told anyone that you'll come to talk with me in this hotel tonight?』

『Yes, my secretary...and I've also talked to the representatives on the local company who are my allies』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu answers.

『I...have consulted my wife and my direct subordinates. Also, a lawyer...』

Vice president Yamada said.

『Then...you should assume that your actions are already conveyed to the killers already』

Jii-chan answers.

『Shirasaka Ayako-kun...what about you?』

Shirasaka Ayako...

『I-I...have told my personal secretary, my mother and sister...and our helper...and then』

That's a lot hey...

『Also...Fukushi-chan too』

Shirasaka Ayako's startled.

『Oh right...Fukushi-chan, where is he?!』

He should be coming to this hotel tonight but Shirasaka Fukushi hasn't arrived yet.

『Could it be that he got caught in some kind of accident on his way?』

Vice president Yamada tells Shirasaka Ayako.

『No, no way...we have a guard that's protecting Fukushi-chan. He should contact us if something happened. I'll try calling them right now...!』

Ayako takes out her phone...

Then, Jii-chan's interphone in the desk beeps...

Jii-chan pushed a switch...

『...It's me』

A voice can be heard from the interphone.

『It's Yamaoka from first floor security...Shirasaka Fukushi's car has arrived.』

『My, Fukushi-chan! He's safe!』

『...Katsuko-kun』

『...Yes』

Following Jii-chan's instructions...Katsuko-nee switches the screen to the video of the first floor entrance.

An orange sports car is sandwiched in between big black painted cars.

There's a guard in front and behind of the black painted car.

「What's with that, isn't that A TVR Tuscan!」

Kouzuki Satoshi mutters  
Oh, so that car has that name?

「That's not a car a newspaper reporter would ride on」

True...it's a flashy car that suits to be owned by a roast chain store,  
entertainer, or a president of an IT company.

Could this be as I thought...bought by his parents?

『Ah, there's no doubt. That's Fukushi-chan's car...!』

Shirasaka Ayako declares when she saw the orange car.

『...We'll bring him there right away』

Director Yamaoka's voice comes from the interphone.  
The security guards of Kouzuki security service that's wearing hotel man clothes  
head to the three cars.

...Then

『...Wait, Yamaoka! Tell your guards to retreat!』

At the moment Jii-chan shouted...!  
The orange car's window opened...!  
And a machine gun barrel pops from the inside!!!!

...ZUDADADADADADADADADADADA!!!!

The orange car shoots the machine gun to the entrance of the hotel!  
The guards of Kouzuki security service gets down!

『Retreat! Retreat!!!!』

Director Yamaoka roars.  
Then...  
The black cars in front and back have completely armed soldiers come out!!!!

---

## 276. Battle Start!!

---

A group of people in black battle fatigues, black mask, and a pistol at hand gets off the car.

The machine gun continues to fire towards the hotel from the window of the orange sports car.

「It'll be fine. The first floor of the hotel uses bulletproof glasses」

Reika said laughing as she look at the relayed image.

「This hotel is constructed to be used by Kouzuki group for meetings with VIP from a lot of countries. It's already designed to have counter terrorist measures」

「But, the entrance is wide open you know?!」

Mana shouts.

True, the double glass door that leads inside the hotel remains open. Normally, it should be closed down when an attack was received.

「Is it to let the Kouzuki security service guards from outside to enter?」

Michi asks Reika.

Misuzu joins in the circle.

Ruriko and Yoshiko-san too—they're joining.

The『family』gathers around me.

「No, in this case, because it's an iron rule not to let the『enemy』inside...the door should close automatically. The guards that are outside the hotel when the enemy attacks are decided to shelter in the guard office...」

「But the door is wide open you know?」

Mana mutters to Reika's explanation

「...It means that there's a traitor inside Kouzuki security service」

Misuzu said calmly

「Right」

Reika affirmed.

...Shukokokon!

...Shukokokon! Shukokokon!

Then...the men in black battle fatigues begin to shoot something towards the door hung open.

White smoke raises...and huge metal lumps as big as a fist were sent in the hotel lobby.

Falling into the floor, it blows out white smoke...!

...This is a gas bomb!

『Retreat! General guards, run to the back!!!』

Before the smoke fills the lobby, director Yamaoka gives a retreat order. The security guards in uniform runs to the interior of the hotel.

「Huh, it's not poisonous gas right?」

I asked...

「It's not. It's just a tear-gas. You can know from the color and the spread of the smoke」

Reika who's an elite guard immediately analyzes it.

「They can't use poisonous gas in this place. It could influence their own actions as well...」

I see, if it's poisonous gas...they'd also be fighting while making sure they don't breathe it.

For buildings like hotel where the air just accumulates somewhere...the remaining gas could stay forever.

「Well, besides, a poisonous gas bomb can't be obtained that easily. This is Japan after all」

Reika said

Well, if you say that, guns are also hard to obtain though.

But true, a poisonous gas bomb is certainly hard to find.

「Even with tear gas, you can't stop your tears if it enters your eyes, if it enters your lungs it'll become painful to breath...it has more effects than being a smoke screen for distraction」

The first floor lobby is filled with white smoke...  
As the fog takes in, it becomes pure white and we can't see anything anymore.

「Normally, the ventilation system should be kicking in right now」

Of course Kouzuki security service assumes this situation.  
There should be a ventilation system in case they receive a gas attack.  
But...with the fact that the door to the entrance is still opened.  
It's unknown whether that system is working or not

「Ah...it's operating」

The white fog is thinning.

「There's ventilation system on both the ceiling and the floor. There's gas that's lighter or heavier than the air」

...I see  
It can respond to either and it can quickly discharge the gas to the outside.  
The smoke disappears immediately  
Then...

「...Ah」

Those guys appears from the white smoke.  
The free guards Kudou-papa summoned.  
All of them are standing in the lobby wearing a gas mask.  
The gas mask have different designs on each.  
In short, these people prepared the gas mask at their own expense?  
As expected of the Banbarubie 3 ladies, they're wearing matching mask but...  
Somehow, it's glittering pink like sapphire or something.

「That's Swarovski right? Cool!」

Mana said.

「What's that...is it about skiing?」



「Huh, Onii-chan doesn't know? It's a glitter material used for decorating phones and other things!」

Oh.

So they're decorating the gas mask with that.

「Somehow...when the gas mask shines it looks like a『mask of death』」

Nagisa said feeling amazed.

At the entrance of the hotel are around ten men wearing battle clothes and armed with pistol with a man holding a machine gun at center.

And confronting them...

Is the free people Kudou-papa summoned, it's around 50 people.

...No

A group of 50 people slowly divide into two groups.

They're not dividing by the same number of people.

Around a third of the group feels like it's parting from the original group.

Gradually, restraining each other...

The people getting away joins the men in black combat clothes.

「A third have joined the enemy...well, that's within assumptions」

Margo-san said

「Rather than that...Reika-oneesama」

Michi looks at Reika

「I noticed it...Margo-chan and I did」

Reika smiles.

「The enemy in black clothing were thirteen in all when they came down from the car」

Reika counted the number of enemies?

「And now...there's only 9」

...Does that mean?

「They used the tear gas as penetration」

Margo-san mutters.

「Well...we know that they're not those who can be dealt with straightforward means」

Meanwhile...the ventilation system drives out everything.  
And the smoke has been completely exhausted.  
The Banbarubie 3 ladies removed their mask.

『Puha~! I can't fight wearing this!』

I knew that it was Ruby-san who said that since she put on the mask.  
She's the one with exposed nipples among the three...

『Right. It's contrary to our style to hide our beauty while fighting right?』

Barbie-san says as she take off the mask.

『My, Oji-sama's going on that side? That's disappointing』

Banba-san takes of her mask and cries out to a middle aged man wearing a black dress going to the enemy side.

Banba-san takes out her own batting weapon...and sets it up.

『Banba-chan, as usual you're fast at these kind of things...』

The middle aged man called『Oji-sama』by Banba-san smiles.

『...Come at me with your all!』

『Okaaay, my best regards!』

As usual, Banba-san is out of sync.

「That man...could it be?」

Reika looks at Michi.

「Yes...he's D.D. Warrior『Dai Grepher Oji-sama』」

Michi nods seriously.

「『Dai Grepher Oji-sama』...I've heard that he's dead」

「Oji-sama's a different dimension warrior after all...!」

The fuck?

I look at Michi's face...

「『Dai Grepher Oji-sama』confuses the sense of distance of the opponent by

making special movement. He's no longer in the place where you feel he was... therefore he obtained the title『D.D. Warrior』...!」

No...Michi

It's not that I'm interested in『Dai Grepher Oji-sama』or anything...

It's not a person I want to be acquainted with.

「Father has ordered『that guy's a lolicon so don't ever come close to him』...」

...Lolicon

「He comes to touch women's body while saying『you're moving well today too』...he has come close to me as well」

No way...did he touch you, Michi?

「I'm a practitioner of Kudou style ancient martial arts...I have rejected him using my final secrets」

You can't run away if you don't use it?

What's with this『Different Dimension Warrior』...

I leak out a sigh...

「Don't worry. Only Misuzu-sama and Master can touch my body...no other men can touch me...!」

Michi turns red.

Eh...Why?

「Michi's pleased because she thinks that Danna-sama's feeling jealous that Michi was touched by that man」

Misuzu said while looking at the two of us.

Jealous?...I don't feel like that though.

「Please, Master」

Michi thrusts her butt to me.

「Y-Yeah...」

For the time being, I'll just massage Michi's ass.

「...Ahn. You can touch it anytime. Michi is Master's toy after all...!」

No, it feels amazing to touch this plump ass but...  
It it okay for me to do this?

「Those who join in the enemy have quite the names...other than『Dai Grepher Oji-sama』...there's『Takeshi's』and the people of『Inazuma 12』and『Legendary Girl A』...Ahn!」

Michi speaks as her ass is rubbed.

「...『Takeshi's』?」

「Yes...It's a five person team with『Takeshi』as their first name. Gouda Takeshi-san, Higaki Takeshi-san, Uesugi Takeshi-san, Murakami Takeshi-san, and Yamato Takeshi-san」

Looking at the screen...true, there's five old men wearing the same combat fatigues.

「But...on the allies side, there's 『Takeshi Hunter Machahiko-san』」

...T-Takeshi Hunter?

「He's always opposing『Takeshi's』and they're always fighting. He's a person that's pride is him being『Takeshi extermination specialist』we can leave them to him」

Michi said

...Oh

『Takeshi who infest the world, I will bury you in the grave today!』

The glasses guy standing next to Barbie-san is the『Takeshi hunter?』  
Somehow, he doesn't look that strong though

『That's bullshit, even though you're just a Machahiko!』

『Men's jealousy is so disgraceful. I'm doing chin ups 200 times a day. Fufun.  
Come at me kid. I'll take you down. Philosophically』

『...Combat ready』

『I'm feeling a strong stress. It's a misconception. Please study about me more』  
『Anuttara samyak sambodhi』

Hmmm.

Somehow, these old men are having fun.

『MxM combo are also on that side?』

Barbie-san talked to the duo of a petite onee-san and a tall iron faced old man.

『Yes...we're M after all』

『.....。』

Err

『Well...anyway, we'll just blow them all up!』

Ruby-san shouts while holding a shotgun.

『Now, come at us bastards!』

Barbie-san's word starts the fight!

Or rather...

The man behind Barbie-san throws an object about a meter of length from his back to the side of the invaders.

Is that a boomerang?

A big boomerang flies and rotated around the air!

『Different Dimension Warrior』and the『Takeshi's』the free people escapes but...

The men in black combat fatigues can't.

The boomerang hits the man in the middle holding the machine gun!

『Guwawa !』

The man's blown off by the heavy hit of the boomerang!

The machine gun is also damaged.

『Did you see it?! I'm the boomerang user『Naoto Boomerang』!』

The old man cries trying to look good but at the next moment he's attacked by『DD warrior』

『...Ryumun! Shupapapapapa!...dodododomuu!』

The『DD warrior』talks with an unpleasant onomatopoeia...move unpleasantly and approaches the boomerang user!

That's so disgusting.

It's a strange movement you won't think of it as a human's...he shortens the distance.

『You don't like moving a lot don't you...!』

Saying that『DD warrior』swing his hand like a sword on the neck of the boomerang user!

『Paparabaaa!』

『...Ugaaa!!』

The boomerang user's blown away.

「Though it looks like it's not an unavoidable attack in the video...」

Michi said.

「When you're actually fighting...Oji-sama's attacks are all critical hits...Oji-sama's attacks isn't only one attack. It's as if you're fighting at a different dimension... 」

Yeah...true

There's three more people who were taken down by『DD Warrior Dai Grepher Oji-san』

『Kyururiin! Bitanko!!』

『Guwaaaaa!』

Meanwhile...『Takeshi Hunter』is fighting the『Takeshi's』

『...Philosophy! Philosophy! Philosophy!』

『Takeshi Hunter』avoids splendidly the karate technique of one of the『Takeshi's』

「The one attacking right now is Hikagi Takashi-san...his codename is『Gakki Soldier』」

Michi explains.

『...No way that attack would hit!』

『Takeshi Hunter』beats Higaki Takashi with the butt of the big rifle he holds.

「『Takeshi hunter』is a master of Juukendou」

...Juukendou?

「It's a martial arts where you fight with the sword at the tip of the gun. But,

『Takeshi Hunter』doesn't use a sword. He hits his opponent with the entire rifle as a weapon」

「But...isn't it dangerous if the gun makes an accidental discharge when he beats people with that?」

When the machine part is damaged from the shock of hitting...it won't be usable as a rifle anymore.

「Yes...therefore it doesn't have any bullet in it」

「...Whut?」

「Since it's dangerous...that gun welded all of the machine parts so it won't move. To improve strength, metal bars are embedded in the barrel. It's completely a rifle to beat people up」

...Does that mean.  
Do they need to use a rifle for it?

『Don't underestimate me kid! I'm the best guard in Japan when it comes to Karate!』

『Gakki Soldier shouts』

『That's just self-proclaimed! Show me the source if you want me to believe!』

『Men's jealousy is so ugly!』

『I won't be fooled by your words! You're always muttering things that would make yourself amazing!』

『Takeshi Hunter's attack bursts』Gakki Soldier's』throat 『...Philosophyyyy!』

『Gakki soldier』faints in agony

『Hmm...well done beating Higaki Takeshi』

『However, he's the weakest among us!』

『A disgrace of Takeshi's』

...Guys, that pattern

『...Who cares, come at me!』

『Takeshi Hunter』holds is non-movable rifle...

...However

「Uhm...the black guys at the back aren't fighting at all」

It's all the free guys fighting since a while ago 「Even though they have a pistol...they're not shooting it at all」

Everyone's just loitering around with a gun at hand.

「The machine gun guy has collapsed but nobody's picking up the machine gun」

Margo-san smiles.

「Can't be helped...all of them are amateurs」

...Amateur

「You can tell it from first machine gun shooting. Those people aren't used to guns at all」

Margo-san said, Reika and Michi nods.

「Did you know? People who haven't received proper shooting training can't easily pull the trigger even if they have a gun Even they don't know where the bullets would fly」

...They can't shoot because they're scared?

「If you approach the distance where you'd be hit by a bullet and apply pressure to them then they will pull the trigger but if you're far away, they won't shoot」

Banbarubie 3 ladies know that those in black clothes are amateurs who aren't used to shooting guns.,

Therefore, they make sure to keep their distance and don't stimulate so they don't shoot at desperation.

The machine gun guy who was first taken down by the boomerang was enough of a check...

---



## 277. Next move

---

「Let's talk about World War 1」

Margo-san said.

「Among the soldiers who went to war from America to Europe, the number of people who actually shot their gun against their enemies actually isn't that many. Most of the soldiers held their guns with bullets don't pull the trigger even if they confronted the enemy」

They didn't shoot the gun?

「Well, in a battlefield...in the crisis of surviving or not, you will shoot. As long as you think that if you don't do it you'd get killed. But, even if fighting their enemy...if they can just withdraw from each other anytime, then they won't shoot seriously. There's data about it written in history」

Reika speaks.

「Yes. If it's soldiers on the 19th century forming a line and ordered by a commander then you can't avoid shooting but...soldiers on the battlefield, on the era where they can hide and exchange fire, it's left to the individual judgement of the soldier if they shoot the enemy or not」

「Thinking that a person may die with the bullet they shoot...normal people can't easily pull the trigger. If they're an honest person with proper imagination...」

The guy who becomes a hero on the battlefield...if he sees an enemy he quickly shoot without hesitation, as expected that guy's broken.

「Therefore, the current US army...is training the soldier to shoot reflexively when they see something move on the battlefield. To let their body pull the trigger automatically before thinking. If not, they can't do a suppression operation like they've done in Middle East. However...there's a lot of mistaken

fire in it. They shoot a local civilian who's not an enemy...or shoot a soldier on their side」

「Anyway...a gun is a difficult weapon to handle. Even if a normal people holds a gun suddenly, they can't just shoot it to a person right away」

Reika said

「But look...isn't random shootout a common thin in the US? A student who's not a soldier shoots people without problems you know?」

Mana asks

「Those people who cause such incidents are yyoung people who are accustomed to guns. A person who's a bit mentally ill would have the image to behave one-sidedly slaughtering people who don't have weapons don't they? They feel overwhelmingly strong shooting until the police who have weapons come as he doesn't think he won't be countered. They only want to massacre, not fight」

Margo-san answers

True...I've never heard an indiscriminate firing of a gun on a military or a police facility.

It usually happens on a peaceful location like parks or school.

Margo-san looks at the screen once again.

「Those people are definitely amateurs when it comes to guns. It's unknown where Viola had brought them from but...you can tell that they're puzzled as they're given pistols and machine guns suddenly」

True...the black combat fatigue guys aren't participating, just holding their guns.

「But, wasn't there someone who shot the machine gun?」

I asked...

「『Shoot outside once the car stops』If it's a simple instructions, a easy to get in the mood guy will follow.」 I think that they left the machine gun to the guy with the most momentum among the group. But...that person shot only at locations where there's no people」

True...No one was shot among the security guards or the hotel men dressed people from Kouzuki security service when they came close to the car. Afterwards...the guy in charge of the machine gun was taken down by a boomerang in one hit...

The machine gun is lying on the floor and nobody's picking it up.

「Why is nobody taking it...?」

Megu mutters.

「That's obvious...if you pick it up you must use it. Everyone doesn't want to do that. Won't you feel horrified if you shoot a machine gun towards a group of people?」

Margo-san smiles.

「Besides...I think that machine gun is out of ammo」

Reika said

「Michi-chan...how many times did they change the magazine of the machine gun?」

Reika asks...

「Twice. After replacing the last magazine, shooting it all out...they didn't replace it」

Amazing, they saw it.

Margo-san nods at Michi's reply.

「Right. Then that means that there's no replacement magazine anymore? If they have a spare then they'd replace it. An empty machine gun is just meaningless」

True...

「Then that means that those guys in black clothes don't have that much ammo as well right?」

Nei-san asks Margo-san

「Yeah. I think so too...they don't have any spare bullets other than those inside the pistol. That's also another reason why they're not shooting. If it's a

pro familiar with guns then they'll have the composure of shooting the threat no matter how many they are...but those guys are thinking that they can't waste a single shot」

「Yes. As long as they keep distance and don't approach carelessly to stimulate them...they'll just stand still there. That's how they are」

Reika analyzes.

『Barunbarunbarunmbaruyrururun! Ryumoyoyoyoon!』

On the other hand...those who are divided to free guards and enemies continue their fight.

Releasing strange screams『The DD Warrior Dai Grepher』attacks Banba-san of Banbarubie 3!

『Uwawan! Please don't come over here, Oji-samaaa...!』

Banba-san flails her long stick with a steel ball at the end.

『Yes, Oji-sama is here! Furifuraran!』

Making unpleasant movements『DD warrior』jumps into Banba-san's bosom.

『Don't come!』

Banba-san swings her flail but...it doesn't hit the『DD warrior』

『Uwawawan! It should've hit but it didn't!』

『Aryaran! Koryayan! Taryayaaan!』

Shit,『DD warrior's』coming in a dash

『Banba-chan, move!』

Ordered by Barbie-san, Banba-san flies backwards!

『Now! Ruby-chan!』

『Sure, Nee-san!』

Ruby-san takes a stance with her shotgun!

『Eat this Riot suppressing shot!』

...Damuu!!

A small black rubber bullet flies towards『DD Warrior』!

『Ouch! Ouch! No way! This is a surprise!』

『DD warrior』gets up immediately and says so.

『You see, this thing can repulse you in the face!』

Ruby-san pumps the shot gun and shoots for the second time!

...Dauuu!

『T-This is unavoidable! Tamarimasheen! Pigarigari! Piigarigari! I'll withdraw for the time being! Yousorou!』

『DD warrior retreats towards the entrance of the hotel.』  
The men in black clothes holding their pistol are on the way.

『Let me pass through!』  
『...EH?』

While the men are surprised...he goes through the gap.

『Let's meet each other again! I'll definitely move better by then!』

Making a pose...『DD warrior』runs away

『Yes, Oji-sama! Stay strong!』

Banba-san waves her hand.

『Next time, I'll kill him...I hate that guy』  
『Nee-san...I agree』

Barbie-san and Ruby-san looked at each other and nods.  
On the other side...

『Takeshi Hunter』took down the second Takeshi 『Dammit, Uesugi...you liar! I don't know the meaning with you continuing as a Bounty Hunter! Lying that you're the representative of the bounty hunter of Germany in Japan』  
『That's because \*\*\*\*\* and \*\*\*\*\* puts political pressure...I just』  
『Shut up liar!』

『Takeshi hunter』stabs Uesugi Takeshi with the butt of the rifle.

『Which Takeshi is next?! Murakami Takeshi, Takeshi Pomu?! Or Gouda Takeshi a.k.a. Takeshi Gigantian Buton Punch Aniki...You?! Takeshi Over the Rainbow, Yamato Takeshi...you're coming?!』

『Takeshi hunter』glares at the『Takeshi's』

『...I'll take you on』

A big man with a beard and glasses comes in front.

『My modern artistic techniques have their reputation...!』

『Who's reputation?...Either way you're just selling yourself at high price because of your self evaluation』

『Do you hate Murakami Takeshi...!』

The fight of the two begins!

『Aaaaaah! Teruyakun, Teruyakun, Teruyakun Teruyakun Teruyakun!』

Murakami Takeshi recites some mysterious chant...and is taken down by『Takeshi Hunter』in one hit.

『You don't get it!』

『...It's a misunderstanding! I feel strong malice! You should read my book more and study about me!』

『The world doesn't even care about you!』

『R-Regret...!』

Murakami Takeshi crumbles on the floor.

『Takeshi Hunter』tramples on his face with his shoes...!

『Who's next...!』

The battle that started with almost the same number...

Since the guys in black suit who rushed in aren't involved in the combat...

The defense side is at an overwhelming advantage.

Or rather...those black clothed amateurs would only be stunned if they watch the free guards with.

What's with this people.

Ah...looking at it, both the enemy and allies...Neko-san's subordinates are recovering them. They're carrying them to the back room...is it a rescue room or something?

「Now then...it's about time」

Margo-san said

「Margo-chan thinks so too?」

Reika laughs

「...What's about time?」

I asked...

「They let the amateurs go in first...but the guys shot the machine gun and threw a tear gas...right now, there's not a regular security guard on the first floor.」

Right...Director Yamaoka withdrew his men.

Right now, it's only the free guards brought by Kudou-papa on the first floor.

「Then...the free people were divided among enemy and allied and fought a brawl. Don't you think it's about time they feel fatigued?」

True...Banba-san on the screen seems to be moving slower than the start of the battle.

「It's about time Cesario Viola's main team coming!」

...Eh?

Those guys just now were all bait?

「How do you think Viola's main unit would come in?」

Misuzu asks Margo-san.

「Could it be that they'd come down the rooftop using a parachute?」

Mana speaks in excitement.

「The situations of the airplanes and copters are always checked. If a flight plan isn't properly submitted, there's no plane nor copter that can fly off and on Tokyo. Once there's a violation, it can be seen right away」

Yeah...they'll only be traced if they chatter to the airlines.  
It would be hard to steal it somewhere. Or rather, it'll be exposed right away.  
The foreign criminal, Viola wouldn't be able to carry his men with airplanes or helicopters.

「Then, are they going to fly using hand gliders or something?」

「You see, Mana-chan. Hand Gliders are usually entrusted to the wind. Besides,

this is the tallest building outside of Odaiba. It's impossible to jump off on a considerably high building in order to get to this hotel with a hand glider but... there's no place close by」

「What about Rainbow Bridge?」

「Don't you think it would make a big fuss if you fly from that place with a hand glider?」

「Oh right」

Margo-san carefully explains to Mana.

「In the first place...even if you get off the rooftop of the hotel using a parachute or a hand glider...it's impossible to descend dozens of people. Besides, we also have an interception force on the rooftop of the hotel...」

Reika said

「Then, how about they climb up the hotel wall like Spider man?」

Mana asks further.

「Do you think they would still have enough strength remaining after doing a climb like that?」

Margo-san gently shrugs.

「Oh right.」

「I think that they'd just come from the hotel front」

Hotel front?

「We know...Viola likes to force his way. I don't think that they would use rooftops as alternative routes which is used by special forces」

「Yeah, I think so too」

Nei-san who's seen Viola's crimes for years...nods.

「Yes...it seems that he's here」

Reika's voice put our eyes back on the screen 「...That's」

The hotel's external cameras caught a figure outside.

The one's coming are...

Are a three huge sightseeing limousine buses.

---





## 278. Weigh Don!

---

With the first machine gun shootout, all of the security guards outside the hotel have evacuated.

The mysterious limousine bus rushing the hotel has no one to hold them back.

『Emergency evacuation! Okay! Everyone go to the lobby's depths!』

Neko-san who's carrying the injured shouts to the allied free guards

『Roger! Banba-chan! Let's take a break...let's change locations!』

Barbie-san instructs Banba-san

『Eh, Nee-san why?! I was just warming up...!』

While blowing away another free guard on the enemy side with her steel ball on the tip of her flail...Banba-san complains.

『Don't be an idiot! The second wave has that many people. Professionals are in there too! You've got no chance of winning against those who can shoot pistols!』

Err...larges busses, if I recall a single class can ride in it and there's still remaining auxiliary seats.

Then this means...if it's filled with people, there's more than 150 people.

Margo-san said that Viola should be taking around 30 people from US, his homeland.

Those guys are used to killing people with guns.

Even if the remaining 120 are amateurs like the first wave of people wearing black combat clothes...

If you include 30 professionals in it...it's a disadvantage.

The free guards have their numbers cut down already...they're injured and exhausted

『Banba! Let's pull back as planned! Drag that too!』

Ruby-san shouts

『Roger! Nee-san!』

Banba-san drags the guard who fainted just now and falls back.

In the depths of the lobby.

The lobby of this hotel has a very high ceiling in between first and second floors but...the interior part of both the first and second floor have many shops lined up.

Furthermore, the corners of the corridor are skillfully arranged so that there's a pillar, a resting bench sofa that can obstruct, making them unable to attack directly from the entrance.

『Everyone...hurry up!』

While the allied guards evacuate... armed men in black combat clothing comes down one after another loudly from the limousine bus.

They're all dressed the same as the first people who show up.

There's combat helmet on their head and a black mask on their face.

With this...you can't identify the person from their appearance.

Is Cesario Viola blending in among them?

—Douuuun!

—Dau, dauuun!

From the shadow of a thick pillar, Ruby-san shoots out her riot suppressing rubber bullet shotgun!

Holding back the black suit corps and the free guards on their side...they earned the time to evacuate.

—Doaun! Douun!!

Several of the men in black clothes that just got down shot towards Ruby-san. As expected...the professionals from US don't hesitate to shoot people.

『That's enough! Ruby-chan! All of the injured are already transported this way!』

Neko-san shouts however...Ruby-san can't run from the pillar due to shootout

『Banba-chan, use this!』

Barbie-san hands Banba-san a...boomerang?  
Neko-san and others have collected the boomerang that was dropped a while ago.

『Roger! I'll cover you, Ruby-neesan!』

Even though she's a woman, Banba-san's muscle strength; which usually wields a heavy flail and a steel ball at end, is amazing

『...Kuon, dammiiiiiiit!!!!』

The boomerang jumps into the flock of the black combat fatigue men with an amazing momentum.

Several of the combatants try to escape from the direct hit of the boomerang by slipping through the amateurs who stopped their legs in panic.

These people are Viola's followers?

Ruby-san used that chance and dashed from the big pillar to the lobby with her allies.

At the moment Ruby-san's supple body jumped into the corridor...!

『Let down the bulletproof door!』

Neko-san shouts to the surveillance cameras!

Then...

From the ceiling of the second floor in the corridor...a thick iron plate comes down.

...Dazuun!

The first floor part of the corridor is completely isolated by an iron door...!

The enemy panics...

...Then

Kudou-papa appears from the balcony of the second floor part of the corridor. Speaking of which, I didn't see him earlier...

『Welcome, Cesario Viola and his friends. I welcome you!』

Kudou-papa smiles.

One of the black men holds his pistol aiming at Kudou-papa...

Then another man stopped him.

He must be wondering why Kudou-papa come out there.

『Cesario Viola-kun's an American but...haven't you been in Japan when you were a child right? Therefore, I think you know it already but...』

Kudou-papa looks down on the army of black clothed men smiling.

『Japan's skit shows sometimes assemble a large scale set-up...traditionally』

The guys in black combat uniform shows a face of『What is he talking about?』 as they look up at Kudou-papa

『Well then, let's begin!』

Kudou-papa holds up his right fist and take a post.

『...Alice in wonderland, please grant my wish! Would you go to heaven or fall to hell...this is an attempt!』

Then, he pushed his hand up to the sky!

『Explode! Ishiba Ceiling fist!』

...Bahooooo!!!!

At that moment...a crack appears on the ceiling of the lobby!!!

『Heat end!!!!』

...Dobaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!!

A large amount of water spills down from the cracked ceiling all at once!!  
Right above the black clothed men...!

『Hiiiiiiiiiii!!』

『Awaaaaaa!』

『Uwaraba!』

The combatants were crushed and swept away by the sudden jet flow falling down.

『Wahahahaha...well then, let's meet again!』

Kudou-papa left while laughing loudly as he look at the first floor lobby becoming a water hell.



『I thought that he did something strange on the swimming pool on the third

floor which is a sports gym but...it became this gimmick」

Margo-san smiles wryly as she look at the video.

「Actually, it's a fire extinguishing system in case someone sets fire on the lobby」

Reika answers.

「Who's thought that he'd use it like this...!」

Michi bows her head...

「Sorry, father tends to be short-circuited and likes to do flashy things」

「No, I think that it's a good plan even though it's too much. We're able to shave off the large number of people invading in. With this, it'll take some time before they can rebuild their state」

Margo-san answers.

「You can't control the elevator from the first floor. The emergency generators are also on the upper floor so even if they occupy the first floor, it won't be trouble. From here forward...the offensive side will have to split into groups and go upstairs to invade. Although, they'll encounter ambushes on each floor from the defense side...」

Reika explains.

I don't know how much damage the water hell did to the 150 black combat fatigue men...

As expected, it's quite a number.

If we put on the number of Kouzuki security service uniformed guys, they won't lose when it comes to numbers.

Actually, only chief Tanizawa's top elite team and Kudou-papa's group can hold a battle with them.

「By making the enemy go upstairs, we can separate them and have them exhausted. The enemy might think of this as a mini dungeon quest」

Margo-san smiles.

「They won't just go up the emergency staircase?」

Mana asks worriedly.

「The passage and emergency stairs of each floors are closed and it's not possible to pass by the fire doors at several points. Therefore, they can't go straight to the upper floor. There are six stairs leading from the first floor to the upper floors however...each of them have one people in it and only one route can go upstairs. They have to divide into six groups...find the staircase leading to the upper floors by winding on each」

Reika explains

「But...what if they throw grenades or open a hole on the closed doors?」  
「First of all, I don't think the enemy has grenades...if they ever have one, they won't waste it on blowing up fire doors」

I see

The passages are closed up by the fire doors.  
They can't just blow up all of them one after another.

「Rather than that, what we should worry about is the four enemies that infiltrated using the tear gas. They should be inside the hotel along with the security guards of Kouzuki security service」

Margo-san asks Reika.

「Yes. But, chief Tanizawa is watching the same video we were watching so I think he's already making countermeasures」

...That's good but

Then...

The video on the screen changes to the meeting room where Jii-chan is.



『Mr. Shirasaka Moritsugu sent quite a lot of assassins』

Jii-chan tries to make an impression to the anti-mainstream faction of Shirasaka family that it's Shiraaska house's request why Cesario Viola is attacking.

『Fukushi-chan...where's Fukushi-chan...?!』

Shirasaka Ayako seems to be worried about the safety of her own son.

『I think that he's not killed. He's a useful card for negotiations to them』

Jii-chan said calmly to reassure Shirasaka Ayako.

『My guards are already moving. We'll be recovering Fukushi-kun soon. Be at ease』

『But, uhm...if we surrender to them, they won't do anything to Fukushi-chan right?』

Shirasaka Ayako seems to be impatient.

『The aim of the enemy is to kill the traitors. You and Fukushi-kun are already on Shirasaka Moritsugu's death list. If you surrender to them, they'll kill the two of you immediately. The reason why Fukushi-kun is alive now is because it seems you can be lured out using him. I don't think you can nonchalantly go out at this situation』

『Y-Yes』

Shirasaka Ayako responds yet unable to settle down.

『Should I talk to Shirasaka Moritsugu? If we talk to him he will surely understand It's just absurd to hire a hitman to erase us』

Shirasaka Hiromitsu said.

『Shirasaka Moritsugu has already made that absurd choice. And, the other party who's requested to kill is a boss of a famous criminal organization in America. It's too late to talk about it now』

Jii-chan rejects Hiromitsu's proposal.

『Anyway, I guarantee your safety. I've already sent men to rescue Fukushi-kun』

『P-Please, thank you...!』

Shirasaka Ayako bows her head.

『Now then, let's move to a separate room for the time being. It's not good to stay in here』

Jii-chan tells the three anti-mainstream faction of Shirasaka family

『With the fact that Fukushi-kun is caught by the enemy means that the enemy knows that we were negotiating in this hotel tonight. You can immediately understand the interior of the hotel when you look at the hotel's



website. This conference floor should be a target of the enemy』

『Y-You're Right』

Vice president Yamada nods.

『Let's prepare a room near the top floor. The enemy shouldn't be able to rush up when it's there』

Jii-chan said.

『Tanizawa, please put appropriate guards from the elite team on the room of the three. If possible, you can send my full-time guards...Ootoku-kun and Choumoto-kun with them』

『...Are you sure?』

『I don't mind, the safety of the three comes first』

The three from Shirasaka house were impressed by what Jii-chan said.

『Certainly...Then, I'll deploy the best guards we have』

『Umu...you can monitor the situation outside from their room. There's no need to worry』

Jii-chan told the three.

Chief Tanizawa already gives orders on his intercom.

Then...Jii-chan turned to the vassals behind him...

『Oh yes, you too. As I've told you beforehand...I've brought your children to this hotel. You must be worried so stay with your children』

Jii-chan looks at the reaction of each individual vassal.

There should be a『traitor』among them

No, there's still two who hasn't come yet.

『Tanizawa, show them the way』

『Certainly...everyone, this is an emergency. Please follow my instructions whatever it is. First, please refrain from using mobile phones. It's possible that everyone's phone is bugged. Even if it's a bit, information may leak to the enemy. This is a life or death situation so I expect your cooperation. Then, the room we'll be going to has a restroom in it so please use that one. It's already possible that the enemy has already infiltrated so it's strictly prohibited to use the hotel in the corridor during our move inside the hotel』

『Uhm...Kakka will also be moving with us right?』

One of the executive asks Jii-chan.

『I also brought Ruriko and Misuzu to this hotel. I'm worried for them. I will be going to my granddaughters』

「As expected of Kouzuki-san」

Margo-san said.

「Eh, what do you mean?」

I asked, Margo-san...

「Well you see, if there's an enemy among the executives...of course the two others who didn't come are still in doubt but...it's still possible that the traitor is in that room making an ignorant face」

「Y-Yeah」

「Then...it would be bad to be with the traitor all the time you see. The thee of the anti-mainstream of Shirasaka house, or Minaho, or maybe Kouzuki-san can be the target of the enemy」

「The traitor might tell the enemy where the target's located?」

「Yup. Even if they don't contact with a phone, they may have something like a transmitter」

...I see

「Therefore...The three of Shirasaka house, the executives, and Kouzuki-san himself will be on separate rooms and separate floors」

「Right...the traitor won't bring the enemy to where their son is...」

Therefore...they're bringing the executives to the students?

「We should be moving soon too」

Misuzu said.

---

## 279. I wonder why

---

「Hey...what's going on here?」

Kouzuki Satoshi who's among the students stunned until now turned to us.

「It is as you see. Currently, the hotel is under attack by the enemy forces」

Reika who's carrying Mao-chan said straightforwardly 「Therefore what?...who are those people?!」

「As『Kakka』explained...it's a criminal organization in US Shirasaka Moritsugu hired」

Reika pats Mao-chan's head.

Mao-chan looks sleepy

「...We're fine aren't we?」

Kouzuki Subaru asks worriedly

「Kouzuki security service is dealing with them」

「No, I'm asking if we're safe!」

Natsuki Makoto screams loudly.

It seems that the members of the『private school』are frightened by the tense situation.

「...You saw the situation on the first floor didn't you?」

Misuzu answer coldly.

「A group of over a hundred armed men attacked this hotel. I think that the security service will do their best but, everyone should be prepared for the worst」

「Uhm...the police have been alerted already, aren't they?」

Shiba Akira asks timidly.

「What do you think the police can do if they move now?」

Misuzu returned with a question.

「Because, well...if police special forces come...」

「If the police discovers our current situation...and they approved moving the special forces against terrorist organization...well, it'll take at least two ours, won't it?」

Margo-san laughed.

「Rather than that...don't you think it's just bad if the police comes here? This hotel have most of the executives of Kouzuki group gathered. Then...the three of the force trying to take down Shirasaka Moritsugu, the head of Shirasaka family. It's not good to leak outside that there's a mysterious combat unit attacking here don't you think?」

「It's common for that information to flow from the police to the media...!」

Reika supplements Margo-san's statement.,

「Kouzuki group would be totally involved into the scandal of Shirasaka house」

Misuzu said

The students tremble.

「I see, the scandal of Shirasaka house...it seems that『Kakka』thought of instigating it in order to take away the management rights of the newspaper and television station」

Kata Takashi tells Kouzuki Souji.

「However, Shirasaka Moritsugu has sent an assault unit to『Kakka』...won't it be fatal to him?」

「In that case...don't he just intend to say『I don't know anything about that』?」

「In such cases...it's always the press that would constantly report that the fault is on us who had been attacked」

Oohari Ryou, Hanaoka Shinsuke, Kouzuki Kenshi said respectively.

「Besides...unless we can repel this attack on our own, Kouzuki security service won't be recognized with honor」

Reika who's a top elite guard said laughing.

「We'll eliminate all of the assailants without trying to get the police get involved」

「I-I see. But, can you guarantee our safety」

Kouzuki Souji asks Reika on behalf of the students.

「The only members we will protect with all our power is only『Kakka』and his family...!」

Reika replied...the students are upset.

「W-What do you mean by that?」

Tsunoda Fumikazu shouted in panic

「I haven't received instruction to protect you from『Kakka』」

「But, aren't we children of『Kakka's』vassals!」

Kouzuki Satoshi also screams.

「Yes. The vassals should be prepared to protect『Kakka』even at the expense of their own life. It's the vassal's job to offer their life to the lord」

Reika said clearly.

「The vassals can be changed but the current Kouzuki group cannot lose『Kakka』their head. Moreover, Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama who are the successors of the Kouzuki house must be protected. You do understand that don't you?」

Reika's words silenced the students.

They believed that they were the chosen elites.

However, in the presence of people in a higher position than themselves...they learned that they're not an existence that must be absolutely protected.

「Of course...Kouzuki security service will do all their best to protect all of you as much as possible. However...please not that you're not people who who are in the『top priority』 If the enemy have invaded the top of the hotel...and we don't have enough number of allies, we will abandon guarding everyone else to prioritize『Kakka's』safety」

「That's just abandoning us!」

Tsunoda shouted.

「Yes, we will be in worst case scenario...!」

Reika's voice remains calm.

「Uhm...how about this? All of us and our parents...could we all stay and be guarded in the same room as『Kakka's』? That way, we can concentrate the number of guards in one place...I think it's a good idea」

Kouzuki Subaru Suggests.

「Won't that make the enemy forces also concentrate their attack to one place?」

Margo-san laughs.

「Kouzuki security service wants to disperse the enemies. No matter how you look at it, repelling more than a hundred enemies together is a huge task」

「Yes. Besides, if 『Kakka』and his family, the vassals, and all of the students, and in addition the guards in charge are to be in the same room...the places are limited to restaurants, conference rooms and this party room. The enemy should know the floor plan of this hotel...」

Reika answers.

Yeah. If you look up the hotel's information where restaurants, conference rooms, or wedding rooms are...you'll be able to get it in one shot.

「In order to prevent the enemy from knowing the location of『Kakka』...I think that it's better for him to hide in an ordinary guest room on the upper floor. Of course the guards won't concentrate on the room but in the form of arranging the guards centering the room, in case of the enemy knowing the location we can switch to another room or another floor as necessary」

Anyway...Reika who's a pro told the students that Kouzuki security service concentrates on protecting Jii-chan 「Then...what should we do?」

Shiba Akira asks

「As『Kakka』said...please evacuate to the room where your fathers are. Everyone will be on a normal guest room. It might be stuffed inside but please pardon that. Instead, we would place as many guards as possible」

「...What should we do, Souji-nii?」

Kouzuki Satoshi asks Kouzuki Souji, the boss of the group.

「There's no other choice...it would be safer to stay with father. Our fathers will prioritize our safety more than Kouzuki security service」

「We won't have decent guards however」

Shiba Akira said

Then...Reika takes the wall's interphone.

She operates the switch...

「...It's Fujimiya. Chief Tanizawa, instructions please」

While Reika's talking to chief Tanizawa...Margo-san 「Oh right. I think that you guys have phones but don't use them. Turn it off」

「Eh, why?」

Kouzuki Satoshi argues.

「You don't know how they can find where you are using your phone's radio waves?」

Speaking of which...

When I went to buy Megu's dress and my underwear, we were attacked.

「It's unknown whether the enemy holds your personal information or not but if your phone is identified, don't you think the enemy would attack that first?」

They shivered.

「Hey, everyone, turn off your phones! Don't turn it to vibrate mode!」

「Should we take off the batteries?」

「Yeah, that might be better」

They take out their phones in a hurry and turn it off.

「...Roger. I'll relay the instructions」

Meanwhile, Reika finishes her call on the interphone.

「Then, everyone...in five minutes, on the right side of the corridor, use the 『West 3rd Stairs』and head to room 3448 at the 34th floor」

「Eh, we won't use elevators?」

Tsunoda shouts.

「All of the elevator's power are cut off If not, the enemy would just ride it freely」

Yeah...if the elevators are active, then it'll be a big trouble.

「In addition, the corridors and stairs have the fire door dropped off on every important point. The route from here to room 3448 would be open only for five minutes. If you don't hurry up, you'll be trapped in the middle of the stairs」

「Why don't you just open it up until we arrive!」

Kouzuki Satoshi says but...

「Did you forget?...『Kakka's』strict when it comes to time」

Reika smiles coldly

「...Can't be helped. Let's go!」

Kouzuki Souji instructs his group

「Let's hurry up」

Shiba Akira tells the members of the『rising faction』

「You...I leave Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama to you」

Kouzuki Kenshi tells me

「Eh wait a moment. He's going with Misuzu-sama?」

Kouzuki Satoshi shouts

「That's obvious. He's my husband after all」

Misuzu said clearly

「The other women are also important people to me and Ruriko-san. They will take shelter with us」

「No, but...Misuzu-sama will be together with『Kakka』right? I feel like we're being told bullshit here?!」

I can understand Kouzuki Satoshi's feelings but...  
I've got a duty to protect my『family』

「I'll be protecting Misuzu and everyone」



I answered.

「I'll protect them even if I die」

Everyone's my『Family』

「Got it. Fortunes of war」

Shiba Akira said

「Anyway...I'll leave it to you. Fulfil your duty!」

Kouzuki Souji tells me in an ordering tone.

「...4 minutes remaining」

Reika looks at the watch and counts

「...Let's hurry」

「By the way...is there any guard coming with us?」

Kouzuki Satoshi asks Reika

「You've got a guard from your house」

Kouzuki Satoshi thinks that Margo-san is my guard.

「You're from Kouzuki security service so why don't you come with us?」

They seem to be uneasy to evacuate on the upper floor by themselves it seems.

「I'm a top elite. I've been strictly ordered to guard Misuzu-sama and Ruriko-sama by『Kakka』!」

「Then...you, could you lend us your guard?」

Kouzuki Satoshi tells me to lend Margo-san to them.

「Sorry but...he's not my employer. The orders I've received is to protect him and all of these children. I can't be your guard...」

Margo-san rejects.

「...Dammit」

Kouzuki Satoshi feels frustrated.

「If you don't hurry you won't make it in time」

Misuzu said, Kouzuki Kenshi...

「Excuse us, Misuzu-sama, Ruriko-sama! Everyone, we'll be running! We won't make it if we don't!」

Saying that, he bowed to the two then run out of the room.

「Wait, don't leave me!」

Kouzuki Souji runs after.

「I'll accompany you! Souji-sama」

The『Prince faction』guys follows.

「I'm not good at sports but it can't be helped. Excuse us!」

Shiba Akira runs after bowing.

「We'll be going too」

The remaining members of『rising faction』also run out of the room.



「...Fuu, we're finally by ourselves」

Nagisa said

「I...I hate those boys who have only their high pride」

An embrace from the back.

「...I love you」

Mana jumps in.

「Geez, don't go sticking so close just because those people are gone!」

「It's fine. Mana-chan's a little sister so she can be spoiled in front of them but... it's bad in various ways if I get pampered. For them, you're Misuzu-san's partner」

True...it's bad if Nagisa sticks to me in front of those guys.

「That's right...then I'll pamper you too!」

Nei-san embraces me in front.

The huge breasts caught me in between.

Nagisa's breasts softly wrap around...

Nei-san's big but there's tension.

Breasts also differ on each person.

「You're right. I also feel a bit tired facing those people」

Misuzu stretches her body.

「Misuzu-sama, should I massage your shoulder?」

Michi who loves Misuzu immediately comes to her master's side.

「Yes please」

「Certainly」

Michi happily massages Misuzu's shoulders as she sit on the chair.

「Thank you for the hard work, Misuzu-oneesama」

Ruriko speaks appreciation towards Misuzu.

「I'm also really not good with boys」

「I'm the same. But, I've got to do my best for Danna-sama and the『family』」

Misuzu and Ruriko look at each other.

「Right~『family』is so nice!」

Nei-san pushes me against her big breasts.

Ah...I feel like she's forcing herself to be bright

Nei-san's behaves brightly to try to reduce everyone's anxiety even a bit.

No, it's not just Nei-san.

Nagisa who first embraced me too.

「...Mao-chan fell asleep」

Reika tells Nagisa whisperingly

「My my...that's great」

Nagisa parts from me and tries to take the small Mao-chan.

「I'll carry her」

Reika holds Mao-chan

「Sorry, you looked after her」

「I don't mind...I have confidence in my power. Aren't we family?」

Reika said and smiled.

「Really...it's good if it's only us Family in here though!」

Mana looks at Yukino

「What's wrong, Mana?」

I asked...

「I can only think of this woman as a tangle」

...Hmm

It's not cursing.

If I recall, I learned this in literature class...

Was it『Tsurezuregusa?』

『Mashikaba→Mashi』『Iwanya→Oya』

「Ah, Yoshiko-san can stay! Mana just hates this one!」

Mana tells Yoshiko-san quickly.

「...I don't mind it」

Yoshiko-san answers timidly

「Yoshiko-san is my family...so it's fine」

Ruriko immediately comforts Yoshiko-san

「...Mana!」

When I scold her, Mana...

「I'm sorry, Onii-chan!」

Mana's already prostrating herself.

「Should I get naked?」

「You don't need to...reflect on what you just said!」

「Okay」

Mana's strangely frolic...

...She's anxious after all.

I can understand her feelings so I thought I shouldn't blame her too much

...But

Yukino and Megu, are depressed helplessly...

「...Megu?」

「Eh...Ah, sorry. I've been thinking」

Wow...her face is blue.

「Are you okay?」

I try to get close to Megu.

「Yeah...I'm fine」

She's not okay at all.

Yukino's even worse.

She's just having her mouth opened wide staring up at the screen.

「Of course, it's quite the shock」

Margo-san said

「...What about?」

When I ask...

「Her name wasn't even mentioned in the negotiation with the anti-mainstream faction of Shirasaka house」

...Speaking of which

In the negotiations with those three...

Yukino or Shirasaka Sousuke wasn't mentioned at all 「Really...they're rude!」

Turning around...from the door different from those where the students came in earlier...

Minaho-neesan comes in.

Jii-chan and Katsuko-nee are there too.

「Eh, what do you mean?」

「It's about Shirasaka house abandoning Shirasaka Sousuke and his family」

Margo-san answers.

「Therefore, they didn't become a subject in the negotiation」

I see.  
They didn't ask anything about Shirasaka Sousuke.  
Far from that...Yukino and Mana too.  
No...Even Megu, she was supposed to be kidnapped by us from the Shirasaka house.  
Nobody asked to return them  
...In short.  
They don't care anymore.  
It's the same as saying that they don't care whatever we do with them.  
「They assumed that everything that happened in Shirasaka house is due to Kouzuki-sama's will. In short...they completely ignored me or『Kuromori』」  
Minaho-neesan said.

---

**EPUB/PDF generated by [inwnepubs.com/](http://inwnepubs.com/)**

---

**Translated by [Machine Sliced Bread](#)**

---